BOSTON PUBLIC LIBRARY
3 9999 06374 160 5

GENERATIONS OF Whipples

Descendants of
Matthew Whipple of Ipswich, Massachusetts
Abt 1590-1647

AN AMERICAN STORY

Wayne Whipple's 1912 48-star Peace Flag selected by Pres. William Howard Taft

VOLUME I

Written and Compiled by **BLAINE WHIPPLE**

Boston Public Library

Blaine Whipple
22 February 2010

15 GENERATIONS OF

Whipples

Descendants of
Matthew Whipple of Ipswich, Massachusetts
Abt 1590-1647

• AN AMERICAN STORY •

Volume I

WRITTEN AND COMPILED BY
Blaine Whipple

GATEWAY PRESS, INC.
Baltimore, MD 2007

Copyright © 2007 by
Blaine Whipple
All rights reserved.

Permission to reproduce in any form
must be secured from the author.

Please direct all correspondence and book orders to:
Blaine Whipple
236 N.W. Sundown Way
Portland, OR 97229-6575

Library of Congress Control Number 2007940931

ISBN Four Volume Set 978-0-9801022-4-6
ISBN Volume I 978-0-9801022-0-8

Published for the author by
Gateway Press, Inc.
3600 Clipper Mill Rd., Suite 260
Baltimore, MD 21211-1953

www.gatewaypress.com

Printed in the United States of America

TO

Blaine "Scott" Whipple, my 38-year-old son
Spencer Blaine Whipple, my 6-year-old grandson
Turner Collins Whipple, my 3-year-old grandson
Elaine (Whipple) West, my 97-year-old sister
Mary Ann (Whipple) McPherson, my 70-year-old sister

AND IN MEMORY OF MY DECEASED SIBLINGS

James Earl "Jimmy" Whipple, 1911-1983
Richard Earl "Dick" Whipple, 1933-2005
Nancy Jane (Whipple) Jasperson, 1932-1987
Patricia Ellen "Pat" (Whipple) Drotzman, 1929-2006

Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2013

http://archive.org/details/15generationsofw01whip

CONTENTS

Foreword by Jana Sloan Broglin, CG		vi
Author's Preface		viii
Illustrations		x
1.	First There Was England	1
2.	Essex County and Bocking, England	31
3.	The Whipples of Bocking	48
4.	Sea Voyage to New England	99
5.	Then There Was New England	115
6.	Ipswich and Hamilton, Mass.	159
7.	Matthew Whipple and Anne Hawkins	196
8.	The Joseph Whipple Family	220
9.	Jonathan Whipple and Frances Edwards	231
10.	Francis Whipple and Abigail Lamson	250
11.	Benjamin Whipple and Hepzibah Crosby	309
12.	Nehemiah Whipple and Sarah Robert	354
13.	Enoch Whipple and Catharine Shaw	373
14.	Lucien Ransom Whipple and Sarah Sheward	407
15.	James Ezekiel Whipple and Ellen Thompson	447
16.	Lucien Blaine Whipple and Lillian Neva Lefebre	533
	Lucien Blaine Whipple and Pearl Julia Scott	561
17.	Robert Blaine Whipple and Ines Mae Peterson	690
18.	Blaine Scott Whipple and Lorna Jo Zoerink	925

Appendix I.
Whipple English Records 1397-1663 958

Appendix II.
Will of Matthew Whipple of Ipswich, Mass. 1016
Inventory of Matthew Whipple Estate 1017
Sale of Matthew Whipple's Home to John Annibal 1019
Will of Jonathan Whipple of Westborough, Mass. 1020
Will of Francis Whipple of Westborough, Mass. 1022

Appendix III.
The Whipple Flag 1025
The Whipple Museum of the History of Science 1027

Appendix IV.
Whipple Soldiers and Sailors in the Revolutionary War 1032
Massachusetts 1032
New Hampshire 1049
Vermont 1057
Rhode Island 1061
Connecticut 1064
Virginia 1065
Biography of General William Whipple of N.H. 1067
Biography of Commodore Abraham Whipple of R.I. 1075

Appendix V.
Ancestors of Spencer B. and Turner C. Whipple 1096

Appendix VI.
Historical Origin of the Coats of Arms 1128

Appendix VII. Dates, Names, and Relationships 1133
Common or Cannon Law Relationship Chart 1137

Appendix VIII.
Which John Whipple Is Your Ancestor? 1140
Biography of "Elder" John Whipple of Ipswich, Mass. 1141
Biography of Captain John Whipple of Providence, R.I. 1166

Appendix IX.
Some Whipples Who Have Been Published 1189

Appendix X.
Proposed Ancestors of Matthew Whipple of Bocking, England 1208

Genealogy Preface G 1

Genealogy G 4

Genealogy Appendix I.
John Hawkins Family of Bocking, England G 1520

Genealogy Appendix II.
Dane and Faulkner Families of Andover, Mass. G 1520
Descendants of Francis Dane G 1525
Descendants of Edmund Faulkner G 1530
Dane Family Members Accused of Witchcraft G 1544
Indictment of Abigail (Dane) Faulkner in 1692 G 1548

Genealogy Appendix III.
Thomas Crosby to Hepzibah (Crosby) Whipple G 1569

Genealogy Appendix IV.
West, Clingman, LeFebre, Ruhl Families G 1596

Genealogy Appendix V.
Scott, Hamel, Dolan, Darmody Families G 1610

Genealogy Appendix VI.
Drotzman, Remund, Guerrero Families G 1677

Genealogy Appendix VII.
Peterson, Bartruff, Steele, Zoerink Families G 1700

Genealogy Appendix VIII.
Jasperson Family G 1820

Genealogy Appendix IX.
McPherson, Mauro, Giambanis Families G 1834

Genealogy Appendix X.
Vital Records of Whipples in Ipswich, Mass. G 1850

Index to Genealogy G 1857

Index to History 2627

Bibliography 2653

Errata 2723

FOREWORD

Few family genealogies attain the magnitude of Blaine Whipple's *15 Generations of Whipples – Descendants of Matthew of Ipswich, Mass. Abt 1590-1647.*

Mr. Whipple's four volume work, divided into historical and genealogical sections, can truly be said to be a family history. It spans over four hundred years – beginning with wealthy clothiers in England who became farmers and merchants, church leaders, and government officials in the Massachusetts Bay Colony.

The history records the life and times of his direct line from Matthew Whipple, Clothier, of Bocking, Essex County, England, in eighteen remarkable chapters. Appendices include the Last Will and Testament and inventory of the estate of the immigrant Matthew; Whipple Soldiers and Sailors who served in the Revolutionary War including biographies of Brigadier General William Whipple, New Hampshire signer of the Declaration of Independence, and Commodore Abraham Whipple of Rhode Island, one of the senior commanders of the Continental Navy; English records on Whipples beginning in 1397; plus other information not generally available but relevant to Whipple families.

The genealogical section records the lives of descendants of Matthew of Ipswich, including children of the fifteenth generation with the last birth recorded November 3, 2001. Genealogical appendixes include information on the Dane family members accused in the infamous Salem Witch Trials of 1692. Abigail (Dane) Faulkner, his 7th great grandmother, was convicted of being a witch and sentenced to hang. Descendants who have made significant contributions to American life and culture include:

- Col. Moses Whipple, known as the George Washington of Croydon, New Hampshire .....G 153
- Levi Whipple, founder of Putnam, Ohio, and anti-slavery leader.....G 253
- Squire Whipple, developer of scientific bridge design .....G 279
- Edwin Percy Whipple, author, lecturer, literary critic.....G 395
- Chandler Whipple, one of the founders of the Republican Party.....G 420
- Oliver Mayhew Whipple, builder of textile, saw, grist, and gunpowder mills .....G 434
- Rev. William Levi Whipple, missionary to Persia 1872-1901.....G 594

- Charles A.Whipple, portrait painter of Presidents McKinley and T. Roosevelt ..... G 618
- John Adams Whipple, pioneer, innovator, leader in photography ..... G 620
- Amiel Weeks Whipple, Civil War general of Whipple's Division ..... G 631
- Ransom E. Olds, founder of the Oldsmobile and REO automobile companies ..... G 758
- Ithamar C. Whipple, Wyoming, merchant, rancher, mayor, legislator, deacon ..... G 764
- Dr. Allen O. Whipple, created the "Whipple procedure" for pancreatic surgery ..... G 782
- Franklin D. Roosevelt, 32nd President of the United States .... G 856
- Dr. George Hoyt Whipple, Nobel Prize winner in physiology & medicine ..... G 961
- Frances Elizabeth Whipple, co-author of college SAT exam .. G 973
- Calvin Coolidge, 30th President of the United States ..... G 1008
- William Perry Whipple II, insurance executive, Red Cross official, college trustee ..... G 1071
- Nancy Louise Whipple, head nurse Genessee Hospital,
- Rochester, New York ..... G 1123
- Terri Lynn Ebert, manager, Rock Co., Minnesota. 911 service ..... G 1288

Mr. Whipple has researched this meticulously documented work for over fifty years. The review of the historical high-points in his life gives a comprehensive look at America during the depression, the Cold War, discrimination in the 1950s, even the music, television shows, and literature of the decades. The photographs and maps add interest and each segment of the voluminous work expands the reader's knowledge of the descendants of Matthew Whipple's family.

It is an honor to be able to introduce the reader to these exceptional volumes.

Jana Sloan Broglin, CG
Swanton, Ohio
November 2007

AUTHOR'S PREFACE

We live in the present with our senses, perceptions, and affections and look to the future with our hopes, aspirations, and plans. But for life to achieve its fullness, we must also relate to the past which can enrich our living by giving us the fellowship of our ancestors and their wisdom and knowledge.

This is the American story of Matthew Whipple, my great (8) grandfather and 15 generations of his descendants. It begins in 1638 in Ipswich in the Massachusetts Bay Colony and ends in 2007 in Portland, Oregon. Matthew and his younger brother John were wealthy clothiers (men who made woolen cloth). Archbishop William Laud of Canterbury's (1633-45) campaign in the reign of King Charles I to force uniformity of worship on every parish in England coupled with a serious depression in the clothing industry motivated them to migrate with their large families. Matthew became a farmer and John a merchant, ruling elder, and legislator (see his biography in Appendix 10, Vol. I).

The first Whipple in the Bay Colony was John Whipple, a teenaged indentured servant, who settled in Dorchester in 1632 and moved to Providence, Rhode Island in 1659 where he was known as Captain John Whipple. His parentage and place of origin are yet to be discovered. His biography is in Appendix 10 (Vol. I) in the history section. Two of his descendants, Dr. Charles M. Whipple, Jr. of Oklahoma and Barbara R. Carroll of Rhode Island, expect to publish a book on Captain John and his descendants later this year. See Page G 2 for details on how to contact the authors.

Matthew's succeeding generations multiplied to such a degree it is impossible to know how many are my relatives. As land became scarce they kept moving in the direction of the setting sun and today are found in all sections of the country. While most are average citizens, they include two presidents, members of congress, generals, judges, legislators, city and county officials, a Nobel Prize winner, authors, artists, founders of corporations, etc.

They fought in the colonial wars, the Revolutionary war, and all the nation's wars. As they moved west they founded towns, built canals, roads, bridges, railroads, schools, colleges, churches and cemeteries. They operated grist, saw, cotton, woolen, and gun-powder mills; cut down forests and tapped maple trees; founded newspapers, operated hotels, opened banks, general stores, livery stables, taverns, pool halls; joined social and fraternal organizations; and voted in local, state, and national

elections.

That there is interest in Matthew Whipple's lineage is demonstrated by the hundreds of individuals who responded to my request for information. This history-genealogy is the result of over 50 years of research and uncounted hours spent with the lives of his descendants spread out in files and folders with pictures and sketches and illustrations to bring their time back to life; some with extensive biographies, other with limited information. The narrative connects what is known of their personal lives with the impersonal world of general history to show the struggles and obstacles they had to overcome to reach their station in life. The 18 historical chapters and 15 genealogical generations are each supplemented with 10 appendixes.

Many of the descriptions, especially in earlier generations, are qualified with expressions such as "in all probability," "would have," or "the evidence suggests." Standardized spelling, punctuation, and capitalization is followed with an occasional exception. Despite gaps, inadequacies, over simplifications, and evidence which sometimes is too bare or too profuse, they are included for the benefit of future Whipple genealogists and historians.

Many of the 3,331 endnotes in the historical section are extensive in an effort to explain relevance. They enlarge the information in the text and hopefully assist the reader in understanding the time frame under discussion. I encourage the reader to read first for the story, then reread for the endnotes. The appendixes include relevant material important to Whipple descendants but not generally available. Genealogy doesn't have to be dull. In addition to names, dates, and places, these ancestral stories include the how, when, and where and are illustrated with maps, photographs, sketches, scanned newspaper articles, marriage licenses, and other artifacts. I hope the reader finds them compelling.

This work is intended to be a singular resource of its kind. It is as comprehensive and accurate as I could make it. Constructive input of any nature is welcome as well as additions with sources for a potential future book on Matthew Whipple descendants.

Blaine Whipple
Portland, Oregon
November 2007

ILLUSTRATIONS

Map of Essex County England in 1610 xx

Seventeenth Century English Village House 9

Seventeenth Century Dental Instruments 11

Views of Bocking's St. Mary's Church 50-51

Seventeenth Century Spinning Wheel 61

Map of Ipswich, Massachusetts 159

1787 Sketch of Ipswich Hamlet Church 179

Jonathan Whipple Home in Westborough, Mass. (built ca 1732) 232
Includes Names of Occupants to the Present (2007)
Includes Recipe of Olde Mrs. Whipple's Apple Gingerbread

Francis Whipple Signature, May 8, 1758 (1705-1787) 252

Portraits of Francis and Abigail Whipple 260

Hepzibah Crosby Confession of Faith (1727-1797) 310

The Bennington, Vermont Declaration for Freedom, May 1775 320

Record of the Governor and Council of Vermont 1779-1782 332

Whipple Hollow, Vermont Cemetery 356

Enoch Whipple Certificate of Land Register in Iowa 375

Catharine (Shaw) Whipple (1798-1865) 380

Johnny Appleseed 388

Lucien R. Whipple, Eugene, Ind. (1834-1904) 408
Sarah (Sheward) Whipple (1835-1898)

Eugene, Indiana Schoolhouse 409

Lucien R. Whipple Civil War Record, 1862 411

Lucien and Sarah Whipple Home in Eugene, Ind. 1871 430

Eugene, Indiana Main Street (ca 1870) 430

Covered Bridge, Eugene, Ind. 431

James E. Whipple and Ellen Thompson Marriage License 1881 449

James, Blaine, and Ellen Whipple, Vinton, Iowa (ca 1893) 451

Blaine Whipple as a Child, Eugene, Ind. (ca 1888) 452

Blaine Whipple as a Young Man, Vinton, Iowa (ca 1899) 459

Advertisement for Ringling Bros. Circus, Vinton, Iowa 1892 461

James E. Whipple, Benton County Recorder, Vinton, Iowa 1897 471
Benton County, Iowa Court House 472
Battleship *USS Maine* 475
James E. Whipple Power of Attorney Signed 20 July 1898 476
James E. Whipple, Newspaper Advertisement, Vinton, Iowa 480
Book Cover, Spanish-American War, By Capt. J. E. Whipple 1903 488
Cemetery Deed, Evergreen Cemetery, Vinton, Iowa 1914 504
Major James E. Whipple (1857-1914) 506
Ellen Whipple Certification of Death (1859-1918) 509
Blaine Whipple, Iowa National Guard (1883-1954) 536
Printing Equipment 538
1908 Map of Circle Stock Performances 543
Lillian LeFebre (1888-1941) 547
Lillian and Elaine Whipple 1910 548
Elaine and Jimmy Whipple as youngsters 549
Elaine Whipple with Mother, Grandmother, & G. Grandmother 550
Marceline, (Missouri) *Herald,* June 29, 1923 552
1923 Advertisement for the Apperson 8 Automobile 558
William Jennings Bryan 559
1924 Chautauqua Advertisement 560
Pearl Scott, 1927 (1905-1988) 561
Blaine Whipple-Pearl Scott Marriage License 562
Pearl Scott, beautician 563
Drumater Millenary Dept. 564
Blaine Whipple and friends 564
Newspaper Advertisement for Walter Savidge Players, 1927 566
Arcada Theatre Program, St. Charles, Illinois, 1928 567
The Valentine Democrat, Valentine, Neb., Aug. 8, 1929 569
Blaine Whipple with Sonny and Pat, Martin, S. Dak., 1930 573
Pat and Sonny Whipple, Martin, S. Dak., 1931 575
Ryder, N. Dak. (ca 1933) 584
Blaine Whipple with Nancy, Pat, and Sonny, 1932 585
The Ryder News and *The Douglas News*, 1932 588

The Underwood News, July 29, 1935 592
Pat, Nancy, and Sonny Whipple, Underwood, N. Dak. (ca 1933) 601
Marmarth, N. Dak. (mid 1930s) 614
Dick Whipple (ca 1937) 619
Pulitzer Prize Banquet, Bismarck, N. Dak. May 11, 1938 620
Blaine Whipple Application for Social Security Account Number 621
Five Whipple Children, Bismarck, N. Dak. 621
Five Whipple Children, Bismarck, N. Dak. (ca 1938) 622
Sonny, Nancy, and Pat Whipple, Bismarck, N. Dak. (ca 1936) 623
Blaine and Pearl Whipple (ca early 1940s) 629
The Whipple family, Mankato, Minn. (ca early 1950s) 630
Blaine and Pearl Whipple (ca 1951) 633
Blaine and Pearl 25th Wedding Anniversary, Tracy, Minn., 1952 635
Tom Linklater and Blaine Whipple, Renville, Minn. 1953 636
Dresden (Dresden Tenn.) *Enterprise*, Sept. 3. 1954 637
Blaine Whipple Funeral, Tracy, Minn. Sept. 1954 638
Bob and Mary Ann Whipple 640
Pearl Whipple 80th Birthday, Glencoe, Minn. Aug. 27, 1980 642
Robert Whipple Certificate of Baptism, 1930 691
Martin, S. Dak., 1929 692
Ben Scott (1882-1935) 693
Underewood News, Underwood, N. Dak. 694
North Dakota State Capitol Building, Bismarck 695
Mandan Indian Village and Ft. Abraham Lincoln 697
Bob Whipple, 9, magazine delivery boy 698
Wendell Wilkie, Republican Candidate for President, 1940 699
Soo Line Caboose 701
1926 Model T Ford truck 703
Robert Whipple, 8th Grade Diploma, Watford City N. Dak. 704
Whipple Kids, Minneapolis, Minn., 1944 705
Whipple Children's Great Grandfather Thomas Dolan 705
North Dakota Badlands 709
Medora, N. Dak. 710

Marques De Mores and Chateau 711
Bob Whipple, High School Sophomore, Redfield, S. D., 1945 713
Nancy and Bob Whipple, Tracy, Minn., 1947 716
Bob Whipple National Guard Discharge Certificate 717
Grand Canyon Hotel, Yellowstone Nat'l. Park 719
Bob Whipple, Yellowstone Park employee, 1948 720
Bob Whipple, Guest Ranch employee, Palm Springs, Calif. 721
Deep Well Guest Ranch, Palm Springs, Calif., 1949 723
Yosemite National Park pictures, 1949-1950 726-27
Bob Whipple, Mankato State College Student, Mankato, Minn. 728
Bob Whipple, U. of Mississippi Student, 1950 730-31
Bob Whipple's Navy Recruit Class, 1951 733
Bob Whipple's Navy Duty, Tacoma, Wash., 1951 734
Bob Whipple, U. S. Navy, Age 22 735
Pearl Harbor, Hawaii pictures 737-45
Bob Whipple's first car, 1953 746
Robert Whipple Navy Discharge, 1954 747
Bob Whipple, U. of Minnesota Student, 1955 749-50
Bob Whipple, U. of Oregon, Student, 1957 754
Blaine Whipple Red China controversy, 1961 758
Blaine Whipple campaign picture 761
Blaine Whipple and U.S. Senator Maurine Neuberger 763
Blaine Whipple on the steps of the U.S. Capitol Building 765
President John F. Kennedy and Blaine Whipple, 1962 768
Blaine Whipple Campaign Sign, 1962 769
Telegram from V.P. Lyndon Johnson to Blaine Whipple, 1962 771
Real Estate Broker Blaine Whipple 774
Blaine Whipple Certificate of Nomination, 1964 776
Blaine Whipple with Senator Hubert Humphrey of Minn., 1963 777
U.S. Senator Wayne Morse and Blaine Whipple 778
President Lyndon B. Johnson and Blaine Whipple, 1964 779
U. S. Senator Ernest Gruening of Alaska 780
Blaine Whipple on the stump, 1964 784

March of Dimes Certification of Appreciation 789
TV Star Robert Vaughn and Blaine Whipple, 1966 789
Blaine and Ines Whipple marriage pictures, 1966 790-91
U. S. Senators Morse, McCarthy, and Blaine Whipple, 1968 794
Certificate of Nomination, Democratic Nat'l. Committee 799
Blaine Whipple at Democratic Nat'l. Convention, Chicago, 1968 801
Blaine Whipple with U.S. Senators McGovern and Muskie 807
Letter to Blaine Whipple from U.S. Senator George McGovern 811
Sen. Morse and Blaine at Democratic Nat'l. Convention, 1972 812
Senator McGovern and Blaine, primary winners, 1972 813
Blaine Whipple Democratic Nat'l. Committee ID Card 814
Tolovana Inn, Cannon Beach, Ore., 1973 815
Oregon Delegates to 1972 Democratic Nat'l Convention 816-17
1975 Official Oregon State Photo, Senator Blaine Whipple 819
TV Star Lindsey Wagner, 1976 821
President Jimmy Carter and Blaine Whipple, 1976 823
Blaine Whipple, Chairing a Senate Committee 827
Blaine Whipple campaign billboard, 1978 829
Magazine advertisement for Real Estate Services 839
Real Estate Manual written by Blaine Whipple 840
Scott Family Genealogy, 1981 842
Whipple family pictures 844-45
World War I U. S. Navy Ships 851
Whipple-Peterson-Bartruff family pictures 852-53
Scott Whipple family pictures 941-46
Whipple Museum, University of Cambridge, England 1027
General William and Katharine (Moffett) Whipple 1066
John Trumbull Portrait of Declaration of Independence Signers 1068
Key to Signers of the Declaration of Independence 1069
Surrender of General John Burgoyne, Battle of Saratoga, N.Y. 1071
Key to Individuals at Burgoyne's Surrender 1072
Commodore Abraham Whipple, Continental Navy 1078
Spencer Blaine and Turner Collins Whipple 1096

Whipple Coat of Arms 1128
Common or Canon Law Relationship Chart 1137

GENEALOGICAL SECTION ILLUSTRATIONS

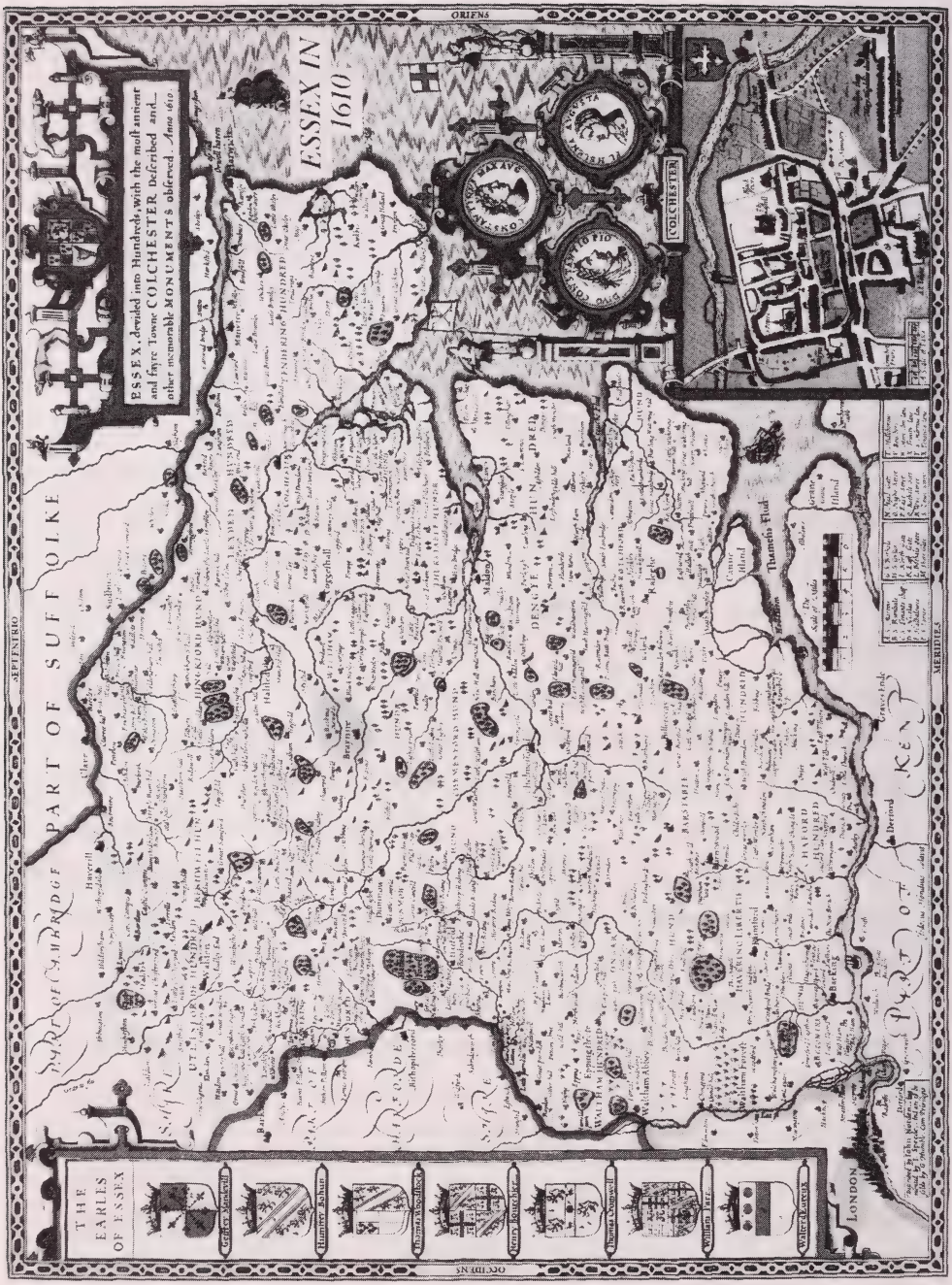
Rev. Benjamin Whipple (1755-1813) G 245
Fanny (Whipple) Chandler (1785-1866) G 264
Betsey Chaffee Whipple (1792-1870) G 265
Historic Whipple Truss G 279
Express Train of the 1850s G 280
Squire Whipple bridges G 281
Edwin P. Whipple (1819-1886) G 396
Rachel (Stephen) Whipple (1783-1854)
Whipple Hollow Cemetery G 398
Heman Whipple, Solon, Maine (1821-1898) G 532
Maj. Gen. William Denison Whipple (1826-1902) G 550
Angeline (Whipple) McKinney (1817-1899)
with son and daughter G 556
Cyrenius T. Whipple, Vinton, Iowa (1827 -1900) G 561
Cyrenius T. Whipple Deed for Land, 1851 G 562
Henry Whipple-Nancy Brown Marriage License 6 July 1881 G 569
Manley Whipple (1814-1843) G 571
Pliny Fisk Olds (1828-1908) and Jason Olds G 574
Sarah and Ransom Olds G 575
Sarah (Whipple) Olds (1824-1910) and Pliny Fisk Olds G 576
Francis J. Whipple (1819-1877) & Amanda Whipple (1824-1912) G582
Frank H. Whipple (1836-1919) Civil War Veteran G 591
Mary Louise (Allen) Whipple grave stone (1850-1937) G597
John Adams Whipple, pioneer photographer (1822-1891) G 621
Advertisement for Whipple's Daguerreotypes, Boston, 1848 G 625
Whipple Photograph Studio, Boston, 1870 G 628
Amiel Weeks Whipple, Civil War General (1817-1863) G 632
General Whipple's Headquarters at Fallmouth, Va. G 634
Fort Whipple, Prescott, Arizona G 636

Fort Whipple Museum, Prescott, Ariz. G 638
Solomon Whipple (1820-1884), Amos Whipple (1856-1916) G 650
Alfred Whipple (1845-1928) and Lydia Whipple (1848-1909) G 718
Sally Whipple (1848-?) and Andrew Harkness G 720
Sarah (Dean) Whipple (1848-1928) G 721
Adult Children of Henry F. and Martha (Hatch) Whipple G 723
Willis Walton Whipple (1858-1917) G 724
Iowa State Senator William Perry Whipple (1856-1910) G 739
Sel Whipple (1861-1912) and Anna Whipple (1866-1948) G 747
Selmon Whipple farm home near Vinton, Iowa G 749
Alphonso Whipple grave stone (1845-1915) G 756
R. E. Olds, Founder, Oldsmobile Automobile Co. (1864-1950) G 759
Ithamar C. Whipple, Mayor of Cheyenne, Wyo. (1839-1912) G 765
Ithamar C. Whipple home in Cheyenne G 768
Marcus Whipple (1861-1939) and Nancy Whipple (1864-1928) G 773
Elizabeth (Whipple) Jordan (1912-2000) G 781
Dr. Allen O. Whipple,
Father of Pancreatic Surgery (1881-1963) G 783 & 785
David and Charles Whipple with Penhollow Cousins G 801
Dr. Ashley C. Whipple (1852-1880) G 811
Sherman Leland Whipple (1862-1930) G 812
President Franklin D. Roosevelt
32nd President of the U.S., (1882-1945) G 856
Henry Learned Whipple (1871-1947) G 876
Estella, Helen and Paul Whipple G 876
Merritt Pendell Whipple (1875-1936) G 877
Rev. Lydia (Whipple) Wood (1911-1965) G 878
Milo Whipple (1884-1935) and Lois Jeanettee Fry (1884-1971) G 898
Richard E. Whipple, Minneapolis, Minn. (1933-2005) G 911 & 913
Mary Whipple (1869-1943) & George Johnson (1866-1931) G 922-23
Carl E. Whipple (1903-) & Marion Elder Robbins (1904-1994) G 927
Malcolm Montieth Whipple (1925-) G 934
George H. Whipple,
Nobel Prize in Medicine, 1934 (1878-1976) G 962 & 964

President Calvin College,
30th President of the U. S., (1872-1933) G 1008 & 1010
Byron Whipple (1913-1986) and Eleanor (Barwick) Whipple G 1044
Robert Schlarbaum (1906-1991) G 1059
LaVon (McKinley) Schlarbaum (1911-1999)
Elaine (Whipple) West and Stephen E. West (1914-1998) G 1085-86
Steve and Elaine West Farm Near Mt. Vernon, Iowa G 1087
Steve West Family Pictures G 1089-1094
Jim (1911-1983) Olive (1911-1956) and Nancy Whipple G 1095-96
Blaine Whipple, Sr. with Jim, Nancy, Elaine, and Susan, 1946. G 1096
Jim Whipple with sons Jerry, Jimmy, and Jay G 1097
Eddie Drotzman and Pat Whipple G 1098
Dan and Jason Drotzman, Yankton, S. Dak., 2005 G 1099-1100
Nancy Jasperson grave stone, Glencoe, Minn. (1932-1987) G 1101
Mary Ann Whipple & Bill McPherson wedding picture, 1955 G 1103
Whipple brothers and sisters in Yankton, S. Dak. 2004 G 1104
Mary Ann McPherson with nephew Brian Drotzman G 1104
Bill McPherson family in The Netherlands, 1966 G 1105
Roy C. Whipple, Saybrook, Ohio Cemetery G 1118
Marshall and Jean Whipple, Seattle, Wash. G 1126
Shirley J. (Franklin) Crawford G 1251
Whipple-Babbage Family, Cedar Rapids, Iowa G 1284
James Michael Whipple with son and daughter G 1285
Jay Allen Whipple with daughter Nicole E. Whipple G 1286
Terri (Jasperson) Ebert with daughters Sarah and Amanda G 1289
Dave Jasperson family, Evergreen Cemetery, Vinton, Iowa G 1291
Emily Jane Jasperson with grand aunt Elaine West G 1292
Stephanie and Luke Schmidt G 1293
Mauro-McPherson family, Littleton, Mass. G 1294
Nicholas and Amy Giambanis, G 1295
Lee Allen Babbage family, Cedar Rapids, Iowa G 1449
Lee and Linda Babbage G 1450
Jon Robert Garland, High School Graduation G 1450
Andy Garland, High School Graduation G 1451

Jessica Drotzman-Eric Hammer wedding picture, 2005	G 1451-1452
Whipple Witch and Wizard on moon light night	G 1540
All Saints Church, Home Upon Spaulding Moor, 1250	G1570
Didas Scott (1844-1929) with sons Louis and Amos	G 1615
Angeline (Hamel) Scott (1852-1915)	G 1616
Didas Scott Home, Corcoran, Minn.	G 1617
Nellie Scott (1884-1953) with 12 Children	G 1620
Pearl and Leonard Scott as babies in 1906	G 1621
Edward Drotzman (1926-1964) & Pat Whipple (1929-2007)	G 1678-1679
Pat Whipple (Drotzman) with grandchildren, 2005	G 1680
Jason, Brian, Laura Drotzman	G 1682
Brian and Dan Drotzman	G 1683
Mike and Ruth (Reumd) Drotzman	G 1684
Mike Drotzman with grandson Logan Hammer	G 1685
Jake Drotzman	G 1685
Jared, Logan, Joe, and Jake Drotzman	G 1686
Larry Drotzman (1955-1995) and Martha (Guerrero) Drotzman	G 1687
Jason Drotzman High School Graduation, 2005	G 1688
Jason, Pat, and Laura Drotzman	G 1689
Jessica and Logan Hammer	G 1690
Peter (1869-1940) and Agnes (Frye) Peterson (1876-1962)	G 1701
Peterson farm home, Parker, Ore.	G 1702
Students, Owen (1894-1943) and Oscar Peterson (1894-1946)	G 1704
Josephine Bartruff (1901-1995) and Owen D. Peterson	G 1705
Fire Captain Owen D. Peterson	G 1705
Wayne, Ines, and Norm Peterson as children	G 1706
Judith Lynn Steele	G 1711
Agnes Faye Frye	G 1721
Bartruff farm house, Marion Co., Ore.	G 1728
Middlegrove School, Salem, Ore.	G 1729
Bruce (1906-1986) and Lena (Matzke) (1902-1981) Steele	G 1771
Lena and Harold Steele	G 1772
Ines (Peterson), Harold (1929-1962), Judith and Bob Steele	G 1773-74

Ines, Harold, Judith, and Bob Steele	G 1773
Harold Steele and Bob Steele with Santa	G 1774
Sydney and Will Steele-Long	G 1775-1776
BreAnna and Miles Steele	G 1776
Robert and Tamera Steele family	G 1777
BreAnna and Miles Steele	G 1778
Alex and Wayne Zoerink	G 1807
Lorna, Connie, and David Zoerink	G 1808
Nancy Whipple and Don Jasperson wedding, 1950	G 1821
Don Jasperson with grandchildren	G 1821
Donna Marie Jasperson Baptism	G 1822
Sarah, Amanda, Chuck, (1951-2002) Katie, and Terri Ebert	G 1823
Terri and Amanda Ebert	G 1824
Katie Ebert and Blaine Whipple	G 1825
Sarah Ebert	G 1825
Matt Mostad-Katie Ebert wedding, 2004	G 1826
Donna Marie Jaspereson-Jerry Barney wedding, 1973	G 1827
Elaine West, Blaine Whipple, and Jeff Barney	G 1828
Leah and Jeff Barney	G 1828
Dave, Jan, and Emily Jasperson at Christmas	G 1830
Molly, Luke, Stephanie, and Kurt Schmidt family	G 1831
Stephanie Schmidt and Blaine Whipple	G 1831
Stephanie and Luke Schmidt	G 1832
Molly and Stephanie Schmidt 14 August 2004	G 1832
Mary Ann and Bill McPherson at Andros, Greece	G 1835
Jayme-Lee and Gregory Robert Mauro	G 1837
Greg Mauro	G 1838
Melissa and George Giambanis	G 1838
Nicholas and Amy Giambanis	G 1839



1610 Map of Essex County, England by John Speed (1552-1629), one of the most famous British map makers of the 17th century. This map is from *Theatre of Empire of Great Britain*, first issued in 1611 by John Sudbury and George Humble and printed by William Hall and John Beale. The engraving is by Jodocus of Amsterdam. Reproduced as *John Speed's England*, a colored facsimile of the first edition, Part II, edited by John Arlott. Phoenix House Limited, 1953, folio 31-32.
Bocking a little left of center about a third of the way from the top. It was one of 72 communities in the Hundred of Hinkford.

CHAPTER ONE

FIRST THERE WAS ENGLAND

1558: *Elizabeth I becomes Queen.* ***1563:*** *Term "Puritan" first used in England; 20,000 Londoners die from plague.* ***1569:*** *First map of world for navigational use.* ***1571:*** *Parliament forbids the export of wool.* ***1575:*** *London's population is 190,000.* ***1580:*** *Francis Drake returns from circumnavigating the world.* ***1584:*** *Sir Walter Raleigh discovers and annexes Virginia.* ***1586:*** *Raleigh brings tobacco to England for the first time.* ***1588:*** *The Spanish Armada.* ***1595:*** *English army abandons the bow as a weapon of war.* ***1596:*** *Galileo invents the thermometer, tomatoes are introduced into England, and water closets are installed at the Queen's palace.* ***1600:*** *The telescope is invented; estimated populations: England and Ireland, 5.5 million; France, 16 million; Germany, 14.5 million; Poland, 11 million; Spain, 8 million; Holland, 3 million.*

THE WHIPPLES who lived during the years highlighted above were probably aware of only three of the events listed: Elizabeth's coronation, the prohibition against the export of wool, and the Spanish Armada. The naming and coronation of a monarch was quickly communicated throughout the land and as successful clothiers,[1] they would have learned of the wool export prohibition since their livelihood depended on wool, and some family members may have been a part of the Essex troop assembled to fight the Armada. Most of the other contemporaneous happenings would have been unknown to them.

William Shakespeare, Francis Bacon, Christopher Wren, Isaac Newton, and Ben Jonson who lived then are better known today than in their own time. Then, only a few were rich or well educated enough to relate to what is the first era of really creative science or to acquaint themselves with the enormous literary output of the time. For those few, it was a magnificent century, "The best of all places for an Englishman to be."[2] For many, it was pure misery.

Today television and radio instantly broadcast events worldwide but competition for our attention is so great, few know when Elizabeth II became Queen[3] let alone Elizabeth I.[4] Even though we have easy access to massive amounts of historical information, few of us have any idea what life was like four centuries ago.

The goal of this book is to share the life and times of Matthew Whipple and his family beginning in Bocking, Essex Co., England and follow-

ing them across an uncharted ocean to an unknown wilderness and then to follow his descendants in America to the present time. Some authors,[5] providing no documentation, claim the family originated with Henri De V. Hipple, a gentleman of Normandy of the Vale de Suere (or Vale de Suede), who was knighted on the battle field of Agincourt (1415)[6]and given the motto "Fidele et Brave" and granted the manorial estates of Wraxall. They claim the name was anglicized into Whipple in the time of Henry VII (1485-1509). This claim is doubtful as there are records which include the Whipple name (with various spellings) in 1385, 1408, 1446, 1450, 1453 1486, 1489, and 1496.[7]

As of the 1630s, we can document four Whipples in the New World. John Whipple (hereafter referred to as young John) left England in 1632, age estimated to be between 14 and 16, and settled in Dorchester, Massachusetts. Previous authors have identified his place of nativity as both Bocking and Milford, Wales.[8] However, no evidence has been found placing him in either location. Brothers Matthew and John Whipple of Bocking settled in Ipswich, Essex County Massachusetts in 1638. Paul Whipple, a gunner, became a planter on Providence Island in the West Indies in April 1638.[9]

Off the eastern coast of Nicaragua about equidistant from Porto Bello and Cartagena and Jamaica, Providence Island was close to the sailing lanes used by the Spanish. It was first visited by the English before 1625 and became a privateering center against Spanish ships and possessions.[10] The colony existed until 1641. Later it was confused with the Island of New Providence in the Bahamas which was colonized in the 1670s. The first sponsored group of English planters, 90 men and boys, arrived in May 1631. They were from localities where the Puritan influence was strong, especially from Essex, Northants, and Oxfordshire counties. By 1635, there were 540 whites, mostly English, including 40 women and children, and nearly 100 Negro slaves on the island.

Fear of the Spanish inspired Providence to build 14 forts. No ship or boat could approach without being under guns manned by planters and their servants. Gunners like Paul Whipple were enticed to immigrate with the promise of land and a salary of up to £40 annually. They were in charge of the ordinance at each fort and gave weekly instructions in musketry. The Spanish attacked Providence in July 1635 and were repelled.[11] As a consequence, England issued privateering licenses and for the next six years Providence was Spain's worst enemy in the West Indies. Spain attacked again in May 1640 but again lost to the English.[12] By 1641, Spanish intelligence knew the extent and location of English strength[13] and landed a force of 2,000 and defeated the English. Four-hundred English prisoners

were sent to captivity in Spain.[14] No further record of Paul Whipple has been found. He was probably killed or captured and sent to Spain.

Charles Edward Banks, writing in *Planters of the Commonwealth*, says young John Whipple arrived in New England in 1632 on the *Lyon*, a ship commanded by Captain William Pierce. Many of the *Lyon's* passengers were from the Essex villages of Bocking, Braintree, Fairstead, Halstead, Hatfield, and Nazing. Banks says young John was from Bocking.[15] Author Winifred Ashwell says Matthew Whipple and John Whipple, the latter a carpenter, were passengers.[16] Roger Thompson, university reader in American colonial history at the University of East Anglia, Norwich, England, also places Matthew and John on the *Lyon*. His source was John Corley and Dixon Smith who "identified the Lyon Company of 1632."[17] This author has no doubt that the Matthew and John Whipple who settled in Ipswich, Massachusetts were natives of Bocking. He visited Bocking's St. Mary's church in 1963 and studied its parish records and acquired a copy of the will written in 1616 by Matthew Whipple, Sr. at a record office in London. Bocking parish records, Matthew's will, *Abstracts of English Records, Gathered Principally in Devonshire and Essex in a Search for the Ancestry of Roger Dearing c. 1624-1676 and Matthew Whipple c. 1560-1618* by Holman and Marvin, and Banks' *Topographical Dictionary of 2885 English Emigrants to New England 1620-1650*[18] confirm that Matthew and John were born in Bocking.

This author believes that young John was the only Whipple on the *Lyon*. That Matthew and John did not leave England until 1638 is confirmed by records that show Matthew's sons, John (later known as Lieut. John) and Matthew, were born in Bocking in September 1632 and about 1635; and that four children were born to Sarah, the wife of Matthew's younger brother John, between October 2, 1631 and February 17, 1637/38.[19] The first reference to Matthew and John Whipple in Ipswich records is September 1, 1638 when each was granted six acres of planting ground and a 245 acre farm jointly.[20] No known English or Massachusetts records identify the Ipswich John as a carpenter.

Some genealogists have speculated that young John was born in 1617. A birthdate of 1617 tracks with the claim that he was between 14 and 16 years old when he arrived in New England. There is no question he was in the Bay colony in 1632. Massachusetts records identify him as a carpenter apprentice[21] to Israel Stoughton who emigrated to New England in 1632 and settled his family at Dorchester. Records of October 3, 1632 show that Alex Miller and John Whipple were ordered to pay fines to their master Israel Stoughton "for their wastful expence of powder and shot."[22] John Whipple received a grant of land in Dorchester in 1637.[23] While the sur-

name Stoughton occasionally appears in the Bocking registers; Israel was not found. His father Thomas was vicar of Coggeshall, Essex from 1600 to 1606 and Israel was baptized there February 18, 1602/03.[24]

In 1988 and 1990, Dr. Charles M. Whipple, Jr.,[25] professor of psychology at Central Oklahoma State University at Edmond, engaged the English genealogical firm, Debrett Ancestry Research Limited[26] to search for a possible relationship between young John and Matthew and John.[27] Debrett's examined Banks' *Planters of the Commonwealth* and *Topographical Dictionary*; Michael Tepper's *Passengers to America*;[28] Meredith Colket's *Founders of Early American Families*;[29] the original registers of Bocking for the years 1575-1632;[30] and the International Genealogical Index of Essex[31] for evidence of a relationship. These sources were unproductive so the search was extended to parishes adjacent to Bocking—Gosfield, Shalford, Stisted, Rayne, and Halstead for the period 1600-1635 (records for Braintree do not begin until 1660[32]), and to the indexes of the Essex probate courts. The 11 Whipple wills proved between 1400 and 1700 contained no helpful information and no Whipples were found in the adjacent parishes. However, the will of Edward Whaples[33] of Eastwood, proved in 1610, was of some interest. Whaples named a brother John but of more significance is that the will was witnessed by a John Vassall, a member of the Virginia Company of London and a neighbor of John Winthrop who emigrated in 1630 and became Governor of Massachusetts Bay. The Vassalls were from Eastwood, Essex and owned the *Lyon*.

Boyd's Marriage Index[34] lists 19 Essex marriages between 1538 and 1837 for individuals named Whipple/Whaples; seven Whipple men married before 1618. Eastwood registers survive from 1685—too late to cross-check with Edward Whaples' will of 1610. Most Whipple/Whaples families lived in a cluster of parishes around Bocking, Felsted, and Great Waltham but no evidence was found that young John Whipple is a member of the Bocking family.[35]

This author welcomes communication from anyone with documented information on the date and place of young John's birth. It is hoped information presented here will stimulate further research in England and Massachusetts.

Information on brothers Matthew and John is readily available in the public record. They were sons of Matthew and Joan (maybe Stephens) Whipple.[36] No specific birth date has been found for either parent, but parish records of Bocking's St. Mary's Deanery Church show they were married in 1582. Both are buried in Bocking as is Margaret Whipple who may be Matthew's mother. It is supposed that Matthew was born about 1560.

What was life like during the lives of Matthew and Joan? They lived during interesting times. Elizabeth was queen for 45 years, a time when

England rapidly increased in wealth and prosperity and mostly free from war.[37] The Queen was thrifty and provident so industry was not crippled by heavy taxes. In 1587, an Elizabethan prayer referred to "the Commonwealth of England, a corner of the world, O Lord, which thou has singled out for the magnifying of thy majesty."[38]

The three Tudors, Henry VII, VIII, and Elizabeth (1485-1603), united the feudal lords who survived the Wars of the Roses[39] and forged a loyalty that made the monarchy a symbol of national unity and led to England's future greatness. Elizabeth, more than her father and grandfather, made the country strong and feared. English ships sailed around the world, traded everywhere, amassed fortunes, and laid the foundations of the American colonies. Her reign also laid the foundation for the Whipples' eventual move to the colonies.

While she was plain and lived simply and frugally, Elizabeth was a commanding figure with long face and quick, fine eyes. She was a bold horsewoman, a good shot, a graceful dancer, a skilled musician who loved gaiety and laughter, hoarded jewels, and liked good-looking men. An accomplished scholar, she studied the Greek Testament, the tragedies of Sophocles, the orations of Demosthenes, and spoke Italian and French as fluently as English. She was direct with her counsellors and expected them to be direct with her. Her political tact was unerring and she prided herself on the skill with which she hoodwinked and out-witted most statesman in Europe.

When Elizabeth assumed power, England's navy was small and weak, her troops few and poorly equipped, her fortifications out of repair, and her treasury was empty. The continent's two great powers were France and Spain. Spain was important because it governed the Netherlands, recipient of most of England's exports. France's alliance with Scotland made it important because war would mean an invasion from the Scottish border.

Most people, including the Whipples, lived in the southern part of the country because the counties around London offered a large market. The climate was more desirable and the ground more fertile than in the more rigorous and craggy north and in Wales and Scotland.

The country's increase in wealth meant more comforts. Window glass became plentiful; stoves became more commonplace; French, Italian, Greek, Spanish, and Canary wines were imported; wooden platters and spoons gave way to pewter, silver, and tin; China dishes and plates were beginning to be known. By the middle of the seventeenth century forks were in general use. Late in the century, sets of a dozen knives with a single fork were often listed in the inventories of rich households. One took a knife along when invited out to dine; knife and spoon sets (some col-

lapsible) were a must for travelers as the inns did not provide them for their guests.

Prices increased an estimated 60 percent during Elizabeth's reign, reflecting general economic expansion. Interest rates were legislated with a maximum rate of 10 percent imposed and accepted. Poverty was more prevalent in town than the countryside. Cloth making, the country's number one industry, suffered several periods of depression during the latter half of the sixteenth century when unemployment became rife. While Essex county was famous for making cloth, the industry flourished throughout the country. The country exported unfinished white cloth with a value estimated at from one to one-and-a-half million pounds sterling annually.

The title, "merrie England" comes from the historic festivals held by each district. Christmas, New Year's Day, Twelfth Night, Plough Monday,[40] Candlemas,[41] Shrove Tuesday,[42] Easter, May Day, and many others were celebrated with pageants and traditional customs of merry making.

In an age before weekday holidays or 40-hour weeks, the games and other social recreations on Sunday furnished practically the only opportunities for middle and lower-class recreation. However, wakes, fairs, and weddings were occasions for sport and jollity.

The Elizabethans were highly musical. Customers waiting for their turn in the barber chair passed the time by playing the musical instruments kept in the shop for that purpose. Musical ability was an essential qualification for polite social intercourse.

Attending the theatre was an evening amusement and the number of public theatres quickly increased. Admittance was a penny or two-pence for the pit and gallery; a shilling for seats in the more privileged part of the house. There were no women actors; female roles were performed by boys. At first plays were only allowed on Sunday evenings but soon there were "four or five Sundays every week."[43]

Bowling, tennis, and football were popular. The latter was rough, noisy, and dangerous. Both men and women wrestled. Cock-fighting and bear-baiting flourished. Small boys quarreling in the streets were swiftly surrounded and egged on by adults. Chopping with broadswords or stabbing with daggers was much admired. Combatants were often badly wounded or killed but no action was taken unless it could be proved the victor had transgressed the rules or had acted out of malice.

The upper classes dressed in fantastic clothes and spent money with abandon: courtiers,[44] merchants, tradesmen, and even the Queen speculated in daring foreign enterprises. Large houses were built that still survive. Highway robbery and piracy were profitable and even admired pursuits.

It took more than a century for the country to recover from the devastating effects of the Black Death[45] but the sixteenth century of Matthew Whipple, Sr. saw a dramatic growth in population and by the latter half of the seventeenth century under population ceased to be considered a problem. London was the only big city. Nine-tenths of the people lived in rural areas served by towns which were little more than villages by modern standards.

Despite general prosperity, many lived in poverty. There was general acceptance of wide-ranging inequities of income and social standing. Town work was rigidly controlled by the guilds.[46] No man could practice a craft who was not a guild member and who had not served a regular apprenticeship. Ten thousand vagabonds, unable to find work, wandered about the countryside. To survive, some became beggars, others thieves, other formed bands and attacked the passers-by. Three hundred were hanged annually.

Parish churches collected funds weekly for the poor. In 1572, Parliament required local authorities to support the "impotent poor" and to establish workhouses and houses of correction for beggars capable of work. The "poor rate" was fixed at two pence in 1598. Overseers of the poor were appointed annually by the local justices of the peace and took their place alongside church wardens as busy, unpaid, and necessary local officials.

Each household, like society as a whole, had its "head" who expected obedience. Wives, by law as well as custom, were subordinate to husbands as were children to parents. This paternal authority was reinforced by the preaching of the church.

William Harrison, later Canon[47] of Windsor, defined social hierarchy in 1577 as:

> the first sort were gentlemen with 'the prince at the head... the nobility next... and next to them knights, esquires,[48] and simple gentlemen.' Second came 'citizens and burgess[49]... of some substance to bear office,' and third 'yeomen'[50] of the countryside.' At the base were members of the fourth group, people 'to be ruled and not to rule others': day laborers, poor husbandmen,[51] and all artificers,[52] such as tailors, shoemakers, carpenters, and [people who] 'have no voice or authority in our commonwealth.[53]

Much importance was attached to degree and rank. In the parish church, attended by most of the successful, churchwardens[54] assigned seats according to the family's substance and position. But considerable social mobility prevailed. Sons of English nobility, unlike their continental counterparts, were willing to engage in trade. Sons of gentlemen sat

alongside children of yeomen, parsons, and mercers[55] in local grammar schools. Civic functions were performed by men of little or no rank, thus providing experience for similar duties in the colonies.

England's great primeval trees had all but vanished except in Essex where vast forests still stood. With the decline of the wool trade, Elizabeth encouraged mixed farming. It flourished on old grazing land enriched by centuries of treading and dunging sheep. The country produced flax, hemp, wool, corn, flesh, fish, leather, cloth, salt, butter, cheese, beer, fruit, and herbs; iron, steel, lead, cooper, tin, and all other kinds of minerals except gold and silver. Men were learning about coal mining which made possible the industrial revolution of the late eighteenth century.

Wheeled transport was virtually unknown for large scale, long distance hauling. Crude stage wagons, covered with leather or sailcloth supported by iron hoops, with broad wheels and no springs, carried up to 20 passengers and some goods. They were drawn by six or eight horses. Pack trains of 30 to 40 horses, each carrying up to 350 pounds, moved goods from place to place. Long distance travelers often joined pack horse trains for safety and guidance. The jingling bells of the lead horses and chink of horse brasses—"worn to ward off the evil eye to which horses are subject"[56]—announced the train's approach and was a welcome and exciting event in the life of tiny villages and small farms. Private coaches had appeared in Elizabeth's time. The sedan chair was introduced in 1634 and coaches for hire (hackneys) were in use in London from 1625. Public coaches for distance travel did not appear until around 1637 and they did not travel at night. Roads were deplorable. They were boggy and full of potholes winter and summer, unless summer happened to be dry. Then they were deeply rutted and thick with dust. They were maintained by the parishes with members giving six days free labor annually. Bridges and signposts were few. Fording rivers and streams was often dangerous.

There were no industrial centers as we know them. It was the village and town church spire or tower, not the factory chimney, which was a landmark to travelers. The family engaged in a cottage industry with the place of business in the house or adjacent to it. Apprentices lived with the family. Villages were small islands in a sea of countryside. Windmills stood silhouetted against the skyline; the streets petered out in 10 minutes' walk into a countryside redolent of cow and sheep dung and hay. The surrounding fields supplied food and wool; the forest and trees, firewood and the raw material for furniture; the clay or stone, material to build houses. Village men were farmers, carpenters, and builders, all rolled into one. A man could turn a hand to almost anything.

Admission to freedom of the town was by inheritance from a freeman father or by seven year's apprenticeship to a freeman. Trades included:

clothing, food and drink, leather, textile industry, household goods, building, cartage.[57] Principal occupations were tailor, tanner, butcher, shoemaker, glover,[58] mercer, weaver, baker, chandler,[59] smiths. The laboring class did not live within the town's walled area (or within the central area if there were no walls). They lived outside where land was cheaper. The well-to-do had ample gardens, orchards, and court yards. Merchants had open space for their warehouses, workshops, and stables. Every village had its own fiddler and company of hand-bell ringers and most had their own bands or companies of musicians.

There was a fear that "strangers" might come to live in the town and become chargeable to it.[60] Landlords renting to newcomers had to post a bond against the newcomers becoming chargeable to the town by reason of poverty. Aldermen were obligated to search their wards for strangers once a fortnight. Town officials included a mayor, mayor's clerk, bailiffs, chamberlains,[61] stewards of the fair, auditors of the borough accounts, and fish, meat, and leather testers.

Most cottages consisted of one room known as the house-room or house-part. The family lived, ate, and slept here. Other rooms, called "outshuts," were added at the ends or side of the house-room when the owner prospered. One, near the fireplace, might be the buttery where food, pots, and cooking utensils were kept. Another might lead to a "chambers," a single room with partitions half-way up to make sleeping cubicles or bedrooms. If the house-room was large and its roof high enough, an upper floor, known as a cock loft,[62] was built. It was reached by ladder. Barns were attached to many cottages, usually separated by nothing more than a wooden partition. In some cottages the entrance was through the barn. Following passage of a statute in 1589 forbidding more than one family to live in a cottage, more were built.

Seventeenth centruy English village houses.

Chairs were scarce when Elizabeth ruled (1558-1603) and not much more plentiful during James I's reign (1603-25). An estate that included chairs indicated status. As furniture was scarce, pieces were usually handed down from family to family. Oak stools were in every house. Rush matting began to supersede strewn rushes as a floor covering. Carpets covered tables, beds, settles,[63] and almost all other solid furniture but were not in general use on floors.

All the wooden parts of the bed were covered except the carving. Four slender posts supported the trester.[64] Finials[65] of various shapes topped the four corners. Valances, with lace curtains which could be drawn, complimented the bed. These beds had a serious disadvantage. They were as easily infested with bugs as their owners were with lice. We tend to view the past with nostalgia, think of it as elegant and glamorous, when in fact it was rat, flea, and bug ridden and due to the lack of sanitation, it stank abominably.

Water was plumbed to some houses but was brought to most by paid water-carriers. The poor fetched it from conduits and fountains. Bathing facilities were sadly lacking and the washing of clothing and linen was infrequent. There were no drains and unless your house overhung a stream, river, or moat, the privy was in some dismal little windowless room and was little better than a large bucket which had to be emptied somewhere, by someone. That someone was usually an older child. The privy overflowed constantly and dysentery and the bloody flux[66] were commonplace. Many houses had a cesspit in the cellar which usually overflowed into the house next door. Pewter chamber pots were common.

The English began eating breakfast in the seventeenth century. It was served between 6 and 7 a.m. Dinner was at 11 a.m., supper at 6 p.m. Contemporary cook books show that most recipes called for rich spices. Even craftsmen and yeomen had liberal tables. Potatoes were not on the menu.[67] Lettuce, beetroot, endive, spinach, asparagus, cabbage, carrots, turnips, parsnips, beans, peas, and artichokes were the vegetables of choice. Native-grown apples, pears, plums, cherries, gooseberries, raspberries, apricots, peaches, and nectarines were the fruit of choice. Oranges, lemons, prunes, raisins, figs, and all manner of spices and olives were imported. Bananas were first seen in England April 10, 1633 when a bunch was exhibited in an apothecary[68] in London.

Chocolate was introduced earlier than either coffee or tea and became a drink for the rich. Coffee was popular before tea which wasn't introduced until the mid 1500s. Asse's milk was believed to be superior to cow's milk. Water was not a drink of choice.

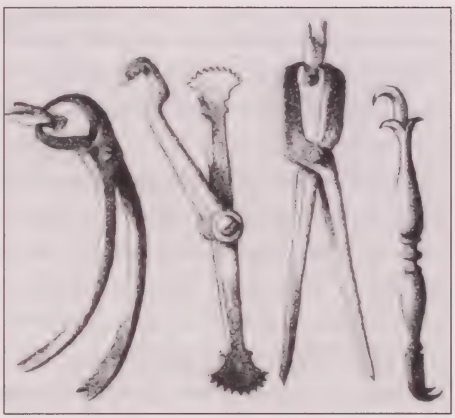
Milk was only for children and the aged. Young men were warned against it as it was full of vapors, caused headaches, agues,[69] rheums,[70] and invited convulsions and cramps. Because it was "over moist" it brought on palsy and "as the cheesy part of it is very great," it caused "stones and other obstructions."[71]

Taverns served an "ordinary" or "set meal" which usually consisted of a hot meat dish, bread, cheese, and ale. Hops were imported; innkeepers made their own beer which varied from strong to a light lager which children drank. They served specialties such as buttered ale, made by warming the ale, sweetening it with sugar, and spicing it with cinnamon. Lamb's

Wool, a drink made with the pulp of roasted apples, white wine, spices, and sugar, was a country favorite.

Cock ale, made by parboiling an old cock, grinding it, and putting the mash[72] in a canvas bag together with two quarts of sack,[73] three pounds of raisins, mace,[74] and cloves, was much esteemed. The sack was suspended for a least a week in a 10 gallon vat of ale before being bottled and left to ripen.

They had such appalling teeth that foreigners frequently remarked on them. Dental practices included use of a clawed lever called a "Pelican" to rip the tooth out of its socket, damaging adjacent teeth. Teeth under the gum line were "elevated" by a pointed metal shaft driven in the gum. Set in a handle, the shaft worked like a lever. Anesthetics were unknown so patients were bound or chained to a chair. Those who could afford it replaced lost teeth with teeth whittled out of bone or ivory.[75] The false tooth was held in place by tying it to the flanking teeth with gold wire. A "rank of teeth" carved of bone or wood, usually uncomfortable and ill-fitting, would fill a larger gap.



Dental instruments for levering and pulling teeth in England in the seventeenth century.

There was no systematic clinical teaching of medicine. The medical student got a degree by reading the available medical texts and attending lectures; he was not required to observe illness or disease by contact with a patient. Clinical teaching was not introduced until around 1638, the year the Bocking Whipples migrated to Massachusetts. Because medicine could be practiced by anyone, the poor were often better off than the rich because they couldn't afford doctors or the help of those who purported to cure by amulets,[76] charms, astrology, and sympathetic magic. Sir Theodore Turquet, the most fashionable physician of the day and doctor to Anna of Denmark, Queen to James I, used theriac[77] and earthworms in his prescriptions.

The people believed that if a pregnant woman's right eye moved more quickly and was clearer than the left, her child would be a boy, that girls were begotten if the father was drinking at the time of conception. William Harvey (1578-1657), a noted physician,[78] believed children of a subsequent marriage could resemble the first husband.

The plague was a recurring problem; more than 30,000 died from it in 1603, the year James I ascended the throne. A common treatment was wine,

treacle,[79] and pepper which if the patient was badly infected, he would vomit. It had to be forced down for if it could be kept down "there is no doubt of recovery by the Grace of God."[80] This cure survived three great plagues and no doubt some survived the cure. Both tobacco and perfume were thought to ward off plague. The tobacco was probably sweetened with melilot[81] and colored with an infusion of cinnamon or India wood. Snuff was powdered tobacco. Men grated their own on ivory graters.

One of the most repulsive cures for the plague was a potion of four ounces of "mummie"[82] cut small, mixed in a vessel with 10 ounces of spirits of wine, and set in horse dung to "digest" for a month. Another remedy included the brains, arteries, nerves, and pith[83] of the backbone of a young man who died a violent death—not too difficult to obtain in those days. These ingredients were to be digested for six months in spirits of wine then two drops taken with water daily to ward off the disease. These were amateur or home remedies but doctors didn't offer much better. The College of Physicians prescribed a large onion hollowed out and filled with fig, rue,[84] and Venice treacle. Among the 64 treacles were viper's fat mixed with honey.[85]

Midwifery was making progress. The Barber Surgeons Company was licensing surgeons to assist at dangerous and difficult births as early as 1610. Caesarean sections were rarely performed except on those already dying as every woman subjected to the procedure died. Infants had about one chance in three of surviving to age one and if surviving faced the same odds of reaching age five. Children who died in infancy were referred to as "chrism" children because they were buried in the chrism cloth used at their baptism. Those who survived were given two Christian names, a new custom, with Biblical names being in fashion.

The Puritan discipline of 1586 instructed parents to give their children scriptural names. In 1598 the author Robert Cleaver justified the Puritan policy as follows:

> It is a thing worthy to be wished that all parents... would give... such names as are named and commended unto us in the Holy Scriptures, to the end that when they come to years of discretion they, be hearing those names, may be excited and moved to follow the virtuous life and Christian conversations of those men and women whose names they bear, which the Holy Ghost hath commended for them: and contrariwise to eschew and avoid those faults and vices which are discommended in them.[86]

The more extreme Puritans chose names such as "More Fruit," "Faint Not," "The Lord Is Near," "Joy Again," "More Trials," and "Sufficient;" pious phrases rather than biblical proper names.

While there was no universal education, the country had a wide range of educational institutions from small private establishments, often kept by a single master, to well-endowed grammar schools. Latin was mandatory in all schools. Literacy increased during the 1560s and 1570s and by the beginning of the seventeenth century, 47 percent of the criminal class of London could read. University education was costly and seldom did a talented child from a poor family receive a fellowship.

So many schools were established during Elizabeth's reign that few towns were without one or two—even very small towns. Schools were for boys and they were expected to be able to read when they entered. Girls were taught, in-so-far as they were taught at all, at home. Marriage was their destiny; music and needlework their principal lessons. Most, however, learned to read and write.

Books began to play a vital role giving the average Englishman a wider perspective of the world. Poetry and prose in the Elizabethan age was far superior to any written when the Tudors first succeeded to the throne. *The Mercurius Gallobelgicus,* published weekly in Cologne,[87] circulated in England from around 1587. It chronicled events in Latin. Newsletters, written by hand, were widely distributed and were competitors of newspapers. Because of their private nature they were freer of censorship and had large numbers of subscribers. There was no publication with mass circulation. Broadsheets and ballads filled the role of the sensational tabloids of today and kept readers informed of horrors, miracles, multiple births, prodigies, and the disgraceful goings-on of high society.

The English novel, usually set in outlandish countries, was full of absurdities and improbabilities such as devoted lovers disguised as foreign waiting women attending their beloved mistress. Narrow escapes from pirates, bandits, heartless fathers, wicked stepmothers, avaricious uncles, sexy dukes, and distasteful marriages were their stock in trade. They were short and could usually be read in a few hours. They were in high demand and short in supply.

The men of those days had backgrounds, traditions, ideas, and standards so far removed from ours that they are but shadows today. More shadowy are the women as few of their diaries, autobiographies, and letters have been preserved. Our knowledge of women is gained from the incidental mention of them by men who seldom characterized or individualized them.

Lack of education was a fundamental disadvantage for most women. Most, up to age 45, were too busy having and raising children to need other occupations. Men excluded them from business and political affairs as it was widely believed they could not keep secrets. Women were further handicapped by the subordination imposed on them as children. Youngsters of both sexes were taught to be silent and utterly submissive before

their elders. Parents were as severe as schoolmasters and as their children grew older, they made strangers of them. It was worse for daughters than sons. Mothers deemed it their duty to bring up daughters to be pliable and utterly obedient so they would be readily marriageable.

Mortality among young wives was high. Most spent the years between 18 and 45 bearing children and were unwell much of the time. If they survived the perils of childbirth and the illness that followed frequent pregnancies—eight to 15 children including stillbirths were not uncommon—they were candidates for tuberculosis whose germs were bred in their cold and unventilated houses. Consumption[88] claimed many before the age of 20. Men, who were outside much of the time, were less prone to the disease. The advance of Puritanism was beneficial to women as it stressed the obligation of the husband to his wife. While not acknowledging equality, Puritans exalted family life and the association of men and women in the home.

Elizabethan women wore wigs, males didn't. Men's hair was kept short. Combs were made of boxwood,[89] scented wood, tortoise shell, ivory, and sometimes black lead—the latter kept the hair black. Segments of the population were interested in beauty aids. The popular Elizabethan skin clearer, "Soliman," whose ingredients were mostly oil of vitriol,[90] was gradually replaced by more gentle washes of powdered white mercury, lemon juice, pulverized egg shells, and white wine. May dew[91] was a favorite. Less attractive but available year round was puppy dog urine,[92] a reputed skin beautifier. Sweat from behind the ears was used for chapped lips.

William Butler, one time doctor to Prince Henry, cured blemishes by hanging his patients until they were blue in the face then cut the vein which fed the "pimples" to let out the "black, ugly blood." A more popular cure was Oyl of Tartar[93] which took away "all foul spots."[94] Many people considered warts[95] lucky. A great wart on the chin signified riches, a good digestion, and an ability to talk a lot. Those who considered them blemishes to be removed rubbed them three or four times a day with salted shredded radishes that had been shaken in a pewter dish.

Women hid unsightly spots with patches of black taffeta and red perfumed Spanish leather of various sizes and shapes such as crescent moons, stars, and diamonds. Eyes were made large and beautiful with belladonna.[96] Eyebrows were turned "a very curious black" with an ointment of burnt red filberts and goat's grease.

The Stuart century loved perfumes and incense. Everything possible was perfumed—shoes, handkerchiefs, leather screens, boxes, books, gloves. Powders, kept in sweet coffers of all shapes and sizes, were made of silver, gold, or scented wood. Engraved or embossed flagons[97] of crystal or silver held scented waters.

Dry, syrupy, aqueous,[98] or greasy, perfume was used in all forms and at all times. Perfumed powders or "pulvill" were puffed by small bellows into odorous places much as the aerosol air freshener is today. "Have you pulvill'd the Coachman and Postilion[99] that they may not Stink of the Stable" was a recurring question.[100] Hand mirrors and toilet sets were carried by both sexes.

Our seventeenth century ancestors weren't much for washing. Life stank and it is doubtful the B.O. and halitosis of today would have been noticed. Some women bathed in asse's milk as a beautifier but unless it was washed off afterwards, the odor was almost unbearable. Dry cleaning—it wasn't called that—was a chore. Bull's gall,[101] white of egg, burnt alum,[102] salt, orris powder,[103] and soap were formed in a ball, dried in the shade, and rubbed over the stain. If the spot didn't disappear after rinsing, the process was repeated. Pitch, tar, resin, and grease spots were removed from clothing and hats by dipping a feather in the finest oil of turpentine and applied to the spot.

A "witchcraze" began about 1550 and lasted a century. Between 1563 and 1603, 174 persons were indicted for black witchcraft in the Whipple's home county. Even though it was a capital offence only half were executed. White witchcraft, as practiced by "cunning" men and women, was generally acceptable. Awe and superstition were a definite part of the society and culture.

The Church of England became the agent of national integration. As a child of a marriage forbidden by the Pope,[104] coupled with a desire to be free from outside control, Elizabeth had Parliament pass the Second Act of Supremacy which, along with the Act of Uniformity, established that the unity of church and realm were identical. These laws declared that "no foreign prince, person, prelate, state, or potentate, spiritual or temporal, shall use, enjoy, or exercise any power, jurisdiction, superiority, authority, preeminence, or privilege, spiritual or ecclesiastical, within this realm.[105] The Queen decreed church regulations in matters of doctrine. Mass was abolished, replaced by a modified Second Book of Common Prayer.[106] Clergymen and officers of the Crown had to take an Oath of Obedience. In February 1570, Pope Pius V published a Bull[107] excommunicating and deposing Elizabeth and absolving her subjects from obedience. Over 10 years had passed since she ascended the throne and her government was so firmly entrenched and so popular the Bull had no effect.

The consequence of these Acts (the Second Act of Supremacy and the Act of Uniformity) was to create a Church of England in a form midway between the church of Rome and the Protestant churches on the continent. It was not Roman Catholic as it rejected the Pope and introduced many differences in doctrines and ceremonies. It differed from Protestant churches, organizing under Archbishops and Bishops with a prescribed

form of worship, and its clergymen still wore robes at service.

Attendance on Sunday and every holy day was compulsory after 1559. Non-attendance was punishable by a one shilling fine for every absence. Elizabeth's birthday became a church holy day in 1568 with the royal arms displayed in every church. In 1593 Parliament enacted legislation to jail without bail anyone 16 or over who refused to attend church for a month or who attended any religious conventicle.[108] The jail term was to last until "he publicly submit and conform." Those who refused to submit were to "abjure[109] this realm of England and all other of the Queen's dominions forever."[110]

This middle position on church matters was apparently satisfactory to the majority but caused deep dissatisfaction for those on the two extremes. Devoted Catholics did not accept abolition of the Pope's power or the other changes from the old ways. Committed Protestants were dissatisfied with the retention of so much from the medieval church and wanted the Reformation to go further.[111] The latter group, "Puritans," were numerous among the middle classes and in the towns and wanted "a purer" form of worship. They attacked practices considered "Popish" such as wearing vestments, playing organs in church, use of the ring in the marriage ceremony,[112] and the use of the sign of the cross in baptisms.

Early on, Elizabeth showed considerable leniency in enforcing the Act of Supremacy but eventually her position hardened. In April 1571 Parliament displayed Puritan sympathies but the Queen would not be shaken from her view that religion, like foreign policy, was a matter of state and the sole concern of the executive. Consequently, she either prevented bills on religion from being debated in Parliament or vetoed them. Seeing little hope of reform through Parliament, the rising Puritan movement began trying to influence local congregations. Puritan clergy held periodic meetings, called prophesyings, to train their younger colleagues in the art and craft of expounding and applying the Gospel.[113] The Queen viewed the meetings as subversion of church and state and in 1576 ordered Edmund Grindal, Archbishop of Cantebury, to suppress them. When he refused, he was suspended.[114]

In the 1580s a more extreme movement grew out of the "prophesying." Known as the "classical" movement, it advocated a complete Presbyterian[115] organization within the church extending up to a National Synod or Assembly. A separatist Puritan movement was beginning at the same time. The Queen rejected these innovative ideas, letting it be known that she preferred the clergy not to marry, that she liked them to wear vestments, and that she did not care for long sermons, the essence of Puritan services.[116] While she punished Catholic priests and Puritan clergy for disturbing the public order or plotting treason, she prevented Parliament

from passing bills aimed at compelling Christians to violate their consciences.

James Stuart, the only child of Mary Queen of Scots, was crowned King James VI of Scotland when only 11 months old. He ruled Scotland nearly 40 years before succeeding Elizabeth as England's new monarch. When he left Edinburgh for London in March 1603 to claim his throne at Westminster, he was an experienced and successful King but it soon became apparent that he, who had never been a subject, did not understand the mood of the country's middle classes who were insisting on greater power for Parliament. Fortunately for James the long and expensive war with Spain ended in 1604 but the Thirty Years' War between Catholics and Protestants, which began in Germany in 1618, dragged England into the maelstrom of European politics.

James had a big head and slobbering tongue.[117] His quilted clothes and rickety legs were a grotesque contrast to Henry VIII and Elizabeth but under his ridiculous exterior lay much natural ability. His reading, especially in theological matters, was extensive and he was a voluminous author on subjects ranging from predestination[118] to tobacco. Approximately two months after he became King, the convocation of the province of Canterbury met and adopted 161 Cannons.[119] Puritans opposed those that:

a) affirmed the true and apostolic character of the Church of England as then established;
b) denied that the forms of prayer or the rites of the Church were in any way repugnant to scripture, or superstitions;
c) did not question the Christian character of such offices as archbishoprics, bishoprics, or deaneries;
d) did not doubt the lawfulness of the ordination and call of bishops, priests, and deacons, when tested by the Word of God;
e) prohibited the separation from the Church of England, or to assert that any bodies of English subjects other than those assembling according to the forms established by law constitutes a true church;
d) provided that anyone declaring any one of these things is ipso facto[120] to incur the penalty of excommunication, in such severity that only a public recantation and the satisfaction of the archbishop as to genuineness of repentance can restore the offender to the church.[121]

The Puritans hoped James' Presbyterian upbringing and background would cause him to support church reform. So it was with confidence of a favorable hearing that about 750 Church of England ministers with Puritan sympathies laid before him the famous Millenary Petition[122] praying for a reform of the English Church in the direction of a more thorough-

going Protestantism. These hopes were shared by the Separatist body at Amsterdam.

Instead of either granting or refusing the requests, James arranged a debate between leading bishops and others who did not wish any change in the established church, and prominent clergymen of Puritan sympathies. The conference was held before the King at his Hampton Court Palace near London. By the close of January 1604 that conference made it plain that no essential reforms of any sort were to be granted by England's new ruler. James found the Puritan views extreme and repugnant and like Elizabeth, he regarded the Episcopacy[123] as a bulwark of the monarchy.

Despite their monarch's opposition, the Puritans, by 1632, succeeded in establishing a brotherhood of preachers linked by ties of youthful association, friendship, marriage, conviction, and interest. Besides London and port towns, they had a considerable following in the clothing towns where refugee Protestant sects from France and the Spanish Netherlands had settled. Their followers were from all levels of society and Cambridge University was their main seminary and training ground.[124]

Charles I[125] assumed the throne in March 1625. Portraits show he was handsome and it is reported he was graceful and fond of ceremony and formality. Not as well educated as his father,[126] he was narrow minded, slow witted, and found it difficult to see more than one side of an issue. He had been brought up to believe in the divine authority and independence of the King and had no respect for those who differed with him.

Soon after Charles ascended the throne, England waged war against Spain. The army sent to the Netherlands was decimated by disease. The fleet lent to France to fight Spain was used by the French King to put down the Huguenots,[127] much to the disgust of English Protestants. England then drifted into a war with France which ended in failure. Parliament did not authorize or approve of the expeditions ordered by the King, no national interest was taken in them or proper equipment, support, or leadership provided for them. Thus in foreign affairs Charles produced a record of blunders and failures.

On the home front, Charles and his principal clerical adviser, Bishop Laud, were committed to a restoration of high-church ceremonies and to the vindication of Episcopal authority.[128] He allowed the Star Chamber[129] to sentence a clergyman to perpetual imprisonment, mutilation, and whipping for a libel against the bishops. He supported celibacy for the clergy, prayers for the dead, the doctrine of purgatory,[130] and appointed men to power who were known to support reunion of the English Church with Rome. Puritans resented these actions, fearing Charles would undo the results of the Reformation.

Every passing year made the people more concerned about the charac-

ter of their King. His ignorance of the history and the temper of the nation caused them to feel more and more deeply that stronger safeguards were needed to withstand the arbitrary power of the sovereign. His third Parliament, called in 1628, drafted the Petition of Rights making forced loans, martial law in peacetime, and billeting soldiers in private homes illegal. The King assented to the new laws but dissolved Parliament and disregarded them.

In 1629 the quarrel between Charles and Parliament became so bitter the King dissolved Parliament, imprisoned his opponents, and for 10 years ruled without Parliament. It was a decade in which the Crown and Laud seemed bent on subverting the liberties of all Englishmen, causing many to believe their best course was to leave England and build a new Commonwealth in America with a purified church and full political freedom.

The English claimed New England from its discovery in the reign of Henry VII (1485-1509) and opened the new country to all English subjects if they went there on conditions established by the King. Colonization was justified on economic and religious grounds of conquest; subordination, enslavement, or annihilation of the infidel native inhabitants; and the acquisition of their lands by Christian white men. The economic defense of this policy was the failure of the Indians to utilize the natural resources of America to advance civilization. The religious defense was based on Christianity being superior to all other religious faiths and it was the duty of Christian nations to carry the gospel to heathen lands.

John Cabot and his son Sebastian, by accident, were the first Englishmen to visit the new world.[131] They were searching for a western all-water route to China in 1497, hoping to find a passage through the Americas or around their northern boundaries. Instead they found the northeastern coast of modern Canada and named it "new-found land." In 1509 Sebastian is thought to have discovered Hudson Bay. In the late 1520s and early 1530s, William Hawkins[132] of Plymouth opened trade with Guinea and Brazil. English ships got to the White Sea and opened trade with Russia in 1553, creating new markets for cloth. English overseas trade was now beginning to flourish.

The first English colony in America was founded by Sir Richard Grenville[133] in 1585 on Roanoke Island in Chesapeake Bay. The Indians were friendly at first and the colonists thought they had found an earthly paradise. But the natives became less friendly and "paradise" disappeared. When Sir Francis Drake,[134] on his way home from his last raid in the Caribbean, stopped to visit, the disappointed colonists returned with him.

Reports on the Americas from Drake and Hawkins, the beginnings of the settlement in Newfoundland, Spanish settlements in the new world, and a supposed threat of over-population at home led to the idea advo-

cated in the middle of Elizabeth's reign to establish colonies overseas.

Yet on January 1, 1602, more than a century after Cabot's voyage, no English settlement existed in America. On Friday March 25, 1602, Captain Bartholomew Gosnold,[135] with a company of 32 (20 were to be colonists), set sail in the *Concord* and May 14 hit landfall at a spot estimated to be north of Cape Ann, Massachusetts. Gosnold and four others went ashore to explore, making them the first Englishmen to trod the soil of New England. When they returned to the ship, the deck was thick with codfish caught by the crew. Noting their great abundance, Gosnold named the headlands Cape Cod thus giving the first English name to any part of New England. The first great island they came to was christened Martha's Vineyard. He selected one of the smaller islands for a residence, named it Elizabeth in honor of the queen, and erected a fort and storehouse. After determining their food wouldn't last until the ship could go to England and return, the entire company set sail June 18 and returned to England.

Between 1608 and 1620 numerous English exploring and trading expeditions reached New England but none resulted in permanent settlement. Captain John Smith[136] made a careful examination of the region in 1614, named it New England, traded with the Indians, made a map,[137] and wrote a description of the country. The French and Dutch claimed part of the same region.

By the end of 1616 the entire seacoast of New England had been explored. Its great bays and rivers had been located and to some extent surveyed and described. Maps by Smith and Samuel de Champlain[138] placed these discoveries with proximate accuracy. The names and abodes of the native tribes, their habits and manners, their numbers and disposition, had been set forth in sufficient detail for practical men to understand.

The resources of the new world—the fishery, the fur trade, the ship timber, the soil, the natural vegetation and productions—had been frequently described and exhibited in the ports of England, France, and Spain. The route was well known. A thousand sailors had traversed it.

Thus when the *Mayflower* set sail from Plymouth, England September 6, 1620 with 102 Pilgrims aboard, their leaders had a reasonable intelligence of what to expect both at sea and when they landed.[139] After a long and stormy voyage, the *Mayflower* sighted Cape Cod on November 9 and landed on November 11. After more than a month searching for the right location to settle, they decided on Plymouth and entered the harbor December 16. By a strange coincidence, Prince Charles had given the name of Plymouth to that very place. The founding of Plymouth dates from December 20, 1620. Unlike earlier settlements, it was never abandoned and it became a gateway to a thousand other places in the new world.

A group of merchants known as the "Dorchester Adventurers" founded

a fishing station at Cape Ann in 1623. In March 1627–28, they obtained a patent[140] from the Council for New England for a tract of land extending three miles north of the Merrimack River to three miles south of the Charles River and from "sea to sea." This became Massachusetts. John Endicott, a stern and uncompromising Puritan, was named governor and arrived in September 1628 and organized the government. In March 1628-29, the Dorchester Adventurers received a Royal Charter under the title "The Governor and Company of the Massachusetts Bay in New England." After Endicott and the officers resigned in October 1629, John Winthrop was elected Governor, and sailed with the Winthrop fleet, arriving in New England in 1630.

Restraints on religious liberty, coupled with a severe depression in the cloth industry, caused the Essex County Whipples to join thousands of their neighbors in a great migration to the American colonies. Others left because they saw an opportunity to earn a better living and to escape the ever present European wars. Enough was known about New England to make it possible for families to make the decision to move.

Over 1,200 vessels transported so many people—with their cattle, household goods, and other property—that English towns were left with half their population. Joining the migration were doctors, ministers, lawyers, clothiers, school teachers, businessmen, artisans, craftsmen, and writers. Ancestors of a number of presidents: George Washington, the two Adams, Abraham Lincoln, the two Roosevelts, and Calvin Coolidge were among the early settlers.

Before joining the Whipples in New England, we need to review their life in Essex County and the village of Bocking to get a sense of what they would give up for a new home in the wilderness of Essex County, Massachusetts and the village of Ipswich.

1. Dealers in cloth. They would have supported the law since cloth making was a struggling industry and the need for wool was great.
2. Elizabeth Burton, *The Pageant of Stuart England,* Charles Scribner's Sons, (New York, 1962). 20.
3. June 2, 1953.
4. November 17, 1558.
5. Charles H. Whipple (Brig. General U.S. Army, Retired). *Genealogy of the Whipple-Wright, Wagner, Ward-Pell, McLean-Burnet Families Together with Records of Allied Families,* Press of Commercial Printing House, (Los Angeles, 1917). This work is on the family of Capt. John Whipple of Providence, R.I. Clara Hammond McGuigan, *The Antecedents and Descendants of Noah Whipple of the Rogerene Community at Quakertown, Connecticut,* John M. Kingsbury, Publisher, (Ithaca, N.Y., 1971). 11. This work is also on the family of Capt. John Whipple of Providence. General Charles H. Whipple was her source.
6. On 27 Dec. 1989, the author wrote to the Bodleian Library at Oxford, England for confirmation of the knighthood. William Hodges, assistant librarian, responded by letter 12 Jan. 1990 stating, "Unfortunately I have not been able to find anything relevant to your enquiry." Subsequently, I learned that the "ancient" library in Birmingham, England is supposedly the repository of the manuscripts (Dougdale and Thorpe) said to contain the De V. Hipple information and an account of the aristocratic colonial families compiled by G.P.R. James while he was British Consul at Norfolk, Va. The history of the Virginia branch of the family is said to begin at the time of William the Conqueror to the time of Col. John Whipple of the Prince Rupert's Division of the Cavaliers who supposedly emigrated to Virginia in 1662. These manuscripts are not available through interlibrary loan, so it is unknown if the De V. Hipple report is correct.
7. Mary Lovering Holman and George R. Marvin, editors, *Abstracts of English Records, Gathered Principally in Devonshire and Essex in a Search for the Ancestry of Roger Dearing c. 1624-1676 and Matthew Whipple c. 1560-1618.* (Boston, 1929). 455, 587-90, 501, 465, 502-7.
8. The *Gazetteer of Great Britain and Ireland Being A Complete Topographical Dictionary of the United Kingdom with Numerous Illustrations and Sixty Maps,* published by Cassell and Company Limited of London, Paris, and Melbourne in 1893 lists on pp. 367-68 the following Milfords: (1) a parish and village in S.W. Hampshire, 3.5 miles S.W. of Lymington. The registers of its All Saints church begin in the sixteenth century. (2) An ecclesiastical parish and village within the parish of Willey in S.W. Surrey, 1.25 miles south of Godalming. (3) An ecclesiastical parish and village on the Derwent parish of Duffield in mid Derbyshire, 6 miles north of Derby. (4) A township and hamlet in the parish of St. Martin Salisbury, included in the border of Salisbury in S.E. Wiltshire. (5) A small village with a railway station, parish of Baswich, in west Staffordshire, 4 miles east southeast of Stafford. (6) A parliamentary borough and seaport on the north shore of Milford Haven, parish of Huberston and Steynton in S.W. Pembrokeshire, 6 miles west northwest of Pembroke, Welsh county of Pembroke. [Its parish registers begin in 1637, eliminating almost all chances of finding a John Whipple there in 1617]. (7) Township and parish of Little Ness in north Shropshire, 8 miles northwest of Shrewsbury. (8) Milford North, a place in the parish of Kirkby Warfe in Yorks, 2 miles southeast of Tadcaster. (9) A hamlet and parish of Frithelstock in north Devon, 2 miles west of Great Torrington. (10) A hamlet and

parish of Hartland in north Devon, 13 miles west of Bideford. (11) A village on the Deel, parish of Kilbolane in the north of county Cork, Ireland, southwest of Charleville. (12) A village and parish of Lisnadill in mid county Armagh, Ireland, 2 miles south of Armagh. (13) A village with railway station in the parish of Cloydah in the north of county Carlow, Ireland, about 3 miles west of Carlow. Milford Haven, (6) above, is a large inlet of the sea in S.W. Pembrokenshire, 7.5 miles south of Haverfordwest. The town of Pembroke is at the head of a large inlet on the south side about 13 miles from the mouth. Milford is on the north shore, about 7 miles from the mouth. Milford, New, or Neyland, is a small seaport on the north shore of Milford Haven in the parish of Llanstadwell, 4 miles east of Milford. New Milford is the terminus of the South Wales Railway, which is carried down to the water's edge. Milford, South is an ecclesiastical parish (extending into the parish of Monk Fryston), township, and village in the parish of Sherburn, W.R. Yorks, 6 miles north of Ponterfract. Its church , St. Mary the Virgin, is early English style.

9. Peter Wilson Coldham, *The Complete Book of Emigrants 1607-1660,* Genealogical Publishing Co., Inc., (Baltimore, 1987). 195. Providence Island was incorporated 4 December 1629 as "The Governor and Company of Adventurers of the City of Westminster for the plantation of the Islands of Providence, Henrietta, and the adjacent islands lying upon the coast of America." About six miles long and four wide, it had superior climate, fertility, water supply, and ease of fortification. The much larger and heavily timbered Henrietta, 60 miles southwest, was not as fertile nor as easily fortifiable. Association, off the northwest coast of Haiti, had been a rendezvous for pirates and rovers of all nations since the time of Drake. Today, Providence and Henrietta are a part of Columbia, Association belongs to Haiti.
10. Providence Island—Three islands comprised the settlement: Santa Catalina, renamed Providence by the English, San Andreas, renamed Henrietta, and Tortuga, renamed Association.
11. The port was surrounded by huge rocks and cliffs with only one place to land. Three Spanish ships, four shallops, and one boat with about 300 soldiers were repelled.
12. The Spanish force of six frigates and a galleon, 800 soldiers and 200 Negroes was defeated by The English in a pitched battle.
13. The English had 56 great and 148 smaller pieces of artillery in 14 forts about 600 armed men.
14. For a complete account of Providence, see Arthur Percival Newton, *The Colonizing Activities of the English Puritans*, Yale University Press, (New Haven, 1914); W. Aldolphe Roberts, *The Caribbean*, The Bobbs-Merrill Company, (Indianapolis and New York, 1940); and Peter Earle *The Treasure of the Concepcion*, The Viking Press, (New York, 1980).
15. Charles Edwards Banks, *The Planters of the Commonwealth*. Originally published in 1930. Genealogical Publishing Co., Inc. (Baltimore, 1979). 99-102.
16. Winifred Ashwell, *Essex and the Lyon: The people who sailed in her to New England in 1632 and the land to which they went*. Braintree District Council. (Braintree, Essex, England. 1979). The Braintree District Council of Braintree, Essex Co., England, distributes a brochure titled "The American Connection with Braintree District," which places Matthew and John Whipple on the *Lyon's* 1632 voyage.
17. Roger Thompson, "Social Cohesion in Early New England," *New England Historic Genealogical Register*, Vol. 146. New England Historic Genealogical Society. (Boston, July 1992). 242, fn 23. (Hereafter *Register*).
18. Charles Edwards Banks, *Topographical Dictionary of 2885 English Emigrants to New England 1620-1650*. Southern Book Company. (Baltimore, 1957). 40.

19. Whipple children—William on October 2, 1631; Ann on June 2, 1633; Judith on August 4, 1635; and Matthew on February 17, 1637/38.
20. George A. Schofield, editor, *The Ancient Records of the Town of Ipswich 1634-1650*, Vol. I. Chronicle Motor Press. (Ipswich, 1899). Pages are not numbered.
21. Apprentices above 14 who entered into indentures for a term of years were furnished meat, drink, and clothes during their apprenticeship. If they had a special skill, they were paid a wage.
22. Ralph M. Stoughton, "The Stoughton Families of Dorchester, Mass., and Windsor, Conn.," *The American Genealogist*, Vol. 29, No. 4. (New Haven, October 1953). 193-4.
23. John Austin, *Genealogical Dictionary of Rhode Island*, Genealogical Publishing Co., Inc., (Baltimore, Reprint, 1969). 221.
24. A search of the records of Great Coggeshall should be undertaken to see if young John Whipple can be tied to Stoughton there.
25. Charles M. Whipple, Jr., Ph.D., Ed.D., Litt. D., a descendant of young John Whipple, is author of *Sons and Daughters of Jesse*. Authorized by the Jabez Whipple Family Association, Bicentennial Edition. Southwestern Press, (Oklahoma City, 1976).
26. Debrett Ancestry Research Limited—Located at Gordon Road, Winchester, SO23 7DD. England.
27. The first Debrett report, issued 29 Feb 1988, was signed by Juliet Burgess, Director of Genealogy.
28. Michael Tepper, Editor, *Passengers to America*, Genealogical Publishing Co., Inc. (Baltimore, 1977).
29. Meredith B. Colket, Jr., *Founders of Early American Families*, The Order of the General Court of Founders and Patriots of America, (Cleveland, Ohio, 1985).
30. Bocking St. Marys Church—There are gaps in the registers. Baptisms are missing for 1571-2; 1581-2; 1606-55. Marriage registers are missing for 1575-92.
31. International Genealogical Index—This is an index to baptisms and marriages compiled by the Church of Latter Day Saints and arranged alphabetically by county. It is neither complete nor wholly accurate but is a useful genealogical source.
32. A large number of Whipples lived in Braintree at that time. Since Bocking was only about two miles away, it is likely related family members lived in both villages.
33. Spelling was not standardized at this time. Even highly educated people spelled their own names in a variety of ways. See Appendix for the variety of ways Whipple was spelled.
34. Boyd's Marriage Index—Published by the Society of Genealogists, London, 1980.
35. Robert Charles Anderson, "Searching for Patterns of Migration," *The Great Migration Newsletter*, New England Historic Genealogical Society Vol. I, No. 1, (Boston, January-March 1990) says many early settlers returned to England to get married, to take care of unfinished business, and/or to collect the rest of their families. He intends to document many of these return trips in future issues. Finding Matthew on a return voyage might make a a 1632 passage on the *Lyon* believable and lead to evidence of a relationship with young John.
36. Records refer to him as Matthew, the Elder.
37. War between England and Spain was declared in July 1585. The Spanish battle fleet, known as the Armada, was destroyed in this war.
38. Asa Briggs, *A Social History of England*, The Viking Press (New York, 1984). 105.
39. War of the Roses—So named because the emblem of the Lancastrians or followers of Henry VI and Queen Margaret was a red rose. The rose of supporters (known as Yorkists) of Richard, Duke of York, and his son Edward, was white. This dynastic struggle began when King Henry was childless. The Duke of York, who was related

to Edward III, and Edmund Beaufort, Duke of Somerset, a descendant of John of Gaunt, both claimed the right of succession, causing the country's leaders to choose between contending aristocratic factions. On the whole, the lower classes from the gentry downward did not participate and their life went on much as before. It was not a continuous civil war and although many eminent men were killed in battle or murdered, the battles were mostly on a small scale. The first battle was fought in January 1455 at St. Albans. The impact of the War of Roses was to leave the country disillusioned, exhausted, and deprived of many of its natural leaders.

40. Plow Monday was 9 January. It was celebrated with dances and plays. Farm work resumed after the festivities of the 12 days of Christmas. On the preceding Sunday, plows were blessed in church.
41. Candlemas—2 February. Celebration of Jesus Christ in the Temple and the purification of Mary 40 days after Jesus' birth. Candles were blessed on this day beginning in the eleventh century. It was formerly called the Feast of Purification of the Virgin Mary.
42. Shrove Tuesday—A special period for going to confession. It was one of the three days before Ash Wednesday (Shrove Monday and Tuesday), a season of festivity just before Lent.
43. Burton, Elizabeth, *The Pageant of Elizabethan England.* Simon & Schuster, 1977, 228-29.
44. Courtiers—An attendant at royal court.
45. Black Death—It began in the middle of the fourteenth century.
46. Guilds—A union of men in the same craft or trade to uphold standards and protect the members.
47. Canon—A clergyman serving in a cathedral or collegiate church.
48. Esquires—(1) A man belonging to the higher order of English gentry, ranking immediately below a knight. (2) A landed country gentleman; squire.
49. Burgess—A citizen or freeman of a borough.
50. Yeoman—A freeholder of a class below the gentry who worked his own land.
51. Husbandman—A man who cultivates the land.
52. Artificer—A skilled craftsman.
53. Asa Briggs. 113.
54. Churchwarden—Either of two lay officers chosen annually in every parish of the Church of England to usher at service and attend to certain secular matters.
55. Mercers—Dry goods merchants.
56. Elizabeth Burton. 21.
57. Cartage—To deliver goods in a cart.
58. Glover—One who makes and sells gloves.
59. Chandler—A maker or seller of candles.
60. To go on the poor rolls.
61. Chamberlains—Municipal treasurer.
62. Cock Loft—Attic.
63. Settles—A long wooded bench with a back, armrests, and sometimes a chest beneath the seat.
64. Trester—Part of the bedstead.
65. Finals—A decorative, terminal part at the top.
66. Bloody Flux—Any excessive or unnatural discharge of fluid body material, especially from the bowels.
67. Potatoes—They were grown only in the north and in limited quantity.
68. Apothecary—A pharmacy or drug store.

69. Agues—Usually a malarial fever.
70. Rhuems—Any water discharge from the mucous membranes of mouth, nose, or eyes.
71. Elizabeth Burton. 201.
72. Mash—A soft mixture or uniform mass obtained by beating, crushing, etc.
73. Sack—Any of various dry white wines from Spain or the Canary Island.
74. Mace—A ground spice made from the dried outer covering of the nutmeg.
75. Walrus ivory was best because of its non-yellowing quality.
76. Amulets—Something worn on the body because of its supposed magic power.
77. Theriac—An antidote to poison, especially to the bite of a venomous serpent. The flesh of the viper was held to be a necessary ingredient of the antidote to its bite.
78. Harvey, who began practicing in 1602, discovered the circulation of blood. Heretofore, it was believed the liver was the central blood organ and that blood flowed backward and forward.
79. Treacle—A remedy for poison.
80. Elizabeth Burton. 220.
81. Meliot—Sweet clover.
82. Mummie—Dried flesh of man.
83. Pith—The soft core of a bone.
84. Rue—Bitter tasting leaves from a particular woody plant.
85. A venomous snake.
86. Robert Cleaver, *A Godly Form of Householde Government*, (London, 1598).
87. Cologne—Chief city and capital of Prussia.
88. Consumption—Tuberculosis of the lungs.
89. Boxwood—The fine, hard-grained wood of the box tree. It is a compact wood taking a fine polish. The English got it from the West Indies.
90. Oil of Vitriol—An oily, colorless, corrosive liquid.
91. May Dew—Dew gathered in the month of May was supposed to have medicinal and cosmetic properties.
92. Urea is still used in the Middle East as a disinfectant.
93. Oyl of Tartar—A saturated solution of potassium carbonate present in grape juice, deposited in a crude form in the process of fermentation and adhering to the sides of wine casks in the form of a hard crust.
94. Elizabeth Burton. 338.
95. Warts—Especially hairy ones.
96. Belladonna—A cosmetic to dilate the eye.
97. Flagons—A container for liquids, with a handle, a narrow neck, a spout and sometimes a lid.
98. Of, like, or containing water.
99. Postilion—A person who rides the left-hand horse of the leaders of a four-horse carriage.
100. Elizabeth Burton. 365.
101. Bile, the bitter greenish fluid secreted by the liver and stored in the gall bladder.
102. Alum—A double sulfate of ammonium or a univalent metal (sodium or potassium) and of a trivalent metal (as aluminum, iron, or chromium); used today as an astringent, as an emetic, and in the manufacturer of baking powders, dyes, and paper. The most common form is potash alum.
103. Orris Powder—Pulverized root of the irises.
104. While King Henry VIII's marriage to Catherine of Aragon (1458-1536) was generally happy, all their children except Mary (later Queen) died. Anxious to have a son to inherit the throne, he divorced Catherine (on 25 January 1533) and married Anne

Boleyn, one of Catherine's ladies of honor. Anne was proclaimed Queen on 12 April and her coronation was 19 May. When the Pope denied the divorce, Henry had a church court of Englishmen determine he had never been legally married to Catherine, making his marriage to Anne legal. Henry and Anne had Elizabeth 7 September 1533 and a still-born son in January 1536. By then, Henry's attention had turned to Lady Jane Seymour and he had Anne arrested on the charge of adultery. Anne and her five alleged paramours were also charged with conspiring against the King's life. All were tried and convicted. Anne and four others were beheaded, the fifth was hanged. Henry married Lady Jane Seymour the day after the execution. They had a son who became Edward VI.

105. Edward P. Cheyney, *A Short History of England*, Ginn and Company (Boston, 1932), 332.

106. Second Book of Common Prayer—The second book is the first prayer book entirely in English. The first book was approved by Parliament in the reign of Edward VI in 1549. Henry VIII died in 1547 and provided that Edward should succeed, passing the crown to his children should he have any. Otherwise, his elder sister Mary and her children would succeed. If Mary should die without children, Elizabeth was next. Each of Henry's children reigned in succession, all dying without heirs.

107. Bull—A papal edict or mandate.

108. Religious Conventicle—A prohibited meeting of Protestant sects that disputed the authority of the Church of England.

109. Abjure—Give up rights of citizenship.

110. Williston Walker, *The Creeds and Platforms of Congregationalism*, The Pilgrim Press, (Boston, 1960, first published 1893), 42.

111. Reformation—The sixteenth century movement to reform the Roman Catholic Church which resulted in establishing the Protestant churches.

112. Popish Practices—Puritans considered marriages and burials civil, not religious, functions. They took exception to the words "With my body I thee worship" in the Anglican marriage order, believing that worship is due only to God and not to his creatures, however lovely or distracting. In the burial service, exception was taken to the indiscriminate, euphoric, and universalistic words: "We commit his body to the ground in sure and certain hope of the resurrection to eternal life."

113. Puritan Meetings—These meetings began as early as 1564 and took place weekly at some places, fortnightly at others, monthly in some places, and twice a year elsewhere. A typical meeting found two young minsters "do expound, each after other, some piece of the scriptures appointed unto them in their courses (wherein they orderly go through with some one of the evangelists, or of the epistles, as it pleaseth the whole Assembly to choose at first in every of these conferences); and when they have spent an hour or a little more between them, then commeth one of the better learned sort, who supplieth the room of a Moderator, making first a brief rehearsal of their discourses, and then adding what him thinketh good of his own knowledge, whereby two hours are thus commonly spent at this most profitable meeting. When all is done, if the first speakers have showed any piece of diligence, they are commended for their travel, and encouraged to go forward. If they have been found to be slack, their negligence is openly reproved before all their brethren, who go aside of purpose from the laity, after the exercise ended, to judge of these matters, and consult of the next speakers and quantity of the text to be handled in that place." Horton Davies, *Worship and Theology in England. From Cranmer to Hooker 1534-1603*, Princeton University Press, (Princeton, N.J. 1970). 297-98. Davies was quoting

from *Harrison's Description of England in Shakespere's Youth*, F. J. Furnivall, Editor, 2 Vols., (1877). 18-19.

114. Prophesying meetings—On 20 Dec. 1576 Grindal sent his famous letter to Elizabeth in defence of prophesyings: I am forced with all humility and yet plainly to profess that I cannot with safe conscience and without the offense of the Majesty of God, give my consent to the suppressing of the said exercises; much less can I send out my injunction for the utter and universal subversion of the same..." J. Strype, *The History of the Life and Acts of Edmund Grindal*, (Oxford, 1821). 578-9. Ignoring her Archbishop, the Queen issued instructions directly to the bishops on 7 May 1577 commanding suppression. With prophesying banned, Puritans got well-trained ministers appointed as lecturers in various parishes with their salaries being paid by men of substance. Davies, 299-300.

115. Presbyterian—A form of church government in which no higher order than Presbyter or elder is recognized. All Elders are ecclesiastically of equal rank.

116. A Puritan conviction was that preaching was God's primary way of winning men to His allegiance. The aim of preaching was to convert from worldliness to godliness, to transform, not merely to inform. And the people were ready for preachers. Bernard Gilpin told young King Edward VI (1547-53) of a desperate lack of preachers in 1552 stating, "But yet, it is not heard of all Your people, a thousand pulpits in England are covered with dust, some have not had four Sermons these fifteen or sixteen years since Friars left their limitations and a few of those were worth the name of Sermon:" *A Sermon preached in the Court at Greenwitch, before King Edward the Sixth, the first Sunday after the Epiphany, Anno Domini, 1552,* (1630), 25. The Catholic reign of Queen Mary (1553-58) worsened the situation for Protestants, and Elizabeth (1558-1603) only issued episcopal licenses to preachers who were compliant and not potential troublemakers. Hungry parishioners were fed the driest form of Homilies. Those fortunate enough to have a preaching Rector or Vicar and lived near a fair-sized town could count on good sermons four times a year. Regulations established by the Royal Injunctions of 1560 were: "If the person be able, he shall preach in his own person every month; or else preach by another, so that his absence be approved by the ordinary of the diocese in respect of sickness, service, or study at the universities. Nevertheless, for the want of able preachers and parsons, to tolerate them without penalty, so they preach in their own persons, or by a learned substitute, once in every three months of the year." J. Strype, *Annals of the Reformation, Vol. I of IV, (Oxford, 1824).* 318 In short, preaching in Reformed England was in short supply and mostly a matter of the drone of the Homilies replacing the mutter of the Mass until the Puritans began to develop it as an art. The Anglican minister read printed Homilies, often prepared by the leading divines, and the people found them inadequate after getting a taste of Puritan preaching. Davies. 295-7.

117. James I—Sir Anthony Weldon described him thus: "He was of a middle stature, more corpulent through his clothes than in his body, yet fat enough, his clothes ever being made large and easy; the doublets quilted for stiletto proof; his breeches in great plaits and full stuffed; he was naturally of a timorous disposition,...his eye large, ever rolling after any stronger that came into his presence, insomuch that many for shame have left the room, as being out of countenance; his beard was very thin; his tongue too large for his mouth, which made him drink very uncomely, as if eating his drink, which came out into the cup of each side of his mouth; his skin was as soft as taffety sarsenet, which felt so because he never washed his hands, only rubbed his fingers' ends slightly with the wet end of a napkin; his legs were very weak, having had (as some though) some foul play in his youth, or rather before he

was born, that he was not able to stand at seven years of age; that weaknesses made him forever leaning on other men's shoulders; his walk was ever circular." *Register, III:87. The Court and Character of King James.* Published by authority. Printed at London, by R.J. and are to be sold by J. Collins in Little Brittaine, 1651. Referring to his skin as "taffety sarsenet" meant it was shiny or glossy and fine and soft as silk.

118. Predestination—The most important Puritan doctrine was predestination. From eternity God had predestined some to live and reprobated others to death. Man did nothing to deserve election. The will of God was the only cause. A limited and definite number were predestined to be saved.
119. Cannons—The law or body of laws of a church.
120. Ipso facto—By that very fact.
121. Williston Walker. 77.
122. Millenary Petition—A petition for changes in the church. It was hoped that it would be signed by a thousand clergymen, hence the name, Millenary—of or consisting of a thousand.
123. Episcopacy—The system of church government by Bishops.
124. Puritans—They saw the Christian life in terms of a historic recapitulation reenacted in the soul of every man. They would have no truck with tradition. Neither Popes nor Bishops, but the Holy Spirit, would be their teacher, with assistance from theologians who claimed to be following the guidance of the Holy Spirit. They took seriously the Word of God when tempted in the wilderness: "Man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word which proceeds from the mouth of God." Their lifelong concern was to fight the good fight of faith; to this end they prayed incessantly, watched the progress of their souls in diaries which recorded their fears, failures, and solaces, sang psalms, and held private sessions of fasting when under the judgments of God, and of thanksgiving at some family occasion for joy. Godly reading, private and family prayers, making and renewing church and personal covenants, and diligence in their daily calling and active sharing in worship, together with earnest and active prosecution of the duties of charity, were their way of living the Christian life. Davies. 431.
125. Charles I—Born 19 November 1600. He was convicted of crimes against the nation by a High Court of Justice appointed by the House of Commons and beheaded 30 January 1649.
126. James I.
127. Huguenots—Any French protestant of the sixteenth or seventeenth century.
128. Episcopal Authority—Bishops governing the church.
129. Star Chamber—A high court of justice where "all offenses may be here examined and punished if the King will." Its procedure was not according to the common law; it could proceed on mere rumor; it could apply torture; it could inflict any penalty short of death.
130. Doctrine of Purgatory—A state or place in which, in Roman Catholic doctrine, those who have died in the grace of God atone for their sins by suffering.
131. John and Sebastian Cabot—Renown English navigators from Bristol and contemporaries of Christopher Columbus. Their patent from Henry VII authorized them to seek out, subdue, and occupy at their own charges, any regions which before had "been unknown to all Christians." They were authorized to set up the Royal Banner and posses the territories discovered by them as the King's vassals.
132. William Hawkins—A principal sea captain and merchant; occasionally served as an officer of the king's ships; much beloved of Henry VIII. One-time mayor of Plymouth and three-time member of Parliament. (Research should be undertaken to

learn if this Hawkins is from the same line as Anne Hawkins of Braintree who married Matthew Whipple, Jr. in Bocking.)

133. Sir Richard Grenville—English statesman and explorer. His expedition left Plymouth in April. It included John White, a painter, who recorded the nature of the land, its inhabitants, and its fauna and flora.

134. Sir Francis Drake—Celebrated English admiral. He first obtained a privateering commission from Queen Elizabeth in 1570 which he used effectively against the Spanish. He was the first Englishman to sail round the world, leaving England 13 December 1577, returning to Plymouth harbor 11 September 1580.

135. Bartholomew Gosnold—English navigator. This expedition was mainly financed by Sir Walter Raleigh. Gosnold arrived back in England 23 July with a cargo of "sassafras, cedar, furs, skins, and other commodities as were thought convenient." He spent the following years promoting a larger expedition and was a member of the group founding Jamestown, Virginia. He died at Jamestown 22 August 1607.

136. Capt. John Smith—An English soldier of fortune, born in 1580. An apprentice to a merchant, he ran away to France at 15 and began a 10-year adventure in Europe, Asia, and Africa spent in military service to various leaders. He returned to England in 1605 and joined the group planning to colonize Virginia. He was in Virginia from 1607 to October 1609. It was during this time the famous story that he was rescued by the Indian Princess Pocahontas achieved notoriety. From 1610-17 he explored the north American coast. The final period of his life, 1618-31 was spent writing. He died 21 June 1631.

137. Smith listed Indian names, corresponding with the location of various tribes along the coast. Prince Charles (later Charles I) changed the names to English names. While not one white settlement then existed in all New England, the map awkwardly and improperly shows a seacoast dotted with English settlements, none of which were even thought of when Prince Charles changed Smith's map.

138. Samuel de Champlain—French explorer and Royal Geographer to Henry IV. Born in 1567 he was founder and Governor of Quebec and responsible for spreading French influence from the St. Lawrence to the Rockies and from Hudson Bay to the Gulf of Mexico.

139. Pilgrim—A traveler, especially one who goes to a holy place.

140. Patent, or letter-patent—a grant from the sovereign of exclusive rights or powers to an individual, or body of individuals, to secure certain ends; in this case, to plant colonies. The original patent of Massachusetts may be seen at the Secretary of State's office at Boston.

ESSEX COUNTY AND BOCKING

1601: German brothels closed because of venereal disease. 1603: Heavy outbreak of the plague in England. 1604: Peace declared between England and Spain and England and France sign a commercial treaty. 1605: Shakespeare wrote "King Lear" and "Macbeth" and Santa Fe, New Mexico founded. 1607: Jamestown, Va., first English settlement on the American mainland, was founded. 1611: The authorized version of the King James Bible was published. 1619: First Negro slaves in North America arrived in Virginia. 1622: Weekly Newes issued in London for the first time May 23. 1625: First fire engines in England. 1626: Peter Minuit buys Manhattan Island for merchandise valued at about $24. 1628: William Laud made Bishop and Oliver Cromwell enters Parliament.

THE COUNTY of Essex is in Eastern England. It covers 1,418 miles of mainly low country extending along the North Sea coastline between the Thames and Stour estuaries.[1] The ancient county stretched westward to Middlesex, beyond the River Lea, but since 1965 Greater London has incorporated its southwestern corner. Its nearness to London contributes to its large population but it still has a rural side with farms producing rich crops of cereals and livestock.

Divided into 20 Hundreds,[2] Essex included 21 market towns, five castles, five havens,[3] two royal manors, and 415 parish churches[4] when the Whipples lived there.[5] The county is somewhat circular in shape excepting on the east where many promontories run into the sea.[6] Suffolk and Cambridge counties border it on the north, Hertford and Middlesex on the west, Kent on the south, and the North Sea (then known as the German Sea) on the east.

The walled city of Colchester, sited on a high trench of earth at the mouth of the Colon river, was the county's leading city in 1611.[7] It had nine watch towers for defense with ingress and egress through six gates and three posternes in the west wall.[8] To the east, on a two acre site, was an old castle and ruins which showed evidence of many assaults. The town was governed by two bailiffs, 12 aldermen, all wearing scarlet, a recorder, a town clerk, and four sergeants at mace.[9] Its main industry was manufacturing cloth, including bays[10] and says.[11] Along with Maldon,[12] it played a major role in the extensive trade on the east coast of England and

served as a distribution point for local goods sent to London.

Essex began as an early Celtic capital.[13] Later the Romans used the Essex bank of the Thames as a staging ground for their conquest and it became a Saxon[14] capital when the Romans abandoned it. Her ancient inhabitants were called Trinobantes by Caesar. That name vanished when the Saxons joined Essex with Hertford and Middlesex and called it the East Saxon Kingdom. Eventually Egbert[15] conquered the area and annexed it to the rest of England under an absolute monarchy.

Unrivaled in its antiquity,[16] Essex's Roman legacy includes three main roads plus a lesser road between Chelmsford and Braintree. Important Saxon remains include the unique church of Saxon timbers at Greensted,[17] the remarkable triangle-headed doorway in Colchester,[18] a splendid tower of five states at Little Bardfield, double-splayed windows at Insworth, and Saxon work at Chickney and Strethall.

Essex was originally forested from London to Colchester. Today only the great forest of Epping remains. This seven-mile long 5,500 acres of forest land is preserved by the City of London as a reminder of Merrie old England. The River Lea with its many courses and undrained wetlands isolated the county from London. Its low lying coastal areas were marsh; its inland areas predominately oak woodland. The woods and marshes and lack of roads made communication between neighboring villages difficult for both trade and agriculture. By 1601, the port of Harwich's colonial trade links[19] led to its creation as a Parliament Borough and made its ties with London secondary, thus reinforcing the county's isolation. Colchester was an exception as it had Roman roads radiating out from it.

English historian John Speed described Essex air in 1610 as "temperate and pleasant... the soil rich and fruitful, though in some places sandy and barren... it never frustrates the husband-man's hopes... in some part so fertile that after three years of [producing] Saffron,[20] it will yield plenty of barley for the next 18 years without either dung or other fattening earth."[21] Its agricultural base was barley, wheat, and corn. 'Sheep and diary cattle were important. The fleece supplied wool for the weavers and the milk supported a cheese industry which exported a "great and thick cheese." Fowl and fish from the islands of Canvey, Mersey, Horsey, Northly, Osey, Wallot, and Foulness and oysters[22] from inlets near Colchester found a ready market in London.

The extensive woodlands and numerous parks and forests, well stocked with deer, made Essex an attractive area for noble families and successful officials to live. The de Veres, Earls of Oxford, Lord Great Chamberlains of England, were the county's leading family. The Earl of Sussex had an estate at Audley End which cost £200,000 and was built to entertain

James I and his court. when James saw it in 1614 he exclaimed, "It is too much for a King, but may do for a Lord Treasurer."

The county's natural building material was timber. It had no stone quarries and brick didn't become generally available for domestic use until mid seventeenth century. More than 400 years later, the quality of its timber framed buildings remains impressive, particularly the farm houses such as Temple Cressing with its medieval barley and wheat barns.

Bocking[23] is the Whipple's English home town. On the Blackwater river near the center of the county, it is about 45 miles from London. Its closest neighbor is Braintree. In the early 1600s they were known as the "Busy Bees" of Essex. Their prosperity was due to the wool-cloth trade started in the days of the Flemish weavers. They were also famous for beautiful silks and beautiful windows.

The origin of Bocking's name is unknown. Some sources say it was named for a Viking chieftain named Bocca; others say it was Boca, a Saxon chieftain. A more picturesque supposition is the name is derived from the Saxon word "Boc," a beach tree, and Ing,[24] here meaning meadow-land, usually low-lying and situated by a river. A third source says it was named for free land taken from the folcland[25] or common, and held by a private owner by "Boc" or charter. Earliest records refer to it as Boccinge, Boccinges, and Bockyng. The date of its first settlement is also unknown. Etheric,[26] the local Saxon nobleman who inherited the main manors of Bocking and Braintree from his father, eventually gave "Bockinges" and Mersega (Bocking Hall in West Mersea) to Christ Church, Canterbury. One hide[27] of land was given to the priest of the village church which suggests a church predates this will. According to the Canterbury cartularies[28] the land was acquired by the convent in 1006, possibly the year Etheric's wife Leofwyn died.[29] Bocking Hall, which adjoined the church, became the monk's guest house.

English historian W. F. Quinn believes he is the Etheric referred to in "The Song of the Fight of Maldon," who fought against Viking invaders in 991. A painting of the battle in Braintree's town hall shows Etheric swinging his two-headed axe over his helmet, while beside him are the curved seax[30] brandished by his followers—fighting men from his manor of Bocking and Braintree. Etheric died four or five years later, probably as a result of wounds received in that battle.

Bocking had two churches: St Mary's Deanery, still in use, and the Chapel of St. James.[31] The foundation of St. Mary's[32] was dedicated to the Blessed Virgin Mary approximately 1,010 years ago in the reign of King Ethelred II, The Unready.[33] Church historian Hugh F. Chapman believes the church is even older and that the Saxon church, to which Etheric's will refers was destroyed and replaced by a Norman building.[34]

Some authorities believe the present chancel[35] was built in 1340, that the north and south aisles and chapels[36] were added in 1385, and that the west tower was begun in 1414.

Chapman speculates that the sanctuary[37] of the Norman church was lengthened in the thirteenth century. 'This addition formed a chancel and included the north chapel of St. Nicholas and the south chapel of St. Katherine[38] making the church cruciform[39] in its plan. Chapels in honor of the Blessed Virgin, St. Nicholas, St. Katherine, and All Saints were endowed by John Doreward[40] in 1397 as perpetual chantries.[41] The church has a peal of eight bells. A Santcus Bell cast by John Tonne around 1540 is housed in a wooden turret erected in 1887.[42] It is now the hour bell of the church clock.

The roofs of oak timber are magnificent with their carvings and bosses.[43] Those of the chancel and both aisles are from the late fifteenth century, the nave from the early sixteenth century. The tie-beams of the nave roof have curved braces with carved foliated[44] spandrels.[45] Among the carvings are a miter,[46] the plain cross of St. John of Jerusalem, the Arms of the see of Canterbury,[47] a dragon, a man's head enclosed in a wreath, the Bourchier knot,[48] a strange beast, a wreath and heart held by an angel, a leopard's head, a grotesque, a rose, a shield emblazoned with six trefoils,[49] and many others.

The table of the altar in the north chapel and the paneling in the vestry are thought to be gifts from Archbishop Laud to John Barkham.[50] Other items include finely carved and upholstered chairs, a silver-gilt flagon, altar vessels and linen vestments, silver candlesticks, gongs, flags, and the organ.[51]

If a Whipple descendant were to visit today, he would see a magnificent structure much the same as when his ancestors worshiped there. It has a Tudor wall around the churchyard, iron gates[52] on the south side, a tower with pinnacles[53] and double buttresses, niches with carved heads, and rich stone paneling around the base. The fine embattled porch shelters a door covered with ironwork of great beauty, the craftsmanship of a clever smith approximately 735 years ago.

On entering the visitor is struck by the space and light and the beauty of the carved oaken roofs and screen and is drawn to the window in the south chapel with its beautiful fourteenth century tracery.[54] The net pattern of that period is continued in the east window where each space has an angel in modern glass. There are portraits of saints and martyrs, including St. Augustine and Charles Stuart, two seventeenth century chairs elaborately carved, a handsome modern screen, and a Tudor funeral helmet. Peeping from under the organ are John Doreward (in armor worn

at the Battle of Agincourt)[55] and his wife in a horned head dress in the form of a brass.[56] Another brass shows Oswald Fitch[57] of Shakespeare's time in his long cloak and ruff.[58] A monument dating from 1624 is Grisell Moore kneeling between fine columns. Americans Francis and James Goodwin, whose ancestors lived in Bocking, gave a beautiful window featuring the annunciation,[59] the navity, and the epiphany,[60] with Bertha Ethelburga, and other English saints.

Bocking and Braintree included three main manors at the time of the Doomsday Survey of 1086.[61] Its population was estimated at 200, based on a recorded servile male population of 64. Day to day control of the manor was exercised by a steward. Quin quotes the survey as follows:

> "Bockinges was always held by the Holy Trinity (Canterbury) as a Manor and 4 hides; there are two carucates[62] on the demesne.[63] The men had 35 carucates. There were 19 villeins, 25 bordars, and four serfs.[64] There is a woodland for 300 swine, pasture for 60 sheep, 22 acres of meadow, and a mill. And there are six beasts, 100 sheep, and 54 swine. There belongs to this Manor two hides in Mersai[65] (Bocking Hall in East Mersey) and one carucate on the demesne and one carucate belonging to the men, and two villeins and one bordar, and pasture for 50 sheep. The whole together was worth £25.[66]

The growth of Bocking and Braintree was assured on June 16, 1199 when King John (1199-1216)[67] granted William de Saint Maria, Bishop of London, the right to sponsor a weekly market and a yearly fair in Braintree.[68] Despite drastic changes of land-ownership between the Conquest[69] and the suppression of the monasteries by Henry VIII in the 1530s, Bocking Manor was retained by the Priory of Christ Church Canterbury. The largest of the three manors included most of present-day Bocking and was worth twice the Bishop's Manor of Raines (or Braintree). The Canterbury Priory began selling portions of Bocking Manor in the twelfth century. Some ancient names still exist.[70]

Dorewards Manor, held by Robert de Bocking during the reigns of John and Henry (1216-1272), was conveyed to Ralph Doreward in 1316 and held by the family for the next two centuries. John Doreward of this family became Speaker of the House of Commons. By 1425 the family owned over 20 large estates in Essex. These subordinate manors included the Harries, Fennes, Boones, Lyons, and Fryers.[71] John acquired the Manor of Bradfords in 1476. The Church's main Manor was acquired by Robert and Alice Wentworth in 1540. It remained in this family until the reign of James I (1566-1625) when it passed to Sir Robert Barker whose son had

married into the family. Thomas Nottidge, High Sheriff of Essex, acquired it from the Barkers.

William Doreward started Bocking's first school in 1326. He provided money for a chantry chaplain to "teach the children to read and write.[72] John Barchamsted, the first master, was paid £7 annually and given a house and quarter-acre garden within the churchyard. Bocking's town center was crowded with different social groups who lived in close proximity. Many people relied on the town pump and when the one in Bocking End broke in the fall of 1623, people from that section of Bocking found it easier to draw water from the Braintree pump than to repair their own. According to Quarter Sessions records, this led to a quarrel between the two parishes.[73]

Social activities were held in the church and market, houses and warehouses, shops and brothels. Gardens were commonplace and pigs wandered through the streets. Like most communities, it was governed by the Parish[74]. The local Vestry[75] ran the government under the nominal control of the Justices of the Peace who were responsible for levying the parish rates. Usually chaired by the minister, Vestry members were leading property owners, farmers, tradesmen, and professional people. They advised in matter of parish business and the appointment of Vestry officers. They were not elected.

Constables and Churchwardens called annual meetings to elect up to four Surveyors of the Highways who were responsible for upkeep of parish roads and bridges. Two Churchwardens supervised the church's financial needs and watched out for the morals of the parishioners. Two to four Constables were responsible for matters of law and order.[76] There were two to four Overseers of the Poor. These officials were not paid and were usually members of the Vestry who rotated the offices and performed the duties in their spare time. The Justices of Peace tried and sentenced criminals, handled industrial relations and apprenticeship problems, and restricted new settlers. The following is from the 19 April 1599 Quarter Sessions:

> It is ordered by the court that the matter in variance between the clothiers and weavers of Bocking and Braintree shall be referred to my Lord Suffragan, Francis Harvye, John Tyndall, Ralph Wiseman, Henry Maxes, and Thomas Walgrove, Esquires, to end and determine all controversy between them if they can be, and to certify their proceedings at the next Sessions.

Regarding apprenticeship, Justices took action 1 January 1629 against Seth Hagager,[77] who employed an apprentice who was "neither his son nor the son of any father or mother who on that date "had registered the

said indenture within the parish." This case addressed the right of the parish to restrict settlement and to deny poor relief should the apprentice become destitute. Legal apprentices would be eligible for those rights.

Fire was a great danger and a matter of public concern. Justices heard a complaint in Quarter Sessions in 1612 against Bocking's Nicholas Clarke who "hath taken into his house Francis Taylor and Richard Hedges as inmates, and hath no chimney for them to keep fire in but against the walls, by which the whole town is in great danger to be set on fire."

England at this time owed its economic well being to the woollen cloth industry[78] and Essex was one of the great wool and cloth counties. Colchester was its main cloth center with Bocking[79] and Braintree among the more important secondary markets. Less important were Coggeshall, Hawsted, and Dedham. Essex's first known fulling mill[80] was in Bocking and dates from 1303.[81] It was used during the whole of the cloth industry period and may have been the mill near the church. Wool supplies were plentiful[82] with much of it exported to the great continental cloth-making centers in Flanders. In the mid 1200s the government placed high taxes on its export and eventually banned all wool exports. A law was passed in 1330 banning the wearing of foreign woollen cloth.

Flemings settled in Bocking, Colchester, Coggeshall, Halstead, and Shalford as early as 1304, making these places flourishing centers of the industry. Edward III (1327-77) gave the industry a great boost by inducing large numbers of Flemings, who "respected wool sacks much more than Englishmen,[83] to come and teach his people a better style of weaving. Records of the King's Alnagers[84] show that 2,400 cloths, produced by eight manufacturers, were passed at Braintree in 1395.[85] Bocking and other towns must have been included in this output since only 1,200 were sealed at Colchester and 733 in the whole of Suffolk county that same year. It was during Elizabeth's reign, however, when the largest number of Flemings arrived

Cloth making was essentially a cottage industry with most of the work done in the homes of those who worked the wool. First it was combed, then spun into yarn, the yarn wove into cloth followed by the fulling[86] and shearing[87] process. Bleach for the cloth was obtained from German soap, ashes, and quick lime. Some preferred urine as a milder bleach and it was collected by household servants and sold to cloth manufacturers as "old lant." These segments of production were done by different workers.

As the industry developed, enterprising men known as Clothiers, as was Matthew Whipple, Sr., began to coordinate the process. These embryonic capitalists bought the raw wool, distributed it to the combing workers,[88] collected and distributed the combed product to the spinners, and finally issued the spun yarn to the weavers. The fulling process

required capital equipment so the last two stages (and drying when required) were usually carried out on a central or factory basis. Local regulations insured workers were treated fairly. Crafts Guilds monitored fair dealing and maintained quality control. The Bocking Guildhall was believed to be on Church Street.[89] Women combers were protected by ordinance:

> ... Further for the benefit of the trade and the town, it is and has been a custom that any inhabitant exercising the aforesaid art or mystery (cloth-making) and desiring to expose before his own dwelling, wool, either for combing or spinning, ought to expose such wool according to certain weights employed in the town during the while time aforesaid, namely for women combers of wool, by the weight there commonly called a kembyng ston (combing stone) of five pounds and not more; and for women spinners, by the weight there called a spynning ston, of four pounds and a half and not more, and that for each kembyng ston, the price for combing be 2d, and for each spynning ston, 6d for spinning.[90]

Clothiers usurped the Guilds and eventually took charge of the cloth industry. While master weavers and other craftsmen employed journeymen and apprentices, the clothier merchants, by providing the raw material, the capital, and the distribution system, controlled the industry. Business acumen was required to comply with the complicated set of ordinances and statues that regulated the industry.

A new cloth, lighter in texture and called "bays and says,[91] or the "New Draperies," was developed in the second half of the fourteenth century. Because it served as a trademark, the maker's seal was of great importance, causing Bocking and Coggeshall to jointly apply to Parliament for a seal. An authorizing act, introduced in May or June 1572, never passed but Clothiers from the two towns did win a market share with a special sort of bays known as "Bockings." Parliament recognized the fame of Bocking, Braintree, and Coggeshall cloth by noting, "Many people do counterfeit Cocksall, Bocking, and Braintree cloths, commonly called Handywarps," and described how to detect the counterfeit product.[92]

But lacking the powerful status of Colchester, Bocking and Coggesshall had to lobby Parliament in 1577 for an exemption when it passed a law prohibiting cloth-making or selling outside a corporate or market town.[93] The exemption was granted before the law took effect in 1578. By then Bocking had three fulling mills[94] and a population of approximately 1,500.[95]

A severe depression hit the cloth market in 1629 causing justices from throughout the county to petition the Privy Council[96] for relief. The peti-

tion, signed by 200 weavers of Bocking and Braintree, cited the lack of work and detailed their dire financial straits. It claimed 30,000 were living in misery and poverty and demanded immediate aid and assistance. The Privy Council was told the need was so great that the Justices had to "forbear all other affairs of the county" and to expect riots unless immediate action was taken. They reported the Clothiers and chief inhabitants of their towns made it clear that no work would be available until trade improved and asked the Council to initiate action to stimulate trade so the Clothiers could begin hiring.[97] London received the following report on Bocking:

> In and by this town by the Manufacture of Bayes are set on work 7,000 persons. Within this seven years, they were wont to make four-hundred pieces a week. Since, they fell by little and little to three-hundred; and lately, they have not been able to make above one-hundred a week, and within this five or six weeks, not above forty a week, for having had little or no sale, a great number have been undone and forced to give over their trade quit. There remains upon their hands, unsold, about two-thousand pieces, whereof seven-hundred are in the town; and, their warehouses being full, they forebear to bring up any more. That town abound(s) with poor, whereof many are very unruly; and having no employment, will make the place very hazardous for men of better rank to live among them.[98]

The Privy Council blamed the war for the depression and promised the Ministers and Churchwardens of Bocking and Braintree it would stimulate the economy. But the depression grew worse. The number of unemployed workers in the Bocking-Braintree area was estimated at ten to eleven thousand and hunger riots began in the spring. Two to three hundred men from Bocking and Braintree, joined by unemployed from Witham, marched to Maldon to call attention to the dire needs of the people. They assembled at Barrow Hill and marched down to the quay side where they "assaulted" a ship or barge with a cargo of corn, took a Mr. Gamble hostage,[99] seized great quantities of corn, and then broke into a warehouse and took more corn.[100]

Unemployment in the cloth industry became endemic and it was a long time before economic conditions improved. Some Clothiers only employed apprentices, depriving adult weavers of work. Others increased the length of bays by fifty percent without paying extra, effectively cutting the wages on piece-work by one-third. Because of the hard times the new standards and lower wages were accepted.

The Church of England was an important institution in Bocking. It was organized nation-wide with archiepiscopal[101] Peculiars,[102] parishes admin-

istered by the Archbishop of Canterbury instead of by the diocese in which they are located. Bocking is still a Peculiar.[103] From early in the thirteenth century, Bocking Rectors[104] were called the Dean of Bocking.[105] Adjacent to its Deanery[106] with its seventeenth century gable and chimneys, is an old barn and dovecote[107] with 135 nests of lath and plaster. The dovecote is interesting because it was built when John Gauden was the Dean in residence.[108] Gauden achieved wide fame when he claimed authorship of the *Eikon Baslike*[109] a claim still subject of scholarly controversy.

The Deans of Bocking were unyielding in fostering the church's teachings, its temporal power, and its wealth.[110] However, after Henry VIII (1509-47) separated the spiritual office from the monastic landed wealth, the Deans apparently felt freer to accept views and ideas from church leaders in Germany, the Low Countries, and Geneva. Bocking's proximity to London, combined with the social intercourse caused by the international nature of the woollen-cloth trade, brought many of its people face to face with the ideas of the Reformation.[111]

Among early Bocking dissenters were Mother Beckwyth and her three sons of Beckwyth's Farm. They were sent to prison several times between 1526-32, convicted of reading Thydale's translation of the Bible.[112] During the reign of Edward VI (1547-53), the Privy Council took note of Bocking Puritan activity:

> 27th January 1550: Sixty persons had met one Sunday at the house of one Upcharde, in Bocking, and had discussed "things of the scripture, specially whether it were necessary to stand or kneel bare-headed or covered at prayer: which at length was concluded in ceremony not to be material, but the hearts before God was it that imported and no thing else.[113]

The men and women who participated in the meeting were described as "cowherds, Clothiers, and such-like mean people." They were arrested and confessed before the Council in London that they had met to "talk of Scriptures" and had refused the communion of the parish church for more than two years.

Moderate Protestant belief and practice were encouraged until the reign of Queen Mary (1553-58). Under Elizabeth, Puritan beliefs gained ground in Bocking and Braintree and the movement grew into one of the strongest in that part of England. Between the seventeenth and nineteenth centuries, Bocking clergy generally conformed to Church of England principles and doctrines. Rev. John Calfhill was one of two exceptions.[114] He held strong Calvinist views and was probably an early Puritan. While serving jointly as Dean of Bocking and Archdeacon of Colchester, numerous complaints were received about his lack of ortho-

doxy and intemperate views. Despite this, Queen Elizabeth appointed him Bishop of Worcester shortly before his death in 1570.

Orthodox Anglican opinions apparently prevailed until 1623 when Dean John Barkham appointed Nathaniel Rogers as a Curate.[115] This assignment caused great surprise as he was the son of Rev. John Rogers, "the most noted Puritan in England."[116] Barkham took him on to satisfy the religious preferences of some of his parishioners, presumably including the Whipples. Barkham tolerated Rogers' Puritan views for five years, finally dismissing him for expressing concern with some of the points of discipline and for not wearing the surplice at the funeral of a distinguished person. He migrated to New England and became the minister in Ipswich, Massachusetts.[117]

With this background of life in England, a knowledge of the Essex countryside and the antiquity of the county, a sense of Bocking as a hometown, a knowledge of the parish church, economic conditions, local government, and religious turmoil, it is time to review the life of the Whipples and try to guess why they left a known environment for an uncertain life in the new world.

1. Estuary—an inlet or an arm of the sea; esp., the wide mouth of a river, where the tide meets the current.
2. Hundred—An ancient territorial division intermediate between the parish or township and the county. Hundreds in Essex in 1610: Barnstable, Becontree, Chafford, Chelmsford, Clavering, Dengie, Donmow, Freshwell, Harlowe, Havering, Hinckford, Lexden, Ongar, Rotchford, Tendring, Thurstable, Utlisforde, Waltham, Wimstree, and Witham.
3. Haven—A bay, harbor, or port—any place which affords good anchorage and a safe station for ships.
4. Bocking fell under the category of parish church. It's sister town, Braintree, was a market town.
5. Survey of Essex—This information is based on a survey completed in 1610.
6. Promontory—a peak of high land that juts out into a body of water, headland.
7. Colchester had eight churches within the walls, two outside.
8. Posternes—A back door or gate; private entrance at the side or rear.
9. Mace—A staff used as a symbol of authority.
10. Bays—A light woolen fabric (originally of a bay color) which was introduced into England in 1561 by refugees from France and The Netherlands.
11. Says—A fine thin cloth used for outer garments.
12. George Washington's great grandfather Lawrence is buried in an unknown grave at Maldon. According to English historian John Speed, Maldon is noted in antiquity as the royal seat of Cunobelin, King of the Trinobantes. He says coins minted by Cunobelin at the time of Christ's birth have been found there; that the Roman Claudius eventually conquered the town and placed a colony of soldiers there; that 20,000 Romans were slaughtered there during Nero's time.
13. Celt—Any of an ancient people in central and western Europe, reputedly including the Gauls and Britons.
14. Saxon—Any member of an ancient Germanic people of northern Germany; some Saxons invaded and conquered parts of England in the fifth and six centuries A.D.
15. Egbert of Wessex—King of the West Saxons who was born about 775 A.D. and ascended the throne about 800. The supremacy of West Saxon kings date from his reign. He united Kent, Essex, and Sussex to his crown and compelled East Anglia to acknowledge him as its over-lord in 823. He subdued Mercia and Northumbria in 827 and conquered Wales in 828. During the last years of his reign, he was subjected to repeated attacks by the Danes but won a great victory over a united force of Danes and Welsh in 835. He died in 836.
16. Antiquity—The early period of history, especially before the Middle Ages (476 A.D. to ca 1450 A.D.).
17. Greensted has the oldest doors in England still hanaging.
18. John Speed, early English historian, says Colchester was built 124 years after the birth of Christ by Cotlus, a British prince.
19. Harwich exported fine cloth produced in the Colne and Stour valley towns in the north of the country.
20. Saffron—A product of the dried stigmas of the flowers of the autumnal crocus. Over 4,000 flowers are required to make an ounce. It has a sweetish aromatic flavor, a warm pungent bitter taste, and a deep orange color. In medicine it was deemed highly stimulant, antispasmodic, and even narcotic. It is also used to color confectionary. Mixed with water and alcohol it becomes an orange-red extract, which was

used in painting and dyeing.

21. John Speed, *Theatre of the Empire of Great Britaine*, 1611. Reproduced as *John Speed's England, a colored facsimile of the first edition*, Part II, edited by John Arlott, Phoenix House Limited, 1953. Folio 31-32.
22. Speed wrote that Essex oysters were featured in the kitchens of Rome.
23. Bocking is north and east of London, west of Colchester and Harwich, and south and west of Maldon.
24. "Ing" is a settlement or hamlet.
25. Folcland—the Anglo-Saxon form of folkland.
26. Some sources spell his name Ethelric.
27. Hide—An old English unit for taxes on land, later a measure of land varying from 80 to 120 acres. The size depended on the nature of the soil and landscape but was large enough to support a household.
28. Cartularies—A place were papers or records are kept; or the book in which they are entered; a register.
29. Under the terms of Etheric's will, the property belonged to Leofwyn until she died.
30. Seax—A curved one-edged sword or war knife used by Germanic and Celtic people. The largest seax had a blade 20 inches long.
31. The origin of the Chapel of St. James is unknown and no trace of it exists. Its presumed location was on Bradford Street (the Whipples lived on this street) near the corner of Church Lane. It is mentioned in official records of 4 Oct. 1229 and in 1515 William Nobyll willed 13s 4d "to the building of the chapel of saint Jamys." Quinn, W. F., *A History of Braintree and Bocking*. Lavenham Suffolk, England: The Lavenham Press Limited, 1981.
32. The author visited St. Mary's church in 1963. Most of the following information on the church is from a 15 page booklet by Hugh F. Chapman, *St. Mary's Deanery Church Bocking, Essex*. Chelmsford: J. H. Clarke & Co., Ltd., The Tindal Press, 1954. In his foreword Chapman said he was unable to find a trustworthy account of its origin but that he tried to be as accurate as possible. His sources included the Essex Records Office, *The Essex Review*, the Essex volume of the Royal Commission on Historical Monuments, and other books "too many to enumerate."
33. Ethelred II: A Saxon King, 978-1016. He was the last of the "boy kings" and was called the Unready because he was foolish and slow. Everything seemed to go wrong during his reign. He decreed that all Danes, men, women, and children in England were to be killed. They were and as a consequence, Sweyn, King of Denmark, conquered England.
34. The Saxon church was probably destroyed by fire.
35. Chancel—The eastern part of a church, allocated to the use of those who officiate in the performance of the services.
36. Chapel—A room or recess in a church, set apart for special services and having its own altar.
37. Sanctuary—A particularly holy place within a church or temple, as the part around the altar.
38. Nicholas and Katherine were saints of the Eastern church introduced to England by the Crusaders. Crusaders were armed volunteers from the western countries of Europe who went to capture the Holy Land from the Mohammedans and to secure for themselves principalities and estates there. The first Crusaders captured Jerusalem in 1099. The eighth Crusade was in 1270. The dedication of the two chapels to patrons made popular by the Crusaders was probably not much later than the latter date, likely earlier. Mohammedans—followers of the Moslem religion. The term is used mainly by non Moslems.

39. Cruciform—A church built in the form of a cross.
40. John Doreward was Speaker of the House of Commons and a benefactor of the church.
41. Chantries—An endowment for the maintenance of one or more priests to sing daily mass for the souls of the founders or others specified by them.
42. Sanctus Bell—A small bell rung at various parts of the Mass, the first ringing being three times at the Sanctus. Sanctus—the hymn constituting the culmination of the preface of the Mass or Communion service, beginning *Sanctus, Sanctus, Sanctus* (Holy, holy, holy). The inscription in Gothic lettering around this bell reads: *Nomen si queris cujus vocor ispa Richardus.* (If you ask the name by which I am called I am Richard.) The words are separated by ornamentation of frets and a plain cross. Below the inscription are two medallions, one containing a full-length figure of a knight and the other the face of a man thought to be Henry VIII.
43. Bosses—A protruding ornament on a flat surface; a decorative knot, stud, etc. the bosses are leaves, shields, and other carvings.
44. Foliated—Covered with a thin plate or foil; decorated with leaf-shaped ornaments whose form is suggestive of foliage.
45. Spandrels—The triangular space between the outer curve of an arch and the rectangle formed by the moldings enclosing it, frequently filled with ornamental work.
46. Miter—A tall, ornamented cap with peaks in front and back, worn by the Pope, Bishops, and Abbots as a mark of office.
47. See—The official seat, or center of authority, of a Bishop.
48. Bouchier knot—In medieval armor, the large buckle used for fastening the lower part of the breastplate to the upper one.
49. Trefoils—A plant having triple or trifoliate leaves.
50. John Barkham was the Dean of St. Mary's from 5 Dec. 1616 to his death 25 March 1642.
51. The organ was built in the twentieth century.
52. The gates were dedicated as a peace memorial.
53. Pinnacles—A small ornamented turret, usually terminating in a pyramid or cone, crowing a buttress, or rising above the roof or coping of a building.
54. Tracery—Ornamental work of interlacing or branching lines, as in a Gothic window.
55. The Battle of Agincourt, fought on French soil 25 Oct. 1415 with the English army being led by Henry V. Though greatly outnumbered, the English won. French King Charles VI was not present at the battle.
56. Brasses date from the thirteenth century and are found in every part of England. They were a cheaper form of memorial than the stone or bronze effigy. It was considered that the flat, incised image was particularly expressive of the humility of the churchman, while a richly sculptured monument more suitably commemorated an important layman. As many as 150,000 brasses were made during the fourteenth century, some 4,000 survive. The effigies were cut out of a sheet of latten and inlaid into tombslabs, generally in the floor of the church, and sometimes surrounded by a cut-out canopied frame. Latten—brass or brass like alloy hammered into thin sheets.
57. Oswald Fitch—The last of the Doreward kin.
58. Ruff—A high, frilled or pleated collar of starched muslin, lace, etc. Worn by men and women in the sixteenth and seventeenth centuries.
59. Annunciation—The angel Gabriel's announcement to Mary that she was to give birth to Jesus.
60. Epiphany—A yearly festival on 6 Jan. commemorating the revealing of Jesus as the Christ to the gentiles in the person of the Magi or the baptism of Jesus.
61. The Doomsday Survey was conducted during the reign of William I, the first Norman king.

62. Carucates—the amount of arable land a team of oxen could plough in one season.
63. Demesne—The estate or area of land reserved to the Lord of the Manor.
64. Villein, bordar, and serf refer to social gradations. Villeins were comparatively free villagers, although in the following two centuries their status tended to worsen; bordars were villagers of a lower status, holding their huts at the pleasure of their lord, and serfs were people of the lowest status. At first serfs were little better than slaves but eventually rose in status as feudal custom began to lump together all the servile classes as unfree peasants bound to the manor.
65. These two hides combined with the 4 hides of the main Manor suggests the area encompassing Bocking approximated 5,600 acres in 1086.
66. W. F. Quin, 12.
67. King John was the youngest son of Henry II and Eleanor of Aquitane and third King of the Plantagenet family, the first being Henry II and the second Richard I, John's brother. Prior to Henry II, English Kings were Norman, Danish, and Saxon.
68. Market day was Wednesday and the annual fair was St. Matthew's Day, 21 September.
69. The Norman Conquest of England by William the Conqueror occurred in 1066.
70. W. F. Quin, 13.
71. Fryers Manor is of particular interest in that it was located on Bradford Street, the street where the Whipples lived, and was acquired by Hercules Arthur 4 June 1632. Hercules was a grandson of Matthew Whipple, Sr. and left it to his half brother, John Arthur whose wife was Anne Corbet, daughter of Miles Corbet. Miles Corbet was one of the Regicides who signed the death warrant of Charles I in 1660. Further details on Corbett are in a lengthy footnote in Chapter 3.
72. A Chantry Chaplain is one who is normally endowed to say Masses and prayers for the soul of a specified person.
73. A Quarter Session is a local court with civil and criminal jurisdiction. It consisted of two or more justices of the peace.
74. As late as the 1830s, England had only 286 cities and boroughs, including London, compared to 13,000 parishes.
75. The Vestry were church members who managed the civil or secular, rather than the ecclesiastical , affairs of the church. Vestry officers were authorized by an act of Parliament in 1554.
76. Bocking had no jail and offenders were sent to Coggeshall or Chelmsford.
77. Seth Haggar made and sold woollen cloth to Bocking clothiers. The reference to Bocking specifically noted it was neither a corporate nor a market town.
78. The traditional symbol of authority in the House of Lords is the Woolsack which pays homage to the cloth industry.
79. Parliament passed an act during Elizabeth's reign (1588-1603) which referred to Bocking as a "faire large town....inhabited of a long time with Cloth makers which have made and daily do make good and true cloth." May Cunningham and Stephen A. Warner, *Braintree and Bocking.* Arnold Fairbairns, 1906. 12.
80. Bocking had three large fulling mills driven by water power and three windmills for grinding corn by the later middle ages.
81. The first mill was built by Henry de Eastry at a cost of £28, a considerable capital outlay for the time. It was enlarged five years later indicating a great deal of cloth must have been manufactured. W. F. Quin, 51.
82. According the Doomsday Survey, Bocking had a large population of sheep early in its history.
83. Cunningham and Warner, 12.
84. Alnagers were officials who inspected the cloth for weight, dimensions, and quality;

sealed it and received the taxes on it. All cloth had conform to certain standards. The two principal types of cloth were broadcloths that had to be 28 yards 28 inches in length, 7 quarter yards in breadth, and at least 38 pounds in weight. Straight cloth had to be 14 yards 14 inches in length, 3 quarter yards in breadth, and weight 9 pounds. Also spelled Aulnagers.

85. 2,400 cloths—This amount of production would have generated at least 1,250 jobs.
86. Fulling—A process to thicken the cloth.
87. Shearing—A process to remove the rough ends.
88. Burton, 351.
89. Many clothiers ammased huge fortunes and became the backbone of England's wealth in the later middle ages.
90. The example is from Colchester's ordinance.
91. W. F. Quin, 52.
92. Ibid, 52.
93. Since Colchester was a corporate town and Braintree a market town, neither was adversely affected by this law.
94. One at Covenant Mill, one at Straits Mill, and one in Bocking's Church Street.
95. This population figure is for the year 1575. In 1548 Bocking's population over age 14 was 800 compared to Braintree's adult population of 480. Including children in the count would have made their combined population approximately 2,000 a sizeable population considering good sized towns had no more than 5,000 and the three largest town in the country outside London, Norwich, York, and Bristol, we no larger than 20,000.
96. The Privy Council met in quarter session 17 April at Chelmsford. It was the supreme administrative body in the country with power to issue ordinances on matters of a local or temporary nature. It consisted of the chief ministers, the Chancellor, Treasurer, Lord Admiral, Lord Marshal, the Keeper of the Privy Seal, the Chamberlain, Comptroller of the Household, the Chancellor of the Exchequer, the Master of the Wardrobe, the Judges, King's Serjeant and Attorney General, the Masters of the Rolls, and Justices in Eyre.
97. Charles' I personal rule was just beginning. The entire country was in a financial crisis. England has just concluded a disastrous war with both France and Spain. It was a time of widespread misery, caused by the wars, the government's incompetence, and the embryonic struggle between King and Parliament. This petition presents detailed examples of the condition of the country at the time.
98. W. F. Quin, 56.
99. Mr. Gamble was one of the ship's owners.
100. W, F. Quin, 57.
101. Archiepscopal—An archbishop or his office. Canterbury is an archiepiscopal see.
102. Most Peculiars were abolished in 1847.
103. Bocking was originally in the Diocese of London, then Rochester, St. Albans, and now Chelmsford.
104. Rector—A clergyman in the Church of England.
105. Beginning in 1572 the Rector of Hadleigh sometimes shared the title.
106. A Deanery is the official residence of a Dean.
107. Dovecote—small house or box with compartments for nesting pigeons, usually on a pole, etc. above the ground.
108. Gauden was installed 22 April 1642 and served until 1660. A county native, he left a charity to Bocking in memory of his years as Dean.
109. *Eikon Basilike*, subtitled *The Portraiture of His Sacred Majesty in His Solitudes and Suf-*

ferings, a work published soon after the execution of Charles I in 1649. It purports to be the King's spiritual autobiography. Written in simple, direct, and moving language, many editions were published and it was translated into several languages. After the Restoration Gauden claimed authorship. Because of the favorable image it created of the King, John Milton was assigned by the Regicides to reply to it, which he did in his *Eikonklastes* (1649). Regicide—A person(s) who kills, or is responsible for the killing of a king, especially of his own country. *Eikonoklastes* - Greek for image breaker. It was an attack on the King and his system of absolute monarchy.

110. John King, installed 13 May 1532; John Calfhill, 4 May 1565; Thomas Watts, 20 Aug. 1570, died in office in 1577; John Mullins, 28 May 1577, died in office in 1609; Richard Wood, 28 Sept. 1609; Zaccheus Pastfield, 17 Oct. 1609; and John Barkham, 5 Dec. 1616, died in office 24 March 1642.

111. Reformation—The sixteenth century religious movement that aimed at reforming the Roman Catholic Church and resulted in establishing the Protestant churches.

112. William Tyndale, born in Glouchestershire about 1488, was ordained to the priesthood the latter part of 1521. He translaated the New Testament and the Pentateuch (the first five books of the Bible) into English. It was impossible to publish in England so he went to Germany, visiting Martin Luther at Wurttemberg, finally settling in Cologne. The authorities there opposed his work so he fled to Worms where his octavo edition was completed in 1526. He lived in Antwerp from 1530 until put to death for heresy by strangulation 6 Oct. 1536. His body was burnt at the stake.

113. See Acts of the Privy Council for 1550-52.

114. Calfhill was installed 4 May 1565.

115. Nathaniel Rogers was a first cousin once removed to Rev. Ezekiel Rogers, who later became minister at Rowley, Mass. He was born about 1598 at Haverhill, educated at the Dedham grammar school, and entered Emanuel College, Cambridge at about age 14. His father, John Rogers, was educated at Cambridge, became the Vicar of Norfolk in 1592, later a minister at Haverhill, Suffolk, and eventually serving a congregation at Dedham where he became one the most popular, powerful, and successful preachers of the age. His congregation came from a wide area and filled the church to overflowing on lecture day. A committed Puritan, John wrote in 1627, "If I come into trouble for non-conformity, I resolve by God's assistance, to come away with a clear conscience; for though the liberty of my ministry be dear to me, I dare not buy it at such a rate." Bishop Laud suspended him in 1629 for refusing to conform to official church requirements. His second wife, Elizabeth Gold, widow of John Hawes, was the mother of Nathaniel. He died in 1636. "Genealogical Memoir for the Family of Nathaniel Rogers," *Register* 5:118-131.

116. The Bishop of Norwich appointed Rev. John Rogers to the church at Assington, Suffolk, where he remained for five years. Continuing his non-conforming preaching, he eventually resigned to avoid being censured by the Ecclesiastical courts and to make room for "A Godly conformist." Ibid, 133.

117. He sailed from Gravesend for Boston with his wife and young family. The usual voyage was nine to ten weeks but the winds were so contrary it took 24 weeks. Upon arrival in November 1636, they were short of all provisions and rationed to a half a pint of water daily. He was invited to settle at Dorchester—some who came with him were his father's parishioners and settled in Dedham—but he and several followers settled at Ipswich where he was called to take the place of Rev. Nathaniel Ward. He was ordained pastor and the celebrated Mr. John Norton ordained teacher 20 Feb. 1638 (the same year the Matthew and John Whipple families arrived in Ipswich. He preached from second Corinthians, Chapter 2, verse 16, "Who is sufficient for these things?" at his ordination. He died in Ipswich 3 July 1665. Ibid, 133-135.

THE WHIPPLES OF BOCKING

***1629**: Massachusetts Bay colony founded. 1630: Francis Higginson's, "New England's Plantation," an account of living conditions in America, published. **1631**: English mathematician William Oughtred proposes symbol "X" for multiplication. **1632**: First coffee shop opens in London. **1635**: London sets speed limit of 3 mph for hackney coaches. First inland postal service in Britain between London and Edinburgh. **1636**: Roger Williams founds Providence, Rhode Island. **1637**: William Pynne, Puritan parliamentarian, condemned for seditious writing, to be pilloried and mutilated. **1638**: William Chillingworth wrote "The Religion of Protestants, a Safe Way to Salvation."*

THE CHILDREN of Matthew and presumably Joan (maybe Stephens) Whipple were born and married in Essex County, England. Following are their christening dates:

i. *Anne (Anna), 9-1-1583; married John Pepper, 1-13-1605-06.*

ii. *Margaret, 3-26-1585; buried, 2-13-1607-08; married Laurence Arthur, 7-5-1603.*

iii. *Jane (Jana or Johane), 9-13-1587; married (1) Henry Caldam, 1613, (2) Edward Feast, 1618 or 1619.*

iv. *Matthew, abt 1590; died, Ipswich, Mass. 9-28-1647; married (1) Anne Hawkins, 5-7-1622, (2) Rose Chute 11-13-1646 in Ipswich.*

v. *Elizabeth, 4-14-1594, married Isaac Green, 9-3-1618.*

vi. *John, 8-29-1596, died, Ipswich, Mass. 6-30-1669; married (1) Susanna Clark, 8-28-1621 in London, (2) Janet Dickinson after 1662 in Ipswich.*

vii. *Mary (Maria) abt 1599; died before 2-26-1663; married Richard Baker, 1625.*

viii. *Amy, 1-20-1605; married William Hoston, 10-31-1626.*

INFORMATION ON THE Matthew Whipple, Sr. family is sketchy but enough is known to establish the beginning.[1] Parents of Matthew and his wife Joan have not been identified. The Margaret Whipple buried in Bocking June 13, 1577 is presumed to be Matthew's mother.[2] The custom at the time was to be buried in a shroud and mourned by one's family for three to four years.[3]

Parish records from Bocking's St. Mary's church, Matthew's will dated 19 December 1616,[4] *Abstracts of English Records For The Ancestry of Matthew Whipple c 1560-1618*,[5] original research of adjacent parish records in 1988 and 1990 by Debrett Ancestry Research Limited of Alresford, Hampshire, England are some of the sources for information on the family. The sources do not always agree.

No direct evidence has been found for dates of birth for Matthew and Joan but the christening record for Anne, their first child, indicates both were born in the early 1560s. Joan was buried in Bocking May 19, 1612, thought to be in her late forties or early fifties. Since he didn't remarry, it is presumed Matthew mourned her the rest of his life. If so, mirrors in the home were either covered or turned to the wall. The family coach was painted black. All rooms in the home were hung in black and he slept in a mourning bed enclosed by black draperies. Matthew was buried January 16, 1618-19, probably in his late fifties. If the family followed tradition, a pot of wine was placed on his chest so those who came to pay their last respects could do so with a toast.[6]

Matthew's will was very particular in its details. He noted his "messauge with the yard and garden and orchards" was located on "Bradford street in Bocking." He named eldest son Matthew and son John, daughters Jane, Elizabeth, Maria, Amye, Johane, and Anne Pepper; grandchildren Hercules and Margaret Arthur and Henry and Ande Caldam, "my sister, the wife of Richard Rathbone," and Hercules Stephens. With the exception of Stephens, every beneficiary was identified as a relative.

Stephens may have been a brother to the Joan Whipple buried in 1612, making him Matthew's brother-in-law. The Bocking parish records include a Joanna Stephens christened November 15, 1562. This makes her a plausible age to be the mother of Anna christened September 1, 1583 and identified as the daughter of Matthew Whipple. The following christening dates for Matthew's other children, for Hercules Stephens' children, and for Richard Rathbone's child are in the parish records. Note how the dates track.

Matthew Whipple	**Hercules Stephens**	**Richard Rathbone**
Margaret, 3-26-1587[7]		
Jana, 9-3-1587	Hercules, 11-20-1586	
Elizabeth, 4-14-1594	Ann, 3-3-1594	Gamalielus 3-17-1594[8]
John, 8-29-1596	John, 5-2-1596	
Amy, 1-20-1605	Tabitha, 4-22-1599	

Margaret married Laurence Arthur when she was 18. She died just before her 23rd birthday, probably when delivering her third child. Her living children, Hercules and Margaret, would have been in their early teens when their grandfather Matthew died. Anne and Amy married at 22, Elizabeth and John at 24, Jane at 26, and Matthew about 32, ages not uncommon for that time.[9]

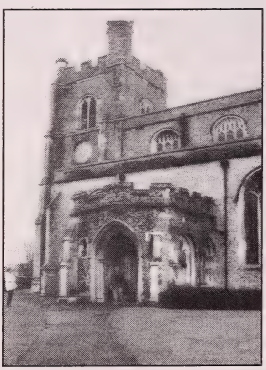
Six of the seven pictures below were taken in August 2005 by Weldon Whipple, Webmaster of the Whipple Web page, www.whipple.org, and used with his permission.

Gate to church.

Matthew Whipple was baptized here.

Church from the southeast. The church foundation was dedicated to the Blessed Virgin Mary over 1,000 years ago in the reign of King Ethelred.

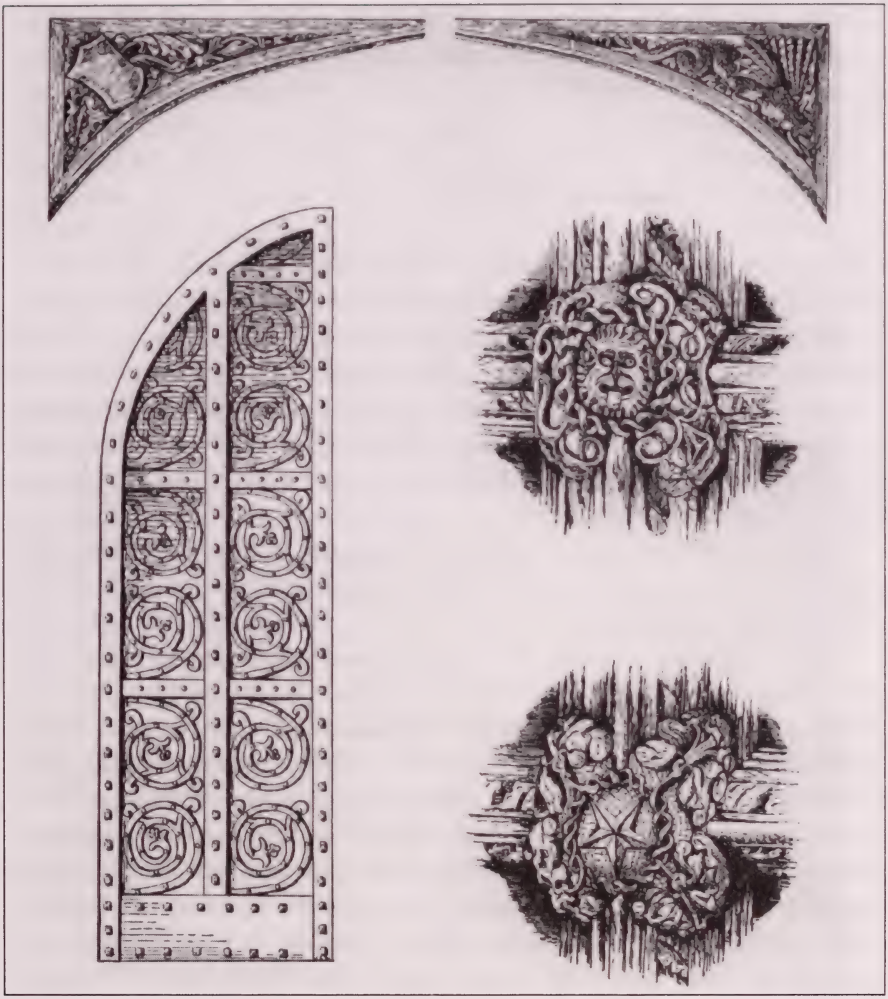
Church graveyard.



Picture taken in May 2006 by Mary Ann McPherson, Littleton, Mass. and used with permission.

Monument to Mary Gri.

Bell tower.



Details of wood-carvings and ironwork on the south door of St. Mary's deanery church.

A reading of the history and literature of the times allows us to speculate on the early life of Matthew and Joan. Matthew's 1616 will was written in old English and the probate in Latin suggesting he was educated.[10] While elementary age girls didn't go to school, Joan probably learned the alphabet from a hornbook and help from her grandmother.[11] School for boys began at age 7 and Matthew probably had a new satchel to carry books and papers, a sharp penknife, and some candles when he arrived for his first day of school.[12] The boys sat on hard benches, two sharing each of the slanted oak desks set in rows in a heavy-beamed, high-ceiling room. The school, always cold in wintertime, brought on an endless runny nose and fingers stiff as twigs. In summer afternoons the room was as sweaty as a chimney corner. There he would have labored every day except

Sunday under the unblinking gaze of the tall, thin, weary master, perched on a stool in front of the class with a supple birch rod ready for use. Behind, unseen but always felt, was the usher watching everything. It was a long, heavy-lidded day from first light until first stars.

The curriculum included mathematics, English, Greek, Hebrew and Latin. Students learned to write in prose and verse in the slowly dying tongue of Caesar and Cicero. Their memory was enhanced by a ferule[13] laid smartly across an open palm or swollen knuckles and/or by the master's birch rod as it struck the flinching bare flesh of their backside. William Lily's *A Short Introduction of Grammar* and Nicholas Udall's *Flowers of Latin Speaking* were the Latin texts.[14] The Hebrew grammar was also by Udall. Latin was learned by heart through ceaseless exercises of recitation. The Greek text was William Camden's 1597 grammar.[15] Reading assignments included authors Esop, Cato, Homer, Horace, Ovid, Theognis, and Virgil.[16]

His father would have taught him how to ride, to fish in the river, ponds, and creeks, to snare and catch birds, and to defend himself with an old English walking staff.

As a teenager he would have joined his family and other fairgoers from the various towns in the shires of Essex, Sussex, Cambridge, Hertford, Middlesex, and Kent and from the continent at the annual Colchester fair. People went there to buy, sell, and pleasure themselves. Strange odors filled the air from the smoke of cookfires, mingling with the scents of the enormous market of spices and herbs. The languages of other places and various dialects of his own tongue, the sight of strange faces with different cuts and lengths of beard and hair, the many different kinds of clothing people wore, and the taste of foreign food tingling his mouth helped him understand there was more to the world than Bocking and its close neighbor Braintree. But even moving among the crowd and touching the soft fur worn by a Dane, the perfumed leather of a French wine dealer, or the sleek Italian silk of a Venetian there to sell the spices of the East, or to feel and heft foreign coins in his palms never led him to believe he would experience any of these things other than at the fair. It was hard to imagine life among strangers in other countries.

As he headed toward manhood, he would have listened and occasionally participated in the endless debates on religion. His fellow citizens talked freely and openly and passionately on delicate subjects such as transubstantiation,[17] predestination, the true and proper nature and number of the holy sacraments; the virtues and faults and strengths and weaknesses of the *Book of Common Prayer;*[18] the best ways and means to translate the scriptures into the common tongue; the thorny questions of whether good works count with God or whether man could be justified by faith alone;

whether the Pope in Rome is the anti-Christ; the place and purpose, if any, for altars and images and vestments and candles and incense, whether they were morally neutral, tolerable, and foolish or whether there was a place for them in a reformed and purified service of worship; if there should be by name and title, bishops; if priests should marry; if married people may ever lawfully divorce; should private conscience or civil and public ordinances prevail.

He was probably about 16 when he made his first London trip. He had listened many times to travelers speak of the city and had undoubtedly formed an impression—probably Jerusalem and Babylon with bits and pieces of Sodom and Gomorrah. But it is doubtful he was prepared for what he experienced. On his first visit he would have been amazed by the number of birds in the countryside and the sounds of bells tolling and ringing to each other in the towns and villages he passed through on the 45 mile journey. There were bells in every tone of voice from cockcrow day bell at first light until evening curfew and finally ending with the solemn tolling of midnight. Many towns and villages had their own language of bells—bells to announce birth, death, baptism, burial, the marriage feast, and the call to prayer and communion.

There was the barking of the chained dogs, the crying out of street vendors, the clear voices of children singing or reciting lessons together emanating from open windows. The song of the wood saw, the hammer and chisel of the stonemason, the rattle of the cart maker, and the clang of the blacksmith pounding slow clean tunes on his anvil were in every village he passed through. As he neared London, a man in the meadow was probably sharpening his scythe and it sounded like the busywork of summer bees. And the thousands of yellow butterflies reminded him of the beauty of April's daffodils.

Eventually the city appeared straight ahead of him, across fields with scattered houses, buildings, and churches, rising to fill the wide horizon. There stood the battlement wall, like a vast painted cloth, with its gates and gatehouses and towers. The spires and the steeples of the churches seemed like a wild forest stretching from the White Tower to the Tower of London to St. Paul's church atop its hill. Weathervanes sparkled from the four corners of each. The towers and long roof of St. Peter's church at Westminster Abbey, the Old Palace, Whitehall Palace, and the great houses lining the banks of the Thames must have been beyond his imagination. This ancient city, built between and among low hills and marshy ground by a river, would have seemed newly baptized to the eyes of this sixteen-year old.

As any first time visitor would, he explored it all. He would have gone to the Smithfield market, easy to identify by its odors of hay and manure

and the warm scents of cows, horses, sheep, and swine. On to St. Nicholas Shambles (next to Newgate) where the smell of the butcher and poulterer mingled. He found the market where butchers and fishmongers offered their wares where Cornhill meets Three Needle street and Lombard. It was in East Cheap where he found butchers working close by the smoke of many cook-shops while the odor of fish married the smoke of the cook-shops on Thames street near Fishmonger's Row. He followed his nose around London and found the dry fatty stink of the skinners tanning their furs in an area known as the Peltry. The musty odors of all kinds of grain were on Lombard street near its intersection with Bridge street. Fresh fruits and vegetables mixing with the odors of bakehouse and brewhouse meant he was just south of St. Paul's churchyard in Carter lane. Just west of Knightrider on Thames street was the garlic market.

As he was exploring the wonders of the city, a new essence suddenly exploded upon him. He had found Bucklersbury where grocers and apothecaries sell much of the world's sweetness and health. His sense of smell would have been flooded with a paradise of spices — mace and cinnamon, almonds and anise, ginger and clove and nutmeg. The essence of all these were happily confused with black English peppermint, rosemary, wild thyme, sweet violet, chamomile,[19] lemon scented sweet flag,[20] sweet cicely,[21] and sweet woodruff,[22] as licorice as any anise seed.

And for a penny he could climb the tower of St. Pauls, see the Tower of London and the wondrous zoo there, get a guided tour of Westminster Abbey and touch the graves of kings. At the King's Head tavern he would have been introduced to oysters in bastard gravy—cooked with ale and bread crumbs and seasoned with ginger and pepper and sugar and saffron. Then it was on to the Mermaid for a salad of boiled turnips and beets and carrots followed by sturgeon cooked in claret, some chicken and fruit in a pie, and ending with a sweet pie of apples and oranges. He must have believed it was a meal he was sure even the Queen couldn't top. If he had heard that *spiritus dulcis*, an alchemist's creation composed of sack distilled twice over and flavored with spirit of roses and candy "and clears nose and throat, cleans the eyes with fresh tears, tingles the toes and fingernails, and causes the stomach to leap and rejoice like a young lamb" he would have ordered a cup with his meal.[23]

Matthew and Joan were probably in their early twenties when they married. Once it was determined she should marry, Joan's parents would have searched for a suitable husband, taking care to balance social position and status as dowries were critical to a desirable match. The wedding was probably in late 1582 since Anne, their oldest, was born in September 1583. Before they had children, Matthew and Joan probably journeyed to London to watch the hangings decreed by the quarter law court sessions. Pris-

oners, brought in from all the prisons, were tried and those condemned to the rope were carted off by the hangman to Tyburn, the place of public execution. It was a major spectator event attended by thousands.[24]

Anne was 10 before the family purchased its home in Bocking so they probably lived with his parents for the first 11 years of their marriage. The Statute of Apprentices made labor compulsory and required seven years' apprenticeship for all trades. Since he was a clothier, Matthew probably apprenticed to his father as sons usually followed their fathers' occupations.[25]

Sometime prior to 1593 Matthew paid £40 to Robert and Joan Ardley for a house, barn, large garden, and apple orchard on Bradford street in Bocking.[26] The Ardley's failed to perform as agreed so Matthew took them to court for specific performance and won. The court directed Ardleys to deed the property to Matthew and his heirs forever.[27] In April 1594, Matthew was on an inquest jury at Epping to determine how 11-year-old Margaret Moyer died. In August, he was one of 11 witnesses in the court session at Brentwood. There were seven defendants, all brought to court from confinement at Colchester prison.[28] He was assessed taxes in 1599, 1600, and 1608 for lay subsidies.[29] He was bequeathed five shillings by Richard Tebold of Bocking in 1603.[30]

Bradford street, named for Great Bradfords, a farm on the Coggesall Road,[31] was one of the prettiest in Bocking, especially in early spring when the trees, just beginning to leaf, were not yet too thick to hide the red-brown roofs and the pink stuccoed walls of the houses behind them. Houses on the street dating from the sixteenth and seventeenth centuries, several decorated with rough patterns in stucco, were still standing in 1906.[32]

Joan's child bearing extended over 22 years, from Anne born in September 1583 to Amy in January 1605. Matthew, Jr. was the first of two sons and fifth born of the nine known children. When he was born about 1590, Anne, Margaret, Jane, and Joanna were probably eagerly awaiting a brother.[33] The first four daughters were born at two year intervals. Three years separated Joanna and Matthew; four years Matthew and Elizabeth; four years Elizabeth and John; one year John and Mary; four years Mary and Amy. Infant mortality was so high in those days, one wonders if other children were born during those four-year intervals.[34]

Joan's duties as wife and mother were many: cook, bake, and doctor; brew home beer and wine; make medicine; sew, spin, and embroider; look after hens and the dairy; launder; raise vegetables and flowers; make her own beauty aids. She would have joined the other women at the town mills to grind the family corn and probably baked bread in common ovens. When shopping, she had little choice between salted meat in winter and bad meat in summer. Fresh meat was in limited supply and came from shops cooking beef, mutton, veal, pork, and lamb on spits,[35].

Breakfast of cold meats, cheese, herring, salted, pickled, or dried, and oysters was served between 6 and 7 a.m. A special dinner with guests might include all or some of the following: fricassee of rabbits and chickens; a leg of mutton, boiled; three carp in a dish; a side of lamb; a dish of roasted pigeons; four lobsters; three tarts; a lamprey pie, considered rare;[36] and a dish of anchovies. Vast quantities of ale, cider, or beer would be consumed.[37] Wealthy families served French and Italian wines.

After dinner games included Crambo, Hunt-the-Slipper, Blind Man's Bluff, and Hot Cockles. "I love-my-love-with-an-apple-because-she-is angelic" required male and female players.[38] Family members confined indoors by weather, gout, or if female, by a state of chronic pregnancy, had lots of pastimes to alleviate boredom. "Rise Pig and Go," "One Penny Follow Me," "I Pray My Lord give Me a Curse in Your Park," and "Fire" were among the favorites. On special occasions Matthew may have hired a fiddler, a gittern[39] player, a piper, and a drummer and the home would enjoy dancing that night

By the time of Amy's birth in 1606, the family should have been able to celebrate Christmas in grand style. The citizens of Bocking and Braintree joyously celebrated the birth of Jesus. The inns, taverns, and alehouses were wreathed with Christmas greenery and within those warm, noisy, crowded places, good beer and ale and all the best wines were served. All houses from leading citizens to the lowly rat-catcher were open to hospitality. Few if any went hungry, including prisoners who received baskets of good things to eat and drink.

At night the streets were lit with lanterns and torches, minstrels played music, and young men rang church bells until it seemed the spires and steeples would tumble down in a heap like the walls of Jericho. Firewood sprinkled with the musk[40] and leaves of flowers was burned in place of the usual stinking sea coal. The firewood brought the congenial sounds of axes, the rasping hum and whining singsong of long and short saws, and the creaking of the carts of the wood bearers who looked forward to their best season of the year.

A great blast from a ram's horn announced the opening of Bocking's manor house and owner Sir Robert Barker dispensed Christmas hospitality to all. Servants served tankards of nappy ale and wonderful cakes and cream. A fiddler played country dances enjoyed by all, especially Sir. Robert who was light of foot and quick as a fox. No one was better at Shake-a-Trot or Bishop of Chester's jig.[41]

If the Whipples celebrated Christmas in grand style, they would have opened their home to employees, neighbors, and strangers. The usual torches and plain tallow candles and sputtering rushes dipped in fat were replaced with the best candles of berry and beeswax scented with herbs

and perfumes. They burned night and day along with the perfumed oil in the lamps and the yule log in the hearth of the hall lighted with a brand preserved from last year's log.[42] All chambers in the house seemed to be choirs of candle flame.

Wreaths and branches of evergreen would have been hung throughout the home. They included slender, brittle branches of potted rosemary with narrow, shiny leaves;[43] blue-green juniper with stiff, bristling, little leaves like those that sheltered and concealed the Holy Family from Herod's murderous soldiery; strong-scented myrtle in honor of true and unfeigned love; glossy, fragrant leaves of bay; ivy with clusters of black berries and thin, smooth, shiny, sharp-pointed, leaves, each looking snipped and cut out of tin and then painted with rich green. And because it was Christmas, the three herbs strewn in the manager in Bethlehem were scattered in the yard, barn, and shed: wild thyme, grounsel,[44] and sweet woodruff[45] which made the oldest hay smell newly mown.

Mistletoe, its twin leaves like a pair of slender, delicate wings and berries like tiny pearls, and smooth, prickled holly brightened by round, blood-red berries were hung as "remembrance of the most precious blood of Our Lord and Savior." These evergreens remained in place until Candlemas, when for good luck they were fed to the fires and replaced through Lent until Easter Day with the deep green leaves of the box tree. It was time for Christmas cakes and ale; to wear their most gaudy, light-colored, lighthearted costumes; to put on jewels both true and paste; time for hobby horses, for dancing with strings and ropes of little bells twisted around each leg; time for mumming and masking and disguising; time to tune instruments, make music, and sing the ancient and ageless carols. When the tables were finally cleared of the Christmas feast, Matthew and Joan would watch the children play their games and join in late singing and dancing.

As the evening wore on, Matthew, feeling the need for fresh air, might have gone outside alone to stand in the cold, star-dazzled night, thanking God for his family and his good fortune. Full of love and charity, he would wish on a star seeking good fortune for both friend and enemy, wishing the dead from Adam and Eve to now their rest in peace, and the living, from the beggar in his hedge to the Queen in her soft bed, the best life had to offer. As he made these wishes he would have wondered what the Queen was thinking: was there a place in her dreams for the Bocking Clothier and his family, for the plowman, the butcher, the baker, the beggar and the school master? As the last echoes of the midnight bells faded into silence, he reentered the home and joined Joan in bed.

The day after Christmas, the Whipples prayed and feasted in honor of the martyrdom of St. Stephen[46] and the second day rejoiced in honor of

St. John the Evangelist. On the third day they prayed and fasted in honor of Childermas the day they were to think upon the blood slaughter of the Holy Innocents by king Herod.[47] If Matthew wasn't one to relinquish all the old ways for the sake of the new, he probably said a private silent prayer on December 29 for the blessed English saint, Thomas á Becket of Canterbury, for whose death an English King once bared his body and knelt to be whipped in penance.[48] It was not an easy thing for an Englishman, no matter what he professed or whatever his religious persuasion, to forget communion of English saints and martyrs.

The Whipples would have celebrated feasts and holy days in January beginning on the first with the Feast of Circumcision[49] (also the time for giving of gifts), the Feast of the Holy Name of Jesus on the second, and the Epiphany on the sixth which was the end of holidays and idleness. On that day plows were blessed and the following Monday, Plow Monday, plowing began at sunrise. There were no more holidays until Candlemas. After two weeks of eating and drinking and living like a Lord, it was time to return to work, make plans to endure the rigors of Lent, and get ready to feast again at Easter. This was the time of the leanest diet of the year. But helped by the memory of the good belly cheer of Christmastime, it wasn't too difficult to be content with roast meat two days a week.

The Whipple children would have looked forward to Market Day[50] because they often included entertainment such as mummers,[51] a dancing bear, a juggler who could balance a sword on his nose, and a band of gypsies (who called themselves Frenchmen) with a gaily-painted, high-wheeled horse cart who were there to perform tricks and otherwise entertain the people. One could swallow fire from a torch, another could walk on a rope tied across the square from one rooftop to another, all could tumble, leap, and somersault. As some were performing their tricks and shows, others, given half a chance, stole valuables from their unsuspecting audience. They could empty a purse as quick as the fishmonger could gut a trout.

The kids would have spent their allowance on gingerbread toys and pink pigs made from marchpane.[52] Joan probably wandered through the market looking at the goods, especially savoring the fine things they couldn't afford. It was fun to "window shop." Matthew probably did a lot of trading and when he couldn't trade, he would buy, using gold coins called Angels and Sovereigns. The Angel had a likeness of the winged St. George, busily slaying the dragon with a short spear on one side and a ship and the arms of England on the other. They contained 80 grains of old gold and unlike silver did not glitter in the light. The Sovereign was more than double the size of the Angels and three times its weight. The Queen, full-faced, crowned, seated on a throne, and holding her mystical orb, was on one side, the arms of England on the other. It was the largest

coin made in the Tower mint. Five Sovereigns was the equivalent of a year's wages for a skilled blacksmith in 1602.[53]

Joan's home remedies were many and peculiar. Dried, powdered hen's dung was blown in sore eyes; an ointment of white dog's turd,[54] white frankincense,[55] aloes,[56] yolk of egg, and oil of roses was used to treat hemorrhoids. A peck of roasted snails mixed with earthworms, slit and scoured in salt water, and added to various herbs, strong ale, and white wine, was the cure for jaundice and consumption. Wounds were staunched with a patch dipped in frog's spawn.[57] Fried horse dung was applied to the kid's bruises; it was used unfried and strained to soothe a severe burn or scald. A hoarhound potion quieted a bad cough. The warming pan with fresh coals helped when mother was ill. Father's aching knee or gouty toe meant a trip to the Apothecary Shop for a jar of leeches to suck out the bad blood.

A swollen cheek and pain-darkened hollows beneath the eyes was a sure sign of a recurring toothache. If laudanum[58]and ground cloves didn't work, the tooth-puller was called. Tooth pulling was pure agony. The gagging caused by the clumsy iron forceps fastened on the tortured molar magnified the grinding splintering shocks of pain as the puller sweated and jerked with one hand while forcing his patient's head back with the other. But agony was followed by the ecstacy of relief when the bloody tooth was waived in the air and the tooth-puller left with payment of sixpence for his service.[59]

Anne was five when war with Spain began in 1588. Rumors that the Spanish Armada would land an army in Essex, caused great excitement and concern.[60] Essex's proximity to the Netherlands, where the Spanish army was assembled, made it the logical invasion site. Spain also felt Essex's large Catholic population would help overthrow Elizabeth and the Anglican Church.[61] The Privy Council organized, at least on paper, an impressive national levy to fund the army. Essex offered a potential of 13,062 infantry and 300 horse, and promised almost 4,000 men fully armed with musket, shot, and pike.[62] By July, before North Sea winds blew the Armada off course and aborted the invasion, the army was assembled at Tilbury.[63] Its Captain General, the Earl of Leicester, sourly announced he was more "cook, caterer, and huntsman" than a Captain General when 4,000 Essex men arrived without a barrel of beer or a loaf of bread.[64]

Elizabeth rallied her people in August at Fort Tilbury in Essex.[65] Matthew, Sr., about 28, was probably a member of the Essex troop on parade in full war regalia on the 18th when Elizabeth, in what was undoubtedly the most dramatic moment of her reign, inspected her troops.[66] She was clad all in white velvet with a silver cuirass[67] embossed with a mythological design, and bore in her right hand a silver truncheon chased in gold. She rode bareheaded, and there was a tuft of plumes, the

sheen of pearls, and the glitter of diamonds in her hair. Elizabeth carried her 55 years well.

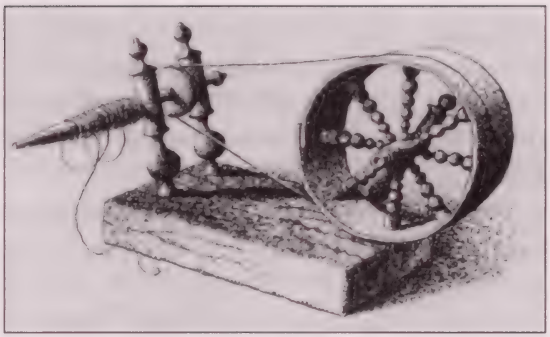
The day was so successful she decided to repeat it the next day. This time there was a review and march past, followed by cavalry exercises which amounted to an impromptu tournament. She dined in state in the general's pavilion where all the captains of her army came to kiss her hand. Sometime during the activities of the second day, she stirred Matthew and the other soldiers with words they would always cherish:

> My loving people, we have been persuaded by some that are careful for our safety, to take heed how we commit ourselves to armed multitudes, for fear of treachery. But I assure you, I do not desire to live to distrust my faithful and loving people. Let tyrants fear. I have always so behaved myself so that, under God, I have placed my chiefest strength and safeguard in the loyal hearts and good will of my subjects; and therefore I am come amongst you as you see, at this time, not for my recreation and disport, but being resolved, in the midst and heat of the battle, to live or die amongst you all, and to lay down for my God and for my kingdom and for my people, my honor and my blood, even in the dust... that any Prince of Europe should dare to invade the borders of my realm; to which rather than any dishonor shall grow by me, I myself will take up arms, I myself will be your general, judge, and rewarder of every one of your virtues in the field. I know already for your forwardness you deserve rewards and crowns; and we do assure you, in the word of a prince, they shall be duly paid you.[68]

Work was important to the Whipple family and they were engaged in Bocking's chief industry—cloth making. As a Clothier, Matthew produced lighter worsteds and "new draperies" out of wool and other raw materials. He contracted with carders, combers, spinners, weavers, fullers, and other craftsmen and sold the finished product at home or to an export company.[69] England's economy depended on the cloth trade and fortunately for the Whipples, business was good the first 15 years of the seventeenth century. The highest cloth export year was 1614. Beginning in 1618, traditional continental markets softened and by 1622, exports had dropped by half.[70] The depression of 1620-24 resulted in high unemployment. Exports declined further during the 1629-31 period. In 1636 and 1637, London, Norwich, Sandwich, and many other cities were hit hard by the plague. Economic recovery, already painfully slow and uneven, was suspended for months at a time. The Whipple's final 19 years in England were extremely trying economically, and undoubtedly caused the family to wonder if its clothier business would survive.

Since the economy was dependent on cloth export, the country's woes

were blamed on clothiers and their public standing reached an all-time low in the decade of the 20s and 30s. A member of Parliament complained to the House of Commons that Clothiers "give not the poor competent wages—three pence a day and no more to divers."



Seventeenth century spinning wheel.

A famous ballad chanted about the time Charles I was crowned (1625) recited, in rude rhymes, the grievances of the cloth workers. It was called *The Clothiers Delight.*[71] It's opening verses:

Of all sorts of calling that in England be,
There is none that liveth so gallant as we;
Our trading maintains us as brave as a Knight,
We live at our pleasure, and take our delight;
We heapeth up riches and treasure great store,
Which we get by griping and grinding the poor.

And this is a way for to fill up our purse,
Although we do get it with many a curse.

Through the whole kingdom, in country and town,
There is no danger of our trade going down,
So long as the Comber can work with his comb,
And also the Weaver with his lomb;
The Tucker and Spinner that spins all the year,
We will make them to earn their wages full dear.
Repeat chorus
In former ages we us'd to give,
So that our work-folks like farmers did live;
But the times are altered, we will make them know
All we can to bring them all under our bow;
We will make to work hard for sixpence a day,
Though a shilling they deserve if they had their just pay
Repeat chorus

When Elizabeth died in 1603, she was the only sovereign Matthew and Joan's had known. Under her reign, except for the time of the Armada,

they knew nothing but peace.[72] So there was great excitement in their home when James VI, King of Scots, was announced as James I, England's new King.[73] In addition to James' coronation, other royal pomp the family may have witnessed was the investiture of Henry and Charles as Prince of Wales.[74]

After it was published in 1611, the King James version of the Bible must have become the family's favorite book. It was full of people, beasts, fishes, birds and of war, horror, love, death, and miracles. Its stories were about Kings and Princes; about soldiers and shepherds and beggars; about the rich and the poor, the sick and the healthy and the proud and the humble. It told of splendid feasts and bitter famine; of present joy and perennial sorrow; of the hope of heaven and the horror of hell; of sowing and reaping; of good and bad harvests. If it hadn't been for things like the desert, the Red Sea, cedar and olive trees, plants, people, and places with outlandish names, the Bible's countryside could have been England. What happened in the Bible could so easily happen—and did happen—to its readers.

Elizabeth's reign and the flowering of Protestantism added spice and interest to the life of the Whipple family. But, were the children awed by the luminous quiet in St. Mary's Deanery church as they stood in the center aisle staring at the great leaded windows, tinted in jeweled greens, blues, and golds, deepened here and there by spots of translucent crimson? Or was the family already committed to the Puritan creed and considered the beautifully colored windows an idolatrous bauble left from the old days?

The Whipple children probably studied the shivery woodcuts of tortures and burnings in John Foxe's *Acts and Monuments*, the most widely circulated book in England after the Bible.[75] If the family didn't own a copy, they read it at the parish church as it was one of four chained books in all cathedrals and parish churches in the land. But how did they resolve the religious questions of that time? If papists were bad, were all Protestants good? How could that be since there were two kinds of Protestants: those who had candles and a cross like in St. Mary's and who bowed at the name of Jesus and who kept Saints' days and Christmas; and Puritans who hated all those things, who relied only on the Word of God, and who worshiped several days a week in private homes.

Everyone talked religion. It was the subject in broadsides and newsletters. An individual might not approve of a particular religious group but he would not be indifferent. Almost everyone had a religious affiliation and defended it with all the warmth and vehemence an age of religious controversy breeds in its people.[76]

Based on their activity in the Ipswich church, It seems apparent that Matthew, Jr. and John Whipple embraced Puritanism before leaving England and probably attended a nonconformist church where the minister

bravely ignored the ceremonies ordained by the bishops.[77] Reverends Richard Rogers and his nephew John Rogers were among the leaders of the Essex Puritan movement. Richard organized congregational prayer meetings, composed treatises on the Christian life, and generally set an example for fellow converts. John, who lived in Wetherfield, had the ability to bring trembling and sudden conversion to his hearers. Essex produced the second highest number of emigrants from England with several Puritan preachers influencing the 244 residents who migrated to the American colonies between 1620 and 1650.[78]

Puritans believed the Bible was the complete religious authority; that the original texts of the 66 books of the old and new testaments were the only authority to be recognized;[79] that the principles of all truth and a complete guide to life were found in scripture.[80] Puritanism encompassed theology, ethics, economics, politics, ecclesiastical discipline, academics. No corrupting fancies of carnal reason were to be permitted in interpreting the Bible. In case of doubt, consider the context of the difficult passage, compare it with other parts of scripture, and fit it to the general pattern of faith as set forth in the Bible. Scripture was a matter of harmony, not strife. Puritans believed the end of the world was eminent, that the papacy was the Anti-christ whose approaching final ruin would herald the great day of the second coming.[81] Prayer was considered especially important. It was the means by which man might feel the power of God's love. It need not be audible since God was all hearing but the voice might be used in private to prevent wandering and in public to attract people.[82]

A standard Puritan day included family prayers and a survey of one's spiritual estate. Recurring sermon days took the place of the festivals of the church year. They did not object to music in church if it aided proper worship.[83] Psalm-singing commonly preceded and followed the sermon but only biblical passages were sung. The minister could preach the Word in his own phrases but the hymn-writer had to use those of the Holy Spirit. Art was in the same category. It could be enjoyed in moderation at home and had its place in church if it did not perpetuate superstition or obstruct the scriptural message. Outside the church, the Puritan remained generally indifferent to the fine arts.

Puritans believed that abstinence humbled the body and the mind. Want in body caused one to feel the want in his soul and turned one to God. Consequently, they fasted frequently when nothing at all, except in case of necessity, was to be eaten for 24 hours. So far as possible, sleep was to be omitted. Other than times of fast, there was no disapproval of food, clothing, or sleep. Gorgeous, even sumptuous attire, was allowed to those of exalted station as necessary means of maintaining dignity and status.

In amusements, it was the abuse, not the use that was objectionable.

Dancing, undeniably a biblical activity, helped keep the body healthy and limber. Like music, it was taught to children as part of their education and special dance steps were taken to New England.

Puritans were expected to obey superiors, love their neighbors, do works of charity, show compassion toward all men, have a calling and pursue it as zealously as the Christian life.[84] Marriage was a divine institution ordained before the Fall and open to every man. To deny clergy, as Catholic doctrine did, the right to marry was more than flesh and blood could endure without sin. Therefore, ministers were expected to marry.

Man was exalted as lord and master. Women were the "weaker vessel," made of poorer stuff and legally subject to husbands. The Bible made that clear. But rulership did not mean tyranny. The husband was to love and cherish his wife as his own flesh. She was not to be made into a drudge[85] or ordered about like a servant but was, like a judge, joined with her husband to help rule his household. While English common law permitted a husband to beat his wife with a rod no bigger than his thumb, Puritans forbade this practice.

If he cannot reform his wife without beating, he is worth to be beaten for choosing no better; when he hath used all means that he may and yet she is like herself, he must take her for his cross and say with Jeremiah, "This is my cross and I will bear it." But if he strike her, he takes away his hand from her, which was the first part he gave her to join them together; and she may put up her complaint against him that he hath taken away part of her goods. Her cheeks are made for thy lips and not for thy fists.[86]

The choice of a life-partner was a matter of parental decision, not individual choice. No free play or new and original traits of character were allowed to develop in Puritan children. The ruler of the household was to train the child in the Puritan way. They were to remember the Fifth Commandment and obey their parents. There was no such thing as too much severity. To smile or laugh at naughty words or "unhonest" deeds was unacceptable. Education was important. Children were expected to read and write, "for it may be unto them a great help in the course of this life and a treasure of much greater account than money" to read the word of God "to their comfort and instruction to salvation. He that hath learning, although it be but small, shall much better understand the preachers and take endless comfort than he that hath no learning."[87] Parents were to choose schoolmasters carefully and pay them well, just as they would a good horse trainer.

Based on the high office he held in the Ipswich, Mass. church, John may have been a more dedicated Puritan than Matthew, Jr.[88] If so, he would have committed himself to a rigid course of discipline as a youth. He would have refrained from smoking, read only the scriptures, spoke no

ungodly words, and kept the Sabbath with careful piety. He would have renounced and repented of every known sin. He would have studied God's requirement as set forth in the Bible, realized his shortcomings, and "ripped up" his heart in genuine penitence. He would have dissected his conscience, past and present, examined even the slightest failing or secret desire, and when the depth of his transgressions became apparent, he measured them with God's standard. Only then did he realize the hopelessness of his situation if no outside aid were forthcoming.

In this state of "holy desperation," convinced of his extreme sinfulness and inability to help himself, the Puritan cast himself wholly on the mercy of God. Then came peace and the assurance of salvation as the Holy Spirit convinced him that by justifying faith he was numbered among the elect.[89]

John's marriage to Susanna in 1620 would have been arranged.[90] If they were Puritans, they were married in the briefest of ceremonies, first standing, then kneeling by the altar rail, both dressed in black, as were the handful of family who crowded behind them in the bare isles. There were no candles or flowers and no rings were exchanged.[91] Maybe they weren't married in the church since Jesus said that in heaven there was no marriage or giving in marriage so some Puritans considered a civil contract sufficient.

Matthew, Jr. would have presided at the reception since their father died the previous year. In his toast to Susanna, with pewter mug filled with sweet bride-ale, he might have said: "I drink to the good health of the new Mistress Whipple. You have become my sister and I am sure with God's direction you will do credit to your new state and be a true helpmeet to your husband." Turning to his younger brother he might have said: "On this your wedding day I give you my blessing with the prayer that our gracious Lord will make the light of His countenance shine in your heart, from henceforward."

When punishing their children, John probably delivered one stroke with a hazel stick for each sin and then read to the child from Ecclesiastics:[92]

> "He that loveth his son causeth him oft to feel the rod, that he may have joy of him in the end... a horse not broken becometh headstrong... cocker[93] thy child and he shall make thee afraid... give him no liberty in his youth... wink not at his follies... bow down his neck while he is young, and beat him on the sides while he is a child lest he was stubborn and disobedient... and so bring sorrow to thine heart."

Following the reading, the child was to affirm his full contrition and repentance and announce his determination never again to offend "our most loving God."[94]

By Joan's death in 1612, only Anne and Margaret had married so

Matthew had daughters Jane, 24, Johane, Elizabeth, 18, and Mary, 13, to help manage the household and raise 6-year-old Amy.[95] He was a widower for his final seven years, with four grandchildren to enjoy.[96] His will indicates he was successful and had achieved financial independence. His home with its great chamber, little chamber, lodging chamber, old parlor and loft is evidence of his success.[97] He bequeathed more than £200 to family members, some to be distributed within one month following his death, indicating he had liquid assets. Other bequeaths of silver spoons, high latten candlesticks,[98] brass pots, pewter dishes, a table, stools, three different types of chests, five beds, fine linen, bolsters, blankets, etc. confirms his station in life. Matthew, Jr. was named sole executor of the estate.

WILL OF MATTHEW WHIPPLE[99]

In the name of God amen **the nineteenth day of December** anno domini **one-thousand-six-hundred-sixteen** and in the fourteenth year of the reign of our Sovereign Lord James by the Grace of God King of England, France, and Ireland and the fiftieth of Scotland, defender of the faith, etc., **I Matthew Whipple the elder of Bocking in the county of Essex, Clothier**, and of the diocese of Canterbury, being at this present of good and perfect memory, thanks be given to God, and calling to my mind the uncertainty of the continuance of man's transitory life in this present world and the certainty of death when it shall please God to appoint the time, and being willing and desirous to devise and set in order such goods, chattels, and tenements as God of his mercy and goodness hath blessed me withall, do therefore make and declare this my present testament and last will in manner and form following (renouncing and revoking all former wills by me heretofore made), first and principally, I commend my soul to Almighty God my Creator and to Jesus Christ my only Savior and Redeemer by and through whose death merits and passion I trust assuredly to have free pardon for all my sins. And my body to the earth to be decently buried by my executors when it shall please God to take my life from me.

Item. My meaning is that **my messuage or tenement with the yard and garden and orchards**, members and appurtenances whatsoever, to the same capital messuage belonging or appertaining, **situate in Bradford street in Bocking** aforesaid, now in the occupation of me the said Matthew, from and after my decease shall remain to **Matthew Whipple, mine oldest son**, and to the heirs of his body lawfully begotten, upon this condition nevertheless that he, the said Matthew my son, his heirs or assigns, shall well and truly satisfy and pay or cause to paid to **my son John Whipple**, four score pounds [£80] of lawful money of England within three months next and immediately following after my decease.

And also that he, the said Matthew, my son, his heirs or assigns, shall likewise satisfy and pay or cause to be paid to **my daughter Jane**, thirty pounds of like lawful money of England within two months next after my death.

And likewise shall satisfy and pay or cause to be paid to **my daughter Elizabeth**, thirty pounds of like money within twelve months next after my decease and likewise to **my daughter Marie**, thirty pounds of like money at her age of one and twenty or at the day of her marriage which shall first happen.

And likewise to **my daughter Amye**, thirty pounds of like money at her age of one and twenty years or at the day of her marriage, which shall first happen, upon reasonable demand made by the said Jane, Elizabeth, Mary, and Amye and provided always that if my son Matthew do refuse and do not pay to **my son John Whipple** the four score pounds as aforesaid and thirty pounds apiece to my four daughters aforesaid; at the several days and times limited and appointed as is afore rehearsed, then I do devise, give, and bequeath all my capital messuage or tenement aforesaid, with all and singular the premises members and appurtenances whatsoever, with the furnishings in and about all the rooms therein being, to my son John Whipple and to his heirs or assigns, forever. And that then he the said John, my son, his heirs or assigns, shall discharge and pay or cause to be paid to my aforenamed four daughters their portions of thirty pounds apiece of lawful money of England in manner and form as aforesaid.

Item. I give and bequeath to **my daughter Anne Pepper** six silver spoons of the better sort, two high latten candlesticks, my biggest brass pot and three pounds, six shillings and eight pence in money to be paid and delivered to her within one month next after my decease.

Item. I give to **my daughter Johane**_____ forty shillings lawful money of England to be paid to her within one month next after my decease.

Item. I give to **my daughter Jane** two silver spoons, two pewter platters of the greater sort, one pewter candlestick, one half-headed bedstead, my best flock bed and flock bolster and coverlet and a pair of blankets.

Item. I give to **my daughter Elizabeth** two silver spoons, one pewter candlestick, two pewter platters of the greater sort, a half-headed bedstead, next the best and flock bed and flock bolster and coverlet and pair of blankets and the little chest which was her mothers.

Item. I give to **my daughter Marye** two silver spoons, two pewter platters and a pewter salt and trundle bedstead and flock bed and flock bolster and coverlet and pair of blankets.

Item. I give to **my daughter Amye** two silver spoons, two pewter platters and pewter salt and trundle bedstead and flock bed and flock bolster and a pair of blankets.

Item. I give to **my son John** a joined table and frame standing in **my old parlor** with eight joined stools to it, a great joined chest standing in **my great**

chamber, one silver spoon and another spoon silver, and my bed bedding and bedstead furnished whereon I do now lie standing in **my little chamber**.

Item. All my best linen I do give among to my children as the same hath been viewed, parted, and divided out to them.

Item. I give to **my sister, the wife of Richard Rathbone**, seventy shillings and to **Hercules Stephens**, ten shillings.

Item. I give to **my daughter Mary** one plain chest standing in **my lodging chamber**. And I do give to **my daughter Amye** my long chest standing in the old parlor.

Item. I give to **my grandchildren viz: Hercules Arthur, Margaret Arthur,**[100] **Henry Caldam, and Ande Caldam**, to each of them six shillings eight pence apiece, to be paid to them at their several ages of one and twenty years.

Item. I give to **my son John** five curtains next **the loft**.

Item. I give to **the poor people of Bocking** twenty shillings to be distributed among them.

All the rest of my goods and chattels whatsoever (my debts being paid and my funeral discharged), I give to **Matthew, my son. And I do make and ordain the said Matthew, my son, sole executor** of this, my last will and testament. In witness whereof, I have hereunto set my hand and seal the day and year first above written.

The will was signed by Matthew and witnessed by _____Thursby and _____Taylor.

Unfortunately, no inventory of Matthew's estate exists. Essex, unlike other English counties, has few surviving inventories for the seventeenth century, particularly for the decades of the great migration to New England.[101]

Matthew's grandson, Hercules Arthur, acquired the Manor of Fryers in Bocking June 4, 1632.[102] Located on Bradford street on the lane called Fryers, it had a court baron and several quit rents.[103] The mansion house was on the right side of the road leading from Bocking to Braintree. Hercules died without issue, leaving the Manor to his half-brother, John Arthur of Clapham in Surrey. John Arthur, a child of Laurence's second marriage, married Anne Corbet. Their children were John, Jr. Henry,[104] Anne, Elizabeth, and Dorothy. The Manor was bequeathed to John Arthur, Jr. who eventually sold it to John Maysent, Jr. of Bocking, a grandson of Margaret and great grandson of Matthew Whipple, Sr.[105]

John Hawkins, a respected citizen and trustee for the poor of Bocking married Mary Levitt February 21, 1603/04.[106] At the time of this marriage, he had at least two daughters by a previous wife: Eleanor, baptized March 6, 1595 and buried in 1610; and Mary, who married Matthew Wright November 8, 1610.[107] His daughters with Mary Levitt, Anne and

Sarah, both married in 1622, Anne to Matthew Whipple, Jr. on May 7, and Sarah to William Coppin on September 26. His son John, Jr. lived in Braintree.[108] Hawkins died in 1619; his wife Mary died May 3, 1635.[109]

The Hawkins were among Braintree's notable families. Braintree was ruled by a "Select Vestry" known as the "Four and Twenty," a self-perpetuating oligarchy of a few of the substantial church members. Three successive generations of Hawkins served on the Four and Twenty.[110]

John Hawkins, Jr. carried the title of Gentleman and is believed to have lived in a fine mansion in Great Square. A tablet identifying his tomb is in the north chancel wall of St. Michael the Archangel church at Braintree. He was a member of the Grocers' Company, and an Alderman of the city of London in 1626.[111] At his death September 8, 1633, his estate included messuages and tenements in Tolleshunt, Bushes, Salcott, Wigborough, and Verley,[112] the messuage where the family lived in Braintree, and two little tenements adjoining the Braintree churchyard. The Braintree messuage and two tenements were left to his wife Sara, "so long as she remained a widow," and to his son Abraham. Abraham also received other lands and tenements. "Sister Whipple," brother Francis, other children, sisters, mother, aunts and a cousin were also remembered.[113] Daughter Sarah, who married Sir Stephen White, apparently died at an early age. In 1640, her husband established a charity of "six pounds thirteen shillings and four-pence yearly out of a farm in Black and White Notley, for the giving, upon All-Saints day, unto six poor women of Braintree, of honest and good behavior, and frequenters of the Church and divine service there; to each a gown of good cloth ready made of the value of 14s and to each of the said women, four 2-penny loaves of wheaten-bread upon the first Sunday of every month in the year, after Sermon in the afternoon, and to the upper Church-warden, one shilling and four-pence." This charity is "to be the love and affection" which he bore to his "late wife and to the parishioners of this town, for the sake of her and her friends."[114]

His son Robert Hawkins, esquire, owned Lyons, a capital messuage located about a mile east-south-east from St. Marys Church and about a mile south of the Manor of Boones in Bocking.[115] He also owned considerable property in Braintree, passed by marriage to Sir John Dawes of Putney, Knight and Baronet, who married his only daughter Frances.[116]

The will of Thomas Trotter, a London merchant, born at Braintree, suggests a possible relationship between the Whipple and Whaple families.[117] The Trotter will refers to "my cousin Laurence Arthur's wife," and "my cousin Robert Whaple's wife."[118] Arthur was named a supervisor of the Trotter estate which included property in both Bocking and Braintree. Trotter left £50 to the poor in several parishes and named Matthew

Whipple, Jr. and Arthur to oversee its distribution in Bocking, giving the same assignment to John Hawkins for Braintree.[119]

The Stone family of Great Bromley,[120] later of Boxted, both in Essex, is of interest because Mary Whipple, daugher of John and Susanna, united the two families by marrying Deacon Simon Stone in New England in 1655.[121] Simon, born at Boxted about 1630, moved to Massachusetts Bay with his family in 1635 where they settled at Mount Auburn in Watertown. The family can be traced to Walter atte (sic) Stone, born about 1285 and living in 1327.[122] David Stone was born in Great Bromley, Essex about 1540, the same birth year estimated for Matthew, Sr.'s mother. His son Simon, father of Deacon Simon, was christened February 6, 1586 at Great Bromley, making him a contemporary of Matthew, Jr.[123]

Why did Matthew and John Whipple migrate? What motivated them to change, in mid career, their settled English vocations for a life in a pioneering agricultural community of uncertain prospects?[124] Why choose New England where the craft which had given them income and status in the old world didn't exist; where they would never again see family and old friends?

New England was not the only option. They could have moved to The Netherlands, the most economically advanced area in the whole of Europe, where every kind of craft, especially worsted weaving, was in high demand. More emigrants went to Holland than to New England because of its economic opportunities and because it welcomed nonconformists.[125] It was a known entity, close to home, a move relatively easy compared to a journey across the Atlantic. The author believes two major reasons—religion and economics—were the motivating forces. It was religion for John, economics for Matthew.

Early in his reign, Charles I (1625-49) caused the Articles "for the avoiding of diversities of opinions, and for the establishing of consent touching true religion" agreed to in 1562, be reprinted. As Defender of the Faith and Supreme Governor of the Church, he acted to conserve and maintain the Church in the "unity of true religion" and to eliminate "unnecessary disputations, altercations, or questions which may nourish faction both in the Church and Commonwealth."

He claimed the 1562 document contained "the true Doctrine of the Church of England agreeable to God's Word" and required "all our loving subjects to continue in the uniform profession thereof." While denying anyone the right to vary from the doctrine and discipline of the Church of England, he acknowledged "curious and unhappy differences" throughout the land. All were to submit "in the plain and full meaning thereof: and shall not put his own sense or comment to be the meaning of the Article, but shall take it in the literal and grammatical sense." Puritanism was widespread by this time and its followers were enraged. Many determined

they could no longer tolerate the restrictions on their right to freedom of religion and vowed to leave the land of Charles I — it seems Matthew and John Whipple were among them.[126]

By elevating Laud to the Bishopric of London in 1628 and to Archbishop of Canterbury in 1633, Charles I showed further determination to enforce absolute conformity to his high church views. In 1637, three men of thoroughly respectable origin issued a series of pamphlets against the archbishop. They were William Prynne, a barrister, Henry Burton, a former court chaplain dismissed for his Puritanism, and John Bastwich, a doctor of medicine. Among their pamphlets were *News from Ipswich*, *For God and the King*, *Flagellum Pontificis*, and *The Litany of John Bastwich*. They attacked Laud in terms that ensured wide readership. The result was trial in the Star Chamber with a sentence of life imprisonment, a fine of £5,000 each, and loss of ears.[127] This action greatly inflamed feeling against Laud and the three were regarded as living martyrs by Puritans who dipped sponges and handkerchiefs in their blood — hardly consistent considering Puritan opinion on the relics of Catholicism.

In December of 1637, Laud's agents captured John Lilburne, the "notoriousest dispenser of scandalous books in the kingdome."[128] When Lilburne was sentenced to be whipped through the streets and set in the pillory, it reaffirmed belief that reform of the church was hopeless and that Puritan life in England was impossible. John Whipple apparently decided it was time to leave England.

Most people think all emigrants left for religious reasons. Not so. Of the 60,000 going to America between 1630-43, many went to better themselves.[129] Matthew Whipple was probably among this group. Five depressions had diminished the family business. He may have been among Essex and Suffolk Clothiers to petition the King and the two Houses of Parliament because London merchants were not buying their product. "Our cloths for the most part, for the space of this 18 months, remain upon our hands, our stocks lying dead therein, and we can maintain our trading no longer," the petition stated. "The cries for food of many thousands of poor, who depend on this trade, do continually press us, not without threats, and some beginnings of mutinies; so that, if some speedy relief do not intervene, we can expect no less than confusion."[130]

That many from their area of Essex were going to New England must have also been an influencing factor. On the 1632 voyage of the *Lyon*, 58 of the passengers were followers of Rev. Thomas Hooker and were from the Braintree-Bocking area. Lionel and Rose Chute (Matthew, Jr.'s second wife) live in Dedham Essex before migrating in 1630. Rose's family roots were in Ardleigh, Essex. Ozias and William Goodwin left Bocking for New England in 1632. Ozias' wife, Mary Woodward, was born in Brain-

tree, her family roots were in Earl's Colone, and her martial home was Bocking. The Stone family had lived in Tendring Hundred near Colchester, Essex since 1300. Brothers Simon and Gregory Stone went to New England in 1635. Brothers Abraham and Robert Hawkins of Braintree settled in Charleston, Mass. in 1635.[131] Simon Stacy and his wife Elizabeth Clark left Bocking for Ipswich, Mass. in 1636 as did Robert Lord of Sudbury and his wife Mary Waite of Wethersfield. Thomas Fitch and his wife Anne Stacy of Bocking settled in Hartford, Conn. about 1638 and Dr. John Dane, Jr. and his wife Eleanor Clarke were in Ipswich by 1636.[132] *The Zealous Puritan*, a popular ballad at the time may have had some influence to pick New England:

Stay not among the wicked,
Lest that with them you perish,
But let us to New-England go
And the pagan people cherish.

For company I fear not,
There goes my cousin Hannah,
And Reuben so persuades to go
My cousin Joyce, Susannah

With Abigail and Faith,
And Ruth no doubt comes after
And Sarah kind, will not stay behind;
My cousin Constance's daughter.[133]

Regardless of the reason—the question of pounds, shillings, and pence, of a decreasing income, an unfavorable balance sheet, the recurring outbreaks of the plague and other killing diseases (Matthew's first two sons had died in infancy as had two daughters of John); the hope for freedom to worship freely as Puritans, for economic opportunity, and a healthier environment—New England was chosen.

Imagine the agonizing decision to sell the family home and business and to give up the known for a new life on an almost unknown continent. Imagine how the wives, Anne and Susanna, felt, realizing they would probably never again see their sisters, brothers, aunts, and a host of cousins, nieces and nephews. Difficult as it was, the decision was made and the families left in 1638.[134]

A move of this magnitude suggests some knowledge of the destination. The next chapter examines the literature available to those contemplating a move and describes a typical ocean voyage. But first, a challenge to

future Whipple historians to trace the family beyond Matthew, Sr. Records confirm that a number of Whipple families lived in Bocking and Braintree and a careful search of the records on the following may extend the line: Thomas Whyppll, living in Braintree in 1540 was elected Constable in 1542, included in the Essex lay subsidies in 1546, and sold property in August 1547. The name was spelled Whipple in the final two references. Ossee, William, Robert, Pleasance, and Elizabeth Whaples were mentioned in John Pryor's will in October 1576. Pryor was from Braintree. A Robert Whaples was mentioned in the minutes of Braintree's "Select Vestry" on March 4, 1622-23.[135] The family is also found in Brooke, Broomfield, Chelmsford, Harleston with Redenhall, Starston, Sisted, and Thorley, Essex. Matthew's 1616 will and parish records suggest other names to be researched, including the Laurence Arthur, Henry Caldam, Hercules Stephens, John Pepper, Edward Feast, Nicholas Ives, John Wallys, Isaac Green, Richard Baker, Henry Pye, Hoston families, and John Hawkins, Jr.

Because of the prominence of the Hawkins family, an effort to extend the line beyond John Hawkins should be successful. He was Anne (Hawkins) Whipple's father,. An Abraham and Robert Hawkins were living in Charlestown, Mass. in the mid 1630s. John Hawkins, Jr., brother of Anne, had sons Abraham and Robert. A Richard Hawkins and his wife Jane were living in Ipswich in 1637.

Information on the various Whipple families living in the shire of Norfolk is found in Appendix 1 and is in sufficient detail to assist any researcher to begin a search of that Whipple line.

1. That England had its share of notable personages during the life of Matthew and Joan and their children is apparent from the following:

1552-1599. Edmund Spenser, author of *Faerie Queen*, a treasure house of allegory, adventure, neo-platonic ideas, patriotism, and protestant morality.

1554-1618. Sir Walter Raleigh, poet, historian, courtier, explorer, and soldier.

1556-1626. Francis Bacon, philosopher, essayists, and statesman. In 1617, he became Lord Keeper to King James I.

1564-1593. Christopher Marlowe, great dramatist and poet. Probably the greatest English dramatists before Shakespeare.

1564-1616. William Shakespeare, dramatist and poet, considered the greatest playwright who ever lived. Emerged as a playwright in London in 1592, retired in 1613 to his birthplace, Stratford-on-Avon.

1572-1637. Ben Jonson, the dominant literary figure of James I reign. The brilliance of his language earned him a reputation as one of the great playwrights in English history.

1572- 1631. John Donne, considered the greatest of the metaphysical poets and one of the most eloquent preachers of his day.

1599-1659. John Milton, one of England's greatest poets. His *Paradise Lost* and *Paradise Regained* are considered among the greatest epic poems in the English language.

1628-1688. John Bunyan, author of *Pilgrim's Progress*, considered one of the world's great works of literature. His prose unites the eloquence of the Bible with the vigorous realism of common speech.

Genealogists searching in Essex Co., England will find *ESSEX: The Genealogist Library Guide* by Stuart A. Raymond helpful. It is a two-volume set. Volume one Genealogical Sources: 1) History of Essex, 2) Local Histories, 3) Bibliography and Archives, 4) Periodicals, 5) Occupational Information, 6) Parish Registers & other Records of Births, Marriages, & Deaths, 7) Monumental Inscriptions, 8) Probate Records, 9) Trade Directories, Maps, & Dialect, 10) Official Lists of Names, 11) Records of National & County Administration, 12) Parochial & Borough Administration, 13) Ecclesiastical Records, 14) Estate Records, 15) Education, 16) Migration.

Volume Two Family Histories & Pedigrees: 1) Pedigree Collections, Biographical Dictionaries, etc. 3) Diaries, Letters, & Household Accoounts, 4) Family Histories & Pedigrees. These volumes are published by the Federation of Family History Societies in association with S. A. and M. J. Raymond. They are available from Stuart A Raymond, Genealogical Bibliographer, Publisher, & Bookseller, P. O. Box 35. Exeter, EX1 3YZ, U.K. stuart@samjraymond.Softnet.co.uk

2. Bocking was in the Hundred of Hinkford. Other communities in the same Hundred in 1611 were: Braintree, Alphamston, Ashden, Ashfield, Balingdon, Belchampwater, Belchamp S. Paul, Belcham-potten, Beweres-hamlet, Boreley, Bowrehall, Brokehall, Brunden, Brundenhall, Bruntahall, Bulmer, Bumsteed-steeple, Burbrooke, Bymhall, Clarrethall, Codham, Cusslehall, Dawardes, Dyneshall, Felsteede, Fincingfield, Foxearth, Gestlingthorpe, Goldingham, Gosfield, Heninghamsible, Hennye-little, Hennye-great, Hipford, Kirkby, Lamer, Lyston, Lystonhall, Maplesteed-great, Maplesteed-little, Maplesteed-hall, Middleton, Moynes, Old Hall, Ouington, Panfield, Pebmershe, Penlowe, Petches, Rayne-little, Ridgeswell, Roydenhall, Royeshall, Saling-ould, Sapines, Shalford, Stanborne, Stanborne-hall,

Stebbing, Sturmer, Systeed, Thurston, Tilbury, Tilburyhall, Topefield, Twinsteed, Wethersfeld, Wickham S. Paul, Yealdham-hall, Yealdam-little. Since families generally remained in the same general area, research in these parishes, villages, and towns may find the missing link to earlier Whipple generations.

3. Some of her children probably died between 1557-59 when an epidemic caused a burial rate more than double the annual average. A Margaret Whipple's death is recorded in parish records and since Matthew's second born was named Margaret, it is likely that this Margaret is his mother.

4. Commencing in 1538, the cleric in each parish was required to record all baptisms, marriages, and burials in a parish register. An Act of Parliament in 1597 required him to forward a copy of each year's vital records to the diocesan bishop. Called Bishop's Transcripts, these copies can fill gaps in parish registers or augment the information they contain. David E. Gardner and Frank Smith, "Laws Relating to the Keeping of Parish Registers," *Genealogical Research in England and Wales.* Salt Lake City: Bookcraft, 1956, 1:141, 156. Fewer than 700 parishes out of 11,000 began keeping records in 1538.

   The author went to England in 1963 where he viewed the parish records at Bocking's St. Mary's Church and acquired a copy of Matthew's will in London. St. Mary's records are extracts from a transcript made by James J. Goodwin in 1903 and represent the earliest available register. According to the Essex county archivist, a second register, which would be most helpful to Whipple researchers since it would include baptisms from 1606 to 1654, is missing. The third register covers baptisms from 1655 to 1668 and marriages and burials from 1655 to 1670.

5. Mary Lovering Holman and George R. Marvin, M.A., Editors, *Abstracts of English Records Gathered Principally in Devonshire and Essex in a Search for the Ancestry of Roger Dearing c. 1624-1676 and Matthew Whipple c. 1560-1618*, 50 copies privately printed. (Boston, 929).

6. Mourning ritual—The circumstances described were the custom for widowers who did not remarry as is the description of Matthew's mourning ritual. Mortality among wives was high and many men married three or four times.

7. She named her son Hercules.

8. All christening dates from Bocking St. Mary's Parish record of 1561-1605 (years 1572-82 missing). Film #0472340, Family History Library, Salt Lake City, Utah. Filmed in 1968.

9. Couples did not marry younger than we marry now. In fact, they were older in relation to life expectancy.

10. The author had the will and probate translated by professors Valdis Lennicks, Ph.D. and Richard Van Fossom, Ph.D. of Cornell College in Mt. Vernon, Iowa. They were able to read all but a few words and described the Latin as, some very good, some poor.

11. A hornbook was a sheet of parchment with the alphabet, table of numbers, etc. on it. It was mounted on a small board with a handle and protected by a thin transparent plate of horn. It was used as a child's primer.

12. School and Latin were mandatory for boys. They were expected to be able to read when they enrolled.

13. Forule—A flat stick or ruler used for punishing children.

14. William Lily, born ca 1468, died Feb. 25, 1522 was one of the first teachers of Greek in England. He studied the classics in Italy and in 1512 was appointed High Master of Colet's School in St. Paul"s Churchyard. He wrote the national Latin grammar first published in 1513, revised in 1540, altered and re-issued in 1574. Udall, born in 1505, died

in 1556, was an English dramatist and Latin scholar. He was Headmaster at Eton in 1534 and of Westminster School (ca 1554-56). He published his translation of the *Apothegms* of Erasmus in 1542 and translated Erasmus' paraphrase on Luke in 1542-45.

15. William Cramer was born in London May 2, 1551 and died Nov. 9, 1623. He was an English historian and antiquary noted for his study of Elizabethan times. He was Headmaster at Westminster School of London (1593-97) and authored *Britannia* (first edition in 1586), a survey of the British Islands written in Latin; first translated into English in 1610.

16. Esop, supposedly born about 620 B.C., was brought to Athens as a slave while young and was eventually enfranchised by Iadom the Samian. Fables bearing his name were popular in Athens. A complete collection of the Aesopian fables, 231 in number, was published in 1810.

Marcus Porcius Cato was born in 234 B.C. and died 149 B.C. He was a Roman statesman, general, and writer who wrote *De agri Cultura* (also called *De re Rustica*) and *Origines.*

Homer was the first and greatest poet. He probably lived in the 10th or 11th century and developed epic poetry as an art. His *Iliad* and *Odyssey* were certainly on Matthew's reading list.

Horace lived from 65 to 8 B.C. No ancient writer has been so familiarly known and so generally appreciated in modern times. He was a moralist and a lyric poet. Among his works Matthew probably read were *Satires, Epodes,* and *Epistles.*

Ovid, the last in order of time of the poets of the Augustan age, was born in 43 B.C., the year of Cicero's death. He lived in Rome and among his notable works were *Amores (Art of Love)* and the *Herodies.* He died at age 61 in 17 A.D., third year of the reign of Tiberius.

Theognis of Megara was one of the early Greek elegiac poets, flourishing about the middle of the sixth century B.C.

Virgil, born about 470 in Castro in Etruria, was educated at Bologna and went to England in 1501 and became bishop of Bath and Wells in 1504. He wrote *Historia Anglica* and *Liber de Prodigiis,* the latter in 1526. Etruria is an ancient country occupying what is now Tuscany and part of Umbria in Italy.

17. Transubstantiation—The doctrine, that in the Eucharist, the whole substances of the bread and of the wine are changed into the body and blood of Christ, only the incidences of bread and wine remaining.

18. *The Book of Common Prayer* occupies a place of great importance in the history of the English people. The Church of England has used it as the basis for religion, education, and standards of doctrine since 1559. It includes copious amounts of Holy Scripture and contributed to the formation of the modern English language. The first two prayer books, 1549 and 1552, were not generally accepted. Elizabeth's in 1559 became an integral part of English life. During the reign of Edward VI (1547-1553), Parliament passed, on Jan. 1, 1549, an Act of Uniformity to which was appended *The Book of Common Prayer.* The first copies were on sale by March 7 and was to be in use by Whit Sunday, June 9. The title page indicates it was meant to cover the services previously contained in the Breviary (a book containing the prayers, hymns, etc. that priests and certain other clerics of the Roman Catholic church are required to recite daily), the Missal (the official, liturgical book of the Roman rite containing all the prayers, rites, etc. used by a priest in celebrating the Mass throughout the year), the Processional (a book setting forth the ritual to be observed in church processions), and the Manual; the Pontificals (having to do with or celebrated by a Bishop or other high-ranking prelate) remained in force for the

time being. Its contents formed the use of the whole Church of England, and all diocesan uses were superseded. The preface pointed out that the only other book needed for the conduct of services was the Bible, though a separate Psalter would be a convenience. It came under immediate attack by those who resisted liturgical reform and by those who wished to have a more thoroughly reformed order of worship. On April 14, 1552, the second Act of Uniformity, with a revised prayer book, was passed. It was to be in use from All Saints' Day, Nov. 1. It was outlawed during the reign of Queen Mary (1553-1558). The 1559 Act of Uniformity included the Elizabethan prayer book and was enforced by statute, royal and local. Visitations were conducted to see to it that the law was obeyed and failure to attend prayer book worship was punishable by law. The Puritans viewed it as popish and ungodly and sought to displace it. But many of them conformed, and made use of the "corrected" prayer book attached to the Geneva Bible and felt by so doing they were obedient to the law. The Roman Catholics were torn. Some resisted, paid their fines, and attended Mass in secret. Others conformed, attended prayer book worship, perhaps with rosaries to occupy time, and then attended Mass when reasonably safe to do so. The book included all the services needed for the regular weekday and Sunday worship of the church and occasional services to meet pastoral needs, emphasizing the great events of life, birth, marriage, sickness, and death.

The Church of England only allowed male priests. According to Graham Heathcote of the Associated Press in a news story in the Portland *Oregonian* Nov. 2, 1992 (page 1 and 20) with a London dateline, the Church of England voted Nov. 11 to ordain women as priests. After Parliament and Queen Elizabeth endorsed the decision the first woman priest was ordained in 1994. The Anglo-Catholic wing of the church objected on the grounds ordination of women would be a bar to closer relations with Rome. Evangelicals protested that Christ was male, chose male disciples, and no warrant existed in the Bible for women priests. Canon Christopher Colvern of London responded that "The maleness of Christian ministerial priesthood may be an obstacle to some, madness to others, but I have yet to be convinced that it's not part of God's revelation for the salvation of us all." George Carey, archbishop of Canterbury, pointed out that "ordination of women to the preiesthood alters not a word in the creeds, the Scriptures, or the faith of our church."

A two-thirds majority was required in each of the three houses of the church's general synod. It was approved 39-3 by the bishops, 176-74 by the clergy, and 169-82 by the laity. A switch of two votes among lay delegates would have blocked the path to priesthood for the church's 1350 women deacons. Women bishops are not permitted, parishes may refuse to accept a woman as priests, and bishops cannot be compelled to ordain or accept women as priests in their dioceses. The synod approved severance pay for any full-time priest who felt compelled to resign.

19. Chamomile—A plant with strong smelling foliage; its dried daisy-like flower heads have been used in medicinal tea.
20. Sweet flag—A perennial marsh plant of the *arum* family, with sword-shaped leaves, small green flowers and a sweet-scented rhizome. A rhizome is a creeping stem lying, usually horizontally, at or under the surface of the soil and differing from a root in having scale leaves, bearing leaves, or aerial shoots near its tips, and producing roots from its undersurface.
21. Sweet cicely—A European perennial herb of the parsley family, with anise-scented leaves formerly used in flavoring.
22. Sweet woodruff—A rubiaceous herb scented like the sweet-vernal and sweet-clover and used to flavor the spring beverage called May-drink.

23. Much of the description of London is from George Garrett, *The Succession, A Novel of Elizabeth and James.* Garden City, N.Y.: Doubleday & Company, Inc., 1983.
24. Roger Hart, *English Life in Tudor Times*, Wayland Publishers, (London, 1972). 47-8.
25. The English apprentice statute was passed in 1563 and remained on the statute book for 250 years, being repealed in 1813. The working day was 12 hours in summer and daylight hours in winter. The tradition of apprentices stretches through history to ancient Babylon 4,000 years ago with terms of apprenticeship included in the Code of Hammurabi. Then came the industrial revolution. Manufacturing adopted an assembly-line process. Tasks were divided and subdivided and subdivided again into tiny, repetitious routines or reduced to machine watching, requiring no particular hierarchy of skills. Except for certain construction trades, apprenticeship was largely relegated to a historical footnote. In the U.S. in 1989, only 263,000 workers out of a blue-collar force of 35 million were registered apprentices. Their average age was in the mid-20s.
26. Matthew Whipple, Sr. Home—The property was known as a capital messuage. A messuage is a dwelling house with outbuildings and adjacent land. A capital messuage includes the dwelling occupied by the owner plus several additional messuages. The other dwellings probably housed the married members of the family, the servants, and work force associated with the clothier business.
27. Holman and Marvin. p. 479.
28. *Ibid.* 536-7.
29. *Ibid.* 463. A lay subsidy is a tax on persons based on the payor's reputed estate in lands or goods, or customs imposed on any of the staple commodities.
30. *Ibid.* 479-63. Tebold was a yeoman whose will was proved Feb. 2, 1603. Was there a family relationship between the families? Hopefully someone will pursue this lead.
31. Bequeathed as "Bredfords" by John Peppis of Braintree in his will of 1518.
32. May Cunnington and Stephen A. Warner, *Braintree and Bocking, A Pictorial Account of Two Essex Townships*, Arnold Fairbairns Printers. 34.
33. Matthew Whipple, Jr.—This birth year has been estimated by many previous genealogists. The author feels the year is suspect since parish records show his marriage to Anne Hawkins as May 7, 1622. If born in 1590, Matthew would have been 33 when he married, an age considerably older than the norm. The date raises questions: was he born later or did he marry earlier, losing his first wife at childbirth or to disease? Or was he his father's chief assistant in operating the clothier business and it became his obligation to run the business after his father's death which occurred three years before he married Anne Hawkins?
34. Infants had about one chance in three of surviving to age one and if surviving, faced the same odds of reaching age five.
35. Spit—A thin, pointed rod or bar on which meat is impaled for broiling or roasting over a fire.
36. A lamprey is an eel-like fish.
37. Beer was introduced into England by the Dutch in the fifteenth century.
38. A rhyme used by children to decide who is to begin a game:
    One-ery, two-ery,
    Ziccary zan;
    Hollow bone, crack a bone,
    Ninerty, ten:
    Spittery spot,
    It must be done.
    Twiddleum twaddleum,
    Twenty-one.

39. Gittern—A wire-strung instrument somewhat like a guitar.
40. Musk—Any of several plants having a musky scent.
41. Bishop of Chester's Jig—An Irish dance tune passed from one fiddler to another and circulated informally in various versions in the 17th, 18th, and 19th centuries. Most of these fiddle tunes survive as single-line melodies with no accompaniment. The tune is available at: http://www.leeds.ac.uk/music/musicis/Info/RRT-tuneBk/gettune/000004dd.html.
42. Brand—A stick that is burning or partially burned.
43. Rosemary leaves were placed beneath pillows or under the children's beds to drive away nightmares before they could begin.
44. Groundsel—Plants of the composite Senecio family usually with yellow, rayed flower heads. An annual, it is slightly acrid and was used as a domestic remedy for various aliments.
45. Woodruff. See endnote No. 22.
46. Martyrdom of St. Stephens—Celebrated Dec. 26 from the end of the fourth century. St. Stephen was one of "the seven" appointed by the Apostles to "serve tables" in Jerusalem (Acts 6.5) and one of the most popular saints of the Middle Ages. He preached and performed miracles (Acts 6.8ff), thus incuring the hostility of the Jews who accused him to Sandhedrin. The Sanhedrin was the highest Court and Council of the ancient Jewish nation with religious and civil functions.
47. Childermas—The popular name of Holy Innocents' Day, a feast-day observed in the Anglican and Roman Catholic churches on 28 Dec., to the slaughter of the children in and near Bethlehem, as narrated in Mat. ii 16-18. Also Childermas day.
48. The king was Henry II who ruled 1154-89. á Becket was born in London 21 Dec. 1118 and was murdered at the behest of Henry Dec. 29, 1170. He had become Chancellor to Henry in 1155 and was elected Archbishop in 1162. After becoming Archbishop, he resigned his Chancellorship and from then on there was strife between King and Bishop with á Becket working to extend the authority of the Pope and Henry trying to subject the church to his will.
49. Feast of Circumcision—Observed on the octave (the eighth day following a church festival, counting the festival day as the first) of Christmas day (Jan. 1), in honor of the circumcision of Christ. Also commemorates the death of St. Basil.
50. If it rained on market day the family prayed it would be in the early evening. "Rain before seven, clear by eleven," was the old saying.
51. Mummers were masked and costumed people who traveled to fairs and festivals acting out short pantomimes
52. Marchpane: A confection of ground almond, sugar, and egg white made into a paste of various shapes and colors.
53. During Elizabeth's reign (1558-1603), the country had two issues of milled coinage in gold and silver. First gold issue: Sovereign, Ryal, Angel, Half Angel, Quarter Angel, Pound, Half-Pound, Crown, and Half Crown. First silver issue: Crown, Half Crown, Shilling, Sixpence, Groat, Threepence, Half Groat, Three Halfpence, Penny, Three Farthings, Halfpenny. Second gold issue: Half Sovereign, Crown, and Half Crown. Second silver issue: Shilling, Sixpence, Groat, Threepence, Half Groat, Three Farthings. There were four issues during the reign of James I. First gold: Quarter Angel, Sovereign, Half Sovereign, Crown, Half Crown. First silver: Crown, Half Crown, Shilling, Sixpence, Half Groat, Penny, and Halfpenny. Second gold: Unite, Double, Britain Crown, Half Crown, and Thistle Crown. Second silver: Crown, Half Crown, Shilling, Sixpence, Half Groat, Penny, and Halfpenny. Third gold: Rose Ryal, Spur Ryal, Angel, Half Angel. No third silver. Fourth gold:

Rose Ryal, Spur Ryal, Angel, Laurel, Half Laurel, Quarter Laurel. Silver: Crown, Half Crown, Shilling, Half Groat, Penny, Halfpenny. Copper and Billion issue: Copper Farthing, Token, both the Harrington and Lennox type. During the reign of Charles I (1624-49), two issues. First gold: Angel, Unite, Double Crown (Half Unite), Britain Crown. First silver: Crown, Half Crown, Shilling, Sixpence, Half Groat, Penny, Halfpenny. Second gold (Briot's coinage): Angel, Unite, Double Crown (half unite), Crown. Second silver: Crown, Half Crown, Shilling, Sixpence, Half Groat, Penny. The following provincial mints also struck coins for Charles I: York, Aberystwyth, Shrewsbury, Oxford, Bristol, Lundy Island, Truro, Exeter, Combe, Martin, Weymouth, Salisbury, Worcester, and Chester. The following towns struck siege pieces during his reign: Carlisle, Colchester, Newark, Pontefract, and Scarborough. Stephen Mitchell and Brian Reeds, eds., *Coins of Great Britain and The United Kingdom*, 24th edition. London: Seaby. Adapted with additional material from catalogues originally compiled by H. A. and P. J. Seaby.

54. It's not clear whether the dog or the turd was white.

55. White frankincense—A gum resin obtained from various Arabian and northeast African trees.

56. Aloes–A bitter, laxative drug made from the juice of certain aloe leaves. Aloe is a plant of the lily family, native to South Africa.

57. Frogs spawn—The mass of eggs produced by the frog.

58. Laudanum—Any of various preparations containing opium.

59. Primitive as these remedies were, medicine evolved slowly and 90% of today's health care did not exist in 1950. The power of the doctor to cure and alleviate disease began its meteoric rise about 1930. Before then the doctor could do little once disease set in except relieve some of the symptoms and let nature take its course. Of the 80 milestones in the history of medicine beginning in 2700 B.C., 29 date from the last 60 years, meaning 36% of medicine's most noteworthy advances have occurred in just the last 2.2% of medicine's history.

60. Armada is a Spanish word meaning an armed force or fleet. Here, it designates the expedition of about 120 ships sent out against England in 1588 by Philip of Spain. His principal motive was to strike a decisive blow at the Protestant faith, of which England was then the bulwark.

61. The dread of a great secret Catholic conspiracy of unknown strength was in many men's minds. It was a chief source of tension in that uneasy summer of 1588. Common gossip suggested at least a third of the English were Catholics and that when Spanish armies landed it would be the signal for a widespread uprising. Under these circumstances, the Privy Council, unsure that English patriotism (and hatred of foreigners) was stronger than the bonds of religion, placed leading recusants (a Roman Catholic who refused to attend the services of the Church of England or to recognize its authority) in protective custody. But the open avowed Catholics were a mere handful while the crypto-Catholics and conforming Anglicans with strong Catholic leanings were more numerous. Some Privy Councilors and County Magnates urged strong measures be taken against all persons in any way suspected. "It were hard for any man to face the enemy with a stout heart," wrote one of them, "if he thought his house like at any time to be burned behind his back." But it was hard for Elizabeth to believe in religion as an overriding motive except for a few crackbrained fanatics who might be annoying but not dangerous. She refused to suspect popery and treason whenever one found a sentimental attachment to old ways. Garrett Mattingly, *The Armada*. Houghton Mifflin Company. (Boston. 1959). 346.

62. Pike—A weapon used by foot soldiers, consisting of a metal spear-head on a long wooden shaft; used to pierce or kill.

63. The size of the army is not known but was undoubtedly less than planned and certainly less than the 23,000 William Camden, a contemporary of the time, speaks of so confidently, but surely more than the "between five and six thousand" which is all skeptics will allow. Mattingly. 347.

64. Lacey Baldwin Smith, *The Horizon Book of the Elizabethan World,* American Heritage Publishing Company, Inc., (New York, 1968). 289.

65. Tilbury Fort was the country's most developed center of defense. The secondary camp in Kent was scarcely more than a potential replacement depot for the navy and the great reserve army near Westminster, intended as a bodyguard for the Queen in case of invasion, existed mainly on paper. *Ibid.* 344.

66. Elizabeth Inspecting Troops—This inspection took place ten days after the Armada had fled northward. The Whipples had three children at the time: Anne, almost 5, Margaret, 3, and Jane, 10 months.

On the morning of August 18, the Queen in her royal barge, departed St. James preceded by her music blowing loudly on silver trumpets and accompanied by many other barges with gentlemen pensioners of her household dressed in half armor with plumed morions (a hatlike, crested helmet without beaver or visor and with a curved brim coming to a peak in front and in back) and the full strength of the Yeomen of the Guard. This military show was comforting to the people of London who lined the shore to cheer as the barges swept grandly through the ebb tide.

The Army assembled at Tilbury lined up by regiments of foot, with coats all (or nearly all) alike, and troops of horsemen in armor with nodding plumes. The camp was gay and clean, its ditches dug and palisades in placed, the parti-colored pavilions of the nobles and gentlemen bright, the green booths where the rank and file slept not yet bedraggled and foul. At that moment, Tilbury combined the glamour of a military spectacle with the innocent cheerfulness of a country fair.

The Queen informed Robert Dudley, Earl of Leicester, her Captain General, she had come to see the army (and to let them see her) and did not intend they look at each other across the broad shoulders of her Yeomen of the Guard or through the thicket of her gentlemen's plumes. She needed no guards among fellow countrymen in arms for her service. The inspection party consisted of Thomas Butler, Earl of Ormonde, on foot in front carrying ceremoniously the Sword of State. Behind him walked two pages in white velvet, one with the Queen's elaborate silver casque (helmet) on a white velvet cushion, the other leading her horse. Three mounted figures followed: the Queen, riding between her Captain General and her Master of the Horse, 23-year-old Robert Devereux, Earl of Essex. Behind them on foot was Sir John Norris, a veteran soldier who had fought with distinction with William of Orange. When this inspection party advanced into the ranks of the militia, it exploded in a roar of cheers. Mattingly. 342, 347, 348.

67. Cuirass—A piece of close-fitting armor for protecting the breast and back.

68. Lacey Baldwin Smith. pp. 289-90. J. E. Neale, *Essays in Elizabethan History*. (London. 1958). 04-06.

69. A card is a brush with wire teeth, used in disentangling fibers of wool, flax, or cotton, laying them parallel to one another preparatory to spinning. Two brushes, one in each hand, are drawn past each other, with the fibers between them. A carder does this work thus preparing the cloth for spinning. A comber is a person who combs wool or flax. Fulling is the process of shrinking and compacting woollen fabric to felt and joining the fibers to and make the cloth stronger and firmer. Felt is an

unwoven fabric of wool matted together with the aid of moisture and heat, by rolling, beating, and pressure. Thus, fullers are the workers who improve the texture of fabric by making them thicker, closer, and heavier.

70. Matthew, Sr. died in 1619 so didn't have to contend with the economic downturn. Matthew, Jr. was married in 1622 and was undoubtedly concerned about starting a family under the dire financial conditions of the time.

71. E. Lipson, *The Economic History of England*, Vol. III, A. & C. Black, Ltd., (London, 1931). 250-51.

72. Matthew was approximately 43. James I was the second ruler they would know.

73. He was the first King of England named James.

74. Henry on June 5, 1610. Matthew, Jr., would have been approximately 20. Henry was the first Prince of Wales since Henry VIII in 1503. He died in 1612 and Charles, James' second and favorite son, was given the title and succeeded to the throne in 1625.

75. *Acts and Monuments*—Published in 1563, it went through five printings in the sixteenth century. Sir Francis Drake took a copy around the world with him in 1577. Those who couldn't read identified with its woodcuts, grouped both thematically, as in the sequence illustrating the conflict between papal and monarchial claims of supremacy, and illustrations of stories of martyrs. The pictures supplemented the text and made the book's central message accessible to all. Later it was known as the *Book of Martyrs*. It is available in one of the following editions: William Byron Forbush, D.D., editor, *Fox's Book of Martyrs*, Holt, Rinehart, and Winston, (New York, 1926. Renewed in 1954 and 1961). G. A. Williamson, editor, *Foxe's Book of Martyrs*, Little, Brown and Company, (Boston, Toronto, 1965).

76. The Essex Sessions Rolls include an account of a dinner conversation among the servants of Mr. Wentworth of Bocking as they were "reasoning upon" the sermon they had listened to the previous Sunday. John Harvard, apparently of the old faith, said "it was never merry in England since the scriptures were so commonly preached and talked upon among such as persons as they were." A man named King responded, saying he "hoped they should live to see no other time but when the gospel should be preached here in England." M. M. Knappen, *Tudor Puritanism*, The University of Chicago Press, (Chicago & London, 1939; First Phoenix Edition, 1965). 290-91.

77. Puritan Service—The Sunday morning service consisted of: a confession of sins; a prayer for pardon; a metrical psalm; a prayer for illumination; scripture reading; sermon; baptisms and publications of banns of marriage; long prayer (of intercessions and petitions) and the Lord's Prayer; the Apostles' Creed (recited by the minister); a metrical psalm; and the blessing (Aaronic or Apostolic).

Puritans established worship of the Apostolic church based on six ordinances—prayer, praise, the reading and preaching of the word, the administration of the sacraments of baptism and the Lord's Supper, catechizing, and the exercise of discipline. Authority for Apostolic worship was Acts 2:41-42: "Then they that gladly received his word were baptized; and that same day there were added to the church about three thousand souls. And they continued in the Apostles doctrine and fellowship, and breaking of bread and prayers." (From the Genevan version of the Bible, 1560). The types of prayer, supplications, intercessions,, thanksgivings, were derived from I Timothy 2:1ff; invocation or adoration and confession from the example of the Lord's Prayer; praise from Ephesians 5:19, with its reference to "psalms, and hymns, and spiritual songs, singing and making melody to the Lord in your hearts."

The proclamation of the Gospel was the central feature of worship. Its im-

portance was attested to by the entire corpus of the Scriptures, which provided a saving knowledge of God, especially II Corinthians 1:12 and Romans 10:14-15. Authority for the "Gospel Sacraments" was Matthew 28:19-20 and I Corinthians 11:23-26. Though they rejected set sermons and set forms of prayer, they accepted a set form of words for catechism from II Timothy 1:13: "Keep the true pattern of the wholesome words which ye has heard of me in faith and love which is in Christ Jesus." Matthew 18:15-18 and 18:2, I Corinthians 5:3-5, and the Third Epistle of John 10 allowed ecclesiastical censures by providing the complete procedure for admonishment, excommunication, and readmission of penitent offenders. Davies. 159, 273, 174.

In their preaching, John and Nathaniel Rogers probably followed the structure of the Puritan sermon developed by Bishop John Hooper, the father of nonconformity. (See W.M.S. West, "John Hooper and the Origins of Puritanism," *Baptist Quarterly*, (October 1954-April 1955). The primary purpose of preaching was to present the claims of God on man through the criticism and comfort of the Gospel so the structure of the sermon had to be simple, memorable, and practical if it were to produce the light and heat, illumination of mind, and warming of affections required.

William Perkins, lecturer at St. Andrew's Church, Cambridge, the most eminent Puritan scholar of Elizabethan times, said the preacher's task was: (1) to read the Text distinctly out of the Canonicall Scriptures; (2) to give the sense and understanding of it being read, by the Scripture itself; (3) to collect a few and profitable points of doctrine out of the natural sense; (4) to apply (if he have the gift) these doctrines rightly collected to the life and manners of men in a simple and plain speech.

The goal of the Puritan sermon was to change man's mind, to improve his behavior. There was little interest in speculative thought or speculative divinity. Godliness, to know the will of God in order to follow it, was the paramount concern. Metaphors, similes, and *exempla* provided the illustrations that were the windows of the sermon, illuminating the doctrine while sustaining interest, and provoking action. Davies. 304-5.

Sermons were expected to be delivered without a manuscript, consequently Puritan preachers developed excellent memories. This allowed them to develop a firm structure, a clear progression, and the advantage of order and flexibility. By watching the congregation, they could explain further or add illustrations if they sensed incomprehension.

William Perkins, *The Workes of that Famous and Worthy Minister of Christ in the University of Cambridge*, M. William Perkins. 3 Vols. Cambridge, 1613 advised would-be ministers on voice and gesture. He advised that the voice be moderate when inculcating the doctrine but "more fervent and vehement" in the exhortation. His general rule for gestures was they should be grave so the body may grace the messenger of God: "It is fit therefore that the trunk or stalk of the body being erect and quiet, all the other parts, as the arm, the hand, the face and eyes, have such motions as may express and (as it were) utter the godly affections of the heart. The lifting up of the eye and the hand signifieth confidence. 2 Chron. 6. 13-14... Acts, 7.55... the casting down of the eyes signifieth sorrow and heaviness. Luke. 18-13." *Workes,* II, 672.

78. Other Puritan pastors from Essex included: Thomas Weld, Vicar of Terlin, later Pastor at Roxbury, Mass. (1632-41); Thomas Hooker, who preached at Chelmsford until silenced by Laud, went to Holland in 1631 and to New England in 1633 where he was minister at Newtown until moving to Hartford in 1636; Thomas Shepard, Pastor at Earle's Colne near Coggeshall became the minister at Newtown (later

Cambridge, Mass.) in 1636; Daniel Rogers, son of Richard, was a lecturer at Wetherfield; Nathaniel Ward, Rector of Little Leighs, later pastor at Ipswich, Mass.; Stephen Marshall, Vicar of Finchinfield; Samuel Wharton, Vicar of Felsted; and John Beadle, Rector of Little Leighs (he submitted to Laud in 1633). Martin Holbeach, a prominent Puritan, was Headmaster of Felsted school where a number of prominent Puritans were educated. Michael McGiffert, Editor, *God's Plot, The Paradoxes of Puritan Piety, Being the Autobiography & Journal of Thomas Shepard,* University of Massachusetts Press, (1972). Felsted, Finchinfield, and Wetherfield were all in the Hinkford Hundred. Earle's Colne was nearby.

79. The Bible—"If any man shall add unto these things, God shall add unto him the plagues that are written in this book." Rev. 22:18.

80. The scriptures provided authority for their occasional ordinances. Prophesyings were sanctioned by I Corinthians 14:1 and 31. If a day of humiliation was held for the expression of the people's penitence following a great natural, political, or military calamity, the invariable order was fasting, prayer, and sermon, as in Acts 13:1-3 and 14:23. When the sick were anointed with oil and their recovery prayed for, it was according to James 5:14-15. Even the frequency of divine services was foretold. The double burnt offering in Numbers 28:9 sanctioned two services on the Lord's Day; the necessity for the Lord's Supper to be preceded by a sermon was determined by Acts 20:27. Corinthians 16:2 and Acts 4:36 determined who should collect the offertory and at what point in the service it should be presented. Since marriage was not included in the list of pastoral duties in II Timothy 4:2ff, it did not require the services of a minister for its solemnization. A text became pretext when Matthew 11:28, "Come unto me, all ye that are weary & laden, and I will ease you," was taken as proof that the only appropriate posture at the Lord's table was sitting, as witnessing to the rest that Christ promised to his disciples. Stability of position in worship v. the mobility of the one presiding over Anglican worship who moves from prayer desk to lectern to pulpit to altar was drawn from Acts 1:15: "Peter stood up in the midst of the disciples." The denial of response in public prayers was forbidden in Leviticus. Davies. 260.

81. The Second Coming—Puritans were careful not to name any exact time for the event.

82. The most important of the prayer books used by the Puritans was probably "John Knox's Genevan Service Book" whose correct title was *The Forme of Prayers and Ministrations of the Sacraments, etc. used in the English Congregation at Geneva: and approved by the famous and godly learned man, John Calvyn. Imprinted at Geneva by John Crespin. MDLVI*

83. Music in Church—The booming and rolling of the organs were open to objection and hundreds were removed from the churches. There was no particular objection to music outside the church.

84. A calling was an occupation or job.

85. Drudge—A person who does hard, menial, or tedious work.

86. M. M. Knappen. 454-55.

87. *Ibid.* 468.

88. John was a Ruling Elder. The will of John Amies of Bocking, proved April 16, 1647, links Rev. Rogers and John: "I give the piece of cloth at home unto Mr. Rogers, John Whipple and a jerkin cloth of it to Mr. Norton of Ipswich, N. E." Rogers and Norton were Puritan preachers in Ipswich. Holman and Marvin. 468. See also Henry F. Waters, *Genealogical Gleanings in England,* Vol. I, first published in 1907; Genealogical Publishing Co, (Baltimore, 1969). 466.

89. The most important Puritan doctrine was predestination. From eternity God had predestined some to live and reprobated others to death. Man did nothing to deserve election. The will of God was the only cause. A limited and definite number were predestined to be saved.

90. Henry Burdett Whipple, Vol. I, 8. This marriage is not listed in St. Mary's parish register. John was about 23 at the time of his wedding.

91. Puritans believed the wedding ring was a superstition to be abolished like all the other Roman follies which tarnished God's revealed word.

92. They had 10 children in England but six died in infancy. An eleventh, Sarah, was born in Ipswich. Henry B. Whipple. 8.

93. Cocker—To coddle, pamper.

94. As the monastery was the training ground of Catholic spirituality, the family was the seed-plot of Puritan Christian life. The Puritan household was a little church with father, as father-in-God, conducting weekday prayers, morning and evening, for wife, children, servants, and apprentices. After returning from Sunday worship, he rehearsed the children in their catechism, checked to see if they had memorized and understood the main points of the sermon, and read aloud from the Bible or some other godly books—usually sermons of an approved minister of the *Book of Martyrs*. This spirituality was mingled with the joy of psalm-singing to catchy tunes and motivated by the sense that this is exactly how God's elect must live in a world of snares and traps laid by the ungodly, until rewarded by entering the everlasting community of the friends of Christ. This spirituality was aided by two powerful factors.

First, religion was not associated with a sacred building as it was for Catholics and High Church Anglicans. They called their houses of worship meeting-houses, not churches. To them the word church referred exclusively to the company of God's faithful people gathered to hear the reading and exposition of the oracles of God. Thus they could conceive of the "church in the house" as the gathering of persecuted Christians of the primitive church.

Second was the new significance given family life by the reformers.

God's covenant, invariably read at baptismal services, was "to you and your children." This recognition helped weld family life into an enduring solidarity in Christ. The head of the family promised at the baptism to supervise his children's Christian nature and was duty bound to teach his children the Scriptures and to make sure they understood the main points of Christine doctrine, behavior, and worship. The father's promises at baptism and his commitment in the covenant of church membership were God's marching orders and these responsibilities must be accounted for to God at the Great Day of Judgment, thus validating his duty to be a prophet and priest to his own household. Davis. 429-30

95. Jane married Henry Caldam a year after her mother's death. Johane's age is uncertain, but apparently she was older than Elizabeth. Elizabeth didn't marry until six years after her mother's death.

96. The two Arthur teenagers and the two Caldam toddlers.

97. Most cottages of that time consisted of a single room.

98. Latten is brass or brasslike alloy hammered into thin sheets.

99. Matthew's Will—Written 19 January 1616 and proved in the Superior Probate Court, the Prerogative Court of Canterbury in 1619. It is written in both old English and Latin.

100. Through Margaret Arthur, the family continued in the clothier business. She married Henry Pye and their daughter Judith married John Maysent. Judith and John's son, John, Jr. was identified, along with the Ruggles and "Inglish families as being

the major cloth making families in Bocking-Braitnree in the 1760s. Rev. Philip Morant, *The History and Antiquities of the County of Essex*, published in two volumes between 763 and 768. 386-8.

101. A review of wills of men who lived in seven Essex communities who contributed settlers to Ipswich divulged no inventories. F. G. Emmison, editor, *Wills at Chelmsford, 1400-1853*, 3 vols. II, 620-720. (London. 1958-1969). Passim.

102. Manor of Fryers—Hercules Arthur purchased it from Richard Windle who had inherited it 8 Dec. 1625 from his father Jonas Windle, Bocking Clothier. Morant, 386. Hercules was licensed to wed Ann Broune on 27 Oct. 1632. She was identified as a spinster of White Notly. The wedding was to be solemnized in the Notly church. See Holman and Marvin. 517.

103. A Court Baron is a domestic court for redressing misdemeanors, etc. in the Manor and for settling tenant's disputes. It consisted of the freemen or free-hold tenants of the Manor, presided over by the Lord or his Steward. Quit rent is rent paid by the freeholders and copyholders of a Manor in discharge or acquittance of other services. Also called chief-rent. Copyhold—a tenure of lands of a Manor, according to the custom of the Manor, and by copy of a court-roll; or a tenure for which the tenant has nothing to show except the rolls made by the Steward of the Lord's court which contains entries of the admission of the original or former tenant, his surrender to the use of another, or alienation, or his death, and the claim and admission of the heir or devise. Acquittance—discharging from a debt or any other liability.

104. Henry Corbet—Killed in a duel. The duel may be connected with the role his grandfather, Miles Corbet, Regicide, played in the death of Charles I.

105. John Arthur, Jr. was the nephew of Hercules Arthur. John Maysent, Jr. was the grandson of Margaret Arthur who was the granddaughter of Matthew Whipple. John Maysent, Jr. married Judith Maysent (perhaps they were cousins), daughter of Joseph Maysent, Gentleman of Hatfield-Peverell. John and Judith had three sons who died young, and six daughters, including Susanna, born 26 March 1691, who married Rev. John Palmer of Coventry; and Judith, born 29 March 1696, and who married William Rayment, Gentleman, attorney of Braintree and later of Black Notley. John Maysent, Jr. died 7 Oct. 1723. He and his wife were buried in the Bocking church-yard in a tomb. By will dated 8 Aug. 1723, he left the Fryers estate to his younger brother Jeremiah. The will also provided 40 shillings per annum forever for the repairing of his tomb and vault with "the over plus to the poor of this parish." On 14 Nov. 1721, John and William Maysent were named trustees by the will of John Mathum of Braintree to pay £20 forever to 20 poor people in Bocking." Morant. 386-8. Morant identified the Maysent, Ruggles, and Inglish families as being the major cloth making families in the 1760s.

Since John Arthur was a half brother to Hercules and Margaret Arthur, grandchildren of Matthew, readers may be interested in the family of John's wife, Anne, daughter of Miles Corbet, esquire, the Regicide. Corbet was the second son of Sir Thomas Corbet, Knight, of Sprowston, County Norfolk, and Anne, daughter of Edward Barret of Belhouse, County Essex. His brother was Sir John Corbet, Knight, and his uncle was Clement Corbet, named Chair of Law at Gresham College in 1607. A barrister, Miles Corbet represented Great Yarmouth in Parliament in 1628 and 1640. He was on the Parliamentary side during the civil war, representing County Norfolk. He was chairman of the committee that drew up the charges against Laud and was zealous in the prosecution of the Archbishop. He became notorious as Chairman of the Committee of Examinations whose arbitrary and inquisitorial procedure made him very unpopular. Parliament appointed him Clerk

of the Court of Wards in May 1644 and he was made one of the registrars of the Court of Chancery 7 March 1648. In October 1650, Parliament named him one of four commissioners to settle the affairs of Ireland, promoting him to chief Baron of the Exchequer in Ireland 13 June 1655. He remained in Ireland until the end of the Protectorate. Yarmouth elected him to Parliament in 1660 but his election was annulled 18 May causing him to flee England.

Indicted by a Grand Jury 9 Jan. 1660 for his part in the 30 Jan. 1649 execution of Charles I, Corbet's role as a Regicide was so prominent he was one of only nine to suffer the hideous death given traitors. In December 1649 when plans for the King's trial were being laid, Oliver Cromwell, with his fellow soldiers (Corbet was a Colonel) who were members of Parliament, played key roles. On 6 Jan. 1649, the House of Commons declared that Commons alone constituted a true Parliament and could legislate for the nation (heretofore the King and House of Lords shared in this power) and enacted a plan for a High Court of Justice to try the King. Corbet was selected to inform the King. The King's position was he was the ultimate authority and no one could try him. He was tried anyway and Corbet was one of the 59 Commissioners to indict, try, judge, condemn, and sign the death warrant. Corbet was in Westminster Hall when the trial began Saturday afternoon 20 Jan. When the King entered, the clerk read the charge of high treason and the Commissioners, "on behalf of the people of England impeach Charles Stuart as a tyrant, traitor, murderer, and implacable enemy to the Commonwealth of England."

After finding him guilty and signing the death warrant, which was to sever his head from his body, the Commissioners ordered the railing of the scaffold be hung with black so the actual execution would be screened from spectators. On execution day, while on the scaffold speaking to Bishop Juxton, the King noticed someone touching the axe, causing him to become afraid the edge would be blunted. He could not forget how his grandmother, Mary, Queen of Scots, had been hacked to death by blow after blow. "Hurt not the axe," he said, "that it may not hurt me." Spectators saw only the flash of the upraised axe before it crashed down and killed the King at its first falling. The assistant to the executioner picked up the head and held it high for all to see, then threw it down with such violence the still-warm check was badly bruised.

At Cromwell's death, his son Richard ruled for about a year before abdicating. The monarchy was restored with Charles II, the King's oldest living son, assuming the throne 29 May 1660. The first Parliament of the new reign, overwhelmingly Royalist and vindictive, authorized the Grand Jury to decide the fate of the surviving Commissioners who indicted Charles I. Fifteen had fled the country. Three, John Dixwell, Edward Whalley, and William Goffe, crossed the Atlantic and found safety in New England. Corbet, John Okey, and John Barkstead went to Holland where they were betrayed by a colleague, Sir George Downing, who had served Cromwell in high diplomatic position and became the tool of Charles II. [Downing, son of Emanuel Downing of Salem, Mass., went to England in 1645 at age 20 and eventually became a preacher in Col. Okey's regiment. He was also a nephew of Massachusetts governor John Winthrop. All three were returned, tried, convicted, and sentenced to death. Before the execution 19 April 1662 at Tyburn, Corbet, whose wife was beside herself with grief, tried to steady her by a familiar family joke and "though tears were ready to start from [his] eyes, yet he conquered himself, and taking his wife by the hand, said, 'O, my dear wife, shall we part in a shower? God will be a husband and a father to thee and thine;' and so kissing her, turned to his son Miles, whom he took by the hand and blessed him also;" and went to his exe-

cution, "desiring a friend to stay with his wife and his son, to comfort them." In his dying speech he said, "For this for which we are to die I was no contriver of it; when the business was mentioned, I spoke against it, but being passed in Parliament I thought it my duty to obey." He said a sense of public duty, not self-interest, had motivated his public life.

Corbet was hung but his body cut down immediately so he would be fully conscious while he was castrated, disemboweled, and quartered. Others killed the same way were Okey, Barkstead, John Jones, Adrian Scroope, John Carew, Thomas Scot, Gregory Clement, and Thomas Harrison. William Henry Harrison, eighth president of the U.S., descended from Harrison. Samuel Pepys was present when Corbet, Okey, and Barkstead were executed. "They all look very cheerful," he wrote, "but I hear they all die defending what they did to the King to be just."

For the story of the Regicides, see Hugh Ross Williamson, *The Day They Killed the King*, The MacMillan Company, (New York, 1956); C. V. Wedgwood, *A Coffin for King Charles*, The MacMillan Company, (New York, 1964); and *The Trials of Charles The First and of Some of The Regicides*, published by John Murray, (London, 1832).

106. John Hawkins was the eldest son and heir of John Hawkins of Braintree. Holman and Marvin, 518.

107. *Ibid.* 518.

108. John Hawkins, Jr.'s mother's identity is unknown.

109. Holman and Marvin. 518.

110. W.F. Quin. 127. In Braintree, the Court Leet Jury, which sought out and punished infractions, functioned in the early seventeenth century but it consisted mainly of men from the Four and Twenty. The Court Leet did appoint some minor manorial officers, such as Ale and Flesh Tasters, or Sealers of Leather, but the town's Constables were appointed by them only after prior selection by the Four and Twenty. The Company of Four and Twenty agreed in their April 1629 meeting that all Constables, Churchwardens, and Overseers of the Poor would henceforth be "yearly elected out of the Company," and five years later the Town Surveyors were chosen in that fashion, "being one of the Company, every year as it falls to every one by turn." These officials—churchwardens, overseers, constables, and surveyors—also served as executive officers for the Governing Council, the Four and Twenty, so they not only absorbed the Court Leet in terms of personnel but also in the services it provided. Allen. 149 He cites "Minutes of Company of Four and Twenty," D/P 264/8/3, 13 April 1629 and 7 April 1634, Essex R.O. Allen discusses the Four and Twenty in more detail in pages 358-68.

111. Cunnington and Warner. 16-20. The Braintree church dates from 1199. Unfortunately, the church register only dates from 1660. The Grocers' Company was founded in 1345 from the Fraternity of St. Anthony which was under the protection of the Abbot of Bury St. Edmunds.

112. Estate of John Hawkins, Jr.—Purchased from Sir Edward Bullicke, Knight, Francis and Elizabeth Steele, John and Elizabeth Hewes, John Osborne, and others.

113. John Hawkins, Jr.—His will, dated 3 Sept. 1633, was proved 18 Oct. 1633. Sister Whipple was Anne (Hawkins) Whipple, wife of Matthew, Jr. Bequeaths also went to: Eldest son John, messuages and lands in Barking and other parishes; son Robert, messuages and tenements in Old Newton, Suffolk; daughter Sara, £600 at age 18 and 21; daughter Margaret, £500 at age 18 and 21; daughter Mary, messuages, etc. in Bradwell next the sea; daughter Judith, messuages, etc. in Finchfield, Essex;

brother-in-law John Kent, 100 marks (a coin equal to 13 shillings and 4 pence) for his care and pains to be taken as one of the Executors; to my loving friend Mr. Collins of Braintree, 40 shillings to buy him a ring and £4 per annum during his ministry there; my mother, Mary Hawkins, widow, £16 a year, etc; my friend William Lingwood, £20; my sister Kent and my sister Edes, 30 shillings apiece to make them rings; my brother Francis Hawkins, my sister Archer, and my sister Whipple, 40 shillings apiece as remembrances from me; my cousin Tomson, my aunt Woodward and my aunt Goodaye, 10 shillings apiece; loving friends and neighbors Adrian Mott and Joseph Loomys were also mentioned. Loomys was one of the witnesses. Henry F. Waters, Vol. I. 466-7.

Court of Wards. Inquisition taken at Braintree 16 April 1634 after John, Jr.'s death. The jurors say that long before his death he was seized in his demesne as of fee (inter alia) of a capital messuage in Braintree, in his own tenure or occupation held of Robert, the Earl of Warwick, (a leader of the National Puritan Movement) as of his Manor of Braintree by fealty and rent, and of two cottages there in the occupation of Robert Woodward and Jeremie Gray; also of Drakes Croft, formerly Broom Croft, in Braintree, held of Katherine Lady Wentworth, as of her Manor of Codham Hall in Wethersfield; also of six acres of land in the occupation of Martin Skinner, lately purchased of Isaac Skinner, son of the said Martin and Anne, his wife; also of three rods, parcel of Braintreefield with the messuage built thereon, and of other buildings belonging purchased of Richard Green and Richard Bedwell, and held of the Manor of Black Notley; also of two parcels of land, called Copfield, and two parcels of land, called Crossfield, all in Bocking, and held of Roger Wentworth as of his Manor of Bocking; also of two other parcels of land, called Swallow Lovells, in Bocking, now or late in the occupation of John Curtis and purchased of Henry Edes and John Edes, clerk, and of a messuage in Bocking, called Pirles or Brocks, purchased of the said John Curtis, the said Swallow Lovells and Pirles are held of Roger Wentworth, Esquire, as of his Manor of Bocking Hall by fealty, suit at Court and yearly rent. His will dated 3 Sept., last before this inquisition is quoted as far as concerns his lands. The said John Hawkins, the elder, also held lands in many other parts of Essex, also in the Isle of Ely, county of Cambridge, and in the county of Suffolk. John Hawkins, aged 17 on 30 Jan. last past, is his son and next heir. Holman and Marvin. 540-41.

Among its other responsibilities, the Court of Wards and Liveries was responsible for examining title to decendants' real estate held directly from the Crown. These examinations, or inquests, were performed at the county level by a local representative of the Crown known as the county Escheator. The outcome of the inquests was a written document, called an inquisition post mortem (IPM), or inquest after the death, which (1) listed the decendent's properties held directly from the Crown, (2) valued the properties for tax purposes, (3) determined who the heir to the real estate was, and (4) established the age of that heir. If the heir were a minor, the Crown could attach the revenues of the real estate until the heir reached majority. The National Archives of the U. K., "Court of Wards and Liveries, 1540-1645; Land Inheritance," paragraph 4, in *Legal Records Information Leaflet 11.* Unpaged.

It is apparent Hawkins was a man of wealth and left a relatively young family. His son and heir, Robert, was only 17 and daughters Sara and Margaret not yet 18. The Robert Woodward occupying one of the cottages in Braintree was probably a cousin and son of his aunt Woodward. From this will we learn that Anne Hawkins

Whipple had sisters who married an Archer, an Edes, and John Kent and a brother Francis. Sister Sarah, who had married William Coppin, was not mentioned. She may have died or been widowed and remarried and could be the sister Archer, Edes, or Kent. Anne's mother, Mary Levitt Hawkins, outlived her son, John Hawkins, Jr. by a little more than a year, dying 3 May 1635.

Three years after John Hawkin's death 8 Sept. 1633 his father-in-law George Wood, a Clothier from Bocking, died. His wife's name was Margaret. Their daughter Sara was identified as the widow of "John Hawkins gentleman deceased, in George's will proved 1 March 1636-1637." Also mentioned were Jeremy Edes, a son-in-law, and Nicholas Ives, shoemaker. John Kent and Jeremy Edes' wives were not mentioned by name. Witnessing Wood's will were W. Lyngwood, W. Lyngwood Jun., John Skinner, and Thomas Trotter. Hawkins' will identified John Kent as a brother-in-law and his sister Edes who may be the wife of Jeremy, and bequeaths "my friend William Lingwood £20. Ives was a son-in-law of Matthew Whipple, Sr., and brother-in-law to Matthew, Jr., and Matthew, Jr. was an executor of Thomas Trotter's will. Further research on these individuals should be undertaken.

114. Morant. 398.

115. Lyons is one of the subordinate manors owned in 1425 by John Doreward, Speaker of the House of Commons.

116. Sir John and Frances (Hawkins) Dawes had sons Robert, John, and William, and daughter Elizabeth, who married Peter Fisher, D.D. The estate went to Sir Robert, the eldest son, who, along with his brother John, died without issue, so the estate went to the youngest son, Sir William Dawes, D.D., who was born 12 Sept. 1671 at Lyons. Sir William married Frances Darcy, a sister and co-heir of Sir Robert Darcy of Great Bracksted, Baronet. Upon Sir William's death, the estate went to his son Sir Darcy Dawes, and a daughter, wife of Sir William Milner of Yorkshire, Baronet. Morant. 387 and 397.

117. See Appendix 1, for a discussion of the research by Debrett Ancestry Research Limited on this possibility.

118. Trotter's will is in H. F. Waters, Vol. II, 1114-15. Also see Morant, 397-8 for further details on Trotter's bequeaths to Braintree residents. This would be Laurence Arthur's second wife since Margaret Whipple, his first wife, had been dead for 23 years.

119. Trotter apparently had a strong sense of community. In addition to this bequeath by will, he gave, by deed dated September 1630, an annuity of £3, 6 shillings, 8-pence out of a house in Braintree. The money was to be "paid yearly to 30 poor people of honest life, that are men of trade, viz: weavers, combers, and fullers (he was probably a clothier), 14 days before or after St. Thomas's day." The will was proved 12 March 1631. The Braintree bequeath was in the form of "a house, barn, and four acres of arable land, then of the yearly value of £5, 10s to be disposed of, viz: 10s toward the reparation of the church, 6s 8d to the Vicar of Braintree, 5s to the Church Wardens, 5s to the Overseers of the Poor, 3s 4d to the Sexton, and the remaining £4 to 20 aged poor and impotent people of Braintree, being of honest life and conversation, by two equal payments, viz: 2s each on 18 Nov. and the like sum on 24 Feb., or within 14 days, either before or after." The tenement on the premises burnt down in 1651, reducing the charity to £4 per annum. Morant. 388, 397-8.

120. Great Bromley was apparently a hotbed of Puritanism. The Churchwardens' account book reveals fines of 5s. 4d. paid "at the Court for our absolution being excommunicate," £3 10s. "for making of the rail at the communion table," and 2s. 4d. "for certifying into the Court for getting up the rails and bringing the rail from

Colchester." Evidently the Churchwardens had been excommunicated for neglecting to replace the communion rail after it had been torn down, a practice Puritans heartily encouraged. The ecclesiastical visitation to several parishes near Great Bromley in northeast Essex in 1633 demonstrated just how far apart both sides were. The detail-ed listing of every single departure from conformity, whether great or small, testified to the degree to which authorities planned to carry their reform as well as to the inability of Puritan communities to accept those changes. Rev. H. H. Minchin, "The Churches of Great and Little Bromley," Essex Archaeological Society, *Transactions*, N.S., VIII. (903). 292-3. J. Gardner Bartlett, *Gregory Stone Genealogy: Ancestry and Descendants of Dea. Gregory Stone of Cambridge, Mass., 1320-1917.* Boston: 1918. 43.

121. Simon was son of Simon Stone and Joan Clark. On page 199 of his book, Allen indicates the Stones' were a wealthy family. "The wealthy of East Anglicans was revealed in more indirect ways. Two men were indicted and appeared before court for breaking into Gregory Stone's house and stealing the sizeable sum of £86." His citation is Queen's Bench Indictments, Ancient 698. [t/ o. 23. T/A 428 Essex R.O.]

122. J. Gardner Bartlett, *Simon Stone Genealogy*, 1926. 36. See also the *Utah Genealogical and Historical Magazine*, Vol. 22, (Salt Lake City, January, 1931). 14-16.

123. The wealth and status of certain emigrants from East Anglia county can be derived from the listing in English lay subsidy tax rolls. For town after town one finds the names of men who later would be prominent in town affairs in New England: men such as Matthew Whipple of Bocking-Ipswich and Simon Stone of Boxted-Watertown. The names of the men on lay subsidy lists were far fewer than the total number of emigrants from these towns in the 1620-30s, confirming, along with other evidence, that many more of the East Anglian emigrants came from lower or middle-class origins. Allen, 199-200.

124. Matthew would have been about 48, John 42.

125. In a six month period in 1637, 193 left Yarmouth for Massachusetts Bay; 414 sailed from the same port to Holland.

126. Thirty-nine Articles of Religion were set forth for all Englishmen to follow:

I. *Of Faith in the Holy Trinity.* There is but one living and true God, everlasting, without body, parts or passions; of infinite power, wisdom, and goodness; the Maker, and Preserver of all things both visible and invisible. And in unity this Godhead there be three Persons, of one substance, power, and eternity; the Father, the Son, and the Holy Ghost.

II. *Of the Word of Son of God, which was made very Man.* The Son, which is the Word of the Father, begotten from everlasting of the Father, the very and eternal God, and of one substance with the Father, took Man's nature in the womb of the blessed Virgin, of her substances; so that two whole and perfect natures, that is to say, the Godhead and Manhood, were joined together in one Person, never to be divided, whereof is one Christ, very God, and very Man; who truly suffered, was crucified, dead and buried, to reconcile his Father to us; and to be a sacrifice, not only for original guilt, but also for all actual sins of men.

III. *Of the going down of Christ into Hell.* As Christ died for us, and was buried, so also is it to be believed that he went down into Hell.

IV. *Of the Resurrection of Christ.* Christ did truly rise again from death, and took again his body, with flesh, bones, and all things appertaining to the perfection of Man's nature; wherewith he ascended into Heaven, and there sitteth, until he return to judge all Men at the last day.

V. *Of the Holy Ghost.* The Holy Ghost, proceeding from the Father and the Son,

is of one substance, majesty, and glory, with the Father and the Son, very and eternal God.

VI. *Of the Sufficiency of the holy Scriptures for salvation.* Holy Scripture containeth all things necessary to salvation: so that whatsoever is not read therein, nor may be proved thereby, is not to be required of any man, that it should be believed as an article of the Faith, or be thought requisite or necessary to salvation. In the name of the holy Scripture we do understand those canonical Books of the Old and New Testament, of whose authority was never any doubt in the Church.

Of the Names and Numbers of the Canonical Books: *Genesis, Exodus, Leviticus, Numbers, Deuteronomy, Joshua, Judges, Ruth, The First Book of Samuel, The Second Book of Samuel, The First Book of Kings, The Second Book of Kings, The First Book of Chronicles, The Second Book of Chronicles, The First Book of Esdras, The Second Book of Esdras, The Book of Esther, The Book of Job, The Psalms, The Proverbs, Ecclesiastes or Preacher, Cantica, or Songs of Solomon, Four Prophets the greater, Twelve Prophets the less.*

And the other Books (as Hierome saith) the Church doth read for example of life and instruction of manners; but yet doth it not apply them to establish any doctrine; such are these following: *The Third Book of Esdras, The Fourth Book of Esdras, The Book of Tobias, The Book of Judith, The rest of the Book of Esther, The Book of Wisdom, Jesus the Son of Sirach, Baruch the Prophet, The Song of Three Children, The Story of Susanna, Of Bel and the Dragon, The Prayer of Manasses, The First Book of Maccabees, The Second Book of Maccabees.*

All the Books of the New Testament, as they are commonly received, we do receive, and account them Canonical.

VII. *Of the Old Testament.* The Old Testament is not contrary to the New: for both in the Old and New Testament everlasting life is offered to Mankind by Christ, who is the only Mediator between God and Man, being both God and Man. Wherefore they are not to be heard, which feign that the old Fathers did look only for transitory promises. Although the Law given from God by Moses, as touching ceremonies and rites, do not bind Christian men, nor the civil precepts thereof ought of necessity to be received in any commonwealth; yet notwithstanding, no Christian man whatsoever is free from the obedience of the Commandments which are called moral.

VIII. *Of the Three Creeds.* The Three Creeds, Nicene Creed, Athanasius's Creed, and that which is commonly called the Apostles' Creed, ought thoroughly to be received and believed: for they may be proved by most certain warrants of holy Scripture.

IX. *Of Original or Birth-sin.* Original Sin standeth not in the following of Adam, (as the Pelagians do vainly talk;) but it is the fault and corruption of the Nature of every man, that naturally is engendered of the offspring of Adam; whereby man is very far gone from original righteousness, and is of his own nature inclined to evil, so that the flesh lusteth always contrary to the spirit; and therefore in every person born into this world, it deserveth God's wrath and damnation. And this infection of nature doth remain, yea in them that are regenerated; whereby the list of the flesh, called in Greek, *phronema sarkos*, which some do expound the wisdom, some sensuality, some the affection, some the desire, of the flesh, is not subject to the Law of God. And although there is no condemnation for them that believe and are baptized, yet the Apostle doth confess, that concupiscence and lust hath of itself the nature of sin.

X. *Of Free-Will.* The condition of Man after the fall of Adam is such, that he

cannot turn and prepare himself, by his own natural strength and good works, to faith, and calling upon God: Wherefore we have no power to do good works pleasant and acceptable to God, without the grace of God by Christ preventing us, that we may have a good will, and working with us, when we have that good will.

XI. *Of the Justification of Man.* We are accounted righteous before God, only for the merit of our Lord and Savior Jesus Christ by Faith, and not for our own works or deservings: Wherefore, that we are justified by faith only is a most wholesome Doctrine, and very full of comfort, and more largely is expressed in the Homily of Justification.

XII. *Of Good Works.* Albeit that Good Works, which are the fruits of Faith, and follow after Justification, cannot put away our sins, and endure the severity of God's Judgment; yet are they pleasing and acceptable to God in Christ, and do spring out necessarily of a true and lively Faith; insomuch that by them a lively Faith may be as evidently known as a tree discerned by the fruit.

XIII. *Of Works before Justification.* Works done before the grace of Christ, and the Inspiration of his Spirit, are not pleasant to God, forasmuch as they spring not of faith in Jesus Christ, neither do they make men meet to receive grace, or (as the School-authors say) deserve grace of congruity: yea rather, for that they are not done as God hath willed and commanded them to be done, we doubt not but they have the nature of sin.

XIV. *Of Works of Supererogation.* Voluntary Works besides, over and above, God's Commandments, which they call Works of Supererogation, cannot be taught without arrogancy and impiety: for by them men do declare, that they do not only render unto God as much as they are bound to do, but that they do more for his sake, than of bounden duty is required: whereas Christ saith plainly, When ye have done all that are commanded to you, say, We are unprofitable servants.

XV. *Of Christ alone without Sin.* Christ in the truth of our nature was made like unto us in all things, sin only except, from which he was clearly void, both in his flesh, and in his spirit. He came to be the Lamb without spot, who, by sacrifice of himself once made, should take away the sins of the world, and sin as Saint John saith, was not in him. But all we the rest, although baptized, and born again in Christ, yet offend in many things; and if we say we have no sin, we deceive ourselves, and the truth is not in us.

XVI. *Of Sin after Baptism.* Not every deadly sin willingly committed after Baptism is sin against the Holy Ghost, and unpardonable. Wherefore the grant of repentance is not to be denied to such as fall into sin after Baptism. After we have received the Holy Ghost, we may depart from grace given, and fall into sin and by the grace of God we may arise again, and amend our lives. And therefore they are to be condemned, which say, they can no more sin as long as they live here, or deny the place of forgiveness to such as truly repent.

XVII. *Of Predestination and Election.* Predestination to Life is the everlasting purpose of God, whereby (before the foundations of the world were laid) he hath constantly decreed by his counsel secret to us, to deliver from curse and damnation those whom he hath chosen in Christ out of mankind, and to bring them by Christ to everlasting salvation, as vessels made to honour. Wherefore, they which be endued with so excellent a benefit of God be called according to God's purpose by his Spirit working in due season: they through Grace obey the calling: they be justified freely: they be made sons of God by adoption: they be made like the image of his only-begotten Son Jesus Christ: they walk religiously in good works, and at length, by God's mercy, they attain to everlasting felicity.

As the godly consideration of Predestination, and our Election in Christ, is full of sweet, pleasant, and unspeakable comfort to godly persons, and such as feel in themselves the working of the Spirit of Christ, mortifying the works of the flesh, and their earthly members, and drawing up their mind to high and heavenly things, as well because it doth greatly establish and confirm their faith of eternal Salvation to be enjoyed through Christ, as because it doth fervently kindle their love towards God: So, for curious and carnal persons, lacking the Spirit of Christ, to have continually before their eyes the sentence of God's Predestination, is a most dangerous downfall, whereby the Devil doth thrust them either into desperation, or into wretchlessness of most unclean living, no less perilous than desperation.

Furthermore, we must receive God's promises in such wise, as they be generally set forth to us in holy Scripture: and, in our doings, that Will of God is to be followed, which we have expressly declared unto us in the Word of God.

XVIII. *Of Obtaining eternal Salvation only by the Name of Christ.* They also are to be had accursed that presume to say, that every man shall be saved by the Law or Sect which he professeth, so that he be diligent to frame his life according to that Law, and the light of Nature. For holy Scripture doth set out unto us only the Name of Jesus Christ, whereby men must be saved.

XIX. *Of the Church.* The visible Church of Christ is a congregation of faithful men, in the which the pure Word of God is preached, and the Sacraments be duly ministered according to Christ's ordinance in all those things that of necessity are requisite to the same. As the Church of *Jerusalem, Alexandria*, and *Antioch*, have erred; so also the Church of Rome hath erred, not only in their living and manner of Ceremonies, but also in matters of Faith.

XX. *Of the Authority of the Church.* The Church hath power to decree Rites or Ceremonies, and authority in Controversies of Faith: And yet it is not lawful for the Church to ordain any thing that is contrary to God's Word written, neither may it so expound one place of Scripture, that it be repugnant to another. Wherefore, although the Church be a witness and a keeper of holy Writ, yet, as it ought not to decree any thing against the same, so besides the same ought it not to enforce any thing to be believed for necessity of Salvation.

XXI. *Of the Authority of General Councils.* General Councils may not be gathered together without the commandment and will of Princes. And when they be gathered together, (forasmuch as they be an assembly of men, whereof all be not governed with the Spirit and Word of God,) they may err, and sometimes have erred, even in things pertaining unto God. Wherefore things ordained by them as necessary to salvation have neither strength nor authority, unless it may be declared that they be taken out of holy Scripture.

XXII. *Of Purgatory.* The Romish Doctrine concerning Purgatory, pardons, Worshipping and Adoration, as well of Images as of Reliques, and also invocation of Saints, is a fond thing vainly invented, and grounded upon no warranty of Scripture, but rather repugnant to the Word of God.

XXIII. *Of Ministering in the Congregation.* It is not lawful for any man to take upon him the office of public preaching, or ministering the Sacraments in the Congregation, before he be lawfully called, and sent to execute the same. And those we ought to judge lawfully called and sent, which be chosen and called to this work by men who have public authority given unto them in the Congregation, to call and send Ministers into the Lord's vineyard.

XXIV. *Of speaking in the Congregation in such a Tongue as the people understandeth.* It is a thing plainly repugnant to the Word of God, and the custom of the Primitive

Church, to have public Prayer in the Church, or to minister the Sacraments in a tongue not understanded of the people.

XXV. *Of the Sacraments.* Sacraments ordained of Christ be not only badges or tokens of Christian men's profession, but rather they be certain sure witnesses, and effectual signs of grace, and God's good will towards us, by the which he doth work invisibly in us, and doth not only quicken, but also strengthen and confirm our Faith in him.

There are two Sacraments ordained of Christ our Lord in the Gospel, that is to say, Baptism, and the Supper of the Lord. Those five commonly called Sacraments, that is to say Confirmation, Penance, Orders, Matrimony, and extreme Unction, are not to be counted for Sacraments of the Gospel, being such as have grown partly of the corrupt following of the Apostles, partly are states of life allowed in the Scriptures; but yet have not like nature of Sacraments with Baptism, and the Lord's Supper, for that they have not any visible sign or ceremony ordained of God.

The Sacraments were not ordained of Christ to be gazed upon, or to be carried about, but that we should duly use them. And in such only as worthily receive the same they have a wholesome effect or operation: but they that receive them unworthily purchase to themselves damnation, as Saint Paul saith.

XXVI. *Of the Unworthiness of the Ministers, which hinders not the effect of the Sacrament.* Although in the visible Church the evil be ever mingled with the good, and sometimes the evil have chief authority in the Ministration of the Word and Sacraments, yet forasmuch as they do not the same in their own name, but in Christ's, and do minister by his commission and authority, we may use their Ministry, both in hearing the Word of God, and in the receiving of the Sacraments. Neither is the effect of Christ's ordinance taken away by their wickedness, nor the grace of God's gifts diminished from such as by faith and rightly do receive the Sacraments ministered unto them; which be effectual, because of Christ's institution and promise, although they be ministered by evil men.

Nevertheless, it appertaineth to the discipline of the Church, that enquiry be made of evil Ministers, and that they be accused by those that have knowledge of their offenses; and finally being found guilty, by just judgement be deposed.

XXVII. *Of Baptism.* Baptism is not only a sign of profession, and mark of difference, whereby Christian men are discerned from others that be not christened, but it is also a sign of Regeneration or new Birth, whereby, as by an instrument, they that receive Baptism rightly are grafted into the Church; the promises of the forgiveness of sin, and of our adoption to be the sons of God by the Holy Ghost, are visibly signed and sealed; Faith is confirmed, and Grace increased by virtue of prayer unto God. The Baptism of young Children is in any wise to be retained in the Church, as most agreeable with the institution of Christ.

XXVIII. *Of the Lord's Supper* The Supper of the Lord is not only a sign of the love that Christians ought to have among themselves to another; but rather it is a Sacrament of our Redemption by Christ's death: insomuch that to such as rightly, worthily, and with faith, receive the same, the Bread which we break is a partaking of the Body of Christ; and likewise the Cup of Blessing is a partaking of the Blood of Christ.

Transubstantiation (or the change of the substance of Bread and Wine) in the Supper of the Lord, cannot be proved by holy Writ; but it is repugnant to the plain words of Scripture, overthroweth the nature of a Sacrament, and hath given occasion to many superstitions.

The Body of Christ is given, taken, and eaten, in the Supper, only after an heavenly and spiritual manner. And the mean whereby the Body of Christ is received and eaten in the Supper is Faith.

The Sacrament of the Lord's Supper was not by Christ's ordinance reserved, carried about, lifted up, or worshipped.

XXIX. *Of the Wicked which eat not the Body of Christ in the use of the Lord's Supper.* The Wicked, and such as be void of a lively faith, although they do carnally and visibly press with their teeth (as Saint Augustine saith) the Sacrament of the Body and Blood of Christ, yet in no wise are they partakers of Christ: but rather, to their condemnation, do eat and drink the sign or Sacrament of so great a thing.

XXX. *Of both kinds.* The Cup of the Lord is not to be denied to the Lay-people: for both the parts of the Lord's Sacrament, by Christ's ordinance and commandment, ought to be ministered to all Christian men alike.

XXXI. *Of the one Oblation of Christ finished upon the Cross.* The Offering of Christ once made is that perfect redemption, propitiation, and satisfaction, for all the sins of the whole world, both original and actual; and there is no other satisfaction for sin, but that alone. Wherefore the sacrifices of Masses, in the which it was commonly said, that the Priest did offer Christ for the quick and the dead, to have remission of pain or guilt, were blasphemous fables, and dangerous deceits.

XXXII. *Of the Marriage of Priests.* Bishops, Priests, and Deacons, are not commanded by God's Law, either to vow the estate of single life, or to abstain from marriage: therefore it is lawful also for them, as for all other Christian men, to marry at their own discretion, as they shall judge the same to serve better to godliness.

XXXIII. *Of Excommunicate Persons, how they are to be avoided.* That person which by open denunciation of the Church is rightly cut off from the unity of the Church, and excommunicated, ought to be taken of the whole multitude of the faithful, as an Heathen and Publican, until he be openly reconciled by penance, and received into the church by a Judge that hath authority thereunto.

XXXIV. *Of the Traditions of the Church.* It is not necessary that Traditions and Ceremonies be in all places one, or utterly like; for at all times they have been divers, and may be changed according to the diversities of countries, times, and man's manners, so that nothing be ordained against God's Word. Whosoever though his private judgement, willingly and purposely, doth openly break the traditions and ceremonies of the church, which be not repugnant to the Word of God, and be ordained and approved by common authority, ought to be rebuked openly, (that others may fear to do the like,) as he that offendeth against the common order of the church, and hurteth the authority of the Magistrate, and woundeth the consciences of the weak brethren.

Every particular or national church hath authority to ordain, change, and abolish, ceremonies or rites of the Church ordained only by man's authority, so that all things be done to edifying.

XXXV. *Of Homilies.* The second *Book of Homilies,* the several titles whereof we have joined under this Article, doth contain a godly and wholesome Doctrine, and necessary for these times, as doth the former *Book of Homilies,* which were set forth in the time of Edward the Sixth; and therefore we judge them to be read in churches by the Ministers, diligently and distinctly, that they may be understanded of the people. Of the Names of the Homilies: *1. Of the right Use of the Church. 2. Against peril of Idolatry. 3. Of the repairing and keeping clean of Churches. 4. Of good Works: first of Fasting. 5. Against Gluttony and Drunkenness. 6. Against Excess of Apparel. 7. Of Prayer. 8. Of the Place and Time of Prayer. 9. That Common Prayers and*

Sacraments ought to be ministered in a known tongue. 10. Of the reverend estimation of God's Word. 11. Of Alms-doing. 12. Of the Nativity of Christ. 13. Of the Passion of Christ. 14. Of the Resurrection of Christ. 15. Of the worthy receiving of the Sacraments of the Body and Blood of Christ. 16. Of the Gifts of the Holy Ghost. 17. For the Rogation-days. 18. Of the state of Matrimony. 19. Of Repentance. 20. Against Idleness. 21. Against Rebellion.

XXXVI. *Of Consecration of Bishops and Ministers.* The *Book of Consecration of Archbishops and Bishops, and Ordering of Priests and Deacons,* lately set forth in the time of Edward the Sixth, and confirmed at the same time by authority of Parliament, doth contain all things necessary to such consecration and Ordering: neither hath it any thing, that of itself is superstitious and ungodly. And therefore whosoever are consecrated or ordered according to the Rites of that Book, since the second year of the forenamed King Edward unto this time, or hereafter shall be consecrated or ordered according to the same Rites; we decree all such to be rightly, orderly, and lawfully consecrated and ordered.

XXXVII. *Of the Civil Magistrates.* The King's Majesty hath the chief power in this Realm of England, and other his Dominions, unto whom the chief Government of all estates of this Realm, whether they be Ecclesiastical or Civil, in all causes doth appertain, and is not, nor ought to be, subject to any foreign Jurisdiction.

Where we attributed to the King's Majesty the chief government, by which titles we understand the minds of some slanderous folks to be offended; we give not to our Princes the ministering either of God's Word, or of the Sacraments, the which thing the Injunctions also lately set forth by Elizabeth our Queen do most plainly testify; but that only prerogative which we see to have been given always to all godly Princes in holy Scriptures by God himself; that is, that they should rule all estates and degrees committed to their charge by God, whether they be Ecclesiastical or Temporal, and restrain with the civil sword the stubborn and evil-doers.

The Bishop of Rome hath no jurisdiction in this Realm of England.

The Laws of the Realm may punish Christian men with death, for heinous and grievous offenses.

It is lawful for Christian men, at the commandment of the Magistrate, to wear weapons, and serve in the wars.

XXXVIII. *Of Christian men's Goods, which are not common.* The Riches and Goods of Christians are not common, as touching the right, title, and possession of the same, as certain Anabaptists do falsely boast. Notwithstanding, every man ought, of such things as he possesseth, liberally to give alms to the poor, according to his ability.

XXXIX. *Of a Christian man's Oath.* As we confess that vain and rash Swearing is forbidden Christian men by our Lord Jesus Christ, and James his Apostle, so we judge, that Christian Religion doth not prohibit, but that a man may swear when the Magistrate requireth, in a cause of faith and charity, so it be done according to the Prophet's teaching, in justice, judgement, and truth.

The Ratification. This *Book of Articles* before rehearsed, is again approved, and allowed to be holden and executed within the Realm, by the assent and consent of our Sovereign Lady Elizabeth by the grace of God, of England, France, and Ireland, Queen, Defender of the Faith, &c. Which Articles were deliberately read and confirmed again by the subscription of the hands of the Archbishop and Bishops of the Upper-house, and by the subscription of the whole Clergy of the Nether-house in their Convocation, in the Year of our Lord 57.

A Table of Kindred and Affinity wherein whosoever are related are forbidden by the Church of England to marry together.

A Man may not marry his: mother, daughter, father's mother, mother's mother, son's daughter, daughter's daughter, sister, father's daughter, mother's daughter, wife's mother, wife's daughter, father's wife, son's wife, father's wife, mother's father's wife, wife's father's mother, wife's mother's, wife's son's daughter, wife's daughter's, son's wife, daughter's son's wife, father's sister, mother's sister, brother's daughter, sister's daughter.

A Woman may not marry her: father, son, father's father, mother's father, son's son, daughter's son, brother, father's son, mother's son, husband's father, husband's son, mother's husband, daughter's husband, father's mothers's husband, husband's father's father, husband's mother's father, husband's son's son, husband's daughter's son, son's daughter's husband, daughter's daughter's husband, father's brother, mother's brother, brother's son, sister's son. *The Book of Common Prayer and Administration of the Sacraments and other Rites and Ceremonies of the Church According to the Use of The Church of England together with The Psalter or Psalms of David Pointed as they are to be Sung or Said in Churches; and the Form and Manner of Making, Ordaining, and Consecrating of Bishops, Priests, and Deacons.* Oxford University Press. (Oxford, New York, Toronto, Dehli, Bombay, Calcutta, Madras, Karachi, Petaling, Jaya, Singapore, Hong Kong, Tokyo, Nairobi, Dar es Salaam, Cape town, Melbourne, Auckland and associated companies in Beriut, Berlin, Idadan, Nicosia). 689.

127. Prynne's ears were docked in 1634 and finally sliced off in 1637.

128. R. H. Parry, editor, *The English Civil War and After*, University of California Press, (Berkeley and Los Angeles, 1970). 34.

129. Twenty thousand went to New England; 40,000 to Virginia.

130. R. H. Parry. 9.

131. It is possible that Abraham and Robert may have been related to Anne Hawkins, Matthew, Jr.'s first wife. Robert Hawkins was admitted to the first church in Charlestown, Mass. on 2: mo: day 17 1635 (17 April). His first wife was Mary (____). Three Hawkins sons were baptized in the church: Eleazar, 10th Mo: day 25 1636 (Dec.); Zachary, 8th mo: day 25 1639 (Oct.) and Joseph, 2nd Mo: day 3 1642 (April). *Register*, 23:279; 25:148, 150, 340.

132. Roger Thompson, *Mobility and Migration East Anglian Founders of New England, 1629-1640.* Amherst, Mass: The University of Massachusetts Press, 1994, 130-31, 145, 147, 160, 167, 187, 193-94, 199.

133. David Hackett, *Albion's Seed.* New York: Oxford University Press, 1989. Endnote 2, page 25-26.

134. These dates are presumed. Allen. (pp. 307-8) says the Whipple brothers were granted land in Ipswich in March 1637 and July 1647. John was also granted land in November 1645 and September 1647. Schofield says they were granted land in September 1638. 38-9. Governor Winthrop states that many ships came in 1638 bringing approximately 3,000 new settlers. The name of the ship the Whipples sailed on is unknown. The author has no evidence that any of the Whipple sisters joined their brothers in the move. If their husbands were not interested in the new world, they would have remained in England. It is possible the family business continued, operated by an in-law or grandchild of Matthew, Sr.

135. W. F. Quin. 142. Is the Robert Whaples mentioned in the Pryor will and the Braintree Select Vestry the same Robert Whaples mentioned in Trotter will (page 104)?

CHAPTER FOUR

SEA VOYAGE TO NEW ENGLAND

1607: Jamestown settled by London Company. 1619: First legislature in the New World met in Jamestown. 1620: Pilgrims landed at Plymouth. 1624: New Netherlands (New York) settled by the Dutch. 1630: Settlement of Massachusetts Bay began. 1632: Young John Whipple arrived on the Lyon *and settled at Dorchester, Mass. 1633: Agawam (Ipswich, Mass.) settled by John Winthrop, Jr. 1634: Maryland settled by Proprietor Lord Baltimore. 1635: Connecticut Valley settled. 1636: Roger Williams founded Providence, R.I. 1637: New Haven founded. 1638: Matthew and John Whipple families settle in Ipswich. 1639: "Fundamental Orders of Connecticut," first colonial constitution adopted.*

THE VIGOR OF AMERICA springs from its early English emigrants and the seed of that stock is now found in each of the 50 United States. That seed was planted in the decade 1630-40 when approximately 20,000 English, the Whipples among them, settled in New England. After 1640, the Long Parliament[1] resolved many of the grievances of the non-conformists and immigration suddenly ceased. It was almost 200 years before the English again flocked to American shores.

One does not leave the known for the unknown without some idea of the destination — especially families with children. In 1638, Matthew and Anne had five: Mary, 12; Anne, 10; Elizabeth, 9; John, 6; Matthew, 3. John and Susanna also had five: Susanna, 16; John, 13; Elizabeth, 11; William, 8; Mary, 4. If they were members of group of Puritans traveling together, the group would have planned carefully before leaving.

The emigrants to America had a number of published works to review and it is presumed the Whipples read at least some of them. Sir Humphrey Gilbert is believed to have written, in the early 1570s, the essay "Discourse of a New Passage to Cathaia," in which he proposed settlements in America. Richard Hakluyt, the noted English editor of various voyages of discovery, interviewed Newfoundland fishermen in 1578 about places suited for settlement.

By the latter part of the sixteenth century it was known in England that America was a source for fish and naval stores, that tropical products were available in the West Indies, that a northwest passage might be found to the Far East, that unoccupied regions of America might produce gold and silver. The French and the Spanish published many accounts of their work in the new world in the late 1500s. In 1600 *Hakluyt's Voyages*,[2]

which included over 200 narratives of voyages to the new world, was published. Reverend Samuel Purchas published accounts of 1200 more voyages in 1613-14.[3]

But the Whipples probably gained most of their information from William Wood's *New England's Prospect.*[4] This slender volume was first offered for sale in 1634 by London bookseller John Bellamie at his Three Golden Lions shop in Cornhill. Wood had recently returned from four years in Massachusetts and wanted to share his excitement and knowledge of the new world. His readers were promised "A true, lively, and experimental description of that part of America, commonly called New England, the state of that country, both as it stands to our new-come English planters; and to the old native inhabitants, laying down that which may both enrich the knowledge of the mind-traveling reader or benefit the future voyager."[5]

Unlike other authors, Wood focused on the land and its vegetation, on its human and animal inhabitants. His book detailed problems of frontier life: the difficulty of clearing land, the shortage of draft animals[6] and beer, the need for interpreters. Other mundane aspects of colonization were addressed. Hazards such as high mortality and widespread suffering and religious controversies were ignored. Essentially promotional, the book was written to convince others to leave home and settle in New England.

New England was known as a place where many settlers had died. Wood addressed this negative straight away. New settlers, he wrote, died of a sickness caused by a sea diet of tainted and rotten food and because they arrived in the fall with no time to build adequate shelter for protection from the cold winter. He offered advice on how to avoid these problems. The discerning reader would have questioned his contradictions as he also told settlers not to be concerned about their health:

> More would probably die at home than went. Many which have come with foul bodies to sea as did make their days uncomfortable on land have been so purged and clarified at sea that they have been more healthful for after-times, their weak appetites being turned to good stomachs, not only desiring but likewise digesting such victuals as the sea affords.[7]

New Englanders, he argued, were not subject to the common diseases of England such as measles, greensickness,[8] headaches, stone, consumption, etc. He claimed settlers with lingering diseases were restored to their former strength and health. Noting that much of England's water was not fit to drink, he said New England water was so good many preferred it to "beer, whey, and buttermilk and those that drink it be as healthful, fresh, and lusty as they that drink beer."[9]

He described the land as forested with enough trees to build houses, mills, ships, and to provide fuel. He identified the trees—walnut, cedar, fir, pine, ash, and beach—and told how each could be used. He claimed winters weren't as raw as in England; that fishermen went to sea in January and February and got better catches than in summer; that winter crops gave better yields than spring crops because the long-lasting snow kept the plants warm and provided nourishment when it melted. He agreed that summers were hotter than in England but they were tolerable because of the cooling effect of fresh winds.[10] He noted that Indian corn thrived on heat and lack of rain was not a problem for English corn (wheat) because it got adequate moisture from the nightly dew. Settlers, he said, could supplement their food supply with wild games such as:

> Deer, available for the taking; raccoon, as good as lamb; grey squirrels, almost as big as an English rabbit; turkeys, up to 40 pounds; partridges, bigger than in England; rabbits, much like those at home; geese and ducks, in flocks of 3,000; codfish, larger than in Newfoundland; sturgeon, up to 18 feet long; halibut, up to two yards and a foot thick; bass, fine, fat, and delicate, three to four feet with a bone in the head containing a saucerful of marrow that is sweet, good, and pleasant to the palate and wholesome to the stomach; herring and alewives, so thick at spring spawning they can be had by the bucketful; shad, bigger than the English shad; mackerel up to 18 inches long; lobsters, up to 20 pounds. Mussels and clams were so plentiful, they were fed to the swine.

There was an abundance of wolves, wildcats, hawks, humbirds, crows, cormorants, ravens, owls, cranes, and pigeons. Of the latter, he said there were millions, that flocks flew overhead for up to five hours, blotting out the sun.

Settlers had to cope with "evil and hurtful things," he wrote. Ravenous wolves killed the weaker cattle and rattlesnakes were dangerous to people. The latter were described as "generally a yard and a half long and as thick in the middle as the small of a man's leg." Death followed an hour after being bitten unless an antidote of snakeweed root was taken. The antidote "must be champed, the spittle swallowed, and the root applied to the sore... whosoever is bitten by these snakes his flesh becomes as spotted as a leper until he be perfectly cured. It is reported that if the party live that is bitten, the snake will dry, and the party die, the snake will live."[11] Wood ridiculed reports that rattlesnakes could fly and kill with their breath. He reported large numbers of troublesome flies and large populations of frogs, toads, spiders, wild bees, and "a great green fly," similar to the English horsefly, and large populations of small black flies, fleas, and wasps.

Of existing plantations,[12] he ranked Dorchester[13] the greatest in New England because of its reasonable harbor, good arable ground for hay, corn, and gardens, plentiful woods and water supply, and large supply of cattle, goats, and swine. Boston was the chief place for shipping and merchandise but not suitable for farming. Salem was recommended for its excellent farm land and water transportation. It had more canoes than in the rest of the colony combined, canoes made of "whole pine trees... about two foot and a half over, and 20 foot long... every house having a water horse or two."[14]

Ipswich, nine miles north of Salem, was a spacious place for a plantation with "great meads and marshes, plain plowing grounds, many good rivers and harbors, and no rattlesnakes." Near the sea, it was well stocked with fish, fowl, and beasts. Newbury, eight miles beyond Ipswich, was equally desirable and the two communities had enough land to accommodate "twice as many people as are yet in New England."[15]

Wood reported that the Indians were affable, courteous, loving, and of great help, teaching the English when and how to plant Indian corn, how to worm, weed, prune, dress it, and how to cull the finest seed for next year's crop. He decried the "needless fear" that had been "deeply rooted" in the English mind by previous authors about Indians. The truth, he said, is that Indians are "wise in their carriage, subtle in their dealings, true in their promise, honest in defraying of their debts... constant in friendship... much civilized since the English colonies were planted, though but little edified in religion."[16]

Earlier writers had written of "great want" in the colonies. Wood dismissed these concerns:

> Don't blame the new country. Any who bring provisions enough for a year and a half need not fear want.[17] I advise men that are of weak constitutions to keep at home. For all [in] New England must be workers in some kind; must have more than a boy's head and no less than a man's strength to live comfortably.[18]

The Englishman enduring hard times at home would live much better in the new world, Wood argued. He outlined what the emigrant should do to prepare for the voyage and suggested what necessities should be taken to insure a good life in the colonies.

One-way passage was £5 with a children's fare as follows: Suckling children not to be reckoned; such as under four years of age, three for one fare; under eight, two for one; under 12, three for two.[19] It cost £4 a ton to ship household goods. Medical care was extra and cost 2 shillings 6 pence per person.[20]

Included in the fare were food and drink. The staples were salt beef and pork, salt fish, butter, cheese, peas, pottage,[21] water gruel,[22] biscuits, water, and "six-shilling beer." Those who could afford it were told to bring their own provisions of "conserves and good claret wine... salad oil... a comfortable thing for the stomach for such as are sea sick. Prunes are good to be stewed; sugar for many things; white biscuits, eggs, bacon, rice, poultry, and sheep to kill aboard; fine flour-baked meats will keep about a week or nine days at sea. Juice of lemons well put up is good either to prevent or cure the scurvy.[23]

Wood saw no contradiction in recommending one thing while describing another. He recommended a long coarse coat for protection against ropes and planks, noting that as the boat pitched, the passenger fell. But he wrote that the ship at sea is like a cradle rocked by a careful mother's hand. He told those concerned about sinking or being captured by pirates or enemies of England not to worry because they would be "in the careful hand of Providence."

There was no artificial light so bedtime was at sundown. Passengers provided their own bedding. Age or coarseness didn't matter but it should be clean and warm. He encouraged wearing old clothes while aboard ship. Since few products were available for sale in New England, Wood encouraged colonists to bring:

> great iron pots, warming pans, stewing pans, all manner of ironware, pewter and brass dishes, cups, and goblets; nails for houses, spikes for boats, ships, and fishing stages; broad and narrow hoes, broad and pitching axes, augers, piercing bits, shipsaws, two-handed saws, froes,[24] both for the riving[25] of pales[26] and laths, beetle heads[27] and iron wedges; glass, well leaded and carefully packed. Fishing gear such as barbels, splitting knives, leads, hooks and lines for cod, mackerel, and sharks, seines or bass and herring nets; good poldavies[28] to make sails for boats, anchors for boats and pinnacles; sea-coal, iron, lead and millstones, flints, ordnance, and whatever can be used for ballast.[29]

Noting the serious shortage of groceries and apparel in New England, he suggested bringing an adequate supply because they were "dearer in New England than in England." Grocery wares such as sugar, prunes, raisins, currants, honey, nutmeg, cloves, etc., soap, candles, lamps, etc. were in short supply. The Whipples would have easily been able to follow his recommendations on apparel. He wrote:

> Woollen cloth is a very good commodity and line better, as holland,[30] lockram,[31] flaxen,[32] hempen,[33] calico stuffs,[34] linsey-woolseys,[35] and blue calico,

green sayes[36] for housewives' aprons, hats, boots, shoes, good Irish stockings, which if they be good are much more serviceable than knit ones.[37]

Since every man in the colonies had to bear arms,[38] he suggested they bring drums, English colors, halberds,[39] pikes, muskets, and bandoleers[40] with swords, shot, and powder. Bird hunters should include 6-foot guns with good powder and shot of all sort. Excess supplies would bring a good price because of shortage.

Some writers, based on Spain's claim to the country, discouraged settlement. They feared Spain would invade New England as it did St. Cristophers and St. Martins in the West Indies. Wood rejected this notion, arguing that Spanish strongholds in the West Indies were too far away, that New England plantations were too poor to plunder, and that Virginia, 400 miles closer to the Spanish settlements, had never been bothered. Wood also had an opinion on who should colonize New England:

> Men of good working and contriving heads for the good of the body politic; a well-skilled husbandman for tillage and improvements of grounds; an ingenious carpenter; a cunning joiner; a handy cooper; a good brick maker; a tiler[41] and a smith; a leather dresser; a gardener; a tailor and fisherman.[42]

For those possessing these skills but lacking the resources to make the journey, Wood recommended they find an honest master and come as an indentured servant. There was more freedom and liberty for servants than in England, he wrote, and a greater opportunity to do well.[43]

Presumably, after a careful review of the available literature, considering recommendations from Essex friends who had preceded them,[44] and giving serious consideration to the pros and cons of moving, the Whipples made the decision to sell their Bocking property, give up known comforts, and begin a new adventure. The cost in pounds and shillings was calculated,[45] passage arranged, goods packed[46] and carted to the port of departure, and they set sail.

The Whipples were among 3,000 sailing on 20 ships for Massachusetts Bay in the summer and fall of 1638. Winthrop called the new arrivals "people of good quality and estate, notwithstanding the Council's order that none such should come without the King's license; but God so wrought, that some obtained license, and others came away without."[47]

Most colonists were landsmen who had no experience with the sea. To them, the sea was filled with marvels and dread terrors. They boarded the ship with misgivings, realizing they would experience some violent weather during their nearly 3,000 mile voyage. Almost everyone was sea-

sick the first few days. There were few nautical tools. Navigators measured the elevation of the sun with a cross staff[48] to determine the degrees of latitude.[49] East and west positions were expressed in terms of dead reckoning by estimating the marine leagues sailed from day to day. Speed was determined by a seaman tossing a rope with knots tied at measured intervals overboard. He shouted the knots as they slipped through his fingers while another member of the crew monitored a sandglass that measured 28 seconds. If five knots passed during that interval, the ship was traveling at five knots (one knot equals 1.15 miles per hour).[50]

Among the misgivings was that sailors had no way to determine their exact position at sea. Thousands of sailors lost their lives as their ships got hopelessly lost or smashed against shores and shoals. Finding latitude was relatively easy. It was determined by the north-south position from the angle of the sun and stars computed by the Greeks as early as 300 B.C. To determine longitude, navigators had to measure time precisely and until the mid 1700s, this was impossible.[51]

Even if the travelers escaped major storms they endured choppy seas, unending swells, and stiff gales[52] with heavy rain. Sometimes, storms continued for days with no headway made. One fearful Puritan described the nightmare of a storm: "the wind blew mightily, the rain fell vehemently, and the sea roared... and the waves powered themselves over the ship." In the pitch-black darkness the anxiety of passengers was deepened by the tenseness and fears of the crew "running here and there, loudly crying to pull at this and that rope."[53] But landsmen soon learned that storms were part of the sea and ships seldom perished because of them.

There were few amusements to relieve boredom on the long voyage. If they sailed the northern route, they were amazed by the icebergs, the many kinds of fishes, and the huge whales spouting water steams. They were thankful to escape epidemics of small pox, yellow fever, and the plague which occasionally raced through ships, leaving survivors the sad task of burying the victims at sea. The first things they saw of New England were immense forests with occasional clearings of Indian villages. Maples and oaks covered the land and pines grew down to the shore. These forests represented great wealth to the emigrant: lumber for houses, timber, pitch, and tar for ships, and towering masts for the royal navy.

It is not known what vessel the Bocking Whipples booked but the first Whipple to arrive in New England was young John Whipple, no relation, who sailed on the *Lyon* leaving London June 22, 1632, arriving at Boston 12 weeks later.[54] They were eight weeks from Land's End[55] and experienced five days of east wind and thick fog. John, in his early teens, was one of 123 passengers, including 50 children. The ship's carpenter was their only fatality, falling overboard while caulking a port.

The *Lyon* with a rampant lion on the prow, at 250 tons,[56] was one of the smaller vessels plying the New England trade. Its voyages in 1629-30-31-32 were as regular and safe as a ferry. William Pierce, its master, was noted for his skillful seamanship and his support of Puritan leaders. His first trip was in 1623 when, as Master of the *Anne*, he brought 60 persons to Plymouth. In 1625, as Master of the *Jacob*, he delivered a load of cattle to Plymouth.

Before leaving England, emigrants had to swear "Allegiance and Supremacy" to the King, affirm "they are no subsidy man," and buy a Certificate from their parish attesting that they conformed to the orders and disciplines of the Church of England. Masters of the ships carrying the emigrants had to subscribe to the following articles:

1. That all and every person aboard their ships now bound for New England as aforesaid, that shall blaspheme or profane the Holy name of God be severely punished.
2. That they cause the prayers contained in the Book of Common Prayers established in the Church of England be said daily at the usual hours for morning and evening prayers and that they cause all persons aboard their ships to be present at same.
3. That they do not receive aboard or transport any person that hath not Certificate from the officers of the port where he is to embark that he hath taken both the oaths of Allegiance and Supremacy.
4. That upon their return to this Kingdom they certify to the Board the names of all such persons as they shall transport together with their proceedings in the execution of the aforesaid articles.[57]

The ships were not built for passengers, so the colonists had to adjust to the inconveniences of a freight-carrying vessel. The bow, with its high forecastle deck, was occupied by the seamen; the still higher poopdeck on the stern housed the officers. The space in between, open on small vessels and fitted with a deck and a hold in large craft, was for cargo, ordnance, and the stowing of the long boats.

The more important passengers booked tiny cabins in the poop containing an upper and lower bunk no larger than coffins. Though unbelievably cramped, these cabins were luxurious compared to the rest of the passengers who slept on hammocks and pallets in the hold. Cabin passengers had a tiny square porthole and a bucket dangling on a rope for the disposal of bodily wastes. The common folk had no privacy at all and were kept under the hatches during prolonged storms. It is left to the reader's imagination how sanitary needs were met. Livestock were carried on the same ships and suffered more than the passengers as they were housed on

the storm-swept decks.

Since few had been to sea before, they were unprepared for the long journey and ignorant of the inadequacy of the ships, especially during times of storms. Edward Johnson, author of *Wonder-Working Province, 1628-1651*, wrote of the giant waves hurling their goods from place to place because of improper stowage.[58]

To feed their passengers, ships carried 16 hogsheads of meat including 8,000 pounds of beef, 2,800 pounds of pork, a quantity of beef tongues, 600 pounds of salt codfish and 100 pounds of suet, presumably for cooking purposes; 20,000 biscuits, of which 15,000 were brown, 5,000 white; a barrel of flour, 30 bushel of oatmeal, 11 firkin[59] of butter, 40 bushel of dried peas, their only vegetable; and a bushel and a half of mustard seed. Deep sea fishing supplemented their larder, weather permitting.[60] The Whipples undoubtedly brought small supplies of food and cooking utensils aboard for their own use.[61]

If the voyage extended over six weeks, scurvy was an almost certainty. Their main reliance was on beer as water could not be preserved on long voyages. In addition to quenching thirst, beer was a mild anti-scorbutic.[62] A ship of 350 tons would carry 42 ton of beer,[63] 14 ton of water,[64] two hogsheads of vinegar. This supply could be rationed over 12 weeks.

As the ship passed Land's End, the Whipple families were on the crowded deck watching the granite cliffs and the lighthouse fade into the sky. Even the rambunctious youngsters would have been quiet, sensing it was the last time they would see England. After the second week homesickness was dulled and a daily routine established. In fair weather nine of the Whipple children squatted by the windlass[65] playing at Hot Cockles, while Sussanna, the oldest, umpired.

On their initial tour of what would be their home for up to 12 weeks, Matthew and John descended through the hatch by ladder to the `tween decks,' an area six feet high, where many of the passenger's hammocks were slung. Even though the stench was strong and the light poor, it was the preferred space since it had portholes. Down another hatch was the dark, smoky hold where a small hearth had been built of fire bricks. Here the ship's cook was stirring a stew of salt beef and dried peas in an enormous iron pot, dinner for the common folk and the sailors. Officers and cabin passengers had a separate galley under the poop.

A number of ships probably sailed simultaneously so they could help one another in case of need. Several ministers were usually passengers on each ship. Tuesdays and Wednesdays were days of catechism. If there were a death, passengers and crew would assemble on deck, bareheaded, for burial services. After the minister read from the prayer book, the canvass-wrapped-and-weighted-bundle was dropped into the sea; the silence bro-

ken by a shrill scream from a survivor. Then the captain ordered an extra ration of beer for everyone and the ship's life continued.

Acceptable behavior for all passengers and crew was published and posted. Usually the first to break the rules were young men fighting. Their punishment was to walk the deck until night with their hands bound behind them. A man who used contemptuous speech would be laid in bolts[66] until he confessed his offense. Vicious fights between sailors and between drunken passengers were not uncommon. When it happened, the sailors were flogged by the bosun[67] and the landsmen disciplined in an improvised pillory. A servant who filched food and sold it to other servants would have his hands tied to a bar and stand for two hours with a basket full of stones hung about his neck.

After the second day at sea, the sick were brought on deck and stood on each side of a rope stretched from the steerage to the mainmast. They swayed up and down until they were warm and soon most grew well and merry.

It was not uncommon for great storms to generate wind so strong and rain so hard it split and tore the foresail in pieces and caused the topsail to be taken in. As the storm grew, one of the ministers would lead the passengers in prayer while another would be above decks with the mariners, committing their souls and bodies to the Lord. Sometimes the clouds were so dark by midnight that the crew lost sight of all other vessels. If the wind slacked by morning, the sea was still so high it tossed the ship more, causing the Captain to use only the mainsail. Some days the sea was so high the ship made little headway. Sometimes a shift in the wind caused the Captain to tack and stand into the head sea, to avoid rolling the ship. But usually no way was made because the sea beat the ship back as much as the wind put it forward. Cold weather added to the misery. Eventually the family got its sea legs and didn't get sick even when tossed about for 72 hours.

About the sixth week of every voyage, a women 'tween decks' began ranting and prophesying. First she was a merman,[68] then a sea serpent, finally she cried out against witchcraft, claiming the Devil lurked in the sail lock. This always unnerved the landsmen.

Frequently by the seventh week they were still battered by contrary winds and suffered fog so heavy they lost sight of the other vessels. Sudden gales and fierce rainstorms kept them below deck. The ship suffered the usual accidents: The flying jib[69] tore off in a heavy sea, some of the shrouds[70] on the mizzen[71] parted, and a sailor fell from the rigging[72] of the mainmast,[73] breaking a leg.

Sometimes they sighted a ship with an unfamiliar rig and, fearing it was an enemy privateer, manned the guns. But it was usually a harmless

Danish trader bound for home with cod from the Grand Banks.[74] Some day a pod of whales, each almost as big as the ship, frolicking too close for comfort. When an animal died it was quickly eaten to offset the several casks of provisions that had spoiled.

Fog was usually a problem when they arrived at the Grand Banks. Sometimes it was so thick the Captain hove to[75] and the sailors fished for cod. Provisions were now in scant supply and it was time to replenish. Even the Captain's mess was reduced to half rations of salt beef and peas for every meal. There were several cases of scurvy and much coughing and sniffles for the weather had turned bitter and there was no way to get warm but lie in sour, verminous bedding, or to fight for a place near the cooking hearth.

Knowing there were dangerous shoals to the south, the Captain ordered a new mainsail be fitted. Being so close to completing a successful voyage, he would take no chances with his passengers. Usually by the ninth week, passengers would be roused early in the morning by the clear voice of the lookout shouting, "Land Ho!" Crowding the deck they saw land in the distance and the crew began taking periodic soundings as the ship sailed down the coast past Piscataqua[76] and other places with Indian names. The weather was now fair and sunny and the air so sweet, it came off the shore like the smell of a flower garden. They rounded Cape Ann, sailed past Salem, and the following evening sailed in Boston harbor.

The gentry stood on the poop deck, Matthew and John in their finest clothes—colorful silk doublets,[77] trimmed with gold braid, a two-inch deep ruff with Mechelen lace,[78] hat with gilt band and buckle. The Whipple women were dressed in their elegant brightly colored best. They were thinner than when they left, Anne probably had some scurvy sores around the mouth and Susanna's plump cheeks had sagged, but none of the family looked too peaked.

It took a couple days before their ship was unloaded and a few more to arrange for permission to settle at Ipswich. Then the two families were off to begin life at one of the more remote outposts of the colony.

Let's contrast today's London to New York sea voyage with the Whipple's 1638 voyage.

The modern day Whipple would depart Southampton on a gyroscopically stabilized ship and arrive in New York six days later. Depending on the fare the family was willing to pay, it could choose from cabins on at least six decks. Suites and penthouse grand suites are available on the bridge deck.

The stateroom is a sitting room by day, a comfortable bedroom by night. Decorated with warm pastels colors, it features ample closets, mirrors, a spotless bathroom, and air conditioning to adjust to personal com-

fort. Elevators take the family to the broad teak decks for golf, tennis, and jogging or a refreshing dip in the glistening pools—indoor and outdoor.

Days can be relaxing or energetic. Deck or indoor games help work up an appetite. Other options are to lie in the sun and tan, get a massage, use the sauna, walk off some calories, read, write, converse, or meet and make new friends. Evenings offer music, dancing, gala dinners, first-run movies, musical revues, costume balls, and a casino.

Master chefs prepare a variety of superb cuisine from continental breakfasts in bed to full course breakfasts in the dining room, to colorful luncheon buffets, to thrilling ala carte dinners to special Gala nights. The passenger can select from main or late dining and if a special diet is required, it will be prepared. The wine connoisseur has access to a well stocked wine cellar.

Other conveniences include a telephone system with direct dial ship-to-shore satellite calling, conference capability, FAX capability, one-digit dialing to important shipboard locations, and automatic wake-up calls; a television network with up-to-the-minute news plus information on shipboard activities; a six-channel radio featuring satellite news broadcasts; a ship's doctor; a beauty salon and barber shop; laundry and pressing services; library; safe deposit boxes; a daily newspaper; computer center; and a shopping promenade, etc.

There are swimming pools and deck games and organized adult activities. For younger children there is a playroom complete with colorful toys, games, and child-size furniture, fully supervised by full-time governesses; a special cinema showing cartoons and Walt Disney films; a club for kids 7 to 17 years with juke box, ping pong, air hockey, computer games, etc.

These voyages, essentially the same distance on the same ocean, are so far from reality for the two sets of time travelers, it staggers the imagination. The traveling Whipple of today should be thankful he didn't live "in the good old days."

1. The Long Parliament convened November 3, 1640 and included in its membership was Oliver Cromwell, a Puritan leader who opposed the policies of Charles I. The governing classes were divided into two parties: Parliamentarians who distrusted the King and demanded more restrictions on his power, and Royalists who were unhappy about reducing the power of the Crown. This Parliament did not hesitate to act because of the King's objections and from 1640-60 controlled the course of English affairs just as Charles had the preceding 15 years. The King agreed not to dissolve Parliament without its consent and to abolish prerogative courts, the Star Chamber, and the ecclesiastical court of High Commission. All taxes from ship money to impositions, which had been levied without Parliamentary consent, were declared illegal. Archbishop Laud was imprisoned and a grand remonstrance against all grievances against the Crown was passed. Appointment of army officers and ministers of state without parliamentary approval was prohibited.
2. Richard Hakluyt was a preacher and sometimes student of Christ-Church in Oxford. His book was imprinted by George Bishop, Ralfe Newberie, and Robert Barker, (London, 1600). Reprinted by the Viking Press, Irwin R. Blackner, Editor, (New York, 1965). Reprinted by Houghton Mifflin Company, Richard David, Editor, (Boston, 1981).
3. Samuel Purchas—His book, *Hakluytus Postumus or Purchas His Pilgrimes.* (4 Vols., 1625) Reprinted by James MacLehose and Sons, (Glasgow, 1905). 20 volumes.
4. *New England's Prospects*—Printed by Thomas Cotes (London, 1634). Reissued in 1635 and 1639. Professor Alden T. Vaughan, ed., The University of Massachusetts Press published a modernized and annotated version for contemporary readers in 1977.
5. See the prolix in Wood's book.
6. Leading some settlers to consider harnessing moose.
7. Vaughn. 70.
8. Greensickness—An anemic disease of young women, giving a greenish tinge to the complexion.
9. Vaughn. 37
10. Contrary to Wood's claim, settlers found it difficult to adjust, finding the extremes of heat and cold much greater than in England. But they welcomed the dry American air which they found more invigorating than the damp winds in England.
11. Vaughan. 65.
12. All new settlements in the colony were called plantations. Early settlers were called planters, not in the agricultural sense, but as persons engaged in planting a colony under the flag of England.
13. Dorchester—Now part of Boston. Original colonial home of young John Whipple who lived there from his arrival in September 1632 until moving to Providence, R.I. in 1658.
14. Vaughan. 61.
15. Vaughan. 65.
16. Vaughan. 97.
17. He recommended a hogshead and a half of meal for everyone in the family plus malt, beef, butter, cheese, peas, good wines, vinegar, strong waters, etc. After a year and a half the first crop should be ready to harvest.
18. Vaughan. 69.
19. Charles Edward Banks, *The Winthrop Fleet of 1630*, Genealogical Publishing company, (Baltimore, 1961). 24-32.
20. Maritime law required ships carrying large numbers of passengers to have medical

men on board. Known as chirugeons, they were expected to have a Certificate from the "Barber-Surgeons Hall," carry a chest well furnished for both physical and surgical problems, and attend to the sick and cure the wounded. They were governed by Section 47 of the Regulations of the Guild of Barber Surgeons.

21. Pottage—A kind of thick soup or stew.
22. Thin, easily digested broth made by cooking meal in water.
23. Vaughan. 69-70. Scurvy — a disease resulting from a deficiency of vitamin C, characterized by weakness, anemia, spongy gums, bleeding from the mucous membranes, etc.
24. Froes—A wedge-shaped cleaving tool with a handle set into the blade at right angles to the back; used in splitting staves for casks and the like. It is driven by a mallet. Frow is the preferred spelling.
25. Riving—The act of cleaving or separating. A riving-knife is a tool for splitting shingles, staves, etc.
26. Pales—A narrow, upright, pointed stake used in fences; picket.
27. Beatle heads—A heavy mallet, usually wooden.
28. Poldavies—Coarse canvas or sacking.
29. Vaughan. 71
30. Holland—Unbleached line cloth; sometimes glazed; used for clothing, window shades, etc.
31. Lockram—A kind of linen, usually of a coarse and cheap sort.
32. Flaxen—A linen thread made from the fibers of the flax stem.
33. Hempen—Tough strong fiber used for weaving into coarse fabrics.
34. Calico stuffs—Any white cotton cloth. First manufactured in India, then introduced into Europe.
35. Linsey-woolseys—Cloth made of linen and wool.
36. Sayes—A fine textured cloth used for clothing.
37. Vaughan. 71.
38. Males of 14 and up were included in the military drills held every three weeks.
39. Halberds—A combination spear and battle-ax.
40. Bandoleers—A broad belt worn over one shoulder and across the chest, with pockets for carrying ammunition, etc.
41. Tiler—A person who makes roofing tiles. The best qualities of brickearth are used for making tiles, and the process is similar to that of brickmaking.
42. Vaughan. 72.
43. Young John Whipple, no relation, who settled in Dorchester, was in this category. He did extremely well after starting out as an indentured servant.
44. Ninety-two Essex county residents were in the Winthrop fleet which arrived in New England in 1630. *Winthrop's Journal, History of New England, 1630-1648* Vol. I, James Kendall Hosmer, Editor, Barnes & Noble, Inc. (New York, reprinted 1959), records the following arrivals which may have included friends of the Whipples.

1630. October 30, the *Handmaid* arrived at Plymouth after 12 weeks at sea with about 60 passengers and 28 cows. She lost her masts and 10 cows. John Grant was Master. (p. 53). November 2, William Pierce brought the *Lyon* into Natascot after 10 weeks at sea. His 60 passengers included Gov. Winthrop's wife Margaret and daughter Ann, age one-and-a-half. She was one of two children lost at sea.

1632. Two vessels arrived in June: The *James* with 12 passengers and 61 heifers after an eight week voyage from London. Forty of the cattle were lost. (p. 81). Mr. Thomas, Master of the *William and Francis*, arrived with about 60 passengers. They left London March 9. (p. 81). The *Charles* left Barnstable April 10 with about 20 passengers, 80 cows, and six mares. (p. 81).

1633. Three vessels arrived in May: The *William and Jane*, Mr. Murdock Master, arrived from London after six weeks carrying 30 passengers and 10 cows. (p. 100). The *Mary and Jane*, Mr. Rose Master, came from London in seven weeks with 196 passengers. Two children died. (p. 100). The *Elizabeth Bonadventure*, Mr. Graves Master, arrived from Yarmouth after six weeks at sea with 95 passengers, 74 Dutch sheep, and two mares. Forty sheep were lost enroute. (p. 102). The *Griffin*, a ship of 300 ton, arrived September 4 from Downs with about 200 passengers. They lost four enroute. Rev. John Cotton was aboard. (p. 105).

1634. Six ships arrived in March carrying passengers and cattle. About 100 settled at Agawam. [renamed Ipswich] (pp. 125-6). In June, 14 ships arrived at Boston, one at Salem. (p. 127). Nathaniel Ward, who became the minister at Ipswich, arrived this year. Later he wrote the *Body of Liberties* and the *Simple Cobbler of Agawam*. (p. 145).

1635. The *James*, a ship of 300 tons, Mr. Graves Master, arrived in June from Southampton with passengers and cattle. Mr. Graves had come every year for seven years. Within the next six weeks, seven other ships came to Boston, one to Salem, and four to the mouth of the bay, all with passengers and cattle. (p. 152).

1636. Three ships-full of passengers arrived at Boston from London in mid November. One had been at sea 26 weeks, the other two sometime less. Their beer was consumed a month before their arrival so they were forced to "drink stinking water (and that very little) mixed with sack or vinegar." The provisions were in short supply. They encountered continual tempests. One of the ships was "overset" in the night by a sudden gust "and lay so half an hour, yet righted herself." Mr. Nathaniel Rogers, who was installed minister at Ipswich, was a passenger on one of the ships. (p. 200).

45. Traveling with five children each, it would have cost at least £35 per family. If they traveled cabin class and transported more than a ton each, the cost would have been greater. Based on the retail price index and annual inflation rates and estimates of consumer prices back to 1270, £35 in 1638 would be $1,898.40 in 1989. Source: a letter to the author from the Economics Division, Bank of England, London, dated August 24, 1989. Signed by Andrew Cope.

46. Including packets of seed such as hollyhock, marigold, violets, and wall flowers. A wall flower includes any number of perennial or annual garden plants of the mustard family.

47. On hearing the reports that thousands were preparing to leave, the Archbishops issued orders that no ships could sail. But upon petition of the Masters suggesting the Commonwealth would suffer great damage by hindering the Newfoundland trade, they were allowed to leave. Customs didn't search for goods so emigrants took what they desired without question or control. The Lords of Council were amazed to see rich and poor, servants and others, men of all conditions, readily leaving for New England when they had to force people to go to the other plantations. Hosmer, 271–4.

48. Cross Staff—An instrument used to take the altitude of the sun or stars. It was superseded by the quadrant. Also called fore-staff. It was in the form of a cross, the intersection of which was surrounded by a graduated circle, the periphery divided into four equal arcs.

49. It was the latter half of the 1700s before longitude could be determined.

50. A knot is a nautical and aeronautical measure of speed used to this day.

51. The earth makes a full rotation of 360 degrees every 24 hours—15 degrees per hour. By knowing the time at a specific location on land and time aboard ship, the sailor can calculate the number of degrees between that point and his ship. The prime meridian at Greenwich, England is fixed at zero degrees longitude. By comparing

the two times, the sailor can determine the number of degrees between the two locations and easily calculate his distance east or west of the meridian and pinpoint his position. In 1714 the British Parliament offered a £20,000 prize (several million dollars today) to whoever solved the problem of finding longitude at sea. John Harrison, a self-taught craftsman with no formal education, labored 19 years developing three separate time pieces before hitting pay dirt in 1759 with the fourth (known as H4). After two test voyages, the first a six week voyage from Britain to Jamica in 1761-62, his watch lost only fice seconds. Harrison won the prize money

52. Governor John Winthrop, who arrived in 1630 aboard the *Arbella*, described the gales as "swift, pretty, and handsome" and said they were followed by "high or raging seas." Banks, *The Winthrop Fleet of 1630. 33*
53. Michael Kraus, *The United States to 1865*, The University of Michigan Press, (Ann Arbor, 1959). 33.
54. Arriving Sunday evening September 16. See Banks, *Planters of the Commonwealth*, 99-103.
55. Land's End—Cape in Cornwall at the southwestern most point of England.
56. Some accounts indicate 100 tons.
57. Tepper. 73-74.
58. J. Franklin Jameson, ed., *Johnson's Wonder-Working Province, 1628-1651.* New York, 1910.
59. Firkin—A small wooden tub.
60. Banks, *The Winthrop Fleet of 1630.* 24-32.
61. All personalized references concerning the journey are conjecture.
62. Scorbutic—of like,or having scurvy.
63. 42 tons of beer—About 10,000 gallons.
64. 14 tons of water—About 3,500 gallons.
65. Windlass—A simple kind of winch worked by a crank for lifting an anchor.
66. Bolts—An iron for fastening the leg; a fetter.
67. Bosun—The ship's warrant or petty officer in charge of the deck crew, the rigging, anchors, boats, etc.
68. Merman—An imaginary sea creature with the head and upper body of a man and the tail of a fish.
69. Flying Jib—A triangular sail projecting ahead of the foremast.
70. Shrouds—Any of a set of ropes stretched from a ship's side to a masthead to offset lateral strain on the mast.
71. Mizzen—A fore and aft sail set on the mizzenmast. Mizzenmast - the mast closest to the stern in a ship with two or more masts.
72. Rigging—Tackle, especially the chains, ropes, etc. used for supporting and working the masts, sails, yards, etc. of a vessel.
73. Main mast—The principal mast of a vessel.
74. Grand Banks—Large shoal in the North Atlantic, southeast of Newfoundland; noted fishing grounds; approximately 500 miles long.
75. Hove to—Stop forward movement by hauling in or shortening sail and heading into the wind.
76. Piscataqua—Now Portsmouth, N.H. The Isle of Shoals, off Portsmouth and exactly on the 43 degree north latitude, was a favored land-site. The Islands, well off shore and charted by John Smith, are an unmistakable land formation, and within sight of Piscataqua on a non-foggy day.
77. Doublet—A man's close-fitting jacket with or without sleeves.
78. Mechelen—A fine lace made in Mechelen, Belgium, with the design clearly outlined by a thread.

THEN THERE WAS NEW ENGLAND

1633: Boston Latin School, first secondary school in America, founded. 1636: Harvard College founded. 1638: First colonial printing press set up at Cambridge, Massachusetts. 1639: Quinine increasingly used for medicinal purposes. 1640: John Eliot's Bay Psalm Book published.[1] *John Whipple begins first term in the Massachusetts Great and General Court. 1641: John Barnard's First Book of Selected Church Music published. 1642: English Civil War begins, ends in 1646. 1642-47: Compulsory school laws enacted by Massachusetts. 1643: Confederation of New England formed by Connecticut, New Haven, Plymouth, and Massachusetts Bay. 1644: Ming dynasty in China ends. 1645: Dalai Lama's residence being built in Lhasa, Tibet. 1647: Matthew Whipple dies in Ipswich.*

THE WHIPPLES were among the earliest settlers of what would become a great republic and a new order of human society. They were a pioneering family who helped push back the frontier, set up towns, lay out farms and plantation, rear families in the wilderness, and fight and trade with the Indians as they sought the advantages this large and bountiful land offered.

This chapter presents an overview of early New England.[2] It discusses how the various colonies were founded and addresses some of the elements affecting life in 1630-1750. It describes apparel, housewares, modes of transportation, childbirth, etc. It looks at religious diversity while concentrating on the Puritanism practiced by the Whipple family. It examines government, explains how land was granted, currency generated, and the Indian problem resolved; how schools were organized and foreign trade developed; and who beside the English settled the various colonies.

Early on, the colonists dispersed to widely scattered settlements[3] and established religious-civil communities, each with its own minister, teacher, church covenant, and civil officials.[4] Geography forced the wide dispersion. A scarcity of fertile soil,[5] climatic conditions, and rocky land hindered agricultural development.[6] However, the inhospitable environment did have advantages. Isolation meant protection from the more powerful Indian tribes to the west and the poor soil limited the number and strength of the coast Indians. Poor soil also contributed to the growth of fishing and shipbuilding. The numerous bays, sounds, and harbors promoted trade and commerce; fast flowing rivers, streams, and waterfalls stimulated manufactures.

The colonies were established as vehicles for trade, not as an extension of England; consequently no permanent administrative bodies were organized to control them. Instead, Charters which forbade laws contrary to those of England were issued. The "King in Council" could approve or disallow their laws, and the Privy Council could act as a Court of Appeals and reverse local decisions. Parliament passed laws limiting their manufacturers,[7] authorizing importation of convicts and slaves,[8] and controlling naturalization. Alternatively, the colonists insisted the Magna Charta, their own Charters, the rather vague phrase "rights of Englishmen," and the doctrine of natural rights limited the power of King and Parliament. This combination of lax English control and presumed rights by the colonists eventually led to the American Revolution.

New England's growth dates from 1620. Despite the large sums spent between 1602-20 to exploit the region, neither colony nor profits materialized. Church problems changed the impetus and colonies were founded for religious reasons beginning with the Pilgrims at Plymouth.

PLYMOUTH COLONY

The Separatists,[9] "seeing they could not have the Word freely preached, and the sacraments administered without idolatrous gear," left the Church of England and held services in private houses. Their clergy were persecuted, imprisoned, and some were hanged, causing them to emigrate to Holland where greater freedom of worship prevailed. While secure in their freedom of conscience, after 12 years, they found it hard to retain their English ways and began searching for a place offering economic and religious independence.

Seventy London merchants invested £7,000 in a partnership with the Pilgrims requiring them to settle within the bounds of the Virginia Company. A patent for a private Plantation was issued June 9, 1619 but it was over a year before they moved. The *Mayflower*, with 102 colonists, sailed from Plymouth, England in September 1620 and arrived off Cape Cod[10] nine weeks later. Since they had no Charter,[11] they drew up the "Mayflower Compact" or "Civill body politick"[12] on November 11. Conformity to the laws of England and the method of making laws were not mentioned. It was a government of freemen but as new towns developed, a representative assembly was organized giving individuals an opportunity to work out economic freedom while submitting to strict religious and moral control.

MASSACHUSETTS COLONY

Following Charles I's adjournment of the House of Commons March 2, 1629, every member of the Puritan party, great and small, including John Winthrop,[13] felt the displeasure of the government. Winthrop's apparent unimportant removal from a minor office[14] was of tremendous consequence because it caused him, in his middle age, to turn his thoughts to moving to America. In July 1629, he, Thomas Dudley,[15] a man of earnest and almost fanatical Puritan temper, and Isaac Johnson decided to join the Massachusetts Bay Company.[16] In this same critical week, Matthew Cradock, Governor of the company, suggested moving the government to America and on August 26, 12 members, including Sir Richard Saltonstall, John Humphry, and Winthrop, announced their intention to leave. From this point, Winthrop began to take the lead in company affairs.

These were the first men of middle class, neither great lawyers nor churchmen and without training in the narrow circle of officialdom, to impose their personalities on the national destiny. The Massachusetts migration was entirely without precedent.[17] It was undertaken by sober, well-to-do men of middle age, to whom the spirit of adventurer was entirely foreign, who moved their families and goods across the sea, not to found a colony but a Commonwealth.

CONNECTICUT COLONY

Connecticut evolved from four parties: Lord Brooke and associates, Plymouth, Massachusetts, and the Dutch. All claimed the area. The Dutch were first, establishing a fort and trading post at Hartford. Plymouth men purchased lands near Windsor from the Indians in 1633. Massachusetts men traded there that same summer. Lord Warwick, President of the Council for New England, granted a tract 120 miles in length in southern Connecticut in 1631 to a company of twelve.[18]

Massachusetts authorities allowed Rev. Thomas Hooker and followers to immigrate in 1636[19] when they agreed to be subordinate to its government. By end of the year, approximately 800 had settled in Hartford, Wethersfield, and Windsor.[20] They were without a Charter or Patent and technically squatters until 1662 when a Charter was granted. John Winthrop, Jr.,[21] founder of Ipswich, Massachusetts, was named Governor of the colony granted to Lord Brooke and associates. He built a fort at Saybrook at the mouth of the Connecticut river but it remained a military post and did not develop into a colony. The Rev. John Davenport and Theophilus Easton, with a group mostly from London, founded New Haven in 1638.[22] Milford and Guiford were organized in 1639, Stamford in 1640.[23] The four towns

were united into the republic of New Haven in 1643.

RHODE ISLAND COLONY

Roger Williams[24] was a major influence in the founding of Rhode Island. Pastor at the Salem church in 1631, he espoused complete separation of church and state, preaching that the power of civil government was restricted to men's bodies, goods, and outward estates, not their conscience or religious belief. He denied the legal basis of the King's land grants, believing land had to be purchased from the Indians. In 1635 the General Court banished him for his views.[25] With five or six associates, Williams moved to Narragansett Bay and founded Providence, taking care to purchase land from the Indians. His government was a simple democracy, founded on a compact similar to that of the Mayflower.[26]

In Massachusetts in the spring of 1636, the so-called antinomian[27] controversy between Mrs. Anne Hutchinson,[28] Rev. John Wheelwright,[29] Rev. John Cotton,[30] and Governor Sir Henry Vane, allied against former Governor John Winthrop, Boston's Rev. John Wilson, the Magistrates, and other clergy became a major political issue. Described as a brilliant, radical woman of a "haughty and fierce carriage, of a nimble wit and active spirit, and a very voluble tongue,"[31] Mrs. Hutchinson held meetings following Sunday's sermon to comment on, criticize, and add to what Boston ministers preached. A hundred or more, including many women, would attend.[32] Her doctrines were considered dangerous because they questioned and resisted the authority of Magistrates and clergy. Cotton recanted but Wheelwright and Hutchinson were banished and Hutchinson excommunicated.[33]

William Coddington and 18 friends from Massachusetts settled on Aquidneck Island in Narrangansett Bay in 1638. They named their settlement Portsmouth and formed a "Bible Commonwealth." Mrs. Hutchinson and family moved to Portsmouth and seems to have displaced Coddington, who with seven associates, moved to Newport, forming a new Commonwealth in 1639. In January 1643, individuals from Portsmouth and Providence founded Warwick, creating the fourth settlement in what today is Rhode Island.

Being surrounded by ambitious neighbors—Massachusetts, Plymouth, and Connecticut—the various Rhode Island settlements decided to seek a patent for their lands and sent Roger Williams to England in 1643 for this purpose. He was successful and the patent authorized Providence, Portsmouth, and Newport to rule themselves and others within their limits by such form of civil government as the greater part should find suitable. Warwick was admitted in 1647.

Thus Rhode Island was started without a church establishment, without tax support of religion, without compulsory church attendance. It had no religious tests for the right to vote or to hold office, no disciplining of individuals or churches for their views, and no trouble or wars with the Indians. It was founded by bands of fugitives, exiles, and individuals seeking escape from religious intolerance and arbitrary government, settling at different places, at different times, and for a time without cooperation or relation to each other. In 1658 it became the home of "young" John and Sarah Whipple who moved their large family to Providence from Dorchester, Mass.

NEW HAMPSHIRE AND MAINE

The Council for New England granted several patents in what is now New Hampshire and Maine.[34] In 1637, Rev. John Wheelwright with 35 of his followers began a settlement at Exeter. Through a questionable interpretation of its Charter, Massachusetts claimed all of New Hampshire[35] and Maine east of the northerly source of the Merrimack river. Dover and Portsmouth were annexed in 1641 and Deputies elected to the General Court in 1643 even though not church members. Soon Exeter was claimed and New Hampshire was a part of Massachusetts for the next 40 years.

Thus, 11 years after John Whipple arrived at Dorchester and five years after Matthew and John at Ipswich, New England included isolated plantations, fishing stations, and settlements in Maine; independent towns in New Hampshire and Rhode Island; a military fort at Saybrook; and fully organized colonies in Plymouth, Massachusetts,[36] Connecticut, and New Haven. Plymouth, Rhode Island, Connecticut, and New Haven were without Charters and residents of the last two were "squatters" without legal title. They were subject to dangers from the French and Indians, to dissensions and disagreements with each other, and to possible arbitrary control from England. Fortunately, the English Civil War[37] led to practically no interference from the mother country and they developed their own political, economic, social, and religious institutions and their own ideas for protection and relations with the Indians.

New England controlled its own destiny from the Civil War until October 1684 when Massachusetts lost its charter[38] and Sir Edmund Andros became Governor of Massachusetts, Maine, New Hampshire, Plymouth, and the "King's Province," a region in western Rhode Island, in December 1686.[39] Connecticut and Rhode Island were soon included and in 1688 New York and New Jersey became a part of his domain. Thus, within two years, eight jurisdictions were controlled by one Royal Governor[40] with no Charter to safeguard the rights of the people. There was no

provision for a popular Assembly. Andros was to govern with the aid of a 16 member Council, exercising executive, judicial, and legislative powers and with power to distribute all remaining lands and collect a quit rent of not less than two shillings six pence on every 100 acres, canceling the traditional opportunity for free land and small holdings. This was the beginning of the end of England's control of the 13 colonies.

Prior to Andros, towns were granted land by the colonial legislatures with the proviso at least 20 families settle within two or three years and support a minister. Business was encouraged with grants to blacksmiths, shoemakers, operators of salt works, brick works, grist mills, and saw mills. Distribution was based on contributions to a common purchase fund or family needs, later according to wealth. It was granted with full rights[41] and could be traded, sold, or bequeathed. The welfare and contentment of the individual was considered, but greater consideration was given to the interests of the whole.

Money was merchantable wheat, peas, pork, and beef. Time was reckoned according to the seasons, not the calendar; events were dated as "sweet corn time," "the beginning of last hog time," "since Indian harvest," and "the latter part of seed time for winter wheat."[42]

Only Deputies to the General Court,[43] those engaged in hunting, trading, fishing, or soldiers fighting Indians, went beyond the borders of their own townships. The daily routine of clearing and tilling; raising rye, corn, wheat, oats, flax; gathering iron ore from bogs, and turpentine from pine trees left little energy for other activities. Life was stationary and isolated with few books and little opportunity to associate with the larger world.

In May 1635 the Massachusetts General Court ordered "dwelling-houses" be built within half a mile of the Meeting House.[44] Farms of 10 to 20 acres of arable or "meadow" land and 25 or more acres of "upland" suitable for pasturage and woodland were on the outskirts.[45] Special use fields such as a "cow meadow" or marsh were shared by all commoners. The pride of every family was its garden which produced vegetables in abundance. Flax and hemp were sown for domestic use, hops cultivated for beer, the wise planted orchards, and everyone who could afford one had a spinning wheel.

Wolves were a major problem. In 1642 the General Court ordered every householder rated at £500 or more to keep a mastiff;[46] households from £100 to £500, a hound or beagle to hunt them.[47] In 1644, towns paid 10 shillings for each wolf killed by hounds,[48] 5 shillings for those killed by trapping.[49] After the heads were nailed to the meeting house and the kill reported to the Constable, payment was authorized.[50] By 1648, each town was to purchase as many hounds as necessary to end the problem.[51]

Grain and animal prices were controlled. In 1640, the second year the

Ipswich Whipples could have grown a crop, corn was 5s, summer wheat 7s, rye 6s 8d. By 1646, the year before Matthew died, prices had dropped to 2s 8d for corn, 4s for wheat, and 3s 6d for rye. Spirituous liquors and intemperance were major problems. Rum, wine, cider, and brandy were the drinks of choice. Huge quantities were consumed at ordinations, weddings, and funerals. Common soldiers were allowed drams[52] in regular rations and the farm laborer received his ration, especially during haying season, corn husking, and hog killing time.

The inn (or ordinary) was the lodging place for the traveler and gathering place for the locals. The courts sat there and Magistrates entertained there. Common gossip of the day was dispensed at its tap room. The Sabbath congregation enjoyed its good cheer until the afternoon services and committees of the town and men of business met there to discuss affairs.

No one could operate an inn or sell intoxicating beverages without a license.[53] In 1647 the game of shuffle or shovel-board was forbidden because "much precious time is spent unfruitfully and much waste of wine and beer occasioned thereby." At the same time the "wise and rightful use" of beverages was recognized by the Court sending 12 gallons of sack and six gallons of white wine "as a small testimony of its respect to the Reverend Assembly of Elders at Cambridge."

The criminal code regulated habits, food, drink, dress, and industry as well as individual thoughts and practice.[54] Between 1641 and 1701, Massachusetts, Plymouth, Connecticut, and Rhode Island enacted 57 laws naming 30 crimes subject to the death penalty.[55] In conformance with the Mosaic code,[56] the court in 1646, ordered the death penalty for "any child of 16 and of sufficient intelligence who curse or smite father or mother." A defense was allowed if the "smiting be done in defense against life and limb" or if children were raised "negligently." "Idle and unprofitable persons and all children not diligently employed by their parents" were presented to the Quarterly Court who may "dispose of them for their own welfare and the improvement of the common good."[57]

Physical mutilation—branding with a red-hot iron, cutting off the ears, slitting the nose, and boring the tongue—was the penalty for 24 crimes.[58] Whipping, gagging, and nailing the ears of offenders to the pillory[59] were moderate forms of inflicting pain. Wrongdoers were put into the stocks,[60] pillory, and ducking stool. Some had to wear a badge or letter indicating the nature of the offense: A for adultery; D for drunkenness; T for theft. Exposing offenders in the public square or before the Meeting House, especially on Sundays or court days, was effective. The concept of reformation was unknown.

The arrival of the Winthrop fleet in 1630 marks the beginning of the growth of Massachusetts.[61] A General Court was formed and assumed

the power of government.[62] By 1632,[63] town governments were formed run by Selectmen chosen by freemen. Town meetings, usually held monthly and presided over by an elected Moderator, and attended by freemen, regulated local, political, and economic life.[64] Selectmen were responsible for making the land grants and implementing decisions made at town meetings. Political order was determined by a rigid interpretation of theology. No action was taken without consulting the minister despite his limited knowledge on many subjects.[65] The judiciary and recording of deeds and wills was a county responsibility. The Court's main business was to try those charged with being drunk, stealing, lying, and to settle civil disputes. Its officers were Justices of the Peace who sat as judges, the Sheriff, and the Clerk of Writs. The Grand Jurors, chosen in town meetings, met quarterly and drew up a list of presentments against persons or towns violating laws.[66]

By 1634, it was no longer feasible for freemen to attend General Court. Representative government dates from this time as the towns sent Deputies to represent them and the Deputies began to question the authority of the Magistrates. Freemen had to take an oath of allegiance. Following is the oath[67] taken by Whipple men of Ipswich:

FREEMAN'S OATH

I, John Whipple, being by Gods providence an inhabitant and freeman within the jurisdiction of this commonweal, do freely acknowledge myself to be subject to the government thereof, & therefore do here swear by the great and dreadful name of the ever living God that I will be true & faithful to the same, & will accordingly yield assistance & support thereunto with my person & estate, as in equity I am found, & will also truly endeavor to maintain & pursue all the liberties & privileges thereof, submitting myself to the wholesome laws made & established by the same; and further, that I will not plot nor practice any evil against it, nor consent to any that shall so do, but will timely discover & reveal the same to lawful authority now here established for the speedy preventing thereof. Moreover, I do solemnly bind myself in the sight of God, that when I shall be called to give my voice touching any such matter of this state, wherein freemen are to deal, I will give my vote & suffrage as I shall in my own conscience judge best to conduce & tend to the public weal of the body, without respect of persons or favor of any man so help me God in the Lord Jesus Christ.[68]

All males 20 or older who lived in town for six months and were not freemen, were required to take the resident's oath.[69] No records exist that show

Matthew Whipple was a freeman so he would have taken the Resident's Oath:

RESIDENT'S OATH

I, Matthew Whipple, do here swear and call God to witness, that being now an inhabitant within the limits of this jurisdiction of Massachusetts, I do acknowledge myself lawfully subject to the authority, and government here established; and do accordingly submit my person, family, and estate to be protected, ordered, and governed by the laws and constitutions thereof; and do faithfully promise to be from time to time obedient and conformable thereunto, and to the authority of the governor and all other magistrates and their successors, and to all such laws, orders, sentences, and decrees, as now are or hereafter shall be lawfully made, decreed, and published by them or their successors. And I will always endeavor (as in duty I am bound) to advance the peace and welfare of this body politic, and I will to my best power and means seek to divert and prevent whatsoever may tend to the ruin or damage thereof, or of the governor, deputy governor, or assistants or any of their successors. And I will give speedy notice to them or some of them of any seditions, violent treachery, or other hurt or evil, which I shall know, hear, or vehemently suspect to be plotted or intended against them or any of them, or against the said commonwealth, or government established. So help me God.

Since they were the only ones with the franchise, freemen were the only ones qualified for jury duty and to serve as town officials. Because they considered these obligations onerous, many refused to become free men thus escaping that responsibility. To address this shortage of eligible participants, the Court decreed in 1647 church members could be elected to public office and in 1658 men aged 24 "rated[70] at *f*20 estate" were made eligible when they took the Oath of Fidelity:

OATH OF FIDELITY

Whereas I, Spencer Whipple, am an inhabitant within this jurisdiction, considering how I stand obliged to the kings majesty, his heirs, and successors, by our charter and the government established thereby; do swear accordingly by the great and dreadful name of the ever-living God, that I will bear faith and true allegiance to our sovereign lord the king, his heirs, and successors, and that I will be true and faithful to this government, and accordingly yield assistance thereunto, with my person and estate, as in equity I am bound. And will also truly endeavor to maintain and preserve all the liberties and privileges thereof, submitting myself unto the wholesome laws made and established by the same. And farther that I will not

plot or practice any evil against it, or consent to any that shall so do: but will timely discover and reveal the same to lawful authority now here established for the speedy preventing thereof. So help me God in our Lord Jesus Christ.[71]

The government gradually evolved from trading corporation to Commonwealth.[72] Two elements of the English system, feudal[73] and hereditary, were excluded, making it possible to eventually evolve into a democracy. Winthrop disliked annual elections and supported election of Magistrates for life with removal for just cause.[74] But the Charter provided for annual elections and the proposal died. When Deputies were admitted to the General Court in 1634, the Assistants, who had assumed magisterial powers, claimed a "negative voice" or veto on the Deputies' decisions. This issue surfaced a few years later when the widow Goody Sherman claimed Boston merchant Robert Keaine impounded her errant swine and sued him for recovery of lost property. He was acquitted in the Court of Assistants. On appeal, the General Court[75] reversed the decision and the Assistants claimed a negative on the appeal, causing the whole colony to take sides. Winthrop argued a unicameral legislature would be democratic and that nothing in scripture authorized a democracy... "the meanest and worst of all forms of government." His speech had its effect, the negative voice was admitted, and the General Court separated into a House of Deputies and a House of Assistants.

In 1635, the Deputies expressed concern that liberty would not be secure until every man could read his rights and duties in a published body of laws.[76] Mistrusting their own knowledge of divine law, they committed the work of codification to Magistrates and ministers who, considering themselves exclusive partners with God in the divine covenant to rule the Bay, resisted and postponed the task for several years by delay, evasion, and subterfuge.

The first committee, Winthrop, Dudley, John Haynes, and Richard Bellingham, did nothing and was replaced in 1636 by another of ministers and Magistrates "to make a draft of laws agreeable to the word of God, which may be the fundamentals of this Commonwealth, and to present the same to the next General Court." Rev. John Cotton, who believed in the theocracy of ancient Israel where the high priest ruled in God's name, was the committee's working member. The greater part of Cotton's code was drawn from the Bible and supported by marginal references to the scriptures. Winthrop named it *Moses his Judicialls* and its 10 chapters and 75 articles were not acceptable to the Deputies.

It was spring 1638 before work on the code was resumed.[77] The new committee included Rev. Nathaniel Ward[78] of Ipswich. Nothing is known

of the committee's work except freemen were asked to draw up a list of "such necessary and fundamental laws as may be suitable to the times and places where God by his providence hath cast us." It submitted two codes to the General Court in November 1639—*Moses his Judicialls* and a body of laws drafted by Ward—which were referred to a committee to be combined. The result was the *Body of Liberties*, sent to every town in 1639 to be reviewed before being formally adopted in December 1641.[79]

While containing a good deal of *Moses his Judicialls*, the inclusions conformed to local conditions and so-called universal morality[80] and not to the sanctions and sanitary ordinances of ancient Hebrews to Massachusetts Bay. Ward's point of departure was common law, not the Bible. *The Body of Liberties*, organized by categories, enumerated fundamental rights:

I. Rights and duties of all colonists.
II. Rights, Rules, and Liberties concerning Judicial Proceedings.
III. Liberties more peculiarly concerning the Free Men.
IV. Liberties of Women.
V. Liberties of Children.
VI. Liberties of Servants.
VII. Liberties of Foreigners and Strangers.
VIII. Of the Brute Creatures.[81]
IX. Capital Laws.
X. Declaration of the Liberties the Lord Jesus hath given to the Churches.[82]

Ward's work was the primary source of the *Book of General Lawes and Libertyes Concerning the Inhabitants of Massachusetts* (hereafter *Lawes and Libertyes*), the first published (1648) affirmation of the American rule of law. While the *Body of Liberties* was a declaration of rights, *Lawes and Libertyes* was a civil code modified and reenacted as needed.[83] It was a complete legal code of conduct with explicitly stated fundamental principles of personal freedom—principles incorporated into various of our Bill of Rights and the source of the due process clause of our constitution. It was the law of the Commonwealth until the new charter of 1691.

Migration ceased by 1641, and a time of stress and suffering set in. Nothing was being produced for exchange with England, commodities were scarce, and high prices caused many settlers to return home, leaving debts behind.[84] Others went to the West Indies and to the Dutch at Long Island.[85] Pressure was brought to persuade people to migrate in a body to Old Providence, Jamaica, and Trinidad in the Caribbean and to Maryland. The true Puritan resisted, feeling hardship and suffering was worth civil and religious independence. He was also unwilling to lose his identity

by living among those who did not share his faith in the guiding hand of God.

By 1643, Massachusetts' four counties—Essex, Suffolk, Middlesex, and Norfolk—included 30 towns. The western frontier was the Connecticut river, the northern frontier was beyond the Merrimack river. Never good neighbors with the Dutch, the Province also feared the French in Nova Scotia. These concerns, along with the potential of another Indian war and the Civil War between King and Parliament, motivated the colonists to confederate as "The United Colonies of New England."[86] With this league they gained strength and the making of New England was complete.

Except for the clergy and occasional doctor, the artisan became a farmer or fisherman, preserving his former skills to use as demand required. Coopers,[87] curriers,[88] glaziers,[89] tallow chandlers,[90] soap-boilers, tinkers,[91] tailors, glovers, shoemakers, barber-surgeons, and millers were the first specialized workers in the infant colonies. Lumberjacks cut trees for masts, spars, stave makers, clapboard cleavers, and sawyers. Using a hand saw, froe,[92] and hatchet, farmers utilized the winter months to make saw boards, shingles, clapboard, pipe staves, and palings, thereby supplementing their agricultural earnings.

Fisheries[93] stimulated the shipbuilding and forest industries and by 1676 Boston, Charleston, Ipswich, Portsmouth, Salem, and Salisbury were the major shipbuilding towns, building vessels from six to 250 tons. The larger ships traded New England commodities with Spain, Portugal, and the West Indies. Wood products and dry fish were traded for sugar, spices, raisins, tropical fruits, and other luxuries with the West Indies.

By the late 1630s, large numbers of domestic animals had been brought over from Europe, generating a new prosperity for their owners. Despite fences, they did great damage in the fields. In 1647, the General Court required every town to mark animals grazing in the open without a herdsman. Those pastured on the commons[94] had distinctive marks[95] recorded by the Town Clerk. Owners of non-marked trespassing animals paid double damage.

Travel by land was on foot; those who settled along waterways used canoes. When the horse population became large enough, bridle paths were built between towns. Men rode astride; women and children usually sat on a pillion behind the men.[96] The first riding vehicle was a heavy sled, drawn by horses or oxen. The first sleighs were small sleds with high back, top, and seat. The earliest wheeled riding vehicles were probably the calash[97] and the curricle.[98]

Plague and starvation had so weakened the coast Indians before the first colonists arrived, they posed no serious problem to either the Plymouth or Massachusetts Bay settlers. But as settlers moved east and north, encroaching into hunting grounds, Indian raids and attacks became an ever-present danger.

Tribes in New England and eastern Canada were the Narragansetts and Niantics of Connecticut and Rhode Island; the Mohegans and Pequots of Connecticut; the Wampanoags of Plymouth and its neighborhood; the Pennacooks of New Hampshire; the Abenaki of Maine; the Massachusetts of Massachusetts Bay and northward; and the Iroquois of New York, Quebec, and Ontario. They outnumbered the colonists four to one, a major force if they were to join forces and attack.

Because the more remote settlements were occasionally raided, a citizen militia[99] trained monthly. The troops had no uniforms, their weapons were crude, there was an inadequate commissariat,[100] and alarms, whether by beacon, drum beat, or discharge of guns, were slow and unreliable. Much English blood was spilled the summer of 1636 causing the English and their allies, the Narragansetts and the Mohegans, to war against the Pequots.[101] The English and Indian forces attacked the Pequot stronghold at Mystic, Connecticut in May 1637 killing 600 to 700. Only seven were taken alive. English losses were two killed and 20 wounded. This victory broke the Pequot's power and raised the fame of the English among the Indians who had believed the Pequots invincible.

In September 1642, the Connecticut General Court alerted the Massachusetts General Court that the Indians were going to join forces and attack after harvest. Massachusetts officials met with Miantunnomo, Sachem of the Narragansetts, and after two days of talk were satisfied he was not a part of any conspiracy. However, prior to the Connecticut complaint, the Governor had decided "to strike some terror" into the Indians by disarming those within the Massachusetts jurisdiction. Men from Ipswich, Rowley, and Newbury disarmed the Pennacook Sachem, Passaconamy, who lived on the banks of the the Merrimack river and others went to Braintree to disarm Cutshamekin, Sachem of the Massachusetts. In 1647 the United Colonies prohibited the sale or trade of guns and powder to the Indians. The French and Dutch engaged in said trade, receiving beaver in return.[102]

Subsequently, Indian problems were sporadic until King Philip's War of 1675-76,[103] a war in which New England suffered greatly.[104] The cost in money was over a half a million dollars, equivalent to many millions today. Sixteen Massachusetts and four New Hampshire towns were

destroyed or abandoned, 40 other damaged, 500 white men captured or killed. The Indians were scattered, the captives held as servants, some sold into slavery to the West Indies. The major victory was in December 1675 when the Narragansett stronghold near what is now Kingston, R.I., was attacked, 400 wigwams burned, and up to 1,000 Indians killed or roasted alive.[105]

No new towns were founded in Maine or any settlement undertaken in western Massachusetts and New Hampshire from 1675 to 1715 because the Indian problem persisted.[106] Nearly all the tribes were now hostile to the English and allied with France.[107] The problem was so serious Massachusetts considered building an eight foot fence from the Charles river to the Concord and Merrimack rivers to keep them out. In 1722 the General Court ordered houses in frontier towns fortified as places of refuge in times of attack. Small garrisons were stationed in these towns and Rangers patrolled from fort to fort. At the same time, a congested population and out-of-sight land prices demanded expansion of the frontier and sporadic engagements continued until tribes in New England and the middle colonies were driven towards the mountains. Border warfare ceased when peace was made with France and a treaty agreed to with the Eastern Indians.

FORMS OF CURRENCY

Peltry was one of the principal mediums of currency. Livestock, grain, musket balls, and wampum were also extensively used. When making musket balls legal tender, the General Court valued them at a farthing and decreed they must be "of a full bore," and "no one could be compelled to take more than 12 pence at a time." The treasury accepted wampum in payment of taxes. Harvard accepted it for tuition[108] and the Dutch at New Amsterdam made it in such quantities the value rapidly decreased.

Pirates and traders brought in specie in every conceivable form: golden Spanish doubloons and silver dollars; Portuguese johannes and moidors; French crowns; Dutch ducats and rix dollars; silver bars, sows, and pigs from the mines of Peru. But there was no common currency because the balance of trade with England was so adverse that whatever sterling money came with the immigrants went back to pay for imports.

Not only was the foreign coin confusing, much of it was counterfeit or clipped.[109] So in 1652, the General Court authorized a mint in Boston to coin "bullion, plate, or Spanish coin" into shillings, sixpence, and threepenny bits "flat and square on the sides" with the letters N.E. on one side and the denomination in Roman numerals on the other.[110] Because the coins were easy to clip and wash,[111] the Court changed the design to what are generally known as pine tree shillings and fractions thereof.[112] The

coins were struck every year to at least 1683 but the original date of 1652 was never altered. Origin of the spelling "Masathusets" is unknown since the modern spelling was used in the act of 1652.

When it became apparent the mint could not supply all the currency required for trade, the Spanish dollar was made legal tender in 1672. Its ratio to the Massachusetts shilling was set at six to one. As no money was coined in Massachusetts from 1686 to 1775, the pine tree shillings circulated until the Revolution and 20 pine tree shillings (a pound) equaled $3.33 1/3 and remained legal tender long after the federal decimal coinage was established.

In 1690, the General Court issued promises to pay, the first paper money originating in the colonies. They were known as "Colony" or "Charter bills" and were issued in 10 shillings, one pound, and five pound notes. It wasn't long until their discount reached 30 percent. Monetary conditions worsened and in 1740 an attempt was made to establish a bank to stabilize the currency.

Competing groups were behind the bank scheme: those who wanted a silver bank with bullion behind its notes and those wanting a land bank with mortgages and manufactured articles guaranteeing the notes.[113] The value of silver was called tenor and in 1740, silver was worth six shillings, eight pence per ounce; in 1746, it was seven shillings, sixpence, and the value of bills varied from year to year.[114]

PRINCIPAL INDUSTRIES

By the beginning of the eighteenth century, the principal industries of New England were agriculture, fishing, shipbuilding, cloth-making, lumber products, distilling rum, the African slave trade, and the import and export of goods. Agriculture gradually withered because of soil exhaustion and import of food supplies, especially cereals from the bread colonies of New York and Pennsylvania. The chief forms of visible wealth were land, livestock, ships, and merchandise, with land being the most important in determining social power and prestige. The backbone of society was the small farmer who tilled from 10 to 100 acres.

The fishing industry grew rapidly after France surrendered Acadia.[115] By the middle 1700s some 400 ships and 6,000 men from Massachusetts were engaged in the fisheries. About half the catch was exchanged for West Indian sugar and molasses.[116] Whaling was an important industry by 1750. The first schooner was invented and launched at Gloucester, Mass. in 1713 and gradually displaced the ship and brig for short voyages. Shipbuilding required 30 types of artisans and added greatly to the prosperity of harbor towns.

HOUSING

Our ancestors did not immediately build log houses upon arrival. Most initially lived in tents, English wigwams, and sod huts. The average house in 1640 was small, simple, and primitive.[117] Most contained two rooms—the hall[118] and parlor. John Davys, joiner, built a house in Ipswich for William Rix for *f* 21.[119] The more expensive homes were shingled; cottages, until after 1691, had thatched roofs. Walls were daubed with a mixture of clay and straw, or plastered with a sort of lime made from clam-shells, then whitewashed. Most had one large chimney in the middle of the house to serve all fireplaces.[120] The whole family could sit on corner benches next to the kitchen fireplace and keep warm. Logs were supported by andirons. Bellows and tongs, a fire-pan for carrying hot coals, the "fire-fork" and "fire-iron" for use about the hearth were within easy reach.

The parlor or "fine" room" with fireplace and hearth furniture also contained the owner's most conspicuous item of furniture—the bed of imposing size with valance or half curtain hung from the cross pieces to the floor. A hundred weight of feathers and a warming pan were welcome comfort in winter.[121] Chests, tables, chairs, cushions, frames, settees,[122] stools, cupboards, curtains, chairs, and strong boxes were also in this room.

Homes were busy places of spinning, weaving, sewing, knitting, washing, ironing, cooking, brewing, and butter and cheese making. Strings of dried apples and corn hung from the ceiling and hams cured in the smoke at the chimney. While books were few, almost every family had "the great Bible," smaller Bibles, and the Psalm Book.

FOOD PREPARATION AND UTENSILS

Most families had one or more spits placed horizontally above the hearth, the ends resting on supports making it possible for youngsters to turn them as they repeatedly basted the meat with its own juice. This need for constant attention resulted in invention of the jack, a mechanical contrivance, which kept the spit in motion.[123] Poorer families roasted meat by suspending it by a strong core, frequently twisted to keep the meat in motion, twisting and untwisting for some minutes.

Vegetables, meats, and water were boiled in various kettles suspended over the open hearth-fire by pot-hooks[124] and trammels[125] which swung in the fireplace. Skillets,[126] brass or iron, were common as was the fire-pan, a shallow iron dish with three eight-inch legs and close-fitting cover with rim an inch high. Food was placed in the pan and the pan set on or in the hot coals or ashes. Bread was toasted on a toasting-iron.

Ovens[127] were built next to the kitchen fireplace at a convenient height.

Heat was generated by building a fire inside the oven, removing the coals when hot, sweeping it before placing earthen pots of brown bread, Indian pudding, and beans in with a peel.[128] It took 12 to 15 hours to bake most items.[129] Estate inventories at the time placed the following in the kitchen:[130]

> Churn, dripping pans, powdering tub, barrels and keelers, pails, bucking tubs, buckets, and beer vessels; frying pans, baking pans, warming pans, grid-irons, peel; copper, brass, and iron pots and kettles, some of prodigious size; candlesticks of pewter or iron; cups and flagons; trivets, skimmers, chafing dishes and posnets, smoothing irons, box irons, and sieves covered with haircloth or tiffany; pewter plates or platters and latten, trenchers, trays, and platters of wood; jugs, glass bottles, and leather bottles; pewter salts, salt cellars, spoons of silver or an alloy of brass and alchemy spoons.[131]

The best spread table would have looked strange to us with its wooden plates and platters, some dishes of bright pewter, no forks, coffee or tea but plenty of beer, cider, and stronger spirits. Game from forest and fish, clam, lobster, and mussels from the sea provided a substantial and generous spread for most.

FOOT COVERINGS AND CLOTHES

Shoes in the mid 1600s were made of welt neat leather,[132] crossed on the outside with a seam and two soles, the inner of good neat leather, the outer of tallowed backs.[133] Someone in 1650 wrote, "our boots and shoes are snouted that we can hardly kneel in the house of worship" but it was 39 years before square toes made their appearance. Travelers and hunters wore buskins[134] when walking through wet area. Pattens,[135] clogs,[136] and galoshes[137] protected feet from the wet ground. Boots were nearly as large at the top as the brim of a hat. Because they required large amounts of leather, the General Court in 1651 imposed a fine on those wearing them who were not worth *f*200.

Ladies had richly embroidered dress shoes of silk and satin in the late 1600s. The fashionable of both sexes had large knots or roses of ribbon on the instep. Other wore strings and buckles. Some strings were so valuable they were included in estate inventories. Laced shoes for women and children were advertised in a Boston paper in 1716. Buckles prevailed until the Revolution when shoestrings became popular. Right and left shoes for males were introduced about the same time. The earliest gloves were made of sheep, calf leather, and kid.[138] It was a common custom to give pall holders and others attending funerals white leather gloves.

Both men and women wore linen ruffs. Some were wired, some starched, and they were gradually enlarged until 1639 when the general court ordered they be kept within due bounds. Shortly thereafter, men quit wearing them. Both wore neckerchiefs, cravats, and knit and woven comforts in cold weather. They were tied once or twice around the neck. Belts with buckles were worn about the waist by both sexes and both wore patches, usually black, cut into all kinds of forms, and stuck about the face and neck.

Men wore girdles[139] and a band, held by a cord and tassel at the neck, that extended round to lie on the shoulder and back. Tied by long strings, tasseled at the ends, and tastefully knotted, it was frequently scalloped and elegantly embroidered until civil authorities forbade bands ornamented with costly work. Woolen, cotton, worsted, velvet, silk, and fur caps were worn by males from the time of the first settlement.

The doublet,[140] made of cloth and leather,[141] and fastened with hooks and eyes was in fashion. It resembled the Roman tunic and featured both high and low collars. The most popular color was red. Sometimes it was fringed and frequently was edged with silver and gold lace.[142] Hose, usually drawn up over the breeches, attached to the doublet with ribbons or laces called points. Such costly additions were legislatively forbidden in 1651, except to men worth *f*200.[143]

The jerkin of leather and various sorts of cloth was similar but used by the laboring class. Unlike doublets, waistcoats were sleeveless, had right and front pockets, and were made of green cotton and bound with red tape.[144] Rich men fastened theirs with silver buttons, gold buttons, gold basket buttons, and quarters and eights of the Spanish dollar; poorer men used cloth colored horn, pewter, brass, and gilded buttons.

Small clothes, a common garment, were breeches that fastened around the waist, descending nearly half the length of the thighs. Overalls, known as slyders, were worn over small clothes to keep them clean. Spatterdashes[145] and gaiters[146] of cloth, partly covered the shoe and the leg stocking, offered protection against the cold. Clergy and men of office wore gowns and women wore aprons on the Sabbath. The richer classes wore muslin, silk, and embroidered aprons, while poorer people settled for checked cloth.

WOMEN'S FINERY

Women liked fine things as witness Madame Symonds.[147] She received a "flower satin mantle lined with sarcenet,[148] a silver clasp for it, cinnamon taffity,[149] two Cambric whisks[150] with two pair of cuffs, a light blanket, 200 pins, and one-and-a half yards of chamlet,[151] a pair of wedding gloves,

and her grandmother's funeral ring sent by her son from London in 1644. In her sixtieth year, he sent 10 yards of silk, feather fan with silver handle, two yards of Lustre,[152] 200 needles, five yards of sky calico, damson leather skin, two tortoise fans,[153] a silver gimp,[154] black sarindin[155] cloak, two women's ivory knives, etc."

Women used fans, wore veils,[156] and velvet masks, kept in place by silver mouthpieces, to protect the face from frost in winter and heat in summer.[157] Cloaks[158] and hoods[159] were popular but after hats came into vogue for men, hoods were mostly for women. Red was the fashionable color for cloaks. Women also wore rayles, a sort of robe, low at the neck, sleeves about the elbows, large at the shoulder, and abundantly slashed.[160] The mantle or mantelet was a kind of cloak or garment worn over the dress. 'They wore white lawn caps, some had their hair curled and frizzed and raised high, surmounted by a sort of veil.

TIMEPIECES AND JEWELRY

Clocks and watches were rare. They had no springs, were wound with catgut, and didn't designate seconds or minutes. Most had turtle shell and pinchbeck cases,[161] were thick and larger in circumference than today's watches. By 1712, clock sellers in Boston had 30-hour, week, month, spring table, chime, quarter, quarter-chime, and church clocks and pocket and repeating watches for sale.

Rings were worn on the thumbs and fingers. Wealthy families gave pall bearers and close friends funeral rings.[162] While earliest colonists were not much for ornament, ultimately jewelry came into favor. In 1656 there were beads and necklaces of glass, amber, bone, coral, and jasper. Women were wearing paste,[163] topaz, French, black, white, green, and purple stone necklaces in 1765. By 1771, a Boston merchant was advertising a variety of paste, enameled, pearl, garnet, and black ear rings; necklaces; velvet collars;[164] past hair combs; shoe, knee, and stock buckles; rings; broaches; lockets; watch trinkets of all kinds; crystal, paste, enameled pearl, gilt, pebble, and carnelian[165] sleeve buttons; watch chains; coral beads; and tortoise shell hair combs.

The first eye glasses were nose or bridge and temple spectacles. Nose spectacles were the most common and had no side support. Essex county clerk Hillard Veren wore them in the 1680s as did Rev. Richard Mather. Barbers bled patients and pulled teeth. The practice of dentistry began in the mid 1700s and a pearl dentifrice was developed in 1772. Mineral teeth, soldered on golden plates, became fashionable and porcelain false teeth were made at the beginning of the nineteenth century.

Childbearing was deadly for many women. Infant mortality was high. Yet between their twentieth and fortieth years, child bearing was central to the lives of colonial women. Six to eight pregnancies were typical with the women commonly described as "breeding" and "teeming." *Elizabeth In Her Holy Retirement*, a pamphlet by Cotton Mather, described pregnancy as a lethal condition. "For you ought to know," he warned, "your death has entered into you, you may have conceived that which determines but about nine months more at the most, for you to live in the world."[166]

John Oliver, author of *A Present for Teeming American Women,* told expectant mothers in 1694 to pray because of the many dangers they faced. He noted that for their lying in they had "linen... a nurse, a midwife, entertainment for women that are called to the labor, a warm convenient chamber, and etc." and suggested the linen they might need was a "winding sheet,"[167] that their chamber would probably be a grave, and their neighbors "but worms." He counseled them to arm themselves with patience and prayer and to "abate somewhat those dreadful groans and cries which do so much to discourage their friends and relatives who hear them"[168]

Most women in labor relied on midwives for advice. They supervised the activities of lying-in, used their skills to assure safe delivery, testified in court cases of bastardy, verified birth dates, and examined female prisoners who pleaded pregnancy to escape punishment. From time to time they examined the cervix (womb) to gauge the progress of labor and encouraged the expectant mother to walkabout until the pains became too strong. There was no standard posture for giving birth but few lay flat in bed. Some squatted on a midwife's stool, a low chair with an open seat, other knelt on a pallet, sat on another woman's lap, or stood, supported by two friends. They caught the child, tied the umbilical cord, and if necessary, fetched the afterbirth. In complicated cases they turned the child and delivered it feet first. The woman in labor was liberally fortified with hard liquor or mulled wine.[169]

After delivery, the mother was covered snugly and confined to bed, ideally for three to four weeks. She was not allowed to stand on the floor and was constantly supplied with hot drinks as a precaution against colds. Family members relieved her of household duties. Those who could not afford weeks of idleness got up in a week or less, but not without being censured.

Abortion was the woman's choice up to the nineteenth century.[170] As late as the second trimester,[171] it was at worst a misdemeanor with conviction rarely sought and almost impossible to obtain since it depended on the woman's own testimony on whether she felt the quickening. Also,

juries hesitated to convict women for making a choice. So far as is known, not a single statute concerning abortions existed in the U.S. in 1800 but by 1900 abortion had been banned at any time in pregnancy by every state.[172] Abortion is available in most states in 2004 with efforts to restrict it a major political battle in all sections of the country.

RELIGIOUS PRACTICES

In 1646, noting "the prosperity of the civil state is much advanced and blessed of God" when people attend church, the General Court ordered attendance on "the Lords days, public fast days," and "days of thanksgiving" except for good cause, on penalty of five shillings for each offense. It set a penalty for swearing "either by the holy name of God or any other oath" at "10 shillings or commitment to the stocks for not less than an hour nor more than three hours. Unbelievers, those non-church members who were willing to censure the church or its ministers,[173] were to be "reproved openly by the Magistrates at some lecture, and bound to their good behavior" for the first offense and fined *f*5; "stand two hours openly upon a block four foot high, on a lecture day, with a paper fixed on his breast with A WANTON GOSPELLER written in capital letters" for the second offense.[174]

Native priests wanted to preserve their religion,[175] but the General Court voted to "propagate the true religion" by choosing two ministers "to make known the heavenly counsel of God" to them in their native tongue[176] and bring "their conversion to Jesus Christ."

Puritans enforced strict Biblical standards, believing the Bible[177] was a guide to solving all of man's problems. They believed man was created by God to enjoy eternal bliss but Adam's disobedience[178] made all his descendants sinful by nature and unable to save themselves from eternal damnation. They believed God gave some individuals supernatural assistance to free themselves from sin. God's choosing was "Election," the chosen were the "Elect" or the "Saints." Election took place before the beginning of time, so it was an act of "Predestination." God's supernatural assistance was called "Grace"[179] and the experience of grace was known as "Conversion" with the converted considered to be one of the "Regenerate."[180] Since every Puritan was of the elect, he could with proper effort, win God's grace if the church exercised strict supervision of politics, society, and intellectual life.

Puritans[181] believed God considered them like the biblical Israelites, a chosen people. Their faith, based on a covenant,[182] and their concern with discipline, exclusion of hypocrites, and limiting the franchise to church members, led to a society where the saints were powerful and the

unchurched were second-class citizens. The church was a "visible political union" with power to admit, admonish, and excommunicate. Those seeking membership had to provide evidence of being called to salvation, of being a "visible saint." The applicant was proposed for membership[183] following screening by church officers. Members testified to their "Christian and sincere affections." The male made a public confession of approximately 15 minutes of how he came to receive grace, the female's confession could be in private. If accepted, the member entered in covenant with God and the church and "owned" the covenant.[184] Before the church members voted, candidates were addressed as follows:

> Since it hath pleased God to move you, brethren, to hold forth the right hand of fellowship, it is your part, and that which I am to require of you in the name of the Lord and of his church, before you can be admitted thereunto whether you be willing to enter a holy covenant with God and with them and by the grace and help of Christ be willing to deny yourself and all your former pollution and corruptions, wherein any sort you may have walked, and so to give yourself to the Lord Jesus, making him your only priest and atonement, your only prophet, your guide and king and law giver, and to walk before him in all professed subjections unto all his holy ordinance(s), according to the rule of the gospel, and to walk together with his church and the members thereof in brotherly love and mutual edification and succor according to God; then do I also promise unto you in the name of this church that by the help of Christ we likewise will walk towards you in all brotherly love and holy watchfulness to the mutual building up one of another in the fellowship of the Lord Jesus Christ. Amen, Amen.[185]

THE CHURCH CONVENANT

> We that do assemble ourselves this day before God and his people, in an unfeigned desire to be accepted of him as a church of the Lord Jesus Christ, according to the rule of the New Testament, do acknowledge ourselves to be the most unworthy of all others, that we should attain such a high grace, and the most unable of ourselves to the performance of any thing that is good, abhorring ourselves for all our former defilements in the worship of God, and other ways, and resting only upon the Lord Jesus Christ for atonement, and upon the power of his grace for the guidance of our whole after course, do here in the name of Christ Jesus, as in the presence of the Lord, from the bottom of our hearts, agree together through his grace to give up ourselves, first unto the Lord Jesus as our only king, priest, and prophet, wholly to be subject unto him in all things, and there with one unto another, as in a church-body to walk together in all the ordinances of the gospel, and in all

> such mutual love and offices thereof, as toward one another in the Lord; and all this, both according to the present light that the Lord hath given us, as also according to all further light, which he shall be pleased at any time to reach out unto us of the Word by the goodness of his grace, renouncing also in the same covenant all errors and schisms, and whatsoever byways that are contrary to the blessed rules revealed in the gospel, and in particular the inordinate love and seeking after the things of the world.[186]

Churches were organized with a Pastor and a Teacher as teaching elders, Ruling elders,[187] Deacons, and sometimes Deaconesses.[188] The pastor was to exhort (preach); the teacher to instruct in matters of doctrine. The difference between them was minimal. Elected by the congregation, the Pastor was ordained by the imposition of hands and prayer by the Elders.[189] Members were dismissed to other congregations in the same solemn and formal manner. Delinquents were first advised, then censored by vote of the entire church, and if necessary excommunicated[190] in the presence of the congregation.[191]

Both state and church were active in finding and punishing wickedness. The typical Puritan became his brother's keeper and didn't hesitate to inform against "evildoers." They were quick to force people to follow their interpretation of God's commands and forced non-conformists to leave or face imprisonment and death.[192] This church-state relationship[193] was justified to ensure political leaders were properly chosen and trained. An unregenerate person could hardly rule in accordance with God's will, therefore the right to vote and hold office was restricted to church members.[194]

A list of evils[195] to be avoided was drafted: immodest wearing of the hair by men, strange new fashions of dress, tippling, idleness, overcharges by merchants,[196] and the "loose and sinful habit of riding from town to town, men and women together, under the pretense of going to lectures, but really to drink and revel in taverns.[197] Despite tradition and the scolding of preachers, many youths opted for fun, levity, and amusements. In addition, second and third generations were not influenced by the same events as the first,[198] and the large immigration of dissenters demanded religious toleration.

The essence of Puritanism practiced by the Ipswich Whipples was struggle—struggle against the wilderness, against the world, against the Devil. It was a hard life. In "The Way to Heaven," Rev. Thomas Shepard[199] outlined things a man must become and things he must avoid if he wishes to be saved. The religious virtues he emphasized—humiliation, faith, and opposition—easily transferred to secular life—willingness to work, hope for success, industry, and perseverance.

Shepard replaced Rev. Hooker at Cambridge (Newtown) in 1636[200]

and became a founder of Harvard College and one of the important leaders of the Godly Commonwealth. His sermons were widely circulated, making his influence felt throughout the colony. Perhaps his most famous sermon was on the four Strait Gates man had to pass through before entering heaven.[201] He also preached and wrote about "easy ways to Heaven (as men think) all of which lead to Hell."[202]

Since its population shared similar political, religious, and social ideals,[203] it was easy to promote unity of thought, habits, and customs. It also evolved into a society where the middle class was large enough to hinder the growth of a powerful upper class and important enough to perpetuate the large servile lower class.[204]

Biases brought from England were quick to emerge and between 1647 and 1692 several accusations of witchcraft were made in Plymouth, New Hampshire, Massachusetts,[205] and Connecticut. In the latter two, executions for alleged witchcraft occurred. In May of 1681 several Massachusetts ministers collected facts on witchcraft and other "strange apparitions" which were published in a book by Rev. Increase Mather in 1648 titled *An Essay for the Recording of Illustrious Providences.*[206] This was preparation for the outbreak in Salem Village which began in March 1692.

Most publications of the seventeenth century were religious in character. Rev. Cotton Mather extolled Puritan theology in over 400 publications. He appealed to divine interposition and judgments in daily life, indicated a belief in signs, omens, and portents, in the depravity and the badness of man, in an angry rather than a merciful God, and in the doctrine that few were "elected" to be saved.

Reverend Michael Wigglesworth' poem "Day of Doom or a Poetical Description of the Great and Last Judgment," published in 1662 was highly popular. In it he defended damnation of infants and made the Lord consign "such sinners"[207] to eternal punishment in the oft quoted words:

A crime it is, therefore in bliss
You may not hope to dwell:
But unto you I shall allow
The easiest room in Hell.[208]

He grouped the following at the Day of Doom:

Adulterers and Whoremongers
were there, with all unchast:
There Covetous and Ravenous,
That riches got too fast:

Who us'd vile ways themselves to raise
t'estates and worldly wealth,
Oppression by, or Knavery,
By Force, or fraud, or stealth.[209]

The argument against an ecclesiastical aristocracy was led by Rev. John Wise of Ipswich.[210] His *Vindication of the Government of New England Churches* (1717) called for a Congregational system of authority centered in the individual churches rather than in a central body composed of delegates from the churches as advocated by Increase and Cotton Mather. Wise was one of the first in the colonies to insist that "power is originally in the people," and that men are "all naturally free and equal."[211]

RELIGIOUS REVIVALS

From 1660 the role of religion declined. In 1734 pastor Jonathan Edwards[212] described the greater part of the people in the neighborhood his parish in Northampton, Mass. as:

> ... very insensible of the things of religion, and engaged in other cares and pursuits... Licentiousness for some years greatly prevailed among the youth of the town; they were, many of them, very much addicted to night walking, and frequenting the tavern, and lewd practices, wherein some by their example exceedingly corrupted others. It was their manner very frequently to get together in conventions of both sexes, for mirth and jollity, which they called frolics; and they would often spend the greater part of the night in them, without any regard to order in the families they belonged to.[213]

Edwards, a Congregationalist, was the first great revivalist to attempt to arrest the decline of religion. His sermons, filled with threats of the sufferings of hell-fire for those unsaved and the joys of heaven for the saved, were designed to bring the people back to the old Puritan faith and doctrines. His chief appeal was terror. He described the Almighty as holding the souls of the unsaved "over the pit of hell much as one holds a spider or some loathsome insect for the fire." He combined the severe piety and doctrines or the early Puritans with the fervor of the revivalist.

George Whitefield, English Methodist minister, held revivals throughout the colonies from 1738 to 1751. Known as the Great Awakening, Whitefield was more responsible than any other person for the continuation of the revivals. His preaching appealed to emotions and feelings more than to reason, causing him to be condemned by the conservative orthodox ministers.[214]

Whitefield's ideas had widespread political and social influence. He

preached divine law as recorded in the Scriptures was superior to man-made law and no earthly political power could lawfully violate that law.[215] His ideas on salvation and tolerance were unacceptable to the traditional Puritan preacher.[216] "I am of a Catholic spirit," he said, "and I see a man who lives the Lord Jesus in sincerity, I am not very solicitous to what outward communion he belongs." [217] Harvard and Yale protested his excesses. Congregationalists and Presbyterians were divided; Anglicans were almost unanimously in opposition.[218]

Sudden conversion is often of short duration and the Great Awakening failed to improve, to the degree expected, the religious and moral conditions of the people. It did, however, foster various political and social ideas and movements.[219]

COMMUNICATION AND EDUCATION

Harvard, first college in the colonies, was founded in 1636.[220] The first printed document, the "Freeman's Oath," was printed by Stephen Daye in 1639.[221] Almanacs in 1639 and 1640 were followed by the first book, *The Whole Book of Psalmes Faithfully Translated into English Metre* The first book shop opened in 1650. Sermons on political, educational, social, and theological matters were printed and given wide distribution. The *Boston Weekly News Letter* began appearing in 1704, becoming the first successful newspaper. By 1656 newspapers were established in all colonies except New Jersey, Delaware, and Georgia. They printed more foreign than domestic news, bringing the colonists into closer touch with England and Europe. By 1711 Massachusetts, New Hampshire, New York, and Pennsylvania had a postal system; it was 1732 before postal service was available in Virginia.

Massachusetts proposed the first public school in 1635; the first law on compulsory education was passed in 1642, revised in 1648. The revision required children to be able to "perfectly read the English tongue." Towns of 50 families were to hire a teacher, towns of 100 to set up a grammar school[222] with a master to prepare youth for the University. The elementary curriculum was reading, writing, and arithmetic. Public secondary and private schools, outside of the Latin grammar schools, eventually taught higher arithmetic, algebra, geometry, trigonometry, bookkeeping or "merchants accounts," mensuration,[223] surveying, and navigation. Towns could pay teachers by taxing all inhabitants or only parents whose children attended. Towns not complying were fined.

From 1689 to 1754 the white population of the 13 colonies increased from about 200,000 to more than 1,000,000 with about 300,000 each in New England the middle states, and 400,000 in the southern colonies. Originally the vast majority were English, but the mix was altered considerably by 1750. Blacks were the largest group of non-English,[224] nine-tenths living in the south. Next in number were the Scots-Irish, Germans, Irish, Scotch, French Huguenots, and small numbers of Swiss, Scandinavians, and Hebrews. The Dutch and Swedes had earlier settled in the middle colonies. Indians lived east of the Allegheny mountains with the Iroquois the most important single group.

Distribution of these racial groups was uneven.[225] By 1750 nearly two-thirds of the people in the middle colonies were Dutch, Scotch-Irish, Irish, Scotch, Swedish, and German.

Most new immigrants settled on the frontier and had no allegiance to Great Britain. They were isolated from the control of the King and his royal officials and resented British policies on land grants, quit rents, and religious intolerance. Emigration was stimulated by American agents and companies. William Penn and Benjamin Furley were the first great Realtors and founders of American advertising. They published upwards of 60 books and pamphlets in Dutch, German, and French with glowing accounts of Pennsylvania as a veritable Garden of Eden.[226] It was the best advertised of the colonies and a great stream of immigrants settled within its borders.

Now that the reader has a general knowledge of life in colonial New England, it is time to focus on life in Ipswich, Massachusetts in the seventeenth century.

1. Bay Psalm Book—Oldest surviving book printed in North America.
2. New England originally included Plymouth, Massachusetts Bay, Connecticut, New Haven, Rhode Island, New Hampshire and Maine. Each evolved differently.
3. Settlements—Separated by dense forests and broad rivers.
4. Civil Officials—Chosen from among their freemen.
5. When New England was settled from one-half to two-thirds of the territory was either sterile or had poor soil. Included were some 10,000 square miles of swamp land.
6. Estimates are that at least 30 days of labor per acre, after removal of the forests, were necessary to make the land arable. Except for the fertile river valleys, the soil was poor, thin, and sandy. Salt hay grown in the marsh meadows did, however, enhance stock raising in places like Ipswich.
7. Law Limiting Manufacturers—Especially woollen cloth, hats, and iron.
8. In February 1638, William Pierce, Master of a vessel carrying Pequod captives to be sold in the West Indies, returned from Tortugas with a cargo of cotton, tobacco, salt, and Negroes. This is the first notice of African slave traffic in New England. Joseph B. Felt, *The Ecclesiastical History of New England,* Vol. I, (Boston, 1855). 333. Pierce, Master of the *Lyon* when it brought John Whipple the younger over in 1632, was killed when fired on by the Spanish in June 1641 when he entered the harbor of Providence in the West Indies. Felt. 429.
9. Separatists—Later known as Pilgrims.
10. Cape Cod—Some 200 miles north of the limit of the patent.
11. The colonists who had previously settled in Virginia, Maryland, and the Carolinas had charters.
12. Mayflower Compact or Civil Body Politic—Written while they were still aboard ship and signed by 41 men, it was the first pure democracy in America, and committed members to "such just and equal laws" thought best for the general good of the colony.
13. John Winthrop was the most prominent of the early New England leaders. He was born in 1588 and admitted to Cambridge, Trinity College, at 14; his studies interrupted by marriage at 17 to Mary Forth, an heiress. She died in 1614. Winthrop had four wives, three who preceded him in death. He was the only son of lawyer Adam Winthrop (and his second wife Anne Browne), Auditor of St. John's and Trinity Colleges, Cambridge. He practiced law with his father in London, was Justice of the Peace at 18, a few years later held Court Leet for his father, and acted as Steward of the Manor; excellent training for his later administrative duties as Governor. His grandfather was Adam Winthrop (1498-1562), a prosperous Clothier, who acquired the Manor of Groton in 1544 and was permitted to style himself Armiger, or Esquire, after 1548. See Edmund S. Morgan, *The Puritan Dilemma; The Story of John Winthrop*, (Boston, 1958) and Robert C. Winthrop, *Life and Letters of John Winthrop*, 2 vols, (Boston, 1864-7).
14. The King suspended Parliament after it passed three resolutions declaring every supporter of High Church and royal prerogative a capital enemy to the Kingdom and Commonwealth. Winthrop lost his attorneyship at the court of wards and liveries. Samuel Eliot Morison, *Builders of the Bay Colony*, Houghton Mifflin Company, (Boston, 1930). 64.
15. Thomas Dudley—Of Northampton, former Captain of English volunteers under Henry of Navarre, sometime Steward to the Earl of Lincoln, and devoted parishioner of Rev. John Cotton at Boston.

16. In 1623, the Council for New England divided the region into 20 shares and distributed it by lot among those who had paid in capital. The drawing took place in the presence of King James on 29 June and the Earl of Warwick, who was now beginning to be looked up to as the head of the Puritans, drew the region around Massachusetts Bay. He granted this tract by patent to John Humphry, John Endicott, and their associates on 19 March 1628 and Endicott sailed on his first voyage to New England in June to begin the colonization of Massachusetts. See "Records of Council for New England," *Proceedings of American Antiquity Society* for 1875, 49. and *Massachusetts Colonial Records* of 29 September, 1629.
17. Virginia, Newfoundland, and Guiana had attracted the adventurers and the needy; "the Mayflower pilgrims, though glorified in history, were too few in number, too humble in station, and too far removed from the main currents of English life to be of importance," says English historian Arthur Percival Newton.
18. The tract was to extend westward from the Atlantic to the Pacific.
19. Rev. Thomas Hooker & Followers—They left from Cambridge, originally called Newtown, because they opposed the narrow and religious views of Massachusetts leaders and advocated a wider franchise to conduct the public business.
20. Hartford, Wethersfield, and Windsor—The three towns declared themselves a Commonwealth in January 1638-39, becoming the second government authorized by the people and the first with a constitution drafted by a convention of delegates. They adopted a government called the "Fundamental Orders" which included a legislature composed of a Governor and six Assistants and four Deputies or Representatives from each of the towns elected annually by the freemen. Only the Governor was required to be a church member and could not serve more than one term in succession. Those taking the oath of fidelity and admitted by a majority of any township had the right to vote for officers, make and repeal laws, and dispose of lands. Taxes were levied only by the whole legislature.
21. John Winthrop, Jr.—Son of Winthrop and his first wife, Mary Forth. See Thomas F. Waters, *A Sketch of the Life of John Winthrop The Younger*, (Publications of the Ipswich Historical Society, VII). 1899.
22. New Haven—They were without a Charter and didn't purchase the land from the Indians but had ambitious plans for trade and a colony.
23. Milford and Guilford and Stamford—They formed a temporary government with a Plantation Covenant, agreeing to accept the rule of the scriptures for their civil code. In June 1639 they adopted a constitution and founded the "Bible Commonwealth." The franchise was restricted to church members. Seven men were designated first church members and freemen with power to select other church members and freemen, appoint Magistrates, and make and repeal laws. Later it was voted that "the word of God shall be the only rule to be attended unto in ordering the affairs of government in this plantation," thus ignoring the common and statute law of England.
24. See Edmund S. Morgan, *Roger Williams: The Church and the State*, (New York, 1967) and Perry Miller, *Roger Williams: His Contributions to the American Tradition*, (Indianapolis, 1953).
25. Williams' alternative to moving to Rhode Island was to be deported to England. Among his differences with the established church was opposition to allowing non members to worship. He taught that a Christian should not pray with the unconverted, even if it meant excluding one's own wife or child. His arguments against Massachusetts Puritanism were expounded in debates with Rev. John Cotton, spokesman for the standing order. Six separate publications appeared in the process

of the argument. The most important were Williams' "The Bloudy Tenent of Persecution" (1644) and Cotton's reply, "The Bloudy Tenent, Washed and Made White in the Bloud of the Lambe" (1647). Everett Emerson, *Puritanism in America 1620 - 1750*, Twayne Publishers, (Boston, 1977). 66-7.

26. Roger Williams' Government—Settlers promised obedience "to all such orders and agreements as shall be made for public good of the body in an orderly way, by the major consent of the present inhabitants, masters of families, incorporated together in a town fellowship, and others whom they shall admit unto them only in civil things."
27. Antinomian: A believer in the doctrine that faith alone, not obedience to the moral law, is necessary for salvation.
28. See Helen Augur, *An American Jezebel: The Life of Anne Hutchinson*, (New York, 1930).
29. Rev. John Wheelwright—Mrs. Hutchinson's brother-in-law.
30. Rev. John Cotton was from the parish at Boston, Lincolnshire, England where Mrs. Hutchinson had become his devoted admirer. Cotton came to America in 1633, Mrs. Hutchinson with her husband and 12 children followed in 1634. She joined the Boston church 21 November and was soon known as a competent nurse and midwife. Her religious interests led her to provide spiritual advice to the women she cared for.
31. Marcus Wilson Jernegan, *The American Colonies 1492-1750*, Frederick Ungar Publishing Co., (New York, Third Printing, 1963). 133.
32. Mrs. Anne Hutchinson—She declared that Wheelwright and Cotton alone of all the clergy preached a "Covenant of Grace," meaning they had a direct revelation in their soul of God's grace and love. The rest of the clergy preached a "Covenant of Works," that is, a religion founded on a system of established doctrines and laws, officially interpreted by the clergy, which must be unquestionably obeyed.
33. Mrs. Anne Hutchinson—Her excommunication was pronounced by Rev. Wilson in these words: "I do not only pronounce you worthy to be cast out, but I do cast you out and in the name of Christ, I do deliver you up to Satan, that you may learn no more to blaspheme, to seduce, and to lie, and I do account you from this time forth to be a heathen and a publican." Jernegan. 133.
34. New Hampshire and Maine—Including those to Ferdinando Georges and Captain John Mason in November 1622. Their land was between the Merrimack and the Kennebec rivers. Settlements were established at Monhegan in 1622, Sace in 1623, and Agamenticus (later York) about 1624. In 1629, Mason and Gorges divided their province between them with the Piscataqua river as middle boundary. Mason's land was called New Hampshire, Gorges' New Somersetshire. The first town in Maine was Kittery, organized in 1647, and birthplace of General William Whipple, New Hampshire signer of the Declaration of Independence. His birth home still exists and has been enlarged and modernized. Mason died in 1635 and the plantation fell into disorder. He bequeathed his land to his grandsons and John Moffatt, father of Catherine Moffatt, wife of General William Whipple, purchased much of the Mason property becoming a major land owner in the area.
35. Since the Whipples became prominent in its history, a bit of information on early New Hampshire is in order. It received its first colonists in the spring of 1623 when David Thompson with a small company founded a fishing settlement and trading post at Odiorne's Point (now Rye). It took the name of Piscataqua from the river on which it was located. Thompson was living in Boston in 1626 indicating it didn't flourish. Captain John Mason's patent included all the country lying between the Merrimack and Piscataqua rivers as far back as 60 miles. A former Governor of

Newfoundland, Mason is known as the founder of New Hampshire which was named after Hampshire, a shire of England. In 1630, Capt. Walter Neal was sent to govern Mason's province. Soon other colonists followed. Four townships — Portsmouth, Northam, Hampton, and Exeter—were laid out during Neal's three year reign. Humphrey Chadbourne began the settlement at Portsmouth in 1631. Samuel Adams Drake, *The Making of New England 1580-1643*, Charles Scribner's Sons, (New York, 1920). 130-36.

36. Massachusetts and Plymouth agreed on their joint boundary in 1639 when commissioners from both colonies met at Scituate for that purpose. Israel Stoughton and John Endicott represented Massachusetts. See William Bradford, *History of Plymouth Plantation 1620-1647*, 315, for the text of the agreement.

37. English Civil War—The Civil War began in 1642. Colonial Commissioners were named by the Long Parliament but conducted little business. The Earl of Warwick was appointed Governor-in-Chief of all the American plantations in 1643 and was supposed to submit important matters for consideration to a House Committee but the Parliamentary government was so burdened it ignored colonial problems.

38. Massachusetts Lost Its Charter—On 21 June the Lord Keeper made a decree vacating the Charter giving colonial authorities until the autumn term to contest the action. They could not act within the allotted time so on 23 October the final judgement was entered, despite a motion for a stay of proceedings. Soon after Charles II died and James II succeeded 6 February 1685. William H. Whitmore, Record Commissioner, *The Colonial Laws of Massachusetts*, Reprinted from the editions of 1672, with the supplements through 1686, 2 vols. Rockwell and Churchill, City Printers, (Boston, 1890). vol. 1, 130.

39. From the time the news reached Boston, the colonial government was provisional. Simon Bradstreet and Thomas Danforth were chosen Governor and Deputy Governor but the General Court conducted little business. Andros arrived at Boston December 20. Whitmore. 131.

40. Sir Edmond Andros—Responsible only to King James II.

41. Land Granted with full rights—However, many restrictions were imposed. The landowner was not free to use his grant in any manner that suited his fancy.

42. Charles M. Andrews. 86.

43. Deputy to the General Court—Beginning in 1640, John Whipple of Ipswich served in this capacity for nine non-consecutive terms.

44. Owners of mills and farm-houses owning dwelling-houses were exempt. Their "home lots" ranged from five to 20 acres.

45. Most farms ranged from 50 to 200 acres. With few exceptions, the maximum acreage assigned to a person was 300. After 1650, virtually no lots were voted to newcomers.

46. Mastiff—any of a breed of large, powerful, smooth-coated dog with hanging lips and drooping ears; formerly used for hunting and as watchdogs.

47. The fine for not complying was 1 shilling each month.

48. Shilling—a British money of account and silver coin. Its symbol is /. A penny is 1/12th of a shilling. A pence is the plural of penny. A pound is equal to 20 shillings. Its symbol is £.

49. Trapping Wolves—One method was to wrap four mackerel hooks with wool, dip in melted tallow until it was the size of an egg, lay it beside a dead carcass, and hope a wolf would swallow it.

50. The bounty rose to £4 in 1689 for all wolves killed within two-and-a-half miles of the Meeting House. A bounty on foxes was effective with 70 killed in 1678. By 1800, few remained.

51. In 1990, Alaska and Minnesota were the only states with a wolf population. They were later introduced into Yellowstone National Park.
52. Drams—A small drink of alcoholic liquor.
53. The innkeeper "shall not suffer any unlawful play or games in said house, garden, orchard, or elsewhere, especially by men servants or apprentices, common laborers, idle persons or shall suffer any town inhabitants to be in said house drinking or tippling on Saturday night after sunset or on Sabbath day, not wittingly or willingly admit or receive...any person notoriously defamed of for theft, incontinency, or drunkenness...nor keep or lodge there any strange person above one day and one night together, without notice thereof, first given to such justice or selectman..." Thomas Franklin Waters, *Ipswich in the Massachusetts Bay Colony*, Vol. II, The Ipswich Historical Society, Newcomb & Gauss, Printers, (Salem, 1917).53.
54. Criminal Code—Included celebrating Christmas. In May 1659 the General Court ordered that whoever observes "any such day as Christmas by forbearing of labor, by feasting," shall pay 5/ for each trespass. It forbade card and dice games at the same time, imposing the same penalty. Felt, *Ecclesiastical History*, 207.
55. Capital Crimes—Piracy, rioting, kidnaping, robbery, selling arms to the Indians, and conspiracy were also capital offenses.
56. Mosaic Code—The writing and principles attributed to Moses.
57. Felt, Vol. 1, 589.
58. Crimes—Among these were profanity, Sabbath breaking, speaking ill of preachers or officers, and being drunk.
59. Pillory—A devise consisting of a board with holes for the head and hands, in which petty offenders were locked and exposed to public scorn.
60. Stocks—A heavy wooden frame with holes for confining an offenders's ankles and sometimes his wrists.
61. The Winthrop fleet brought about 840 emigrants with 240 cows and 60 horses. They embarked on 11 ships, sailing in three detachments from Plymouth, Yarmouth, and Southampton and arrived off the coast of Massachusetts in May, June, and July. While relatively well-equipped, there was a scarcity of food. Two-hundred returned to England and another 200 died of sickness by December. The need to grow their own food supply caused many to leave Salem to settle at Boston, Charlestown, and Newtown (Cambridge). Within a year there were eight separate settlements functioning with a rigid scrutiny of individual lives and habits, preventing any possibility of democracy or personal liberty. Massachusetts' population was 506 in 1630, 8,932 in 1640, 14,037 in 1650, 20,082 in 1660, 30,000 in 1670, 39,752 in 1680, 49,504 in 1690, 55,951 in 1700, and 235,308 in 1770.
62. General Court—Comprised of a Governor, Deputy Governor, and 18 Assistants elected annually. Thus, an oligarchy (government in which the ruling power belongs to a few persons), holding office during good behavior, obtained the power to govern more than a thousand settlers. This was contrary to the Charter and in conflict with the inherited idea that laws should be made and taxes levied in an Assembly of Representatives chosen at periodic intervals. Five-sixth of the population were denied the right to vote or hold office. Hardly a fifth of Massachusetts settlers were professed Christians which affirms that religious conviction were not the only motive to immigrate. Both John Whipple Sr. and Jr. were freemen and participated in government. In 1691 Massachusetts abolished religious qualifications and gave the colony franchise to all with a freehold estate of *f*2 a year or *f*40 in personality. The local franchise was given to those with a taxable estate of *f*20.
63. 1632—The year young John Whipple settled in Dorchester, Mass.

64. Selectmen—They levied taxes, divided lands, and chose officers to promote the general welfare by providing for the care of the poor, built and repaired roads and bridges, licensed businesses, regulated prices, determined land use, funded schools, etc.

65. The minister, who was the most powerful man in the community, believed God could and did intervene directly in nature, and did not believe that nature obeys regular laws which could be discovered through experiment and the use of man's reason. By the end of 1638, a gradually widening estrangement found Puritan leaders in England almost as hostile to the ruling oligarchy in Massachusetts as were King Charles and Archbishop Laud. The development of intolerant theocracy and growth in the power and influence of ministers was profoundly distasteful to English leaders. They saw a colonial religious spirit deeply tinged with fanaticism, the minister's power excessively exalted, and clerical rule wielded with a ruthless dogmatism and a hard logic that was fatal to compromise or tolerance.

66. Indictments.

67. Oath of Allegiance—Revised on 14 May 1634 from the original. John Whipple took the oath 13 May 1640. Nathaniel B. Shurtleff, ed., *Records of Massachusetts,* Vol 1 1628-1641. Boston: 1853, 376.

68. *Essex Antiquarian*, "Legal Qualifications of Voters in Massachutes," Vol. 12., No. 4, October 1908, 146.

69. Resident's Oath—Authorized by the General Court in 1634.

70. Taxable.

71. Whitmore, Vol. 2, 163.

72. By 1644, the transition to Commonwealth was complete. The officers, originally intended to serve as President and Board of Directors of a joint stock corporation, were now Governor and Executive Council and Upper House and Superior Court of Justice elected annually by freemen who were originally company stockholders but not holders of a franchise. A new representative body, the House of Deputies, had been created to exercise the legislative rights of freemen. The Assistants, with their combined power of upper chamber, Court of Appeals, and Executive Council, were the most powerful part of the government. Although 10 to 15 were elected annually, only 35 new names appear in 48 years. Winthrop was Governor or Assistant for 19 years when he died; John Endicott Assistant or Assistant Governor for 23 years and Governor for 10 more when he died; Simon Bradstreet became Governor after 50 years on the Board of Assistants and then elected and reelected Governor nine times.

73. Massachusetts made no attempt to establish Manors as did the proprietors of Carolina, Maryland, and New York.

74. Elections of Magistrates for Life—The freemen promptly repudiated this doctrine by electing Thomas Dudley Governor in 1634.

75. The General Court—The supreme judicial as well as the supreme legislative assembly.

76. Today we have judges to check the mistakes and injustices of elected bodies. In 1635, the Deputies felt it necessary to set up a body of law to curb the whims and injustices of judges. The Magistrates operated with complete discretion as to which laws and punishments in the Bible should apply and be imposed and it was a matter of common observation that they were clever at finding exactly what they wanted so their discretion was the real law.

77. The General Court was busy with the Pequot War and the Anne Hutchinson case in 1637.

78. For Ward's biography, see John Ward Dean, *Memoir of Nathaniel Ward*, (1868).

79. *Body of Liberties*—From the preamble: The free fruition of such liberties immunities, and privileges as humanity, civility, and Christianity call for as due to every man in his place and proportion without impeachment and infringement hath ever been and ever will be the tranquility and stability of churches and commonwealths. And the denial or deprival thereof, is the disturbance if not the ruin of both. We hold therefore our duty and safety whilst we are about the further establishing of this government to collect and express all such freedoms as for present we foresee may concern us, and our posterity after us, and to ratify them with our solemn consent. We do therefore this day religiously and unanimously decree and confirm these following rights, liberties, and privileges concerning our churches and civil state to be respectively, impartially, and inviolably enjoyed and observed, throughout our jurisdiction forever.

No man's life shall be taken away, no man's honor or good name shall be stained, no man's person shall be arrested, restrained, banished, dismembered, nor any ways punished, no man shall be deprived of his wife or children, no man's goods or estate shall be taken away from him, nor any way damaged under color of law or countenance of authority, unless it be by virtue or equity of some express law of the country warranting the same, established by a General Court and sufficiently published, or in case of the defect of a law in any particular case by the word of God. Morrison, 230-31

80. In the Old Testament, wickedness or worthlessness as an evil force; in the New Testament, Satan.
81. Rights of Brute Creatures—"No man shall exercise any tyranny or cruelty towards any brute creatures which are usually kept for man's use."
82. Morrison, 250-53.
83. The right of petition was not secured until the Bill of Rights of 1689.
84. Beginning in 1640—Not only was money scarce but the value of grain and livestock was reduced by 75%. Merchants refused to barter and would only sell for cash. Noting the high level of debt and shortage of money, the General Court ordered in 1640 that, upon execution for debts past, the officers were to take land, houses, corn, cattle, fish, or other commodities, and deliver the same in full satisfaction to the creditor at such prices as three referees shall decide. In May 1641, the depression in produce and livestock, and high wages caused the General Court to order wages paid to servants, laborers, and mechanics be lowered and required them to take pay in the form of commodities. Felt, 1:420, 427.
85. Long Island—In the summer of 1641, families from Ipswich and Lynn went to investigate and found "a very commodious place for plantations." The Dutch governor offered land on fair terms and promised the same civil and ecclesiastical liberties. The Massachusetts General Court summoned the leaders to a meeting and persuaded them they should "not strengthen the Dutch, our doubtful neighbors," so they remained. Hosmer, 2:35.
86. The United Colonies of New England—Each colony retained its independence but bound itself to assist the others in both war and peace as mutual interest might demand. No central government was established, each colony managed its own affairs.
87. Cooper—One who makes or repairs barrels and casks.
88. Curriers—One who prepared tanned leather by soaking, scraping, cleaning, beating, etc.
89. Glaziers—One who cuts glass and sets it in windows, etc.
90. Tallow Chandler—A maker of candles.
91. One who mends pots, pans, etc.

92. Tinker—A wedge-shaped cleaving tool with a handle set into the blade at right angles to the back.
93. The cod was so important as a source of wealth it was adopted as Massachusetts' symbol and hung in the Chamber of Representatives at an early date.
94. Commons—Land owned by the proprietors in common. One of John Whipple's first assignments after arriving in Ipswich was as "keeper of a cow common."
95. Branding Marks—Made by branding or cutting the hair or slitting or notching one of the ears. Each owner had a different mark.
96. Pillion—A cushion attached behind the saddle for an extra rider.
97. Calash—A light carriage with a hood and low wheels.
98. Curricle—An open two-wheeled carriage drawn by a span of horses.
99. Citizen Militia—Comprised of males 14 and older.
100. Commissariat—Food supply.
101. Pequots—Lead by chief Sassacus who had about 1,000 fighting men. This was known as the Pequot War.
102. Hosmer, 2:76-79.
103. 1675-76—By this time there were several hundred Indians living in different communities who had embraced Christianity. Known as the Praying Indians, they still weren't trusted by the whites. In August 1675, the Governor and Council ordered all friendly Indians residing at Natick, Punquapog, Nashobah, Wamesit, and Hassanamessit not to go beyond one mile from the town center. Those not residing in these five towns were ordered to move to one of them. Thus, the English prevented the Christian Indians from hunting, looking after their cattle and swine, gathering their corn, working for whites, and subjected them to much suffering for lack of food. This is one of many instances in which Indians, who had chosen the religion of the colonists, were unrighteously suspected and badly treated.
104. Fortunately, King Philip's War occurred before the first French and Indian War. Like the Pequot War, the King Philip War is illustrative of the irrepressible conflict between the whites and the Indians and was a desperate effort by the Indians to preserve their hunting grounds and resist the attempt of the English to impose their civilization on them. Among their many grievances were being forced to cede valuable lands for a farthing, being subjected to fines, imprisonment, and forced labor for petty infractions of the law, being required to surrender their firearms on the slightest suspicion of hostility, not being able to prevent the settler's cattle from consuming their cornfields. In Connecticut, Pequots were not allowed to hunt, fish, or carry firewood on Sunday. If caught drunk they were sentenced to 12 days labor, half of which went to the accuser.
105. Jernegan, 151.
106. Massachusetts was still offering bounties for Indian scalps in the early 1700s. In 1703 Rev. Solomon Stoddard of Northampton urged the use of dogs "to hunt Indians as they do bears." Even women were scalp hunters. Hannah Dustin of Haverhill was paid *f*50 for her grisly work.
107. Hostile Tribes—The Iroquois were an exception.
108. In 1641, a trading company chartered to deal with the Indians in fur and wampum was required to redeem the college's wampum "provided they were not obliged to take more than *f*25 at any one time." Dow, 167.
109. Clipped—Part of the coin was cut out or trimmed.
110. According to Dow, a few genuine N. E. coins existed in 1935.
111. Part of the precious metal was removed by washing.
112. Pine Tree Coins—The act did not specify a pine and coin collectors have found

three different Massachusetts shillings: the willow tree, the oak tree, and the pine tree. Each denominations in the willow and oak types are from three to six different dies. There are at least 27 varieties of the pine tree coin. While differing considerably in diameter, all coins of the same denomination contain the same amount of silver. Morison, 150-51.

113. Paper Money—The term of these notes was 20 years. Instead of receiving coin at that time, the bearer might have to take cast iron, bayberry wax, leather, cordwood, or other articles of trade.

114. Imagine to have to keep in mind the relative values of bills of old tenor, with silver at 6/8, or middle tenor; or new tenor firsts at 6/8 but passing current at 7/8; or new tenor seconds, all of which were laboring under fluctuating but constantly increasing rates of depreciation, and also remembering Connecticut bills of new tenor at 8/. And Rhode Island bills at 6/9 an oucne, and also £110,000 worth of private bills of the issue of 1733, which were worth a third more than the Colony bills, and also £120,000 in notes issued in 1740, "on a silver basis," to stifle the land bank and equivalent to cash, and in addition "public bills of the four promises at 29/. an ounce," whatever that means. Malcolm Storer, "Pine Tree Shillings and other Colonial Money," *Old Time New England*, Oct. 1929. Parliament reimbursed Massachusetts nearly $1 million in 1749 for expenses incurred in the expedition against Louisburg. This money was used to redeem outstanding paper bills at the rate of 10 in paper to one in cash. The next year old tenor ceased to be lawful money.

115. By the Treaty of Utrecht in 1713. Acadia is known as Nova Scotia today.

116. Rum was made out of the molasses. The better grades were sold in the Catholic countries of southern Europe for specie or manufactured goods.

117. Houses—The prosperity of some was attested to by two story homes with an upper section jutting out a foot or so over the lower and hipped or gambrel roofs. Some of the greater ones had one or two peaks on each side forming small chambers. They were framed of white oak, with windows from two-and-a-half to three feet long, one-and-a-half to two feet wide, the panes diamond shaped set in lead lines. They opened outwardly on hinges. Gambrel roof—a roof with two slopes on each of two sides, the lower steeper than the upper.

118. The Hall—It would be known as the kitchen today.

119. Early Ipswich house—It was 16 feet long by 14 feet wide (244 square feet) with a chamber floor "finished summer and joists, a cellar floor with joists finished, the roof and walls clapboarded on the outside, the chimney framed without daubing to be done with hewn timber."

120. Twenty to 30 cords of wood were burned annually. It was 1784 before peat began to used for fuel.

121. Matthew Whipple's best feather bed, bolster, and nine pillows weighed 106 pounds, a suggestion of solid comfort.

122. Settee—A seat or a bench with a back, usually for two or three people.

123. Jack—Fastened above the fireplace, it was connected with the spit by a belt. It had a rachet within its drum next to the large lower cog-wheel and worked upon being wound. Jacks were in common use until 1790 when they were replaced by tin kitchens. A tin kitchen was a tin cover placed on the hearth over the roast with the side next to the fire open. The cover collected the heat and applied it to all sides of the meat.

124. Pot hooks were short pieces of small-sized iron rod, bent at each end, to form hooks.

125. Trammels were similar to pot hooks, but longer, and made to shut together by slid-

ing, so their length could be changed at will. In the earliest days, trammels were placed far up the chimney, when there was no crane, and supported by a bar of iron placed across the flue.

126. Skillet—Small kettles or boilers.

127. Ovens were flat on the bottom, arched above, and quite deep.

128. Peal—A long shovel-like tool used to move items in and out of the oven.

129. Cooking stoves were first advertised for sale in 1820. The brand was the Lawrence & Mellen. The ad claimed the "fire passes entirely around so that they bake perfectly even in every part of the oven." At the same time Frothingham & Cross were selling the Pierpont Doric stove which used coal as a fuel. In 1841 the firm was selling Chilson's Improved Yankee Baker. Three years later Dr. Beriah Douglass' Patent Air-Tight cooking stove was advertised as saving "half the fuel consumed by other stoves." See the *Essex Antiquarian*, Vol. II, No. 12, December 1898, 1983-86 for a discussion of early methods of cooking.

130. The definition of most of the items in endnote 131 is from Joseph B. Felt, *The Customs of New England*. New York: Burt Franklin, c. 1853; reprinted 1970.

131. The dripping pan was used in conjunction with the jack and spit to catch fat from the bear, deer, and wild fowl as it roasts; the powdering tub was a great tub used for salting meat; a keeler was a small shallow tub used for domestic purposes, as dishwashing; a bucking tub was used to steep or soak cloth in lye or caustic soda, as in bleaching cotton thread, etc.; frying pans were also called spiders, their long handle accommodating the cooks who held them over the fire. Frying pans are very ancient, being mentioned in Leviticus, chapter ii, v. 7. A grid-iron was a framework of metal bars or wires on which to broil meat or fish; a trivet is a 3-legged stand that held pots, kettles, etc. over or near a fire; a skimmer is any utensil used in skimming liquids; chafing dishes were made of iron, they held coals, with a grate at the top, and were placed on the hearth or table and used to keep food at a desired temperature (frequently used for venison); a posnet is a little basin or porringer. It is filled with porridge and broth and used at breakfast and supper. Haircloth is a cloth woven from horsehair; tiffany is a thin gauze of silk or muslin; a latten is the ladle, skimmer, spoon, colander, candlestick, skillet, and kettle; made of copper and zinc. They were kept well-polished when not in use. Trenchers were wooden boards or platters on which to carve or serve meat. Bottles were manufactured in England as early as 1558 and were made in Salem, Mass. in 1639. Salt cellars were usually placed in the middle of the table. Guests who were seated toward the head of the table were of higher station than those who were seated toward the foot. Spoons were made of "pan-brass and arsenicum" or of copper and auripigmentum. They were not considered wholesome because of a reaction when in contact with other substances.

132. A welt is a strip of leather stitched into the seam between the sole and upper of a shoe to strengthen the joining. Neat is leather from an ox or cow.

133. Children's shoes sold for 9 pence a pair in 1651; an expensive pair of men's shoes were 5 shillings, women's shoes 3 shillings 8 pence in 1670.

134. Bushkin—A high shoe or half boot with thick soles.

135. Patten—Made of ring with an iron ring on the sole.

136. Clogs—Like pattens without the ring. The were advertised for 15 pence a pair in 1717.

137. Galoshes—Made of thick leather and open at the heel and served the same purpose as pattens and clogs.

138. Fine quality kid gloves sold for 3 shillings 6 pence a pair in 1717.

139. Girdles—To carry a sword and gird the clothes.

140. Doublets took the place of coats. What few coats there were reached below the knee. They had no outside pockets and many held large cuffs with wide sleeves.
141. Leather—Usually sheep and deerskin.
142. The doublet was seldom mentioned after 1673 and was replaced by the vest or waistcoat
143. Persons of rank and property wore silver and gold buttons on their doublets.
144. Waistcoats—They were short in 1660, began lengthening in 1684, and were very long by 1714.
145. Spatterdashes—A long legging formerly worn to protect the stocking or trouser leg in wet weather.
146. Gaiters—A covering for the instep and ankle, and sometimes the calf or the leg; spat or legging.
147. Wife of Deputy Governor Samuel Symonds. The family arrived in Ipswich in 1638 where he began his public career as town clerk.
148. Sarcenet—A soft silk coth, formerly used for ribbons, linings, etc.
149. Taffity—A fine, rather stiff fabric of silk with a sheen.
150. Cambric Whisks—A very fine thin linen.
151. Chamlet—An obsolete form of camlet which is a rich stuff used as material for dress, more costly and finer than cameline. Cameline—originally made of silk and camel's hair, but later of silk and wool.
152. Lustre—A glossy fabric of cotton and wool.
153. Tortoise fans—The hard, mottled yellow-and-brown shell of turtles and tortoises, used in inlaying and, especially formerly, in making combs, fans, etc.
154. Gimp—A ribbon-like silk, worsted, or cotton braided fabric, sometimes stiffened with wire, used to trim garments, furniture, etc.
155. The author has been unable to find a definition for the word sarindin.
156. Rev. John Cotton preached against veils as an indication of more submission to men than was tolerated by the gospel.
157. Colors of Hoods—Black for winter, green for summer.
158. Cloaks were eventually succeeded by Jersey coats, shawls, and pelisses. A Jersey coat was a close fitting, knitted upper garment; a pelisse is a long cloak or outer coat made, lined, or trimmed with fur.
159. Rev. Nathaniel Ward returned to England from Ipswich and wrote "Methinks it would break the hearts of Englishmen to see so many good English women imprisoned in French cages, peering out of their hood holes."
160. The General Court frequently passed ordinances against slashes for showing too much of the neck and arms.
161. Pinchbeck is an alloy of copper and zinc used to imitate gold in jewelry.
162. Funeral rings were usually enameled in black or black and white with the initials of the deceased and sometimes decorated with a death's head or a framed lock of hair.
163. Paste is a hard, brilliant glass containing oxide of lead, used in making artificial gems.
164. Collars were an ornamental band, chain, or circlet worn around the neck.
165. Carnelian is a red variety of chalcedony used in jewelry. Chalcedony is a precious stone; a kind of quartz that has the luster of wax and is variously colored, usually grayish or milky.
166. "On the Importance of the Obstetric Art," *William and Mary Quarterly*, Vol. 34, Third Series, No. 2, July 1977, 427-28.
167. A winding sheet is a cloth in which a dead body is wrapped for burial.
168. *William and Mary Quarterly*, Vol. 34, 428.

169. Mulled Wine—Wine that is heated, sweetened, and flavored with spices.
170. Until quickening, i.e. when the fetus first begins to move.
171. Trimester—A period or term of three months.
172. How did such a striking reversal happen? One of the forces was the medical profession. Up to the mid-nineteenth century, anyone could become a doctor. Then the university-educated medical elite formed the American Medical Association and began lobbying against abortions performed by anyone except licensed physicians. They claimed that abortions depended on scientific and medical facts only understood by physicians. From then on, women had virtually nothing to say about terminating their own pregnancies.
173. Or interrupt the minister "in his preaching or charging him falsely with an error."
174. Truthfulness was in the Massachusetts penal code. A man who stated "seven or eight liars" were in the church and to qualify for attendance, one had to "lie soundly" was sentenced to the stocks for an hour-and-a-half. Even family matters were regulated. When a wife called her husband "an old Devil," both were gagged and stood back-to-back in the market place. The first penalty for lying was a fine of 10 shillings or up to two hours in the stocks, the second, 20 shillings or being whipped on the naked body for up to two hours, the third, 40 shillings or more whipping.
175. Indians were ordered in 1646 not to "pawpaw or perform outward worship of their false gods or to the devil" on a penalty of a fine of *f*5.
176. Meaning interpreters were required.
177. Thomas Cartwright (1533-1603), a a Cambridge lecturer, writer, and authority on the fundamentals of Puritanism, taught, emphasized, and insisted that the Bible was intended by God to be a perfect statement of how He was to be worshiped and how men were to live. "All things pertaining to the kingdom of heaven, whether in matter of doctrine or government," are set forth in the Bible, he wrote. "The Lord God, determining to set before our eyes a perfect form of his church, is both able to do it and hath done it." Cartwright found it natural that God was so explicit since it is "the virtue of a good law to leave as little undermined" as possible. Emerson, 20.
178. Adam's Disobedience—In eating the fruit of the Tree of Knowledge.
179. Salvation through grace did not absolve man from the performance of religious and moral duties, even though these would not save his soul.
180. Regenerate—Spiritually reborn.
181. If you had cried Puritan! Puritan! at a stout fellow embarking for New England, he would have knocked you down after first saying a fast prayer for forgiveness. They called themselves "the People of God" or simply Christians. It was the end of the century before they accepted the term for themselves and then came to glory in it. Morrison, 61.
182. A covenant is an agreement among members of a church to defend and maintain its doctrines, polity, faith, etc. Ecclesiastical polity of New England was to be Independent or Congregational polity—each local church composed of converted Christians only, to be in nearly all particulars independent of other churches, and to be bound together by a covenant framed for and adopted by the individual church. While independent, the churches were to help each other, including admonishment of an erring church. They also provided for the General Synods of all the churches. Massachusetts' churches called four Synods: The Cambridge Synod of 1637, dealing with the antinomians; the Cambridge Synod of 1646-48 and Synods in 1662 and 1679-80. Polity is a specific form of church government. A Synod is an Assembly or Council of Churches or church officials.

183. Church membership—Details of dogma were not considered important for membership. The vital considerations were a conversion experience and submission to the covenant.

184. The Puritans found the covenant all through the Old Testament. Abraham's family entered into a "church estate" by a covenant with Abraham; the "church in the wilderness" led by Moses was a church formed by covenant.

185. Emerson, 48.

186. Each church developed its own covenant so words might differ from church to church.

187. John Whipple of Ipswich became a Ruling Elder.

188. Deaconesses were usually widows of three score years.

189. If there were no Ruling Elders, the ordination was performed by leading members of the church.

190. Excommunicated—Barred from communion.

191. After necessary preliminary statements, the pastor solemnly, in the name of Jesus Christ, delivered the obstinate and sinning member to Satan for "the destruction of the flesh and the saving of the soul in the day of the Lord Jesus."

192. They were particularly severe with Quakers. On 14 Oct. 1656 the General Court passed an anti-Quaker law identifying them as "a cursed sect of heretics... Who... speak and write blasphemous opinions, despising government and the order of God in Churches and Commonwealth, speaking evil of dignities, reproaching and reviling Magistrates and ministers, seek to turn the people from the Faith and gain proselytes to their pernicious ways... doth hereby order, that the Captain of every vessel, who brings any persons of such a denomination or other blasphemous heretics into this jurisdiction shall pay £100 unless he was ignorant of their being such, and he shall have them carried back at his own charge... that Quakers coming into their boundaries be confined in a House of Correction, be severely whipped, kept constantly at work, and debarred from conversations with other persons." They also ordered a fine of £5 on all Quaker books and for defending the Quaker doctrine a fine of 40/ for the first offense, £4 for the second, and imprisonment till banished for the third. Felt. 2:149.

193. The non-church member was taxed for support of the church regardless of faith, or of no faith, and was forced, under penalty, to attend services.

194. Episcopalians were excluded from government by requiring freemen to be members of the Church of Christ. In 1662, Charles II (1660-85) ordered the law modified and in 1664 the General Court ordered "... henceforth all presenting a Certificate, under the hands of the ministers or minister of the place where they dwell, that they are orthodox in religion, & not vicious in their lives; also a Certificate, under the hands of the Selectmen of that place, or of the major part of them, that they are freeholders, & are for their own proper estate rateable to the county... to be full value 10s or that they are in full communion with some church amongst us, it shall be the liberty of all & every person or persons, being 24 years of age, householders, and settled inhabitants... [to be admitted] the freedom of this Commonwealth..." Charles M. Andrews, *Pilgrims and Puritans*, New Haven: Yale University Press, 1919, 147-48.

195. Evils—Mostly committed "by the younger sort," according to lawmakers.

196. Because goods were scarce, some merchants took advantage of the situation by charging excessive prices. In November 1639, Mr. Robert Keaine, a Boston shopkeeper, son-in-law of Gov. Thomas Dudley, and brother-in-law to Rev. John Wilson, was charged, convicted, and fined £200 by the General Court for this practice. Half the fine was due immediately with the other half to be reconsidered by the

next General Court. The Deputies set the fine at £200, the Magistrates at £100, the latter being more lenient because there was no law controlling profits and it was common practice in other countries. The Boston church debated the issue with some wanting him excommunicated. Considering his liberal support of the church, the majority decided on an admonishment. Governor Dudley put the lowest proposed fine to a vote at the May 1640 General Court session. Since the Deputies had called for the higher fine, they charged the Governor with a breach of order, angering the Governor to a point where the Deputies took his response as menacing and offensive. Hosmer, 2:4.

Keaine's action resulted in the following rules for trading developed by Rev. John Cotton:

1. A man may not sell above the current price, that is such a price as is usual in the time and place, and another (who knows the worth of the commodity) would give for it, if he had occasion to use it; as that is called current money, which every man will take, etc.

2. When a man loseth in his commodity for want of skill, etc. he must look at it as his own fault or cross, and therefore must not lay it upon another.

3. Where a man loseth by casualty of sea or etc., it is a loss cast upon himself by providence, and he may not ease himself of it by casting it upon another; for so a man should seem to provide against all providences, etc. that he should never lose; but where there is a scarcity of the commodity, there men may raise their price; for now it is a hand of God upon the commodity, and not the person.

4. A man may not ask for any more for his commodity than his selling price, as 'Ephrom to Abraham, the land is worth thus much. Hosmer, 1:315-18.

197. Chas. M. Andrews, 172.

198. In general the first generation considered the second to be frivolous. The Massachusetts General Court noted the growth of "sensuality" and referred to "the sad face on the rising generation." To preserve what they had created, fathers kept their children from power as long as possible. Sons had a long wait for their inheritance and independence. Average marriage ages were high: 27 for men, 25 for women during the second half of the seventeenth century. Another limiting factor was the church admission policy. Most men of the second generation "could not experience a psychologically convincing conversion so long at their fathers were still alive to provide the thunderous comparisons from the 1630s. Emerson, 83-84.

The ancient practice of entailment was also a limiting factor. The general custom was to pass on real estate by entailment so it could not be sold by heirs. This was a carry-over of an ancient custom whereby estates were kept in one name with the eldest son getting most of what the father left. There was an aversion to dividing what had been inherited or earned among several, feeling a division would not support a family. If the amount of real estate was limited, the parent would give the eldest son a double portion instead of entailing it. The custom continued until after the Revolution.

199. Shepard was author of *The Sincere Convert.* Twenty editions were published between 1641 and 1812 including an edition by Thomas Mabb published in London in 1664.

200. Shepard had been forbidden to preach in England. While pastor at Earle's Colne near Coggeshall, Essex, he was summoned to London 16 Dec. 1630 by Bishop Laud. The Bishop claimed to have been "more cheated and equivocated with by some of my (Shepard's) malignant faction than ever was man by Jesuits and called me 'a prating coxcomb!' and pronounced his sentence thus: 'I charge you that you

neither preach, read, marry, bury, or exercise any ministerial function in any part of my diocese, for if you do, and I hear of it, I will be upon your back and follow you where ever you go, in any part of the Kingdom, and so everlastingly disenable you.'" McGiffert, 49.

201. Gates to Heaven—(1) the strait Gate of Humiliation. God saveth none but first he humbleth them. (2) The strait Gate of Faith: It is an easy matter to presume but hard to believe in Christ. (3) The strait Gate of Repentance. It is an easy matter for man to confess himself to be a sinner, and to cry to God for forgiveness until next time. But to have a bitter sorrow, and so to turn from all sin, and to return to God, and all the ways of God, which is true repentance indeed; this is hard. (4) The strait Gate of Opposition of Devils, the World, and a Man's own self, who knocks a man down when he begins to look toward Christ and Heaven.

202. Easy Ways to Heaven That Lead to Hell—Following are four of the nine ways: (1) Balaam's way of good wishes wherein people confess their ignorance and forgetfulness but thank God their hearts are good so God will accept the will for the deed. (2) The way of formality whereby men rest in the performance of most or all external duties without inward life. It is easy for a man to say a few prayers out of a devout book or to repeat prayers learned by heart as a child, or to report two or three short-winded wishes for God's mercy in the morning and at night. But men must prepare the heart by serious meditations of God and man's self. Before praying he must come to God with a bleeding, hunger-starved heart and wrestle with God, even if its an hour or two, for a blessing. (3) The way of sloth whereby God must do all. They would hear the word if God set up a pulpit at the ale-house door, or if He would always thunder they would always pray or if they become sick they pay God with good words and promises but once they get better they continue the old ways that lead to hell. (4) The way of moderation or honest discretion followed by the man who wants to please all. Since the Lord said those that live godly must suffer persecution it is not possible for such a person to find a way to heaven.

203. By the end of 1640, the 22 Massachusetts settlements were almost pure English stock with only an occasional Irishman, Jew, or Negro.

204. Class distinction was emphasized and dress indicated social prestige, rank, and breeding. When common people started to dress "above their station," the General Court in 1651 declared its "utter detestation and dislike" that people of "mean condition" would wear "gold or silver lace or buttons... allowable to persons of greater estate, or more liberal education."

205. The first instance of witchcraft delusions in New England is in Governor Winthrop's Journal of 1647. An unidentified person of Windsor was arraigned and executed at Hartford "for a witch." In 1648 the General Court indicted Margaret Jones of Charlestown for witchcraft, found her guilty, and hanged her. The evidence against her was: (1) She was found to have such a malignant touch, that persons she stroked or touched with any affection or displeasure were taken with deafness, vomiting, or other violent pains or sickness. (2) She practices physic, and her medicines of aniseed, liquors, etc. though harmless, had extraordinary violent effect. (3) She told those who would not use her physic they would never be healed, and accordingly their diseases and hurts continued, beyond the understanding of all physicians and surgeons. (4) Some things she foretold came to pass and she had knowledge of other things that she should not ordinarily have. (5) She had an apparent teat in her secret parts as fresh as if it had been newly sucked, but after it was viewed, upon a forced search, it was withered, and another began on the opposite side. (6) While in prison, a little child was seen in her arms and it vanished when the officer followed

it into another room. Winthrop wrote her behavior at the trial was intemperate; she lied notoriously and railed at the jury and witnesses. They day and hour she was executed thee was "a very great tempest at Connecticut which blew down many trees, etc." Hosmer, 2: 323, 324, 345.

206. Mather was then president of Harvard College

207. These sinners were the unsaved.

208. Jernegan, 415.

209. Wigglesworth was a 1651 Harvard graduate and minister at Malden, near Boston. From his diary (1653-57) we learn that his God was not very attractive. God visited him "with bodily weaknesses," and punished his spiritual "barrenness with public drought," and left him with a "hopeless, shiftless soul." His sins were not deeds but attitudes: pride, spiritual deadness, hardness of heart, unspecified fleshly lust. He was reminded of his sins by the "itch and biles breaking out so as to make me lame" and disturbed by "such unresistible torments of carnal lusts until the ejection of seed," his dreams and self pollution by night which my soul abhors and mourns for." After he married and fathered a child, his diary has fewer entries of this nature and eventually none. Emerson, 124.

210. Rev. John Wise—American clergyman, exponent of the democratic principles of modern Congregationalism. First Pastor at Chebacco, the second church in Ipswich (Harvard grad, ordained at Chebacco 12 Aug. 1683, died 8 April 1725). He was one of two Ipswich representatives in the Boston convention for reorganization of the colonial government after Andros was ousted. He opposed Increase and Cotton Mather and resisted the plan to place individual churches under the jurisdiction of an Association of Ministers. His opposition was presented in two pamphlets that carried great influece: *The Churches Quarrel Expoused* (1710) and *A Vindication of the Government of New England Churches* (1717). His expositions of church democracy were reissued and widely read before the American Revolution and again before the Civil War and his main principles were proclaimed in the Declaration of Independence. See biography by G. A. Cook, 1952. Reprinted 1967.

211. Jernegan, 400.

212. For information on Edwards see Perry Miller, *Jonathan Edwards*, New York, 1949.

213. Jernegan, 404-05.

214. Many of the revival preachers had a powerful—even hypnotic and mesmeric effect—on their listeners. The more common reactions were crying out, groaning, fainting, falling down, praying, exhorting, singing, laughing, jumping up and down, etc. "Some had fits, some fainted...(some) seeing other distressed, fell into deep distress under a conviction of sin and sense of divine wrath due to them." Jernegan, 410.

215. Rev. George Whitfield—In short, he was identifying the law of nature or natural rights with divine law.

216. Whitefield preached salvation was for all—the rich and poor, the wise and ignorant.

217. Jernegan, 412.

218. Some of the names indicating the division and parties representing the conservative and liberal positions on the revivals were; Old Lights and New Lights; Old Side and New Side; Regular and Separate.

219. The Great Awakening—It introduced the principle of self-determination, the right of a minority to break away from established authority for cause, and the principle of local democratic church government based on a majority vote of members in place of councils composed of the clergy. It brought the word of God to the people in their houses, barns, and open fields rather than in the pulpit of a church, stimulated sympathy for the common man, and helped to mitigate the evils of the inden-

tured servant and slavery systems. It gave impetus to the founding of colleges and "New Light" classical schools. Among others, Princeton was formed because of the movement. It stimulated the emotions and feelings of the people, preparing the way for the emotional aspects of the "Revolution, and made the popular churches—especially Presbyterian, Baptist, and Methodist—more liberal in politics while the Anglicans remained conservative.

220. Harvard was modeled after Emanuel College, Cambridge, England. While founded in 1636, classes began in 1638 with nine students. Admission was conditioned on an ability to read Cicero "or such like Latin authors extempore and make and speak true Latin in verse and prose... and decline perfectly the paradigm of nouns and verbs in the Greek tongue..." In its early years there was a heavy emphasis on languages. Greek and Hebrew were paramount with less attention to Aramaic, the language of Palestine and spoken by Jesus and his disciples, and Syriac, the ancient language of Syria, used from the third to the thirteenth century A.D. There were lectures, always in Latin, in mathematics, astronomy, logic, philosophy, Aristotelian metaphysics, ethics, physics, politics, rhetoric, history, geography, and the nature of plants. Students were expected to know the Bible well and to be able to analyze logically. Emerson, 103-04

In its 364 year history (from 1638), Harvard became an influence worldwide. George Starkey, class of 1646, was an alchemist, a living link with the medieval world. Ralph Waldo Emerson, class of 1821, was a great transcendentalist and distiller of ideas. Six U. S. Presidents are graduates: John and John Quincy Adams, Rutherford B. Hayes, Theodore and Franklin D. Roosevelt, and John F. Kennedy. It did not become co-educational until 1977 when it merged with Radcliffe. Most of the 29 Nobel prizes its faculty have won are in the sciences, medicine, and physiology. Charles W. Eliot, its president from 1869 to 1909, was one of the great reformers of American higher education. He abolished compulsory chapel and requirements in Latin and Greek and introduced the elective system of classes. Under Eliot it became one of the hardest schools to get into (only 16% of applicants were admitted) and one of the hardest to flunk out.

In 1644 Deputies and Elders of all towns were asked to use their influence to convince all families to contribute one peck of corn or 12d to the college. They were asked to solicit subscriptions to aid scholars in 1652 and in 1664 Ipswich was taxed *f*7 6s 7d for the college. Rev. Joseph Whipple of Hampton, N.H. was a 1720 graduate. Felt, 92-93.

221. Priests in Mexico had printing presses a century before Harvard obtained the first press in New England.

222. They were called Latin grammar schools.

223. Mensuration—The branch of mathematics dealing with the determination of length, area, or volume.

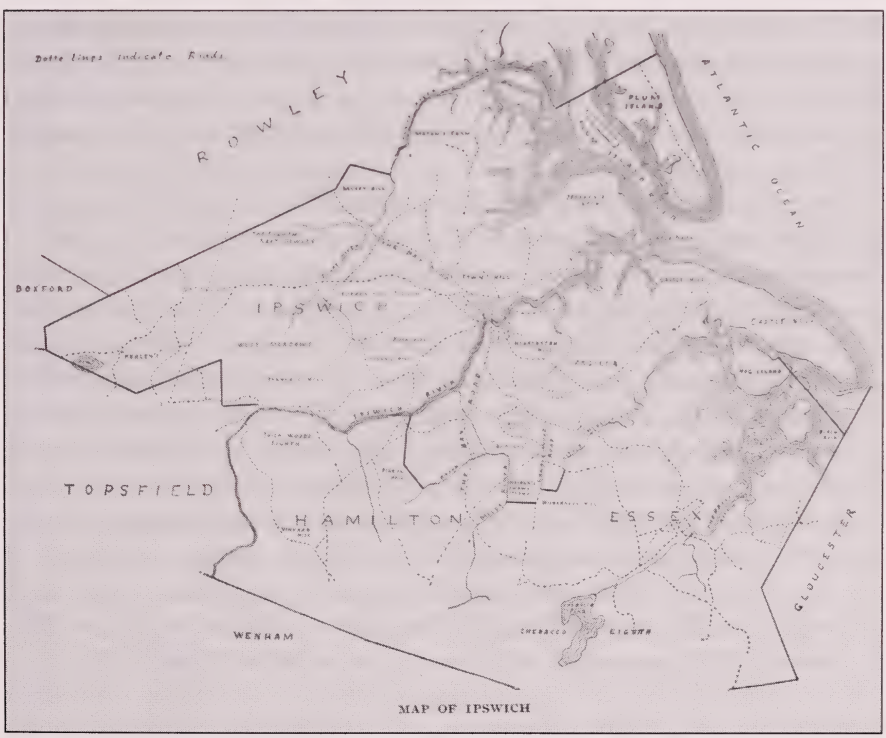
224. Number of Blacks—Approximately 200,000.

225. Because of religious intolerance and the scarcity of good cheap land, few non-English settled in New England.

226. William Penn and Benjamin Furley advertising Pennsylvania in Europe—They gave directions for the voyage over and claimed the colony had a perfect climate, cheap and rich land, high wages, and most of the valuable products of earth and waters. "Authentic Tidings," published in 1702, included 103 questions and answers on the voyage, supplies, Indians, land, animals, and settlements. Jernegan, 306.

IPSWICH AND HAMILTON, MASS.

Ipswich is located in Essex county, the most historic county in America. Its settlement began in 1623 and all of its 35 towns and cities were settled in that century. You will find these Essex county town names repeated in most all states: Amesbury, Andover, Beverly, Boxford, Bradford, Danvers, Essex, Georgetown, Gloucester, Groveland, Hamilton, Haverhill, Ipswich, Lawrence, Lynn, Lynnfield, Manchester, Marblehead, Merrimac, Metheun, Middleton, Nahant, Newbury, Newburyport, North Andover, Peabody, Rockport, Rowley, Salem, Salisbury, Saugus, Swampscott, Topsfield, Wenham, and West Newbury.



Map of Ipswich, Massachusetts.

NO ONE KNOWS when and where the first white man stepped on the shores of Ipswich, then known as Agawam but the Matthew and John Whipple families settled there in 1638. Capt. John Smith mentions it in his 1608 *History of Virginia* and when landing there in 1614[1] said, "this

place might content a right curious judgment; but there are many sands at the entrance of the harbor, and the worst is, it is imbayed too far from the deep sea. Here are many rising hills, and on their tops and descents are many corn fields and delightful groves. On the East is an Isle of two or three leagues in length; the one half plain march ground, fit for pasture, or salt ponds, with many fair high groves of mulberry trees and gardens. There is (sic) also oaks, pines, walnuts, and other wood to make this place an excellent habitation, being a good and safe harbor."[2]

Early Pilgrim explorers found Indians had cleared the land and planted corn. They called it this "Land of Promise" and upon returning to Plymouth with news of the pleasant Indian village, its good land, and rich fisheries, they debated whether to migrate. Squatters began to settle there after 1620 causing the Massachusetts Court of Assistants to send a warrant September 7, 1630 "to command those that are planted there forthwith to come away."

When the French seized the Pilgrim's trading house at Peneobscot and threatened to expel the English all along the coast, Governor Winthrop's son John, Jr., 27, and 12 others were sent to secure Agawam[3] in March 1633.[4] On March 4, 1634 the Court gave John Winthrop, John Humfry, and John Endicott,[5] power to grant land within four miles of the town to "persons as in equity they shall think meet."[6] Its first settlers gave it a prestige[7] that soon drew others of like quality, attracted by large tracts of open meadow and the large upland cleared by the Indians. It was made a town and named Ipswich[8] on August 5, 1634. Its rivers,[9] creeks, marshes, and chain of low hills along the seacoast offered protection from surprise attack. These safeguards, plus access by river and sea, and Salem within supporting distance, made early settlers feel secure. It was believed the French would not encourage hostility by the Tarratines Indians. But the English dared go no further into the wilderness at that time.

Even though on the frontier, it was one of the fastest growing plantations[10] and soon was second only to Boston in size and importance.[11] It enhanced its relationship with the Agawams by purchasing the land in 1638, the year Matthew and John Whipple arrived.[12] The deed from Musconominot,[13] Sagamore[14] of Agawam was recorded as follows:

> I, Musconominot, Sagamore of Agawam, do by these presents acknowledge to have received of Mr. John Winthrop the sum of twenty pounds in full satisfaction of all the rights, property, and claim I have or ought to have, unto all the lands lying and being in the Bay of Agawam, also Ipswich being so called now by the English, as well as all such lands which I formerly reserved unto my own use at Chebacco, as also all other lands belonging unto me in those parts of Mr. Dummers farm excepted only.

And I hereby relinquish all the rights, and interest, I have unto all the havens, rivers, creeks, and islands, hunting and fishings, with all the woods, swamps, timber, and whatsoever else, is or may be in or upon the said ground to me belonging, and I do hereby acknowledge to have received full satisfaction from the said John Winthrop for all former agreements touching the premises or any part of them. And I do hereby bind myself to make good the aforesaid bargain and sale unto the said John Winthrop, his heirs and assigns forever, and to secure him against the title and claim of all other Indians and nations whatsoever.

Witness my hand 28 June 1638. Musconominot his X mark.
Witnesses hereunto, John Jollife, Thomas Coytomore, James Downinge, Robert Hardinge.[15]

In November 1634, the freemen determined that "the length of Ipswich should extend westward unto [?] burying place, and eastward unto a cove of the river, unto the planting ground of John Perkins the elder. Beyond these limits, the land was held in common."[16] They also specified that "the neck of land adjoining Mr. Robert Coles extending unto the sea shall remain for common use unto the town forever." The neck where "the great hill standeth, which is known by the name of Castle Hill," was also reserved.[17]

Roads were cart-paths grown over with grass except for the wheel ruts. They were kept in repair by requiring all men to work on them yearly.[18] The main thorough-fare, High street, skirted the bank of the river out to the tillage lands on Manning's Neck, to the pastures on Jeffrey's Neck, to the level acres of salt marsh on one side and followed the western slope of Town Hill on the other. "The way to the Merrimack" Lane was renamed Hog Lane, later Brook Street and was the main road for eastern travel. The river[19] was crossed by a foot bridge in 1634 and South Main Street opened in 1646 when the cart bridge was built. Plots[20] were assigned for house-lots along streets and lanes. Tillage lands were apportioned in six and 12 acre lots and the great farms were on the town's outskirts.

The first reference to local government was February 20, 1636 when seven Selectmen[21] were chosen to serve for three months.[22] Their first action was to build a "humble" Meeting House,[23] grist mill and fish weir[24] on the river "about the falls" on condition half the fish be sold to the inhabitants at 5 shillings a thousand, and select a Burying Ground.[25] It was 1649 before a saw mill was built. Before that, trees were sawed into planks and boards by hand with a long saw by two men working in a saw-pit, one man standing below and one above the saw log. Clapboards and shingles were made by hand. Nails, hinges, and bolts were forged by blacksmiths. It was 1790 before cut nails were made.

In March 1645, the town voted to hire Robert Lord to "keep the streets clear of wood and timber under penalty 12d the load and as proportionable for more or less for lying or standing above three days in any of the streets or lanes." In 1652 it ordered "all dung-hills lying in the streets shall be removed by October 20 and from that time no dung-hills to be laid in the streets under the penalty of 10s."

As a precaution against surprise, every male over 18, including "sons, servants, and sojourners,"[26] had take turns at night watch. The streets were patroled from half an hour after sunrise to half an hour before sunrise. A Watch House, in which a fire was kept, was built[27] near the Meeting House. Those out after 10 p.m. were challenged to explain their business. Those whose answers failed to satisfy were liable to arrest and a night with the "Court of Guard."

Most men participated in military training monthly, July and August excepted. The colony had three regiments with Ipswich men in the second with Saugus, Salem, and Newbury. John Endicott of Salem was Commander, John Winthrop, Jr., Lieut. Colonel. In 1645 the General Court authorized local bands and "ye military company of Ipswich, Newbury, Rowley, Salisbury, and Hampton" was formed with liberty to assembly as often as they pleased in Ipswich, Newbury, and Rowley.

As the men assembled on the training field,[28] the lad of 14 stood side by side with the old greybeard who was obliged to train until the infirmities of age incapacitated him. Activities began with a prayer by the minister, there in his gown and bands. The roll was called in both fore and afternoon with every absence noted. The clerk inspected the equipment twice a year to make certain every soldier had a pound of powder, 20 bullets, two fathom of slow match, with musket, sword, bandoliers[29] and rest,[30] priming wire, a worm[31] and scourer.[32]

Relations with the Indians were both good and bad. There never was any problem with the Agawams but Ipswich men were employed in various actions against other tribes. On February 5, 1644, Musconominot, Cutshamakin, Josias, and Chicatobot[33] presented Governor Winthrop 30 fathoms[34] of wampum, and offered to submit to the English. Winthrop later wrote, "we now began to conceive hope that the Lord's time was at hand for opening a door of light and grace to those Indians."[35] On March 8, Musconominot and four other Sagamores put their tribes and possessions under the General Court and agreed to be instructed in the Christian religions by answering the following:

1. Will you worship the only true God, who made heaven and earth, and not blaspheme? Answer. We do desire to reverence the God of the English and to speak well of Him because we see He doth better

to the English than other gods do to others.

2. Will you cease from swearing falsely? Answer. We know not what swearing is.
3. Will you refrain from working on the Sabbath, especially within the bounds of Christian towns. Answer. It is easy to us, we have not much to do any day, and we can well rest on that day.
4. Will you honor your parents and your superiors? Answer. It is our custom to do so — for inferiors to honor superiors.
5. Will you refrain from killing any man without just cause and just authority? Answer. This is good, and we desire so to do.
6. Will you deny yourselves fornication, adultery, incest, rape, sodomy, buggery, or bestiality? Answer. Though some of our people do these things occasionally, yet we count them naught and do not allow them.
7. Will you deny yourself stealing? Answer. We say the same to this as to the sixth question.
8. Will you allow your children to learn to read the word of God, so that they may know God and worship Him in His own way? Answer. We will allow this as opportunity will permit, as the English live among us, we desire to do so.
9. Will you refrain from idleness? Answer. We will.

The Sagamores then gave the Court a gift of wampum and each received a red cloth coat of two yards and a pot of wine. Musconominot died sometime before June 18, 1658. His widow was granted the right "to enjoy that parcel of land which her husband had fenced in." The last Agawam Sagamore, he lived long enough to see his people on the edge of extinction. He was buried on Sagamore Hill with his gun and other valued implements. In a sacrilegious action, his grave was opened and his skull carried on a pole through the streets of Ipswich.[36]

In the Pequot War, 17 Ipswich men marched to Salem in April 1637 to join the little army formed there. Six more followed in May. On a rainy Sabbath in September 1642, 20 Ipswich soldiers joined an expedition against Passaconaway, a Pennacook and Sagamore of the Merrimack. The town experienced a general alarm December 19, 1645 and by that time, Capt. Daniel Denison had become so valuable a military leader the town agreed to pay him £24 7s annually contributed by 161 men.[37] He retained his local rank even after being named Major General of the colony. In September 1676, the town experienced constant Indian alarms and its surrounding area was a scene of desolation as houses were burned, crops destroyed, and many lives lost. The smoke could be seen from Town Hill and Castle Hill. In the eastern campaign that year, a 20 shilling bounty was offered for every Indian scalp and 40 shillings for every prisoner. Captives were apportioned among the soldiers as the spoils of war.[38]

Ipswich men made a notable military contribution to the colony. Daniel Denison became Commander-in-Chief of all colonial forces in 1653, Maj. Samuel Appleton played a key role in the first victorious campaign against the Indians in King Philip's War, saving several Connecticut towns and stopping the invasion of that colony. He was described as the ablest commander of the war. Capt. John Whipple was a prominent officer in the first company of troopers engaged in King Philip's War and commanded another company the following spring.

Trouble with the eastern Indians began June 27, 1689 when 23 were killed and 29 taken captive at Cocheco (Dover). Ipswich Troop of Horse were summoned August 19 for an alarm at Haverhill. They were disbanded in November. Hostilities resumed with vigor in February 1690. Many Ipswich men were in the French and English War serving in Sir William Phips' expedition against Quebec. Major Appleton commanded a company of 308 in this unsuccessful campaign. They sailed from Boston in August 1691.[39] The years 1692 and '93 were comparatively free from Indian raids but '94, '95, and '96 saw many terrible raids. It was so bad commissioned officers of the Essex middle regiment and the commissioned officers of the town of Newbury met at Ipswich to discuss the situation and petitioned the General Court for a guard to watch the Merrimack river from Newbury to Dunstable, day and night, until the harvest was gathered.

Government seems onerous to many in 2005 and a common wish is to return to the "good old days" when a man could do what he wished with his property. This was not the case in Ipswich. Ownership of a house and land within the town included the right of pasturage in the wide domain beyond the common fence, but didn't include the right to cut wood in the dense forests in the commons.[40] That right was retained by the town as was the right to the trees standing on the house lots.[41] Felling shade trees in the streets or highways was prohibited in 1666 with a penalty of 20s for violators.

There were many other restrictions: water power on any river or stream was the property of the town and no mill could be erected without permission of the town; fishermen were restricted in the use of their catch; wages of the artisans were set by government; bakers were regulated.[42] Innkeepers were regulated in 1634,[43] the leather trade in 1642,[44] the potter in 1646.[45] Traffic in "strong water" was controlled with the statute of 1637 limiting a town to one outlet. Known as the "ordinary," it was under close watch "for illegal sales, for entertaining boys or habitual tipplers, for dancing or gaming, for permitting any to remain during the week-day lecture." Women were not to aspire to professional pursuits. In 1637, Jane, wife of Richard Hawkins, was forbidden "to meddle in surgery or physic drinks, plaisers or oiles, nor to question matters of religion

except with the elders for satisfaction."[46]

The Whipples had only been in Ipswich three years when the General Court assumed extraordinary authority over families. Because of a scarcity of cloth, it decreed in 1641 that heads of families must employ their children and servants to make wild hemp into coarse linen cloth. In 1656, every family member not necessarily employed on other occasions, "as women, girls, and boys, shall and hereby are enjoyed to spin according to their skill and ability." Selectmen were ordered to rate each family on its other employments and determine the time it could give to spinning. A standard for a day's production was set and each family was "assessed" as a whole, half, or quarter spinner. Those assessed as a whole spinner were required, after 1656, to spin for 30 weeks annually, producing three pounds of linen, cotton, or wool weekly.[47] A penalty of 12d was assessed for every pound short.[48]

The franchise was also limited, much to the chagrin of 33 Ipswich men, who had taken the Oath of Fidelity[49] but not the Oath of Freemen.[50] They asked the General Court in May 1658 if they could vote on town affairs and be elected to office. They were allowed to vote for Selectmen[51] and to hold office as Jurymen and Constable. Their request and the resultant decision eventually led to the full franchise for others than freemen.

The principal use of common land was pasturage for cattle, swine, and sheep.[52] Cattle were so numerous by 1646 that hundreds of quarters of beef were shipped to Boston every fall. The herds were driven into the commons to forage and the common fence kept them from straying into the cultivated fields. To keep them from straying into the wilderness or from being attacked by wolves, the town voted to hire a cowherd.[53] Robert Wallis and Thomas Manning were hired in 1639 to keep 80 hogs on Plumb Island.[54] Those wanting their pigs closer to home drove them two miles to the commons. Owners of any "big pig" within the two mile limit were fined 5 shillings per pig. Pigs born after February 1 had the liberty of the town until August 16 and if the pigs were hurt while foraging in gardens or on house lots, the property owner had to pay damage to the pig's owner.[55]

In 1656 sheep owners were allowed to fence a half acre site on Jeffries Neck to corral sheep at night. "One able person" out of every family was required to work one day in May or June to "help clear the commons for the better keeping of sheep." By 1662, the town had three shepherds and the commons on the south side were so overgrazed that 100 sheep were moved to the north side. They voted in 1702 to require shepherds to have cottages adjoining the sheep-walks so they could stay near their flocks.[56]

The town pound, a fenced enclosure for stray livestock, was built at the southeast corner of the Green. Straying livestock caused much damage so

stringent regulations were adopted to control them. In a January 1639 town meeting, it was agreed that anyone bringing livestock untended "two hours after sunrising" to the pound or to their owner will receive "double recompense for his pains" with half of the "forfeits" to the town, half to person doing the impounding.[57]

Commoners and freemen were not the same; there were many more of the former than the latter. Commoners kept records, and legislated with reference to all duties and privileges, including giving the land. Most were freemen but the privileges of the two bodies were distinct.[58]

Schofield's *The Ancient Records of the Town of Ipswich* list the following as having the right of commonage as of February 28, 1641-42:

The right of commonage did not include the right to cultivate the common land. But in 1659, 12 citizens were allowed to plant two acres apiece on Jeffries Neck and individual use of common land grew rapidly. Permission was given at various times to cultivate on Bush Hill, Turkey Hill, Redroot Hill, Scott's Hill, Cowkeeper Rock, and land between Haffield's and Wilderness Hill. When these tillage rights expired, individual ownership had gained general acceptance and it was voted to give common land to those having right of commonage. The first grant included approximately 3,244 acres of the cow commons on the north side of the river. Common wood and timber land at Chebacco Ponds and Knight's farm was divided into four parts in 1701, other land into large sheep pastures in 1702.[59] The remaining common lands were divided into eight parts in 1709.[60] The beaches belonged to the commoners as did the rights and privileges to the gravel and clay pits. Only commoners could bid for the annual use of unappropriated thatch banks[61]

Though not included in the town, Ipswich residents were using Plumb Island right from the beginning. The General Court divided the Island October 16, 1649, giving Ipswich and Newbury two-fifths each and Rowley one-fifth. Ipswich made its portion a part of the commons. Nine miles in length, the Island acts as an enormous breakwater, stemming the mouths of the Merrimack, Parker, and Ipswich rivers. Swift and dangerous currents erode beaches, pull down dunes, add sandbars, drown swimmers in its undertow, and cause shipwrecks. The only access was by boat across the swift Plumb Island river and it was completely isolated in mid-winter. Despite these problems, its salt marshes,[62] thatch banks, and fertile uplands were assets that led to it being distributed among the commoners.

At a town meeting February 14, 1664 it was voted to divide Plumb Island, Hog Island, and Castle Neck among all with the right of the commons. Two-hundred-three shares were distributed with the 28 wealthiest commoners allocated a double share (six acres), the next 70 according to

wealth, a share and a half (four acres), and the final 105, one share (three acres). Location was determined by drawing and many of the poorer folk drew the better upland lots to the chagrin of some of the wealthiest who drew thatch and sand dune. The claimant had to pay a fee for having the lot "laid out."[63]

Elder John Whipple received a double share, drawing Lot 5. Adjacent were Mr. Booreman, 4, and Mr. John Rogers, 6. A share and a half went to Cornet John Whipple, No. 34, Lt. John Whipple, Lot 15, and Joseph Whipple, a single share, Lot. 42.

Plumb Island, now owned by Ipswich, Newbury, Newburyport, Rowley, and the U.S. Department of the Interior, is summered on by thousands[64] of New Englanders. It is a year-around home to approximately 2,500 despite ferocious storms that pound it for days. The island has a split personality. One section is for the vacationers with its sub shops, fried clam stands, and narrow streets choked with traffic. A different world greets the visitor to the southern seven miles owned by the Parker River Wildlife Refuge.[65] Always a major east coast flyway, it lures more than 270 species of migratory birds. A road runs down the center separated by dunes and salt marshes. The dunes and swamps are lush with vegetation: blueberries, pin cherries, woodbine, raspberries, cranberries, honeysuckle, wild roses, and beach plums. Rushes, reeds, and broom grass thicken the marshes. There is an observation tower and a blind. Unlike the 1600s, it is so popular that the number of people admitted is limited and it is often full by 9 a.m.[66]

In the world of the early American Whipples, the scythe, hoe, and hand rake were the chief implements used at harvest. There were only 37 ploughs in Massachusetts in 1637 making that job a specialty of a few. There were no wagons until 1790; large loads were carried in trumbrils, large carts, and by cattle. Wood fences were five rails; stone fences at least three-and-a-half feet high. The virgin soil, black, rich, and rocky, was fertilized with fish.[67] Corn was the principal food staple with rye a favorite part of the diet. Wheat was used sparingly. Peas, beans, pumpkins, melons, and turnips were abundant.[68] Hay and oats were essential for winter livestock feed, flax for linen garments, cloths, and curtains, barley for beer. Some raised tobacco.[69]

The grist mill was a busy place as every family was dependent on it. Corn, brought on the back of a horse, ox, or in the tumbrel, was carried back as meal with a sixteenth part kept by the miller. The saw-mill was almost as valuable but it was 1649 before water privilege for such a mill was granted. Permission for one on the Chebacco river was given in 1656.[70] Richard Shatswell was given permission to build a hemp-mill, "for the breaking of hemp," in 1657 and John Whipple, Jr. was allowed to build a

fulling-mill, to finish homespun cloth, at the lower falls in 1673.

Other early enterprises included a brew house,[71] a malt house,[72] a salt house for the manufacture of salt from sea water,[73] tan vats,[74] and a work house "to make pot ashes and soap."[75] Moses Pengry began operating a shipyard in 1673.

As industries developed, the General Court authorized officials to oversee them. In 1652 the Sealer of Leather was added to "search and scale leather" so "no unmarketable leather might be sold." The Common Packer, responsible for the "proper packing of fish or meat in barrels," first appeared in 1658. There is mention of a Clerk of the Market Place in 1680 and Gagers of Casks were chosen in 1726.

Fishing craft and merchant vessels berthed in the harbor led to the formation of the "The Committee for Furthering Trade" in 1641. Members were Matthew and John Whipple, Simon Bradstreet, Capt. Daniel Denison, Robert Paine, Mr. Richard Saltonstall and Mr. John Tuttle. Its duties were the care of buoys and beacons, providing for salt and cotton, the sowing of hemp and flax seed, and "card wier canes." Promotion of fishing interest was the assignment of another committee which included John Whipple. The first wharf was built in 1641, several were added in later years. Enterprising merchants shipped dried fish, pipe-staves, lumber, and other commodities to the West Indies.

Artisans included coopers, rope-makers, carpenters, thatchers, bricklayers, glaziers, butchers, "biskett bakers," tanners, shoe makers, cordwainers, weavers, gunsmiths, innkeepers, potters, "chirugeons,"[76] physicians, and limb dressers.

Ipswich had a grammar school as early as 1642. Under Ezekiel Cheever who became schoolmaster in 1650, the school emphasized Latin, reading, writing, and arithmetic and became famous for preparing students for entrance to Harvard. Thomas Andrews replaced Cheever in 1660 and maintained the school's high reputation until his death November 27, 1683. Noadiah Russell succeeded him and remained until 1687.

Among the families of distinction were John Winthrop, Jr.[77] Richard Saltonstall,[78] Thomas Dudley,[79] Simon Bradstreet,[80] Samuel Symonds, [81] and Daniel Denison.[82]

Winthrop's first wife and daughter died in Ipswich in the autumn of 1634 and he returned to England where he was engaged by Lord Say and Sele and Lord Brook to settle their Connecticut grant. After building the fort at the mouth of the Connecticut river, he returned to Ipswich with his second wife, resumed his Magistracy, and became a Lieutenant Colonel of the Essex militia. He brought a library of 1,000 volumes to Massachusetts in 1631 which was increased by purchases and gifts and was for a century the best scientific library in the English colonies, including

volumes on science, religion, history, belles lettres, languages, law, philosophy, and the occult arts. They were written in Latin, English, German, French, Dutch, Italian, Greek, and Spanish. Winthrop moved to Connecticut in the mid 1650s, was elected Governor in 1657, and annually reelected until his death in 1676.

Saltonstall was 25 when he arrived in 1635 and was immediately elected Deputy to the General Court, appointed to hold court in Ipswich in 1636, chosen Assistant[83] in 1637, and reelected annually until 1649. Dudley, named Deputy Governor before the Winthrop fleet sailed in 1630, continued in that office until chosen Governor in 1634.[84]

Bradstreet recorded the first Court of Assistants meeting held in New England.[85] He served for over 50 years in many capacities, including Governor, and helped settle Andover, incorporated in 1646.[86] His wife Anne[87] was one of New England's first poets.[88] During her years in Ipswich poem after poem fell from her facile pen. Her "Elegy Upon Sir Philip" was written in 1638, "In Honor of du Bartas" in 1641, the dialogue between "Old England and New England" in 1642, and a poem in honor of Queen Elizabeth in 1643. Symonds arrived in 1638 and achieved political and judicial distinctions, beginning his public career as Town Clerk. He became a Deputy and died while holding the office of Deputy Governor.

The first general letter of instructions from the Massachusetts Bay Company to Governor John Endicott and his Council in 1628 required church services. "To the end the Sabbath may be celebrated in a religious manner," they wrote, "we appoint that all that inhabit the Plantation, both for the general and particular employments, may surcease their labor every Saturday throughout the year at 3 o'clock in the afternoon, and that they spend the rest of that day in catechism and preparation for the Sabbath as the ministers shall direct."

The Ipswich church,[89] the ninth in the colony and third in Essex county, had both pastor and teacher for its first 110 years, Ruling Elders until 1727, and Deacons. There were usually two Elders and two Deacons at a time. A man could not be a Ruling Elder[90] and civil magistrate at the same time so John Whipple declined further election as a Deputy after eight terms and became one of two Ruling Elders in 1658 after serving as Deacon since 1642. Duties of the Ruling Elders, who knew theology well, were to order the assemblies, visit parishioners, and "see that the faithful throve in godliness." Deacons were to look after the necessities of the church, its finances and its charities. Elders were seated directly under the pulpit, the Deacons somewhat lower.

In June 1634 Rev.[91] Nathaniel Ward[92] became Ipswich's pastor[93] after being ejected from his clerical office in Standon, near London, for non conformity. Rev. Thomas Parker with about 100 followers from Wiltshire,

England settled there at the same time and was engaged as Teacher. After he and his followers left and settled at Newbury, Rev. John Norton became Teacher.[94]

When Ward arrived, Ipswich was the most remote and isolated settlement in the Bay,[95] yet many persons of means and education settled there.[96] But others were described by Ward as "ill and doubtful persons ... drinking and pilfering," whose goings-on caused the town to be "careful on whom they bestowed lots" because the "less of Satan's kingdom" allowed to settle, "the more of God's presence and blessing we may expect." He complained about "multitudes of idle and profane young men, servants, and others," who lived in Ipswich. He believed "that strict discipline was more needful in Plantations than in a settled state" and because the town was remote from neighbors, it "had need to be strong and of a homogeneous spirit and people."

While supporting strict discipline, Ward opposed arbitrary government as Gov. Winthrop discovered in 1641 when the Deputies chose Ward to preach the annual election sermon at Boston.[97] His message was to keep all Magistrates in an equal rank, not give more honor or power to one than to another, his way of calling for the rotation of the governorship which ended with the defeat of Gov. Henry Vane in 1637.

Reverend Nathaniel Rogers was Pastor[98] when the Whipples arrived and served until his death July 3, 1655.[99] He was educated at Emmanuel College, Cambridge, which he entered at age 14. His wife was Margaret Crane of Coggeshall, Essex. The church had no Pastor until Rev. Thomas Cobbet,[100] who studied at Oxford, was ordained in 1656.[101] A new Meeting-House was built during his pastorate, its steeple completed October 22, 1667.[102] He died November 5, 1685, age 77. Reverend John Rogers, MD,[103] eldest son of Rev. Nathaniel Rogers, was Cobbet's assistant as well as principal physician in town.

Ipswich helped create colony law regarding payment of ministers. On February 25, 1656 a majority voted £100 for a house for Rev. Cobbet. Those who opposed petitioned the General Court to be excluded. The issue was of great interest colony-wide as many believed support of ministers should be voluntary; that it was inconsistent with liberty to tax someone against his vote. The General Court ruled against the minority.

Reverend William Hubbard,[104], graduate of Harvard's first class in 1641, succeeded Cobbet. At the time of his retirement in 1702,[105] Hubbard was considered the most eminent minister in Essex county. During his tenure, a new church, "26 feet stud, 66 feet long and 60 feet wide with two-thirds gables on every side, was built and one tier of gallery with seats. He wrote a history of New England[106] and authored *Hubbard's Indian Wars.*

John Denison,[107] became his assistant April 5, 1686, dying September 14, 1689 age 24. John Rogers, Jr. began his service in 1688 but was not ordained until October 12, 1692 succeeding Hubbard August 13, 1702, serving until his death December 28, 1745. Rev. Jabez Fitch, a 1694 graduate of Harvard, became Rogers' colleague October 24, 1703. It was a time of depreciating currency and insufficient financial support caused him to move to Portsmouth, N.H. He was replaced by Nathaniel Rogers, son of the Pastor, graduate of the Ipswich grammar school, and 1722 Harvard graduate. He was ordained October 13, 1727.

All work and play stopped at three on Saturday to begin the solemnity of the Sabbath. The people were summoned to public worship by Ralph Varnham, Town Crier, ringing a bell[108] "about nine of the clock or before" and joined by other good people from every house as attendance was mandatory.[109]

The Meeting-House, a humble log structure with thatched roof and chinks filled with clay or moss, served the double purpose of sanctuary and citadel with the fort built about it as a protection from Indian assaults. The rough and raw walls were without plaster or paint, the floor of hewn timber without carpet or cushion. Even the pulpit, repository of the Bible, psalm book, and hour glass,[110] was without fine finish. No organ invited them to worship. Instead, they were greeted by rattling scabbards and the clank of musket as the General Court commanded every man over 18, except Magistrates and ministers, come with musket or other firearms, duly equipped with match, power, and bullets.[111] The stone wall, probably five or six feet high and three feet thick at the bottom, stood until 1702 when the rocks were sold to buy a clock for the new edifice. A Watch House was in the immediate vicinity.

As families drew near to the meeting house, the women shivered as they saw the grim wolf heads nailed to the front of the sanctuary by those seeking the promised bounty. Weather permitting, they tarried at the door to read the town ordinances, the latest laws of the General Court, or the scandalous libel against the good name of some citizens. With minds duly impressed with the solemnity of the day and hour, they entered the bare and cheerless building and sat, men on one side, women on the other.[112]

Great formality attended the gathering. There was no random selection of seats. Official station, education, family connection, and wealth were carefully considered and social rank delicately adjusted. The first benches would have been occupied by Mrs. Rogers, Mrs. Norton, Madame Symonds, Muriel Saltonstall, Dame Dudley and her daughters, Mrs. Simon Bradstreet and Mrs. Daniel Denison. Behind them daughters of the lesser gentry and substantial yeomen. The poor and maid-servants were in the rear.

Across the isle sat Dudley, Symonds, Bradstreet, Denison, Saltonstall, the Appletons,[113] Giles Firmin, the physician and son-in-law of Rev. Ward, the Whipples,[114] and all the rest. It was an assembly noted for its remarkable learning, character, statesmanship, and devotion. Several achieved high and honorable public station as governors, magistrates, commissioners, soldiers. They helped guide the infant Commonwealth and loom large in its history.

The Pastor, clad in black Geneva gown, skullcap, and pure white bands, was seated in the pulpit with the Ruling Elders and Deacons in their place of honor below. Weather mattered little. Neither cold, heat, rain, sleet, or snow kept the worshipers from attendance. Many brought foot-stoves during the winter.

Services began with a quarter-hour prayer by the Pastor followed by the Teacher reading and explaining a chapter from the Bible. A psalm was dictated by one of the Ruling Elders, and sung.[115] The Pastor preached a sermon, and sometimes gave an exhortation without notes. The Teacher closed with prayer and benediction. The second service began at two p.m. with the Pastor proceeding as before. A psalm was sung, followed by the Teacher's sermon who prayed before and after.

The sacrament of baptism, washing and sprinkling in the name of the Father, the Son, and the Holy Ghost, followed the prayer which followed the sermon. It was administered by either Pastor or Teacher standing in the deacons' seat. At least one of the parents must be a church member; no godparents were allowed. The sacrament of the Lord's Supper[116] was given once a month. All but church members left[117] and the chosen received the elements, the ministers and Ruling Elders sitting at the table, the rest in their seats or upon forms.[118] The Pastor or Teacher prayed, then blessed and consecrated the bread and wine, and delivered the "bread in a charger[119] to some of the chief" who carried it round to the communicants. The cup was circulated in a similar manner. The other prayed after each of these memorials was received.[120] If members of different churches were present and wished to commune, one of the Ruling Elders "propounded the name to the congregation" and if no one objected, the privilege was granted.

A collection was taken at the afternoon service. It began with a Deacon saying, "Brethren of the congregation, as God has prospered you, so freely offer." The Magistrates and chief gentlemen gave first, followed by the Elders, male[121] members and non-members, single persons, and widows. It was tendered to the Deacon at his seat, money or paper placed in a wooden box, with chattel[122] laid before him. The Deacons were responsible for distributing it to support the Pastor and Teacher, assist the poor, and for other special needs. In addition to the collection, most parishes le-

vied a tax to meet current expenses.[123]

Long and tedious as it was with its home catechism and protracted public service, our ancestors determined a proper degree of public piety could only be achieved with a second day of religious exercises. Thursday was chosen for a weekly lecture. All work and amusement was prohibited and attendance mandatory. Often utilized for special town meetings or selectmens' meetings after service, it was also the day for public administration of justice[124] with the sentence of punishment inflicted in front of the gathering.

Criminals from northern Massachusetts were tried at the Ipswich Court which had gallows, stocks, pillory, and a cage. The cage, about 10 feet wide and 16 feet long, was used to expose Sabbath-breakers and lecture-day transgressors to the whole congregation. Those convicted of an offense bordering on a capital crime were seated on a gallows with a rope round their neck and whipped. A cleft stick stilled those convicted of slander. The ducking stool was for railers and scolds.[125]

By 1652, the Boston prison couldn't accommodate all the colony's prisoners so a jail was built in Ipswich adjacent to the Watch-House. It was 20 feet long and 16 feet wide, equal in height and width to the Watch-House. Theophilus Wilson was named Warden and paid £3 annually plus 5 shilling per prisoner. Prisoners were not released until paying "their charges for food and attendance." Those unable to pay received bread and water. America's first jail break took place in Ipswich March 30, 1662.[126] At a later escape, when captured, the prisoner explained it was so cold he took up some of the floor boards and departed. Without heat, winter confinement must have been particularly cheerless.

Political controversies kept arising, some of which caused unpleasant circumstances for the Whipples. Charles II (1660-85) challenged the right of the colonists under the original Charter because the oath of allegiance and administration of justice was not done in his name. He also demanded that Church of England services be allowed, that "all good and honest people be admitted to the Lord's Supper," and "all of wisdom and integrity" to be allowed to vote.

Not wanting the franchise extended or to recognize the English Church, the General Court resisted the King. On September 14, 1666, 73 Ipswich men, including Matthew Whipple's youngest son Joseph, joined by 26 from Boston, 35 from Salem, and 39 from Newbury, pledged loyalty to the King and by so doing incurred the wrath of the General Court. On September 17, the Court summoned the petition leaders from each town[127] to attend Court in October and answer for the petition.

The potential loss of their land also agitated family members. Capt. John Mason's grant of 1622[128] included "the land lying between the little river which flows into the ocean at Naumkeag (Salem) and the Merrimac."

The Massachusetts Bay Co. grant of 1628 extended from the Atlantic to the western ocean and from a line three miles south of the Charles river, land already granted to Mason. Mason's son, John, a principal member and Secretary of the Council for New England, campaigned until his death to assert the Mason claim and annul the Bay Company grant.

Mason's actions were of vital concern to Ipswich which was within his grant. The Mason claim was received by the General Court on January 4, 1680 and a copy delivered to Maj. General Denison and the Magistrates of Essex county with instructions that all terretenants (land tenants) affected by the claim be convened as soon as possible. The convention was held in Ipswich the second Wednesday of February and resulted in a petition to the General Court stating they had owned their lands for 50 years, had no knowledge of Mason's claim, its bounds or limits, and they, not Mason, defended the land against the Indians in the late war at a cost of 12 dead and hundreds of pounds. They concluded that any trial of the claim should be in the Massachusetts courts, not in England. The General Court forwarded their concerns to Sir Lionel Jenkins, one of the King's Secretaries of State.

A year later, a petition claiming rightful title to the lands based on the grant of the General Court under the Bay colony charter and purchase from the natives, was addressed to the King. It was signed by representatives from Gloucester, Ipswich, Newbury, Rowley, and other nearby towns. John Whipple was one of 15 from Ipswich to sign.[129] It was a time of high drama in Ipswich. If the Mason claim prevailed, title to their lands, houses, barns, and fences would be worthless. On March 17, the Court ordered Mr. Jonathan Wade and Mr. Daniel Epps to convene the residents to determine if they agreed with the sentiments of the petition and if so, their concerns would be forwarded to England. The sentiments were endorsed with little opposition.[130]

Mason modified his claim in 1682, asking for the common and unimproved lands only and demanded admittance to the courts to prosecute his rights. The General Court told him there was no more common land, that every acre was occupied and improved. It ordered William Stoughton, Esq., Peter Bulkley, Esq., John Hall, Esq., "together with such other Magistrates in Essex county as are unconcerned in Mr. Mason's case, be the persons to keep the County Court there for the trial of those cases." Records of this court have never been found so no positive knowledge the case was tried exists. If not, it is probable no one was disturbed in the possession of his lands.

England's Court of Chancery vacated the colony's Charter on June 21, 1684. This action made Massachusetts, after 54 years of struggle, what it had been before James I granted it to the Council for New England, a

possession of James II by virtue of the discovery of the Cabots.[131] The uproar against this action was heard colony-wide causing the General Court to ask each town to express its mind about giving up the Charter. On February 11, 1685 Ipswich voted unanimously to petition the King to allow the colony to retain the Charter but there was no talk of resistance.

The petition was ignored and in May, Joseph Dudley, son of Governor Thomas Dudley, by royal commission was appointed President of the Council of Eighteen. This appointed Council replaced the General Court ending popular election of the governing body. Only four former Assistants accepted places in the new government. Governor Bradstreet, his son Dudley, a Deputy, and Magistrate Nathaniel Saltonstall were among those refusing. Discontent spread with Ipswich, Rowley, and Topsfield among the hostile towns. They even broke a pious habit of years by refusing to keep a public Fast day, a prelude to their even more determined refusal to pay a tax imposed by the new government without consulting the people.

Dudley's government ended December 20, 1686 when Sir Edmund Andros, attended by 60 red-coats, arrived and became the Royal Governor. Assisted by appointed Councilors, he immediately imposed a tax of a penny on a pound[132] and directed each town to appoint a taxing commissioner to list all residents and value their estates for tax purposes. The lists were to be forwarded to the colony Treasurer who would issue warrants to town Constables who would be given 10 weeks to collect the tax.[133] Selectmen[134] and other leading Ipswich citizens met the night before the August 23, 1687 town meeting[135] to decide what to recommend to their fellow townspeople. They agreed the "warrant-act" abridged their liberties as Englishmen and that the town did not have to pay taxes without representation. Reverend John Wise[136] vigorously opposed the measure at the town meeting as did William Howlett, John Andrews, and Capt. John Appleton. The town declined to choose a commissioner[137] and some citizens made an effort to influence the vote of neighboring towns. Next to Boston, Ipswich was the most important town in the colony, causing Andros concern about its actions. Boston and Salem accepted the tax, making Ipswich the target for official wrath. The town gave its bond that selectmen John Whipple, Robert Kinsman, Nathaniel Treadwell, Thomas Hart and Constables Simon Wood and John Harris would appear before the Governor and Council in Boston September 21.

Warrants were issued September 15 for the arrest of constable Thomas French, Moderator Andrews, and Clerk Appleton[138] as "evil persons" acting in "a factious and seditious and contemptuous manner" against the laws of his majesty's dominion. Warrants were issued the sixteenth for the arrest of Wise and Howlett for stirring up his majesty's subjects "to refractoriness and disobedience contrary to and in high contempt of his

majesty's laws and government here established."

Andrews, Appleton, and French seem to have been speedily examined by Governor Andros. Their testimony is found in Massachusetts Archives, book 127, leaf 102 and all three confirmed what had happened at the town and the pre-town meetings. French's deposition indicates all the Selectmen were examined by the Governor, committed to Boston's stone jail, held there until examination by the Council, and while awaiting trial. On September 27, Wise and the others petitioned the Governor for bail because it was harvest time and support of their families in the ensuing year required them to be home for harvest.[139]

When bond was not granted, the Ipswich prisoners, independent of men from other towns imprisoned with them, petitioned for a pardon stating they would willingly give their "allegiance and duty" as "good and loyal subjects," that it was "ignorance" that caused them to act, and if pardoned they would use their "utmost endeavor" to see that the "list and assessment of the persons and estates" in Ipswich would be forwarded to John Usher, Esq., colonial Treasurer.[140] The pardon was denied, the men arraigned before a special session of the Court of Oyer and Terminer on October 24, all were found guilty, and returned to jail for 21 days awaiting sentence. The sentence deprived them of civil privileges, fined them heavily, and required them to post a bond for good behavior.[141]

Ipswich then submitted to the warrant, chose a tax commissioners, and sent £136 9s 11d to the colony Treasurer in November. But Andros' days were numbered and in April 1686, after it was learned that Prince William of Orange was planning to oust King James, the people of Boston overturned the Governor and on May 2 a convention of delegates from the towns voted to resume the old government. This decision was reaffirmed May 24 by a new convention acting after the individual towns held meetings to authorize the vote. Ipswich voted for the original government.

In the debate to resume the Charter, other towns pointedly recognized what Ipswich did and Boston, Salem, and other large towns dared not do. The impassioned words of Rev. Wise, proclaiming the inalienable rights of Englishmen under Magna Charta and that they had privileges that none could defraud, had sunk deeply into the hearts of the people. The Ipswich protest was an affirmation of the principle of the right of self government. It was made deliberately, in a dark and threatening time, when a Royal Governor with English troops at his command required submission. Ipswich suffered far more than any other community and its suffering may fairly be called the birth pangs of the new life of independence. The town seal of Ipswich bears the legend, "The Birth Place of American Independence, 1687."

Today's visitor to Ipswich will walk the same wide pleasant streets, elm

shaded, and lined with venerable homes as did the original Whipples. The sixth First Church of Ipswich is on the site of the town's first Meeting-House on the Meeting House Green which means that a church[142] has been on its crest for 356 years. What a symbolic center for a New England town.

Ipswich is 30 miles northeast of Boston. Traveling from Boston, take Route 128 (which is an extension of 95) east to Exit 20N and follow 1A six miles to Ipswich. The Chamber of Commerce, Box 456, Ipswich, MA 01938 sells a map that shows the town's historic district and the surrounding area.[143]

HAMILTON

That part of Ipswich where land was granted to Matthew and John Whipple in 1638 was known as the hamlet and was eventually incorporated as the town of Hamilton. It is near enough to the ocean to hear the roar of the surf but is not touched by its waters. Its residents were part of the first parish but the distance to the Meeting-House was so great that by 1710 approximately 40 hamlet families went to Wenham for services. As their numbers grew, the Wenham church was unable to accommodate them without adding to its building. Rather than join Wenham and pay to add to its building, 62 hamlet residents petitioned Ipswich on May 1, 1712 to be set off as a church.

Ipswich granted the petition at a town meeting May 22, 1712 and agreed to release citizens of the hamlet "from all further charges... when they shall have erected a Meeting-House and called an orthodox minister to preach the Gospel to them.[144]

Heading the petition effort were Maj. Matthew Whipple, Sr., Maj. John Whipple, Jr., Matthew Whipple, Jr., James Whipple, and Jonathan Whipple.[145] A John Whipple, Matthew Whipple, 3rd, Matthew Whipple 4th, John Annable, John Annable, Jr. and two Matthew Annables also signed.[146]

On October 21, 1712 hamlet residents met at Matthew Whipple's home and authorized the Meeting-House be built and furnished before November 1713. It named a committee of Cornet, later Captain, John Whipple, Jr., carpenter Knowlton, Nathaniel Brown, Isaac Ringe, John Whipple, Sgt. Gilbert, Thomas Brown, Mr. Matthew Whipple, tailor, to oversee its construction. Contributions funded the construction. Matthew Whipple, Sr.'s gift was the largest, £25 4s 7d. Joseph Whipple, joiner, gave £8 earmarked to make the pulpit.[147] Pew rights were assigned with the condition they could be resold without approval of a majority of the proprietors. Men and women were seated separately, both on the main level and in the galleries.

The precinct was officially authorized by the General Court on October 14, 1713. It included "inhabitants within the boundaries of the Annable farm, Jacob's farm, Abbot farm, Capt. Whipple's farm, the Joseph Whipple (deceased) farm, Lovering farm, and bounding on Col. Saltonstall's farm and all the farm lying upon Wenham bounds, and all the land and inhabitants lying in Chebacco not enclosed in Chebacco precinct." The precinct was enlarged December 3, 1715 to include the Saltonstall farm and other neighboring inhabitants who petitioned to join.

Reverend Samuel Wigglesworth was the first Pastor. His salary was to be paid two-thirds in money, one-third in grain and 20 cords of wood.[148] In May 1714 £100 was authorized to build a house for Wigglesworth on land adjacent to the Meeting-House. A seven-acre tract on the main road southerly of Wigglesworth's house-lot was purchased for a parsonage in 1720.

The parish assumed responsibility for schools in 1730. It voted to build a school house and named Capt. Matthew Whipple, Deacon Matthew Whipple, and Mr. Thomas Brown the first school committee. They hired Joseph Secomb on October 20 to teach a four-month school year.

The French and Indian War disrupted the hamlet as many of its young men enlisted after an exhortation by Rev. Wigglesworth about the "evils of the church of Rome." In 1755 on the eve of the expedition against Crown Point, he predicted the French, if successful, would confiscate private property, enforce their religion on the conquered, "... strenuously obtrude their monstrous idolatries and detestable errors... upon us with fire and faggot, and all the other horrible forms of persecution."[149] Among hamlet men responding to Wigglesworth's call to defend their homes and religion were Capt. Stephen Whipple[150] and Joseph Whipple. Stephen was severely wounded at the Battle of St. George and his two lieutenants, Burnham and Low of Chebacco, were mortally wounded.[151]

Reverend Wigglesworth died September 3, 1768 after 54 years as Pastor. Deacons Nathaniel Whipple and John Patch and John Hubbard were the committee in charge of his funeral[152] During the funeral service, Deacon Whipple, who wore a full-bottomed wig, sat at the far end of the sounding-board that overhung the high-pulpit while Deacon Patch sat at the door. Patch interlined the hymn and Whipple set the hymn or psalm.

It was May 1771 before Manasseh Cutler, 27, a 1765 Yale graduate, agreed to become a permanent replace for Wigglesworth. He served 53 years, dying in office July 28, 1823. Matthew Whipple, John Patch, Nathaniel Whipple, and Benjamin Appleton were Deacons during his minstry.

At the outset of the Revolution the hamlet formed a company of minute-men, electing John Whipple, Jr. captain, John Thompson, second lieutenant, and Jonathan Lamson, ensign. These troops were at the battle of Lexington and Concord. Capt. Whipple was a cavalry officer at the

October 1777 battle of Saratoga which resulted in the surrender of British Lt. Gen. John Burgoyne.

In 1788 some hamlet residents began to agitate for complete separation from Ipswich and petitioned the General Court for authority to incorporate as a town. They were unsuccessful but tried again in 1791 and kept lobbying until March 1793 when Rev. Cutler, Robert Dodge, Joshua Giddings and Jonathan Lamson were directed to arrange for payment of £910 to Ipswich for losing the territory. The town of Hamilton was finally authorized on June 21, 1793. Reverend Cutler, a staunch Federalist, was responsible for the name which honored Alexander Hamilton, George Washington's first Secretary of Treasury. Hamilton held its organizational meeting August 1, 1793. Deacon Nathaniel Whipple was chosen Moderator and Treasurer at a salary of 12s.[153] The first Congregational parish in Hamilton was incorporated in 1829. From then on the affairs of the town and the parish were distinct and each corporation held its own meetings.

Reverend Cutler was prominent on the national scene and was hired as agent for the Ohio Company which was seeking to purchase lands in the Northwest Territories. He conducted delicate and difficult negotiations with the federal Congress which resulted in the Ohio Company purchasing one million acres at $1.00 per acre. Cutler played a prominent role in

Dr. Cutler's Church and Parsonage at Ipswich Hamlet, 1787. The place from which the First Company started for the Ohio, December 3, 1787.

convincing Congress to include provisions in the Northwest Ordinance Act of 1787 to prohibit slavery and to provide for mandatory education. Many members of the Whipple family benefitted by this Act as they helped push the country's frontiers further west by settling in Ohio, Indiana, Illinois, Iowa, Wisconsin, Minnesota, and Dakota territory.

Hamilton borders Ipswich on the north, Essex on the east, Manchester and Wenham on the south and southwest, Topsfield on the west. The Ipswich river forms the northwestern boundary line on Topsfield and the northeastern on Ipswich. The Miles river rises in Wenham Lake, enters Hamilton on the southern boundary, and running northeasterly, crosses the line into Ipswich and empties its shallow and sluggish waters into the Ipswich river. A cluster of ponds lie inthe southeastern corner of the town. Chebacco pond lies partly in Essex and Beck's pond, Round pond and Gravelly pond are wholly within the limits of Hamilton.

The following chapters deal with specific Whipple families. It should be noted the Whipples must have felt at home in Ipswich. At least 29 fellow residents came from Essex Shire, England. Included were Nathaniel Rogers and Simon and Thomas Stacy of Bocking; Edward Lukmas of Braintree; Robert Crane of Coggeshall; and Thomas Waite of Wethersfield. These communities were within walking distance of Bocking.[154]

This concludes the general story of the life and times of the early Whipples.

1. Capt. John Smith named it Augoan.
2. Thomas Franklin Waters, *Ipswich in the Massachusetts Bay Colony*, Part I. Historical. The Ipswich Historical Society, (Ipswich, 1905).
3. The Agawam tribe was always friendly to the English and permitted the settlement in return for English help against the Tarratine tribe, their main enemy. The decision to settle the Plantation was made in January 1633. Governor Winthrop called it "the best place in the land for tillage and cattle," and felt those coming on the next ships would welcome the opportunity to settle there. Hosmer. I:98.
4. Route to Ipswich—Since there were no roads, they probably traveled by shallop, skirting the coast. The long summer afforded ample opportunity to build homes and prepare for the winter. The broad marshes provided salt hay and thatch for their roofs. On April 1, 1633 the General Court ordered that "no person whatsoever shall go to plant or inhabit Agawam, without leave from the Court, except those that are already gone, viz: Mr. John Winthrop, Jr., John Biggs, Mr. Wm. Clerk, Robert Coles, John Gage, Thomas Howlet, Thomas Hardy, Wm. Perkins, Mr. John Thorndike, and Wm. Serjeant. Names of the other three are missing. On June 11 the Court granted Thomas Sellen leave to plant at Aggawam. Abraham Hammatt, *The Hammatt Papers, Early Inhabitants of Ipswich, Massachusetts, 1633-1700*, Genealogical Publishing Co., Inc., (Baltimore, 1980). Originally published in seven parts, Ipswich, Mass. 1880-99.
5. Or any two of them.
6. George A. Schofield, editor and publisher, *The Ancient Records of the Town of Ipswich*, Vol. I 1634-1650, Chronicle Motor Press, (Ipswich, 1899). There is no page numbering in this publication. However, the author has numbered the pages and this reference is on page 2.
7. Titles—Three men of the original detachment were gentlemen, as the title Mr. prefixed to their name proclaimed. Only the wealthier and more educated were given that name of honor. Simple Goodman was the appellation of the common sort. To indicate the significance of the title, the General Court ordered in 1631 that Mr. Josias Plaistowe be called by the name of Josias, and not Mr. as formerly, after he was found guilty of stealing four baskets of corn from the Indians. He was also fined £5 and two of his servants, William Buckland and Thomas Andrew, were censured and whipped for being accessory to the same offence. Hosmer. I:33.
8. Town name—Named after Ipswich, Suffolk County, England "in acknowledgment of the great honor and kindness done to our people which took shipping there." A day of thanksgiving for the "prosperous arrival of others," was set for a fortnight later. Hosmer. I:130.

   Ipswich, England on the banks of the River Orwell, had easy access to the sea and the world beyond. On the eve of England's colonization of the New World, it was a great seaport and a center of nonconformist thought. The county town of Suffolk, it began to develop in the sixth century as a part of East Anglia, the counties of Norfolk and Suffolk. Originally called Gipiswic — its name wasn't changed until the late Middle Ages — it eventually became a major trading and manufacturing center. Among its products was a crude gray pottery, today known as Ipswich ware. At the time of the Doomsday survey of 1086, it had a system of self-government, minted its own coins, and had a population of about 1,600. King John granted it a royal charter in 1200. Both a market town and a center for overseas trade, its merchants traded Suffolk wool, bacon, cheese, butter, and grain for lumber

from Scandinavia, millstones and iron from France and the Low Countries, wine from Bordeaux, leather from Spain, and spice from the Mediterranean. In the fourteenth century, Suffolk cloth became its most famous export. Good times continued into the sixteenth century but as the cloth trade declined and the River Orwell silted in the seventeenth, the town sank into deep depression.

It is a bustling commercial center today with a population of about 124,000 and offers a melange of architectural styles, old and new. Nineteenth century Italiante and neo-Palladin buildings give the city an air of Victorian sobriety but many street wind carelessly as they did in medieval days. Tucked among the modern structures are fine half-timbered dwellings and Georgian town houses. Many historic sites are within easy driving distance. Cambridge, 50 miles west, is the quintessential English university town; Norwich, 43 miles north, has Elm Hill with its well preserved half-timbered houses and a splendid perpendicular church surrounded by a close and Colchester, 18 miles south, has many buildings dating from the fifteenth century.

Visitors to London can catch the Ipswich train at the Liverpool Street Station. It is 70 miles northeast and the trip takes about 75 minutes. *Colonial Homes*, Vol. 13, No. 5., October 1987. Published by the Hearst Corporation, 80, 82, 160, 162.

9. The Ipswich river "in 1646 began from a spring about 25 miles up the country. It created a pleasant pond and then flowed through a most hideous swamp of large extent, even for many miles, being a great harbor for bears. After its coming forth this place, it groweth larger by the income of many smaller rivers and issues forth into the sea, due east against the Island of Shoals, a great place for fishing for our English nation." Joseph B. Felt, *Ipswich, Essex, and Hamilton*, first published in Cambridge, Mass., 1834, reprinted by the Clamshill Press, (Ipswich, 1966).

10. Evolution of Ipswich—That portion called the "Village" at the New Meadows was set off as Topsfield on October 18 1648 with the boundary line between them established February 28, 1694. A part of Ipswich was annexed to Rowley on November 29, 1785. That portion known as the "Hamlet" was set off as the town of Hamilton on June 21, 1793. Chebacco parish was set off and established as the town of Essex on February 15, 1819. A part of Ipswich was annexed to Boxford on March 7, 1846. The tidewater boundary lines between Ipswich and Essex and Ipswich and Gloucester were established April 19, 1892. *Vital Records of Ipswich, Massachusetts to the End of the Year 1849.* Vol. II. Published by the Essex Institute, (Salem, 1910), 5.

The male population was estimated to be 250 in 1641. Estimated population in 1675 was 2,000 (400 houses times five per house). By the late seventeenth century, Ipswich's county tax proportionally was the highest in Essex county until 1730, suggesting a relatively large and prosperous community. Arlin I. Ginsbury, "The Franchise in 17th Century Massachusetts: Ipswich". *William and Mary Quarterly*, Vol. 34, 3d series, No. 2, July 1977, 451-2.

11. The Ipswich bar was the barrier to the town's growth. Without it, Ipswich might have had the prestige of Salem as a shipping port and might even have been the capital of Massachusetts.

12. Forty-one other heads of households settled in 1638. See Appendix _____ for a list of their names.

13. Musconominot is sometimes spelled Mascoonnnomet.

14. Sagamore: A chief of an Indian tribe.

15. Schofield, 2.

16. Common Land—Land held in common: A relic of the ancient system of landholding in England and Germany. In the primitive life of the time, it was deemed

necessary. To define and separate the common land from the town proper, the town voted in January 1637 to fence it and granted permission to fell trees for said purpose.

17. This commonage was revoked January 13, 1637 when Castle Hill was granted to Mr. John Winthrop, Jr. "provided that he lives in the town, and that the town may have what they shall need for the building of a fort."

18. Highway-surveyor regulations were adopted in 1641.
    1. Road-ways and general ways be done first.
    2. People to work the whole day.
    3. Defaulters to forfeit double their wages attributed to both the workmen and their carts.
    4. A 24-hour notice required to report to work; road surveyors could grant excuses.
    5. All youth above 14 are included.
    6. Surveyors are to report encroachment of all ways and bring the same to the Town to be punished.
    7. Defaulters are to forfeit 3s 4d in summer, 2s 6d in winter for themselves and for their team 13s 4d in summer, 10s in winter.

19. Ipswich River—"The river is salt at high tide up to the point where it goes under the Choate Bridge — the first stone arch bridge built in this country. As one looks over the river and looks to the sea, he sees the white of the sand mingling with the gray of the marsh hay and the green of the pastures, as the rhythmic beat of the ocean mingles with the sound of the wind..." Agnes Edwards, *The Romantic Shore*, The Salem Press Company, (Salem, 1915),121-23.

20. House lots—Plots rarely exceeding three acres.

21. Town Officers—The first Selectmen: Mr. John Winthrop, Jr., Mr. Simon Bradstreet, Mr. Daniel Denison, John Gate, Goodman Perkins, Goodman Scott, Mr. Jonathan Wade. Our ancestors turned to the Bible to determine how many were needed. Eleven were nominated and they chose seven among themselves because Proverbs instructs "Wisdom hath hewn out her seven pillars." It is probable that the selecting of these individuals gave rise to the term **selectmen.** Other town officials: Clerk, Surveyor, Constable, Treasurer, Commissioner of Taxes, Hog-Reeves, Sealer of Weights and Measurers, Tythingmen (25 are chosen), Packer, Pounders, Town Crier, Clerk of the Market, Leather Sealer, Culler of Boards and Staves, Corder of Wood, Gauger, Fence Viewers, Hay Wards, Overseers of the Poor, Culler of Fish, Deer Reeves, Surveyors of Boards and Timber, Clerk of the Hay Market. Not all of these offices were required initially but were added as life became more complicated.

22. In February 1640 the term was extended to six months with the following elected provided "they give no lands, nor meddle with dividing or stinting the Commons": **John Whipple**, Mr. William Hubbard, Capt. Daniel Denison, Goodman George Giddings, Mark Symonds, John Perkins, and Mr. William Payne.

23. The "way to the meeting house" was the name given to streets leading toward it.

24. Fish weir: A low dam built in a river to back up or divert water, as for a mill. Mr. Richard Saltonstall, son of the titled Sir Richard of Watertown, built the mill.

25. The burying ground was at the foot of the sunny hill slope on High street. Martha, wife of John Winthrop, Jr., died in 1634 and was probably the first to be buried there.

26. Sojourner—One who lives somewhere temporarily, as on a visit; stay for a while.

27. Watch House Built—In about 1645.

28. The training field was on the south common.

29. Bandolier—A broad belt worn over one shoulder and across the chest with pockets for carrying ammunition. It held 12 wooden chargers, each holding a single load of gunpowder.

30. The firearms were clumsy and inefficient. Muskets varied in length from 3'9" to 4'3". The ancient matchlock musket was most common. It was so long and heavy it could not be held to the shoulder and required a crotched stick, called a rest, thrust into the ground for support.

31. Worm: A rod with a double spiral at its end, similar to two corkscrews combined, used in withdrawing the cartridge, bullet, or wad from the barrel of a gun.

32. Scourer: An instrument used to cleanse the gun barrel, a cleaning tool; also spelled scowrer. Swords of the dagger pattern were attached to the musket, bayonet fashion. One-third of the band carried pikes instead of muskets. A pike was a long, wooden staff with steel head with a variety of sharp edges for wounding by thrusting and withdrawing. The pikemen wore corslets and helmets to protect the body. Drum, flag, and halberds for the sergeants were part of the training as they lined up against the old stone wall, marched and countermarched up an down the Green, wheeled, filed, faced, loaded, and fired for many hours. A statute of 1645 required boys between 10 and 16, with consent of their parents, be instructed upon the usual training days "in the exercise of arms, as small guns, half-pikes, and bows and arrows."

33. Cutshamakin, Josias, and Chicatobot were from the Massachusetts tribe.

34. Fathom: A unit of measure 6 feet in length.

35. Hosmer. II:156.

36. Felt, 14. Eight men and 17 women of the Wannalancet tribe were living in Ipswich in 1676.

37. On December 19, 1641 at a town meeting, this sum was voted to encourage Denison to remain as their military leader. It was to paid yearly on Dec. 10 so long as he held the military post. Among the subscribers were John Whipple, John Whipple, Jr., Reverends Norton and Rogers, William Goodhue, and Francis Dane. Schofield, 123-4.

38. Capt. John Whipple's estate was inventoried in 1683 and among his possessions was Lawrence, an Indian valued at £4. Undoubtedly, he was captured during King Philips War. Maj. Appleton bought three captives and Samuel Symonds paid £5 for an Indian boy and girl.

39. Expedition against Quebec—Rev. John Wise was one of four chaplains in the expedition. Other Ipswich men included Nathaniel Rust, Quartermaster of the expedition, Capt. Cross, and Capt. Samuel Ward.

40. Right to cut wood—The right could be bought, sold, or traded.

41. In 1634 the town granted permission to the grantees to have such trees on "paying a valuable consideration for the falling of them." In 1635, it ordered that "no man shall sell, lend, give, or convey, or cause to be conveyed or sent out of the town, any timber sawn or unsawn, riven or unriven, upon pain of forfeiting their sum or price." Town consent was necessary before any timber or clapboards could be removed beyond its bounds. In 1639 the town determined that any man cutting timber without permission of the Constable would be fined and if cutting with permission and not using it within a year, it was lawful for any man to use it. Firewood was allowed to be taken from the swamp between Timber Hill and Bush Hill in 1652 with each cutter limited to "2 rods in breadth and provided "they fell and clear as they go across the swamp." Cutting oaks or walnuts was prohibited in 1665 but maltsters Cornet John Whipple, Capt. Appleton, and Thomas L_____ were allowed to cut

some walnuts for their kilns in 1667.

42. Wages of artisans—The law of 1637 ordered that cakes or buns could not be sold except "such cakes as shall be made for any burial, or marriage, or suchlike special occasion." In 1639, the General Court admonished John Stone and wife "to make bigger bread or to take heed of offending by making too little bread hereafter," and stipulated that "no bread might be made finer than to afford at 12 ounces the two penny loaf."

43. Innkeepers could not charge more than 6d a meal.

44. Leather trade regulations—"No butcher, currier, or shoemaker should be a tanner; nor should any tanner be a butcher, currier, or shoemaker. No gash in a hide should be permitted. Every hide should be well tanned. Tanners should not set their vats in tan-hills or other places where the woozes or leather which shall be put to tan in the same shall or may take any unkind heats, or shall put any leather into any hot or warm woozes, etc."

45. Potter trade—"Tile earth, to make sale ware, must be digged before the first of the ninth month and turned over in the last or first month ensuing, a month before it be wrought."

46. Limitations on women—Another example of "womans' place" was noted by Governor Winthrop in April 1645. Governor Hopkins of Hartford, Connecticut brought his wife to Boston for medical care because she had lost her "understanding and reason by occasion of giving herself wholly to reading and writing," according to Winthrop. "Her loving and tender husband saw his error too late," he wrote, "for if she had attended her household affairs and such things as belong to women, and not gone out of her way and calling to meddle in such things as are proper for man, whose minds are stronger, she had kept her wits, and might have improved them usefully and honorably in the place God had set her." She was the aunt of Elihu Yale, founder of Yale University. Hosmer. II:225.

47. Half or quarter spinners produced proportionally.

48. To insure production, families were divided into groups or classes of 10, six, or five with a class leader over each group. This law also required the sowing of hemp and flax.

49. See page 123 for this oath.

50. See page 122 for this oath.

51. Voting by Non-freemen—Unless the freemen found just cause to deny them the right.

52. In 1645, based on a scarcity, each town was ordered to increase its sheep population, and in 1654 the Court prohibited the transportation of any sheep and the killing of any under two years old.

53. Authority to hire a cowherd—The vote was taken in September 1639 with William Fellows hired to keep the herd on the south side of the river from April 20 to November 20 for a fee of £15 in corn or money. Cow owners were to relieve him every other Sabbath. By 1642, the General Court was regulating cowherds. In 1670, Ipswich voted that all cows in the herd wear a bell which probably resulted in one of America's first examples of noise pollution.

54. Hogs on Plumb Island—From April 10 until harvest was complete. They were to build water troughs and be on the job 24 hours a day. The pay was 12 pence a hog upon initial delivery, 2 shillings a hog at mid summer, and 2 shillings a hog returned at the end of harvest. Plumb Island was not originally a part of Ipswich.

55. The young pigs got out of hand and in 1645 were not allowed loose in the streets unless yoked or ringed. Eventually the town contracted to take care of them on the

same basis as cows.

56. See Waters, Part I, for further information on highways and commons.

57. John Leigh impounded five cows of Simon Tompson who then petitioned Magistrate Daniel Denison for their release. Denison instructed Constable Theophilus Wilson on August 9, 1654: "You are required to replevin five cows of Simon Tompson's impounded by John Leigh, and deliver them to the said Simon, provided he give bond of 50 shillings with sufficient sureties to prosecute his replevin, at the next Court, holden at Ipswich and so from court to court till the cause be ended and to pay costs and damage as Leigh shall by law recover against him." When reporting back to Denison, Constable Wilson said he "replevined five cows of Simon Tompson and took bond of him accordingly." Every time a stray animal was impounded, this formal proceeding was necessary before it could be recovered by the owner. This custom continued for many years. Waters, Part 1. Replevin — the recovery by a person of goods claimed to be his, on his promise to test the matter in court and give the goods up again if defeated.

58. Residents—A third body of inhabitants, and by far the largest, was distinguished as "residents." Every man age 20 who resided within the town limits for six months and was not enfranchised had to take the "Residents' Oath" before the Governor, Deputy Governor, or Assistant and was then recognized as a duly qualified inhabitant. The Statute of 1647 allowed them to serve as Constables on on juries and to vote for Selectmen but that was the limit of their political privileges. See page 165 for the resident's oath.

59. Sheep pastures—Nine flocks were provided for: the Ram Pasture flock, the Bush Hill flock, Turners Hill flock, Turkey Hill flock, Bull Brook flock, the Town flock, alias Windmill Hill flock as far as the bridge below William Durges and as said Rivulet runs by Henry Gold's to Choates land; Red Root Hill or Brags & Kinsman flock, the farmers flock next Wenham called **Whipples flock**, alias Jobs Hill flock, the Chebacco flock. It was further ordered that shepherds keep their flocks within the prescribed limits or pay a fine of 2s 6d for each conviction, have a cottage near his flock, a "fold" to put the sheep in at sunset, and to put them out half an hour after sunrise.

60. Division of common land—A list of old and new commoners was agreed to and the land divided:
    1. Convenient for Chebacco, about Chebacco Pond, about 873 acres.
    2. Convenient for the inhabitants of the Hamlet, about 470 acres.
    3. From Chebacco Pond running northwesterly, taking all the common lands between the two lines to Cowkeepers Rock, and all that piece of common up to the highway by tanner Norton's, and by the fence to the gate by Appleton's Mill, about 1,181 acres.
    4. Thick woods and Pigeon Hill.
    5. Beginning at Kimball's corner—Warner's or Day's gate—about 946 acres.
    6. From Goodhue's corner to Day's corner, by the river, etc., about 578 acres. (5 and 6 including Bush Hill and Turner's Hill).
    7. Turkey Hill and land about Egypt River, 954 acres.
    8. Toward Rowley line, 850 acres.

61. Plumb Island—A study of the Sea-Coast Swamps of the Eastern United States indicated that "the Plumb Island system of marshes is perhaps the largest of any of the swamps of this description which exist north of Long Island Sound." U.S. Geological Survey, Sixth Annual Report, 1884-85. 359-98

62. Salt marshes—The first settlers attached great value to the short but succulent grass

which grows naturally on the marsh. The salt hay was cut and stacked on platforms about two feet high to keep it above high tide. It was moved during winter, loaded in gundalows at the nearest creek and rowed across the Plumb Island river to Green's Point Landing where it was again loaded, this time in ox carts, to be hauled home. The coarse, sedgy grass that grows on the low flats, where roots are bared at low tide, was used for roof thatch. After being replaced by shingles and tiles, it continued to be prized for banking the farm cellars on the outside, bedding and fodder for cattle, and a variety of other farm uses. The thatch banks were sold or auctioned annually at a meeting of the commoners. When the tides were favorable, the oozy, slippery banks were invaded at low water by an army of mowers in high boots who cut the grass with their heavy scythes and loaded it on a gundalow before the tide returned. A Mr. Shatswell owned the wharf at Green's Point Landing and rented gundalows to the farmers. His books for 1766 show Plato Whipple, Deacon Matthew Whipple's slave, rented a great gundalow for a day at a cost of 22/6 and hired help for a day's thatching for 25/.

63. Selectmen chosen at the Feb. 14 meeting were Cornet Whipple, Mr. John Appleton, John Dane, Maj. Gen. Denison, Ensign French, Will Goodhue, and Mr. Samuel Symonds. It was also agreed that Whipple, Robert Lord, John Leighton, and Thomas Lovel would lay out the lots. Waters, *Plumb Island, Ipswich, Massachusetts*, Publications of the Ipswich Historical Society XXII, Newcomb & Gaus, Printers, (Salem, 1918). 6, 7.
64. The summer population grows to 8,000
65. Plumb Island has 1,218 acres of sand dunes, 2,994 acres of salt marsh and tidal waters, 265 acres of freshwater marsh, 173 acres of glacial upland, and six miles of sandy ocean beach.
66. See Edie Clark, "This New England: Plum Island, Massachusetts, *Yankee*, July 1981. Monthly magazine published in Dublin, NH 03444. 46.
67. Soil fertilzer—Because dogs dug up the fish, the town voted in May 1644 that all dogs had to have one leg tied with the owner responsible for damage by loose dogs who dug up the fish. The man refusing to tie his dog was subject to a fine of 12s plus damages.
68. Potatoes were first cultivated in 1733. Three bushel were considered an ample crop for a family.
69. Even though it was against the law. Under the statute of 1634, "no person shall take tobacco publicly, on fine of 2s 6d, or privately in his own or another's house, before acquaintances or strangers." The buying or selling was prohibited in 1635.
70. Along with "liberty to cut timber if one-fifteenth of what is sawed there be granted to the town." Other conditions included "no timber be cut within three-miles-and-a-half of the Meeting-House, and the inhabitants be charged no more than four percent."
71. The brew house, started in 1663, was located near the river and operated by John Paine.
72. The malt house was started in 1642 and was operated by Mr. Appleton. In 1665, Mr. John Whipple, Jr. and Mr. John L_____ were engaged in the same business.
73. The salt house was located on the river bank and started by Moses Pengry in 1652. A salt works was later established on the southern part of Plumb Island near the mouth of the Ipswich river. Sea water was pumped to a height of about 30 feet by six windmills with the water falling on a heap of brush, then trickling to the vats. The water gradually evaporated, leaving crystals of salt in the vats. On days with no wind, a bull provided the pumping power by walking tread-mill fashion in an "over-

shot" wheel. The wheel was 15 feet in diameter, five or six feet wide, and suspended in an upright position from a heavy wooden frame. Shallow buckets on the outer rim lifted the water from the canal. Heavy rains frequently diluted the water in the open vats and salt in paying quantity was not produced. Waters, *Plumb Island.* 29.

74. The tan vats were started in 1640 by Thomas Clark at the end of his planting lot by the river. Later in the century, Nathaniel Rust had a tannery to cure sheep skins and manufacture gloves.

75. The work house to make soap started in 1661 or 1662 and was operated by Nathaniel Browne.

76. Chirugeons—Surgeon

77. John Winthrop, Jr. arrived in November 1631 and was elected to the Board of Assistants at the next election serving for 18 successive years, even when temporarily absent.

78. For information on Saltonstall, see Robert F. Moody, Editor, *The Saltonstall Papers, 1607-1815*, 2 vols. (Boston, 1974).

79. Thomas Dudley came to America with his family in 1630, originally settling at Newtown before moving to Ipswich. Served several terms as Governor and Deputy Governor. See endnote 15, page 197 for more on Dudley.

80. Simon Bradstreet arrived with Dudleys. He married Anne Dudley when she was 15, he 25. He was the son of a nonconforming minister, a graduate of Emanuel College, Cambridge, and successor to Dudley in the stewardship (business manger) to the Earl of Lincoln.

81. Samuel Symonds was among the most distinguished of the first settler of Ipswich. Born in 1595, he was descended from an ancient and honorable family in Yieldham, Essex, where he had good estate. He was granted a 500 acre farm in 1637 which he developed and named Argilla. He also owned about 320 acres in Chebacco which he purchased from John Winthrop in 1637. His first wife was Dorothea (Dorothy) Harlakenden and their children were William, Harlakenden, Samuel, Dorthea, and Elizabeth. Dorothea Harlakenden, a direct descendant of King Edward III (1327-1377), was born Dec. 12, 1596 and buried in Topsfield, MA Aug. 3, 1636. She married Symonds April 2, 1617. For her pedigree, see Charles H. Browning, *Americans of Royal Descent*, 7th Edition, Genealogical Publishing Co., Inc, (Baltimore, 1986). pp. 279-8 Son William Symons married Mary, daughter of Jonathan Wade of Ipswich and their daughter Dorothy married **Cyprian Whipple**, son of Lieut. John and grandson of Matthew Whipple.

82. Daniel Denison was chosen Troop Captain in 1636. He was assigned land in 1635, married Patience, daughter of Governor Thomas Dudley. Their daughter, Elizabeth, married John Rogers who became President of Harvard. He was Deputy to the General Court 1635-40, '44, '48, '49, '51, '52, Secretary of the Colony in 1653, Speaker of the House, Justice of the Quarterly Court, and Assistant 1654-82; Commissioner of the United Colonies 1654-7 and 1659-62; and was Major General of the Colony for 11 years, serving between 1653-8 He died September 20, 1682, age 70 John Whipple served as his fellow Ipswich deputy in 1640, '51, and '52.

83. The oath taken by Assistants: Whereas you Richard Saltonstall are chosen to the place of Assistant over this jurisdiction of the Massachusetts, for this year and until new be chosen and sworn; considering how you stand obliged to the Kings Majesty, his heirs and successors, by our charter and the government established thereby; do swear accordingly by the great and dreadful name of the ever-living God, that you will bear faith and true allegiance to our sovereign Lord the King, his heirs and successors; that you will truly endeavor according to your best skill to carry and

demean your self in your place for the said time, according to the laws of God and of this land, for the advancement of the Gospel, and the good of the people of this jurisdiction; you shall dispense justice equally and impartially according to your best skill in all cases wherein you shall act, by virtue of your place; you shall not wittingly and willingly exceed the limitations of your place, and all this to be understood during your abode in this jurisdiction. So help you God in our Lord Jesus Christ. Whitmore. 2:164.

84. In the early years there was animosity between Winthrop and Dudley with the latter feeling the former was not strict enough. They eventually became allies. This was the first of several terms as Governor for Dudley.

85. The first Court of Assistants met at Charlestown August 23, 163 The last Court of Assistants to meet in England was March 23, 1630. The meeting was attended by Gov. Winthrop, Dep. Gov. Dudley, Bradstreet, Roger Ludlow, Increase Nowell, William Pynchon, Edward Rossiter, Saltonstall and Thomas Sharpe. The first item of business was to provide housing and maintenance for two ministers, George Phillips and John Wilson. With this meeting, the transfer of the Charter was complete; the trading company of the Massachusetts Bay was dead; the Commonwealth of Massachusetts was born. Samuel Eliot Morison, *Builders of the Bay Colony*, Houghton Mifflin Company, (Boston, 1930), 79.

86. Andover—Simon Bradstreet owned a mill site there but how early he built a house and when he settled there permanently is not known. Andover was not far from Ipswich by forest trail.

87. Anne Bradstreet was 23 and a mother when they arrived in Ipswich in 1636. They lived there eight or nine years. See Elizabeth Wade White, *Anne Bradstreet: The Tenth Muse,* (New York, 1971) and Ann Stanford, *Anne Bradstreet: The Worldy Puritan: An Introduction to Her Poetry*, (New York, 1974). The Bradstreets sailed on the *Arbella* on its 1630 voyage. When arriving in New England, Anne "found a new world and new manners, at which my heart rose. But after I was convinced it was the way of God, I submited to it and joined to the church at Boston." Morison, 321.

88. Bradstreet was made to feel defensive about writing poetry:

> I am obnoxious to each carping tongue
> Who says my hand a needle better fits,
> A poet's pen all scorn I should thus wrong,
> For such despite they cast on female wits;
> If what I do prove well, it won't advance;
> They'll say its stol'n, or else it was by chance.

Her poetry dramatizes the central Puritan problem: how to live in the world without becoming worldly. In one of her 77 "Meditations Divine and Moral," she describes the appeals of the world: "Some children are hardly weaned. Although the teat be rubbed with wormwood or mustard, they will either wipe it off or else suck down the sweet and bitter together. So it is with some Christians. Let God embitter all the sweets of this life, that so they might feed upon more substantial food, yet they are so childishly sottish that they are still hugging and sucking these empty breasts that God is forced to hedge up their way with thorns or lay afflictions on their loins that so they might shake hands with the world before it bid them farewell." Emerson, 108-9.

89. The Ipswich church was founded in 1634. Edmund Gardner was employed to keep it water tight and warm. He took his pay in summer wheat. The second Meeting-House was more pretentious, square with a turret in the center and windows in

leaden sashes. When It was enlarged and the old bell donated to the school house, 53 members authorized merchant John Appleton to buy a larger one in London. Their names are inscribed in the town books to this day. The third church, built about 50 years later, was banked with stone and gravel from the old fort on the Green. The community had a sense of security and there was no longer need for the garrison house. Still another Meeting-House was raised on the original spot in 1749. It was spacious by comparison with a needle spire, double doors, bobbined pews, and a sounding board. It was used until early in the nineteenth century when a new church took its place. Agnes Edwards, *113-16.*

90. In 1637 the elders decided the church had no power to call into question the proceedings of a civil court since scripture furnished no example of it.

91. The title Reverend was seldom if ever used for clergymen in England or New England before the end of the seventeenth century. Instead they were called Master, abbreviated Mr., because most had taken the degree of Master of Arts.

92. Some reports say Rev. Ward was 55, others 64, at the time. His health became impaired so he gave up the ministry about 1636 but continued to live in Ipswich for about 10 years. His famous satire, *The Simple Cobbler of Aggawam*, was published in England and attained immediate success with four editions published in 1646. He completed his MA at Emmanuel in 1603, studied and practiced law in London for about 10 years, then traveled on the continent, living at Heidelberg at the Court of the Elector Palatine and the Princess Elizabeth, daughter of James I. David Pareus, a learned Calvinist and Professor of Theology at the Heidelberg University, persuaded him to enter the ministry which he did as a Puritan. He became Chaplain of the Mercantile Colony of the Eastland Company at Elbing, Prussia. Theophilus Eaton, Deputy Governor of the Company, was also an organizer of the Massachusetts Bay Company and eventually became the first Governor of the New Haven colony.

Ward returned to England around 1624, served as Curate at Saint James' Piccadilly until 1628 when he became Rector of Stondon Massey, Essex. He is related to the Winthrops by his daughter's marriage and became a freeman of the Massachusetts Bay Co. before the transfer of the Charter. In 1633, after many conferences and showing "long patience," Bishop Laud excommunicated him and he decided to take refuge in Massachusetts Bay. Laud seems to have dealt with him in a more urbane manner than he did with Rev. Thomas Shepard (see endnote 221, page 214) for Ward was a man of the world with powerful friends and 25 years Shepard's senior. Morison, 220-2.

93. The first reference to a Meeting-House in Ipswich is in the public laws of September 3, 1635.

94. Rev. John Norton was from Hertfordshire and landed at Plymouth in December 1635, age 29, blown there by contrary winds. He preached there that winter and was asked to stay but moved to Ipswich. Norton was a member of the Synod of 1637 that heard the case of Mrs. Ann Hutchinson and was influential in the formation of the Cambridge Platform in 1645. He left Ipswich for Boston where he was installed Pastor of the old church July 23, 1653. There, he prosecuted Quakers and Baptists with a fierce fanaticism. He and Simon Bradstreet were sent to England at the restoration to make peace with Charles II. He died in 1663. Hosmer. I:167.

95. Salem was the nearest settlement with no other along the coast closer than the feeble hamlet on the site of Portsmouth, N.H. After Newbury and Rowley were settled, Ipswich was less isolated.

96. At one time, four magistrates — Bellingham, Saltonstall, Bradstreet, and Symonds

—lived in Ipswich. Ward was active in promoting the settlement of Andover and Haverhill where his son John was the first minister. Ward and Saltonstall were among the Bay men to return to England to take part in the Civil War. The colony was officially neutral in that conflict.

97. The Deputies chose Ward without consulting the Magistrates because they appreciated his racy wit, his work on the *Body of Liberties,* and because they knew the Magistrates would be annoyed by his indiscretion.

98. Rogers arrived in Boston in November 1636 and was invited to settle at Dorchester but since it didn't have room for those who came with him, he choose Ipswich and was ordained there February 20, 1638, the same year he took the oath of freeman. He was Curate at St. Mary's at Bocking from 1623-28 and was dismissed for his Puritan views.

99. Rev. Nathaniel Rogers' estate in Old and New England amounted to £1200 and he left £200 to sons Ezekiel, John, Nathaniel, Samuel, and Timothy, £5 to Harvard, and £3 to the poor. He had previously given £200 to his daughter. His wife Margaret died January 23, 1656. His will was proved September 25 by the oaths of Deacon John Whipple and Mr. Ezekiel Cheever. Whipple was one of the executors of the estate.

100. Sometimes spelled Cobbett.

101. Rev. Thomas Cobbet—He wrote more books than any man of his generation yet none survive. In 1645 he published four books: *Defense of Infant Baptism, Prayer, First, Second, and Fifth Commandments, and Toleration and Duties of Civil Magistrates.* His output in 1653 included *Vindication of the New England Government and Civil Magistrates in Religious Matters. Duties of Children to Parents and of Parents to Children* was published in 1656.

102. The church was repaired in 1673, seats installed in the gallery in 1674, and a "pouder roome" installed in 1681.

103. Rev. John Rogers, Md. arrived in 1636 with his parents, entered Harvard at 10 to study medicine and divinity, graduating in 1649. He was President of Harvard from August 12, 1683 until his death on commencement day, July 2, 1684. His 18-year-old son, John, graduated with that class.

104. Rev. Hubbard's wife was daughter of Rev. Nathaniel Rogers.

105. Hubbard died September 14, 1704, age 83.

106. *History of New England.* It was finished in 1680 but not published for over a century.

107. John Denison was a Harvard graduate of 1684 and grandson of Ipswich's General Daniel Denison and Deputy Governor Samuel Symonds.

108. The summons to worship by bell began in Ipswich as early as 1640 In addition to ringing the bell, Varnham was to keep the meeting house clean and "publish such things as the town shall appoint." The Crier was elected annually and received 6d from every man whose estate was rated under £100, 12d from those rated £100 to £500, and 18d from those rated more than £50

109. Church Attendance—By law, only the sick and disabled were excused.

110. The hour glass measured the length of the sermon.

111. The fear of Indian attack was with them until the early 1700s and fully armed sentinels were on watch outside during services.

112. Church attendance mandatory—There were no pews, only benches divided by a middle isle into equal parts. It was 1675 before pews were allowed. Francis Wainwright (father-in-law to Sarah Whipple, who was a grandaughter to Elder John Whipple), one of the towns most conspicuous citizens, asked for and was granted permission "to set up a pew six foot square or so much as amounts to it between the

two seats and the stairs on the North side." Pew by pew, encroachment was made on the central space but a century lapsed before the transformation was complete and all the old benches gone. The pew system solved the problem of young men and boys who were disorderly during services. With the pew system, families sat together.

113. Samuel Appleton, born at Little Waldingfield, England in 1586, was in Ipswich in 1635, a freeman in 1636, and Deputy in 1637. His children were John, Samuel, Sarah, Judith, and Martha. John was born in 1622 and was Deputy from 1656-60, 1662-67, 1669-71, 1674, 1678, Clerk of the Courts, Essex County Treasurer, and Captain of a Troop. Samuel was born in 1625. He was a Deputy to the General Court in 1669, '71, '73, '75, '76, '77, '79, '80, on the Governor's Council 1681-6 and 1689-92, Justice of the Quarterly and General Sessions Court and of the Court of Oyer & Terminer on April 11, 1692 for one of the Salem witchcraft trials. He died August 16, 1692. His daughter Joanna married Maj. Matthew Whipple, grandson of John the Elder.

114. Their standing in the community was high enough that the Whipples would have been toward the front of the church. In later years, descendants moved to the front pews.

115. The singing was peculiar. One of the Ruling Elders read a single line followed by members who could sing, rising in different parts of the house to sing it; then other lines were successively singly read and sung till the conclusion of the psalm. When Elders were unavailable, Deacons performed this duty, which gave rise to the phrase, "Deaconing the hymn." It was 1763 before choirs became a part of the service with assigned seats. It was about 1781 before they were elevated to the gallery.

116. The Puritans viewed the Lord's Supper as a seal confirming God's holy covenant of love with His people and an instrument conveying Christ and all His benefits, chiefly pardon and eternal life, to the faithful. Davies, 283.

117. Because attendance was required of everyone but membership restricted to the few, more left than remained. Non members were allowed to be spectators.

118. Form: A long, wooden bench without a back.

119. Charger: A large flat dish.

120. Sacrament of the Lord's Supper—At the next sacrament, the pastor and teacher change services; he who began, ends.

121. Weekly collection—If husbands were absent, their wives did the giving.

122. Chattel: A movable item of personal property such as a piece of furniture, a head of livestock, a bushel of grain, a bundle of shingles, etc.

123. Information on church services is found in Felt, I:443.

124. Administration of public justice—Administered by the Quarter Sessions Court. The Judges were Magistrates who lived in the vicinity. Ipswich Judges in 1636 were Messrs. Bradstreet, Dudley, Dummer, Saltonstall, and Spencer. Messrs. Hubbard, Symonds, and Woodbridge, qualified in 1638. It tried civil causes "whereof the debt or damage did not exceed £10 and criminal causes not concerning life, member, or banishment." Right of appeal to the Great and General Court was allowed.

Among cases heard were: Thomas Rolingson and Robert Roberts in 1647 for refusing to help pay for the new Meeting-House; Joseph Fowler was placed in the stocks for charging there were liars in the church; Thomas Scott was fined for refusing to learn his catechism and Humphrey Griffin for unloading barley on the Sabbath before sunset. Mark Quilter and Thomas Willson were reprimanded "for going into a barn to sleep" while on night watch. Mr. and Mrs. Daniel Black were set in the stocks with instructions not to "miscall each other" and John Tellison was punished for tying his wife to the bed post with a plow chain to keep her at home.

Samuel Shattuck, celebrated in John Greenleaf Whittier's poem, "The King's Missive," Nicholas Phelps, and Joshua Buffum were fined in September 1658 for being absent from the Meeting-House to attend Quaker meetings. They were also committed to the House of Corrections until "they give security to renounce their opinions or remove themselves out of the jurisdiction." Eminent citizens were brought to Court for excessive charges in mercantile transactions. Mr. Jonathan Wade had to pay a fine of £5 and witness fees in 1658 for "expensive prices in selling grindstones and other things;" Mr. Robert Payne, a church Elder and patron of the grammar school, and William Bartholomew, Town Clerk, were similarly fined.

Abuses against Richard Parker, bond servant, caused the Court to caution Philip Fowler and charge him the cost of the trial. The charge was "hanging him up by the heels as butchers do beasts for the slaughter." Thomas Parell was fined for taking tobacco out of doors, Richard Hutten for smoking in the street on the Sabbath, and Nathaniel Treadwell's pipe, publicly used, cost him more than it was worth. Mark Symonds was fined for telling one lie and for "three other untruths" while Goodwife Haffield was fined for taking the name of God in vain. Obadiah Rice of Salem was found guilty of theft and was branded on the forehead with the letter B, fined treble damages, and sent to Salem to be severely whipped.

Sarah Row, a woman of unchaste life and violent behavior, was sentenced in 1673 "to stand all the time of the meeting from the last bell ringing, on a high place where the Master of the House of Correction shall appoint in open view of the congregation with a fair white paper written in fair capital letters," specifying her offence. Thomas Knowlton was sentenced in 1674 for "making disturbance in the Meeting-House." Two sisters, guilty of an unnatural crime, were compelled to face the pitiless scorn of the congregation, sitting on a high stool, with the tale of their infamy written upon them. Waters, Part 1.

125. A railer is one who speaks bitterly or reproachfully; complains violently. A scold is a person, especially a woman, who habitually uses abusive language.

126. America's first jail break—It is presumed someone on the outside assisted in the escape.

127. Petition leaders—Capt. John Appleton of Ipswich, Capt. William Gerrish of Newbury, Mr. Edmund Batter of Salem, and Capt. Thomas Savage, Mr. Thomas Brattle, Mr. Habakkuk Glover, and Mr. Thomas Dean of Boston. These leaders were identified as principal persons, some in public trusts, all, save one, freemen of the Colony and member of churches.

128. See endnotes 34 and 35, page 199.

129. The petition was presented to the General Court February 16, 1681. Other Ipswich men signing: John and Samuel Appleton, Thomas Burnam, Thomas Cobbet, Sr., Daniel Epps, William Goodhue, William Hubbard, Thomas Knoulton, Moses Pengrey, Sr., John Perkins, John and Samuel Rogers, Symon Stace, and Jonathan Wade, Sr.

130. After meeting with Mason, Ipswich Selectman Thomas Lovell recommended the Mason claim be recognized. Instead, the town replaced him as Selectman with Capt. John Appleton.

131. See pages 33, 34.

132. Gov. Andros' new tax—An Act for the Continuing and Establishing of Several Rates, Duties, and Imposts, passed in early March.

133. This edict revealed the arbitrary character of the new government. Heretofore the colony had apportioned taxes according to the necessities of the times. Representatives of the towns debated all financial measures in the General Court and town

meetings decided the local rate.

134. Selectmen in 1687—Mr. John Whipple, Jr., Mr. John Appleton, Jr., Lieut. Thomas Burnam, Sgt. Thomas Hare, Quartermaster Robert Kinsman, Nathaniel Treadwell, and Lieut. John Andrews, moderator.

135. Meeting place—At the home of John Appleton, Jr., town clerk.

136. Rev. John Wise—Second minister of the Chebacco parish. He was baptized in Roxbury Aug. 15, 1652, was graduated from Harvard in 1673, and took up his Chebacco duties after being ordained there Aug. 12, 1683. In 1710 he authored *The Church's Quarrel Espoused* and published *A Vindication of the Government of the New England Churches* about 1717. Both are standard works in ecclesiastical concerns. He was one of the few to advocate inoculation for small pox at a time of deep-rooted prejudices and general reproaches against such advocacy. He died April 8, 1725. Felt. pp. 259-6

137. The following is from Town meeting minutes: "... considering the said act doth infringe their liberty as Free born English subjects of his Majesty by interfering with the statutory laws of the Land, by which it is enacted, that no taxes shall be levied on the subjects without consent of an assembly chosen by the Freeholders for assessing the same, they do therefore vote that they are not willing to choose a Commissioner for such an end, without said privilege. And moreover consent not that the Selectmen do proceed to lay out any such rate, until it be appointed by a general assembly, concurring with the governor and council, voted by the whole assembly twice."

138. Son of Capt. John Appleton who signed the petition of 1664 and served as a Deputy in the General Court. The son and father are frequently confused. Capt. John, a Justice of Essex county under the Dudley government, was a firm loyalist. His son, the lieutenant and Ipswich Selectman and Town Clerk, was the one arrested.

139. Petition for Bail—Signed by John Wise and John Appleton. See Mass. Archives, book 127, leaf 164.

140. Petition for a Pardon—Signed at Boston September 28, 1687 by John Whipple, Jr., John Andrews, John Appleton, Joshua Bayley, John Dresser, Thomas French, William Goodhue, William Hutchins, Robert Kinsman, Jacob Muzzill (Morrill), William Raymond, and John Wise. MA Archives, book 127, leaf 147.

141. In December 1689, Wise and the Ipswich Selectmen were ordered by the General Court to write a narrative of Andros' treatment toward them. This narrative, and others like it, was forwarded to England to substantiate charges against Andros for mal-administration. About the same time, Wise brought charges against Chief Justice Dudley for refusing him privileges of the *habeas corpus* act while he was imprisoned. Felt, 259.

142. Ipswich Church—According to local lore, the Devil perched on the belfry of the church during a fiery sermon in 1740 Incensed by what he heard, the Devil leapt to the ground, leaving the imprint of his cloven hoof on the front of the church.

143. And tour sites. The Old Burying Ground on High Street has gravestones dating to 1634 with carvings appreciated as American folk art.

144. Daniel E. Safford, *Hamilton*, Printed for the Hamilton Public Library in cooperation with the Hamilton Historical Society, Hamilton, Mass., 1989, 3-4. The Hamilton booklet is a reprint of Chapter 98 from the *History of Essex County*, Vol. 2. Philadelphia: J. W. Lewis and Co., 1888. (Hereafter Safford.)

145. Jonathan Whipple is the author's sixth great grandfather.

146. Safford, 3. Because there were so many Matthew and John Whipples, it is difficult

to identify the petitioners. However, Jonathan, James, and John Whipple are sons of Joseph Whipple and grandsons of the first Matthew. Both Matthew and Jospeh's farms were within the Hamlet Parish boundaries.

147. Hamilton's first church—The building was 50 feet long, 38 feet wide, and 20 stud. Its windows were small with diamond-shaped panes; the rafters were not covered with plaster so in the course of time, swallows built their nests among them and kept up a lively twitter during divine services. It was replaced by a new church building in 1762. Safford, 5.

148. Samuel was the son of Rev. Michael Wigglesworth, author of the noted poem, "The Days of Doom."

149. Safford, 29.

150. French and Indian War participant—Capt. Stephen Whipple was the great great grandson of the original Matthew Whipple of Ipswich. He was baptized 19 Nov. 1727 and was published to Ann Woodbury 4 April 1747. He died of his wounds six weeks after returning home.

151. Safford, 29.

152. Rev. Samuel Wigglesworth—The parish voted to pay for his funeral, to build a brick grave, to give £8 to his wife, and to provide seven gold rings, six for the bearers and one for Rev. Mr. Hopkins, who then preaching for them, and 18 pair of men's white gloves, presumably for the attending ministers. He was buried in the cemetery opposite the Meeting-House. Safford, 9.

153. Moderator of Hamilton's first town meeting—Nathaniel was the great great grandson of Elder John Whipple. He was born 7 Oct. 1721 and died 19 Dec. 1808. Safford, 15.

154. Ipswich residents from Essex Co., England—Others: Thomas Hart, *Baddow*; Richard Lumpkin, Joseph Mosse (Mores), and John and William Warner, *Boxted*; John Dane, Jr. and Thomas Wells, *Broad Oak*; Alexander Knight, *Chelmsford*; John Clark, Jr., *Colchester*; Lionel and James Chute, Theophilus Saler, and Samuel and Thomas Sherman, *Dedham*; Samuel Hall, *Essex*; John Browne, Sr., *Great or Little Baddow*; Henry Green, *Great Bromley*; Samuel, Sr., Samuel, Jr. and William Symonds, *Great Yeldham*; John Ward, *Hadleigh*; James Howe and Jathnell and Tholmas Bird, *Hatfield Broad Oak*; John Norton, *High Lever*; William Hubbard, *Little Clacton*; Robert Cole, *Navestock*; and Rev. Nathaniel Ward, *Stondon Massey*. Allen, 270-77.

THE MATTHEW WHIPPLE FAMILY

Matthew[1] Whipple *(Matthew[A]) was born abt 1590 in Bocking, Essex County, England and died 28 September 1647 in Ipswich, Essex County, Mass. He married twice. (1)* ***Anne Hawkins*** *in Bocking 7 May 1622. She is the daughter of John* ***Hawkins*** *and Mary* ***Levitt****. (2)* ***Rose Chute****, widow of Lionel Chute, in Ipswich on 13 November 1646. She is the daughter of Robert* ***Baker or Barker.*** *A clothier, Matthew migrated to New England in 1638. He was a farmer in the new world.*

Matthew **Whipple** and Anne **Hawkins** had the following children, all but Joseph born in Bocking:

	i.	*Matthew, about 1623 and buried 27 October 1623.*
	ii.	*Matthew, about 1624 and buried 3 April 1627.*
	iii	*Mary, about 1626. She was living in 1645.*
+	*iv.*	*Anne, about 1628 and married (1) John Annable, (2) Nicholas Clapp.*
+	*v.*	*Elizabeth, about 1629 and married Jacob Perkins.*
+	*vi.*	*John (Lieutenant), born 6 September 1632; died 22 November 1695. Married (1) Sarah Kent, (2) Elizabeth Woodman, (3) Mary Stevens.*
+	*vii.*	*Matthew, born ca 1635; died 20 October 1658; married Mary Bartholomew.*
+	*viii.*	*Joseph, born ca 1640; died between 20 November 1708 and 7 May 1709; married. (1) Sarah (____). (2) Sarah (____).*

MOST SPECIFIC information on the life of early residents of America is buried in the darkness of time. Consequently, the writer must utilize general information to speculate on what struggles and obstacles individuals had to overcome to reach their station in life. This is the approach used to tell the story of Matthew and Anne Whipple and their family.

In early 1638 it was doubtful the Whipples could even leave England for New England. The Privy Council was issuing orders in March and April to prohibit ships to sail there. Meeting at Whitehall March 30 and April 1, 1638, the Council ordered, "for reasons... best known unto their Lordships... the Lord Treasurer of England to order the stay of eight ships now in the river Thames prepared to go to New England... and to

put on land all passengers and provisions" already loaded. The next day the Council extended its order to cover "all ships" now bound for New England and all ships "hereafter discovered to be bound for New England" be stayed "until further orders from the Board." On April 15 the Council said the stays were required because "the Company of New England are... secretly transporting extraordinary quantities of wheat, beans, butter, beer, cheese, bacon, and like provisions to the great prejudice of the (local) poor and the enhancing of the prices of those commodities." These commodities were to be put "in safe hands" until further directions were received from the Council.

However, by April 20, the Council was hearing petitions and granting permission for vessels to leave "provided that the Certificates of the passengers be first brought to the Clerk of the Council" who would decide which passengers could be transported and what provisions would be allowed.[1]

Try to picture the world of the 17th century Whipple. Satan was an ever-present menace; the will of God controlled daily life, whether for good or ill. The Whipple of that era perceived nature and his own body with the mind of a child. He believed the earth was the center of the universe; that stars were burning vapors; that the moon and comets controlled human destinies; that strange portents[2] would be followed by disaster or evil. His life was governed by the supposed influence of the heavenly bodies. He believed there was a connection between a cyclone and an eclipse, that an earthquake was a movement of wind shut up in the pores and bowels of the earth.

To emigrate from accustomed social institutions and relationships to a wilderness community was a startling transformation for the Matthew and John Whipple families. They had to change or abandon almost every formal institution they had taken for granted. The medieval church calendar was abandoned in favor of a numerical sequence of months starting with the first month (March), the second month, etc., through the twelfth (February). Their year now started with Lady Day (March 25).[3] *They called the days of the week Sabbath, first, second, third, etc. with seventh being Saturday. Gone were the rector, curate, sexton, ringers,*[4] glebe land, parish, terrier,[5] tithe, perambulation,[6] churchwardens, sidesmen,[7] questmen,[8] overseers of the poor, and the other familiar objects of the church from the cross to the goblet. They were replaced by the town clerk, pastor, teacher, deacon, elder, meeting-house, selectman, and town rate.

Imagine the challenges the families faced. They left the settled life of clothiers and the amenities of Bocking, a town over 700 years old with a relatively large population (there were 7,000 cloth workers in and around the town in 1629)[9] to become farmers in a wilderness. They had to build

houses, barns, and other outbuildings for two families—brother John and his wife and five children migrated at the same time—, prepare for the onset of winter, plan for the coming year's farming operation without horses[10] and farm implements,[11] and contemplate the obligations of community leadership expected of them.

When the Whipples arrived, between five and six thousand people lived in the Bay colony. They were among the approximately 3,000 English who arrived in 1638 in 20 ships.[12] It is not known whether they landed in Boston or Salem or when or why they were assigned to Ipswich. It was one of the newer towns with a large land area and a population of approximately 480, many who had migrated from Bocking, including former Bocking Curate, Rev. Nathaniel Rogers, who was now pastor in Ipswich.[13]

Presuming they landed in Boston, the way to Ipswich was through a virgin forest of maples, hickory, and elm with native wildflower different from anything seen in England. They must have marveled at the "curiously shaped Jack-in-the Pulpit, the roots of which the Indians boiled and ate like turnips; the shy beautiful lady's slipper; and clumps of the white perky little flowers known as Dutchman's breeches."[14]

The first reference in Ipswich records to the family is September 1, 1638 when the seven selectmen granted Matthew "six acres of planting ground near the river" and John "six acres of planting ground next to his brother on this side the swamp."[15] They were jointly granted "200 acre" plus "meadow not to exceed 45 acres... to begin at Mr. Woodmansee's farm running toward Mr. Hubbard's farm.[16] The acreage was to be "divided as they shall agree." These were among the larger grants in early Ipswich.[17] Presuming Matthew's birth year to be 1590, he would have been 47, a life span for many Englishmen at that time. Anne was probably somewhat younger since she gave birth to their youngest, Joseph, presumably in 1640. How happy the family must have been when Joseph was born robust because children born weak and feeble could not be kept alive in those days. Two other sons had died in infancy. Their other children were young: Mary, 12; Anne, 10; Elizabeth, 9; John, 6; Matthew, 3. Fortunately they had cousins to learn with and to share the many surprises discovered in this strange new country.

Providing for two families of five children each, ages three to 16, must have been the chief goal of both families. Their commitment to Puritanism also obligated them to community involvement. Though a numerical minority, Puritans dominated life in the Bay colony. As church members, Matthew and John were expected to take leadership roles in the community. Normally the older brother would assume the more prominent role and nothing indicates Matthew was not eligible to become, as John did, a freeman. Yet he remained a commoner. Why? Probably because freemen

were obligated to serve in public capacities, commoners were not, and evidence suggests Matthew's health inhibited his activities. A family conference was probably held to decide a division of responsibilities and it appears that Matthew was to concentrate on the farming, making it possible for John to pursue the business ventures and public pursuits that eventually dominated his life. Previous writers have stressed that John, though younger, achieved greater prominence than Matthew, overlooking that Matthew died nine years after arriving while John had 31 years to achieve his level of prominence.

They were among the 43 families moving to Ipswich in 1638, joining the approximately 96 families already there.[18] Their first task was to arrange for living quarters, plant a garden and orchard, and prepare the land to grow a crop. While they probably missed the massive earthquake of June 1, 1638 which even shook the ships at anchor and startled the populace with a noise like continuing thunder or "the rattling of coaches in London,"[19] they would have learned that the townsmen were completely unnerved by these quakes and took them as a portent of bad things to come. And in late September after their arrival, a major rain storm, accompanied by the highest tides since the 1630 arrival of the Winthrop fleet, confirmed this belief.[20] Six weeks of rain and snow began in October with no more than two days without one or the other. Everyone blamed the earthquake.

People huddled by their fires, praying their wood supply would outlast the storm. Pox[21] and fevers were epidemic, causing the General Court to declare a General Fast on December 13.[22] A great tempest of wind and snow came out of the northeast December 15. It stormed all night and the next day.[23] The tides exceeded anything previously known and boats at anchor suffered much damage. Five men traveling between Mattapan and Dorchester and a man and a woman traveling between Boston and Roxbury perished. It was the worst storm the English had ever known in New England. Since it hit a day after a General Fast, some ministers urged their congregations "to seek the Lord better." By February, wolves were howling nightly in the forests and everyone's food was reduced "to moldy, powdered beef and the last scrapings of the corn bin."[24]

Bad weather continued into the spring when a violent evening storm came out of the southeast and south in early March. Its fury increased till midnight, tearing down fences, and overturned houses, causing people to flee their homes. The snow was melting by the end of March but a great drought began April 26. No rain fell until June 4. The corn began to wither, creating a fear the crop would be lost. The General Court ordered a "day of humiliation" (fast) and the day after it was held, a good shower fell. Within a week, it rained enough to revive the crops, "giving hope of a

plentiful harvest."[25] Their second year in New England must have caused the Whipples to seriously question their decision to leave old England.

That life in this new land was not easy was readily apparent to the brothers. But they were willing to suffer the many hardships for the right to worship as Puritans. Imagine their feelings when the King insisted the Massachusetts Bay charter be returned to England. Giving up the charter would mean a royal governor, subjugation to the laws of England, and freedom to worship subject to the King's pleasure. It was with relief they learned in September that the General Court had refused to return the document and give up their powers of government.

The family lived on what later became the eastern corner of County and Summer streets. Their town lot of four acres included a dwelling house and barn.[26] That they were affluent is attested to by the house appraising for £36.[27] The inventory of Matthew's estate (see Appendix 9) shows it was well furnished and included a hall, parlor, and chamber over the parlor, a large house for the period.

Homes were heated by an open fireplace and stones were piled at the end of the house, wall fashion, in the form of three sides of a square, opening into the house. A hewn timber, functioning both as mantle and support for the upper portion, was laid across the ends at about six feet height with the chimney[28] carried up as high as the house and made somewhat smaller at the top where it formed a large flue. The stone hearth extended several feet into the room. Long, heavy logs[29] were piled in the fireplace on firedogs[30] to provide draft. Dead pine boughs were placed beneath the logs, jack knives were used to make shavings from dry sticks, and tinder-boxes held the tinder[31] to fire the shavings. During the winter, coals of peat[32] were kept in the ashes to keep the fire from dying.

Most of the heat escaped up the chimney so settees[33] with tight back boards, some as high as five feet, and several feet in length, were placed in front and on both sides of the fireplace, making it possible for the face and back to be equally warm. The fire was so bright that candles weren't required for ordinary house work. When working away from the fireplace, heat stones kept the feet warm. Eventually, a tin box (known as a foot stove) was developed. It contained live coals and was perforated on the sides for heat to escape.

According to the inventory of his estate, the hall in Matthew and Anne's home was a veritable arsenal with three muskets, three pair of bandoleers, three swords, two rests; a fowling piece; a coslett, pike, and sword; a rapier; a halberd and bill. The family had a silver bowl and silver spoons; pewter candlesticks, spoons, salts, pots, flagon, cup, and bottle; alchemy spoons; four trays and a platter; two bowls and four dishes; a pair of shears and a smoothing iron with one heater; two linen and one cotton

spinning wheels; and a joyned table. They even had two chairs, one of the rarest items of that period.

That the family was educated is attested to by their 29 books. Few of the earliest settlers had clocks or watches, time being told by hour glasses and sun dials. However, the Whipples had a clock valued at £1.[34] Their chamber contained seven children's blankets, a pillion cloth[35] and foot stool, curtains, and cushions. A stainell[36] and a baize bearing cloth[37] were in the parlor

Matthew and Anne would have slept in the parlor with the children sleeping in the chamber over the parlor. In winter nights, they would have jumped from the cold room into a deep, soft feather bed, supported by an under bed filled with straw, which overlaid the square meshes of the bed cord. In warmer weather, the harder straw bed changed places with the feather tick.[38] The Whipples' best feather bed, bolster, and nine pillows weighed 106 pounds and were valued at £12. They had four chests in their parlor, one furnished with a glass. These chests were as highly prized as closets and bureaus were in the future.

The family's every day dress was undoubtedly plain and comfortable but Matthew's Sabbath attire was probably expensive, elaborate, and ornamental. If so, he presented an imposing figure, carrying himself with poise and dignity in his colorful doublet, high stockings, shoes ornamented with straps and silver buckles, broad-brimmed hat, and gloves.[39] By contrast, Anne's Sabbath dress would have been simple, secure, and modest—a bonnet with one bow, calico dress of sober colors, high up in the neck, with a simple white muslin collar, a neat shawl, and a stout pair of shoes.

The supply of clothing and bedding brought to New England was probably limited so Anne and the daughters would have been kept busy spinning yarn and knitting stockings. Their spinning wheels made yarn to be wove into cloth on hand-made hand-looms.[40] Wild hemp was used until relatives and friends from home sent flax and hemp seed. They would have had linen wheels to spin the flax which was woven into fine lace of delicate and intricate pattern. They had sheep for wool[41] and cotton was imported from the West Indies. Hides of oxen, cows, and horses were tanned and used for boots, shoes, saddles, harnesses, and many other purposes.

Among the tradesmen the family patronized were Thomas Emerson, baker; Thomas Bridan, basket maker; Nathaniel Bishop, currier; Samuel Boreman, cooper; Thomas Hawlett, carpenter; Richard Kimball, Jr., wheelwright; future son-in-law John Annable, tailor;[42] John Denison, weaver; William Fuller, gunsmith; Edmund Gardner, operator of the saltpetre works. The family's medical needs were taken care of by John Ward,

"chirugeon," and Giles Firmin, physician. They took their grain to Richard Saltonstall's grist mill to be milled and their corn to Mr. Appleton's malt house to be malted.[43] The charge was one-sixteenth of the grain. Matthew would have bartered for their goods and services as the supply of silver or gold money was scarce. Musket bullets were used as currency and given the value of farthings. Wampum was traded as four white pieces or two blue pieces for 1d.[44]

The farmer's labor was hard and unending with one day's or one year's experience almost exactly like another.[45] Planting and cultivating were done with a hoe.[46] Grain was reaped with a sickle,[47] threshed with a flail[48] on the wide barn floor, and winnowed[49] with broad lipped winnowing baskets shaped like a huge clam shell. The wind blew away the chaff as the threshed grain fell in a thin shower. Flax was pulled by hand.

The soil of Ipswich was famously adapted for hay. After cutting and stacking the English hay, the Whipples would cut the blackgrass[50] that grew between the upland and the marsh, then harvest the salt-marsh hay.[51] On the nearer and accessible marshes hay was stacked on staddles[52] to raise it above the high tides. The green salt hay from the Plumb island marshes was loaded into great gundalows,[53] and when the tide was favorable, rowed to a convenient dock to be unloaded. The long, coarse, reedy grass by the thatch-banks, submerged by every tide, was of less value but Matthew would have harvested it for bedding and banking their house and outbuildings.

Maize, the most important Indian crop, was called Indian corn by the settlers and became the family's staple crop. Matthew cultivated it just as the Indian did, fertilizing with fish, manure, seaweed and vegetable compost.[54] Anne would have boiled or roasted the green ears with husks on and when reduced to grain, made ash-cake,[55] hoe-cake,[56] Johnny cake,[57] succotash, samp, hominy, parched corn, and hasty pudding. The stalks were fed to the cattle. Corn was shelled by hand during the long winter evenings and the cobs were used as fuel in curing ham.

Anne was in charge of the household, including the health of the family. She treated the family for everything from worms and fevers to temporary loss of eyesight and toothache; to counteracting the bites of snakes and mad dogs to staunching[58] a wound. She brought many remedies from England and learned new remedies from the Indians. While her garden was gay with a variety of flowers, the underlying reason for the garden was family necessity. She grew roots and herbs which were the source of many of the medicines used by the family. Their attic beams would have been hung with drying herbs so her herb chest would always be well-stocked. Her greens helped guard against scurvy. Lotions, cosmetics, and cleansing agents such as dyes, insecticides, and air-purifiers came from her flower

beds. Seasonings and tonics grew in abundance. Among the plants she probably grew for special purposes were sweet fragrant rose, burdock,[59] gilliflower,[60] mint, angelica,[61] comfrey,[62] elecampane,[63] agrimony,[64] lavender,[65] thyme,[66] parsley, and damask roses.[67]

Typical garden crops included cucumbers (also known as cow-cumbers or cow-combers), water and musk melon (known as millions), squash (sometimes known as squanter squash), gourds, beans, peas, and pumpkin (known as pompions). The shells of the gourds were used for storage, mixing bowls, masks, water jugs, dishes, and dippers. Following the Indian practice, Matthew would have planted pumpkin and beans between rows of corn. The Indians showed them how to cultivate turnips, parsnips, carrots, and onions. They brought wheat, rye, barley, oats, beans, peas, woad seed,[68] saffron heads, liquorice seed, madder roots and seed,[69] sweet potato, hemp, and flax from England.[70]

Matthew built fences around his land and helped to maintain the fence around the common pasture in proportion to his interest. The fence around his corn field had to be strong enough to keep out hogs and cattle. He had to prove the fence would withstand cattle before any damage caused by them could be recovered.[71]

The typical family was up before daylight. Matthew would have been the first to rise and would have kindled the fire under the kettle to boil the water for the porridge.[72] The toilet was an outhouse near the barn and a wooden wash basin in the hall was available for personal cleansing. Anne and the three daughters made beds, set the table, and prepared breakfast and the lunch the men took to the fields. They washed dishes, made cheese, and churned butter, usually until 11 when they began preparing dinner. The afternoon was spent cleaning, weaving, mending, gardening, and preserving food while the youngest played with his pet lamb. Preparation of supper followed.

While cheerful, the kitchen, properly known as the hall, was inconvenient and hard on Anne and the girls. Access to the cavernous oven was from outside and they had to handle huge and heavy kettles, long handled frying pans, and other bulky cooking gear. According to the estate inventory, the Whipples had three brass pots that weighed 68 pounds, a copper of 40 pounds, and five kettles and a pot lid of 58 pounds. They had four spits totaling 20 pounds, brass baking pans and iron dripping pans, kettles and pots, gridirons, frying pans, and skillets.[73]

Saturday was baking day and they baked for the entire week. After the oven was heated, it was swept and dusted. The brown bread dough required the most heat so was placed in the hottest part. Other foods baked simultaneously included a huge stone pot of beans covered with a thick slice of pork, Indian pudding in a broad, deep, earthen bowl, cake, and

pie, when fruit, berries and pumpkin were in season.

Annual soap making required the labor of as many women as Anne could organize. In preparation, she hoarded tallow[74] and meat drippings for months. It stank abominably when thrown into the great kettles of lye[75] and boiled in the barnyard. There were anxious moments while waiting for the soap to come and serious concern if the lye was not strong enough. She would have walked among the kettles, appraising the condition of the boiling, noisome[76] mess, rebuking and praising as the occasion demanded. She was an efficient commander of her forces.

Matthew's work clothes would have included a leather breeches and leggings, a short frock, and an old cocked-up hat. The boys wore cotton caps, short jackets, leather breeches and leggings. They began milking by dawn. By this hour, Ipswich was wide awake and busily astir. After milking, the cows, summoned by the cow herd's horns, were driven to the place of rendezvous in the south green or at Dodge's corner.[77] Matthew was one of the fortunate few who owned a bull which he undoubtedly hired out to service the neighbors cows.[78] He also had a team of oxen.[79] The hogs[80] were slopped, the sheep, goats, and chickens fed, the eggs gathered, the morning's milk strained and set for cream or heated to begin a cheese. After chores, Matthew read Scriptures—the Old Testament in the morning, the New at night—, led the family in prayer, and then they ate breakfast, by candle light in winter and dawn's light in summer.[81]

The bean or pea-porridge, served in small pewter bowls, was handed to each before they sat at the table with its center dish of small shad[82] and smoked alewives[83] and sometimes fresh eel the boys caught in the river the evening before. Brown bread and beer[84] completed the meal. Barley fire cake[85] was sometimes served, occasionally, the children had samp[86] and milk, the parents boiled salt pork.

Father, sons, and any helpers were in the fields by six with their tools, implements, and a gun. The gun served a two-fold purpose—to ward off hostile Indians and to shoot any game crossing their field. When game was killed, it provided several days of fresh meat. They utilized every part of the animal by salting and smoking. By 8:30, they were ready for lunch, usually smoked shad, bread, cheese, and cider. Thus refueled, they worked till 11:45 when the dinner horn summoned them home where they sat to the table just as the sun was square on the window ledge. After the blessing, they may have been served boiled salt pork, black broth, fried eggs, brown bread, cabbage, and beer. Dinner took 15 minutes. The balance of the time till 1 p.m. was called "nooning," free time to sleep or play. Then back to work in the fields where a drink of beer at three was the only relief of the afternoon. Field work ended at five, and one of the youngest sons drove the cows home. Milking was over by six, the hogs and goats herded

into their enclosures near the barn where the dogs guarded them from their night-prowling enemies. A supper of cold boiled venison, brown bread, and a mug of beer was preceded by a blessing. Sometimes it was boiled Indian corn mixed with kidney beans and salted pork or succotash.[87] The youngsters probably ate milk porridge or hasty pudding[88] laced with a little molasses.[89]

A neighbor might stop by at 7 p.m., not to ask the news for there was none, but to propose a different work schedule for some day next week. He would have been greeted with a hearty welcome and a mug of cider was soon consumed. By half past seven he was gone and the family gathered for prayer. The Scriptures were read and by eight, all were in bed except for one of the boys who received permission to sit up till nine and read by the light of a pitch pine knot, stuck into a hold in the chimney corner.[90] This routine was followed the planting, growing, and harvest months. Winter brought no leisure. The care of livestock, milking twice a day, and cutting wood in the distant wood lots, hauling it home, and cutting it to size for the great fire place consumed most of that season's short days.

The crop raised by the Whipple brothers in 1640 was valued at 5s per bushel for corn, 7s for summer wheat, and 6s 8d for rye. However, a scarcity of money made a great change in all commerce that year and commodity prices fell. Indian corn dropped to 3s the bushel, a good cow £7, some as low as £5, and many were unable to meet their debt obligations.[91] The General Court solved the problem by providing that future debts could be paid in corn, cattle, fish, and other commodities, as well as cash.[92] In 1641, the English civil war ended migration. As a consequence, commodities become scarce and prices rose. Since the colony didn't produce staples for export, a time of stress and suffering set in. The Whipples had fled the depression in England four years earlier only to re-live it in New England.

On April 16, 1641 Matthew and John were granted three more acres at the end of their 20-acre meadow and an allowance for the highway that would run through their farm. This public way was known as the "way to be through the farm of Matthew and John Whipple" and later became the eastern stage route in Hamilton, and still later called the Bay Road because it led to Boston.[93] In February 1643, the town instructed Richard Jacobs, Theo Wilson, and Moses Pengry to "view a way for Matthew and John Whipple."[94]

In January 1641, the town directed Matthew, Mr. Firman, Goodman Howlett, and Goodman Scott to control the cutting of timber and firewood. They were to stop the wasteful practices being followed. Permission to cut required approval of at least three of them. Those given per-

mission who did not use the wood within a year, forfeited what was cut to the town and it was disposed of by the committee.[95] Matthew and John were appointed to the committee for "furthering trade amongst us" that same date.[96] This committee arranged for the "putting up the buoys, beacons, and providing of salt, cotton, sewing of hemp seed, flax seed, and card wyer canes."[97]

The winter of 1642-43 was so cold the rivers and bays froze from January 18 to February 21. If Matthew had business in Boston, he was able to drive his cart right across the Bay. An early spring brought mild weather but May and June were wet and cold, and crops in the low meadows spoiled.[98] The cold wet weather continued all summer, greatly diminishing the harvest. Enormous flocks of pigeons, as many as 10,000 in a flock, added to his woes by eating most of the surviving English grain. Just when everyone thought the worst was over, the mice population exploded and devoured grain in both fields and barns. That winter they caused great damage to orchards by eating bark off the base of fruit trees. By March 1643, many families throughout New England had no corn to eat and were forced to live off clams, muscles, dry fish, etc.[99]

Mild describes the winter of 1644-45. It was so mild Matthew could plow right up to mid February. However, on February 16, 1644-45, a great snow began and fell for several days, making all ways unpassable for three weeks. Extreme cold accompanied the snow and it was the end of March before the snow was gone.[100] A caterpillar infestation did great damage to the family's corn crop in July 1646, eating the blades and tassels from the stalks, causing the ears to wither. Everyone believed they fell to earth in a great thunder shower as none were seen before the rain and they covered the countryside when it ended. The damage was so great, the church kept a day of humiliation and within a short period, the caterpillars were gone.[101]

Massachusetts began trading with Barbados and other West Indian islands the summer of 1647, making that a profitable year for Matthew and other farmers. The drought in the Indies destroyed food crops so the Islanders were eager to trade sugar, cotton, tobacco, and indigo for corn and other grain.[102]

Work ended early on Saturday so the family could prepare for the Sabbath which began at sunset. They gathered about their domestic altar where Matthew read the Scriptures and offered the family prayer. The youngsters were taught catechism, after which everyone retired—Matthew to count the gains of the past week, Anne to plan the coming week, and the children to dream their dreams.

Only labor that was absolutely necessary was allowed on the Sabbath. Every thing else violated the sanctity of the day. The hour of arising was remarkably late, the chores done in a leisurely manner, and a fresh-baked

pie made breakfast special. Family worship followed, beginning with two or three verses from the New Testament. They were careful not to kneel and all stood while Matthew, in extemporaneous prayer, thanked God for the family's bounties and asked for heavenly guidance. He offered thanks for their religious freedom and implored God to keep Popery, Episcopacy, and all other heresies from the Puritan church. The children spent the next hour memorizing bible verses or a hymn, or a page from the catechism. Anne taught the younger children Christian history or told the story of Joseph from the Old Testament while Matthew listened to the older children say their lessons.

They walked to church, except on stormy days when the oxen pulled them in the trumbil. On days Matthew was "watcher,"[103] he took his scabbard, musket, and ammunition to help repel any Indian attack. Public worship began at 11 a.m. and lasted for an hour-glass-and-a-half (1.5 hours). A half hour intermission followed during which the family socialized, sharing family and community gossip. The afternoon service was from 1 to 2:30 p.m. and the family was home by 3:30 p.m.

The Sabbath meal of beans with pork and Indian pudding, all perfectly done after being in the oven about 24 hours, was both dinner and supper. The pudding, a deep, rich amber with an abundance of juice or jelly, was eaten first. The beans were eaten with relish although everyone knew they would taste better tomorrow when no pudding preceded them. Desert was pie with cheese. The dinner conversation would have been about who they saw at the meeting and what news they learned. After they changed into work clothes, Anne listened to the childrens' catechism and explained the morning sermon, impressing on their young minds the truths of the message. The services ended with a reading of Scriptures and a family prayer that stressed piety and love. The concluding Amen testified to a Sabbath spent in the fear of God and the love of man.

Matthew and the boys finished milking by sunset then carried wood in for Monday's laundry. The great kettle was filled with water and kindling prepared so everything was ready for an early morning start. Anne and the girls, not daring to wash breakfast or dinner dishes while the sun was up, completed that chore before putting the dirty clothes to soak. The parents then lead the children in singing psalms[104] and by 8:30 the candle was put out and the day of worship and rest ended.[105]

Matthew was approximately 55 when he drew his will in May 1645. "Present sickness much increasing upon me," he wrote, caused him to consider his mortality and to provide for his six children.[106] His health must have improved for he married Rose Chute, widow of Lionel Chute, November 13, 1646.[107] On that same date he wrote a codicil[108] to the will adding "my wife Rose" as a legatee.[109]

In June 1647, an epidemic of colds and fever descended on New England, affecting almost every family. The sickness lasted for weeks and greatly weakened its victims. So many were afflicted, the hay and corn crops were lost for lack of harvest help. Those who were bled or used "cooling drinks" died and those who "took comfortable things, for the most part, recovered." Fatalities totaled 40 to 50 each in Massachusetts and Connecticut.[110]

Matthew died September 28, 1647. Cause of death of is unknown. It may have been a reoccurrence of an old illness or he may have been a victim of the epidemic. His life span of 57 years was average for that period. In addition to Anne, he had been preceded in death by two sons who died before the family left Bocking.[111] He was survived by wife Rose[112] and children Mary, 21, Anne, 19, Elizabeth, 18, John, 15, Matthew, 12, and Joseph, 7. All were living at home with the possible exception of Anne who married John Annable in 1647. It is not known whether the wedding occurred before or after her father's death.

Matthew signed his will in the presence of his brother John and Rev. John Norton. Thomas Knowlton and Theophilus Wilson witnessed his mark on the codicil, causing one to wonder if his physical condition had deteriorated to the point he could no longer write. He named John, Reverends Rogers and Norton, and Robert Payne his executors and instructed them about "the disposing of my three sons..." He provided that the "approbation and consent of the present Elders and my dear brother John" were required for the disposition "in marriage or service" of his daughters.[113] It is not known who took the children in but it is probable they moved in with their uncle John.

Rose was left £10 to be paid "presently after my decease" as well as "leaving unto her all the goods or estate that she had before marriage."[114] Eldest son John was bequeathed £60, Matthew and Joseph, £40. Mary, Anne, and Elizabeth were given £20 each. The girls were to receive their inheritance upon reaching age 20, the boys at age 21. Reverends Rogers and Norton were each given 40 shillings, as were the poor of Ipswich.

The will makes no mention of his farm or livestock and the inventory only includes his dwelling house, barn, and four acres. Why?[115] Were the farm and livestock sold before his death? Or was his property conveyed to John in exchange for rearing his minor children?[116] His house on the eastern corner of Country and Summer streets was sold to John Annable, husband of his daughter Anne, on July 10, 1647, more than two months before he died.[117] Mary Lovering Holman disputes this in her 1938 genealogy of the Pillsbury family. She said the Annable's lived at the eastern corner of Market and Summer streets in a house Annable purchased in 1642. Thomas Waters says Matthew's house and an acre was sold to

Robert Whitman in 1648.[118] Poor health may have motivated Matthew to dispose of his land and livestock before his death. He married Rose November 13 and the inventory of his belongings was dated November 24, almost a full year before his death. Perhaps he moved into the Chute home after marrying Rose.

Matthew was undoubtedly buried in Ipswich's ancient burying ground which was laid out in 1634. Presumably, he was buried next to Anne, however, no record survives to prove this. A tolling of the meeting house bell was the signal to assemble for his funeral procession, which presumably included most of the people of the town as well as many from surrounding towns, and to bear his body solemnly to the grave.[119] Reverends Rogers and Norton were present but there was no funeral sermon nor was anything read.[120] Funeral rings, scarfs, gloves, and mourning fans were probably provided to near relatives and persons of note in the community.[121]

At age 57, and after nine years helping to tame the frontier of the Bay colony, enduring and triumphing over many privations that required herculean labors, frail and weak of body, but, according to his will, "enjoying perfect memory and good understanding," Matthew acknowledged "the rich mercy of God" and looked forward to "resurrection unto eternal life." His time on earth had been well spent and he left a posterity that greatly benefitted from his efforts to civilize America.

The story of colonizing America has largely been told in terms of men for whom the old world was too cramped, who found release and creative joy in building houses, cultivating farms, founding towns and commonwealths, running church and state. But what about the women?

Put yourself in Anne Whipple's place in 1638. It was brutal for the Puritan woman of gentle nature, accustomed to a settled town or well-groomed countryside to be relocated in the New England wilderness. Things women love were replaced by a crude frontier life where nothing was settled, nothing was in its proper place. Compare the standards of ordered living and the amenities of Bocking to making a home in a raw village surrounded by a forest full of wild beasts and sulking Indians,[122] where everything required hard labor and where the unsettled conditions made men stern and silent, children unruly, servants insolent.

Anne Hawkins Whipple had known the English country at its gentlest, in the soft fens[123] and fertile farm land of Essex. She had seen the pastures, woods, and fields of antiquity of her native land through the eyes of poets she had read. She undoubtedly found it difficult to adjust to the rough majesty of nature in New England with its timbered hills and rocky valleys, its violent winters and obstinate springs and the long, hot, humid summers turning into autumn's glory of harvest and color. But adjust she

did. Sick or well, she was responsible for the laundry, garden, baking, brewing, peeling rushes[124] for candlewicks, malt and corn grinding, spinning cloth, knitting stockings, mending clothes and linen, churning butter, making cheese, and distilling essential simples[125] to treat the family's common ailments.[126] She administered, in nauseous doses, remedies of salts and senna,[127] rhubarb[128] and castor oil, squills,[129] snakeroot,[130] and saffron. Usually there was so much to do, she fell exhausted into bed at night and after a prayer, slept without dreaming.

Her music was the sputter of the churn, the scraping of the wool cards, the whiz of the spinning wheel, and the jerk-rattle of the weaving-loom. Her sofa was the settee, her carpets, clean white sand; her ceilings, rough boards and rafters; her parlor was kitchen, bedroom, and hall. The family clothes were the product of her looms and knitting needles. She doubtless spent the long evenings of winter in conversations about the old home in England, contrasting it with her new life. It was a hard life, it sapped her strength, it lead to an early grave. Anne, just as much as Matthew, was a builder, and was probably responsible for much of what Matthew accomplished.

Matthew and Anne helped lay the foundation of New England; helped make Massachusetts a reality. They were among the first to cut the primeval forests, to cultivate the virgin soil, to build a home on the frontier, to worship in the log meeting houses. Those who came after 1650 found Massachusetts a reality because of efforts of early colonists like Matthew and Anne Whipple. Their descendants should be proud they led the way to America.

1. "Orders in Council, from 1630 to 1641, when the troubles of Charles 1st commenced with his Parliament. Transcribed from the Original Books of the Privy Council, by Geo. Adlard, Esq. Feb. 1852." *Register*, 8:138-140.
2. Something that portends an event about to occur, esp. an unfortunate event; omen. Portend—to be an omen or warning of; foreshadow; presage.
3. Chilton Powell, Puritan Village. Wesleyan University Press. (Middletown, Conn. 1963). 143
4. Ringer—One who rings the church bell.
5. Terrier—A book containing a detailed inventory of the landholdings of persons.
6. Perambulation: Once a year, in or about Ascension Week, the minister, churchwardens, and parishioners of a given parish walk about its boundaries for the purpose of preserving accurately the recollection of them. Sometimes called "beating the bounds."
7. Sidesman—One of the persons elected as assistant to the churchwardens of a parish.
8. Questmen—A jury of inquest.
9. Parliament in 1547 authorized a survey in Essex which indicated Bocking's adult population was 800 and Braintree's was 480. Adding children would have brought the population to approximately 2,000, a sizeable population for a double village when a good-sized town would have no more than 5,000. The Bocking-Braintree community was in the throes of a major depression in the late 1620s causing the county's Justices to petition the Privy Council for relief on 17 April 1629. Further reports and letters were sent from both communities. The Bocking report began, "In and by, this town by the Manufacture of Bayes are set on work 7,000 persons." It concluded, "(the) town abounds with poor, whereof many are very unrulie; and having no employment, will make the place very hazardous for men of better Rank to live amongst them." The Braintree Report: "In and by, this town by the Manufacture of Bayes is maintained, and have dependent between 3,000 and 4,000 persons heretofore." W. F. Quin, *A History of Braintree and Bocking*. Lavenham, Suffolk, England: Lavenham Press Limited, 1981, 55-56, 58.
10. The inventory of only one estate filed before 1646 mentions horses. The estate of Samuel Smith of Wenham, died 1642, included a mare and colt. *Essex Antiquarian*. Vol. 5, No. 2, February 1901. 23.
11. The early settlers were without agricultural equipment. Twenty years later as wills began to be filed, only one-third of the Sudbury men had plow-shares and pairs of oxen as plow teams. These early open-field farmers shared equipment, labor, and administration. P. Bidwell, J. Falconer, *The History of Agriculture in the Northern U.S. 1620-1860*. (Washington, 1925). 19-23.

    The plows were wooden with iron point mould-boards and drawn slowly by patient oxen. The harrow was a clumsy tool, made of plank with great iron teeth. The common farm wagon was a tumbril with two huge wheels and axle, all of wood. Mould-board, a British term, now spelled mold-board. It is a curved plate of iron attached to a plowshare, for turning over the soil. The harrow was used to break up and level plowed ground, to cover seeds, and to root up weeds. A trumbil could be tilted for ease of emptying.
12. Gov. Winthrop ceased to record the arrival of individual ship in 1638 and lumped them all together. About 1 September he recorded that 20 ships with at least 3,000 persons arrived the summer of 1638. Of the ships, the following are identified: *Cas-*

tle of London sailed in April for New England; *Susan & Ellen*, Edward Payne Master, sailed from London 11 April, arrived 17 July; a ship of Barnstable arrived 21 September with 80 passengers, "near all western people;" *Diligent* of Ipswich, John Martin, Master, sailed in June, arrived 10 August at Boston with about 100 passengers principally from Hingham, Norfolk, destined for Hingham, Mass.; *Confidence* of London, 200 tons, John Gibson, Master, sailed from Southampton the last of April "by virtue of the Lord Treasurer's Warrant of 11 April 1638;" *Bevis* of Southampton, 150 tons, Robert Batten, Master, probably sailed in May; the *Martin* arrived in Boston before 13 July; *Jonathan* supposedly sailed from Southampton; *Beaver* of London, George Mayne, Master, arrived 22 June 1638 at Boston; *Mary Rose* of Bristol, 200 tons, arrived at Boston with 120 passengers. Only 20 percent of emigrants who arrived by 1641 and the ships they came on have been identified. Banks, *Planters of the Commonwealth*, 190-205.

On the departing end, England was having trouble with Scotland and the King and Council were so busy imposing the *Book of Common Prayer* and the canons on the Scotch churches, little attention was paid to the English migrants. When the arch-bishops ordered ships not be allowed to leave England, ship masters convinced the council that ending migration would hinder the Newfoundland trade which had become very lucrative to the motherland. Officers of the custom houses furthered the migration by allowing the immigrants to take what they wanted without question or control. James Kendall Hosmer, Editor, *Winthrop's Journal*, vol. 1. New York: Barnes and Noble, Inc. Reprinted 1959. 271-72

13. See pp. 68-9, Chapter 2, and endnote 102, Chapter 6.
14. Ana Seton. *The Winthrop Woman*. Houghton Mifflin Company. (Boston 1958.) p. 256.
15. Others writers have placed them there earlier. The years 1636 and 1637 are frequently mentioned. This author has not been able to find any documentation showing them in Massachusetts earlier than September 1638. The 1638 date is from George Schofield, *Ancient Records of Ipswich.* Ipswich: Self published, Chronicle Motor Press, 1899. (Hereafter Schofield). The pages are not numbered and this author numbered them. 38-39.
16. At this same meeting, three six acre lots were reserved for three of Rev. Rogers' friends. The lots adjoined Rogers' 20 acre site near Heartbreak Hill. Simon Stacy, a Bocking clothier, was granted six acres of planting ground "beyond the swamp next to John Whipple." Schofield, 38-39.
17. Perzel, Edward Spaulding, *The First Generation of Settlement in Colonial Ipswich, Massachusetts 1633-1660.* New Jersey: The State University of New Jersey, Ph.D. Thesis, 1967, 307-8. Ipswich land information is found in the *Records of The Court Holden at Ipswich 1638,* 6 vols; Registry of Deeds, Essex Co. Court House, Salem, MA; *Essex County Deeds, Books 1 to 100,* Registry of Deeds, Essex Co. Court House; Ipswich Grants, town meeting, 1634; and Town Records and Land Grants, 1634 to 1757, Ipswich.

Schofield on pp 38-9 says Matthew was granted "six acres of planting ground next to Robert Cranes in the new planting ground near the river." John was granted six acres adjacent "this side the swamp." The brothers were jointly granted "200 acres of land and meadow to it not to exceed 45 acres."

Ipswich assigned every man a town lot on which they built their home and immediately became commoners with certain definite rights in the common land. Tillage lots lay in common with their bounds determined by stakes or boundstoned. To separate them from neighboring tracts of wild land, the town, in 1637,

ordered a common fence be built "from the end of the town to Egypt river and from the east end of the town in the way of Jeffrey's neck." Working cattle roamed this fenced area at night, on Sundays, and wet days when they could not be worked. *Ipswich Village and The Old Rowley Road.* Ipswich Historical Society. (Ipswich. 1914). 33-4.

18. Felt. History of Ipswich, Essex, and Hamilton, Mass. 10-13.
19. The initial quake lasted four minutes and was felt in Massachusetts, Connecticut, Rhode Island, and New Hampshire. Aftershocks continued for 20 days. Hosmer, *Winthrop's Journal*, vol. 1, 270-71.
20. Hosmer. *Winthrop's Journal.* Vol. 1., 277.
21. Any of various diseases characterized by skin eruptions, as smallpox or chicken pox.
22. Hosmer. *Winthrop's Journal*, 283-84.
23. Snow was allowed to accumulate and wasn't even trampled, making if extremely difficult to get around during periods of snow storms. It was near the end of the 18th century before towns began to remove the snow. *Essex Antiquarian.* Vol. 5, No. 2, February 1901. 23.
24. Hosmer. *Winthrop's Journal.* Vol. I. 291.
25. Ibid. 306-7. The mackerel run in September was large and the fish fat, assuring a successful fishing season.
26. Felt. *History of Ipswich, Essex, and Hamilton, Mass.* p. 17. Perzel says it was 6 acres. 307.
27. Joseph Morse was considered a man of wealth and social standing. His inventory in 1646 mentions a house, land, etc. valued at £9. Thomas Firman was a leading citizen and in his inventory his house appraised at £15. Richard Scofield sold a house and two acres to Robert Roberts in 1643 for £11 17s. John West sold John Woodman a house and an acre and a half for £7 in 1649. Sherman L. Whipple and Franklin Waters. *Puritan Homes.* Publications of the Ipswich Historical Society. Newcomb & Gauss Co., Printers. (Salem. 1929). p. 7.
28. Soot gathered in large quantities on the interior of chimneys. The trade of chimney sweeping was started by men who used boys for the work. Most boys started at age 5 or 6 and were clothed in leather breeches, small flannel jacket, no stockings, and worn-out shoes. They were seldom furnished soap and few masters requested they bathe. Many carried their sooty accretions for a year at a time. "Little boys for small flues" was the pitch. They climbed the chimneys by pressing their knees and elbows against the sides of the flues, working their way up and down. Elbow and knee sores remained unhealed for months, sometimes for years, their scars remained through life, and they became stiff-kneed and otherwise crippled. "Chimney Sweeping." *Essex Antiquarian.* Vol. 6, No. 7, 1900. p. 103.
29. Wood was the popular and convenient fuel and great loads came to town daily to be sold.
30. Firedog—An early version of an andiron.
31. Tinder—Any dry, easily flamable material used to start a fire from a spark made by flint and steel struck together.
32. Peat came from dry meadows. The surface was removed and long turf spades thrust three to four feet into the dense black peat. These long bricks were dried and stored in peat houses. By fall, they were dry and solid and carted home for use in the fireplace causing a pungent "peat-reek" throughout the house.
33. Settee—A seat or bench with a back, usually for two or three people.
34. Sun dials were useful only when the sun shone. In their simplest form they consisted of a little post. Hours were designated by the shadow cast at sunrise and sun-

set when days and nights were of equal length. Notches cut into window sills was the only way many determined noon. Some people had marks denoting other hours of the day and even fractions of hours. Other houses had a scale on the floor that represented the length a shadow cast as the sun moved northward in the spring and southward in the fall. It marked the days and months of the calendar for the entire year. *Essex Antiquarian*. Vol. 4, No. 5, May 1900. 65-8

35. Pillion cloth—A pad or cushion fitted for adjustment to a saddle behind as a seat for a second person, usually a woman. The pillion cloth was included in the inventory of Matthew's estate in 1647, suggesting the family had horses by then.
36. Stainell—The author was unable to find a definition for this word.
37. Puritan babies went to church the first Sabbath after birth and the baize bearing cloth was for wrapping babies when carried to baptism. It was probably used for Joseph, the only family member to be born in the Bay colony. His year of birth is thought to be 1640. Baize was formerly bay and was first manufactured in England in 1561. It was of thin, fine material.
38. Spring cleaning was a major undertaking because of the heavy bedsteads with turned posts and big head and foot boards of hard wood. They were taken apart and set up again after the long bed cord was woven criss-cross and set taut with a wrench and wooden pin designed for this purpose.
39. The Sabbath clothes lasted a life time.
40. The hand-loom was the only machine in use until 1733. The process was slow and tedious and the cloth was generally woven plain, although there were variations of stripes and plaids. Cotton, wool, and linen were woven into cloth, either alone or in combination. A combination of linen and wool was called "linsey-woolsey." In addition to clothing, table and bed linen, sail cloth, bed ticking, and handkerchiefs were woven. "Early Weaving," *Essex Antiquarian*. Vol. 2, No. 6, June 1898. 92-4.
41. Because wool was in great demand for clothing, sheep were given the privilege of grazing on the common land and dogs who killed sheep were hung. Eliza Philbrick, "Spinning in the Olden Time," *Essex Antiquarian*-, Vol. 1, No. 6., June 1897. 87-91
42. Annable married Anne, second daughter of Matthew and Anne.
43. Malted—Grain softened by soaking it in water until it sprouts and then kiln dried; used for distilling certain alcoholic beverages or liquors; especially beer and ale. *Essex Antiquarian*. Vol. 1, No, 6, 96-99.
44. Ibid. 104. A farthing is a British coin equal to one-fourth of a penny.
45. The boys from the two families were 13, 8, 6, and 3, hardly an age to be of much help in clearing land and tilling the rocky soil.
46. By 1637, there were only 37 plows in all of Massachusetts. Felt. Ipswich, Essex, and Hamilton, Mass. 47
47. Sickle—The oldest of reaping instruments. A curved blade of steel (anciently, also of bronze) used to cut grain or grass. The edge is on the inner side of the curve. It has a short handle or haft. The harvester grasps the grain with the left hand and cuts with the right.
48. Flail—An instrument for threshing or beating grain from the ear. It consists of a hand-staff and a swingle or swiple which strikes the grain. A middle band connects the hand-staff and swingle by a thong of leather or a rope of hemp or straw. Swingle—a wooden, swordlike tool used to clean flax or hemp by beating or scraping.
49. Winnowed—To expose grain to a current of air to separate and drive off chaff.
50. Blackgrass—A dark-colored rush of salt-marshes.
51. Salt hay was healthy for cattle and saved on other fodder.

52. Staddles—[Archaic] the base or supporting framework of a stack of hay.
53. Gundalow—A heavy, flat-bottom boat.
54. Shad and alewives, 1,000 per acre, produced three times more corn than without. Other than heads and offals, bass and cod could not be used as fertilizer. As population increased, the fish diminished and their use as fertilizer discontinued. Felt. *History of Ipswich, Essex, and Hamilton, Mass.* 37, 39.
55. Ash-cake—A cake baked on or in hot ashes.
56. Hoe-cake—The author was unable to find a definition for this word.
57. Johnny cake—Unsweetened flat cake of Indian meal, sometimes mixed with mashed pumpkin (especially in New England) and usually baked in a pan. Incorrectly used at time for corn-bread, pone, etc.
58. Staunch—To stop or check the flow of blood from a wound.
59. Burdock—Any of several plants of the composite family (the daisy, thistle, artichoke, chrysanthemum, etc. belong to this family), with large basal leaves, and purple-flowered heads covered with hooked prickles. Prickle—a small, sharply pointed, thornlike process growing from the tissue under the outer layer of a plant.
60. Gilliflower—Any of several plants with clove-scented flowers, as the clove pink.
61. Angelica—So named from its medical uses. Any of a number of related plants of the parsley family, with tall stalks, large divided leaves, clusters of white or greenish flowers, and roots and fruit used in flavoring, perfumes, medicine, etc.
62. Comfrey—European plants of the borage family (an annual plant with brilliant blue flowers and hairy leaves), with small blue, purplish, or yellow flowers; boiled and used to congeal wounds.
63. Elecampane—A tall, hairy European perennial plant of the composite family, having flower heads with many slender yellow rays; naturalized in the U.S.
64. Agrimony—Any plant of a genus in the rose family, typically having little yellow flowers on spiky stalks and bearing fruits that look like burs.
65. Lavender—Any of a genus of fragrant European plants of the mint family, having spikes of pale-purplish flowers and yielding an aromatic oil (oil of lavender). The dried flowers, leaves, and stalks of this plant, used to fill sachets and to perfume clothes, linens, etc. Sachet - a small bag, pad, etc. filled with perfumed powder and placed in dresser drawers, closets, etc. to scent clothing.
66. Thyme—Any of a genus of shrubby plants or aromatic herbs of the mint family, with white, pink, or red flowers and fragrant leaves used for seasoning.
67. Damask rose—A very fragrant cultivated rose with clusters of white to red flowers, important as a source of attar of roses; an ancestor of hybrid roses. Attar—an essential oil or perfume made from the petals of flowers, esp. of damask roses.
68. Woad seed—Seeds of the mustard family.
69. Madder roots and seed—Any of a genus of plants of the madder family; a perennial vine; the roots of this vine were used to make red dye.
70. English grain was better sown in the fall rather than the spring. Felt. *History of Ipswich, Essex, and Hamilton, Mass.*, 39.
71. The early fences were of simple construction, usually a 2-rail or pole fence made by driving stakes into the ground X form, and laying the lower rails or poles in the crotches thus formed and then driving other stakes above the rails X form in such a way that rails or poles could be laid above the first. *Essex Antiquarian.* Vol. 1, No. 2, February 1897. pp. 25-6.
72. Originally pottage. A soft food made of cereal or meal boiled in water or milk until thick. The meat of the shag bark, dried and pounded, was used to thicken the porridge. Shag bark came from hickory trees.

73. Information from 1647 inventory of Matthew's estate. Ipswich Court Records and Files for the 1638-47 Period, Court, 28: 7: 1647.
74. Tallow—Solid fat extracted from the natural fat of cattle, sheep, etc. In addition to soap, it was used for making candles and lubricants.
75. Lye—Obtained by leaching wood ashes. Leaching - to extract (a soluble substance) by causing water to filter through the ashes.
76. Noisome—Injurious to health; noxius, harmful; having a bad odor; offensive.
77. Cattle were worked as draft animals and provided milk. Those who worked had access to the Common at night, Sabbath days, and wet days. If found in the Common two or three hours before or after the sun, it cost their owner 12d apiece unless he could prove he had lost them. Schofield. 74.
78. Schofield. 69.
79. The hard winters killed many of Matthew's cattle and the wolves destroyed an even greater number. In addition, they became sick eating acorns, making the task of pasturing them dangerous.
80. On January 15, 1640, the town meeting determined that Commoners worth less than £100 could have two hogs, those worth from £100 to £500, three, and those worth more than £500, four hogs. Schofield. 73.
81. Domestic animals furnished much of their food—meat, fowl, milk, cheese, butter, and eggs—and they grew the rest in their garden and fields. Game from forest and sea, available in abundance, supplemented their diet.
82. Shad—Any of several salt water fishes related to the herring but having a deeper body and spawing in rivers. The Atlantic shad is a valuable food fish.
83. Alewives—A fish resembling the herring, found in the ocean and some fresh water.; used for food and in fertilizer.
84. Beer was the common drink until the apple orchards began to bear. Two kinds were brewed—that fermented from malt liquors, with hops, etc. and that made from the fermented extract of roots and other parts of plants such as spruce, ginger, sassafras, etc. Families brewed it themselves. Wine was drunk sparingly. Chocolate, produced by the Spaniards, was an occasional treat. Tea was unknown until about 1718. Rum was also an early drink and while not plentiful, brandy was available. Cider eventually replaced beer as the principal intoxicating drink. Sidney Perley, "Beverages In The Old Days," *Essex Antiquarian,* Vol. 11, No. 3, March 1898.
85. Barley fire cake—The author was unable to find a definition of this food.
86. Samp—A porridge of Indian corn.
87. Succotash—Corn and beans boiled together.
88. Hasty pudding—Flour or other farinaceous substance with suet, or milk, eggs, etc., sometimes enriched with fruit. It was boiled in a bag to a moderately hard consistence. Also known as Indian pudding. Farinaceous - containing, consisting of, or made from flour or meal.
89. They had berries and melon in season, and fresh fruit once the orchard began bearing. Cherry wine was a treat on special occasions. They parched and pounded corn and made nokake. Baked pumpkins were common. When company came, they were served a cake made of strawberries and parched corn.

    Parched - dried or roasted by the use of great heat. Governor Winthrop wrote that when corn was parched it turned inside out and was "white and floury within." "Early Planted Crops," *Essex Antiquarian.* Vol. 11, No. 3, July, 1907. 97-11. Nocake—parched maize pounded into meal, mixed with a little water.
90. The first lamps used by our ancestors were tin, had a great wick, and usually hung on one side of the firplace. They burned fish liver oil. By 1642, whale and sea-horse

oil was a staple commodity in the colony so it is likely the wealthier people of Ipswich burnt it occasionally, if not frequently. Felt. *History of Ipswich, Essex, and Hamilton, Mass.* 26

91. Winthrop reported that within a three month period, a man worth £1,000 saw his estate drop to £200. Kendall. *Winthrop's Journal 1630-1649.* Vol. II., 19.
92. Felt. History of Ipswich, Essex, and Hamilton, Mass. 102.
93. Ibid. 50.
94. Schofield. 101.
95. Mr. Gardiner and William Lampson were given power to require and levy all forfeits and defaults and were to receive 3s 4s out of each forfeit. Schofield. 88.
96. After the building of wharves began in 1641, the Whipple family probably went to the river to watch all the activity there — fishing craft coming and going and larger vessels carrying cargos of fish, pipe staves, and lumber to foreign ports.
97. Card wyer cane—A brush with wire teeth used to disentangling fibres of wool, flax, or cotton and lay them parallel to one another preparatory to spinning. Schofield. 72.
98. Indians could not remember a colder winter during the past 40 years. Hosmer. *Winthrop's Journal 1630-1649.* 54, 57.
99. Ibid. 91-2.
100. Ibid. 220.
10. Ibid. Vol. II. 277.
102. Ibid. Vol. II. 328
103. Every man over 18 took turns at this duty.
104. The early Puritans sang mostly psalms and hymns, among which the most prominent undoubtedly was Old Hundred, still one of the best-known melodies of all time. It is sung today as the Doxology (Praise God From Whom All Blessings Flow) and its numerical title is derived from the 100th psalm (All people that on earth do dwell) to which it was fitted in the Knox Anglo-Genevan *Psalter* of 1561.

    The Whole Booke of Psalmes, generally known as the Bay Psalm Book, published in 1640, was America's first collection of songs but was limited to words. The ninth edition, called Psalms, Hymns, and Spiritual Songs, published in Boston in 1698, was the first to include music. Sigmund Spaeth, *History of Popular Music in America*, Random House. (New York. 1948). 22.
105. While their lives were spent in the fear of God, the Whipples were not without their seasons of enjoyment and good times. Occasionally they had festive gatherings to relieve the trying realities of life and the stern dogmas of their faith. Unlike in Bocking, Christmas was not celebrated. Deacons and constables were vigilant to see that there was no secret observance.
106. The original will is missing. It's record is found in Ipswich Deeds, Volume I, leaf 28. His will was proved by Theophilus Willson and Thomas Knowlton. The inventory of his estate was proved by the oaths of Mr. Robert Payne and John Whipple. *Essex Antiquarian.* Vol. 8, No. 1, January 1904. 13.

    Probate records take three major forms—wills, inventories, and accounts of administration. The first directed the disposition of property, the second itemized and evaluated the forms of that property, the third furnished reports to the Court on the disposi-tion of property in intestacy cases and in those cases where the will failed to provide for settlement. Wills were usually written but could be spoken. Both forms required witnesses. Only one-third to one-half of early settlers left wills—usually male heads of households who were wealthier and older. The inventories were compiled and the property valuated by appraisers appointed by a Judge

or Commissioner of Probate. These appraisers, usually two or three neighbors of the deceased, valued the assets according to what they would bring in a forced sale. Inventories indicated the standard of living and status. Gloria L. Main, "Probate Records as a Source for Early American History." *William and Mary Quarterly.* Vol. 32, January 1975. 90-1.

107. According to William E. Chute, *A Genealogy and History of the Chute Family in America*, published in Swampscott, Mass. July 9, 1894, Lionel and Rose Chute, their two sons, James, baptized February 2, 1613, Nathaniel, born about 1616, died about 1640, and daughter Mary, baptized November 23, 1619, came to Massachusetts Bay from Dedham, Essex County, England about 1634 and settled in Ipswich where he became schoolmaster in 1636. He bought two parcels of land from William Bartholomew in 1639 and 60 acres of upland and 12 acres of meadow were granted him in 1640. He mas made freeman in 1641. He died in April 1645, meaning Rose was a widow for about a year and a half. Schofield, on pages 59 and 71, confirms the land purchase and grant. In his will, he identified himself as School-master. Chute probably taught some of the Whipple children. William Chute said Lionel brought a parchment roll to America which contained the Chute lineage and pedigree from Alexander Chute, Lord of the Manor of Taunton, Somersetshire, England, who died in 1268. Lionel married Rose, daughter of Robert Barker, about 1610. James Chute married Elizabeth, daughter of Daniel Epps and Martha Read, about 1647, the year his stepfather, Matthew, died.

108. Codicil—An addition to a will to change, explain, revoke, or add provisions.

109. Legatee—To bequeath, appoint one to whom a legacy is bequeathed. Legacy - money or property left to someone by a will.

110. Among those dying were Governor Winthrop's wife, daughter of Sir John Tindal, Knight, age about 56, and Mr. Thomas Hooker, pastor of the church in Hartford, Conn. Hosmer, *Winthrop's Journal*, Vol. II. 326-27.

111. Both named Matthew. The first Matthew died in October 1623 at less than one year of age; the second in April 1627 at less than three years of age.

112. Rose was still living in March 1657-8. At that time she was referred to as the widow Rose Whipple. *Register,* 30:83,.

113. In 1647, the General Court provided that "if any young man attempt to address a young woman without consent of her parents, or, in case of their absence, of a neighboring Magistrate of the County Court, he shall be fined £5 for the first offense, £10 for the second, and imprisonment for the third." A 1639 law required marriages to be cried out or intentions posted in public. Felt. *History of Ipswich, Essex, and Hamilton, Mass.* 152-3.

114. Rose's property was considerable. Lionel's will provided she was to receive the "dwelling house, barn and all the edifices with the yards, gardens, the home lot and planting lot, cattle, chattel, and household goods for the term of her life," when it would go to their son James. Will of Lionel Chute dated September 4, 1644. The inventory of his estate was taken June 25, 1645. He provided that their son James could have entry and use of the two chambers over the house for one year after his death.

115. Descendants of Matthew are fortunate that any record exists because before 1652 the County Court did not prove a high number of wills or file many inventories and the County Quarterly Courts handled these functions in a haphazard way. Prior to 1643 the Court handled 1.5 inventories per year, between 1643 and 1652 slightly more than 9, and from 1652 to 1662, 18 annually. In short, there are many recorded deaths without accompanying wills and inventories in the first two decades of settlement. Allen. 207. He cites William I. Davisson and Dennis J. Dugan, "Economic History

Research—Essex County, Massachusetts" (paper presented to the Essex Institute Historical Seminar, Salem, Mass, June 29-30, 1971), 17-18 in footnote 6.

116. At the time of his death in 1669, John owned a 360 acre farm as well as a house and approximately 100 acres in town.

117. Felt. *History of Ipswich, Essex, and Hamilton, Mass.* 157.

118. Waters, *Ipswich in the Massachusetts Bay Colony*, Part II.

119. It was the practice when males were buried for men to walk first and for women to walk first when females were buried.

120. No services were held at the burying ground in those times.

121. This was the custom for a man of Matthew's stature, Mourning rings were usually enamelled in black or black and white, were decorated, sometimes with a death's head or a framed lock of hair, and included the engraved initials of the deceased.

122. The Indian menace increased in 1642, causing the town to provide a sanctuary for wives and children. In September, 40 men from Ipswich, Rowley, and Newbury were sent to Merrimack to disarm the Sachem Pasconaway. In May 1643, the men of Ipswich were ordered to bring arms to the meeting house on Lord's day; in May 1645, to post a guard of a pikeman and musketeer half an hour after sunset and in August, to prepare for an Indian attack and to keep a daily guard on the outskirts and have scouts range the woods. Felt. *History of Ipswich, Essex, and Hamilton, Mass.* 141, 143, 144, 146.

123. Fens—Low, flat marshy land; bog.

124. Rushes—A plant that grows in wet places, marked by its dense clump of slender cylindrical leafless stems, two or three feet high from matted creeping root stocks.

125. They used a still to obtain medicine from roots and herbs and to extract the fragrant oil from rose leaves.

126. There was no appreciation for the value of fresh air and fresh water. The fever patient was shut up in a closed, hot room and denied a drink of water no matter how feverish or thirsty.

127. Senna—A drug consisting of the dried leaflets of several species of Cassia. It is a prompt, efficient, and very safe purgative, especially suited to fevers and febrile complaints. Cassia—any of a genus of herbs, shrubs, and trees of the legume family. Senna is prepared from the leaves of some of these. Febrile—of or characterized by fever; feverish. Purgative—causes bowl movements.

128. The roots and rhizomes of various Asiatic rhubarbs, used as a cathartic. Rhizome - a creeping stem lying, usually horizontally, at or under the surface of the soil and differing from a root in having scale leaves, bearing leaves, or aerial shoots near its tips, and producing roots from its undersurface.

129. Squills The dried bulb of white varieties of a plant of the lily family, formerly used in medicine.

130. Snakeroot—Any of a number of plants reputed to be remedies for snake bites.

THE JOSEPH WHIPPLE FAMILY

Joseph[1] Whipple *(Matthew[1], Matthew[4]) was born abt 1640 in Ipswich, Essex County, Massachusetts Bay Colony in New England and died there between 20 November 1708 and 7 May 1709 at approximately 69 years of age. He married twice. (1)* ***Sarah (____)*** *abt 1665 presumably in Ipswich. She died in Ipswich 16 July 1676.[1] (2)* ***Sarah (____)*** *abt 1676 presumably in Ipswich. She died 18 November 1713 in Wenham, Essex County, Massachusetts Bay Colony[2] and married (2)* ***Walter Fairfield*** *14 April 1711 in Ipswich.[3]*

Joseph **Whipple** and Sarah No. 1 had the following children born in Ipswich:

	i.	*Joseph, 1 November 1665 and died there 12 November 1665.[4]*
+	*ii.*	*Joseph, 31 October 1666 and married Sarah Hutchinson in 1690 in Salem, Essex County, Massachusetts Bay. He died in Salem 19 December 1740.*
	iii.	*Margery, 28 August 1668.[5]*
+	*iv.*	*Sarah, 29 March 1670 and married Zachariah Goodale abt 1692 in Essex County.*
+	*v.*	*Capt. Matthew, 25 November 1672 and married Bethia (____).*
	vi.	*Mary, 25 December 1674.[6]*

Joseph **Whipple** and Sarah No. 2 had the following children born in Ipswich:

+	*vii.*	*Jonathan, 19 April 1679 and married Frances Edwards in Ipswich 14 July 1702. He died in Westborough, Worcester County Massachusetts Bay, 3 April 1757.*
+	*viii.*	*James, in 1681 and married Mary Bacon Fuller 12 January 1704 in Salem. He died 3 November 1766 in Grafton, Worcester County, Massachusetts Bay.*
+	*ix*	*John, 27 March 1690 and married Mary Faierfield 29 March 1711. He died in Sutton, Worcester County, Massachusetts Bay.*
+	*x.*	*Ruth, 27 October 1692 and married Seth Putnam 16 September 1718 in Salem Village, Essex County, Massachusetts Bay. She died in Charlestown, Sullivan County, N.H. 1 February 1785.*
	xi.	*Anna, 29 July 1695.[7]*

JOSEPH, THE FIRST of his line to be born on American soil, is not recorded in the Ipswich *Vital Records* under births, marriages, or deaths. He is identified as Matthew's son in Matthew's will[8] and, in *Ipswich Quarterly Count Records* Volume 1, page 122 and *Salem Quarterly Court Records* Volume 4, page 117. The records also contain references that confirm his relationship of some of his children and of the children to each other. His death date of "between November 20, 1708 and May 7, 1709" is based on deeding his homestead of about 18 acres plus an additional 39 acres and one-third of his common rights to his son James on the 1708 date and a deed by Sarah Whipple of Ipswich "relict of Joseph Whipple, lately deceased" giving up her dower in the "housing and land" conveyed to son James on the 1709 date.

To all Christian people to whom these presents shall come;—I, Joseph Whipple, Sen. of Ipswich, in the County of Essex, in ye Province of Massachusetts Bay, New England, yeoman, sendeth greetings. Know ye for the natural love and affection I have to my son James Whipple, and diverse other considerations to me thereunto moving, have given, granted, bargained, sold, alienated, enfeoffed, and confirmed unto my son James Whipple, his heirs, executors, and all yt my homestead, being about eighteen acres upland and meadow, be it more or less, bounded on ye North-East by ye land of Thomas Adams, beginning at Pigeon Hills and so running by Thomas Adams' till it comes to ditch of Nathaniel Adams, and thence as ye ditch goeth till it come to a stake and a heap of rocks, thence North-East to a birch in a cleft of rocks, and thence South-East to a black oak on ye south corner of ye upland and running east to a maple tree in ye meadow, and thence running to a stake and a heap of rocks at Pigeon Hills, thence running by Pigeon Hills till it comes to the first bounds. And a parcel of upland and meadow, about twelve acres, bounded on ye Great Dam North-West so along by a small ditch to ye land of Capt. Whipple at ye piece of swamp, thence on a line to a stake and a heap of rocks at ye cart way over ye narrow meadow, thence on a line to a stake and heap of rocks by ye path, thence West to a stake and a heap of rocks by ye great meadows and then on ye meadow to ye dam also. A parcel of pasture land, twenty seven acres, more or less, adjoining land of Jonathan Whipple, &c., &c., bounded, &c., &c., Matthew Whipple's meadow, &c. Also 1-3 of three of marsh in ye hundred, and one third of my common right.

Signed November 20, 1708. Joseph Whipple, his mark.

In presence of Matthew Whipple and John Whipple[9]

Know all men by these presents, I, Sarah Whipple, of Ipswich, relict of Joseph, lately deceased, do, for a valuable consideration, to me in hand paid, give up my whole of dower in all ye housing and land herein conveyed, except what he hath in another instrument conveyed to me.

As witness my hand 7 May 1709.[10] **Sarah Whipple**

Joseph also conveyed land to sons John and Matthew on the same 1708 date and Sarah conveyed her dowry rights on the same 1709 date[11] The Essex county deed records include transactions where Joseph's sons sold property to each other: Matthew to James 12 acres adjacent to James' homestead as well as three acres of meadow for *f*60.[12] Jonathan to James on February 19, 1717 about 2 acres of meadow near the Black Brock and one acre of meadow "which he got from his father" on the south side of Black Brock. His wife Frances also signed the deed.[13] Brothers Matthew, Jonathan, and James sold, on February 5, 1717, their one acre lot No. 188 adjacent to the fishing stages on Jeffrey's Neck for £7.[14]

Joseph was orphaned at about age seven. His mother died (after September 1643) when he was about three and his father died September 28, 1647. His father re-married about ten months before he died and it is not known whether his stepmother Rose Chute, who died after March 1658,[15] raised him or whether he was farmed out to one of his siblings or to his uncle John Whipple. His female siblings were Mary, 21 and married, date unknown, to John Emery in Ipswich and moved to Newbury; Anne, 19 who married John Annable in Ipswich in 1647—Annable purchased Matthew's dwelling and house lot from the estate in December 1647—; and Elizabeth, 18, who married Sargt Jacob Perkins in Ipswich about 1648. His older brothers John, 15 and Matthew, 12 probably would have been raised by the same family as Joseph. Under terms of Matthew's will none of his children were "to be disposed of in marriage or service but by the approbation and consent of the present elders and my dear brother John Whipple. He also left "the disposing of my three sons to the care of my executors whom I name and desire to be Mr. Nathaniel Rogers, Mr. Norton, Mr. Robert Payne, and my brother John Whipple."[16]

Joseph would have participated in Ipswich's monthly military training, July and August excepted, beginning at age 14 and would have joined the night watch at 18. Night watch required all males, 18 and over, to take turns patrolling the streets from half an hour after sunset to half an hour before sunrise. He would have been about 24 when the drawing for shares in

Plumb Island took place in 1664. He drew Lot 42, a single share (three acres). It is not known if he attended school but if he did his school master would have been Ezekiel Cheever who began teaching in 1650 and emphasized Latin, reading and writing. The fact that Joseph signed the deed conveying his homestead to son James with an X does not necessarily mean he was uneducated. He may have become infirm in his old age. Church attendance on Saturdays and Thursdays would have been a part of the family routine. They would have attended church under the watchful eyes of Reverends Nathaniel Rogers who served until dying in 1655; Thomas Cobbet from 1656 until his death in 1685 at age 77; William Hubbard from 1658-1702 when a new Meeting House was built; and John Rogers, Jr. 1702-1745. His rate for the Elder's salary in 1682 was 9 shillings.[17]

Joseph's brother Matthew, born in Bocking about five years before Joseph, died in Ipswich October 20, 1658. His wife Mary (Bartholomew) was pregnant with their son Matthew III who was born December 20, two months after his father's death. Matthew died intestate and Mary was appointed Administrator of the estate which included 86 acres of land, buildings, livestock, grain, furniture, dish wear and kitchen ware. The inventory, presented to the Court March 29, 1659, was valued at £194 1s 1d. The Court ordered the land to be held for the son with the balance to the widow. However, Matthew III died June 30, 1663 and the Court appointed John Whipple, Matthew and Joseph's older brother, as new Administrator. His inventory, delivered to the Court September 29, 1663, valued the estate at £175.

The Court ordered that two-thirds of the land, including the home and buildings, be awarded to John and one-third to Joseph. Shortly after acquiring his share, Joseph and Sarah sold it to brother John. The consideration was one-third of the full value of brother Matthew's estate, £175, to be paid over four years.[18]

Joseph was about 22 when King Charles II (1660-1675) wrote to the General Court of Massachusetts Bay, on June 28, 1662, of his "concern [about the] admission of Freemen." The General Court responded on August 3, 1664 by repealing the Freemen Act of 1631 and adopted a new Act which represented a radical change in the criteria for admission to freemanship:

> Henceforth all English men presenting a certificate under the hand of the Ministers, or Minister of the place where they dwell, that they are orthodox in religion, and not vicious in their lives, and also a certificate under the hands of the selectmen of the place, or of the major part of them, that they are freeholders; and are for their proper estate... ratable to the Country in a single Country Rate... to

> the full value of ten shillings, or that they are in full communion with some church amongst us,... being twenty-four years of age may present themselves for election to freemanship, by a majority vote in the General Court.[19]

Joseph proabably began to take interest in government and commerce in 1660 when King Charles II created a new committee of the Privy Council, the Lords of Trade and Plantations, to develop a policy to regulate colonial trade. Parliament passed the Staple Act in 1663 which required goods be shipped exclusively to England and re-exported to other countries at greater profit to English merchants. The Act also required European exports to the colonies be shipped through England which inflated the price of European goods, making English goods cheaper by comparison. The effect was similar to that of a protective tariff.

In 1666 the King challenged the right of the Massachusetts Bay colonists because its Charter did not require the Oath of Allegiance and administration of justice to be done in his name. He also demanded that Church of England services be allowed so that "all good and honest people be admitted to the "Lord's Supper," and "all of wisdom and integrity" be allowed to vote. Joseph was among 63 Ipswich men signing a petition to support the King. Not wanting the franchise extended or to recognize the English Church, the General Court resisted and summoned the leaders of the petitioners from Ipswich, Boston, Salem, and Newbury who supported the King to attend the Court in October and answer for the petition.[20]

Joseph was one of 18 men taking the Freeman's Oath in March 1674 and thus admitted to the freedom of the Colony.[21] In February of 1678, he and his cousin Capt. John Whipple were included on a list of Ipswich Commoners.[22]

Parliament passed the Revenue Act of 1673 which imposed a "plantation duty" on certain American exports and generated a staff of custom officials to collect the levy in American ports. This was the first revenue-collecting administration in the British New World. By 1681, royally appointed Customs Collectors resided in every colony. They were under the jurisdiction of a Surveyor General who reported violations of the Navigation Acts to his London superiors. Colonial merchants often resisted this Royal authority and custom officials were frequently physically abused. Juries in New England and the Chesapeake tended to acquit merchants accused of illegal trade practices.

After becoming a Freeman and a Commoner, Joseph was threatened with the loss of his land to the heirs of John Mason who was granted a large tract of land in 1622. Part of this land was later included in the Mass-

achusetts Bay grant in 1630. John Mason, Jr., a principal member and Secretary, of the Council for New England, began a campaign to claim the land in Essex County and annul the Bay Company grant.[23] Joseph and his fellow Ipswich neighbors affected by the claim were ordered by the General Court on January 4, 1680 to be convened to hear about Mason's claim. They met in Convention in Ipswich the second Wednesday of February and adopted a petition addressed to the General Court which pointed out that they had owned their land for 50 years, had no knowledge of Mason's claim, its bounds or limits, and they, not Mason, defended the land against the Indians in the late war at a cost of 12 dead and hundreds of pounds in money. The also demanded that any trial of the claims be in the Massachusetts courts, not in England.

A year later, another petition, this one signed by representatives from Ipswich, Gloucester, Newbury, Rowley, and other nearby towns, claimed rightful title to the lands based on the Grant of the General Court under the Bay Colony Charter and purchase from the natives, was addressed to the King. It was a time of high drama in Ipswich. If the Mason claim prevailed, title to their lands, houses, barns, and fences would be worthless.

Residents of the towns were convened March 17, 1681 and endorsed the sentiments in the petition with little opposition. Mason modified his claim in 1682 asking only for the Common and unimproved lands and demanded the courts prosecute. The General Court informed him there was no more Common or unimproved land because it had all been improved and sold. It then authorized a trial in Essex County to try the case. Records of this Court have never been found and apparently no one was disturbed in the possession of their land.

Joseph was approximately 44 when the Lords of Trade advocated the abolition of all Proprietary Charters and criticized the autonomy of the Corporate Colonies of New England and eventually persuaded the English Court of Chancery to annul the Charter of Massachusetts Bay on the grounds its government violated the Navigation Acts and virtually outlawed the Church of England. The Charter was vacated June 21, 1684, making Massachusetts, after 54 years of struggle, what it was before James I granted it to the Council for New England in 1630. A colony-wide uproar caused the General Court to ask each Town to express its mind on giving up the Charter. The Ipswich vote on February 11, 1685 was unanimous to petition the King to allow the Colony to retain its Charter.

James II was crowned King in 1685. Previously he had ruled the Proprietary Colony of New York in authoritarian fashion, not even allowing a representative Assembly. And as a Catholic, he had little empathy for Puritan colonies. Not only did James II reject the petition, but a year later, with his blessing, the Lords of Trade revoked the Corporate Charters of

Connecticut and Rhode Island, merging them with the Massachusetts Bay and Plymouth colonies to form The Dominion of New England. New York and New Jersey were added two years later. This represented the new authoritarian model of colonial administration.

In May 1685 A Royal Commission appointed a Council of Eighteen to replace the General Court and ended the popular election of the governing body. Joseph Dudley was named President of the Council of Eighteen. Dudley's government ended December 20, 1686 when James appointed Sir Edmund Andros, an arrogant military official, as the Dominion Governor.

Andros abolished local Assemblies, ruled by administrative fiat, and levied arbitrary taxes, including a tax of a penny on a pound. He directed each town to appoint a Taxing Commissioner to list all residents and the value of their estates for tax purposes.

Many Ipswich residents met the night before the August 23, 1687 Town Meeting to decide what to recommend to their fellow citizens. Their decision was to recommend that the Town refuse to appoint a Tax Commissioner because to do so would reduce their rights as Englishmen. Further, they did not have to pay taxes without representation. The Town Meeting agreed and no Tax Commissioner was appointed. Since Ipswich's importance in the Colony was second only to Boston, Andros was concerned about its action. Boston and Salem had accepted the tax so Ipswich became the target for official action.

Leaders of the Ipswich movement were arrested and jailed "as evil persons" acting in "a fractious and seditious and contemptuous manner" against the laws of his Majesty's Dominions and for stirring up his Majesty's subjects "to refractoriness and disobedience contrary to and in high contempt of his Majesty's laws and government here established." They were confined in Boston's stone jail while awaiting trial before a special session of the Court of Oyer and Terminer,[24] were found guilty on October 24, and returned to jail for 21 days awaiting sentence.[25]

The sentence deprived them of civil privileges, fined them heavily, and required them to post a bond for good behavior.[26]

Ipswich submitted, chose a tax Commissioner, and sent £136 9s 11d to the Colony Treasurer in November. When it was learned that Prince William of Orange was planning to oust King James II,[27] the people of Boston overturned the Governor and on May 2 a Convention of Delegates from the Towns voted to resume the old government.

In the debate to resume the Charter other towns pointedly recognized what Ipswich did and Boston, Salem, and other large towns dared not do. The words of Ipswich's Rev. Wise, Minister of the Chebbaco Parish, proclaiming the inalienable rights of Englishmen under *Magna Charta* and

that they had privileges that could not be taken from them, had sunk deeply into the hearts of the people. The Ipswich protest was an affirmation of the principle of the right of self-government. It was made deliberately, in a dark and threatening time, when a Royal Governor with English troops at his command required submission. Ipswich suffered far more than any other community and its suffering may fairly be called the birth pangs of the new life of independence. The Town seal of Ipswich bears the legend, "The Birth Place of American Independence, 1687."

The new Charter granted Massachusetts in 1691 made it a Royal Colony. It provided that the Crown would appoint the Governor and naval officers to supervise ports and guaranteed that delegates to the Colonial Assembly were to be popularly elected by property-owning males, including non members of the Puritan church. This bifurcated authority between Colony and Crown, Governor and elected Assembly, gradually became the norm throughout North America. It tended to increase political autonomy for property-owning colonists while extending Royal authority over military affairs and trade.

Another trying time for Joseph began in 1702 when depreciating currency became a problem for most of Ipswich's population. Ipswich records indicate Joseph's participation in public service was limited. He witnessed will signing, was appointed by the Courts to inventory estates, served on the Jury of Trials, and the Jury of Inquest, including the inquest into the death of Samuel Adams in September 1676. The Jury concluded that the child fell off a cart as it was going downhill and the cart's wheel ran over its head.[28]

Twice married, Joseph fathered 11 children, most of whom survived to adulthood. He was a farmer who must have been successful based on his gifts of land to various of his male children; mourned the loss of his first wife who left him with four surviving children, all probably under 10 years of age; and took on the responsibility of raising five more with his second wife. He was the only adult of his family to live his entire life in Ipswich. He lived during trying and interesting times including what is known as the *Glorious Revolution* when James II, an autocrat, was replaced by King William and Queen Mary, constitutional monarchs. Under William and Mary, the long-held understanding of the "divine right of kings" gave way to notions of a constitutionally limited monarchy, permanently checked by the authority of Parliament.

John Locke published *Two Treatises on Government* in 1690. His thesis was that rights and liberties were not necessarily the arbitrary authority of government. He argued there were universal entitlements to "life, liberty, and property" that preceded and superseded any specific regime; that governments were formed by mutual consent of the governed specifically to

preserve and enhance "life, liberty, and property," and derived authority and legitimacy from such consent. He even hinted that government could be dissolved if a regime habitually violated its subjects' inalienable rights. His natural rights philosophy, endorsement of popular sovereignty and representative government eventually became a rallying cry for Joseph's descendants as the American colonies gradually moved towards independence from Great Britain.

1. Ipswich *Vital Records*, deaths 710.
2. The Wenham, Mass. *Vital Records*: deaths include Sarah, w, of Walter Faierfield dying 18 Dec. 1710 in her 71st year and Sarah, w, of Walter Faierfield dying 18 Nov. 1713.
3. Sarah Whipple, widow, married Walter Fairfeild 14 April 1711. Ipswich *Vital Records*, marriages 156 and 454.
4. Ipswich *Vital Records*, deaths 709.
5. and 6. Ibid, births 329.
7. Ibid, 390.
8. Matthew's will Dated May 7, 1645 and proved September 28, 1647 "... my eldest son John, three score pounds, to my son Matthew, 40 pounds, to my son Joseph, 40 pounds, my daughter Mary, 20 pounds, my daughter Anna, 20 pounds, my daughter Elizabeth, 20 pounds." *Deed Records*, Essex Co., Mass. Ipswich, vol. 1, leaf 28.
9. Matthew and John are Joseph's sons; Matthew is older and John is younger than brother James.
10. Volume 22, page 109 in the Essex County Register of Deeds office at Salem, Mass. The witnesses Matthew and John Whipple are probably Joseph's sons.
11. Register of Deeds, Essex County, Mass. 22:122.
12. Ibid. 35:21.
13. Ibid. 35:22.
14. Ibid. 35:233.
15. *Register*, 30:83, 109.
16. *Deed Records*, Essex Co., Mass. Ipswich, vol. 1, leaf 28.
17. Records and File of the Quarterly Courts of Essex County, Mass., 8:311. (Hereafter Quarterly Court Records of Essex Co.)
18. *Deed Records*, Essex Co., Mass. 4:59
19. Colonial Laws 229; MBCR 4:2:117-18. *Great Migration Newsletter*, Vol. 10, No. 2, April-June 2001, 12.
20. See endnote 127, Chapter 6.
21. Quarterly Court Records of Essex Co., 5:288.
22. Also on the list were Corp. Whipple, Thomas Low, Jr. for Matthew Whipple's house, Deacon Goodhue, William Goodhue, Jr., Joseph Goodhue, John Dane Sr. and Jr., Mr. Chute, and John Annable, Joseph's brother-in-law. "Materials for the History of Ipswich," *Register*, 7:77-9.
23. The Council for New England was the successor to the Virginia Company of Plymouth which was an English joint stock company founded in 1606 by James I for the purpose of establishing settlements on the coast of North America. It and the London Company were chartered for similar purposes. The Virginia Company of Plymouth was granted territory on the coast from the 38th to the 45th parallel. However, the area between the 38th and 41st parallels was granted to both companies and it was stipulated that neither company could found a settlement within 100 miles of an existing settlement of the other company. The Virginia Company of Plymouth established the Popham Colony at the mouth of the Kennebec river in present-day Maine in 1607, the same year that the London Company established Jamestown in Virginia. Unlike Jamestown, the Popham settlement was abandoned after only a year. The Company fell into disuse and in 1609, the Virginia Colony Charter was reorganized to grant the London Company exclusive rights of the previously shared territory.

In 1620, after years of disuse, the Company was revived and reorganized as the Plymouth Council for New England and given rights of settlement in the area now designated as New England, including land previously a part of the Virginia Colony north of the 40th parallel and extending to the 48th, thus including all of present day New Brunswick and Nova Scotia. The new Charter specified colonial rights of the Company extended from "sea to sea." Unlike the original Plymouth Company, the Plymouth Council was more successful. The first settlement it owned was the Plymouth Colony in Massachusetts. After this settlement was successful much of the rest of the Company's territory was granted to other colonial ventures, notably the Massachusetts Bay Company in 1628 and the Maine Company to Sir Ferdinando Gorges and John Mason in 1622.

24. Reference to Courts of Oyer and Terminer and General Gaol Delivery, Courts of Assize, and Courts of Nisi Prius appear sporadically in colonial legislation, however, their organization and jurisdiction are never specified since they were based almost exclusively on English precedent. In late medieval England, Royal Commissioners were appointed to travel the countryside and mete out justice, empowered by temporary commissions to hear certain types of cases in a particular area (usually a county) at a particular time. There were four main commissions: Assize, empowering the commissioners to hold their sessions; Nisi Prius, giving them jurisdiction over most civil matters and over criminal cases removed before judgment from other courts; **Oyer and Terminer,** empowering them to "hear and determine" all criminal matters; and General Gaol Delivery, empowering them to try all prisoners committed to the local gaol. By the early modern period, the same commissioners generally held all of these commissions; their combined sessions were termed "Assizes," and determined most major cases. The practice was carried over to the colonies.

25. Testimony of the Ipswich leaders is found in Massachusetts Archives, book 127, leaf 102.

26. In December 1689, Rev. Wise and the Ipswich Selectmen were ordered by the General Court to write a narrative of Andros' treatment toward them. This narrative, and others like it, was forwarded to England to substantiate charges against Andros' for maladministration. About the same time Rev. Wise brought charges against Chief Justice Joseph Dudley for refusing him privilieges of the *habeas corpus* act while he was imprisoned. Felt, 259.

27. James II pursued identical policies in England; abrogating the Corporate Charters of Towns and Guilds, levying new taxes without Parliamentary consent, and declaring that his son and heir would be raised a Catholic. A subsequent Protestant uprising in Parliament drove James II from the throne and into exile. William of Orange, a Protestant Dutch Prince, accepted an invitation to rule with his English wife Mary, as "constitutional monarchs" who would accept the rights of Parliament.

28. Quarterly Court Records of Essex Co., 3:356, 6:234, 8:309.

CHAPTER NINE

JONATHAN WHIPPLE AND FRANCES EDWARDS

Jonathan*[3] *Whipple *(Joseph*[2]*, Matthew*[1]*, Matthew*[A]*) was born 19 April 1679 in Ipswich, Essex Co. Mass. and died 2 April 1757 in Westborough, Worcester Co., Mass. He married Frances*[2] *Edwards (John*[1]*) at Ipswich 14 July 1702. She was born 30 September 1682 in Ipswich and died 26 June 1757 in Westborough. Jonathan was a farmer, corn miller, Selectman, and Town Moderator at Westborough. He was a devout churchman, neighbor of Rev. Ebenezer Parkman, and often mediated disputes between Parkman and various parishioners.*

Children of Jonathan and Frances Whipple:

+	*i*	*Francis, baptized 4 November 1705 at Ipswich; died 2 July 1787 at New Braintree, Worcester Co., Mass. Married Abigail Lamson.*
	ii.	*Jonathan, born between 1706 and 1721 at Ipswich; died 12 July 1762 at Westborough.*
+	*iii.*	*Edwards, born 13 March 1722 at Ipswich; died 11 March 1777 at Westborough. Married Sarah Green.*

THE JONATHAN AND FRANCES WHIPPLE families migrated from the Hamlet at Ipswich to Worcester county in western Massachusetts about 1734,[1] and settled in Westborough. Jonathan's family consisted of himself, about 55, wife Frances, about 52, sons, Edwards, 12, and Jonathan, age unknown but probably the middle child. Francis' family included himself, about 29, wife Abigail, 21, and three children, Benjamin, 7, Lucy, 4, and Thomas, 3. Jonathan and Frances joined the Westborough church by letter in 1734,[2] transferring from the Hamlet church. A lot of thought about moving must have been given by Jonathan and Frances considering both were in their fifties and leaving their life-long home could not have been easy. The move was probably motivated by the lack of farm land in the Ipswich area to adequately maintain both families. This supposition is supported by the fact that Jonathan's brothers moved to Grafton (James) and to Sutton (John) at about the same time. Both towns were adjacent to Westborough. Their older half-brother Joseph married Sarah Hutchinson and settled in Salem near what became known as Whipple Hill.

Westborough, bordered by Northborough, Southborough, Hopkinton, Upton, Grafton, and Shrewsbury, is 10 miles east of Worcester and 29 miles southwest of Boston. The original home of the Nipmuck and Wamesit Indians, members of the Algonquin race, it was part of the ancient plantation of Marlborough formed early in reign of Charles II.[3]

Jonathan Whipple home Westborough.

THE DWELLING HOUSE OCCUPANTS . . . .

The Whipple Family	1732-1777	The Dunn Family	1933-1957
The Baker Family	1777-1783	The Hickox Family	1957-1963
The Rider Family	1783-1793	The Walett Family	1963-1967
The Wood Family	1793-1796	The Dempsey Family	1967-1972
The Forbush Family	1796-1920	The Sullivan Family	1972-present
The Walker Family	1920-1933		

Olde Mrs. Whipple's Apple Gingerbread

1 egg
½ c. sugar
1 c. molasses
½ c. melted shortening
½ tes. salt
2½ c. sifted flour
1 tes. cinnamon
1½ tes. ginger
1 tes. coriander
1 tes. nutmeg
1 c. boiling water, with 1 tbles. baking soda added to it.
1 med. apple peeled and cut in very small pieces.

1. Cream egg, sugar, molasses, shortening together
2. Add flour, salt and spices and mix well
3. Add boiling water and baking soda, mix well and add apple
4. Pour in greased, floured pan
5. Bake in 350° oven for about 1 hour

Makes a very moisted cake great served with whipped cream or ice cream.

When Thomas Rice, Westborough's first settler, arrived in 1675, the landscape was woodland, meadow, and pond with low green hills in the south and west and to the northeast. Numerous brooks fed by the western slopes flowed into the Assabet river. Chauncey was the largest pond.[4] When Westborough became Massachusetts' one-hundredth town November 18, 1711, its residents still lived in fear of Indian attacks.[5] Twenty-seven families lived there when the first Town Meeting was held January 15, 1718. The proposal to build a Meeting House passed and it became the center of the religious and political life of the town.

Ebenezer Parkman accepted the call to be the first minister in July of 1724.[6] He was a Harvard College graduate[7] and though only 21 when he began his church career, he became the "first man" in town.[8] No one was as well informed or had more influence and authority.[9] Joshua Townsend was the town's first schoolmaster. He had a library of 56 volumes—33 were catechisms, psalters, primers, and hymn-books—the rest included *Mr. Whitefields Journal, Science of Being With Its Affections, The Young Man's Best Companion, Ye Youth's Instructed in Ye English Tongue*, and some sermons and tracts.[10] His initial annual salary was £18. School was taught in a private house two months at a time in each of the three sections of town. It was 40 years before a school house was built and eventually there was a Whipple school in town. James Parker was its teacher in January 1770.[11]

The David Crosby family was living in Shrewsbury by 1727 where David was a shoemaker. Among his customers was Rev. Parkman. David and his wife Sarah Foster were originally from Billercia[12] and were the parents of Hepzibah Crosby who married Benjamin Whipple, son of Francis and Abigail and Jonathan and Frances' oldest grandchild. Hepzibah spent a great deal of time at the Parkman home and helped Mrs. Parkman in household chores. Ben frequently did farm work for the Reverend and undoubtedly met his future bride under these circumstances.[13]

The Whipples were neighbors to the Parkmans and developed a close relationship with the Minister and his family.[14] They assisted him with his house building, well digging, wood cutting, planting, harvesting, butchering, etc. The Parkmans were weekly guests in the various Whipple homes and in return the Minister invited the various Whipple families to his home. He preached at private meetings at the Whipple home[15] and relied on Jonathan to mediate problems he had with various parishioners, to share negative comments made by parishioners on his preaching, to deliver his messages to the Town Meeting, and to travel to adjoining towns with him when he was called on to preach or attend fasts.[16] Parkman also read parts of Thomas Prince's *Chronology* to Jonathan.[17] Jonathan served as a church Delegate and accompanied Parkman to various meetings of Councils.[18] He attended the Shrewsbury Council in

October 1749 which formed an Ecclesiastical Council to hear a complaint lodged by Mr. Isaac Stone, Shreswbury Selectman, against Dr. Joshua Smith, Shrewsbury physician.[19] The issue was original sin. They deliberated for two days before reaching a decision the night of the second day.[20]

Frances Whipple, whom Parkman referred to as "old Mrs. Whipple," was one of the town's midwives. The time of delivery was called "groaning" and Parkman always asked Frances to assist with his wife's groaning and to sit with her on other occasions when she and their children were ill.[21] She assisted with the birth of Parkman's fourth daughter Elizabeth born December 28, 1738;[22] their sixth daughter born during a snow storm March 13, 1745;[23] and a son born January 27, 1749.[24]

The saltbox home with cellar Jonathan built was probably completed in 1734.[25] He raised a new barn in May 1748.[26] The home is listed in the Register of American Homes and Buildings.[27] It features five kitty-corner fireplaces, 20-inch pine floor boards, and low-ceiling rooms. The keeping room has a big walk-in fireplace with an adjacent beehive oven. In the brick wall over the living room fireplace is a long narrow cubbyhole used to hold clay pipes and to keep hot toddies steaming on a cold winter night. The original stone-front barn burned in the early 1930s but many of its hand-hewn beams were salvaged and used to rebuild it. While researching the home and its original owners, one of the later owners found Frances' apple gingerbread recipe.[28]

Jonathan, a corn miller,[29] was active in town affairs, serving as Selectman and Moderator of the Town Meeting.[30] His milling business was based on credit and a sophisticated barter system meaning the majority of his income was in the form of goods or services. Accounts with individuals usually ran from one to three years.[31] Once a settlement was made, a new account was begun. These "book" debts technically fell due at death but the Probate Judge and local creditors seldom pushed for a quick settlement because they wanted the farm or business to survive as an economic unit.

Farm work was never done and Jonathan and Frances had lots of help from their grandchildren. There were many different chores depending on the season. In spring they planted corn, rye, oats, hops, flax, and vegetables of all kinds. Summer was spent tending crops, fruits, and making hay. Autumn was the busiest time as they harvested their crops, dried fruits, husked corn, made and boiled cider, brewed beer, slaughtered animals and salted the meat. Winter was the quietest time for farm activity. They tended the livestock—cows, oxen, sheep, pigs, and horses.[32] Spare time throughout the year was used to fix tools, make house repairs, cut wood for the hearth – the only heat source in a colonial household—clearing fields of trees and rocks, splitting rails for fences, gathering rocks and making stone walls, searching for runaway domestic animals, watching for

predatory wild beasts, and keeping the barn and sheds clean.

Jonathan ran a self-sufficient household. When the family pump froze he threw salt into the works which loosened the frozen spire making it possible to pump the water. The Whipple women kept busy processing flax and wool, spinning thread, making cloth and clothes (Jonathan wove checked linen cloths for Rev. Parkman in January 1738 and 1740[33]), butter and cheese, preserving food stuffs, baking and preparing food. The Whipple menfolk liked to fish for both the sport and the food. Pickerel and salmon trout made the diet more interesting. All family members probably enjoyed ice skating when they had idle time during cold winter days.

It is supposed they attended the few rare events that came their way and Jonathan and his sons were probably in Worcester on November 24, 1737 to witness the public hanging of Hugh Henderson who had been convicted of burglary in Westborough. After being jailed in Worcester he admitted to "licentiousness and drinking, breaking the Sabbath, cursing and swearing... lying, gambling, and stealing." He was hung after a futile attempt to escape.[34] "Edward Burley Son" came through town in 1739 with "his cabbin [and] Puppetts."[35] Certainly grandpa would have taken his four oldest grandchildren: Ben, 12, Lucy, 9, Tom, 7, and Abigail, 5 to the puppet show.

Rheumatism struck Jonathan in July 1739[36] and from then on he often suffered bouts of rheumatic fever. On these occasions he was treated by Dr. Gott who would bleed him in the right arm and give him Turbith mineral (a basic mercuric sulphate used as a purgative) which caused him to throw up and loosened his bowels.[37] He also suffered severe sore throats, terrible headaches, stomach pains, and shortness of breath. He took rhubarb[38] to ease the pain and to improve his breathing. During these times he would have to have someone spend the night to watch him.[39] Sore throats were common in the winter and Jonathan's cure, given him by Rev. Parkman, was a tea of mullen, cullenbine, and sage.[40] There were no dentists to treat teeth problems and one of the remedies used "with observable success though very disagreeable [was] cow dung fried in hog's fat" placed on the face all night long and "despicable as it seems, it gave relief."[41]

Religion was Westborough's main community interest. Meeting were held both morning and afternoon on the Lord's Day with Parkman delivering long, dull sermons at each session. He saw the hand of God or the Devil everywhere. A moralizing sermon was inevitable after a victory or defeat in the Indian wars. He preached against profane cursing and youthful frolics at huskings, raising, or on training days.[42] However, he also acknowledged the good fellowship at these occasions and did not oppose strong drink in moderation. There was always beer, cider, and

stronger stuff at the parsonage and even in the Meeting House.[43]

On winter days the services in the unheated Meeting House must have seem endless and only rarely were they cut short because of the bitter cold. There were frequent "feasts" attended by neighboring ministers who preached and prayed. Fast days were held whenever unexpected natural phenomenons such as drought, earthquake, extreme cold, and epidemics occurred and on special occasions such as the founding of a church, the minister's illness, the separation of the north part of town, or whenever the Minister felt the people needed to be "awakened."

The Whipple children along with all the young people were catechized annually in mid-winter in the cold Meeting House (no stove was installed for a century after the church was founded). The cold was only a part of their discomfort. They were probably in awe of the minister, dignified in gown and wig,[44] who called them sinners and talked about hell and brimstone. But catechism connected them with church ordinances, introduced them to the Bible, exposed them to the history of scripture, and created a sense of responsibility that helped them in adulthood.

Parkman was unflinching in enforcing church law. Early church records are full of cases of discipline.[45] Even minor offenses had to be confessed for the offender to be admitted to communion. In one case a man was kept on trial and suspended from the church for 22 years before the issue was resolved. These policies did not endear the minister to many residents and he often looked to Jonathan, who substituted as Deacon when the regular Deacons were ill, to motivate them to pay their church rate.[46]

By the late 1730s, people at the extremities of Westborough's boundaries, especially the north end, began complaining that the Meeting House was not centrally located. Appointment of town officers became a problem with residents of each section fearful that the other would dominate. Consequently, north end residents began advocating for a division of the town. Parkman strongly opposed any division and Jonathan joined in the effort to keep the town united. After the attempt to establish a separate town was defeated in 1740, north end residents held Sunday services in Nathaniel Oake's home.[47] In early 1744, north side residents again petitioned the General Court to divide the Town and refused to pay their share of the Minister's salary, not because they disliked Parkman but to show how strongly they felt about having their own town and church.[48]

Francis Whipple, David Warren, and John Maynard were appointed to respond to the petition and were able to convince the General Court not to approve formation of a new town (this would take 20 more years).[49] However, in October 1744, the north became a separate Precinct with power to elect its own officers, transact local business, and build its own church. A single Town Meeting, alternating between the Meeting Houses

of each Precinct, continued to conduct Town business.

Jonathan was on the opposite side of a church division 28 years earlier in Ipswich. In May 1712, he, along with brothers James, John, and Matthew petitioned to leave the Ipswich Church to organize a new church in the Hamlet (now Hamilton).[50] After the Ipswich Church consented to the division, Capt. Matthew Whipple[51] and others of the Hamlet petitioned the General Court on October 14, 1713 to set the Precinct boundaries.[52] They were successful and on October 21 the parishioners voted to build a Meeting House.[53] The Meeting House was completed in the fall of 1713. Reverend Samuel Wigglesworth, their first minister, built a house on the adjoining lot.[54]

When Jonathan was 21 (1710), the famous Boston Ministers Increase and Cotton Mather began an effort to unite New England churches in a presbyterian system to be led by them and which would have restricted the local authority of the hinterland ministers.[55] The Whipple brothers probably joined with Rev. John Wise of the Chebacco Church in Ipswich, leader of the campaign to defeat the proposal. Wise accused the Mathers of "out-Popeing the Pope" and argued the proposal would limit the individual church member's authority.[56] If the Mathers' proposal had been in effect, residents of the Hamlet would have been denied the right to form their own church in 1712. Interestingly, 28 years later Jonathan fought the effort to divide the Westborough Church even though the arguments for the division were the same as those championed by him and his fellow Hamlet residents years earlier.[57]

The Hamlet parish voted in 1730 to build a school house in the center of the parish and elected Capt. Whipple, Mr. Thomas Brown, and Deacon Matthew Whipple[58] the first School Committee.[59]

After the division of Westborough, the Whipples were among the 88 families in the south Precinct and Jonathan was among the first to ask Parkman to remain as their minister.[60] Officers were elected at the first meeting January 3, 1745/46 but Parkman declined appointment as Minister on the ground that his original contract was with the whole Town. But after a unanimous vote at the January 22 meeting where members agreed to meet the financial obligations of the entire town, he accepted the call.[61] In 1748 it was decided a new Meeting House, more convenient to the majority of residents, should be built. The town enlarged the "burying-place" in 1757 and voted in 1759 to fence it with a four rail fence on three sides and a four foot wall fronting the road.[62]

Francis Whipple was named to the Committee to determine the size and location of the new Meeting House and to purchase the site. They decided on a lot on the South Great Road a little below the burying place and constructed a building 50' long and 40' wide with 23' high posts.[63] It

was ready for raising in April 1749 and the town provided a half barrel of rum for the occasion. Boards, nails, glass, and timber were recycled from the old house. The front door was on the south side facing the street with the pulpit opposite. There were also doors on the west and east ends. Pews were arranged around the walls except where staircases led to the galleries—the north gallery for the women, the south for the men. Parkman's first sermon in the new building was delivered September 3, 1749. Since the old parsonage was more than a mile away from the new Meeting House it was voted to build a new parsonage adjacent to the new Meeting House. The Parkmans moved in August 20, 1751, two days before their twelfth child, Samuel, was born.

David Batherick caused a disturbance in the new church in 1752 by objecting to the church music. Since there were no hymnals each tune had to be set for the congregation. "Setting" the tune was done by a member chosen by the Minister. Parkman had assigned this task to Edwards Whipple, Jonathan's third son, after Edwards had completed singing lessons at the parsonage. The tune was "set" when Edwards sang a line (one at a time) of a psalm followed by the congregation singing each line in return.[64]

On November 16, Batherick was so displeased with Edwards' selection that he stood and set a tune that pleased himself. This caused such a disturbance that Parkman, on the 19th, named the psalm and expressly asked Edwards to set the tune and that no one should "interrupt the sacred worship." On the 30th, Parkman asked the congregation what tunes they preferred and who should set them? They "preferred triple time tunes and were satisfied in the Pastor's choice of Brother Ed Whipple to set the tune."[65]

Beginning in 1740 much of New England was "awakened" by revival meetings that resulted in an upsurge in conversions and an increase in church membership. These revival meetings shook the ecclesiastical establishment to its foundation as crowds gathered to hear impassioned preaching by Jonathan Edwards, Gilbert Tennent, Joseph Bellamy, Jedediah Mills, James Davenport, and 26-year-old George Whitefield. Although New England had known revivalism before, the intensity and spiritual catharsis generated by these preachers was a new experience for their listeners. People of all persuasions, from the most obscure artisan and farmer to the most prominent Minister and governmental official, "elbowed, shoved, and trampled" into Meeting Houses to hear Whitefield preach of "divine things."[66] Some Ministers became fearful for their authority and some church goers became contemptuous of their Ministers because their style of preaching did not result in an immediate religious experience.[67]

Edwards, the most powerful figure of the Great Awakening, preached in Westborough in February and October 1742.[68] Whitefield preached in

Marlborough in October 1740.[69] Whitefield's unique position as an anti-establishment Anglican appealed to colonial resentment of Anglican influence and his eloquent theatrical skills evolved into a new and electrifying sermon style. Parkman entertained both preachers in his home and because of his close relationship with the Whipples, it is virtually certain they would have been invited to attend and meet these famous evangelists.

Great Awakening meetings in the Westborough church were usually orderly except for some agitated souls crying out or moaning loudly during the service. However, other Separatist meetings which were very emotional were held in town and sincerely annoyed and troubled Parkman. His diary of January 13, 1743 noted that "a number of children were supposed to be much filled with the spirit, and carried out in spiritual joy last night at Mr. Fays; an Indian girl [was] in great distress for her brother; and Betty Fay [was] in terrors."[70] He advised Isaiah Pratt, who after coming out of a trance, said he had seen both Hell and Christ, not to rely on visions but to turn to the plain word of God for direction.

Parkman joined other Pastors in 1743 in protesting the extravagances of the more fanatical evangelists. While they applauded the good accomplished by revivals, the Pastors disapproved of emphasizing impulses to the detriment of judgment and sense, of encouraging excesses of physical demonstration, of the invasion of the ministerial office by "exhorters and irregular preachers," and of the tendency to leave the regular church and ministry to seek excitement.

One of the consequences of "The Great Awakening" was to divide heretofore harmonious churches. "Separatists" or "New Lights" left the mother church to form new churches. Grafton was torn apart by its factions. Ipswich and Sudbury suffered severely. Jonathan's brother James, a Deacon in Grafton, was converted in February 1742.[71] In March of 1744, some members of the Grafton church wanted to attend services in Westborough but Jonathan joined other church leaders to deny the request "while they were such a division."[72] Benjamin, Jonathan's grandson, became a "Separatist" from the Hardwick, Mass. Church.[73] The harmony of the Westborough Church was exceptional and was attributed to Parkman's effectiveness during his then 20-year ministry. Many towns asked Parkman to join the ecclesiastical Councils assembled to help settle the differences in their congregations. Jonathan Whipple represented Westborough at some of these Councils.

The main conversation in Westborough on New Years day 1744 was the comet that appeared in the western skies. It was the largest comet most people had ever seen and was coming nearer and nearer to the earth. It appeared even larger a month later and Parkman said it represented "... the infinite God whose works these are..." and it reminded him of that

day when the "earth shall also be set on fire and all the wicked shall be consumed."[74]

An earthquake struck about 10:15 a.m. on Sunday June 3, 1744, the same day that word arrived that England and France had declared war on each other.[75] These events led to a public fast on the 28th where Parkman preached on Psalms 46:6 in the morning and Isaiah 1:4 in the afternoon.[76] Jonathan and his family lived through another "great earthquake" which struck March 27, 1755. According to Parkman, "it shook exceedingly, tossing and wrecking as if all nature would fall into pieces."[77] About 4 a.m. November 18, 1755 the most destructive quake to date—it lasted from 2 to 3 minutes—shook New England. Aftershocks were felt for four days. People, educated and ignorant, were in a state of extreme fright, thinking the earth might be destroyed. Lieutenant Governor Phips ordered a fast and his proclamation said that almighty God, "in a most awful and surprising manner demonstrated His righteous anger against the provoking sins of men by terrible and destructive earthquakes and inundations in divers parts of Europe and by late severe shock of an earthquake on this continent and in this Province in particular."[78]

The snow storm of February 1748 was the worst in the 16 years the Whipples had lived in Westborough.[79] It started on Thursday the 11th and continued to snow on and off for nine days (until Saturday the 20th) when it became a blizzard. It let up a bit on Sunday but only a handful attended services. Monday dawned clear but the snow was so deep few were able to do anything but try to tend their livestock. The storm began again on Tuesday and continued most of the day. People were unable to leave their homes for days because of the deep drifts.[80]

Accuracy of time during Jonathan's life was not of much consequence. Drums and horns called people to religious service until church bells were acquired. However, in 1751, Parliament passed an Act that Wednesday September 2, 1752 was followed by Thursday September 14. The Act provided that neither private rights nor the ages of persons should be affected by the change. Previously, Britain and its colonies followed the Roman calendar in which the legal and ecclesiastical New Year's day was March 25 even though January 1 was the historical beginning of the year. When the change occurred, London mobs demanded that Parliament give back the 11 "stolen" days. There were few calendars in general use during Jonathan's lifetime. Almanacs, which were divided into two sections, one astronomical, the other a list of church days, etc, were also rare. The first almanac Jonathan would have had an opportunity to see was issued in Essex county in 1721 by N. Bowen of Marblehead which was published continuously for 13 years.[81]

Jonathan's last illness began the middle of March 1757. Parkman visited

and prayed with him on the 15th and returned on the 18th, telling Francis when leaving that his father "entertains much hope in his death."[82] Jonathan was much weaker by the 25th, and the family, thinking the end was near, again asked Parkman to visit. Upon leaving, Parkman told family members that Jonathan was not "in terror [of dying], but thinks God wrought a good work in him [and] his dying [is] well grounded."[83] He said Jonathan gave "testimony" to the Christian religion and said he was waiting for his "appointment" with God. Jonathan's words to Parkman as he left were "Farewell my Father."[84] He was still alive and a little revived on Sunday the 28th and died Saturday April 2, and was buried the afternoon of Monday April 4.[85] He would have been 78 April 19.

Following the funeral the mourners adjourned to Parkman's home where the will, dictated to Parkman by Jonathan, was read. Dated February 13, 1755, it was proved May 20, 1757.[86] Jonathan's will was that Frances be "suitably and comfortably" maintained for the balance of her life. She was to receive all the household belongings, *f*2 for cloth, 50 pounds of beef, 100 pounds of pork, the benefit of a cow, 10 bushel of Indian corn, two bushel of rye, two bushel of malt, and a barrel of flour annually. She was given use of the east lower room in the home and the cellar and garret room with "liberty of passing and repassing to and from each room," a garden spot, firewood, and a decent burial at her death. She was also named executrix along with son Edwards as executor.

Jonathan Sr. ordered his estate to provide half of the cost of supporting Jonathan Jr., who apparently had an affliction of some sort, in a comfortable and decent manner for life and to pay half of his funeral charges. The will provided that the other half was to be the responsibility of oldest son Francis who had been gifted half of his father's real estate on December 28, 1737.[87] Francis received five shillings under terms of the will. Son Edwards was given the balance of the real and personal property with the condition that the bequeaths to his mother and brother Jonathan be "fulfilled punctually."

Frances only outlived Jonathan by 81 days, dying on Friday June 26 three months and four days shy of her 75th birthday. Jonathan Jr., died five years later.

See Appendix Two for Jonathan's Last Will and Testament.

1. In early Westborough, uplands sold for less than $1 per acre, meadowland $10. Early settlers obtained large tracts and as their sons came of age, gave them farms to clear and build on. Nearly all the early settlers were large land owners. Hurd, D. Hamilton, comp., *Worcester County, Massachusetts*. Vol. 1. Philadelphia: J. W. Lewis and Co. 1889, 1339. (Hereafter Hurd.) On 19 Nov. 1732 Jonathan and others sold to Thomas Berry, their wealthy neighbor, their interest in the dwelling house of John Edwards, brother of Frances [Edwards} Whipple. The house had originally belonged to Frances' father who gave it to son John and his new wife Margaret [Lovell] Edwards [deed recorded 11 April 1693]. Upon the death of John Edwards, Jr., the estate was divided. *Ipswich Deed Records*, 11:179, 59:176. Proceeds from this sale were probably used to acquire their Westborough holdings.

2. The Westborough Church Covenant, adopted 28 Oct. 1724 is as follows: " We (whose names are hereunto subscribed, Inhabitants of the Town of Westborough in New England) knowing that we are very prone to offend and provoke the Most High God, both in Heart and Life, thro' the Prevalence of Sin yt dwelleth in us and manifold Temptations from without us, for wch we have great reason to be unfeignedly humbled before Him from Day to Day, Do, in the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, with Dependence upon the gracious assistance of his holy Spirit, solemnly enter into Covenant with God and one wth another,, according to God, as followeth:

"1. That having chosen and taken the Lord Jehovah to be our God, we will fear Him, cleave to Him in Love, and serve Him in Truth with all our Hearts, giving up ourselves unto Him to be His People in all things; to be at his Direction and sovereign Disposal; that we may have and hold Communion with him as members of Christ's mystical Body, according to his Revealed will unto our Lives' End.

" 2. We also bind ourselves to bring up our Children and Servants in the Knowledge and Fear of God by holy Instruction according to our best Ability: and in special by the use of Orthodox Catechisms, that the True Religion may be maintained in our Families while we live.

"3. And we further promise to keep close to the Truth of Christ, endeavoring, with lively Affection toward it in our hearts, to defend it against all Opposers thereof, as God shall call us at any time thereunto. Which that we may do, We Resolve to use the Holy Scriptures as our Platform, whereby we may discern the mind of Christ, and not the New found Inventions of Man.

"4. We also engage ourselves to have a careful inspection over our own Hearts: That is, so as to endeavor, by the virtue of the Death of Christ, the Mortification of all our sinful Passions, Worldly Frames, and Disorderly Affections, whereby we may be withdrawn from the Living God.

"5. We moreover oblige ourselves in the faithful Improvement of our Ability and opportunity to worship God according to all the Particular Institutions of Christ in his Church, under Gospel Administrations; as, to give Attention unto the Word of God; to pray unto Him; to sing his Praise; and to hold communion each with other in the use of both the Seals of the Covenant of Christ, namely, Baptism and the Lord's Supper.

" 6. We do likewise promise that we will peacefully submit unto the Holy Discipline appointed by Christ in his Church for offenders, obeying them that rule over us in the Lord.

"7. We also bind ourselves to walk in love one towards another, endeavoring our

mutual Edification; visiting, exhorting, comforting, as occasion serveth.

"And warning any Brother or Sister which offendeth, not divulging private offences irregularly, but heedfully following the several Processes laid down by Christ for Church dealing in Matth. 18: 15, 16, 17; willingly forgiving all that manifest to the Judgment of Charity that they truely repent of their Miscarriages.

"Now the God of Peace, that brought again from the dead our Jesus, that great shepherd of the sheep, through the blood of everlasting Covenant, make you perfect in every good work to do his Will, working in you that which is well pleasing in his sight, through Jesus Christ, to whom be glory for ever and ever. Amen." Heman Packard DeForest and Edward C. Bates, *History of Westborough, Massachusetts*. Published by the Town, 1891. 82-84. (Hereafter Deforest and Bates.)

3. On 14 May 1656, the General Court granted 13 petitioners from Sudbury "a portion of land six miles, in some convenient form, in the place desired; provided it hindered no former grant, Twenty or more families must settle thereon within three years and an able ministry maintained." The town of Marlborough was incorporated 31 May 1660. *Westborough, Massachusetts 1717-1967, 250th Anniversary*. North Conway, N.H.: Town of Westborough, Massachusetts, 1967, 9-10. [Hereafter *Westborough Anniversary.*] Northborough, Southborough, and a part of Hudson also evolved from Marlborough.

4. The westerly part of the original town of Marlborough was called Chauncey after Rev. Charles Chauncy (1592-1672, second President of Harvard College) who was granted 500 acres there in 1659. He never lived there but it was referred to as Chauncy from that time until it was incorporated as the Town of Westborough in 1717. Westborough was divided into north and south precincts in 1744. The south precinct retained the name Westborough. The north was incorporated as Northborough in 1766. The pond was called Chauncy by the first white settlers. The Indians called it Naggawoomcom or "Great Pond." *Westborough Anniversary*, 9-10, 12-13.

5. The Indian threat was still a problem as late as November 1748 when Mary, daughter of David Woodwell, was captured and taken to Canada. The church asked for donations to help pay her ransom and collected £29 11s 11d in January 1749. She was not returned until November 1749 and then stayed at the Parkman home. Walett, Francis G., ed., *The Diary of Ebenezer Parkman First Part.* Three volumes in one 1719-1755. Worcester, Mass.: 1974. 186, 188-89, 206.

6. Parkman was ordained 28 Oct. 1724. Four ministers presided at the ceremony. Rev. Joseph Dorr of Mendon opened the service with a prayer; Rev. John Prentice of Lancaster preached the ordination sermon; Rev. William Williams of Weston offered a second prayer; and Rev. Israel Loring of Sudbury gave "the Right Hand of Fellowship" welcoming Parkman into the ministry. J. William T. Youngs, Jr., "Congregational Clericalism: New England Ordinations Before The Great Awakening," *William and Mary Quarterly*, vol. 31, No. 3, July 1973, 481.

7. Clifford K. Shipton, Sibley, *Harvard Graduates*, vol. VI, 1942, 510-27.

8. The census of 1754 showed six slaves within Westborough. Rev. Parkman owned the first slave in town. His name was Maro and he was acquired in Boston in 1728 for £74. Maro died a little more than a year later. DeForest and Bates, 1343.

9. His long pastorate came to an end with his death 9 Dec 1782. He is buried in Memorial Cemetery, Westborough. Walett, xiii.

10. Classes began in the fall of 1726 and he remained as school master for 12 or 13 years. DeForest and Bates,. The School Committee engaged Mr. Jenison in November 1740 and paid him 65 pounds. In November 1753, Westborough was brought before the Court of General Sessions at Worcester for failure to maintain a school for over

a year. In February 1754 the Westborough Selectmen — including Francis Whipple —testified before the Court that Dr. David Barns had been hired as School Master. The Court dismissed the case after the Town paid court costs. Walett, 86, 271. Francis Gardner (Harvard 1755 and Minister at Leominster 1762-1814) was Schoolmaster in 1755. Walett, 293.

11. *Parkman Family Papers, Rev. Ebenezer Parkman Diary,* 14 June 1764 - 13 July 1771. American Antiquarian Society, Worcester, Mass. [Hereafter *Parkman Diary.]*
12. Rev. Henry A. Hazen, comp., *A History of Billerica, Massachusetts With A Genealogical Register.* Boston: A. Williams and Co., 1883, page 28 in the *Genealogical Register.*
13. Walett, 50, 91,128, 155, 190-91, 233, 240.
14. Other close neighbors were the Maynard and Forbush families. Walett, 70.
15. Walett, 77. "Preached at the private meeting at Mr. Whipples on Rev. 3,1." This is one of many references to preaching at the Whipple home.
16. Walett. Parkman's Diary has hundreds of references to how Jonathan and other family members were helpful to Parkman.
17. On 30 May Jonathan and "old Mr. Maynard" visited Parkman and he read them parts of *A Chronological History of New England in the Form of Annals.* It was published in Boston in two volumes; vol 1 in 1736 and vol. 2, *Annals of New-England* in 1755. (Author's question: Does this mean Jonathan and Old Mr. Maynard could not read?) Walett, 217.
18. One of his earliest participation in a Council was at Upton in March 1744. Walett, 93.
19. Jonothan's fellow delegates were from Sudbury, Weston, Hingham, Southborough, and Bradford.
20. Parkman did not include the decision in his Diary. He only indicated it was passed with two dissenting votes. Walett, 204.
21. Walett, 56, 77, 87, 113, 190.
22. The child was "exceedingly small and there was doubt she would live." She was baptized on 31 Dec. 1738. On 4 Jan. 1739 Parkman noted his wife's recovery is slow and the "child is very weak and feeble" and had a sore mouth. They thought the child was dying on the evening of the 9th because she had eaten nothing for hours and had "a ghastly pale overspread the visage and appeared choked up." She was somewhat better on the 11th but died about 10 the morning of 14 January. Walett, 56, 59.
23. *Parkman Diary,* 113
24. Walett, 190
25. Famous visitors to the home include John Hancock and Samuel Adams. It was used as a courtroom when a traveling judge was in town. Religious ceremonies were occasionally conducted in the home and school was held here.
26. Rev. and Mrs. Parkman were there for the raising. Walett, 176.
27. Research by then owners Brian and Beverly Sullivan (2004), show it has had 15 owners: Whipple family, 1734-77; Baker family, 1777-83; Rider family, 1783-93; Wood family, 1793-96; Forbush family, 1796-1920; Walker family, 1920-33; dairy farmers Albert and Evelyn (Walker) Dunn and family, 1933-57; Hickox family, 1957-63; Walett family, 1963-67; Dempsey family, 1967-72; Sullivan family, 1972-present. The Sullivans were married in the house in July 1972. [Letter dated 10 July 1988 from Brian Sullivan at 59 Fisher St., Westborough, Mass. 01581 to the author. Hereafter Sullivan Letter.]
28. *Olde Mrs. Whipple's Apple Gingerbread.* 1 egg. 2 c. sifted flour. c. sugar. 1 tes. Cinnamon. 1 c. molasses. 1 tes. ginger. c. melted shortening. 1 tes. corriander. tes. salt. 1 tes.

nutmeg. 1 c. boiling water, with 1 tbles. Baking soda added to it. 1 med. Apple peeled and cut in very small pieces. Follow this sequence: 1. Cream egg, sugar, molasses, shortening together. 2. Add flour, salt, and spices and mix well. 3. Add boiling water and baking soda, mix well and add apple. 4. Pour in greased, floured pan. 5. Bake in 350 degree oven for about 1 hour. Makes a very moisted cake. Great served with whipped cream or ice cream. Sullivan Letter.

29. The town also had a sawmill owned by Mr. Pratt. D. Hurd, 1338.
30. Selectman in 1735, Moderator in 1736. DeForest and Bates, 24-5.
31. He installed a new mill stone in December 1752. It came from Hopkinton, Mass. Walett, 265.
32. Wolves frequently killed their livestock; sheep were the most frequent victims. Walett, 62
33. Walett, 73.
34. Walett, xiii, 73.
35. Walett, xiii.
36. July 1739: Walett, 67. A Mr. Biglo was lodging with the Whipples at this time.
37. Dr. Gott, who lived in Marlborough, had an apprentice who made calls when he was unavailable. On one occasion Gott's "young man" was called to minister to Parkman's wife who was four or five months pregnant and suffering "terrible convulsion fits." Parkman wrote that the young man "attempted to bleed my wife but missed the veins some number of times." Gott died 25 July 1751. Walett, 84, 241. Dr. Joshua Smith, the Shrewsbury physician, also made calls in Westborough, Walett, 227. Doctors charged according to the amount of medicines furnished and length of travel. One shilling was usually the minimum fee. Blood letting was considered nearly indispensable when a patient was seriously ill. The charge was usually 1 shilling 6 pence. Hurd, 1339.
38. Rhubarb: The roots and rhizomes of various rhubarbs used as a cathartic.
39. Walett, 70.
40. Parkman, who was called on for medical advice, carried a book of remedies and treatments for all kinds of ailments. Walett, ix.
41. Walet, 225.
42. Following his sermon on 24 March 1748, Parkman read the Act of the General Court against profane cursing and swearing to the congregation. Walett, 173. On 23 May 1749 he learned that his own son Ezekiel participated in the "disorderly night walking." He noted the "perplexity" it caused him, "when my own do walk contrary to the advice and counsel which I am frequently giving them." Walett, 195.
43. Walett, xii.
44. In August 1738, Parkman asked Jonathan to mediate a problem he had with Mr. Samuel Fay. Fay disapproved of Parkman wearing a wig during service. An immediate reconciliation was not achieved. Walett, 49. On 30 May 1749 Parkman purchased a "new dark brown" wig from Mr. Sweetzer in Boston. Parkman had to provide the hair. The cost was *f*4.14.0. He bought a beaver hat from Mr. Eaton at the same time for *f*12. Walett, 196.
45. The Colony passed a law in 1672 classifying the observance of any day such as Christmas with dancing, playing shuffleboard, bowling, playing cards or dice and made such observance punishable by a fine of 5 shillings. Several parishioners, including Eliezer Rice, went to Hopkinton in 1750 to observe Christmas. When Rice had a child to baptize in 1751, he was examined and found "below the mark" in the doctrine of original sin and the church refused to allow the baptism.
46. Walett, 184.

47. DeForest and Bates.

48. That the division split the residents is evidenced by a meeting the evening of 14 Feb. 1744 at Deacon John Fay's home to gather subscriptions for the petition to present to the General Court. Eliezer Rice and Silas Pratt got so provoked they began wrestling and Rice broke his leg. Walett, 91.

49. Walett, 97, 112. The history of the first Precinct (south) comes to an end in 1766 when the second Precinct (north) was incorporated as the town of Northborough. In 1767, Westborough had 120 families, Northborough 82. DeForest and Bates.

50. Divided Ipswich Church: Daniel E. Safford, *Hamilton*, Chapter XCVIII from *The History of Essex County*, vol. II, Philadelphia: J.W. Lewis & Co., 1888. Reprinted for the Hamilton Public Library in cooperation with the Hamilton Historical Society, 3.

51. Capt. Matthew Whipple would have been 40 in 1713 and is believed to be the son of Joseph Whipple and his first first wife, Sarah.

52. Hamlet Church: The boundary included all the land and inhabitants within "the Annable farm, Jacob's farm, Abbot farm, Capt. Whipple's farm, the farm of Joseph Whipple, deceased (Jonathan's father), Lovering farm, and all the farms lying upon Wenham bounds. Safford, 4

53. Hamlet residents met at the home of Matthew Whipple IV and voted to build a Meeting House. The committee to supervise its construction included Cornet Whipple, Mr. John Whipple and Mr. Matthew Whipple, tailor. With so many Whipples with the same first names, it is impossible to positively identify two of these individuals. Matthew the tailor (will dated 3 March 1736.) is a grandson of the original Matthew Whipple of Ipswich. His parents were Lt. John Whipple and Mary Stevens. It is probable that Mr. John Whipple (age 52 in 1712) is his older half brother, son of Lt. John and Elizabeth Woodman. Cornet Whipple is probably the son of Maj. Matthew and Johanna Appleton (and grandson of Elder John). He later acquired the title of Captain.

54. Rev. Wigglesworth: His salary was fixed at 60 pounds, two-thirds to be paid in money, one-third in grain, 20 cords of wood, and 100 pounds toward building his house. Wigglesworth was the son of Rev. Michael Wigglesworth, author of the noted poem, "The Day of Doom." He held the office for 54 years after his ordination 27 Oct. 1714. Wigglesworth died 3 Sept. 1768. John Hubbard and Deacons Whipple and Patch were in charge of the funeral. He was succeeded by Rev. Manasseh Cutler in May 1771 who continued in office for 52 years. Safford, 7-9.

55. Members of three successive generations of the Mather family were Puritan ministers in the Massachusetts Bay Colony: Richard (1596-1669), Increase (1629-1723), and Cotton (1663-1728). Increase, the sixth son of Richard, assumed the pulpit of the Second Church of Boston in 1661. His son Mather was ordained in his father's church in 1685 and the two served together until the father's death almost 40 years later. Increase and Cotton attempted to create a union of the New England churches under a presbyterian system designed to establish an oligarchy (the nucleus of which would have been the Mathers) which would have restricted the local authority of the hinterland ministers. The Mather movement was defeated under the leadership of Rev. John Wise who pointed out the Mather proposals would create an Association with widespread powers over the welfare of all the churches. The Association could name candidates for the ministry, decide if a church was fit for communion, and otherwise dictate policy. He scorned the proposals, calling them a bold and daring attempt by a few men to set themselves up as "Oracles for their country." Perzel, 31-32, 122-23.

56. Limiting Authority of Local Churches: Wise called it an attempt by a few men to set themselves up as "Oracles for their Country" and said that its disregard for law "out King'd all Kings on Earth whose Prerogatives are Bounded, and their Kingdoms Governed by Law." [John Wise, *The Churches Quarrel Espoused: or, A Reply in Satye, to certain Proposals*, New York: William Bradford, 1713, 3-8.] Increase Mather responded that there was nothing "of Satyr, or indecent Reflection on the Brethren, whose Notions are not the same with mine."[Increase Mather, *A Disquisition Concerning Ecclesiastical Councils,* Boston: Boone, 1716, xix.] Wise responded that each congregation was a separate body and had power to govern itself; that the Constitution of New England churches was" justified by antiquity, the light of nature, Holy Scripture, and the providence of God." [John Wise, *A Vindication of the Government of the New England Churches*, Boston: 1717, 3, 27, 32-4.]

57. The Hamlet petition: To the Inhabitants of Ipswich now Assembled. May 1, 1712. The humble petition of us whose names are hereunto subscribed humbly showeth, That whereas by God's providence our habitations are so far Distant from the public Worship of God in said Towne yet above fourty families, tho with Great Difficulty repair to Wenham to Worship God. There where we have been at Great Charge to Build, but our Numbers being greatly Increased The Room will not Contain us without some Enlargement & the burden of Conveying our families to said house so Intolerable yet we cannot rest quiet, but if possible we might be silent were not the circumstances of our condition so hard to bear, before after twice seven years past we Do humbly renew or petition you who are our fathers, yet you would consider the circumstances of our condition, and find out some way for us to have the word of God preached among us, or freely set us off to be a Precinct by ourselves, & free us from paying to the Ministry with you, yet so we may with Greater comfort, & more generally attend the public worship of God in the midst of our Hamlet yet God maybe glorified & our Souls edified, so hoping you will grant us our request We remain your humble petitioners. Safford, 2-3.

58. Deacon Matthew Whipple was the great grandson of Elder John Whipple, son of Maj. Matthew Whipple and Jemima Lane.

59. Safford, 6.

60. Walett, 110. However, a Committee from the north Precinct first met with Parkman on 10 Dec. 1744 and asked if he would serve as their Minister and to pay him *f*12 10s and security for the other funds owed him by the north side of town. Walett, 108.

61. Walett, 110-111.

62. DeForest and Bates.

63. Walett, 173-4.

64. Church Singing: The following example of their poetic style gives an idea of church singing of that time when each line was separately read before it was sung by the congregation.

    The Lord to mee a Shepherd is, want therefore shall not I.
    Hee in the folds of tender-grasse doth cause mee down to lie.
    To waters calme me gently leads, Restore my soule doth hee.
    Hee doth in paths of righteousnes for his names sake lead me.

65. Change in Church Singing: *Parkman Diary*, 116, 123, 133, 161. 263-4. Batherick apparently set the tune in 1750 as Parkman wrote in his diary of 30 April that "David Batherick fell upon me as I was coming out of the door with bitter resentments of abuse, because when I appointed mean tune to be sung yesterday, he set Canterbury. I was very much moved and gave him some deserved correction." Walett, 215. It was 1771 before the church allowed a change and elected four leaders

who sat together to conduct the singing. Seven years later (1778) the first choir appeared and the innovation was endorsed by the following town vote which recommended "to those male persons who are disposed to sing the praises of God in public to sit as much together as they conveniently can, in ye men's places. And to those female persons who in like manner are disposed to sing, to sit in ye women's front gallery for ye purpose aforesaid, and to sit there in a decent manner during ye town's pleasure. DeForest and Bates.

66. Great Awakening: William Howland Kenny, "George Whitefield, Dissenter Priest of the Great Awakening, 1739-1741," *William and Mary Quarterly*, 3 ser. Vol. XXVI, No. 1, Jan. 1969, 85.

67. Walett, xi.

68. DeForest and Bates.

69. DeForest and Bates.

70. Walett, 89.

71. James Whipple visited Rev. Parkman's home 12 Jan. 1743 and shared the accounts of his conversion with Parkman and his brother Jonathan. Despite his conversion, James disapproved of what was happening at various private meetings of the "enlightened." When Parkman's business required him to stay overnight in Grafton he usually lodged at James' home. Walett, 77, 89.

72. Walett, 92.

73. Benjamin and his uncle Edwards dined at the Parkman home on 20 Oct. 1755 and the Minister noted in his diary that Benjamin had "become a Separate at Lambs town. I had some free talk with him upon it." Walett, 257.

74. Comet New Years Day 1744: Walett, 89-90. Rev. David Hall of Sutton kept a diary from 5 Nov. 1740 until his death 8 May 1789. His entry of 23 Jan. 1743/4 stated "A blazing star or comet in the West has appeared for near two months; at first small, but now of great length beyond what I ever saw. This is the third that has of late years appeared. I would not be dismayed at ye sign of Heaven, but O ye sinners fear who live in ye neglect of God and O yet I might so far regard it as to trim my lamp and get ready." On 4 Feb. he wrote, "Its tail must be several millions of miles long. The Lord sanctify so awful a token of an approaching God, who thus hangs out his ensign in ye skies yet ye nations may tremble before him." On 16 Feb. he wrote that "The blazing star has appeared near three months." Rev. Wm. A. Benedict and Rev. Hiram A. Tracy, compilers, *History of the Town of Sutton, Massachusetts from 1704 to 1876; Including Grafton Until 1735; Millbury Until 1813; and Parts* of Northbridge, *Upton, and Auburn*. Published for the Town by Sanford & Company. Press of Lucius P. Goddard. Worcester, 1878, 60-68.

75. Walett, 98. Rev. Hall's diary for 3 June: "There was a considerable shock of an earthquake just as we were going to the House of God." *Ibid,* 69. This was not the first earthquake experienced by the Whipple family. On Sunday 29 Oct. 1727. when living in the Hamlet, they were awakened at 10:40 p.m. by a terrible roar to find their windows rattling, their homes rocking and trembling, beds shaking, dishes falling, chimneys tumbling, cellar walls collapsing, and all movable things being tossed about. People ran out of their houses in night clothes. The ground was shaking so much they could not stand and had to sit or recline on the ground. The quake continued for about two minutes. A second shock at 11:00 was followed by others at 11:45 and 3:00 and 5:00 a.m. Aftershocks continued into December, each with less force. People were fearful of divine judgment for their sins and failure in religious duties. The clergy preached that is was a "loud call to the whole land (the shock was felt in New York, Pennsylvania, and extended all along the coast to the

Gulf of Mexico) to repent and fear and give glory to God." People believed their Ministers and many who previously ignored the church teachings became penitent and devout. Church membership increased dramatically but in time they lost their fear and their new found religion was forgotten. *Essex Antiquarian*, Vol. 6, No. 4 (Oct.) 1902.

76. Walett, 99.
77. *Parkman Diary*, 1743-48.
78. *Ibid.* The effects of the quake in Boston are described at length in the *Boston Weekly News-Letter*, 20 Nov. 1755 and the *Boston Gazette or Country Journal*, 24 Nov. 1755. Also see Eleanor M. Tilton, "Lighting Rods and the Earthquake of 1755," *New England Quarterly*, XIII (March 1940), 85-97.
79. Snow Storm of February 1748: It rivaled in intensity the storm they experienced in Ipswich in February 1716/17. It began the 18th and abated for one day on the 23rd. The second storm began Sunday the 24th and was so violent neighbors were unable to contact each other. Some small houses were completely buried. Ten to 15 feet of snow accumulated on the level – up to 20 feet in some places. The oldest Indians had never heard of a storm to equal it. Cattle were buried in the snow and many starved or smothered to death. Those near the sea were blinded and wandered into the water and drowned. Sheep, swine, and poultry were buried under drifts and died. *Essex Antiquarian*, Vol. 3, No. 10 (Oct. 1899), 149. There were 27 snow storms the winter of 1740-41. Nearly a foot fell 3 February with two more storms following about a week later, filling the road to their fence tops. In some places snow was eight to ten feet deep. Fences were still covered 4 April and three days later another three feet fell. Spring was very late that year. *Ibid*, Vol. 7, No. 1 (Jan. 1903), 29-30.
80. Walett, 170.
81. Gregorian Calender: In 1582 pope Gregory declared that 1 January was the first day of the new year. Protestant Great Britain, believing that "the hand of Joab was in it" refused to make the change and continued the custom of two new year's days until 1752. This accounts for early colonial records noting March as the first month of the year and February as the 12th. This is the reason for double dating to 1753 in January and February and to the 12th of March. Both dates are given because one was the historical and the other the legal and ecclesiastical year. These written dates were abbreviated – 1712-3, 1712-13 or 1712/3, 1712/13. Some historians and genealogists disregarded these double dates and gave all dates as though the year began January 1, others as though it began March 25. Thus it can't always be determined which year is correct. *Essex Antiquarian*, Vol. 4, No. 5, (May 1900), 65-8.
82. *Parkman Diary*, March/April 1757, 1756-61.
83. *Parkman Diary,* March/April 1757, 1756-61.
84. *Parkman Diary*, March/April, 1757, 1756-61.
85. *Parkman Diary,* March/April, 1757, 1756-61.
86. Worcester County Records, vol 5, 265-6.
87. Francis gave Jonathan a bond on 28 Dec. 1737 that required him to provide half of Jonathan Jr.'s support upon the death of Jonathan, Sr. Bonds guaranteed the performance of an action. Parents who passed on their lands early secured their own support by bonds from the recipient. The author wrote the Register of Deeds of Worcester Co., Mass. on 23 May 2000 requesting a copy of these two documents. Despite offering to pay for the service and enclosing a stamped self-addressed envelope, he never received an answer.

FRANCIS WHIPPLE AND ABIGAIL LAMSON

Francis[4] Whipple *(Jonathan[3], Joseph[2], Matthew[1], Matthew[A]) was baptized November 4, 1705 in Ipswich, Mass. and died July 2, 1787 in New Braintree, Worcester Co., Mass., at 81 years of age. He married* ***Abigail Lamson*** *at Ipswich May 11, 1726. He served on a variety of Church and Town Committees, as Clerk, Treasurer, Justice of the Peace, Selectman, Town Moderator, and Representative to the General Court for eight terms. Abigail, daughter of Thomas* ***Lamson*** *and Abigail* ***Faulkner****, was born in Ipswich and died December 22, 1799 in New Braintree, at approximately 94 years of age.*

Children of Francis and Abigail Whipple:

+	*i.*	*Benjamin, born 23 April 1727; died 30 April 1806. Married Hepzibah Crosby.*
+	*ii.*	*Lucy, born 1 January 1730; died 18 May 1773. Married Moses Pratt.*
	iii.	*(Baby) Whipple, born in October 1730.*[1]
+	*iv.*	*Thomas (Capt.), born 21 October 1731; died 30 January 1811. Married Martha Higgins.*
+	*v.*	*Abigail, born 6 July 1734; died 8 October 1762. Married Thaddeus Warrin.*
+	*vi.*	*Abner, born 25 August 1737; died before 15 February 1783.*
	vii.	*Sarah, born 1 March 1741; died 28 March 1742.*
+	*viii.*	*Francis, born 26 February 1742; died after 1789. Married Precilla Rice.*
	ix.	*Nehemiah, born 28 November 1745; died 18 November 1746.*[2]
+	*x.*	*Elizabeth, born 18 June 1748; died 8 May 1822. Married Nathan Carruth.*
+	*xi.*	*Mary, born 11 January 1752. Married Nathan Hill.*

FRANCIS AND ABIGAIL moved their family to Westborough by January 6, 1734 the day they joined Westborough's Evangelical Congregational Church by letter. Massachusetts was then divided into five regions. Worcester County, the near frontier, was one of the regions and almost forgotten by the rest of Massachusetts. It was the least populated, the least

important, and probably the poorest. Virtually inaccessible, it imported little and exported less.[3] By the outbreak of the Revolution, Westborough was tenth in population among Worcester County towns with roads laid out to the Whipple corn mill[4] and to the saw mill. During its first 100 years the town was not on any stage line. A turnpike, built in 1810, finally gave it a direct line of travel.[5]

Francis was 29 and Abigail 26 when they left the Hamlet at Ipswich for Westborough. The family consisted of sons Benjamin,[6] 7 and Thomas, 3 and daughter Lucy, 4. A fourth child born in Ipswich had died before the move.[7] Abigail, their fifth child, was the first to be born in Westborough. Abner, Sarah, Francis, Jr., Nehemiah, Elizabeth, and Mary were also born there.[8] Sarah and Nehemiah did not live to adulthood.[9] Nehemiah, Lucy, and Abigail got distemper in early 1746 and Nehemiah was one of 24 Westborough children to die of it that year.[10] Francis and Abigail lived to see the birth of 41 grandchildren, seven of whom preceded them in death.[11] Benjamin was the only child to move any distance from his parents, moving his family to Bennington, Vermont in 1760.

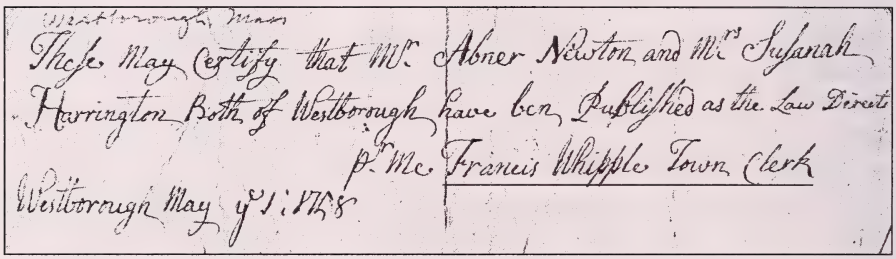
Their home was probably close to his parent's home. Their minister, Rev. Ebenezer Parkman, wrote in his diary on February 16, 1746 that he rode out to see old Mr. Whipple (Jonathan) "where was his son Francis." His diary of May 9, 1749 notes that he rode around to both [of] the Whipples that afternoon.[12]

Abigail's grandmother, Abigail (Dane) Faulkner of Andover, Massachusetts, and her mother, Abigail (Faulkner) Lamson were accused of being witches during the infamous Salem witch trials of 1692. The grandmother, age 40, was charged with the "detestable crime of witch-craft" and indicted twice on August 11 for practicing "sorceries wickedly, maliciously, and feloniously." She was found guilty on September 17 and was sentenced to death. The verdict still exists on a document in the Massachusetts State Archives.

Abigail's mother and her aunt Dorothy were accused of witchcraft ten days before their mother was sentenced. Her mother was nine and her aunt was 12 when they were accused on September 7 during Andover's famous "Touch Test." Both were imprisoned for a month before being released on bail. They were cleared by Proclamation in May 1693. [See Appendix for full details on the charges, the trial, the conviction and sentence, and final outcome.]

Francis was a member of the small group of leaders who dominated Westborough's political life. He was elected to the Town's major offices, to the General Court (legislature) as a Member of the House,[13] and was a leader in church affairs. He was 39 when elected to his first office, Town Treasurer (1744), and 41 when first elected to the General Court (1746).[14]

During his 26 years of public service, he held dual positions: 1752-8, simultaneously as Selectman, Town Clerk,[15] and Representative;[16] 1762 and 1763 Town Moderator, Selectman, and Representative; 1765, the year of the Stamp Act troubles, Representative, Selectman and Clerk; 1768 and 1770, Moderator, Selectman, and Clerk.[17] He ended his political career at age 65 in 1770 by serving as Moderator, Selectman, and Clerk.[18] He was also Justice of the Peace and Court was frequently held at his home as were the marriages he performed.[19] He held the titles of Mister and Esquire.


Westborough, Mass
These May Certify that Mr. Abner Newton and Mrs Susanah
Harrington Both of Westborough have ben Published as the Law Direct
p. Mr. Francis Whipple Town Clerk
Westborough May 9th 1758

May 8, 1758. Courtesy, American Antiquarian Society, Worcester, Mass.

The family lived in turbulent times and because of his various public duties Francis was on the cutting edge of the changes that were soon to come to the American colonies. The lived on the frontier during the religious revivals known as the Great Awakening, the French and Indian War, the efforts of Britain to eliminate many of their liberties and to tax them excessively without representation in the Parliament, and by imposing many other regulations designed to limit the Colony's right to grow and prosper. Francis' eight terms in the House of Representative coincided with these events and with the beginning of British repressions, including the Stamp Act, which led to the American Revolution. His fellow citizens kept electing him to a variety of jobs because they trusted him and his judgment to serve them well. He led a very full life.

He was a close friend to Rev. Parkman[20] and was frequently elected Delegate to Church Councils held at adjoining towns.[21] He was often called on to strike a pitch in Church singing with the congregation falling in at the second note, was on the Committee "to lay out the pew ground in the new Meeting House" in December 1752,[22] and was one of seven candidates seeking election as Deacon in March of 1755 but withdrew after the first ballot.[23] He played a critical role as a member of the Committee to reply to the Legislature about the petition to split the Church and divide the Town in 1744.[24] The move to divide Westborough was prompted by the long distance some members of the North Precinct had to travel to get to Church and to Town Meetings. Those residents petitioned the General Court for permission to form their own Town and

establish their own Church and to be relieved of helping to pay Rev. Parkman's salary. [See the previous chapter on his father Jonathan for a discussion of the Town division, pages 235-37.]

Over the years Francis spent a great deal of time on various committees elected to negotiate Rev. Parkman's salary.[25] On June 10, 1746 Westborough's Selectmen petitioned the General Court to force the North Precinct to pay its share of Parkman's salary. They reported that £82 10s old tenor (paper currency) had been raised and was being held by the Constable.[26] They also requested permission to collect the balance due so Parkman could be paid the full amount due. The House ordered the petitioners to show cause on Friday June 20 why the request of the North Precinct should not be granted. The Council, on June 21, requested the appointment of a Joint Committee to consider the petition and voted to dismiss the Town's petition on June 26 and ordered that the North Precinct be exempt from further payment to Parkman. Francis, a member of the House, convinced his colleagues not to concur with the Council and it ordered that the full tax be collected and paid to Parkman.[27]

Francis was on the Town Committee appointed January 4, 1748 to determine the depreciated value of the Bills of Credit (paper currency) paid to Parkman as salary. The Committee concluded the value was less than when originally negotiated so a new Committee, including Francis, was directed to see if additional funds could be raised.[28] Many Committee meetings were held between February 24 and May 30 when the Town Meeting voted Parkman £152 10s old tenor. Parkman told the Committee it would take £440 old tenor to equal what £220 had previously provided. However, at the same time the Town was debating whether to build a new Meeting House and concluded it could not pay more. Francis and Deacon Newton, Town Clerk and Moderator respectively, were instructed at the May 30 meeting to tell Parkman the Town did not "intend to keep up the value of money according to gold or silver but according to the determination of the Court." Parkman asked that the measuring standard be "corn and other necessaries of life." The Town said no. The debate on the salary issue disclosed that many parishioners, including Francis, did not approve of Parkman repeating old sermons instead of developing new ones.[29]

Two years later Francis was on a Committee to notify Parkman that the Town voted him £500 old tenor and would put it into a rate so it could be collected and he could be paid.[30] The Committee also told the Minister it believed the Town would increase the rate by £100 old tenor per annum if he would agree to remain as Minister.[31] On January 28, 1754, Parkman asked Francis and Deacon Newton their opinion about whether he should address the Town Meeting and ask for the remainder of his

salary for the year 1744.[32]

Ominous news of the French War came to Worcester in July of 1757 when it was learned that the 2,400-man garrison at Fort William Henry at the south end of Lake George, New York was in imminent danger of attack from Fort Carillon, Ticonderoga, N. Y.[33] Robert Rogers' New Hampshire's Scouts brought word that French Gen. Louis Montcalm had 8,000 men marshaled and ready to attack.[34] Unfortunately, the British Army, the main line of defense, was far away in Nova Scotia waters.

Thomas Pownall, Massachusetts' Governor, moved quickly.[35] Without waiting for advice of Crown or Council, he ordered 25 Massachusetts regiments ready to march at a moment's warning. Worcester was made headquarters for a rendezvous for all troops from the middle counties. Camp was established a few miles west of town. The Town Green was suddenly overrun with men from Lancaster, Shrewsbury, Rutland, Lincoln, and Westborough, walking in by twos and threes with their muskets on their shoulders. Excitement was high.

Riders with frantic calls for help came in daily from the north frontier. Col. John Chandler, the Worcester Commander, responded by sending orders instantly to wherever troops had assembled. He eventually ran out of post riders and berated the "damned farmers who wouldn't leave their hay fields in July if the enemy were cannoning the Court House itself."[36]

An express galloped into town August 3 with news that Fort William Henry had surrendered. The *Boston Gazette* printed eyewitness accounts of the surrender along with a list of the equipment carried by the French soldiers.[37] The French were expected to follow up their victory with an attack on Fort Edward, farther south. If the Fort fell, the frontier would be defenseless and the whole of Massachusetts naked to the sea The Worcester Militia, Col. Chandler commanding, was ordered to march to Albany, N. Y. to join other forces and engage in the fighting. Just before new year 1758, the *Boston Gazette* tried to comfort its readers in cheery couplets:

> Fifty-seven to this poor nation
> Has been a year of sad vexation!
> Yet fifty-eight shall surely bring
> Honor, like Prussia's, to our King.[38]

By July 1758, after eight weeks of fighting, the great French Fortress of Louisbourg was captured.[39] It was the major French stronghold guarding New France and controlled the entrance to the St. Lawrence river, preventing British shipping into Canada. Fort Frontenac[40] on the northeastern shore of Lake Ontario was captured August 27, breaking the line of

French communication between the St. Lawrence and the Ohio. The tide had turned. New England saw hope ahead and felt her strength renewed.[41]

Money was scarce in Westborough in 1760 and the Town voted not to keep a lawful school but several months later appropriated £26 for the school.[42] The Schoolmaster usually taught from eight to 20 weeks annually and received from two to three times as much pay as the School Mistress. The person boarding the teacher received about a dollar a week. Doctors charged according to the amount of medicines furnished and travel to see their patients. One shilling was generally the minimum fee. The charge for blood letting was usually 1 shilling 6 pence. This service was considered nearly indispensable when a patient was seriously ill. Francis, as Justice of the Peace, received from 1 to 2 shillings for the deeds he made. The charge was based on the length of the document. He received somewhat larger fees for services as Justice of the Peace trying petty offenses. Uttering profane oaths and "cusses" appear to have been the most common offenses.[43]

ELECTION TO THE GREAT AND GENERAL COURT

Francis' first election to the Great and General Court occurred at the Town Meeting May 20, 1746.[44] He left a week later for Boston accompanied by Rev. Parkman.[45] En route they dined at Woolson's Tavern where Mr. Cushing and Mr. Whitney of Nitchewaug joined them on the continuation of their journey. While on the road they were joined by Col. John Stoddard of Northampton, a Councillor and Chief Justice of the Circuit Court of Common Pleas, and John Chandler a Worcester Representative. After a stop at Saltmarsh's, Representatives Brigadier Timothy Dwight of Hatfield, Col. Porter, Mr. Breck, Mr. Chester Williams, Dr. William Clark, and other joined the caravan. He was re elected May 18, 1747. The Town chose not to send a Representative in 1748 and elected Francis again on May 12, 1749. He lodged at Mr. Blake's in Boston during the 1749 Session and attended prayers at the new North Meeting House sitting in "brother Samuel [Parkman']s pew."[46] He also served in 1755, 1756, 1762, 1763, and 1765.[47]

Boston's Court House was at the foot of King street and dominated central Boston. Its three stories was topped by a gilded lion and unicorn and housed both the General Court and the Town's Merchant Exchange. Access to the government offices was by a side door and up a narrow circular stairway to the foyer which separated the House and Council Chambers – the latter in the room on the right. Across the hall from the main Chamber in a room scarcely larger than the Council's, the 100 or so

Representatives who annually trekked to Boston convened. The room was too hot in summer and overheated in the winter and always appeared to be in disarray. The main Chamber was large and well appointed.[48] The Governor's Mansion was on Marlborough street.[49] A half dozen taverns and small boarding houses were only a brief walk from the Court House. Most Representatives stayed in these boarding houses and political gossip and deals were made in the taverns.

What would be among the most notable things for a modern day descendant of Francis if he/she were privileged to travel to Boston with him and attend a Session of the General Court? Probably the stench. Boston was a city of 15,000 with a long majestic wharf, teeming streets, crowded shops, and an unruly work force. The streets stank of manure, the courtyards of urine, the stair-wells of moldering wood and rat droppings; kitchens stank of mutton fat and spoiled vegetables; unaired parlors stank of stale dust, bedrooms of greasy sheets, damp feather-beds, and the pungent aroma of chamber pots.

Stenches were in the air: sulfur rose from the chimneys, caustic lyes from the tanneries, congealed blood from the slaughterhouses. The rivers stank as did the marketplace, the churches, the fine houses of the wealthy. All the people from the common laborer to the upper class, even the Governor and his wife, stank in all seasons of the year. They stank of sweat and unwashed clothes, of bad breath and rotting teeth, older people of rancid cheese and sour milk. There was nothing to hinder bacteria busy at decomposition. No human activity was free from the stench and our modern descendant would have welcomed a quick return to the 21st century.

Francis was a Back Bencher as were most members outside the eastern coastline. Most Back Benchers were farmers or tradesmen essential to every farming community. They were not political novices. Most were Town officials, militia officers, and active in the church and accorded the deference normally paid men of high status in their own communities.[50] Serving in the House was an enjoyable experience for them. Boston was an exciting place when the General Court was sitting. Most of the Province's great and near great were there. It was the place to learn of attractive financial opportunities and to widen the circle of political acquaintances.

With the exception of the annual May meeting, they met, adjourned, and dissolved at the command of the Governor.[51] The House operated under a brief set of rules which were reviewed and adopted annually. Members were to be polite, courteous, and decorous. They were not to speak out of turn or wander aimlessly about. The Legislative Calendar, almost non existent, allowed Members to discuss whatever interested

them. Amendments and motions were not limited.[52]

They could seek passage of favorable legislation, which at the time usually meant taxes others would have to pay; introduce and advocate fiscal policies to encourage the economic development of their community; argue for defense measures that limited the mobilization of their town's militia company or the drafting of their sons. The right to debate was unfettered. They could obstruct the orderly flow of legislation when their own demands were being ignored and argue over and over again for legislation they wanted. Committees were used to deal with the disposition of individual disputes, hardship cases, complaints, and the like. Partisan appeals, while not unknown, were unusual.[53]

The three branches of government assembled at the opening of each Session which began with a sermon. The House elected the Council but the Governor had the power to reject anyone elected. There were no nominations or floor discussion. Each Member wrote the names of the 28 men he wanted with the obvious advantage going to the candidates with established reputations.[54] Party politics did not exist so Representatives served without a party position to follow and achieved a great deal of independence.[55]

Most legislative sermons included an exposition of the biblical foundation of government and then proceeded to a lesson in morality, concluding with an application of the lesson to the Governor, Councilors, Representatives, and on occasion, to the people in general.[56] Most sermons dealt with wisdom and moral stamina. Members were described as "fathers" and were expected to guide, nourish, and protect their people. The Ministers followed this technique believing that the people would follow paths of virtue or of vice depending on the example and wise governance of their superiors in authority.

Rev. John Barnard preached on May 28, 1746 (Francis' first Session) that the responsibility of rulers extended beyond the mere defense of the Commonwealth and the rights of its people to include their advancement, both moral and material. On May 26, 1756 (his fifth Session) Rev. Samuel Cooper preached that the ideal ruler, whether a King, a Governor, a Representative, or a Selectman, was a Moses, a "wise and tender patriarch whose personal piety equipped him for the just and humane direction of his people." Cooper also said criticism of rulers should be limited to those who were well informed of the facts, and their criticism should be "managed with more decency, and tempered with charity."[57] Representatives were urged to apply these standards in choosing Councilors who should "be Gentlemen of good Extract, and of large Interests" with family name and economic interests less important than personal character.[58]

The Speaker appointed a Temporary Committee to hear each bill,

petition, and bureaucratic function.[59] During the 1756-57 Session members had the added pressure of dealing with the war against France. Speaker Thomas Hubbard created more than 400 separate Committees with 1600 individual Committee assignments. Members served on three to five Committees with differing responsibilities. While military planning and strategy was the Governor's responsibility, the House insisted on supervising all facets of military affairs.[60] In war time a Joint House-Council Committee assumed most routine military responsibilities.[61] Most Committees met in special Chambers in the Court House attic.[62]

Most details of legislation were decided on the House floor. Debate was secret but it was taken seriously and frequently changed minds.[63] Controversial measures were considered paragraph by paragraph and if need be sentence by sentence and word by word. A debate that began in the morning might resume after the dinner break and then continue into the early morning hours. Whether voting was by voice, a show of hands, or an unrecorded tally is unknown.[64]

A minimum of 40 Representatives was required to convene. Daily attendance early in the Session averaged 70 but as the Session wore on, Members had a tendency to go home to plow their fields or tend to other interests.[65] Those absent without permission were subject to fines and could be summoned to the House by a Writ served by a County Sheriff. However, fines were seldom imposed and absenteeism forced frequent recesses. Occasionally the introduction of a piece of controversial legislation would entice delinquent Members back. Often several days would be devoted to debating a bill, a final compromise agreed to only to see the bill rejected because the sudden influx or departure of Members altered the division of support.[66]

Three major issues considered during Francis' service were: impressment (1747), currency (1749), and Britain's imperial revenue and reform programs of the 1760s. Impressment involved Royal officials impressing sailors for the Navy. Councilors who supported impressment were denied re-election. The currency issue was settled when the House passed a bill terminating paper currency. Parliament's revenue and reform programs polarized Massachusetts' politics along ideological lines.[67]

The establishment of new towns by the General Court became controversial during the 1740s and 1750s. Governor William Shirley reported to the Lords of Trade in 1742 that House Members far outnumbered the 28 Councilors and that increases in the number of towns would make the margin even greater.[68] He refused to approve a bill for three new towns "to put an end to this way of increasing the number of Representatives." The Assembly saw his action "an encroachment on ancient traditional rights" and a step toward dictatorship by the Crown. By 1753 the Gover-

nor was compelled to sign a bill creating three new towns.[69]

Three factions developed and maneuvered for control of the Court. The Royalists, a minority, were loyal to the Crown. At the other extreme were the radical liberals, headed by James Otis of Barnstable and Samuel Adams of Salem, who were for complete independence. In the middle were the moderates, dominated by the merchant class, who leaned towards conciliation with the mother country. Parliament's enactment of trade and tax laws and the attempts to enforce them, eventually drove the moderates into an alliance with the liberals and set the stage for the Revolution.[70]

Thomas Hutchinson, 35, of Boston was elected Speaker in 1746, Francis' first term. He defeated his brother-in-law Andrew Oliver, also of Boston, by one vote. The Speaker of the House had immense power. For example, in 1749 he distributed 900 assignments to 104 members.[71] It would be interesting to know whom Francis supported. William Shirley was Governor during Francis' second and third terms and was succeeded by Lieut. Gov. Spencer Phips in September 1756.

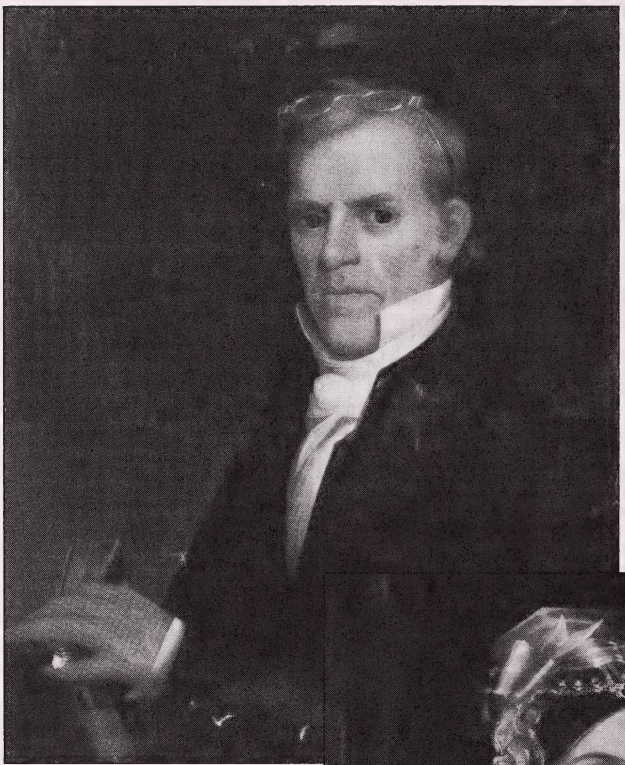
After Louisbourg was captured in 1745 massive inflation hit Massachusetts and the Legislature responded by authorizing the printing of more paper money. Between 1744 and 1748 the price of silver, in terms of paper, nearly doubled.[72] In 1751 the English Parliament did not allow the Colonies to issue legal tender currencies. In April 1764, when a growing population and expanding trade were creating a demand for even more paper money, Parliament ordered currency then circulating to be retired. The result was economic hardship. When there was no relaxation of the rigid interpretation of what constituted legal currency, it became apparent that the economic well-being of the Colonies was subordinate to the mother country. Many Americans were persuaded that British officials were utterly callous to Colonial problems and Colonial Legislatures began to demand equality within the Empire.[73]

GENERAL COURT SESSION OF 1746-47

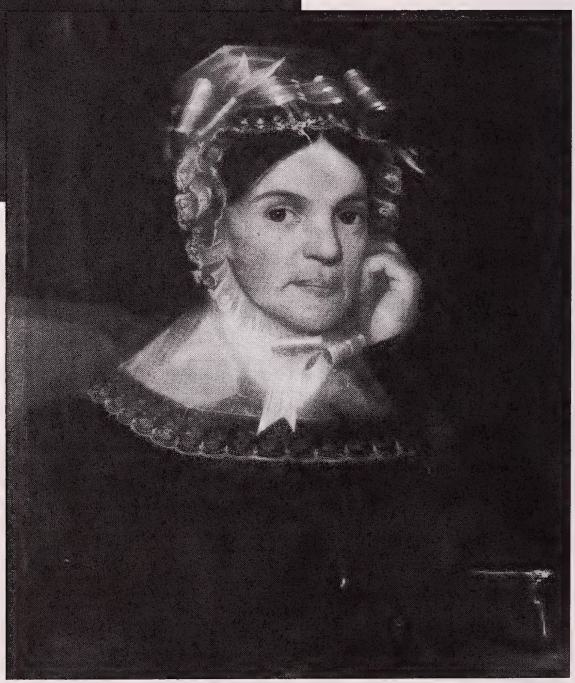
The General Court convened May 28, 1746 and was dissolved by Gov. William Shirley April 25, 1747.[74] It sat almost continuously with recesses of two or three weeks at a time. There were 109 Members of whom 67 had served the previous Session. This was Francis Whipple's freshman term.[75] Thomas Hutchinson of Boston, Suffolk Co., was elected Speaker, Roland Cotton, Clerk, Gen. William Foye Treasurer, and Christopher Kilby, Massachusetts Agent in London.

The controlling business of the Session was the progress of King George's War in North America. Because Great Britain had not reim-

bursed the Colonists for the money spent on the siege and capture of Louisbourg, the Assembly was unwilling to vote money for a second invasion of Canada. Bills considered included: forbidding the beating of drums within 10 rods of the Court House; relief of bankrupts and the equal distribution of their estates among their creditors; preventing the



Representative Francis Whipple, 1705-1787.



Abigail (Lamson) Whipple, 1708-1799.

Photographs of Portraits, courtesy of Dr. Richard Bing of Pasadena, California.

firing of guns charged with ball or shot in Boston; better regulation of the Indians; against profane cursing and swearing; easier methods to partition land or other real estate; punishing officers or soldiers who mutiny or desert.

The issue of reimbursement runs throughout the House *Journal* and Boston merchants submitted many memorials "representing the great mischiefs accruing to the Province by the great floods of paper money issued and issuing in the Province." Governor Shirley warned the Court on May 30 that potential Indian problems on the frontiers forced him to send three Troops of Horse to the western frontier.[76] Lieutenant General Sir William Pepperrell[77] and Admiral Sir Peter Warren[78] paid an official visit to Boson June 24 and were received with due pomp and circumstance in the House Chambers.[79]

The House sent a message to the Governor on June 14 deploring the enlistment of boys under 16. They said the practice "brings great distress and difficulty on parents and masters" and could be fatal to the success of the Army. On the eighteenth it appropriated £1746 to operate the *Massachusetts-Frigate*, the Province's major naval vessel, until October 31. When the Governor informed the House that inflation made his proposed salary of £1500 new tenor[80] unacceptable, it ignored him while assessing a tax of £2442 3s 9 pence in Bills of Credit to pay Members for their service, attendance, and travel this Session.[81]

The House voted on August 5 to allow all French prisoners captured in the fall of Louisbourg to return home. On the sixth, it voted to give soldiers on the frontier five shillings per week subsistence from the time of their enlistment. When the soldiers left for their post or station the subsistence was to be increased by one pence for every 20 miles traveled until arrival.

Governor Shirley's message of September 9 emphasized the danger of French possession of Nova Scotia with its 30,000 Roman Catholics including "near 6,000 fighting men well acquainted with our eastern coasts and harbors..."[82] On September 20 he reported that a French fleet with a large land force was off the coast of Nova Scotia. In anticipation of an invasion, he ordered Castle William[83] and Governor's Island[84] in Boston harbor to be completed and supplied with cannon. He also ordered several regiments of Militia to march to Boston to strengthen it and asked the Governors of New York, New Jersey, Pennsylvania, Connecticut and Rhode Island to be ready to send troops if necessary. He reported that several parts of town near the harbor had been fortified; that "Express-Boats" had been sent to alert the English squadron at sea; that the new ammunition magazine at Castle William was completed and stocked; and that 600 barrels of powder in Boston had been moved to a

safer place. He asked the House to fund these operations and to recommend other measures to keep the Province safe "during these dangerous times." Concerned about the cost, the House asked that officers and soldiers on duty in the Boston area be allowed to return home subject to returning at a "minute's warning" if necessary.[85]

The Governor's Message of October 4 asked for money to sink ships in the north channel near Governor's Island and the black rocks next to Castle William so if the French fleet entered the harbor it would be within range of 20 of the 42-pound guns at Castle William. The Committee considering the request did not agree and it was rejected by the House October 7. His Message of the tenth informed the House he was strengthening Governor's Island and asked it to appropriate the required funds. The House voted £200 for repairs at Castle Island on the eleventh and reminded the Governor that raising more troops was "contrary [to the] desire" of the House and Council.[86] On November 14, the House passed a bill directing the Military Commissary on how it was to cut and distribute provisions to the Army.[87]

GENERAL COURT SESSION OF 1747-48

The first Session convened Wednesday May 27, 1747, the second August 12, the third February 3, 1748, and dissolved April 23 by Gov. Shirley who addressed all three Sessions. Forty-three towns failed to send Representatives but many of the great names of the Colony sat with Francis this Session. Included were Samuel Adams, Boston, John Quincy, Braintree, James Otis, Barnstable, and Abishai Folger, Nantucket, an ancestor of Benjamin Franklin. Reverend Charles Chauncy, Pastor of the first Church in Boston, gave the sermon,[88] Thomas Hutchinson was elected Speaker and Roland Cotton Clerk. Of the 28 Councillors elected, 18 were from Massachusetts Bay, four from New Plymouth, three from the Province of Maine, one for the "territory lying between the river Sagadahock in Maine and Nova-Scotia," and two at large.

Henry Pelham was Prime Minister of Great Britain (1743-54), the fourth Parliament of George II convened November 10, 1747, and England was defeated in the War of the Austrian Succession (1740-48) – known as King George's War in the colonies. The Treaty of Aix-la-Chapelle (October 18, 1748) restored the great fortress of Louisbourg to France.[89]

In his first Address May 28, Governor Shirley reported that he was asking the Governors of New York, New Jersey, New Hampshire, Connecticut, and Rhode Island for assistance in the war with the French and that the Six Nations of the Iroquois Indians had joined with Massachu-

setts.[90] He deplored the sad condition of the Provincial Treasury and the dilapidated state of Castle William and the forts on the frontiers.[91]

On August 12 the Governor informed Members that French forces were advancing from Canada and that the capture of Crown Point in New York was "necessary for the general safety of his Majesty's northern colonies."[92] His speech to the third Session on February 3, 1748 addressed the general distress caused by the extraordinary circulation of paper money which was bringing "many good families to poverty." He asked the House to somehow raise money to run the government without new "emissions of paper money." He argued for a standing Army noting the inefficiency of relying on the "raw and inexperienced men" of the militia for the defense of the Province. Finally he warned that the effect of inflation on the clergy would force many "to quit the Ministry" causing the Province's pulpits to be "filled with ignorant and illiterate men" who would propagate "all manners of foolish and hurtful errors."[93]

Bills introduced included one to prevent the spreading of smallpox and other infectious sickness and the "concealing of the same" and one to regulate judgments in the payment of private debts. Several weeks were devoted to this issue. The House even considered a bill to limit the "extravagant expense at funerals" and one to "prevent the destroying and murdering of bastard children."[94]

The right of the *Writ of Habeas Corpus* was considered all three Sessions. It involved a Philip Power who had been arrested on a warrant from Justice Hugh Hall and put in jail without any trial or conviction. He was charged with having deserted his Majesty's service, an accusation he stoutly denied. When the House received Power's petition on June 19, 1747, he had been in jail for more than six months. The House ordered Justice Hall to appear for interrogation and to produce the trial records. Hall said he could not produce the records. The House and Council did not agree whether Power should "have justice done him" or "be brought to trial or released." The House submitted its Committee report to the Governor and the Council in mid December — Power had been jailed for 13 months by then. What became of Power does not appear in the *Journal* but hearings on the complaint of the House against Justice Hall are referred to time and again during the life of this General Court.[95]

The House and Council sent the Governor a communication on April 21, 1748 refusing to be the sole Province to defend the frontiers, to assist the Six Nations, and to capture Crown Point. Unless New York and Connecticut joined in these campaigns, the Assembly said the matter should be laid over to the 1748-49 Session. The Governor's Message of April 23 expressed alarm and dismay at the Court's decision and said it would be their fault if the Iroquois defected because of lack of aid.[96]

The Court House burned down December 9, 1747 destroying many public records. The Boston Selectmen made Faneuil Hall available until a new building was constructed and the House argued over whether the old building should be repaired or a new one built and where. Cambridge and Roxbury were suggested as suitable sites but after "consideration" and "reconsideration" it was decided to rebuild in Boston.[97]

Among the petitions considered was one from John Beaman of Northfield who had been held captive by the Indians for a year. His petition said he had killed an Indian at the time of his capture and the scalp was introduced as evidence. Francis was on the Committee to recommend a course of action on the petition and Beaman was awarded £30 for "his bravery in defending himself and annoying the enemy."[98] Eleazer Rice of Westborough, on behalf of himself and his brother Seth, petitioned the Court to be granted an allowance for "the great sums of money" they had spent to redeem "two brethren captives in Canada." The Committee recommended that £15 be allowed. However, before it was paid the Court House fire destroyed the record so Francis petitioned to revive the grant. The Court agreed and directed that £15 be paid to Francis for use of the Rice brothers.[99] Francis was also on the Committee to consider the petition of David Morse and others of Natick to have their estates valued before the next parish meeting.[100]

GENERAL COURT SESSION OF 1748-49

Only five Worcester County towns sent Representatives to the 1748 Session. Westborough was not represented.

GENERAL COURT SESSION OF 1749-50

The first of three Sessions met from May 31 to June 29, 1749 (24 days); the second of 16 days from August 2 to 19; the third of 79 days from November 23 to April 20, 1750. Joseph Dwight, Member from Brookfield, Worcester County, replaced Thomas Hutchinson as Speaker and Hutchinson replaced Samuel Welles as one of the 28 Councillors. Governor Shirley's Message on June 1 outlined his concerns about the French luring the Indians into dependence on them. He advocated an English fort on the Penobscot river to keep the tribes dependent on Massachusetts and to improve trade for both. He also announced receipt of an anonymous letter threatening to burn the Provincial Court House if "a sum of money" was not left for the letter writer "in a secret place."[101]

Bills were introduced to control usury; to encourage the raising of sheep and goats; to prevent state plays and other theatrical entertain-

ments; to make copper legal tender for all payments; to prevent damage to the beach at Billingsgate Bay;[102] for better regulation of horses; for the relief of Ministers of towns not being maintained according to their contracts;[103] and against trespassing and counterfeiting coin.[104]

Because the Province was in the throes of a drought, the House asked the Governor on June 2, 1749 to appoint a day of solemn fasting and prayer. The legislators believed that the drought was evidence of "divine displeasure for our many sins" and asked the citizens to "implore the commiseration of almighty God in the forgiveness of our sins which expose us to His anger, and that He would please to grant the rain of heaven, necessary for satisfying the thirsty earth, and that He would rebuke and remove devouring insects, that so there may be a sufficiency of food, both for man and beast; and above all, that He would rain down righteousness upon us, that we may be a holy and so a happy people."[105]

Believing their prayers had been answered, the House asked the Governor on August 3 to proclaim a day of Public and General Thanksgiving, because "divine Providence had provided plentiful rains," ending concern about a "grievous famine" and the "devouring insects" had gone.[106]

Parliament had given Massachusetts £183,649 the previous Session to offset costs of the Louisbourg campaign and that unprecedented infusion of hard cash enabled the Colony to retire its paper money and place its finances on a sound basis. However, publicity about all the gold and silver prompted residents of other colonies who held the Province's paper money to send it back to Boston for redemption in specie.[107] House members attended the Harvard commencement exercises Friday June 3, 1749 and dined there that day.[108]

On June 7 the House voted "pay and subsistence" for service on the western frontiers (254 men) and on the eastern borders (up to 80 men). Governor Shirley announced on August 23 that Indians had attacked Fort No. Four in New Hampshire on the twentieth. The House sat through an interview between the Governor and members of the Penobscot[109] and Norridgowock Tribes[110] on the morning of the twenty-third and took two critical actions on the twenty-fourth. It authorized 100 men be mobilized to protect the western frontier with 25 to be posted at Fort Number Four and encouraged the Governor to continue his dialogue with the Penobscot and Norridgewock Tribes, suggesting he meet with them the first of September or sooner "to confirm or ratify the peace they now promise."[111]

The Governor left Massachusetts for Paris in September 1749 to serve on the Commission to determine the boundary between French North America and New England. Lieutenant Govenor Spencer Phips became Acting Governor.[112] Before leaving, Shirley instructed Phips that he was not to appoint any obstructionists or "patriotic" party people to office and

that Phips' appointments were only for the duration of Shirley's absence.[113]

Phips' first Address to the House was November 23, 1749. He reported that a successful treaty had been negotiated with the eastern Indians at Falmouth (now Portland, Maine) on September 27 and suggested the House encourage "industrious and well disposed Protestant foreigners" to settle in the Province. The House responded on January 15, 1750 by voting to send a ship to the north part of Ireland and bring back not less than 300 nor more than 550 "foreign Protestants of which number there shall be at least thirty families."[114] Two days later it authorized a Committee to lay out 53 house-lots of 10 to 12 acres each in the westernmost townships for the new settlers. Fifty settlers were to be admitted with the remaining lots for the Minister, the Meeting House and the School House "as near the center of the township as may be with convenience."[115]

Inhabitants living at West-Wing, Braintree-Farms and Hardwick petitioned to be made a distinct and separate district or township on June 14, 1749. They were instructed to print their petition in the *Boston Gazette* for three weeks successively and return the second Wednesday of the next sitting of the Court to see if the petition would be granted. The petition was read in the House on August 9 and considered on March 28, 1750 when a Committee was authorized to review the petition and report to the House in May.[116]

On June 17 Francis was voted an appropriation of £15 to be used on behalf of Sarah Furbush, widow of Phineas Furbush, late of Westborough. Sarah petitioned the Court for assistance based on her husband being taken captive by the French and Indians at Fort Massachusetts[117] and died in Canada.[118] Col. John Chandler of Worcester County and Col. Joseph Heath were elected Commissioners to "redeem our captives in the hands of the French and Indians" in Canada on August 16.[119]

On June 21 the House authorized the Treasurer to "pay Mr. Whipple seven pounds ten shillings for the use of Jason Badcock and that the Commissary-General give Badcock a good gun out of the Province Store."[120] It voted on January 3, 1750 to appropriate £18,400 to discharge the public debts, to pay for the travel of Members instead of requiring their towns to pay, and authorized 88 men, including officers, to patrol the eastern and western frontiers (from January 17 to May 1).[121] It also established a Joint Committee to determine which issues dividing the Province and Great Britain should receive speedy attention.[122]

Francis was named to a Joint Committee of the Council and House on March 28, 1750 to hear the parties in a dispute about the boundary line between Stow and Littleton in Middlesex County. The Joint Report was accepted by the Council April 13 and by the House April 18 and the peti-

tion was dismissed.[123] On April 5 he was appointed to the House Committee to hear the petition of Mr. John Dennis, Chaplain at Fort Frederick from 1737 to date. Dennis claimed that the several grants he had received were insufficient for this support and asked for further allowance. The Committee made its report the same day and the House voted him £17 16s 8p.[124]

The April 6 petition of Elizabeth Tilson of Hopkington, administratrix of the estate of her husband Abraham, to sell some assets was referred to a Committee of Francis, Capt. Daniel Howard of Bridgewater, Plymouth County, and Col. Joseph Buckminister of Framingham, Middlesex Co. The Committee made a favorable report on April 7 and the House gave its approval for the sale.[125] On April 12 Francis was named to a Committee to report on the petitions of "sundry persons for townships."[126]

GENERAL COURT SESSION OF 1755-56

During the second part of the legislative year of 1755-56, Members met from January 14 through March 10, 1756 every day except Sundays. On January 30, House Members, without the Council, waited upon "his Excellency (Gov. Shirley) at the Court House then went to their own Chambers and voted that Orders be given that the lantern on the Court House be illuminated that evening and preparations made for the two Houses to drink to his Majesty's health. The Governor notified the Members the next day that he had been appointed Commander-in-Chief of all his Majesty's forces in North America.

Major issues this Session were the French and Indian War and caring for the "neutral French" who had arrived from Nova Scotia.[127] Petitions arrived in unending numbers from inhabitants living on the frontiers asking for more protection from Indian raids.

Connecticut had posted Scouts along the Connecticut river and expected Massachusetts to pay all their costs. New Hampshire ceased protecting another section bordering the river, causing a great increase in the number of petitions received. The House voted on February 19 not to subsidize the Connecticut soldiers unless they were there "at the desire of this Court." On March 9 the House ordered 300 men, exclusive of officers, be deployed for scouting duty. A third were to go to York County, Maine. It voted a bounty of $2 for each soldier who would enlist in the Scouting Service and established a scale of bounties for Indian scalps and prisoners.[128]

Consideration was given to raising money by excusing "gentlemen from military duties" if they would lend money to the government and by levying an assessment on Quakers earmarked to defend the Province "in

lieu of their personal services.[129]

Francis[130] served on the Committee to hear petitions from sick and wounded soldiers and money was frequently appropriated "to his care" to be used on their behalf.[131] He was also on the Committee to hear the petitions of several Societies of Baptists seeking relief from supporting the Congregational Ministry. The Baptists wanted full "liberty of conscience" to support their own Ministry.[132]

Governor Shirley asked both Houses for money on April 9 to build and garrison a fort on the Penobscot river to strengthen the eastern frontiers.[133] He reported that the Penobscot and St. John's Indians had been decimated by small pox and that the fort should be built before new Indians claimed the area. The House agreed with the Governor's reasoning but said the King was responsible for the safety of the Province and that other needs of the Province were so great it couldn't afford to build and garrison the fort. Francis Whipple was on the Committee to "wait upon his Excellency" and give him the House's response.[134]

GENERAL COURT SESSION OF 1756-57

The General Court met for four Sessions in 1756: first Session May 26 to June 11; second Session July 1 to 8; third Session August 11 to October 25; fourth Session November 17 to 19. Many Representatives returned from the previous Session and the faithful accepted and executed their heavy Committee assignment but it was the same group doing the bulk of the routine chores. Of the 17 Representatives from Worcester County, Francis, William Richardson, Esq. of Lancaster, Timothy Paine, Esq. of Worcester, and Capt. John Brown of Leicester and Spencer were the workhorses. Nine towns, including Hardwick, were not represented. Members took the Oath of Abjuration (a formal swearing) on May 26 and elected Thomas Hubbard, Esq., Boston, Speaker and Henry Gibbs, Esq., Salem, Secretary. Among the first actions was to order that a *Journal* of the House be printed for each Member and for each town. Acting Governor Phips presented his Message to both Houses on the twenty-seventh and asked for more support to prosecute the war.[135] Phips died in April and was succeeded by Royal Governor Thomas Pownall (1722–1805).[136]

A host of new headaches caused by the French and Indian war was awaiting the Legislators. One of the most pressing wartime problem was what to do about the neutral French refugees who crowded into the Province after being evicted from Nova Scotia the previous winter. Catholic and French, they represented entities colonial Americans found most distasteful in their struggle with Catholic France. The government had the difficult job of finding homes—preferably inland away from the

vulnerable coast—for the vast numbers who arrived. In August six refugees were allocated to Westborough and the General Court directed the Selectmen to assist them find employment. If jobs couldn't be found at reasonable rates, the Town was to provide for their "comfortable subsistence" as if they were "proper inhabitants of the Province." Interestingly Francis voted on the bill in the House and acted on its instructions as a Westborough Selectman.[137]

As the war wore on, Members came to the realization that military service was a fiscal drain both during and after campaigns as soldiers asked for and received money for hardship and loss. Francis was on the Committee to consider the petitions of sick and wounded soldiers and money for a number of them was appropriated in his name with instructions to make it available for the individual's use.[138]

GENERAL COURT SESSION OF 1762-63

The General Court of 1762-3 met for three Sessions: May 26 to June 15; September 8 to 18, 1762; and January 12 to February 25, 1763. The House had 109 members. Francis was one of 13 from Worcester County. Francis Bernard was Governor,[139] Thomas Hutchinson Lieut. Governor, and Col. Timothy Ruggles of Hardwick, Worcester County, Speaker.[140]

One of the main issues was caused by the Governor when in August 1762 he, with consent of the Council during a House recess, authorized £72 to outfit and man the sloop *Massachusetts* for a voyage to Nova Scotia in search of a French privateer and in defense of Salem and Marblehead fishing vessels in the area. The privateer was never found.

When the sloop returned to Boston, the Governor, in ex post facto fashion (something done afterwards), asked the House, then in Session, to authorize the funds. It refused and on September 15 complained with some bitterness that the Governor's authorization took from the House its "most darling privilege: the right to originate all taxes." It charged the Governor with "annihilating one branch of the Legislature" and said if Representatives gave up this privilege the result would be arbitrary government. Nothing, they said, could "justify a House of Representatives giving up such a privilege."[141]

In mid November 1762, James Otis, Jr., a Barnstable Representative and leader in the "movement to protect the rights of the House," vigorously attacked Gov. Bernard and his "pliant Council." in a 50-page pamphlet: *A Vindication of the Conduct of the House of Representatives... of the Massachusetts-Bay: More Particularly, in the Last Session of the General Assembly.* He also published a savage attack on Lieut. Gov. Hutchinson on January 31, 1763.[142]

A number of Worcester County issues occupied Francis this Session. He was on the Committees to hear petitions from: Elijah Rice and Solomon Miller of Upton and Barnabas Newton of Westborough to annex their 238 acres to Westborough; Jabez Snow to leave Westborough and join Southborough; several inhabitants in the southeasterly part of Shrewsbury (the part of the Town called Shoe) to join Westborough; George Andrews of Ipswich who had bought a farm in Westborough with a Public House licensed for entertainment seeking the right to retain the license; Abigail Bruce of Grafton, widow of Ichabod Bruce, a soldier in service in 1758, for wages due him for that service.[143]

GENERAL COURT SESSION OF 1763-64

First Session: May 25 to June 16, 1763; second: December 21, 1763 to February 4, 1764. There were 102 Members with Francis one of 14 from Worcester County. Timothy Ruggles of Hardwick was elected Speaker. Governor Bernard's address on May 26 noted that the peace treaty with France made North America entirely British. He said with the Colonies delivered from a foreign war he hoped they could be equally free "from intestine[144] divisions" as he called for peace to "prevail in an especial manner in the Councils of this Province."[145]

Several Acts of Parliament – most of which were opposed by the Massachusetts House – were on the agenda. The Molasses Act of 1733 was due for renewal in 1764 and the port towns of Boston, Plymouth, Marblehead, Salem, and Newbury asked the Legislature, late in 1763, to protest the Act as "prejudicial to the trade of this Province." Other concerns were the proposed Sugar Act; the April 1763 law authorizing officers of British warships in North American waters to seize and prosecute violators of the Acts of Trade and to share in the profits of condemnations; and the order requiring Massachusetts (and no other colony) to conduct a census,[146] occupied much of the Member's time. They made their position on these issues known through their Agent in London and authorized Thomas Hutchinson to join the regular Agent to lobby against the measures.[147]

Some Members believed the census would somehow disadvantage the Province. Others opposed it on religious scruples, comparing it to "David's numbering the people."[148] Still others thought it was a way Britain could determine how the Province might shoulder more of the wartime debt. After several deferments the census was finally taken.[149]

The General Court made it clear it was not interested in sharing in the cost of past military activity or for current problems of defense. Gen. Thomas Gage, who was ordered to quell Chief Pontiac's rebellion,[150] asked the Legislature to provide 700 uniformed provincials – whom the

King would provision, equip, and house.[151] In his January 31, 1764 Message, Gov. Bernard passed on Gage's request and asked for favorable action saying "Let not this Province be distinguished by its disregard of it (the King's business). On February 1, 1764 the House voted 40 to 37 against the troop request. The Worcester County delegation voted six no, one yes. Six were absent. Francis Whipple voted no.[152] It voted 41 to 32 on the same day to excuse Hutchinson from accepting the assignment to be a Special Agent. The same 6 to 1 vote prevailed with Francis voting to excuse him.[153]

A smallpox epidemic began during the second Session and was less than a month old when the Legislature asked permission to conduct its Sessions in Cambridge, a few miles safely distant across the Charles river. The Governor immediately granted permission and in a January 18, 1764 Message to both Houses, he noted he had moved to Cambridge and asked them to follow his lead. He also asked the House to order strict attendance and to meet Saturdays and Mondays so the Session could be brought to an early end.[154]

They met in Harvard Hall – begun in 1672 and the only Harvard structure surviving from the seventeenth century. They were there less than a week before fire destroyed the building. The fire began in the "middle of a very tempestuous night," in a "severe cold storm of snow attended with high winds," and was thought to have started "in a beam under the hearth in the library where a fire had been kept for use of the General Court. Fortunately, no lives were lost – students were on a term break – but the college library with over 5,000 volumes and philosophical apparatus was destroyed. Since it was destroyed while occupied by the General Court, the Court appropriated £2,000 to replace it.[155]

As in previous Sessions, Francis was assigned to a variety of Committees considering various petitions received.[156]

GENERAL COURT SESSION OF 1764-65

Because smallpox was still prevalent in Boston in 1764, the General Court convened its first Session in the comparative rural safety of Concord on May 30. It was a brief Session – adjourning on June 15 – and the main subject was the Sugar Act of 1764. The Province's Agent in London, Jasper Mauduit, was instructed to work for the repeal of the Sugar Act and against passage of the proposed Stamp Act. The House sent Mauduit a "brief statement of the rights of the Colonies" along with instructions about the Sugar and Stamp Acts. He was given liberty to improve the former "as he shall judge proper."[157]

At the beginning of the second Session at Boston which began Octo-

ber 18 the House drafted a stern address to the King denying Parliament's authority to tax them. However, by the time it adjourned November 3, it was reduced to a meek petition to the House of Commons requesting continuation of the Colonial privilege of internal taxation.[158] Francis chose not to serve this session and Westborough was represented by Mr. Jonathan Bond.[159]

GENERAL COURT SESSION OF 1765-66

First Session: May 29 to June 25; second Session: September 15 to November 8, 1765; third Session: January 15 to February 21, 1766. Ninety-four Members served. Francis was one of 16 from Worcester County. Francis Bernard was Governor; Roland Cotton, Esq. of Woburn, Middlesex Co., Treasurer, and Samuel White of Taunton, Bristol County, Speaker.

The King's decision to have the British Parliament impose taxes on the American Colonies became the major issue of the 1765 Session. Parts of a letter from London dated February 7, 1764 was published in the April 9 *Boston Evening-Post*. The newspaper quoted the part that predicted "You'll soon have a parcel of Myrmidonian[160] Ravens, who will feed upon and rip up your very vitals, such as Officers of Stamp Duties, Appraisers of Lands, Houses, Furniture, &c. The Ministry are (sic) determined to make you pay for the peace you like so well." The reference was to the House of Common's decision to enact stamp duties on the American colonies. The new legislation was enacted within a year and made Francis' final year of legislative service, 1765-66, the most trying and hectic of his eight terms.

The Stamp Act levied a tax on the use of virtually every type of document.[161] The statute was a kind of universal presence that Americans deplored as an invasion of privacy and imposed by a legislature in which they were not a part.[162]

The House determined Great Britain must be resisted – stoutly, firmly, and constitutionally. To this end, it initiated a call, little more than a week into the Session, for a meeting of Committees from the "several British Colonies on this continent, to consult together on the present circumstances of the Colonies" to take place in New York City on the first Tuesday of October 1765.

Known as the Stamp Act Congress, it was the first inter-colonial gathering since the great Albany Congress of 1754[163] and Francis and his fellow Representatives were responsible for the Stamp Act Congress taking place. Some say James Otis, Jr. was the prime mover for the Congress. He was on the Committee that drafted the Circular Letter proposing the Congress and was one of the three Massachusetts Delegates to attend.[164]

The others were Col. Oliver Partridge, Hatfield, Hampshire County, and Brig. Timothy Ruggles, Hardwick, Worcester County. On June 20 the House appropriated £450 for the Committee's use while in New York and named a Committee to prepare instructions for its three members.[165]

Soon after the close of the first Session in late June copies of the *Virginia Resolves* arrived in Boston and were printed in the newspapers.[166] Governor Bernard called them an "Alarm Bell to the disaffected." And so they were.

In an address to a Joint Session on September 25, the Governor said his comments were prompted by "the unanimous advice of a very full Council." He referred to Declarations against the Stamp Act and said the Executive authority was unable to resist the opponents so "this business will be put in your hands." He said it was his duty to the King and to the Province to remind the Representatives that the supremacy of Parliament should not be denied by Massachusetts. He cited a litany of evils that could happen to the Province if the Stamp Act were not enforced and said the Province was on "the brink of a precipice" and only the General Court could prevent it from falling off.[167]

The next day he notified them that a ship carrying the Stamps for Massachusetts, New Hampshire, and Rhode Island had arrived at Boston harbor and that Mr. Andrew Oliver had declined the office of "Distributor of Stamped Papers."[168] He said he had no power to open the packages and would the House please order or advise until further orders were received from the King.[169] On Monday after Bernard had addressed the House, the *Gazette* parodied his speech in more than a dozen verses:

I now declare to all the town,
To rich and poor and great and small,
To high and low and short and tall,
That I've no order, warrant, or might,
Of whatsoever power, or right,
To deal about the aforesaid papers,
Or peep into the enclosed wrappers,
To untie the Cords or open the locks
Of trunk, or café or tierce or box.[170]

The House appointed a Committee on September 26, 1765 to answer the Governor. The response was delivered on October 24. Regarding the "brink of a precipice" warning, the Representatives assured the Governor they were aware of the danger and were prepared to prevent the ruin of the Province. They expressed surprise that the Governor thought his executive power was weak noting they had passed laws for the support of

the King's authority and the Governor had not previously pointed out any defects in those laws. They said current laws are sufficient for the Executive to address any acts of violence and all he had to do was to appoint a suitable number of Magistrates to enforce them and/or remove those who do not enforce them.

They said the Stamp Act does not require use of the stamped papers and if individuals choose to avoid business that requires stamp duties, no criminal act is committed and the House lacks authority to control their choice. They did not share the Governor's fears about lawlessness and violence, asserting there was no danger "of force of arms becoming the only governing power." They noted that zealous advocates for the Constitution usually compared Acts of Parliament with the Magna Charta and when such Acts infringed upon the rights of that Charter, they were always repealed. They hoped that would happen with the Stamp Act.[171]

They reminded the Governor of original inherent rights belonging to the people among which is the right to representation in the same body which exercises the power of taxation. Without representation in Parliament, Colonial Legislatures retained the right of taxation. As proof they pointed to the Charter of the Province which invests the General Assembly with the power of making laws for its internal government and of taxation and heretofore that right has been recognized by the King and Parliament.[172]

For the first week and a half (except Sunday) the Stamp Act Congress considered the "Rights and Privileges of the British American Colonists, with the several inconveniences which they are, and must be subjected, by the operation of the several late Acts of Parliament, particularly the Act called the Stamp Act." Delegates adopted the "Declarations" of the Congress on Saturday October 19, 1765. Two days later they adopted separate messages to George III, the House of Lords, and the Parliament.[173]

James Otis was a Member of the three-man Committee that drafted the petition to the House of Commons but Timothy Ruggles, who had been elected Chairman of the Congress, refused to sign any of the documents – for reasons of conscience he is reported to have said – and left the meetings without even a farewell to his colleagues. When they returned to Massachusetts, Otis and Partridge received the thanks of the House while Ruggles was found "guilty of neglect of duty" and was censured.[174]

Governor Bernard responded to the House on November 8, 1765 calling their arguments "unfair groundless insinuations made to misrepresent me." He "had not promoted the tax nor did he have power to oppose it. He did not give advice to his Majesty's Ministers unasked and unexpected, and in a business belonging to a Department with which I have not the honor to correspond. After the Stamp Act was passed it was his

official duty to enforce it even if it did not coincide with the opinions of the people. It was the House's duty to submit until the Act was repealed and submission would be the readiest means to obtain a repeal. He is a friend of the Province and his letters are filled with proof of that fact. All Ministers of State he has corresponded with know he is not indifferent to the trade of the people and to the interests of the Province."[175]

The first order of business of the House in the Session that began January 15, 1766 was to "carefully peruse" the Governor's speech and respond to it. The charge that Members had been unfair and misinterpreted his words was challenged by a verbatim recitation from his original speech where he charged the whole Province with responsibility for the violence in Boston[176] and repeated the charge in his second speech. They reminded him how the Province raised troops to assist Britain in defending its territory and in enlarging it by the acquisition of Canada and of the specific instructions from their constituents to "endeavor to obtain a repeal by all means consistent with their loyalty to their sovereign, and a due veneration to the Parliament of Great Britain." (See Westborough's instructions to Francis below.)

The Governor's claim that he could not give advice unless asked, was rejected by noting his often expressed "love and concern for the people of the Province" should have been sufficient cause to voice "his sentiments to those whose influence brought [the Stamp Act] into being." The Members denied that they were disunited, saying that nothing "will be wanting to cultivate that harmony, which is ever necessary, and especially at this dangerous conjecture."[177]

In a later action the House, noting that the just rights of the Province derived from the British Constitution and the Royal Charter "have been lately drawn into question," decided "to ascertain" those rights by reducing them to writing. By unanimous vote it adopted 14 Resolves that were to "be kept in the records of this House; that a just sense of Liberty, and the firm sentiments of Loyalty may be transmitted to Posterity."[178]

TOWN INSTRUCTS FRANCIS TO OPPOSE STAMP ACT

While citizens of Boston were the first to actively resist the Stamp Act, dozens of other towns instructed their Representatives to oppose the Act in the autumn session of the General Court. While Town instructions had always been recognized as legitimate expressions of local opinion, they were uncommon. But in 1765 this traditional form of expression emerged as a vehicle for local expression of Whig views.[179]

Westborough voted to oppose the Act in a Town Meeting October 28, 1765 and instructed Representative Francis Whipple, in terms not likely to

be misunderstood by British officials, to work for the repeal of the Act. It also held a fast in November "on account of the distress in the Colonies."[180] Instructions to representative Whipple:

"That with all Humility, it is the opinion of the Town that the Inhabitants of the Province have a Legal Claim to the Natural, Inherent, Constitutional Rights of Englishmen, Notwithstanding their Great Distance from Great Britain; and that the Stamp Act is an Infringement upon these Rights; therefore we cannot be active in putting our Necks under such a Grievous Yoke; and (emphasis added) **we think it proper in the present Conjunction of affairs to give you, our Representative, the following Instructions, viz., That you promote, and Readily Join in all such Dutiful Remonstrances and humble Petitions to the King and Parliament, and other Decent measures as may have a tendency to obtain a Repeal of the said Stamp Act; and you are hereby Directed by no Means What So Ever, to do any thing that may aid the said Stamp Act in its operation, and you are hereby Directed to Do all in your power to Suppress and to prevent all Riotous Assemblies and unlawful acts of Violence upon the Persons or Substance of any of his Majesty's Subjects; and furthermore, you are hereby Instructed that you be not Aiding or assisting in Making any unusual Grants out of the Province Treasury to Repair any Damages which we of this Town had no hand in.**
(Signed, Jonathan Bond, Moderator)."[181]

The temper of these instructions is admirable. No submission to unjust oppression, no surrender of the rights of free-born Englishmen; but, on the other hand, no mob-law, no rioting, nor – with a fine distinction – any paying for damages occurring through riotous acts of others in which, whether sorry for them or not, the people of the Town had no share.[182]

Word received May 17, 1766 that the detested Act was repealed was met with great rejoicing in Town. The Town Meeting voted on December 2, 1767 "to promote what in us lies, Industry, Economy and Manufacturers among ourselves, and by these means prevent the unnecessary importation of European commodities the excessiveness of which threatens the country with poverty and ruin."[183]

Francis ended his Legislative service at age 61. During his eight Sessions, he was a part of historic proceedings that led to the American Revolution and the creation of the United States. His descendants can be justly proud that he was willing to serve his neighbors and his Province at a critical time in American history thus leaving a legacy that became the greatest nation on earth. While no longer in the Legislature he was still

considered a leader by the community and looked to for help and advice. He held three offices in 1770: Town Moderator, Selectman, and Clerk. On March 31 of that year, he delivered the Fast Proclamation to the Town at the request of his former legislative colleague, Col. John Chandler of Worcester.[184]

EVENTS LEADING TO THE REVOLUTIONARY WAR

In 1772 a rumor was circulating throughout the Province that Great Britain had decided to pay the salaries of Colonial Judges of the Superior Court of Judicature. The Whigs believed the purpose of the new policy was to appoint corrupt officials who would "... enslave & oppress our honest people." On October 14, 1772, Boston Whigs circulated a petition calling for a Town Meeting so the people could speak their minds on judges' stipends. Their petition said no "free people" could tolerate such a "judiciary constitution;" that it would complete the "Ruin of our Liberties."[185] The Town Meeting on October 30 authorized a Message to Gov. Thomas Hutchinson asking if the rumors were true. The Governor replied that his correspondence was not a matter for Town scrutiny. His answer initiated a petition passed at the Town Meeting asking him "to permit the General Assembly to met with or without confirmation of the judges' stipends." His reply, received on November 2, rebuked the Town Meeting, recited his power to adjourn, prorogue, and dissolve Assemblies, and argued he would be violating the Royal Trust if he were to allow the Assembly to meet.[186] He said that approving their request could encourage other towns to make the same request and to debate and transact other matters that are not the business of a Town Meeting and that "promiscuous Town Meetings were a regular fountain of disobedience to the Administration." Boston found his reply unsatisfactory and argued the Town had a free right to meet and petition whenever it wanted and "to communicate [its] sentiment to other towns." It unanimously passing Samuel Adams' motion:

> That a Committee of Correspondence be appointed to consist of twenty-one persons—to state the rights of the colonists, and of this Province in particular, as Men, as Christians, and as Subjects; to communicate and publish the same to the several Towns in this Province and to the world as the sense of this town, with the Infringements and Violations thereof that have been, or from time to time may be made—Also requesting of each Town a free communication of their Sentiments on this Subject.[187]

By April 1773 at least 119 towns and districts in Massachusetts had taken some action and at least 25 more responded within the succeeding five months. Thus a majority of the Province's 260 towns created a Committee of Correspondence.[188] Members chosen to serve on the Committees of Correspondence were the men of property and "parts," the same men who regularly led town affair—Selectmen, Moderators, Deacons, militia Captains, physicians, and lawyers.[189]

Westborough was among the first to respond and formed a Committee of Seven on January 1, 1773 to consider whether to adopt a statement of rights similar to the one adopted by Boston. The Committee reported on January 4 that the oppressions complained of in Boston, if not confronted, will ruin the Province. It deplored "extorting money without our consent" and told the people not to sacrifice their rights and liberties but to "prize [them] beyond life itself."[190] Reverend Parkman thought the radicals were overly concerned about the Colonists' rights and refused to sign the Resolution. Instead, he attempted to mollify his neighbors with a statement that he was "heartily set against despotism and oppression." Following the battle of Lexington and Concord in April 1775 his position became more difficult and for "Peace Sake, and to avoid a rupture among us," he signed an "Exceptionable" patriot document and prayed for the "just... defense of our invaluable rights, laws, liberties, and privileges," but continued to hope for a reconciliation with Great Britain even after the Declaration of Independence.[191]

On January 4, 1773 Westborough passed a Motion that "the Town regarded resistance as a corollary of watchfulness." The Motion said that once tyranny was perceived, opposition becomes a duty; "that everyone qualified to vote in Town affairs should at all times have a proper sense of them [their rights and the infringements] especially as the future happiness of his family as well as himself depends greatly on their [the infringements] being removed."[192]

The organization and structure of Massachusetts politics was drastically reordered during the second half of 1774. Royal administration collapsed and authority was assumed by representative bodies formed at the local, county, and provincial levels. By summer, County Conventions emerged as the primary entity to coordinate and direct Provincial political activity. Town leaders, recognizing the need for broad consultation and planning in the absence of a Provincial Assembly, created ad hoc County Conventions with town-elected Deputies. While only advisory and lacking legal or coercive authority, the Conventions became instruments for achieving unified, cooperative action without jeopardizing local initiative or control.[193]

Berkshire, the first County to call a Convention, passed unanimous

resolutions combining a Declaration of Rights with a non-consumption covenant and a pledge to maintain constitutional local government. Worcester was the second of nine counties to meet in Convention and develop a plan of detailed leadership including advice on military preparations and promoting a detailed political demonstration. While its Resolves contained a Pledge of Allegiance to the King, it also asserted "that we have, within ourselves the exclusive right of originating each and every law respecting ourselves." The Convention also recommended non-consumption agreements as the best way to influence Britain, pointing out that in addition it would "greatly prevent extravagance, save our money, encourage our own manufactures, and reform our manners." It recommended immediate resistance by condemning all Justices who publicly supported Gov. Thomas Gage[194] and urged every town to adopt measures to thwart enforcement of the Massachusetts Government Acts.[195] Its proceedings were printed as handbills and distributed with a covering letter to all town and districts in the county.[196]

One-hundred-thirty Town Delegates and members of local Committees of Correspondence—nearly 3 times the number at the original Convention—met at Worcester's second Convention at the end of August 1774. This was a gathering equal in size to a meeting of the General Court. It would be interesting to know if Francis or members of his family were Delegates.

The most immediate problem was to prevent the newly organized "unconstitutional" Courts of Common Pleas and General Sessions from convening.[197] Delegates decided to block the Courts from meeting and urged everyone in the County to assemble in Worcester on September 6 when the Courts were to meet. The goal was to convince Justices not to sit and the Jurors and Litigants to boycott the Courts. It also urged towns to send Delegates to the Provincial Congress which was to meet in Concord in October.[198]

Upon receiving a report that the Governor planned to send troops to guard the Courts, the Convention developed an "invasion" plan which provided that Committees of Correspondence would warn each other and towns "properly armed and accoutered" would help defend invaded towns. Assuming it could make such recommendations, the Convention never bothered to justify its actions even though the Royal Administration and all of England would regard its activities as sedition.

When September 6 arrived, 6,000 Worcester County citizens, organized in town militia companies, assembled on the Worcester Common, grouped by Town. Late that afternoon they performed a pageant of popular sovereignty – requiring the Court officials to tread a path through the ranks of the people while continuously reading aloud their pledge to

ignore the government Acts and suspend the Courts. Before the day ended and the people returned home, the Convention extended the nullification of English authority to include all militia officers, resolving they should resign their commissions since they came from the Governor. Instead, the towns should elect their officers.[199]

On September 7 the Convention asked those Justices of the Peace who had pledged to support the Governor and criticized the actions of the people to repudiate their pledges. Eleven of the 14 complied so the Convention Resolved that all of the Justices of Peace who had held office as of June 30 (this included Francis)—except Timothy Ruggles, John Murray, and James Putnam who continued to support Gov. Thomas Gage—should be obeyed until the Provincial Congress made other provisions.[200]

The Westborough Town Meeting of June 17, 1774 took a major step towards independence. On that day it elected a Committee of Correspondence, a Committee to Provision Troops in Case of Alarm, and a Committee to buy a four-pound "field-piece,[201] 400 weight of ball with 10-half barrels of powder, and 500 weight of lead and flints,"[202]

The constitutional crisis lasted from the fall of 1774 until June 1780 when a new Constitution was formally proclaimed. After six years of quasi-legal interim arrangements when Massachusetts was governed by the towns, first in conjunction with the Provincial Congress, and after August 1775 with the General Court,[203] the people created the Commonwealth of Massachusetts, a carefully rationalized structure for republican government. Under wartime conditions, and in spite of severe economic problems, the inhabitants of Massachusetts had systematically analyzed questions of representative government, and after rejecting one Constitution, they settled on a structure which was to prove both stable and durable. John Hancock was elected the Chief Executive by a nearly unanimously vote under the Constitution.[204]

Westborough issued its last Town-Meeting warrant in his Majesty's name February 13, 1776. The next meeting, May 13, was opened "in the name of their Government and the People of Massachusetts Bay." On May 24 it instructed Capt. Stephen Maynard, its Representative to the Provincial Congress, to conform to a Resolve of the House concerning "Independency." On July 2, 1776 it voted that "every man should pay his just proportion in supporting the war from April 19, 1775 forward. In January 1778, the Town voted to pay £1,204, its share of the £400,000 state loan issued to help pay for the war.

With his many years of public service, Francis would have followed the politics of the Revolution with great interest, especially the June 9, 1775 recommendation of the Continental Congress that Massachusetts' towns elect a Council to govern the Colony "until a Governor of his Majesty's

appointment will consent to govern" according to the Colony's Charter.[205]

He would have been concerned about the enormous expenses of the Revolution and the rapid depreciation of money.[206] Paper money was issued by the Continental Congress and the several states and ultimately became valueless and was repudiated.[207] When the Massachusetts Constitution was adopted the state's debt of £3,050,000[208] dwarfed the less than £100,000 debt owed before the war. Heavy state taxes plus burdensome Town debts and heavy private debt combined to cause great financial difficulty.

SHAY'S REBELLION

The last major event of Francis and Abigail's long life was Shays' Rebellion, an armed outbreak by debtor farmers in western Massachusetts. Most of the activity took place in Worcester County and was directed against the Courts for seizing debtor farmers' property and sending them to prison for debt, many of them "honored veterans" of the Revolution. And these veterans were greatly altered by their experiences in the war because the Army had been for many a famous school of democratic ideas. The uprising followed years of fruitless appeals for relief from the heavy taxes imposed by an unsympathetic state government to retire state debt. No helping hand was extended to keep the ruined head of a household from the Tax Collector or creditor's clutches. They were left to the blind and merciless hand of the law.

Following a riot at the Court of Common Pleas and Court of General Sessions at Northampton in Hampshire County, the insurgents pledged a repeat performance September 5, 1786 at the Worcester Court House. Governor James Bowdoin ordered Major-General Jonathan Warner of Hardwick to be ready to quell the riot and assist High Sheriff Greenleaf by furnishing any militia he might request. Warner had to tell the Governor that the militia was reluctant to support the government. He said many members flatly refused to serve and others evaded or delayed.[209] "This statement of the affairs at Worcester, however painful and disagreeable to relate," he wrote, "is the plain truth." He asked for other instructions on how to proceed at "this unhappy crisis."[210]

These militia men probably gathered at the local tavern and debated how to respond to Gen. Warner. The tavern, it must be remembered, was the social gathering place for the working man, mechanic, and farmer. About half would have been footed, according to the economical custom of a time when shoes before late fall were regarded as luxuries not necessities. Most wore shirts and trousers made of material their own hands and those of their women-folk sheared, spun, wove, and dyed. The leathern

breeches which a few years before were universal were still worn by a few in spite of their discomfort. The room was probably thick with smoke as most men smoked clay or corncob pipes. But the smoke was barely recognized as that of tobacco because that expensive product was mixed with dried sweet fern[211] and other herbs for the sake of economy. With almost no money in circulation, only a couple of men were drinking because they alone had credit at the bar.

Their conversation would have varied little from the past year or two because in those days men talked of nothing but the hard times, the limited markets and low prices for farm produce, the extortions and multiplying numbers of the lawyers and Sheriffs, the oppressions of creditors, the enormous grinding taxes, the last Sheriff's Sale and who would be sold out next, the last group of debtors taken to jail and who would go next, the utter lack of money of any sort, the impossibility of getting work, the gloomy and hopeless prospect for the coming winter, and of the wretched failure of independence to bring the public and private prosperity they expected.

Many had lots of paper money, received for Army pay, but it had no value other than keeping accounts on the backs or as writing paper—not first class writing paper but usable if "middlin" clean. They said that if the Government paid one kind of debt it ought to pay the other kind – meaning the useless bills they received for fighting. According to their logic, if the Government wouldn't honor those bills it wasn't fair to assess taxes to pay debts it owed to other folks. At the least, those bills should be accepted against taxes due. They believed the General Court should pass a law valuing property for what was owed against it instead of letting the Sheriff sell it for nothing and send the owner to jail for the balance. They talked about the liberty they won by beating the "Redcoats"—liberty to starve if they weren't sent to jail first.

On September 5, approximately 300 insurgents were at Worcester and prevented the Judges from convening their Courts. They called themselves the "Body of People" and dispersed the second day with no violence to the local citizens.[212] They returned Sunday evening December 3 and took over the Court House causing the Court to briefly convene in a tavern before adjourning to January 23, 1787. The insurgents then prevented the Court Session scheduled in Springfield December 26 and announced they would not permit the Court to convene at Worcester January 23.

This prompted Gov. Bowdoin to organize an Army of 4,400 infantry and four companies of artillery to be commanded by Maj. Gen. Benjamin Lincoln.[213] Lincoln's forces arrived at Worcester January 22 and the Courts held their first Session the next day. Detachments of insurgents had gathered in New Braintree, Rutland, Princeton, Sterling, and Sutton and Gen. Warner disbursed those at New Braintree and Rutland.

A large force of insurgents led by Daniel Shays, a Captain in the late Continental Army, marched into Petersham February 3.[214] Lincoln ordered an evening march that arrived at Petersham about 9 a.m. February 4, and surprised Shays insurgents who fled and the insurrection ended. Companies enlisted in New Braintree and Hardwick served from January 21 to February 21 and participated in the terrible night march through deep snow during a violent storm. Historian Minot called it "one of the most indefatigable (untiring, not yielding to fatigue) marches ever performed in America." General Lincoln wrote that it was so cold that "a great part of our men were frozen in some part or other." The government offered amnesty to insurgents who would lay down their arms and take the Oath of Allegiance on or before March 21. At least 60 inhabitants of Hardwick, including David and Symonds Whipple, signed the Oath.[215]

THE MOVE TO NEW BRAINTREE

It is not known why Francis and Abigail left Westborough for New Braintree[216] after enjoying such a distinguished career in the former. But it is logical to presume that old age had a great deal to do with it. Both his brothers, Edwards and Jonathan, Jr., were dead as well as other friends of their youth. Their oldest son Benjamin was living in Vermont and sons Thomas and Francis, Jr. had moved to New Braintree years earlier. If their sight, hearing, memory, etc. were failing they probably required help from those families and wanted to be around their grandchildren. Thus Francis spent the last nine years of his life there, Abigail her last 21, 12 as a widow.

They moved in May 1778.[217] Reverend Parkman visited Francis May 11 and noted in his diary that "parting is not pleasant. He desires dismissal for himself and his wife from this Church to New Braintree." They were dismissed on September 6.[218] A town of about 800 population, New Braintree's economy was based on beef and dairy and its cheese became a favorite of the people of Boston.[219] Thomas had moved there in 1758, seven years after its incorporation,[220] and was one of the Town's leading citizens and whose many positions of leadership included Captain of the militia with service in the Revolutionary War.[221] Francis was 73 when they moved and apparently acquired a small farm because he bequeathed "all my lands, buildings, and livestock owned and possessed of in the Town of New Braintree" by his will. He did not seek a leadership role in the Town.

It would have been interesting to have been in New Braintree in early October 1781 to get Francis and Abigail's reaction to the defeat of the British Army at Yorktown, Virginia. Beginning October 6 American and French artillery began a nearly incessant bombardment of Gen. Charles Cornwallis' positions. The British General asked for an Armistice on

October 17 but his proposed terms were unacceptable to Gen. George Washington. With no hope remaining, he surrendered his nearly 8,000-man force to the 17,000 Franco-American Army on October 19 and for all practical purposes, the American War of Independence was over. The *Massachusetts Spy* reported a celebration in Sutton, not far from New Braintree, by the "respectable inhabitants" of the Town who assembled at the Sign of the Soldier. According to the *Spy,* "every demonstration of joy was shown" and they drank 13 toasts to the victory.[222]

Francis' will, dated February 15, 1783, is in Appendix 5, page. His legatees were Abigail, sons Benjamin, Thomas, and Francis, daughter Elizabeth, grandchildren Sibbel, Mary, and Daniel Whipple and Abigail Warrin, and unnamed heirs of his late son Abner and late daughter Lucy Maynard. He died July 2, 1787.[223]

By will, Abigail received all his indoor movables, the use of the whole house, free use of the well, the use and income of two cows, the horse and Chais, and yearly delivery to her free of charge 1 bushel of good malt, 5 bushels of Indian corn, 4 bushels of rye, 1 bushel of wheat, 100 weight of good pork, 60 weight of good beef, 10 pounds of good flax, well dressed from swingle,[224] 8 pounds of good sheep wool, half a bushel of salt, 1 barrel of cider, what fire wood she needs cut fit for the fire and delivered to her door, a due proportion of all sorts of lace, and what apples she wants. The house, horse, Chais,[225] and cows were to go to son Francis and whatever remained of the removals to daughters Elizabeth and Mary and granddaughters Lucy Livermor and Abigail Warrin at Abigail's death.

Son Benjamin was to receive £6 one year after Francis' death, son Thomas £6 two years after death, the children of deceased son Abner £6 divided among Abner, Jr. £3 and daughters Sibbel, Mary, and Daniel 20 shillings each to be paid three years after Francis' death. The heirs of his late daughter Lucy Maynard 5 shillings, granddaughter Abigail Warrin 5 shillings, and daughter Elizabeth 5 shillings. His clothing was to be equally divided among sons Benjamin, Thomas, and Francis and grandson Abner. Son Francis was named sole executor and given all of Francis' lands and buildings, livestock, and notes on condition he pay all just debts and fulfill the various provisions of the will. The various bequeaths of 5 shillings were based on the fact that those individuals or their parent had previously received their share of his estate. Francis, Jr., joined by Robert and Joseph Willson, posted a bond of £3, 000 with Probate Judge Joseph Dorr to properly execute the will.[226]

Abigail died in New Braintree December 22, 1799 and Francis, Jr. was appointed administrator of her estate on January 7, 1800. On the same day, Worcester County Probate Judge Joseph Dorr appointed Benjamin Joslyn and Joseph Bowman, Esquires, and David Nichols, Gentleman,

appraisers of her estate. Francis, Jr. was obliged to give Public Notice of his appointment which was published in *The Massachusetts Spy,* printed in Worcester, on January 22 and February 12, 1800. The Notice asked persons indebted to the estate to make immediate payment and requested those owed by the estate to make demand for payment. The bond of $10,000 and was posted by Francis, Jr. and Edwards Whipple and Joseph Willson, all of New Braintree.

The personal property appraisal was completed January 10 and amounted to $53.07: $25.00 in wearing apparel; $2.00 for 12 napkins;.92 for a tablecloth; $4.88 for miscellaneous blankets; $10.50 for 12 sheets; $2.83 for 14 pillow cases; $4.00 for 1 coverlet; $2.12 for 1 bed tick; and.82 in cash. Francis' cost to administer the estate was $14.96, of which $2.67 was paid to the appraisers and $1.40 to *The Massachusetts Spy*. Francis' personal costs amounted to $9.58 and Court costs were $1.31.[227]

There is no record of real estate or widow's dower or tax stamps due because in lieu of her rights of dower, Abigail received "all his indoor movables of all sorts" when Francis' will was probated.

Francis is buried in New Braintree's Evergreen Cemetery.[228] It is presumed Abigail is also buried there but no stone has been found. The Cemetery is on Highway 67.6 of a mile south of Reed's Country Store which is at the corner of Oakham Rd. and Highway 67. The sign, Evergreen Cemetery, is surrounded by a stone fence and has a wrought iron gate at the entrance. Four stone columns anchor the gate. A plaque on one reads: "These walls, gates and other improvements were given in loving memory of his parents and relatives by Frank H. Whipple."

From the gate proceed.1 mile to the first turn – between two large pine trees. The Whipple graves are to your right under the branches of the tree. Captain Thomas Whipple, Mrs. Marthe Whipple, Mr. Nathum Whipple, Mrs. Lucinday Whipple, and Moses Whipple are clustered together. Squire Francis Whipple and his grandson Sewell Whipple are one row back and to the right. Francis' stone is broken in half and sunken in the ground. It reads: In Memory of Francis Whipple Esquire In the 82nd Year of His Age.[229]

The photographs of Francis and Abigail printed here are from portraits painted of them, probably when they lived in Westborough. They were passed down through Francis, Jr.'s family and are currently in possession of Dr. Richard Bing, who graciously gave permission for them to be included in this family history. Dr. Bings wife, Mary Allen Whipple, now deceased, is a great grand daughter (4) of Francis and Abigail.[230]

1. Ipswich births, 394.
2. Westborough births, 106; deaths, 256.
3. Massachusetts' five Regions: The most prosperous region included a narrow strip of seaports and farming communities on the eastern shore, stretching from Newbury in the north to Barnstable in the south and included the shipping communities of Boston, Salem, Ipswich, and Newbury and the fishing fleets of Gloucester, Marblehead, Plymouth. The majority of the Province's rural population were in the "midland belt," stretching westward from the seacoast and including the eastern edge of Worcester county. Bountiful harvests were rare and these farmers grew their own food and satisfied most of their own needs. The Connecticut Valley was the western frontier. Towns like Northampton, Springfield, and Hadley were oriented southward toward Hartford, Providence, and Newport and depended on the central government only for military forces and defense appropriations. To the north and east and detached from the rest of Massachusetts were the farming settlements, lumber camps, and aspiring trading centers of Maine, the Province's third frontier and fifth region. *The Massachusetts Assembly 1730-1755*, R. M. Zemsky, a Dissertation presented to the faculty of the Graduate School of Yale University in candidacy for the Degree of Doctor of Philosophy, 1967,. 261-64. [Hereafter Zemsky Dissertation.]
4. Francis' father Jonathan owned and operated the corn mill.
5. Heman Packard DeForest and Edward C. Bates, *History of Westborough, Massachusetts*. Published by the town, 1891, 1342.
6. The author's great (4) grandfather.
7. The baby was born in October 1730, only 10 months after Lucy. Neither the baby's given name or date of death is in the Ipswich *Vital Records*. Records of these Ipswich births are found on page 391 and 394 of the town's *Vital Records.*
8. Their births are all recorded in the Westborough *Vital Records* on pages 105 and 106.
9. Sarah was a year and three weeks when she died 28 March 1742 and Nehemiah was 10 days shy of one year when he died 18 Nov. 1746. At least three adult children preceded Francis and Abigail in death: Abigail, 8 Oct. 1762, Lucy 18 May 1773, and Abner, before 15 Feb. 1783.
10. Nehemiah was to be buried the day after his death but his burial had to be postponed because "of a great storm of snow." The child mortality was so great that year that Rev. Parkman held a day of solemn humiliation, fasting, and prayer on 4 September. Francis G. Walett, editor, *The Diary of Ebenezer Parkman 1703 - 1782. First Part. Three Volumes in One 1719-1755.* American Antiquarian Society, Worcester, Mass., 1974, 145.
11. Benjamin and Hepzebah (Crosby) Whipple had 9 children; Lucy Whipple and Nathan Maynard 5; Thomas and Martha (Higgins) Whipple, 5; Abigail Whipple and Thaddeus Warrin, 2; Abner, wife's maiden name unknown, 4; Francis, Jr. and Precilla (Rice) Whipple, 12 (6 of whom died young); Elizabeth Whipple and Nathan Carruth, 5 (1 of whom died young); and Mary Whipple and Nathan Hill, 3. Westborough and Shrewsbury *Vital Records.*
12. Walett, 131, 195.
13. The Massachusetts Legislature, known as the Great and General Court, consisted of two Chambers, a House of Representatives elected by the towns, and a Governor's Council, elected by the Representatives and the outgoing Councilors with the Governor's consent. Both the Governor and the Crown had veto power over legislative actions and laws were required to be consistent with those of England. In

some ways the model for the Legislature was Parliament but unlike Parliament, the House performed many administrative functions by enforcing the collection of its taxes and compliance with its own independent Resolves. The House as a whole and its dozens of Committees spent more time in administrative and judicial activity than in legislation and even more than the Justices of the Peace furnished the administrative ties between Provincial and local government. Richard D. Brown, *Revolutionary Politics in Massachusetts*, Harvard University Press, Cambridge, Mass., 1970, 3.

14. His first election to the General Court was 20 May 1746. Walett, 136. The Town had refused to elect a Representative in 1745 "because of the heavy financial burden." *Parkman Family Papers, Ebenezer Parkman Diary.* American Antiquarian Society, Worcester, Mass. 30 June 1771. [Hereafter Parkman unpublished diary.] He was re-elected at a Town Meeting "during a heavy rain storm" on 18 May 1747. He lodged at Mrs. Keggels during the Legislative Session. Rev. Parkman visited him there on 23 Oct. 47. Walett, 154, 164. Westborough was not represented in the 1748 Session and again elected Francis on 12 May 1749. He lodged with Mr. Blake in Boston during this Session and attended church at the new North Meeting House where he sat in Samuel Parkman's pew. Samuel was the brother of Rev. Parkman. Walett, 176, 196, 210.

15. Parkman made "a return of marriages" on 30 April 1752 to Francis Whipple, Town Clerk. As Clerk, Francis published on 31 Aug. 1752, Ebenezer Parkman Jr.'s intent to marry Elizabeth Harrington of Watertown. Walett, 255, 260.

16. A barrier to the holding of the offices of Selectmen and Representative evolved in Massachusetts. It was agreed that these offices should not be a source of profit. Offices requiring the most time were in fact limited to men of some means or leisure, making office holding a form of taxation based on wealth while men of small means were content to divide the lesser burdens of lower office among themselves. Brown, 5.

17. Selectman for 12 years: 1752-58, 1762, 1763, 1765, 1770; Town Moderator for five years: 1762, 1763, 1766, 1768, 1770; Town Clerk for nine years: 1752-58, 1765, 1770; Town Treasurer in 1744. DeForest and Bates, 152. Parkman unpublished diary, 1 Feb. 1771.

18. In order to vote in the Town Meeting a man had to be officially admitted as an inhabitant by the Selectmen and to qualify had to own a minimum of property. The ratable estate required for Town participation was greater than for election to the General Court. After 1750 the Town rate was 66s 8d; the Province rate. 53s 4d. Because Town affairs affected inhabitants directly voters wanted officials to have a personal stake in their decisions, something to lose if things went wrong. Continental and Provincial affairs were considered distant concerns. J.R. Pole, "Suffrage and Representation in Massachusetts: A Statistical Note," *William and Mary Quarterly* 3d No. 4., Vol. XV, Oct. 1957, 561.

19. "A Court was held 15 March 1770 at Squire Whipples. Rice and Temple agree and also widow Martha Warrin and Temple, who had defamed her, agree." Parkman unpublished diary, 1770. "1 February 1771. Squire Whipple married Antip Maynard to Rhoda Fay." Parkman unpublished diary, 1771.

20. 16 Nov. 47. Parkman and his wife dined at the Francis Whipple home. The occasion was the wedding of Lucy Whipple to Moses Pratt of Hardwick. Walett, 164. "Went in the morning (9 March 1752) to Mr. Francis Whipples to see him under his broken bones – but they were newly set and he was asleep. I refused to have him waked." Walett, 253. "Went to raising of Squire Whipple by the saw mill (3 May 1770)." Parkman unpublished diary, 1770. "I dined at Squire Whipples and asked

him to reconcile my differences with Ensign Jedushun Fay. If the Squire determines Fay has reasonable ground for offense, I will give him reasonable satisfaction. A number of men are at work at Mr. Whipple's mill dam to repair damage by the flood." (28 Feb. 1771). Parkman unpublished diary, 1771.

21. For example, Francis and Deacon Newton were chosen 21 Feb. 1744 to represent Westborough at a Church Council at Upton to investigate charges against Rev. Mr. Thomas Weld, Upton's Minister. The Council met off and on between 13 March and 6 Dec. and recommended "separation and dismissing [of Weld] from his people." Walett, 92-94, 108.

22. Parkman's diary has no entries for the period 2 to 14 Sept. 1752. These days were lost when Great Britain adopted the Gregorian or New Style calender now used. The change was established by an Act of Parliament passed in 1751 which provided that Wednesday 2 September was followed by Thursday 14 September. When the change occurred, London mobs demanded that Parliament give back the 11 "stolen" days.

23. Francis, Jonathan Bond, and (____) Whitney each received six votes on the first ballot with seven voted divided among four other candidates at the meeting on 27 March 1755. Whitney and Bond were elected. Two months later (19 May) Francis was elected Representative. Parkman and Mr. Breck accompanied him on 27 May when he left to attend the General Court at Boston. Walett, 92, 266, 287, 289.

24. In April 1744, Francis was named to the Committee to reply to the petition by north side residents to divide the Town. This meant a trip to Boston which conflicted with his Church Council duties but he performed both assignments, usually arriving late at Council meetings. Francis and fellow Committee member Capt. Maynard returned from Boston 17 August and reported the Court had appointed a Committee of Members of both Houses to come to Westborough to study the need to divide the town. Walett, 98, 102.

25. As early as 15 June 1747, Francis and Deacon Josiah Newton urged Parkman to sue the Town for the back salary owed him. Walett, 155.

26. Old Tenor: A description of paper money issued at different periods by American colonial governments. Several colonies printed far more currency than they had the ability or resources to redeem. Each new emission did not replace the currently circulation notes but rather added to them so that more and more paper money was put into circulation. This oversupply caused a significant devaluation in its purchasing power. During the 1730s-1750s the exchange value of paper notes plummeted. By the late 1740s older Massachusetts, Connecticut, New Hampshire, Rhode Island, and North Carolina notes were trading at the rate of 45s in notes for a Spanish dollar. The first attempt to deal with this situation was by designating the older currencies as Old Tenor and allowing them to circulate at the lower rate, then setting a new rate (from 6s to 8s per Spanish dollar) for new issues, which were designated as New Tenor currencies. This was only a temporary solution that did not attack the cause so soon New Tenor notes were devalued. Massachusetts went so far as to create a third Tenor, ending up with three different currencies called Old Tenor, Three Fold Tenor (or Middle Tenor) and fourfold Tenor (New Tenor).

27. Stewart Mitchell, editor, *Journals of the House of Representatives of Massachusetts 1746-47*. The Massachusetts Historical Society, Boston. 37, 69, 84-85. The Act creating the North Precinct in Westborough as a separate district to be named Northborough was passed 18 June 1765. *Journals 1765-66*, 216, 302.

28. The other members of the second Committee were Capt. Warrin, Mr. Miller, Deacon Newton, and Mr. Abner Newton. Walett, 169.

29. Parkman was upset by this reasoning but his diary noted that on 27 Dec. 1751 he read 1 Cor. 11, and preached on number 2. The "sermon on this text [was] composed when I was young (June 1724). I therefore made great alterations and additions (in delivering although not in writing)." Walett, 172-77, 248.

30. Rate: Essentially a property tax. Government officers assessed property – sometimes the process involved self assessment subject to audit – on the value of raw and improved lands (meadow, plowed, and hoed land), goods, stock used in trading, boats, and other vessels, mill and other visible assets each year. The three units of colonial government – the Province, the County, and the Town or Village – drew up a list of proposed expenditures to support these governments. A rate of tax was applied to the assessments to generate the required funds, resulting in a Colony rate, a County rate, and a Town or Village rate.

31. The date was 15 Feb. 1750 and members of the North Precinct were also courting Parkman to become their Minister. Walett, 214.

32. Walett, 269.

33. Ten years earlier (20 June 1747), Francis reported to the Town that "a Post" was sent to Boston with news from the Mohawks "that 3000 French and Indians" had come over the Lake." This meant that men would have to be mustered, causing local problems during the busy farming season. Two years earlier (24 Sept. 1755), soldiers were mustered for Crown Point at Capt. Maynard's place in Westborough. Capt Josiah Richardson of Sudbury was the Muster Master. Walett, 156, 295.

34. Robert Rogers (1731-98) achieved fame in the French and Indian War of 1754-63 as Commander of Colonial Rangers. Soon after joining the Army in 1755 he was given command of an independent company of Rangers and was in charge of all Ranger Companies for the British Army by 1758.

35. Prior to Pownall, only two men served as Governor during the 26-year period 1730-56. Jonathan Belcher was named Governor of both Massachusetts and New Hampshire in 1730 and William Shirley assumed the office 17 Aug. 1741. Both were professional politicians and relied on patronage to secure the allegiance of the Province's political community. Zemsky Dissertation, 170, 172, 204. See also William H. Whitmore, editor, *The Massachusetts Civil List for the Colonial and Provincial Periods*, Albany, 1870.

36. Catherine Drinker Bowen, *John Adams And The American Revolution*, Little Brown and Company, Boston, 1950, 153-4.

37. 2 pair Indian shoes, 2 pair stockings, 1 pair spatter dashes, 1 pr breeches, 2 jackets, 1 large over-coat, 2 shirts and 2 caps, and 1 hat, a pr. of mittens, a tomahawk, 2 pocket knives, a scalping knife, a steel and flint. For every two men an ox, to every four a kettle and oil cloth for a tent, with one blanket and a bearskin. To each man 12 day's provision of port wine and bread. All of this the men pulled on little hand sleighs. It was an impressive showing and amazed the colonists. Obviously, Rhode Island Gov. Green said, the French were coldly determined to have this country. Bowen 157-9

38. Bowen, 161.

39. Louisbourg is a town on Cape Breton Island in northeast Nova Scotia. The French constructed it as a great fortress over a 20-year period (1720-40). In 1748, Louisbourg was restored to France under terms of the Treaty of Aix-la-Chapelle. New Englanders found this hard to swallow, especially since it had to be captured again in 1758. The British then evacuated the French and used Louisbourg as a base for capturing much of Canada. It became Britains permanently in 1763 when France ceded all of Canada. *Journals 1745-46*. The old fortress is now a national historic park.

40. Fort Frontenac was almost a legendary place by the middle of the 18th century. Its long history began in 1673 when Louis de Buade, Comte de Frontenac its namesake and one of New France's most flamboyant Governor-Generals from 1672-82 and 1689-98, had the Fort built to open the way west for France. By the 1750s it was largely a supply depot and a convenient harbor for French vessels.
41. Bowen, 162.
42. DeForest and Bates, 1338.
43. DeForest and Bates, 1339.
44. Westborough was one of 65 towns that failed to choose a Representative to serve in the 1745 Session and was fined £5 as a consequence. Only six of Worcester County's 22 towns sent Representatives in 1745. It was also the year the General Court enacted Statutes against hostile Indians that called for their scalps.

Feb. 1746. REPORT OF A COMMITTEE OF BOTH HOUSES ON THE AFFAIR OF SCALPS The following vote passed, viz. His Majesty's subjects the inhabitants of the inland frontiers of this Province, having both in former and later wars, being grievously distressed by parties of French and Indians from Canada surprising and murdering men, women, and children by taking off their scalps, as a trophy and evidence of barbarity; and it having repeatedly been represented to the Governor of Canada that if this unchristian and unmanly way of making war was encouraged or suffered to be continued, it should be fully avenged and retaliated on the inhabitants of the French governments; and be the said Governor, not withstanding said representations and warnings, persisting to employ and send out the vassals and dependents of the King his master, French and Indians, who since the commencement of the present war have captivated, destroyed, scalped, mangled, and barbarously used great numbers of the good people of this and his Majesty's other governments: Therefore for the future safety and protection of the frontiers of the Province and more effectually to deter the French and Indians under their direction and influence from carrying on the war in a way and manner abhorred by Christians and civilized nations, and justifiable from the principles of self-preservation only:

Resolved, that the following bounty be granted and allowed to be paid out of the public treasury to such Indians or parties of Indians as shall go out by order and direction of this government to Canada or the borders of Canada in quest of the enemy, viz.

Fore each male of the enemy above the age of 12 years who shall be killed, and whose scalp shall be brought as evidence of his death into this or any neighboring governments as the Indians shall be directed, the sum of £35. And for each male under 12 years and for every female killed and whose scalp shall be brought as aforesaid, £10. But that the said parties may not be induced to kill and destroy the enemy after quarter given for the sake of the aforesaid bounty on their scalps.

Resolved, for every male prisoner above the age of 12 years that shall be *taken and brought in* as aforesaid, a bounty be given of £40. And for each male under the age of 12 years and for every female prisoner taken and brought in as aforesaid a bounty of £25.

And in order to furnish such Indians as may depart from this Province for Canada with such things as shall be judged necessary, there is further granted a sum not exceeding £5 for each Indian. And as it may be judged on many accounts convenient that one or more of the English inhabitants of this Province should accompany such parties of Indians; in such case the same sum shall be allowed for furnishing such inhabitant or inhabitants, and they shall be entitled to a share of the

bounty in common with the Indians. This vote to remain in force for 12 months and no longer. *Journals 1745-46*, 295-6.

Later the bounty was extended to white inhabitants who were to be paid "one-hundred pounds in Bills of Credit for killing a male Indian age 12 or greater; one hundred-five pounds... for any male of like age... taken captive and delivered to the order of the Captain-General (Gov. Shirley), to be at the disposal and for the use of the government; and the sum of fifty pounds for each woman... and child under the age of 12 killed in fight; and fifty-five pounds... when taken prisoner." *Journals 1745-46*, 78.

45. In those days a quick round trip to Boston took three days. Francis' son Thomas left for Boston on 19 June and was back in Westborough on the 21st when Parkman went to Francis' house to puck up "nails, brads, and colors brought up from Boston by his son Thomas." Walett, 239.

46. Walett, 136-7, 154, 176, 196, 210.

47. The Great and General Court, performed both legislative and non legislative functions. The main purpose of government was to defend the frontiers, provide a suitable money supply, establish and maintain a judicial system, encourage industry, thrift, and virtue, and fund the government. Military appropriations were the largest and most significant followed by the salaries of the Province's officials. Maintenance of government buildings, bounty payments, bonuses, and occasional special allotments to towns also received regular appropriations. The most important job was to determine fiscal policy, regularize the monetary system and tune the statutes governing relations between creditor and debtor. It wrote laws, levied taxes, granted appropriations, shared in the administering of the statutes it created, and was frequently responsible for providing the goods and services it authorized. Equally important it functioned as a Court of Law and was capable of resolving conflicts among individuals and between the citizen and his government. It's function as a Special Court of Errors was probably the most important of its extra-legislative responsibilities. Formal appellate jurisdiction began with the County Courts and, if satisfaction could not be found within the Province, it wound up with the Privy Council in London.

The General Court regularly received and considered private petitions whose requests covered legal proceedings including granting and setting aside judgments; reopening cases considered legally closed; releasing prisoners from jail; voiding transactions; and disposing of property held in trust by the Courts. Legislators determined which land to survey, to whom to grant it to, and when a settlement could become a full-fledged town. Thus it was a central planning agency as well as the bureaucracy to manage the land and levy the taxes it was to produce. The Province operated with a skeleton staff of civil servants selected and paid for by the General Court and under the nominal supervision of the Governor. Most routine administrative functions were handled by the House or Joint House-Council Committees. Examples include selling public lands, building forts, and letting contracts.

It had jurisdiction over disputed elections, religious disputes over the selection of ministers, and the building and location of the Town's Meeting House. Sometimes Selectmen, responsible for guiding an often unruly meeting, asked the Court to determine what a Town Meeting could not authorize. Towns also appealed for relief of certain duties and taxes imposed by general statutes. Remission of fines for not sending a Representative to the Court, relief from bridge maintenance, etc. are examples. Town boundary disputes required Committees to travel to the area for investigative purposes. Occasionally, they restricted the use of pasture land, limited

obstructions in navigable streams and tributaries essential to the fishing industry, and licensed local industry. Zemsky Dissertation, 1,5, 6, 13, 15.

48. Robert M. Zemsky, "Power, Influence and Status: Leadership Patterns in the Massachusetts Assembly, 1740-1755," *William and Mary Quarterly* 3d No. 4., Vol. XXVI, Oct. 1969, 20.
49. General Court Sessions were the one event which compelled attendance by the entire political community. Sessions were hectic, the pace almost frantic with unending round of Committee meetings, strategy conferences, and dinner parties plus formal meetings of the House and Council. Zemsky Dissertation, 123.
50. Zemsky Dissertation, 519.
51. Zemsky Dissertation, 170.
52. Zemsky Dissertation, 21.
53. Brown, 8
54. Zemsky Dissertation, 45.
55. Zemsky Dissertation, 53.
56. Brown, 9.
57. Brown, 10, 12.
58. Brown, 11.
59. Nearly a third of the new business in each House originated with a petition asking for a private bill. The procedure was to issue necessary summons, convene a Committee, and rule on the merits of the plea. Zemsky Dissertation, 6.
60. Zemsky Dissertation, 7.
61. When Massachusetts troops encamped at Albany and Oswego, N. Y. in 1755, the War Committee accompanied them and considered itself an essential part of the High Command entitled to participate in all deliberations. Zemsky Dissertation, 9.
62. The Governor's address to the Legislature contained each legislative request in a separate paragraph. Upon receipt of an official copy the Speaker appointed a Committee to investigate the problems raised in each paragraph. Zemsky Dissertation, fn, 29.
63. Zemsky Dissertation, 30.
64. Zemsky Dissertation, 36.
65. Zemsky Dissertation, 28.
66. Zemsky Dissertation, 29.
67. Brown, 17.
68. Cornelius Dalton, John Wirkkala, and Anne Thomas, *Leading The Way. A History Of The Massachusetts General Court. 1629-1980.* Published by the Office of the Massachusetts Secretary of State, 1984, 37.
69. Marcus Wilson Jernegan, *The American Colonies 1492 - 1750*, Frederick Ungar Publishing Co., New York, 1929, republished 1959, third printing 1963 in the American Classics series. P. 286.
70. Dalton, Wirkkala, Thomas, 40.
71. Had Committees been parceled out equally, each Member would have served on nine Committees. In fact, the 12 most active Members served on 459 (51%) Committees. These 12 wrote major legislation, determined military policy, and fiscal policy was their exclusive domain. They were the officials who greeted arriving dignitaries and accompanied the Governor on official journeys. The next most active 14 held 25% of the assignments on important Committees, drafted minor legislation, and processed private petitions (Francis was in this group). Seventy-eight Members served on the remaining 216 Committees. This group received assignments only when an issue particularly affected their constituency or when the workload was so

great additional Members were need to review private petitions. Zemsky, 503.

72. "Thomas Hutchinson: The First Fifty Years)1711-1761," *William and Mary Quarterly* 3series No. 1., Vol. XV, Jan. 1958, 42, 48-49, 52-53.

73. Jack P. Greene and Richard M. Jellison, "The Currency Act in Imperial-Colonial Relations, 1764-1776," *William and Mary Quarterly* 3d series No. 4., Vol. XVIII, Oct. 1961, 486-518.

74. Gov. William Shirley—William Shirley, born in London in 1694, trained as a lawyer, and moved his family to Boston in 1731 where he practiced law and held various Royal posts including Surveyor of the Kings Woods. In this role he traveled through the northern territories of Massachusetts and came to understand the concerns and fears of common people in the outlying settlements about massacre by the French led by the native tribes. He was appointed Royal Governor in 1741 serving until 1749 and again from 1753–1756. Though he and the Legislature had disagreements, they were put aside when England and France went to war in 1744. He orchestrated the attack on the French stronghold in Louisburg, Nova Scotia in June of 1745. He led an unsuccessful attack on a French position in what is now upstate New York in 1755 and was relieved of duty in 1756 and returned to England to answer charges of treason and incompetence. He made a successful defense of himself and was named Governor of the Bahamas in 1758, serving for a decade.

75. His fellow Worcester Co. Representatives were: Benj. Flagg, Esq., Worcester; Capt. Jos. Wilder, Jr., Lancaster; Mr. Jabez Lyon, Woodstock; Tho. Gilbert, Esq., Brookfield; Capt. Daniel Denny, Leicester; Capt. Robert Taft, Mendon; Ed Hartwell, Esq., Lunenburgh; Mr. Sam Lyscom, Southborough; John Keyes, Esq., Shewsbury; John Harwood, Esq., Uxbridge. Their Oath of Office was known as the "Oath of Abjuration" and was required by an Act of Parliament. Also serving in the House this Session were Samuel Adams of Boston, Robert Hale of Beverley, and James Otis of Barnstable; in the Council Sir William Pepperrell, Baronet, John Osborne, Samuel Danforth, William Foye, Josiah Willard, Joseph Dwight, Ezekiel Cheever, James Bowdoin, John Cushing, James Minot, Andrew Oliver, and John Wheelwright. All but Pepperrel were Esquires. *Journals 1646-47*, 3-7.

76. *Journals 1746-47, 14.*

77. Lieut. General Sir William Peperrell, American merchant, statesman, soldier, and one of the richest men in the colonies, born in Kittery Point, Massachusetts (now Maine) in 1696 and died in 1769. He commanded an Army of 3,000 men in the capture of the Fortress Louisbourg in Nova Scotia.

78. Admiral Peter Warren (1703-52) was a British naval officer from Ireland who commanded a group of ships that supported the Massachusetts forces in the capture of the French Fortress of Louisbourg.

79. The usual petty business of the Province was addressed: a proposed Act to prevent unreasonable fathering of bay berries; a law to control the firing of guns at Boston; the beating of "any drums within ten rods of the Court House during the sitting of either House, upon pain of the displeasure of this Court, unless by order of the Governor and Council; an Act to provide permission for Quakers to "affirm" rather than to "swear;" or to encourage the raising of sheep; the petition of Harvard College to "be allowed to demand the original fare for the ferriage of passengers over Charlestown ferry, which is one penny sterling a passenger". *Journals 1746-47*, 55, 60, 115, 138, 274.

80. See endnote 28.

81. *Journals 1746-47*, 55, 60, 64, 81, 104.

82. *Journals 1746-47*, 170.

83. Castle William was located in South Boston and is the oldest continuously fortified site in British North America. It was Boston's principal defensive work and was strategically placed to protect the city from sea attack. Its first fortification was an earthwork and three cannon ordered in 1634 by Gov. Dudley of the Massachusetts Bay Colony. It was renamed Fort William in 1692 and substantially rebuilt in 1701.

84. Governor's Island was located in east Boston and was granted to Governor John Winthrop in 1632.

85. Calling the cost of retaining the soldiers "extremely burthensome" the House thought that their "zeal and cheerfulness" was such that they would return in a few hours if needed. *Journals 1746-47*, 182-85.

86. *Journals, 1746-47*, 200-03.

87. The Commissary-General was directed to immediately cut all provisions into mess pieces "in the most just and equal manner, viz: pork into two pound pieces, beef into four pound pieces, having a regard to the quality according to ancient custom and packed." Each barrel was to contain double the pounds of meat to the number of pieces contained therein; the number of pieces each barrel contained to be marked on the head; and the sub Commissaries were to distribute it by piece, not by weight. The House determined that 14 ounces of bread per day was sufficient for a man and since bread is liable to waste, the sub Commissaries were to give each soldier 14 ounces while accounting for it as a pound. *Journals 1746-47*, 227-28.

88. Chauncy (1705-87) was a Congregational Minister and theologian. He was optimistic about the individual's ability to pursue godliness, and believed the Calvinist doctrine of human depravity too extreme. He rejected views of a wrathful God in favor of a benevolent deity and preached that God intended the happiness of all his creatures.

89. The Treaty of Aix-la-Chapelle was negotiated largely by Britain and France, with the other powers following their lead, ending the War of the Austrian Succession (1740-49). The Treaty was marked by the mutual restitution of conquests, including the Fortress of Louisbourg on Cape Breton Island, Nova Scotia, to France; Madras in India, To England; and the barrier towns to the Dutch. The right of the Habsburg heiress Maria Theresa (1717-80) to the Austrian lands was guaranteed, but the Habsburgs were seriously weakened by the guarantee to Prussia, not a party to the treaty, of its conquest of Silesia. Both Britain and France were trying to win the friendship of Prussia, now clearly a significant power, for the next war. Maria Theresa gave up to Spain the Duchies of Parma, Piacenza, and Guastalia in Italy. The Treaty confirmed the right of succession of the House of Hanover both in Great Britain and in Hanover. In the commercial struggle between England and France in the West Indies, Africa, and India, nothing was settled; the Treaty was thus no basis for a lasting peace.

90. The Six Nations of the Iroquois Indians included the following tribes: The Onondaga Nation, the Oneida Nation, the Seneca Nation, the Mohawk Nation, the Cayuga Nation, and the Tuscarore Nation. Together, these people comprise the oldest living participatory democracy on earth. Their confederacy influenced Benjamin Franklin, Thomas Jefferson, and other members of the Continental Congress as they deliberated toward independence.

91. *Journals 1747-48*, xi.

92. Crown Point on Lake Champlain in N. Y. was the center of civilization for the white man in the area. Accessible only by water, it was first fortified by the French in 1742 and was the seat of French power on the Lake until 1759.

93. *Journals 1747-48*, xii.

94. *Journals 1747-48*, ix.
95. *Journals 1747-48*, x.
96. *Journals 1747-48*, xii.
97. *Journals 1747-48*, ix.
98. *Journals 1747-48*, ix, 116.
99. *Journals 1747-48*, 69, 83, 325.
100. *Journals 1747-48*, 357.
101. The Court House was burned sometime before 28 November. Fortunately many of the papers housed there were saved. Restoration was soon underway as the House ordered a payment to Joseph Russell on 27 Jan. 1750 for "his work restoring the Province House." Final restoration cost was £3705 11s 4 pence—one-half paid by the Province and one-fourth each by Suffolk County and Boston. *Journals 1746-47*, 7-8, 84, 188, 237.
102. Billingsgate Bay on Cape Cod was named for the great fish market in London. It is now known as Wellfleet, Massachusetts.
103. Considering the dispute between Westborough's North and South Precincts over Rev. Parkman's salary and Francis' efforts to get it paid, it is likely he was heavily involved with this bill.
104. *Journals 1749-50, 238-39.*
105. *Journal, 1746-47*, 9.
106. *Journals 1749-50*, 60.
107. Coin as distinguished from paper money.
108. *Journals 1749-50*, 52.
109. The Penobscot Indians were natives of Maine and enemies of the Mohawk Iroquois and sided with the French.
110. The Norridgewock Indians were also natives of Maine.
111. *Journals 1746-47*, 40, 43, 44.
112. Gov. Spencer Phips—Spencer Phips (1685–1757) was acting Royal Governor 1749–53 and 1756–57 when he served in the absence of Gov. William Shirley. His first term was when Shirley took several years leave to participate in boundary negotiations with France. He took over again in 1756 when Shirley returned to England to defend himself against charges of treason and incompetence. Nephew of former Governor and treasure hunter Sir William Phips, he was predominantly occupied with creating a peace treaty with native tribes near Falmouth (now Portland, Maine). His efforts were disrupted by continued violence by English settlers which never allowed sufficient peace to conclude negotiations. He died in April 1757 while in office.
113. Shirley was gone for nearly four years, returning 6 Aug. 1753.
114. The ship was the *Massachusetts-Frigate. Journals 1749-50*, p. X.
115. The House voted on 25 Jan.1750 to authorize four townships be created for foreign Protestants. Two western townships were to be laid out near Fort Massachusetts and contain seven square miles each and two eastern townships of six square miles each. *Journals 1749-50*, 86-87, 183.
116. *Journals 1749-50*, 17, 65, 198.
117. Fort Massachusetts was built in 1744 between North Adams and Williamstown, about four miles east of the latter. It was captured and destroyed by the French in 1746 and rebuilt the winter of 1746-47.
118. Her petition was assigned to the "Gentlemen appointed on the petitions of poor soldiers." *Journals, 1749-50*, 27, 29.
119. Chandler held several offices in the County so on 17 August, the House empowered

him to appoint "some suitable person as his Deputy to serve as Clerk of the Inferior Court of Common Pleas, Court of General Sessions of the Peace, and Register of Deeds during his absence. On 18 August the House voted to publish a notice in the newspapers instructing people with friends in captivity to provide the Provincial Secretary with their names and when and where they were taken captive. French captives in the Province were given liberty to return to Canada. *Journals, 1749-50*, 72, 76, 79.

120. Badcock's petition to the Court dated 7 June stated he was a "soldier last year in the service of the Province" was "captured by the Indians, and lost a good gun." *Journals, 1749-50*, 15, 16, 35.

121. *Journals 1749-50*, 149-50.

122. The Committee called for a Parliamentary inquiry into the state of the Bills of Credit of the various colonies; asked that the boundaries "between his Majesty's territories and the French King" be determined; called for an inquiry into the appropriate boundary between Massachusetts and Connecticut; and requested that each Colony pay a proportional share in men and money in future wars and that Massachusetts seamen not be impressed for service on British Navy ships. *Journals 1749-50*, 165-66.

123. Other Committee Members were Col. James Otis of Barnstable and Capt. White of the House and John Greenleafe and Samuel Watts, Esqrs of the Council. *Journals 1749-50*, 153, 157.

124. Major Gameliel Bradford of Duxbury, Plymouth County, and Mr. Samuel Witt of Marlborough, Middlesex County, were the other Committee members. On this date the House also appropriated £750 for the Justices of his Majesty's Superior Court of Judicature, £103 13s to Provincial Secretary Josiah Willard, £186 13s to Provincial Treasurer William Foye and to Harvard College President Rev. Edward Holyoke, £100 to House Doorkeeper William Baker, and £159 19s 12 pence to Commissary General John Wheelwright. All these amounts were for a period of one year. Speaker Joseph Dwight was allowed 1s 4 pence per diem for each day of his attendance over and above his pay as a Member. *Journals 1749-50*, 23, 213-15.

125. *Journals 1749-50*, 215, 219.

126. Other Committee Members were Col. Buckminster and Col. Joseph Richards of Dedham, Suffolk County. *Journals, 1749-50*, 225.

127. By the end of 1755 the Province was much annoyed with the trouble and expense caused the "neutral French." The *Journal* contains more than 30 entries about these people. On 9 April, 1756 a House Committee reported a bill that would "prevent the late inhabitants of Nova Scotia, and other Frenchmen subjects of the French King from traveling the country without permit, or from being employed in the Fishery or in Coasting vessels belonging to the Province. On 21 April, the last day of the legislative year, the Council stated that the Province had received more than its share of the French neutrals, deplored the great expense of their support, and noted that some colonies didn't receive any. It voted that no more French neutrals could land in the Colony. *Journals 1755 6-56*, ix-xi.

128. Scouts would have to provide their own guns. The scalp bounty was £20 for an Indian under 12; £40 for one over 12. The prisoner bounty was £25 for one under 12 and £50 for one over 12. All scalps and prisoners were to be brought to Boston. *Journals 1755-56*.

129. *Journals 1755-56*, xi.

130. Francis undoubtedly met John Adams who spent six months in Worcester in 1755 practicing law and who noted that "this whole Town is immersed in politics."

Adams later wrote of Francis' legislative colleague Timothy Ruggles that "grandeur... steadiness of his attention, the boldness and strength of his thoughts and expressions, his strict honor, conscious superiority, contempt of meanness..." made him the most impressive of the coterie of judges, lawyers, and politicians in Worcester. Ruggles was a leading Judge and landowner in the County and became a power in the House of Representatives. *Zemsky Dissertation,* 116.

131. Among the soldiers presenting petition to Francis' Committee were: Nathan Thompson, a soldier in the late Crown Point expedition, who received "a grievous wound rendering him unable to support his family of three children:" Isaac Bellows of Rutland who served in the Kennebeck river expedition and helped build Fort Halifax and was never paid as promised; Abisshai Brown of Concord who sought an allowance for his son Daniel, a drummer in the Crown Point expedition who caught "Camp Fever" and the father had to pay for his return home and to "doctor and nurse" him; John Wheelwright, Esq., Commissary General of the Province who asked for more money based on excessive expenses to prosecute the war. Francis received public money for the use of Solomon Fay, Phineas Hardy, Isaac Harrington, Daniel Warren, Henry Gaschet, Ithamar Bellows, Jonathan Cooke, Eleazeer Rice, Jonathan Livermore, Christopher Furbush, and Lydia Gale. Gale of Westborough, asked to be paid for her husband Thaddeus' gun. A serjeant in the Crown Point expedition, Thaddeus died of sickness at Fort Edward and his gun was lost. *Journal 1755-56,* 325, 349, 354, 402, 418, 422, 427, 439, 457, 466.

132. Col. Timothy Ruggles of Hardwick also served on the Baptist Committee. *Journals 1755-56,* 308.

133. The Penobscot, about 300 miles long, is the largest river in Maine. It empties into Penobscot Bay and is navigable for sea going vessels to tide water at Bangor, 25 miles from its mouth.

134. Other Committee members: Col. Thomas Ruggles, Col. Thomas Clap, Maj. Enoch Freeman, and Mr. Wm. Cooper. *Journals 1755-56,* 468, 470.

135. Governor Shirley was absent attending to his military duties in Canada. *Journals 1756,* vol. 33, Part I, 4, 8, 9.

136. Gov. Thomas Pownall—Born and educated in England, Pownall worked as a clerk at the Board of Trade before coming to New York to serve as Secretary to Governor Sir Danvers Osborn. Osborn committed suicide in 1753 and Pownall was appointed Lt. Governor of New Jersey in 1755 and later declined the Governorship of Pennsylvania to become "Secretary Extraordinary" to Lord Loudoun, commander of England's forces in North America. He was commissioned Massachusettes Royal Governor and arrived in Boston in August 1757 to begin service. He sought to strengthen ties with the General Court and create a broader base for rule, which concerned the Crown. He was relieved of the Governorship in June of 1760 and served in the English Army as a Colonel and in Parliament before retiring from public life in 1780.

137. *Journals, 1756,* vii, 143.

138. *Journals 1756,* 81, 100, 195.

139. Gov. Francis Bernard—Sir Francis Bernard (1712–69) served as Governor of New Jersey before being commissioned as the Royal Governor of Massachusettes in 1760, serving until 1769. Though his first years were generally successful, he lost popular favor because he enforced the Stamp Act and other laws to which the colonists objected. He advocated sending American colonists to represent themselves in the British Parliament which was unpopular with both the English and the revolutionaries. When controversial letters written to English officials were

published in Boston newspapers, he lost the ability to govern and was recalled to London.

140. *Journals 1762-63*, ix,

141. *Journals 1762-63*, viii-ix.

142. Otis' father, a former Speaker, served in the Council. John Adams thought Otis a prophet. Benjamin Edes and John Gill, publishers of the *Boston-Gazette,* published both pamphlets. They were also printers for the House and were not retained as *Journal* printers in 1763 and for virtually the balance of the decade. *Journal 1762-63*, ix-x.

143. The House directed Francis to prepare the proper vote for the Upton request. Snow was instructed to show his petition to the Town of Westborough to see if it would agree. Andrew's request was approved provided he obtain permission from the Westborough Selectmen (Francis was also a Selectman at the time). The Upton petitioners had to pay the town all taxes then due to Upton. The Shrewsbury petition was approved with the stipulation that Westborough did not have to provide a road to the Town Hall for the new residents. *Journals 1762-63*, 14, 37, 127-288, 156, 163, 169.

144. Intestine—Internal with regard to a country or community; domestic, civil.

145. The Peace of Paris was signed in February 1763. *Journals 1763-64*, vii.

146. The order came from the British Board of Trade.

147. Hutchinson was a former Special Agent and merchant and was then serving as a Member of the Council, Chief Justice, and Lieut. Governor. He refused the appointment pleading the expense to the Province and his own family concerns. The legislature obliged him and thus lost a chance to protest the various proposals in the person of a Special Agent. By May 1764 word was received the Sugar Act was law and would be effective at the end of September. *Journals 17663-64*, xi.

148. "David's numbering of the people." See 1 Chronicles Chapter 21 King James version of the Bible.

149. The House finally agreed to initiate a bill to authorize a Province-wide census 23 Feb. 1764. It passed 2 March and was signed by Gov. Barnard 9 March. The census, taken in 1765, was the first complete census taken in Massachusetts and revealed some interesting data. Total white population had been estimated at 200,000 in 1763; the number counted was closer to 240,000. Of Boston's 15,520, 811 were blacks, 37 Indian, the rest white. There were no French neutralists living in Boston. The town was three times larger than Marblehead, the next largest with 4,954. Most other large centers were also on the coast: Dartmouth, 4,581, Salem, 4,754, Falmouth (now Portland, Maine) 3,783, Gloucester, 3,772, Ipswich, 3,642, and Sheburne (now Nantucket) 3,562. *Journals 1764-65*, x, xi.

150. Pontiac was Chief of the Ottawa Tribes who attacked English posts in the upper Great Lakes region in 1763. The rebellion spread across the British outposts from the Allegheny river to Lake Michigan and cost approximately 2,000 white lives.

151. British General Thomas Gage (1721-87) later had a prominent role during the early days of the American Revolution.

152. Gage had to quell the uprising without Massachusetts troops. *Journals 1763-64*, ix, x.

153. Speaker Ruggles of Hardwick apparently did not vote. Boston's Representatives split 2 to 2 on the request for troops and were unanimous to excuse Hutchinson. *Journals 1763-64*, 245, 249, 255.

154. The smallpox epidemic began in late December 1763 with the arrival from Newfoundland of the *Nancy* which had lost one of its crew to the disease en route. The epidemic lasted for half a year causing 170 deaths, frightening the inhabitants, and

setting off anew the old debate between taking the disease in the natural way or being inoculated. *Journals 1863-64*, vii, 198-99.

155. *Journals 1763-64*, viii.

156. *Journals 1763-64*, 46, 138, 178-79.

157. *Journals 1764-65*, x.

158. *Journals 1764-65*, x.

159. *Journals 1764-65*, xi.

160. A Myrmidon is any of a Tribe of Thessalian warriors who, according to Greek legend, fought under Achilles, their King in the Trojan war; an unquestioned follower or subordinate.

161. On 6 Feb. 1765 George Grenville rose in Parliament to offer the 55 resolutions of his Stamp Act bill. A motion was offered to first read petitions from the Virginia Colony and others was denied. The bill was passed 17 Feb., approved by the Lords on 8 March, and two weeks later ordered in effect by the King. The Stamp Act was Parliament's first serious attempt to assert government authority over the colonies. Great Britain was faced with massive national debt following the Seven Years War. That debt had grown from £72,289,673 in 1755 to £129,586,789 in 1764. English citizens in Britain were taxed as a rate that created a serious threat of revolt.

162. Parliament passed the Stamp Act in February 1765 by a vote of 294-49. The debate was languid. "Nothing of any note in Parliament wrote Horace Walpole," except one slight day on the American taxes." A major Barre, who had fought under Wolfe in Canada, made a speech championing the Americans. He said Britain owed more to America than America did to Britain and called them the **"Sons of Liberty."** Nobody in England listened. But they listened in America and seized the phrase as a slogan for citizens everywhere who protested the Stamp Act. The news reached Boston in May. Church bells tolled; a forest of flags in the harbor slipped to half-mast. The Act was to take effect in November and was the talk of the entire Commonwealth. A ship with the Stamps arrived in September. Bowden, 262, 278.

The tax was to be imposed on newspapers, advertisements, almanacs, legal documents, bills of lading, notes and bonds meaning it fell most heavily on the very people who were most articulate in the community – merchants, lawyers, and publishers. These men, hardly fire-brands, organized to resist the tax and resolved to import no goods, not even the black clothes for mourning. Most joined the Sons of Liberty organizations. Michael Kraus, *The United States To 1865*. The University of Michigan Press, Ann Arbor, 1959, 190.

163. Albany Congress of June 1754. British officials believed that a North American war with France was imminent and urged colonial leaders to prepare for the common defense. A meeting was held in Albany, New York in the spring of 1754 and was attended by native leaders, colonial officials, and representatives from seven of the British colonies. Dicusssion focused on two primary issues:

The Iroquois. Often referred to as the Six Nations, the Iroquois had traditionally maintained stronger relationships with the French than the British, but by the 1740s the British were actively engaged in trade with many tribes in the Ohio Valley. Native leaders were not anxious to commit themselves to siding with one power or the other, preferring to wait and see if they could ally with the winning side. Nevertheless, the Albany officials were successful with winning a tepid commitment from the Iroquois in return for substantial bribes of supplies and weapons.

The Albany Plan of Union. Benjamin Franklin and Massachusetts Governor Thomas Hutchinson drafted a proposal for colonial unity in the case the war with France materialized. The plan called for the creation of new layers of government,

including a President-General who would be appointed by the Crown and exercise broad powers over relationships with the natives, making war, and governing the frontier areas until new colonies were created. A Grand Council was also proposed whose Members would be appointed by the existing Colonial Assemblies and whose representation would be determined by the amount of financial contribution (taxes) paid to the organization.

The plan for a federated colonial government never got off the ground. It was approved by the Delegates at Albany, but not a single Colonial Assembly ratified it. It was doubtful, even if approved by the Assemblies, that Royal Officials would have approved of this consolidation of power in America. Instead the Board of Trade in London proposed the creation of a Colonial Council composed of one Representative from each Colony. That Body would be responsible for raising militia forces and apportioning the cost among the membership. 'This idea elicited little enthusiasm in America, where the colonists preferred to have British regulars fight their battles with money raised on the other side of the Atlantic. The Albany Plan of Union, did however, set an example that would later be followed by such gatherings as the Continental Congresses.

164. The Committee: Speaker White, Big. Ruggles, Col. Partridge, Col. Worthington, Gen. John Windslow, Mr. Otis, Mr. Cushing, Col. Saltonstall, and Capt. Sheaf. White, Otis, and Joseph Lee were named to the Committee to draft the invitation to the other Provinces. *Journals 1765-66*, 108-09.

165. *Journals 1765-66*, 110.

166. Virginia Resolves. On 29 May 1765, the House of Burgesses of Virginia came to the following resolutions:

Whereas the honorable House of Commons in England have late drawn into question how far the General Assembly of this Colony has power to enact laws for laying taxes and imposing duties payable to the pope of his Majesty's most ancient colony – For settling and ascertaining the same to all future times, the House of Burgesses of this present General Assembly have come to the several following resolutions:

Resolved, that the first adventurers and settlers of this his Majesty's Colony and Dominion of Virginia brought with them and transmitted to their posterity and all others, his Majesty's subjects since inhabiting in this his Majesty's Colony, all the privileges and immunities that have at any time been held, enjoyed, and possessed by the people of Great Britain

Resolved, That by the two Royal Charters granted by King James the First, the colonists aforesaid are declared entitled to all privileges of faithful, liege, and natural born subjects, to all intents and purposes, as if they had been abiding and born within the realm of England.

Resolved, That his Majesty's liege people of this his most ancient Colony have enjoyed the right being thus governed by their own Assembly, in the article of taxes and internal police; and that the same have never been forfeited or any other way yielded up, but have been constantly recognized by the King and people of Great Britain.

Resolved, therefore, That the General Assembly of the Colony, together with his Majesty or his substitute have in their representative capacity the only exclusive right and power to levy taxes and impositions on the inhabitants of this Colony and that every attempt to vest such a power in any person or persons whatsoever other than the General Assembly aforesaid is illegal, unconstitutional, and unjust, and has a manifest tendency to destroy British, as well as American freedom.

Resolved, That His Majesty's liege people, the inhabitant of this Colony are not bound to yield obedience to any law or ordinance whatever, designed to impose any taxation whatsoever upon them other than the laws or ordinances of the General Assembly aforesaid.

167. The opposition led by Boston Representatives flatly rejected the Governor's argument, claiming taxation of Massachusetts residents was a violation of the British Constitution. Rather than humbly begging relief, they urged the people to defend their rights by resisting unconstitutional violations. Ultimately, the people turned to extra-legal measures beyond the bounds of established political institutions and the stability of the old political structure was shattered. Brown, 22.

Even the waiters in the tavern knew the names of those who had favored taxing America. They knew exactly how the Act would affect everyone and were in a passion of rage at such injustice and harped upon it, spending hours discussing the Act to the exclusion of all else. Under their profanity and passion flowed a deep and heavy current of determination not to be taxed "by idiotic Ministers who threw away American money on worthless and unnecessary projects." They despised Charles Townsend with a venomous loathing and held Gen. Amherst in high disgust. Greenville, the ousted Prime Minister, was more real to them and infinitely more wicked than Beelzebub (the chief Devil according to the Bible). They knew assurance policies would go from £2 sterling to £190, bail bonds selling for 15 shillings would go to £100, and that widows and orphans would be the most defenseless against the new taxes. Kenneth Roberts, *Northwest Passage*, Doubleday & Company, Inc., Garden City, N.Y., 1936, 1937, 445.

168. Andrew Oliver, a brother-in-law to Lieut. Gov. Thomas Hutchinson, had agreed to be the Boston Agent for the Stamp Act. However, after being brought before a "Sons of Liberty" meeting attended by 2,000 held under what became known as the Liberty Tree, he gave his promise under oath never to sell a stamp. A Boston mob also sacked Hutchinson's home, plundered its furnishings, drank its wine, and scattered his library of books and manuscripts on American history through the streets. The library had been assembled over 30 years. Kraus, 190.

169. *Journals 1765-66*, 124-25.

170. Bowen, 279.

171. *Journals 1765-66*, 131-33.

172. *Journals 1765-66*, 134.

173. These messages are printed in *Journals 1765-66*, 303-12.

174. *Journals 1765-66*, xi, 254. Ruggles was reprimanded before the House on 13 Feb. 1766 by the Speaker: "Brigadier Ruggles, the House last evening voted that with respect to your conduct at the late Congress at New York, you were guilty of neglect of duty and thereupon Ordered, that you should receive a reprimand from the Speaker of this House. Therefore Sir, in discharge of my duty as Speaker of this House, and in pursuance of their order, I do reprimand you accordingly. Sir, it gives me very sensible pain that a Gentleman who has been heretofore in such high estimation in this House, should fall under their public censure. I hope sir, that by your future conduct, you will not only regain the good opinion this House have heretofore entertained of you; but also the good opinion of all those whose displeasure you may have fallen under on this occasion. 271-72. Ruggles prepared a paper listing the reasons for his conduct and wanted it to be printed in the House *Journal.* After the paper was read and debated the House voted not to print it. 294.

175. *Journals 1765-66*, 186-89.

176. In the early summer of 1765 a group of men organized the Sons of Liberty to

oppose the Stamp Act. On 14 Aug., Andrew Oliver, the man who had been appointed Distributor of Stamps for Massachusetts, was hung in effigy on a tree (later named the Liberty Tree) on Chestnut street. Lieut. Gov. Hutchinson, as Chief Justice of the Colony, ordered the Sheriff to cut the image down. The Sheriff said he couldn't without endangering the lives of his men. The crowd then cut the image down and marched with it to the Town House and gave three huzzas to let the Council know who was running Boston. Then they went to Kilby street and destroyed Oliver's newly built building on the dock which they believed would house the Stamp Act offices. Later that evening they went to his home and systematically destroyed it.

On the evening of 26 Aug a mob was gathered and separated into two bodies, one to destroy a great part of William Story's public and private papers and damage his house, office, and furniture and the other to the home of the Comptroller of Customs, Benjamin Hallowell, acknowledged to be one of the finest in town, and trashed it and his furniture and carried away books and papers and emptied his wine cellar. The two sections of mobs then joined and went to Lieut. Gov. Hutchinson"s home and wrecked his house, destroying windows, doors, wainscoting, and paintings, stole £900 in cash as well as clothing and silverware. They cut down all the trees in his garden, beat down the partitions in his house, and had begun to remove the slate from the roof when daylight stopped them.

177. *Journals 1765-66*, 198-202.

178. Rights of the Province of Massachusetts: 1. Resolved, that here are certain essential rights of the British Constitution of government which are founded in the law of God and nature, and are the common rights of mankind — Therefore 2. Resolved, That inhabitants of this Province are inalienably entitled to those essential rights in common with all men: And that no law of society can consistent with the law of God and nature divest them of those rights. 3. Resolved, That no man can justly take the property of another without his consent: And that upon this original principle the right of representation in the same body, which exercises the power of making laws for levying taxes, which is one of the main pillars of the British Constitution, is evidently founded. 4. Resolved, That this inherent right, together with all other essential rights, liberties, privileges, and immunities of the people of Great Britain, have been fully confirmed to them by Magna Charta, and by former and later Acts of Parliament. 5. Resolved, That his Majesty's subjects in America, are in reason and common sense, entitled to the same extent of liberty, with his Majesty's subjects in Britain. 6. Resolved, That by the Declaration of the Royal Charter of this Province, the inhabitants are entitled, to all the rights, liberties, and immunities of free and natural subjects of Great-Britain, to all intents, purposes, and constructions whatever. 7. Resolved, That the inhabitants of this Province appear to be entitled to all the rights aforementioned, by an Act of Parliament 13th of Geo. 2d. 8. Resolved, That those rights do belong to the inhabitants of this Province, upon principles of common justice; their ancestors, having settled this country at their sole expense; and their posterity, having constantly approved themselves most loyal and faithful subjects of Great-Britain. 9. Resolved, That every individual in the colonies, is as advantageous to Great-Britain, as if he were in Great-Britain, and held to pay his full proportion of taxes there: And as the inhabitants of this Province, pay their full proportion of taxes, for the support of his Majesty's government here, it is unreasonable for them to be called upon to pay any part of the charges of the government there. 10. Resolved, That the inhabitants of this Province are not, and never have been represented in the Parliament of Great-Britain: And

that such a representation there, as the subjects in Britain, do actually and rightfully enjoy, is impracticable for the subjects in America: – And further, that in the opinion of this House, the several subordinate powers of legislation in America, were constituted, upon the apprehensions of this impracticability. 11. Resolved, That the only method, whereby the constitutional rights of the subjects of this Province can be secure, consistent with a subordination to the supreme power of Great-Britain, is by the continued exercise of such powers of government as are granted in the Royal Charter, and a firm adherence to the privileges of the same. 12. Resolved, as a just conclusion from some of the foregoing Resolves, that all Acts made, by any power whatever, other than the General Assembly of this Province, imposing taxes on the inhabitants are infringements of our inherent and unalienable rights, as men and British subjects: and render void the most valuable Declarations of our Charter. 13. Resolved, That the extension of the powers of the Court of Admiralty within this Province, is a most violent infraction of the right of trails by juries,—A right, which this House upon the principles of their British ancestors, hold more dear and sacred; it being the only security of the lives, liberties, and properties of his Majesty's subjects here. 14. Resolved, That this House owe the strictest allegiance to his most sacred Majesty King GEORGE the Third: That they have the greatest veneration for the Parliament: And that they will, after the example of all their predecessors, from the settlement of this country, exert themselves to their utmost, in supporting his Majesty's authority in the Province, – in promoting the true happiness of his subjects: and in enlarging the extent of his domain. *Ordered*, That all the foregoing Resolves be kept in the records of this House; that a just sense of liberty, and the firm sentiments of loyalty may be transmitted to posterity. *Journals 1765-66*, 151-53.

179. A Whig was someone opposed to Britain's new laws passed in the 1760s affecting trade, the courts, and imposing new taxes in the colonies. Representatives, Selectmen, and simple private individuals were driven to the Whig cause by British policies. Brown, 21, 23-4. The two main parties in England were the Whigs and the Tories. The term Whig originates from the Exclusion Bill crisis of 1678-81. The Whigs supported the exclusion of James II from the thrones of England, Ireland, and Scotland and the Tories supported the King. Both names were originally insults: a "whiggamor" was a cattle driver, and a "tory" was an Irish term for an outlaw.
180. Eli Whitney, inventor of the cotton gin, was born in Westborough the year of the Stamp Act. The town was formed into squadrons for the first time this year—six were formed.
181. See Endnote 170.
182. DeForest and Bates.
183. DeForest and Bates, 1339.
184. Parkman unpublished diary, 1770.
185. Brown, 49-54.
186. Brown, 55.
187. Samuel Adams probably borrowed the idea of the Committees of Correspondence from the English Dissenters' Committees of Correspondence dating from the 1730s and the Colonial Congregational and Presbyterian Clerics' Committees of the 1750s and 1760s. Adams and his followers perfected the idea and used existing Town Meetings to establish Public Committees of Correspondence composed of the most respectable inhabitants. Their goal was to transform periodic Town Meetings into a "Society of the Bill of Rights" where inhabitants would be instructed in political

principles and their specific application. They hoped the Committees would evolve into an independent means of mobilizing the Province. Brown, 45-7, 56-7.

188. Brown, 95.

189. Brown, 132.

190. DeForest and Bates, 159-60,

191. Walett, xiii.

192. Brown, 107.

193. Brown, 210.

194. Gage, who was Commander-in-Chief of British forces in America, replaced Thomas Hutchinson as Governor in mid-May 1774.

195. The Boston Port bill effective 1 June 1774 blockaded the harbor. The city was to be starved into submission, her channels lined with warships; no food or fuel could enter except by the narrow neck of land to the westward. It passed Parliament almost unanimously. On 2 June a ship from England brought more Acts of Parliament. The first, to suppress "riots and tumults" in Massachusetts Bay, provided that those who "disturbed the King's peace were to be tried outside the Province – in England or someplace designated by the Royal Governor. It was immediately dubbed "The Murder Bill." The second Act was for " better regulating the government of Massachusetts Bay and purging their Constitution of all its crudities." Council Members and all Judges and Officers of the Court were to be appointed by the Crown – no more election by the House. Jurors were to be chosen by the Sheriff. No Town Meetings could be held without the Governor's consent in writing. Only one Assembly of the people was allowed annually – on election day. The Province was to become utterly powerless. Bowen, 339, 442.

196. Brown, 213-15.

197. The Court of Common Pleas had jurisdiction over civil cases up to a specified money value. The Court of General Sessions had jurisdiction over criminal cases, usually except misdemeanor cases.

198. Brown, 216.

199. Brown, 217.

200. While the Worcester Convention continued to meet fairly regularly well into 1775, it, like all other County Conventions, ceded its leadership to the Provincial Congress when it met in October 1774. William Lincoln, editor, *The Journals of Each Provincial Congress of Massachusetts in 1774 and 1775*, Boston, 1838, 218-19. Francis Whipple became a Justice of the Peace in 1763 and it is presumed he complied with the Convention's request.

201. The size of artillery was designated differently for cannons, mortars, and howitzers. The size of all cannons, whether field or garrison, was designated by the weight of the cannonball fired from the particular piece. The size of cannons at that time ranged from a three pound light field cannon up to 36 pounders.

202. DeForest and Bates, 161.

203. The General Court acted under the Charter of 1692, minus its Royal elements, with the Council exercising executive power in place of a Governor. Lincoln, 237.

204. Lincoln, 238.

205. DeForest and Bates, 93-4.

206. More than 2000 lawsuits involving debts were filed in Worcester County in 1774 and about 1700 the following year. With a population of less than 50,000, these suits created financial pressures which, coupled with a lack of buyers, caused land and goods to be seized and sacrificed on sale to satisfy liens and debts. DeForest and Bates, 120-22.

207. Price fixing was one of the measures adopted in an unsuccessful effort to prevent currency depreciation. The scale of prices adopted in Hardwick, which bordered New Braintree, in early spring of 1777 is of interest because it lets us see what was being consumed and its relative value at that time:

Good merchantable grain and vegetables per bushel: wheat 6s, rye 4s, Indian corn, 3s, oats 2s, barley 4s, barley malt 4s, beans and peas 6s, Spanish potatoes 1s in the field and 1s 6d in the cellar, turnips 8d, good onions 4s, good winter apples 9d, good wheat flour £1 1s per hundred wt.

Fresh pork of the best kind 4d per lb., grass fed beef of the best kind 2d 8qu per lb., good well-fatted, stall-fed beef 8d 3qu per lb., salt pork 240 wt in a barrel £4 7s, good salt beef 240 wt in a barrel £3 9s 6d, good salt pork, clear of bone 7d per lb., good lamb and mutton 3d per lb., good veal 2d 2qu per lb., good merchantable imported salt 15s per bu, good salt manufactured in this state 17s per bu.

Best Muscovador sugar 9d per lb. and 8d 2qu. by the seven lb., other sugar of an inferior quality, in equal proportion, best molasses by the single gal. 4s 9d, best chocolate 1s 10d per lb., best new milk cheese 6d per lb., best butter by the single lb. 9d, good coffee 1s 6d, Bohea tea 4s 6d per lb., good tried tallow 5d per lb.

Good fleece wool 2s per lb., wool of an inferior kind in proportion, for weaving all-wool cloth, ell wide 6d per yd., for weaving tow cloth, yard wide 4d per yd. and all other weaving in proportion. For weaving coverlids of the best kind 6s each and other coverlids in proportion thereto.

For tanning raw hides 2d a lb and skins in proportion, for making good men's and women's shoes 2s 10 per pr. and all other shoe-making in proportion, men's good neat-leather shoes 8s a pr., women's good neat-leather shoes 6s a pr., men's tailor work at 2s 2d per day, women's do. 1s per day, good sole leather 1s 3d per lb., curried leather in usual proportion to tanned hides.

West India rum by the hogshead 7s 3d per gal. including the hogshead, W.I. rum by the barrel 7s 5d per gal. and by the single gallon 8s 3d, do. by the quart 2s 1d, do by the pint 1s 1d, New England rum by the hogshead or barrel exclusive of the cask 4s 5d, do. by the single gallon 5s 1d, by the quart 1s 4d, by the pint 8d.

Good yard-wide tow cloth 2s 3d per yard and all other tow cloth in proportion to its width and quality, good yard-wide striped flannel 3s 6d and all other flannels in proportion, good all-wool men's wear wove ell 9s per yard well fulled and sheared, good yard-wide cotton and linen cloth 42 and other cotton and linen cloth of an inferior quality in proportion.

Doctors riding in their office 7d per mi., for keeping a horse one night or 12 hours 10d on good English hay, for the best English hay 1s 8d per cwt, for keeping a pair of oxen one night 1s, for turkeys, dung-hill fowls and ducks 4d per lb., for geese 3d per lb., for teaming work 1s 6d for every ton weight per mile, excepting from Northampton to the Northern Army for which may be taken 2s per mi.

A dinner of common meat-victuals and proper sauce and other conveniences 8d, for a dinner two dishes, roast and boiled 10d, for a supper of common meat-victuals and a breakfast 8d, for a supper or breakfast of milk 4d, for a night's lodging 3d, for a mug of good West India flip 11d, do. of N.E. rum 9d, W.I. rum by the half pint 8d, by the gill 4d, for a mess of oats, 2 quarts in a mess, 3d, good cider 2d 2qu by the mug,

Ox work in the summer season 1s 6d per day, do. in the winter 1s, horse-hire 2d per mi., for pasturing a horse 1s 6d per week, for pasturing a yoke of oxen 2s 4d per week, for a cow 10d per week, for keeping a cow in winter 1s 8d per week, for a man's day's work with four oxen and cart 7s per day, for keeping a horse in the win-

ter season 3s per week, for keeping a yoke of oxen in the winter season 4s, for a bushel of flax-seed clear of foul seed 6s.

For 1000 good merchantable bricks 18s per thousand, good merchantable shingles 12s per thousand, good merchantable men's saddles £2 14s, good merchantable women's saddles, deer leather or plush seat £3 12s, good bridles made of neat's leather 6s, good broad hoes 3s 6d, linen wheels 16s, woolen wheels 7s, white pine boards of the best kind £3 per thousand, common yellow pine boards £1 6s 8d per thousand, for making a pair of good cart wheels 33s, for floor boards of the best kind £1 12s per thousand, for oak and chestnut boards and common slit-work £1 4s per thousand.

For boarding a common laboring man 6s per week, men's labor by the year £19, for farming labor from the 1st of June to the 1st of Sept. at 8s per day; from the 1st of Sept. to the 15th of Nov. 2s 4d; from the 15th of Nov. to the 15th of March 1s 8d; from the 15th of March to the 1st of June 2s 4d.

Carpenters and house-joiners work from the 1st of April to the 1st of Oct. 3s 4d; from the 1st of Oct. to the 1st of April 2s 6d; mill-wrights from the 1st of April to the 1st of Oct. 4s; from the 1st of Oct. to the 1st of April 8s; mason's work from the 1st of March to the 1st of Oct. 3s 8d; from the 1st of Oct. to the 1st of March 2s 8d; for shoeing a horse round, steeled toe and heel 5s 4d; for shoeing a pair of oxen steeled toe and heel 9s.

Good shovels 4s each., for a falling axe well steeled 7s 3d, for a grass scythe well steeled 7s, good plough-shares well steeled 10d per lb., good refined iron 50s per cwt., good bloomery iron 30s per cwt. at the place of manufactorry.

Despite this effort, the value of paper money continued to depreciate and larger sums were required in exchange for labor and for the necessaries of life.

208. State debt of £1,300,000 plus £250,000 due to soldiers and officers, and about £1,500,000 owed toward the federal debt.

209. Gov. James Bowdoin—James Bowdoin, Governor from 1785–87 was a merchant and important revolutionary figure and a key participant in drafting Massachusettes' constitution. The dominant issue in his two terms was the continued high rate of inflation. Combined with strict debt laws, inflation brought many rural communities to the point of revolution. In August and September of 1786, farmers wearing the same uniforms they fought in during the Revolutionary War, took over courthouses in Springfield, Northhampton, Worcester, Concord, Taunton, and Great Barrington. Over the next five months, Bowdoin assembled 4,400 militiamen to vigorously suppress the revolt of 2,000 farmers and succeeded in breaking the rebellion in Februrary 1787, capturing 14 of the insurrection leaders who were sentenced to hang. His vigorous response to the rebellion led to his defeat in the 1787 election when he polled 21% of the vote against John Hancock. The returns to the legislature were equally decisive. Three-fourths of the House of Representatives and two-thirds of the Senate and Council were new members and belonged to the Bowdoin opposition. These election results emphatically demonstrated that public opinion was against the policy and measures of Bowdoin's administration.

210. DeForest and Bates, 126-27.

211. Sweet fern: a deciduous shrub of eastern North America with sweet scented fern-like leaves and tiny white flowers.

212. DeForest and Bates, 128-29.

213. Benjamin Lincoln (1733-1810) was Town Clerk and Justice of the Peace in Hingham and a leader in the County militia. He also served in the General Court and the Provincial Congress. He was a Major General in the Continental Army and com-

manded the Allied Army at the Battle of Yorktown and accepted the surrender sword from British General O'Hara, General Cornwallis' second in command.

214. Petersham: a town in Worcester County first settled in 1733 and incorporated in 1754.

215. DeForest and Bates, 133-35.

216. New Braintree, about 18 miles west of Worcester, adjoins Hardwick but is separated from it by the Wear river.

217. On 11 May 1778, Rev. Parkman wrote that "Squire Whipple about to move to New Braintree came to take his leave of us. Parting is not pleasant." On 13 May he wrote "Visit Mr. Potter and family who are lately come to live at Squire Whipples, and Mr. Charles Newton of _____ who accompanies to live in the same house with this latter family." It is not clear from Parkman's entries whether they were tenants or purchasers. The reference to parting not being pleasant does not refer to any personal conflict. It refers to Parkman's feelings about losing a friend, confidant, and strong supporter. Whenever Parkman had overnight business in New Braintree, he would lodge with the Whipples. For example he stayed with the Whipples on 15 March 1779 when traveling from Brookfield to New Braintree. The Whipples would also occasionally return to Westborough to attend services. Parkman unpublished diary, September 1777 - October 1778, 92; 1778-1802, 23.

218. Two days after the Whipples left, Parkman visited Mr. Potter and family and Mrs. Charles Newton who had moved into the Squire's house. *Parkman Family Papers, Sept. 1777 - Oct. 1778.*

219. New Braintree: In earlier years it was an Indian Town and military stronghold of considerable importance. The first white man to occupy the area was Thomas Barnes who received a Grant of 40 acres of woodland in 1704. He built a sawmill on Sucker Brook in 1709. *Historical Address, 150th Anniversary of New Braintree*, 1902, 16-19. [Hereafter *Historical Address.]*

220. In 1666 the Braintree (a large town south of Boston) Town Meeting passed the following resolution: "Whereas much of the best and most available arable surface is held by non-residents and citizens of Boston as a matter of speculation and by others in large farms that it is a source of great inconvenience to the permanent inhabitants of the Town, as they in their poverty are not able to pay the high rents asked, nor the necessary expenses of the Town; therefore, Resolved: to petition the General Court for an additional Grant of land." The Court granted them 6,000 acres "limited to one place, not prejudicing any Plantation or particular Grant." Fifty-one years passed before the legislature authorized the land be set aside and confirmed to Braintree as fulfillment of the original Grant. New Braintree is nearly in the shape of an isosceles triangle with sides of six miles and a base of nine. It is nearly in the center of the state and bound by Oakham and Barre on its northeast side, Hardwick on the northwest side (separated by the Ware river) and Brookfield and North Brookfield on its base or south line. It was incorporated as New Braintree in 1751. *Historical Address*, 20.

221. Thomas served New Braintree as Selectman, Town Agent, Leather and Hayrieve, Surveyor of Highways, Constable, on the Committee to Seat the Meeting House, the Committee to Provide for Schools, the Committee to Survey the Town Line, the Committee of Correspondence, the Committee to Provide a Preacher, Committee to Recruit Soldiers, Committee to Enforce Acts of the Legislature to Prevent Monopoly, Committee to Provide Necessaries for the Town's Continental Soldiers, Committee of Inspection of Debt, Committee to Estimate the Town's Cost of the War, Committee to Plan the Ordination of the New Minister, Committee to

Execute the Resolves of the Concord Convention, Committee to Settle the Minister's salary, Committee to Make a Scale for the Town's Use, and as Moderator of Town Meetings. *Town Minutes, New Braintree, Massachusetts 1751-1799* provided by Constance Small, Town Historian and Librarian to the author as an enclosure in a letter dated 21 April 1987.

222. The following toasts were drank to: 1) Those noble patriots convened in Congress. 2) His Excellency General Washington. 3) His most Christian Majesty, Louis XVI. 4) The Count de Grasse and the combined fleets. 5) General Nathaniel Greene with his veterans and heroes. 6) Peace and unanimity in the Allied Army. 7) May all malicious pimps of British George, and lovers of tyranny, be swept off with the besom of the Thirteen United States of America. [A besom is a broom, esp. one made of twigs.] 8) May that traitor Benedict Arnold, and all his accomplices, be suspended between heaven and earth, as unworthy of either. 9) May America maintain her independence until time shall be no more. 10) May those heroes, who have nobly bled in defense of their country be heard of in nations unknown, and ever be remembered in ages to come. 11) May peace on honorable terms diffuse itself throughout the continent of America, like the lustre of the rising sun. 12) May friendship universally extend, and actuate every human breast, throughout the world. 13) May consummate happiness be the reward of heroic actions. Rev. Wm. A. Benedict and Rev. Hiram A. Tracy, compilers, *History of the Town of Sutton, Massachusetts, From 1704 to 1876*. Published for the town by Sanford & Company. Press of Lucius P. Goddard, Worcester, 1878, 119-120.

223. New Braintree *Vital Records*, Deaths, 160.

224. To clean by beating or scraping with a swingle.

225. A lightweight two-wheeled carriage drawn by one horse.

226. *Worcester County Records*, 184: 367.

227. *Worcester Co. Records*, 574:191; Series A, Case 63836, 275:133; 30:41.

228. There are least four cemeteries in New Braintree including the large cemetery adjacent to the church. None of the Francis Whipple descendants appear to be buried in any of the others.

229. Capt. Thomas Whipple's stones states he died January 30, 1811 in the 80th year of his age. Mrs. Marthe Whipple's stone identifies her as "wife of Capt. Thomas Whipple. Part of the stone is missing and the only date visible is Feb. 18.

Mr. Nathum Whipple's stone states he died March 17, 1829. Age 68 years. Mrs. Lucinday Whipple is identified as the wife of Mr. Nathum Whipple. Died Oct. 8, 1825. Age 62. Moses Whipple's stone includes information on Luoy Fitts, formerly his wife. The stone states Moses died Oct. 25, 1799. Aged 33 yrs. Luoy Fitts Died May 2, 1853. Aged 88 years. (Nathum and Moses are Francis' grandsons.)

Six rows west and marked by a tall granite monument with inscriptions on each of four sides are: Thomas Whipple 14 January 1790 - 13 February 1874 and Eunice his wife 7 July 1790 - 28 July 1878. John C. Whipple 20 May 1825 - 23 Dec. 1899; Elizabeth Q. Allen, his wife 1 May 1825 - 27 Jan. 1908. Frank H. Whipple 23 April 1856 - 30 June 1944; Lucene C. wife, 16 Nov. 1849 - 14 Dec. 1883; Twin Infant Sons 24 Nov. 1883. Julia M. Whipple 8 March 1849 - 1 Oct. 1850; John M. Whipple 7 Nov. 1861 - 31 Dec. 1861; Freddie L. Whipple 28 Dec. 1866 - 1 April 1868. These are the parents and relatives of Frank H. Whipple, the man who was responsible for the walls, gates, and other improvements to the cemetery.

230. Mary Allen[7], Dr. Allen Oldfather[6], Rev. William Levi[5], Francis Rice[4], Levi[3], Francis, Jr.[2], Francis[1] Whipple.

CHAPTER ELEVEN

BENJAMIN WHIPPLE AND HEPZIBAH CROSBY

Benjamin*[5] *Whipple *(Francis*[4]*, Jonathan*[3]*, Joseph*[2]*, Matthew*[1]*, Matthew*[A]*) was born 23 April 1727 in Ipswich, Mass., died 30 April 1806 in Whipple Hollow, Rutland Co., Vermont and married Hepzibah Crosby 7 August 1749 at Westborough, Mass. He served in the French & Indian War from Hardwick, Mass., was an early settler in Bennington, Vermont where he became an Esquire and an early settler in Rutland, Vermont. He was a farmer and served as Selectman, Town Moderator, Constable, County Judge and five terms in the Vermont legislature. He helped draft Bennington's Declaration of Freedom and served in the Revolutionary War.*

Children of Benjamin and Hepzibah Whipple

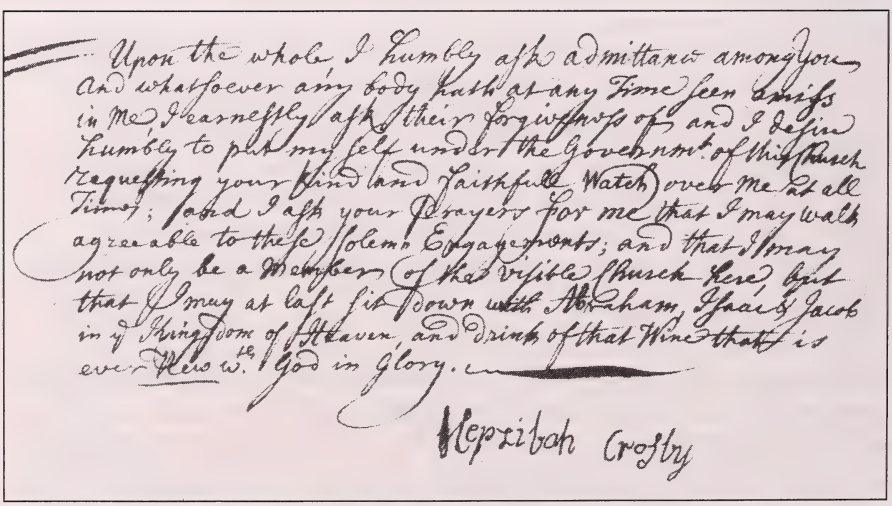
i.	*Nehemiah, born 25 March 1750; died 22 January 1809. Married Sarah Robert.*
ii.	*Hepzibah, born 1 July 1751; died 19 December 1837. Married Daniel Mills.*
iii.	*Sarah, born 1 July 1751; died 21 May 1818. Married Aaron Smith.*
iv.	*Abigail, born 21 June 1753; died about 1777. Married Phineas Kingsley.*
v.	*Benjamin (Rev.), born 16 September 1755; died 8 March 1813. Married (1) Silence Bundy (2) Sarah, maybe Sally Luther.*
vi.	*Prudence, born 27 July 1757. Married Ebenezer Pratt.*
vii.	*David, born 17 September 1759. Married Sarah Blanchard.*
viii.	*Elizabeth, born 24 March 1763. Married Aaron Reed.*
ix.	*Jonathan, born about 1764. Married Sarah (____).*
x.	*Persis, born 14 March 1768; died 28 May 1836. Married David Jackson.*

Born in Ipswich, Essex Co., Massachusetts April 23, 1727, Benjamin was seven when the family moved to Westborough, Worcester Co., Mass. where he spent the next 15 years of his life.[1] It was an active time and he was kept busy working on his father's farm, his grandfather's farm and corn mill, and, along with other Whipple family members, assisting their neighbor Rev. Ebenezer Parkman with a variety of chores on his farm.

Ben was 13 when he first appeared in Parkman's diary in July 1740. He and his uncle Edwards and Sam Bumpso were "mowing the ministerial meadow" on the 16th. When he was 17, Ben and Edwards were among 13 cutters and three ox cart teams to deliver 50 loads of wood to the Minister's door in February 1745. He was 20 in June 1747 when he spent a morning hoeing corn and beans which the Minister referred to as "a great kindness." Late December of the same year Parkman noted it was extremely cold "as the day gets up the wind rises—'tis as much as we can do to take care of ourselves and the children, provide for and tend the fires and the cattle'" and he expressed his gratitude to Ben for "getting wood out of the snow and cutting it for me." In July 1748 after the hay was cut, the preacher needed rakers "but only Benjamin Whipple came." In March 1749 Ben was among "several neighbors [who] got me a good pile of excellent solid wood."[2]

By the time he was 18 Ben was active in Westborough's Society of Young Men and he and Nathan Maynard[3] asked Parkman for permission to get a neighboring minister to preach to their Society. On December 31, 1747 Parkman preached "a seasonable message" to the Society, Eph. 5, 16, and noted: "Alas! How far have we been from rightly improving this precious talent." In May of 1749, Ben, Nathan, and Parkman's son Ebenezer asked the Reverend to grant permission for Daniel (last name unknown) to join their Society but the request was denied because Daniel had only "been but a little while among us."[4]

Hepzibah Crosby, Ben's future wife, was born in the neighboring town of Shrewsbury and was a live-in helper at the Parkman home doing baby


Upon the whole I humbly ask admittance among you and whatsoever any body hath at any Time seen amiss in me I earnestly ask their forgiveness of and I desire humbly to put my self under the Govern.mt of this Church Requesting your kind and faithfull Watch over me at all Times; and I ask your Prayers for me that I may walk agreeable to these solemn Engagements; and that I may not only be a Member of the visible Church here but that I may at last sit down with Abraham Isaac & Jacob in y.e Kingdom of Heaven, and drink of that Wine that is ever New w.th God in glory.

Hepzibah Crosby

Part of Hepzibah's confession of faith required before she could join The Westboro Church. American Antiquarian Society, Worcester, Mass.

sitting and household chores. Ben probably met her on one of his many work sessions assisting the family. They were married August 7, 1749,[5] four months after Hepzibah made her Confession of Faith and joined the Westborough church. According to Parkman the confession was "received from her partly in writing and partly from her own mouth." Hepzibah, born October 17, 1727,[6] was 21 and Ben was 22 when they wed. Following their marriage, they moved to Hardwick, Worcester Co., Massachusetts and about a year later returned to Westborough for a visit. Their first born, Nehemiah, was then six months old.[7]

HARDWICK, MASSACHUSETTS

Hardwick, on the western border of Worcester county, is near the territorial center of the state and midway between New Hampshire and Connecticut. It was an Indian hunting ground and one of the battlefields during King Phillip's War. Its waterways include the Ware and Swift rivers and several brooks and ponds.[8] The original Township was purchased from the Indians for £20 on June 25, 1687. The deed of sale, executed by Annagomok, a Nipmuch and Sachem[9] of the area known as Wombemesscook and by James and Simon, sons and heirs of Black James, Sachem of the Nipmug Country, was recorded in Hampshire county May 7, 1732 (35 years later). None of the original buyers settled on the land.[10]

On June 28, 1727, the General Court refused to allow heirs of the original buyers to settle on the Grant because "Elbows" and Palmer which were within the original Grant had already been settled. Finally, on November 24, 1732 they were given permission to establish Lambstown on 23,043 acres, a little more than a third of the land deeded them by the Indians. Sixteen persons had settled by June 12, 1733 and the first Town Meeting was February 9, 1737. Although never attacked, its exposed location on the frontier retarded settlement until 1736. It was incorporated as Hardwick on January 10, 1739/40. The first meeting of the new Town was March 5, 1738/39.[11] By the time the Whipples arrived, a grist and saw mill with water power from Moose brook had been built and a manufacturing plant that made potash kettles, tea kettles, pans, skillets, spiders, and other smaller culinary vessels began operation about 1750.[12]

Seven of Ben and Hepzibah's nine children were born in Hardwick between March 1750 and March 1768.[13] Her child-bearing spanned 22 years. She was 22 when Nehemiah, her first, was born and 44 when Persis, her last, was born. Nehemiah was only 15 months when twins Hepzibah and Sarah arrived. Abigail was born two years later and Benjamin, Jr. two years after Abigail so by the time Hepzibah had five children, the oldest

was only five-and-a-half. When the family moved to Bennington in 1761, David, the youngest was two and Nehemiah 11.

Jedediah Rice, Hardwick's physician preceded the Whipples to town and Joel Carpenter began his practice in March 1752 so the family had access to medical services.[14] The Town was divided into five parts and operated a school. The School Master moved from area to area to conduct classes.[15] In August 1758, when Nehemiah was eight, school was not held causing the Court of Sessions to fine the town. Because school resumed almost immediately, the charges were dismissed.[16] There was no post office and Hardwick mail was delivered to Worcester and the names of individuals receiving mail were advertised in the *Massachusetts Spy*. Some letters were also delivered by the Post Rider who distributed newspapers weekly through the county. Hardwick's Rider made a weekly trip to Worcester and back and to Northampton and back. Each trip took two days.[17] Ben was a man of some learning and it is possible he purchased *The New England Magazine of Knowledge and Pleasure* from Lieut. William Thomas, Northampton Post Rider, who sold it in 1758 and 1759. It was published monthly and included articles on religion, politics, poetry, liberty of the press, etc. The cost was 8 pence per issue.

As we learned in the chapter on Jonathan Whipple, Ben's grandfather, the Great Awakening movement spread through New England in the 1740s. The first record of the Separating Church in Hardwick was July 25, 1749, a month before Ben and Hepzibah arrived in town. The established Church asked a Council of Ministers for advice about "the dissatisfied brethren in our Church."[18] The Church wanted to know whether to dismiss or censure the dissenting members.[19] In December Parkman noted in his diary that he had received "sorrowful news from Hardwick that church members who had moved there from Westborough[20] had separated from the Church and set up John Roberts, late of Grafton, for their preacher, if not teacher."[21]

The Great Awakening caused many churches to split and those who left formed new churches known as "New Lights" and afterwards as "Separatists" or "Separates." The members who remained with the old Church denounced the Separatist as "enthusiastic and unscrupulous disorganizers;" while the Separatists referred to their former church colleagues as "Old Lights who were cold, lifeless, and dead, "utterly unworthy of the name of Christians[22]

From 1749 several references about dissenting members appear in Church records and on November 14, 1753 the Church named a Committee to meet with the Separated members to propose a reconciliation. After only four years in the community 26-year-old Ben was named to this important Committee. It's importance is emphasized by the fact that his

fellow committee members included the Church's two Deacons, Allen and Cooper, and Lieut. Mirick, John Bradish and Ichabod Stratton, Jr.[23] What the Committee accomplished does not appear in the record but interestingly, instead of reconciling the Separates, two of the Committee members—Whipple and Stratton—eventually joined them. Ben joined sometime before October 20, 1755.[24] The Hardwick Separatists organized a Church and probably erected a Meeting House on the northwest corner of the "ten acres," an area set aside for public use.[25] The site was subsequently "confirmed to them by the Proprietors."[26] Fifty individuals, including Benjamin and Hepzibah signed the Covenant.[27] So many of its members moved to Bennington, Vermont in 1761 that the Church as an organized body, including its Covenant and records, was transferred there, becoming the first organized church in what today is Vermont.

In the French and Indian War which began in 1753 though not formally declared until 1756, Hardwick furnished its full quota of officers and enlisted men. Ben, 30, served as a sergeant in the campaign from February 18 to December 24, 1756.[28] The Company was commanded by Capt. Samuel Robinson, 48. There were 24 Hardwick men in the company ranging in age from 17 to 48. Six died in action and one in service.[29]

THE NEW HAMPSHIRE GRANTS

In 1761 Ben moved the family to what was known at the time as the New Hampshire Grants and eventually became a part of Vermont. Though visited by the French explorer Samuel De Champlain (1567-1635) in 1609, what is now modern day Vermont remained a no man's land well into the eighteenth century. Even though extensive Grants were allotted, the French made little attempt to settle and the region served as a passageway for French and Indian raiding parties harassing English settlements to the south and east.[30] In an effort to protect its western settlements, Massachusetts established Fort Dummer near what became Brattleboro in 1724. This is accepted as the first permanent settlement on Vermont soil in which white men have lived continuously to the present. France relinquished its claim to Great Britain by treaty in 1763 but Britain was granting land in Vermont 22 years earlier.

King George's Grant to New Hampshire extended "due west cross the river (Merrimac) till it meets with our other governments." But since the eastern limits of New York Province had not been publicly proclaimed New Hampshire's Governor Benning Wentworth didn't know where to stop and New York's Governor George Clinton didn't know how far east he could go. On September 6, 1744, the Crown ordered Wentworth to maintain Fort Dummer, which was west of the Connecticut river. Thus

Wentworth assumed that New Hampshire extended as far west as Massachusetts and Connecticut.[31]

Wentworth granted Bennington, named in his honor, to himself and several of his Portsmouth neighbors in 1749 while admitting that part of the Township was in New York. He made 16 Grants in 1754, the year England went to war with France. After the British captured Fort Ticonderoga from the French in 1759 Wenworth made as many as 60 Grants in one year. New York was apathetic initially but Clinton finally told Wentworth to stop making Grants outside his jurisdiction. In 1760 Wentworth had 60 miles of Connecticut Valley surveyed and laid out three tiers of Townships on both side of the river. By the end of 1764 he had added 113 Townships in the disputed territory to the 15 he had previously granted. In all, he Granted some three million acres in what became Vermont. He gave himself an average of 500 acres in each Township, personally acquiring at least 64,000 acres. During this period, New York Colonial Governors granted Patents for more than two million acres, approximately one-quarter of which overlapped the Wentworth Charters.[32]

The King proclaimed the Connecticut river as the boundary line on July 20, 1764 and New York assumed that all of Wentworth's grants were null and void. This caused apprehension to the speculative holders of Wentworth's Grants so they set out to convince the settled farmers that the land had actually been a part of New Hampshire and nothing had been changed by the King's order except the jurisdiction and that New York was bound to respect their titles. The New York Ejectment Trials in 1770 rejected Wentworth's titles as evidence in the dispute between the two states and New Hampshire Grant settlers were unable, in most instances, to purchase their Grants by payment of additional fees to New York so they resorted to violence to defend their titles.

When the King's July 1764 Order in Council was issued, Bennington was mostly log cabins set in fields still full of stumps, a saw mill, a grist mill, primitive roads, two good frame houses, a substantial Church led by the Rev. Jedediah Dewey, a Separatist Minister from Westfield, Massachusetts and the Catamount Tavern. Part of the Township intruded on land that had been granted by New York in 1739 so the New Hampshire grantees had no right to land west "of the 20-mile line." Other troublesome Grants were in towns close to Bennington and the village became the focal point of the ensuing discontent and turbulence between the New Hampshire Grants and the "Yorkers."[33]

The radicals among the Yankees living west of the Green Mountains formed the Green Mountain Boys at Bennington in 1770. Ben was among their number. Led by Ethan Allen, they escalated their challenges to New York authority and their resistance became more widespread, bolder, and

better organized. Thus while New York owned the Grants it could not govern them[34] resulting in continued speculation in Vermont lands which were readily available for pennies per acre after 1764.[35] The Bennington headquarters of the Green Mountain Boys was Stephen Fay's Catamount Tavern, a square two-story building with barn and stable. Its sign on a tall pole in front was a Catamount (wildcat) with barred teeth snarling defiance toward the New York border.

When the American Revolution began inhabitants of the New Hampshire Grants ceased their hostility against New York and supported the colonial cause against England.[36] On the night of May 9, 1775, less than a month after Lexington and Concord, Ethan Allen, who had been joined by Benedict Arnold, captured Fort Ticonderoga with 83 followers. The largest and most formidable fortification in the country was taken without resistance from a sleeping British force of about 50 men.[37] On the twelfth, troops led by Vermont's Capt. Seth Warner captured Crown Point[38] and turned over its nearly 150 cannons to George Washington which he used to drive the British from Boston the next winter.[39]

Distractions caused by the Revolutionary War allowed residents of the Grants to determine their political destiny. With no New York government present in the area leaders in the Grants declared themselves "in a state of nature," free to follow the example of the 13 colonies when they severed ties with England. The idea of independence was gradually articulated in a series of Conventions throughout the state. A Constitution was adopted at a Convention in Westminister in January 1777 and the name Vermont was made official in June 1777. The Constitution provided for a representative Legislature, a functioning and responsible Court system, and a wartime Administration.[40] The final incentive to secession came on April 22, 1777 when the new Constitution of New York was published. A large majority of residents in the New Hampshire Grants found many of its elements unacceptable.

A six-day Convention in Windsor (July 2-7) again asserted Vermont's independence. Windsor delegates were unaware that the Continental Congress, under pressure from New York, had rejected statehood for the New Hampshire Grants on June 30. Consequently, from July 8, 1777 to March 4, 1791, Vermont was a completely independent but tottering Republic.[41] The first general election in the new Republic was on March 3, 1778. The General Assembly convened March 12 to count the votes for state officers and Tom Chittenden was inaugurated as Governor Friday the thirteenth.[42]

Ultimate union with the 13 states was the goal of most Vermonters but the war created more urgent matters for those states to consider. Consequently, the British approached some of Vermont's leaders and offered to

make the state a Crown dependency if it would join their cause. The offer was declined and Vermont maintained its sovereignty for nearly 14 years longer.[43] Its government issued bills of credit, coined money, regulated weights and measures, established post offices, naturalized citizens of other states and countries, and corresponded with foreign governments.[44] The Treaty of Peace signed at Paris September 3, 1783 included Vermont in the territory belonging to the United States but until her admission as the fourteenth state, Vermont was what the legend on her copper coins declared her to be, "The Republic of the Green Mountains" and independent of every other government.[45]

Vermont steadily gained the friendly confidence of neighboring states and the dispute with New York over land grants was settled in October 1790 for $30,000.[46] It ratified and adopted the Constitution of the United States at Bennington in January 1791 and on March 4 Congress unanimously passed an Act to admit it to the Union as the fourteenth state, the first to be added to the original thirteen.[47] The Whipples undoubtedly participated in an all-day celebration in Rutland in March when news was received that the state had been admitted to the Union. Among the eloquent toasts on that occasion: "To the union of Vermont with the United States. May it flourish like our pines and continue as unshaken as our mountains."[48]

BENNINGTON, VERMONT

Bennington's settlement was begun by Capt. Samuel Robinson of Hardwick who was attracted to the site when he camped there on his return from the French and Indian War.[49] His followers were families who had separated from the original Church in Hardwick. They settled along the broad terrace of the slope now known as Monument Avenue.

Robinson sold Benjamin Whipple one-quarter part of the south east quarter of the original Right Number 21 in the Township on June 15, 1761 for £7 14 shillings 8 pence. Silas Newton and Jonas Fay were witnesses to the transaction which was recorded in June 1763 when Robinson acknowledged the sale before Coram Walter Bryent, Justice of the Peace for the Province of New Hampshire.[50]

Land speculation was colonial America's most popular game and investors bought Wentworth chartered land rather than the more respectable but more expensive New York Patents on the chance that New York might eventually validate at least some of the Charters.[51] Ben became a land speculator as early as August 20, 1761 when Wentworth granted the Town of Glossenbury consisting of 23,040 acres [six miles square] to Ben, Samuel Robinson, John Frasse, Daniel Warner, James Fay

and 63 other [an average of 294.71 acres each].[52] There were at least 20 land petitions issued by New Hampshire in 1767. Ben was one of 96 along with the Warners, Robinsons, Fays, and Walbridges to receive one [Petition No. 19]. The Town of Littleton comprising 23,040 acres was chartered on November 8, 1780 to Ben and 64 associates. The name was changed to Waterford on March 9, 1797.[53]

He was among petitioners who acquired townships in Two Heroes Township, Grand Isle county in October 1779,[54] in Waterford Township, Caledonia county in November 1780,[55] and in Weston Township, Windsor county in October 1781.[56] His name was on a petition of October 18, 1769 requesting that land west of the Connecticut river be reannexed to New Hampshire.[57] He was also a petitioner for a township south of Shoreham (present Orwell) in May 1779 and for a tract adjacent to Peacham and the Connecticut river in June 1779.[58] In October of 1780 his name was on the petition to be granted Grovton (Groton) and for the township east of St. George in October 1781. The author does not know if any of these grants were made.[59] He was also active in Rutland land transactions buying and selling 17 properties between 1782 and 1803.[60]

The first houses in Bennington were minimal, probably two rooms on the main floor—a small bedroom and a great kitchen – in which the family lived, worked, cooked, ate, and received company. Because of the large number of children, the Whipples probably added a large attic which served as a bedroom for the older children. There would have been a front and back door and a door between the kitchen and bedroom. Visitors usually pulled the latch-string on the front door and entered. Nobody tapped except the Sheriff, the Constable, the Tax Collector, and the Parson.

The church custom then was to use a "meeting seed" (dried caraway) to help endure the religious rigors of the Sabbath. All family members, from children to gray heads, chewed a small quantity of caraway seed and mixed it with saliva during church service. How the custom got started is unknown but since our ancestor's use of common herbs was far greater than ours, someone discovered that chewing the dried seeds helped them get through the lengthy Sabbath services.[61]

Bennington's first Town Meeting whose minutes have been preserved was held February 11, 1762.[62] The settlement acknowledged fealty to New Hampshire in a meeting March 31, 1762.[63] The first church organized in Vermont was the Church of Christ in Bennington—the original designation without any denominational identification.[64] The minutes of the organizational meeting December 3, 1762 show that the Churches of Christ from Hardwick and Sunderland, Massachusetts agreed to join and become one body.[65] John Fassett was named Clerk. Among the members were Benjamin and Hepzibah Whipple.[66] On May 24, 1763 the Church

asked the Reverend Mr. Jedidiah Dewey to be its Minister and he assumed his duties on August 14. On September 12, it voted to unite with the Church at Westfield, Massachusetts, Dewey's former Separatist Church.[67] Approximately 100 individuals signed the Church's Covenant.[68]

An original Meeting House and School House was built in 1763 and a subscription was undertaken in October 1768 to build a new Meeting House. A further subscription was needed in 1774 to finish it. The new building was two story, 60 feet by 40 feet with no steeple. School was kept in the upper story. There were galleries on three sides and a sounding board over the pulpit which was in the middle of the west side. Three doors and a porch were on the east side toward the Burying Ground. A tier of wall pews was complemented by two tiers of square pews on each side of the main aisle. The square pews were ornamented with little railings in place of a top panel. Singers sat in the front seat of the gallery opposite and on either side of the pulpit. The Hessian soldiers captured in the Battle of Bennington in August 1777 were housed here and the first Legislature of Vermont held its June 1778 Session here.[69]

In the fall of 1767 the Stockbridge Indian tribe challenged ownership of 12 or more townships, including Bennington, chartered by Wentworth. Ninety-four residents of Bennington, including Ben, appointed Rev. Jedidiah Dewey, Capt. John Fassett, and Stephen Fay to negotiate with the Indians on their behalf and agreed to pay their share according to their Proprietorship established by the original Charter as well as costs to Dewey, Fassett, and Fay. Their agreement to pay Indians for land was signed November 13, 1767.[70]

Agriculture was the leading industry of the first settlers. Their only food supply was to grow it. They cut trees, cleared a patch, burned the timber and brush, and planted corn and wheat among the stumps and began to acquire stock.

Two years after the Whipple's settled, Ben's leadership abilities were rewarded by his Bennington neighbors and he was elected Selectman in 1763, 1767, 1768.[71] Among his first duties as Selectman was to recommend on April 18, 1763 the location to lay out a highway. On March 27, 1764 he voted as Selectman to approve a road "beginning at the sawmill and running southerly through Samuel Safford's land then through Esq. Robinson's lands then through Benj. Whipple's land, and then into John Smith's land into the road that comes from Pownall line the road to be two rods wide."[72]

He was elected Moderator three times: 1768, 1769; 1773;[73] A major item on the March 15, 1773 Agenda was whether "the Town would give liberty to inoculate for the small pox." The majority vote was no. The Town Meeting of February 18, 1777 voted that anyone who was inoculated for

small pox without permission of the Town Committee chosen for that purpose will be fined £20; anyone inoculated found on any public road or any house not his own for five days after being inoculated will be fined £5; anyone with small pox to go more than 30 feet from the Pest House without a certificate from the Committee will be fined £20; any person with small pox found on the main north and south and east and west roads through town "or on the road from the Meeting House northwest to Mr. Brakenridge through town" will be fined £20.[74]

He also served as Fence-viewer in 1773;[75] Tithingman in 1764 and 1770;[76] Highway Surveyor 1764,[77] 1768,[78] 1770,[79] 1772, and 1774;[80] Deerriff[81]and Schoolwright Committee in 1776;[82] and Constable in 1769.[83] He received his cattle mark in 1766[84] and sold land to Henry Walbridge in 1764.[85] Ben was serving as Constable in December 1769 when the Selectmen instructed him, "In his Majesty's name. . . to warn and notify Joseph Horfford and his wife Sarah and their son Stephen and their daughter Sarah forthwith to depart this town." After serving the warning, he informed the Selectmen on December 8 that he had "executed the... warrant according to law or intention of law."[86]

Ben, Henry Walbridge, Jonas Fay, and Sam Safford objected to the highway on the west side of Ben's house as laid out and accepted because of a "bad hill and the crookedness of it" made it inconvenient. They petitioned the Town on April 15, 1772 to replace it with one going east of Ben's house and then "northward by his barn till it strikes Mill road on the edge of his land." The record does not show what action was taken on the petition.[87]

Benjamin was a first corporal in the first Company of Militia organized in Bennington October 24, 1764.[88] He was on the five-man Committee to propose the "Bennington Declaration for Freedom" in 1775.[89] Thirty-four men, including Ben's son David, joined the five Committee members in signing the Declaration. While not calling for independence from Great Britain, it sought reconciliation with the mother country **if** the American colonists were given all the rights of Englishmen in England. This was a gutsy act considering the capture of Fort Ticonderoga, the Battle of Bunker Hill, and a formal Declaration of War by the Continental Congress, were still a few weeks away. These men in the wilderness, far removed from the actual strife, knew that their signatures were neither idle nor meaningless. At least 27 of the 39, including David Whipple, fought in the Battle of Bennington and other conflicts of the Revolution, some of them dying. Descendants of these signers should take pride in the fact that their ancestors were among the first to declare their rights as English-men in New England.[90]

While no specific date has been found for the family's move to Rutland, the last reference to Ben in the Bennington Town records was

The Bennington Declaration for Freedom

May 1775

PERSUADED that the Salvation of the rights & liberties of America depends, under God, on the firm Union of its inhabitants, in a Vigorous prosecution of the measures necessary for its Safety, and convinced of the necessity of preventing the Anarchy and Confusion which attend a dissolution of the Powers of Government; we, the freeholders and inhabitants of the town of Bennington, on the Newhampshire Grants, in the County of Albany and Province of N. York, being greatly alarmed at the avowed design of the Ministry to Raise a revenue in America, and Shocked by the bloody scene now acting in the Massachusetts bay; do in the most solemn manner resolve never to bee Slaves; and do associate, under all the ties of Religion, honor, & love to our Country, [to] adopt & Endeavor to Carry into execution whatever Measures may be recommended by [the] Continental Congress or resolved upon by our Provincial Convention for [the purpose] of preserving our Constitution and opposing the Execution of Several arbitrary and oppressive acts of the british Parliament until a reconciliation between Great Britain and America on Constitutional principles (which we most ardently desire) can be obtained; and that we Will in all things follow the Advice of our General Committee Respecting the purposes aforesaid, the preservation of Peace and Good Order, and the Safety of individuals and Private Property.

Ebn. Wood
Elijah Dewey
Nathan Clark
Benj. Whipple
Jonathan Scott, Jr.
} *Committee*

Jeremiah his mark Carpenter
Josiah Fuller
David Bates
Eleazer Harwood
Benja. Hopkins
Thos. Jewett
Nathaniel Lawrence
Samuel Atwood, Jr.
David Whipple
Cornelius Cady
Ephraim Wood
John Smith
Samuel Smith
Ephraim Smith
Samuel Atwood
Reuben Bass
Elisha Higgins
Griffin his mark Briggs
Jonathan Scott
Archelas Tupper

Stephen Hopkins
Josiah Brush
David Safford
Roswel Mosley
Saml. Montague
Gideon Spencer
Thomas Tupper
Lebbeus Armstrong
Saml. Blackmer
Cyrus Clark
Joseph Safford
Berijah Hulbert
Ithamar Hebard

The Bennington Declaration for Freedom May 1775. Nathan Clark, Jr. was also a signer. Benjamin Whipple was on the Committee to draft the Declaration. Courtesy of the Vermont Historical Society.

March 20, 1777 when the Town "accepted a road that tied into a road that goes by Mr. Whipples."[91] When he returned to Westborough for a visit in March 1777, Rev. Parkman noted it in his diary.[92] He also recorded that Ben had written a letter to his brother-in-law Nathan Maynard of Westborough in October 1778.[93] The list of Bennington Proprietors on September 10, 1778 included 83 names.[94] Ben was not on the list so the move was probably been March 1777 and September 1778.

RUTLAND, VERMONT

Ben moved his family to Rutland county either shortly before or shortly after Vermont became an independent state in 1777. Hepzibah died May 10, 1779 making Ben a widower for his last 27 years. She never knew all he did to help the town, county, and state evolve. He purchased 100 acres from James Mead, Rutland's first settler, in 1778.[95] The land was in West Rutland bordering on the Pittsfield line. Mead signed the deed March 14. Ben signed the acknowledgement March 31, 1780. The deed wasn't recorded until May 9, 1782.[96] A 1794 deed from David Whipple to Benjamin mentions the "old log house" which seems to be near the south line of Lot #20 on the first division right of John Boylston. According to historian Henry Hall, the Whipple family lived on the site later occupied by William Bowen in 1854.[97]

Rutland the town was located in the Otter Creek Valley near the loftiest peaks of the Green Mountains.[98] It was a favorite route for Indian travel and was known as rich beaver country. Its Charter was issued by Gov. Wentworth September 7, 1761, three years before the end of the French and Indian War. It became an active frontier community within a few years.[99]

The first Proprietor's meeting for which records exist was the second Tuesday in October 1773.[100] Little public business of importance was conducted between 1775-80. However, early in 1779, acting in his capacity of Justice of the Peace, Ben issued a warrant to arrest Hilkiah Grout, a J.P. from Weathersfield, N.Y., for pretending "to officiate in this state in the character of a Justice of the Peace, not having authority from the freemen of this state as stipulated by the Constitution."[101]

In 1780 the Town accepted a bill of "220 Continental dollars" for the necessary charges of Benjamin Whipple, Roswell Post, and Gersholm Beach for "attendance upon a late Convention."[102] He was empowered by the Town in 1781 to "draw out of the Town treasury money to assist him and those connected with him in carrying on his law suits against William Roberts, a large land owner, concerning a highway not in dispute." The Supreme Court ruled for Roberts but 13 of the Town's promi-

nent citizens refused to pay their part of Robert's judgment. The matter was finally settled in 1785 when Roberts relinquished £35 of his judgment.

Rutland had 134 freeholders in 1780 including Benjamin and his sons Nehemiah and David. Ben was listed fourth in the freeholder list.[103] Ben, Joseph Bowker, Roswell Post, James Mead, and Thomas Lee were elected Selectmen in 1782.[104] The Town voted on July 29 to "build two bridges across East Creek." A tax of one-half penny on the Pound on the list of 1783 "to be paid in labor, grain, beef, port, or plank" was voted to pay for the bridges. At the annual meeting that year the Selectmen were directed to divide the Town into school districts and to "erect stocks near the Meeting House.[105]

Ben was re-elected Selectman at the Town Meeting in 1783 along with Thomas Lee, Jonathan Carpenter, John Johnson, and Samuel Williams.[106] In December 1782 the Town voted "to not accept a road running from the road by Colonel Mead's to Benjamin Whipple's hog pen."[107] If Ben's hog pen was to be the end of the road, it is easy to understand the vote. He also occasionally served as Pro-Tem Clerk.[108]

In September 1783 the Town voted not "to comply with the Resolves of a Convention concerning the number of towns to be included in the community" but voted to comply with the Resolves "concerning the place for the Court House and jail." It also voted "to erect a Meeting House near where the old Meeting House now stands, as shall be agreed upon."[109]

Rutland county was incorporated February 22, 1781 and included practically all of the western half of the state north of Bennington county.[110] It was the Shire Town (county seat) from 1784 on.[111] Ben was among the first county officers serving as Assistant (side) Judge along with Joseph Bowker, Rutland, and Thomas Porter of Tinmouth at the first Session of the County Court.[112] He served in this position from 1781-86.[113] Side Judges assisted Increase Mosely, Chief Judge of the Superior Court.[114] In addition to the Chief Judge, any three of the Side Judges could hold Court. Two Judges had power to adjourn the Court. The Chief Judge, or in his absence, any three Side Judges, could call a Special Court. Judge Mosely, of advanced age, had served as a Judge in Connecticut. He wore a large white wig in the Court Room which, with his advanced age, made him appear quite venerable. Dr. Marvin who succeeded him as Chief Judge wore a military cocked hat when seated at the bench. A large portly man, he made a majestic appearance.[115]

Most of the early judges were not educated in law but possessed influence in their own neighborhoods because of their talent in transacting ordinary business.[116] John A. Graham, the first Acting Attorney in Vermont, was admitted to the Bar in 1785, the year he moved to Rutland. He was 21.[117]

County officers met in Solomon Bingham dwelling in Tinmouth. He was an inn keeper with a large log house with two rooms. The Court occupied one room, Bingham and his family the other. When the jury retired to decide a case, it went to a log barn about 8 or 10 rods from the home to deliberate. The jail of hewn logs was about a mile away. The logs were locked together at the corners.

When Rutland county was organized the only transportation was to walk or ride horse-back. The only wheeled vehicles were ox carts and rough lumber wagons and the roads were such that they could not be driven faster than a man could walk. There were a few sleighs and sleds used in the winter but virtually no roads—paths is a better word. When trees were cut to create a road, "the stumps, roots, stones, knolls, and hollows remained to be run over." It was a major task for the new settler to get to Rutland county.[118]

Rutland's first Court House was built in 1784. It was a 2-room building. The west room was the Court Room and had a floor and elevated seats on the north side for the Judges and benches for jurors, witnesses, and spectators. The east room had no floor and served all other purposes of the Court House. A log jail was built a few yards northwest. The Legislature met there in 1784-86. A new Court House was built in 1792.[119]

The whipping post, was an important part of the punishment dispensed by the early courts. Convicted prisoners were stripped to the waist, tied to the ring in the whipping post, and lashed with a cat-o-nine tails. The Judge determined the number of stripes. For example, Canfill Wood was sentenced to "15 stripes on the naked body" while A. Carpenter received 39 stripes. Their crime was counterfeiting and the penalty was carried out in Rutland on January 15, 1785.[120]

Fort Rutland was built in 1775 and the Town became a northern outpost of the Revolutionary War. It was also the headquarters for state troops in 1778. Rutland is also home of the statute to the Green Mountain Boy with musket and powder and horn. Thomas Rowley of Danby, Minstrel of the Green Mountain Boys, celebrated the resistance to New York authority in the early years of Rutland's existence with the following:

West of the Mountains Green Lies Rutland fair;
The best that e're was seen For soil and air. We
value not New York, with all their powers; For
here we'll stay and work. The land is ours."[121]

Vermont established its Post Office Department in 1784, seven years before it was admitted to the Union (1791). Its purpose was to "promulgate the laws by conveying timely notice to the freemen of the state of all Pro-

prietary proceedings and other matters of importance." Five post offices were established: Rutland, Bennington, Brattleboro, Windsor, and Newbury. Post Riders received 2 pence per mile. Frederick Hill was Rutland's Postmaster in 1791 when Vermont was admitted to the Union and Nathaniel Grove assumed the job October 1, 1796.[122]

Rutland's first newspaper, the *Herald of Vermont-Rutland Courier* was established by Anthony Haswell on April 1, 1793. James Lyon started the *Farmer's Library—Vermont Political and Historical Register* later in 1793. It became the *Rutland Herald* in 1794 with a subscription rate of 9 shillings per annum "to those to whom we send the paper ourselves; 7 shillings and sixpence to those who call at the office and take them."[123] The *Rural Magazine—Vermont Repository*, edited by Rev. Samuel Williams, was first published in January 1795 with the final issue published in December 1796. Newspapers were used to advertise for runaway apprentices. In March 1795, Isaac Hill of Mt. Holly advertised a runaway boy and offered "one peck of ashes" for his apprehension. Newspapers were delivered by men on horseback. In January 1796 Abraham Sprague announced that he would "ride from the printing office in Rutland through Ira, Castleton, Fairhaven, Westhaven, Benson, and Orwell. . . every morning carrying papers to subscribers.[124]

Rutland's first physician was Dr. Jacob Ruback who was born in Prussia. He was in the August 1777 Battle of Bennington and came to Rutland soon after British General John Burgoyne's defeat at Saratoga in October 1777. He remained until 1782 and was appointed Surgeon to the Vermont troops in 1798.[125]

In response to a smallpox outbreak in 1802-03 the Town authorized the Selectmen to license one or more "inoculation houses" to prevent its spread. The Town also gave them authority to establish regulations "they think necessary and proper" to control the disease.[126]

Prior to 1807 early physicians also did dental work. They wrapped instruments known as "turnkeys" in a silk pocket handkerchief and wrenched out decaying teeth. In June 1807 D. Rosetter, a "surgeon dentist" from New York, advertised in the *Rutland Herald* that he would continue at Gordon's Tavern until June 20. "Persons who have lost their front teeth may now receive professional assistance for their replacement."[127] If you were unfortunate enough to run a nail in your foot, the recommended treatment was to "put on beef's gall or burn black greased wool and steam your foot and bind on the cinders, or put on a poultice of wheat brand and vinegar."[128] A major stop for travelers from Vergennes, Vermont to Boston beginning in 1802 was Major Cheney's tavern half way between Rutland and Pittsford.[129]

The Town was divided into two parishes on October 22, 1787 and a

Church established in the east parish on October 5, 1788 with 37 members from Pittsford, West Rutland, and Poultney. The Church was established "upon the plan of the Convention of the West District of Vermont, which was supposed to be agreeable to the gospel." A petition submitted to the Legislature that same year by inhabitants of Whipple Hollow asked to be allowed to establish a parish to be named "Orange Parish." The request was refused but the residents organized anyway, built a Meeting House, and employed Rev. Abraham Carpenter as pastor. Known as a strict Congregationalist, he came from Plainfield, N.H. and remained with the Orange Parish until his death in September 1797.[130]

Rutland was described in 1795 by John A. Graham, its first lawyer, as being about 60 miles from Bennington located on Otter Creek between Killington and the Ira mountains. It was divided into east and west parishes with a three-mile long main street on the east side. Federal-Square, an area of about five English acres, was in the Town center. There was a wooden Court House in front of Federal-Square where Sessions of the General Assembly were held alternately with Windsor.[131] The U.S. District Court, the Vermont Supreme Court, the Court of Common Pleas, and the Court of Probate for the Rutland District also met there. The jail is about 100 yards south of Federal Square on the west side of Main street. On each side of the Square and on Main street are some handsome and elegant houses.

The upland is filled with lime-stone, the low lands abound with clay. The intervale lands on the creek are of deep rich soil and produce crops of hay and Indian corn. The uplands produce wheat, rye, oats, barley, beans, peas, hemp, and flax. There are two great falls nearby – Medes and Sotherland Falls. Mr. Osgood erected a corn mill on Otter Creek in 1794. There is a printing office, an oil mill, and a hat manufacturer, a large brewery, and a manufactory of nails. Water is conveyed from the mountains in wooden pipes laid about two feet under ground. Timber includes pine, maple, hemlock, and birch. Pot and pearl ash are made in great abundance. Wolf and bear often descend from the east mountains to kill sheep. Land prices varied from 20 shillings to £60 an acre. Farmers on the west side of town are better husbandmen than those on the east[132]

By 1795 the following were doing business in town: Tobridge Maynard was the saddler, James Daviss and William Leadwell were clothiers, Joseph Munn kept the Franklin Tavern near the Courthouse and Crafts and Ingalls operated a general mercantile business adjacent to Munn's tavern. Thomas Hooker advertised "a large and general assortment of drugs, medicines, etc." Eben Mussey advertised "well-tanned sole and upper leather, skins and boot legs of superior quality" while Pepoon, Fuller & Co. advertised "an assortment of dry goods, groceries, crockery, and

hardware." David Stevens advertised the opening of "the boot and shoe making business" and offered credit "till the first of sleighing." William Storer was a silversmith, Samson Ladd a carpenter and joiner, and John and William Smith were blacksmiths. Joseph Atley was a distiller. A bookstore was part of the *Herald* office.[133]

There was little growth in the village for several years. The potash and pearl ash manufacture was of considerable importance and provided a means of exchange between farmers and merchants when money was scarce. The land had to be cleared and the forests burned, so the source of this product was a natural one. The village of West Rutland had little mercantile or manufacturing prominence until the marble industry was developed and after it was determined that the West Rutland-Proctor area contained one of the richest and most productive marble deposits in the United States.[134] About 1807 a quarry was opened in West Rutland-Whipple Hollow on a farm owned by Timothy Brockway. It operated until 1850 and in 1884 the True Blue Marble Company opened a new quarry near the old one. Quarrying began here on a small scale about 1844.[135]

REVOLUTIONARY WAR SERVICE

Ben had extensive Revolutionary War service and is found on various payrolls for seven Alarms and twice as Muster Master between 1777 and 1782.[136] His sons Nehemiah and David served with him in four of those Alarms and son Jonathan in one. His first period of service was in Capt. John Warner's company in Lieut. Col. Herrick's regiment of Rangers. There were 40 men in the company and Ben served 108 days entering August 18 and discharged December 3, 1777. He was paid £3 12 shillings. He was in Capt. Simeon Wright's company in Col. Gideon Warren's regiment of militia from November 7-13 1778.[137]

He was called to service on three occasions in 1780: He was one of 44 men in Warren's regiment and Wright's company on a Scout to Lake Champlain against Crown Point and then to Fort Ticonderoga the last of March; one of 40 men in Capt. John Spafford's company, Col. Ebenezer Allen's reg't of milita serving eight days August 4-11 and received 10 shillings 8 pence in pay and 8 shillings 4 pence for subsistence and mileage; and 15 days in Capt. Nathan Blanchard's company, Col. Allen's regiment for an Alarm beginning October 12 and ending November 12. He served 15 days and was paid £1 6 shillings 8 pence in pay and subsistence.[138]

He was only called to service once in 1781 serving in Blanchard's company, Col. Thomas Lee's regiment of milita for service at Castleton in Rutland county October 21 through October 30. He was a Drummer and

received 17 shillings 8 pence for his 10 days of service. The Legislature commissioned him Lieutenant on February 25, 1782 and appointed him Muster Master of the troops to be raised on the west side of the Green Mountains. He was paid 12 shillings on August 6 for service as Muster Master for Col. Lee's regiment.[139]

While the date of Ben's appointment as Justice of the Peace has not been found he was serving in that position in Bennington as early as January 30, 1775.[140] Upon becoming a Justice, he was accorded the title of Esquire, a lifetime title strictly enforced and consciously acknowledged. The state confiscated and sold Tory estates beginning the summer of 1777 and Ben was appointed a Commissioner to examine claims against these estates December 29, 1778.[141] He also served as a Commissioner to review and examine claims of creditors to other estates[142] and was a witness to various wills.[143]

According to the 1790 Vermont U.S. Census, the following Whipples were living in Rutland County: Benjamin: husband and wife only. Since Hepzibah died in 1779, this suggests Ben had remarried although no record has been found of a second marriage. Nehemiah: eight family members, two white males 16 and older, 2 white females 16 and younger, 4 white females. Jonathan: two males and two females. Benjamin, Jr.: a wife, four males under 16, and three daughters. David: a wife, one son under 16 and three daughters. They were all identified as living in Rutland Town.

Abner: a family of three lived in Pittsford Town. James: a family of three in Castleton Town. Ethan: a family of five in Fair Haven Town. Whipples living in Bennington county: John: a family of nine in Stamford City. Ezra: A family of nine in Sunderland Town. Elijah: a family of 11 in Shaftsbury Town. The following lived in Windham county. Joliez: a family of three in Athenstown. John: a family of four in Dummerston Town. Moses: a family of five in Rochester Town.

SERVICE IN THE VERMONT LEGISTLATURE[144]

Benjamin served five consecutive terms in the Vermont General Assembly: 1780, 81, 82, 83, 84, serving more terms than any other Rutland county Representative up to that time. Every Town was entitled to at least one Representative. Towns, like Rutland, with over 80 taxpayers were entitled to two.

Legislators, Justices, Judges, and state officers were chosen annually in September by the freemen. In addition to the political excitement, wrestling matches and feats of strength enlivened election day and candidates dispensed pies, cakes, crackers, cheese, and spruce beer to the hungry and thirsty. Following the announcement of the results, the winning

Legislative candidates invited friends to help themselves to what remained.[145]

The first Session of the General Assembly was held at Windsor March 12, 1778. It considered itself the state's supreme authority with power to overrule the Courts and the Executive. The members were a hardy and independent group, most with little or no experience in legislation. Important Acts and Resolves were usually prepared in advance and Ira Allen, both State Treasurer and Surveyor General and Ben's old friend from Bennington, was a major influence on the members.[146]

Ben, Lieut. Roswell Post, Rutland's other member, and 64 others, took their oath of office (Ben's first) on October 12, 1780 in Bennington. He was 53. His father Francis was 41 when he began his first term. Before being seated he agreed to the religious test required by Section Nine of the Vermont Constitution:

> "*I do believe in one God, the creator and governor of the universe, the rewarder of the good and punisher of the wicked, and I do acknowledge the Scriptures of the Old and New Testament to be given by divine inspiration and own and profess the Protestant religion. And no further or other religious test shall ever, hereafter, be required of any civil officer or magistrate in this State.*"[147]

In addition to the House, the Assembly included a Council of which Joseph Bowker of Rutland was a member. Other Counselors included Ben's old friends Moses Robinson, John Fassett, Jr., and Ira Allen. The Bennington Representatives were also old friends: Samuel Robinson, Jr. and Ebenezer Walbridge. Thomas Chandler was elected Speaker. Thomas Chittenden was Governor, Benjamin Carpenter, Deputy Governor, and Ira Allen, Treasurer.

One of the first Acts of the Session was to pass a Resolution that provided that "no one born in the U.S. was to be considered a foreigner." The day after the Session opened, Ben was appointed to a Committee of five "to make alternations they judge necessary" in the law which provided for "removing disaffected persons from the frontiers." The law applied to persons living in frontier towns who refused to assist in defending the settlements and who were suspected of holding "secret and traitorous correspondence with... and harbored and concealed enemies of Vermont and the United States." Anyone a Town Meeting considered "dangerous to the safety of the frontiers" was to be moved to the interior of the state. Rutland, Pittsford, and Tinmouth were considered frontier towns.[148] Ben served on three other committees his first Session: the Committee to take into consideration the frontiers of the state and recommend what ought

to be done to guard them; the Committee for un-granted land; and the Committee to consider the petition of Mercy Robinson. This latter was a Joint Committee with the Council and issued a joint report.[149]

On November 4, 1780 the House granted unappropriated land to Commodore Abraham Whipple and the 63 members in his company then imprisoned in Charleston, South Carolina by the British. The Commodore, no relation to Ben, was one of the most successful Continental Naval Commanders until his capture by the British at Charleston in 1779.[150] The original name of the Grant was Navy. It was later known as Charleston and is in Orleans county.

The second Session of 1780 met at Windsor beginning February 7, 1781. Ben made an oral report requesting that Court be held in Tinmouth "for the time being"[151] and was named to ten committees: Chair of the Committees to hear the petition of Elizabeth Baldwin[152] and Oliver Taylor,[153] Committee to hear the petition from residents of Hertford [Hartland], Committee to make up a tax bill, Committee to settle and establish all highways laid out in the state, a Joint Committee to prepare instructions for Vermont's Agents [Col. Ira Allen and Maj. Joseph Fay] to negotiate the border between Vermont and New York,[154] a Joint Committee to confer with a Committee from the Cornish Convention, a Joint Committee to arrange the necessary business to be transacted during the Session, and a Joint Committee to establish the frontier lines.[155] When the Council did not agree with the House's report on the petition of Captains Frye, Bayley, and Nehemiah Lowell, it appointed Ben to a Committee to confer with the Council, determine its reasons for not concurring, and report them to the House.[156]

Ben chaired the Joint Committee on frontier lines which recommended that the line of defense on the west side of the Green Mountains be established at forts at Pittsford and Castleton and that the Assembly authorize the Castleton line be moved to the "narrows on the lake or elsewhere" if Vermont troops were to join troops from New York. They also concluded it would take 1,500 men to defend the northern frontiers and recommended that the Board of War be directed to recruit that number and divide them into two regiments and station them proportionally on the east and west sides of the mountains. The Committee also recommended that the state raise £30,000 to support the troops. The report was accepted by the Assembly and Defense Committees were appointed for the east and west side of the mountains.[157] The Assembly also authorized a Committee of six members, including Ben, to join a Committee from the Council to propose methods to raise the money.[158]

During the summer and autumn of 1780 the Continental Congress tried to resolve the Vermont-New York-New Hampshire problem with

no success. Ira Allen and Stephen R. Bradley represented Vermont at the Congress but were not given official recognition at the Congressional hearing September 19. This provoked them to file a Remonstrance with the Congress protesting the lack of fairness to the state.[159]

Ben's second cousin, Moses Whipple[160] of Croyden, N.H., served with him in the 1781 Session and both voted yes to the "Articles of Union" developed by the Cambridge Convention.[161] Convention delegates from various New Hampshire and New York border towns met in May 1781 and voted to join Vermont.[162] The Articles of Union provided that the Towns would raise their quota of men to help defend the frontiers and elect Representatives to serve in the Vermont Assembly. The vote was 48 yea, 39 nay with all Representatives west of the Green Mountains, 23 from towns east of the mountains, and seven from the former New Hampshire towns voting in the affirmative.[163] However, shortly thereafter the Union was negated and Moses Whipple had to give up his seat in the Vermont Assembly.

The first of four Sessions of the 1781 Assembly opened in Charleston [now New Hampshire] October 11, 1781. The other Sessions opened in January, June, and October. Benjamin Whipple, Esq. and Mr. John Smith II were sworn in as Representatives from Rutland, county. Ben's first assignment was to serve on the Joint Committee to count votes for Governor, Deputy Governor, Treasurer, and members of the Council. Thomas Chittenden was again elected Governor, no one was elected Deputy Governor, and Ira Allen was returned as Treasurer. Ben was appointed to the all-important Joint Committee to nominate a Board of War and a Committee of Pay Tables. Once the Joint Committee's recommendations were formulated, Ben was among the members to present the report to the House. He was also on the Joint Committee to arrange the business of the Session and in September was named to the Joint Committee to prepare instructions for the Board of War to follow in 1782. He also served on committees to hear petitions of Enoch and Eliphalet Bean and Samuel Benton and others. The latter involved granting land lying east of Harwich [Mount Tabor].[164]

The January 31, 1782 Session convened in Bennington and Ben was named to the 9-member Committee to consider the several private petitions expected to be introduced. He chaired the Committees hearing the petitions of Jonathan Farnsworth and William Gould and served on the Committee to hear John W. Dana's petition. Dana was a Selectman from Pomfret.[165] In February, he was directed by the House to call on Ira Allen, State Surveyor General, and determine the progress of Article Six of the Legislative program. This Article directed Allen to survey the state and to provide maps of all granted townships and un-granted lands.[166] He also

served on the Joint Committee to determine the number of commissioned officers, except field officers, needed to command the troops to be raised. Field officers were to be elected.[167]

Important business conducted this Session included communicating with New York and New Hampshire regarding boundaries, to inform the Continental Congress "in a decent and spirited manner" the state's determination to support its just rights, repeat its desire "to be admitted into the federal Union," and to provide for the payment of soldiers in the last campaign.[168] Ben's colleague, Thomas Porter, was elected to the Council in October 1782 and the Assembly authorized the freemen of Tinmouth to elect a replacement.[169]

The Session that began June 13, 1782 convened at Windsor. He served on various committees, some as chairman, to consider petitions of various residents. He was on the Committee to prepare a bill for "suppressing the present disturbances in the county of Windham caused by New York partisans resisting Vermont authority. This resistance first occurred in 1779 and would occur again in 1783.[170] The Assembly passed an Act to punish conspiracies against the "peace, liberty, and independence" of the state. The penalties were harsh: if six or more persons joined to resist an officer, and if among them there were six or more who denied the authority of the state, the penalty was banishment or imprisonment and confiscation of property. Those guilty of "trying to overthrow the government or to betray it into the hands of any of the United States or any other power" incurred the same penalties and if they did not leave the state or returned after leaving, were to be put to death. The Assembly also empowered the Governor to raise troops to aid the Sheriff's in case of need "to sustain the civil by the military arm."[171]

A primary legislative consideration in 1782—nine years before Vermont was admitted to the Union—was education. The Assembly enacted laws to divide townships into districts and to establish and support schools in those districts. It provided for appointment of Trustees to supervise the schools and for the organization of committees to raise half the money needed to support the schools with the other half to be raised by the polls of the scholars or on the "grand list" as determined by each county. The school Trustees, appointed by the Judges of the County Courts, were to be assisted by the Justices of Peace to determine the tax to be levied to build school houses.[172]

The first Session of 1782 met at Manchester beginning October 10. Ben and Lieut. Roswell Post were administered the oath of office representing Rutland. Ben's first assignment was on a Committee charged with responsibility to compile a list of the number of troops raised by the various towns for the 1782 campaign. They were also to prepare a bill com-

pelling delinquent towns to pay their tax assessments.[173] On October 16 he was named House Chairman of a Joint Committee to determine measures to be taken for defense, anticipate needs for future defense, and

RECORDS

OF THE

GOVERNOR AND COUNCIL

OF THE

STATE OF VERMONT. [1779 - 1782]

VOLUME II.

EDITED AND PUBLISHED BY AUTHORITY OF THE STATE
BY E. P. WALTON.

MONTPELIER:
STEAM PRESS OF J. & J. M. POLAND.
1874.

advise the House on future disposition of troops. Although peace with Great Britain had not been declared, active warfare hadn't been waged since Gen. Cornwallis' surrender at Yorktown, Virginia in 1781 and the end of the war seemed close at hand.[174]

He voted in the affirmative (37 yea, 15 nay) on October 21 on instructions to Vermont Agents lobbying the Continental Congress for statehood and to grant them plenipotentiary powers.[175] On October 23 he was named to the Committee to prepare a bill allowing state courts to increase their jurisdiction to act on debts in excess of 40 shillings but not to exceed £6.[176] The bill passed with Ben voting with the majority. The next day he was appointed to a Joint Committee on "empowering towns to tax lands."[177]

The second Session convened at Windsor on February 13, 1783 and Ben was named to the Joint Committee to count and sort the votes of the freeman for state offices and Counselors. Thomas Chittenden was elected Governor, Paul Spooner Deputy Governor, and Ira Allen Treasurer. Many of Ben's personal friends, including his Rutland neighbor Joseph Bowker, were elected to the Council. He served on the all-important Committee to prepare the Rules and Regulations to be followed during the Session.[178]

He served on a number of joint committees, some of them as House chairman, through the end of the Session. This work resulted in bills to regulate fees; to devise a method to settle confiscated estates (see en. 178, item 6); to prevent "persons inimical to [Vermont} and to the United States from entering the state; to devise a more equitable method of taxation (see en. 178, item 7); to adjust the 1782 cost of the militia (see en. 178, item 10) and to make recommendations to resolve various petitions received during the session.[179]

His motion of February 25 to create a 3-man committee to join a Committee from the Council to prepare a bill to "regulate civil actions" was adopted by the House. On the 27th he was named House chairman of a Joint Committee to resolve a geography problem for 53 families who lived in the northwest corner of Tinmouth, the northeast corner of Wells, the southeast corner of Poultney, and the southwest corner of Ira. The petitioners complained of the "great trouble and difficulty" they had to belong to their respective Towns because of the surrounding mountains and asked for permission to incorporate as a new town. The Committee voted to defer action to the next Session after a "disinterested committee of three persons" went to the area and prepared a report at the cost of the petitioners. The House accepted the report and named Ben to the Committee to choose the disinterested persons.[180]

His first assignment in the 1783 Assembly was as a member of the Committee to "arrange the Business of the House." He was also

appointed to prepare an answer to the Governor's speech to the House at the opening of the Session and served as House Chairman of a Joint Committee to prepare a bill for the regulation of fees.[181] He also served on the Committee to hear a petition from residents of Rutland seeking a law allowing them to tax lands to provide money to build bridges.[182]

The House failed to agree with a Bill passed by the Council on March 5, 1784 that "would empower the Governor to settle a treaty of amity and commerce with the powers of Europe." Since it had not been admitted to the Union, many Vermont residents felt at liberty to negotiate with other nations. The October Session did, however, pass a bill "for the purpose of opening a free trade to and through the Province of Quebec" and for "negotiations on commerce between Vermont and other foreign countries."[183]

The first Session of the 1784 Legislature, Ben's last, convened in Rutland October 14. Ben and Capt. Samuel Williams were sworn in as Rutland Representatives. Nine items were on the House Agenda for consideration.[184] Ben was appointed House chairman of a Joint Committee to devise Rules and Regulations for a Council of Censors to be elected in 1785. This was one of the most important committees of the Session.

The Vermont Constitution provided for a 13-member "Body of Censors" who were to be elected for one year at the end of every seven years. Members acted as a Board of Review and could not be Councillors or Representatives. They were to review actions of the previous Assemblies to make sure that the Constitution had been "preserved inviolate in every part" and to determine "whether the officers of government had performed well their powers." They could pass public censure, order impeachment, and recommend the repeal of laws that seemed at odds with the Constitution. They could also call a Convention if they felt the Constitution needed changing but had to publish their reasons six months in advance of it convening to give voters ample time for review and to instruct their delegates.[185]

NORTHERN ECHO OF SHAYS' REBELLION

At the close of the American revolutionary struggle there was great discontent in the country mostly caused by flood after flood of worthless paper currency. Before 1780, Congress had issued two-hundred-million dollars of Continental money which was received in Vermont at par until September 1777 when it sank rapidly. It continued to sink until paper dollars were of little more value than copper cents.[186]

Vermont was not responsible for any part of the national debt because it was not a part of the Union and managed its own financial needs by the sale of state land and by confiscation of Tory property. But peace changed

all that. Every kind of property depreciated. Foreign goods flowed in and foreign specie flowed out. Farmers were unable to pay a small debt in specie because the debt at least doubled as the value of money diminished and Courts favored the creditor. Some farmers couldn't even pay the Court costs. Courts, Judges, Sheriffs, and attorneys were as detested in the Green Mountains as they were in Massachusetts.

But before turning to clubs and muskets farmers started with peaceful protest seeking reformist laws in a non-violent way. Vermont Legislators initially ignored the demands. In 1785 they set aside proposals for paper money permitting only gold, silver, and copper to be used for "the legal money of this state." It passed a two-year tender law[187] by a close vote which represented a compromise between landed and commercial interests. While institutionalizing a form of barter for farmers it gave creditors their "choice of what part of the debtor's estate" to take thus severely punishing the yeoman for a lack of specie. Still trusting the political system, farmers convened County Conventions to remonstrate. Rutland county held Conventions in Rutland on August 15, and in Middletown on September 26, 1786. The Assembly received petitions from farmers in 10 western settlements in the October Session alone causing the Assembly to consider but not pass a tender law[188] and emission of paper. Thus the Vermont Legislature backed the mercantile interest to the detriment of subsistence-minded yeomen.[189] On the same day, October 31, 1786, that the Legislature referred the settlement of debts to the January 1786 Session, a mob attempted to break up the Court in Windsor.

Initially both Gov. Chittenden and Ethan Allen sided with the farmers. Chittenden said "that whenever people were oppressed they will mob." He published an address to the citizens in 1785 counseling the cultivation of the necessaries of life, particularly wool and flax, urging industry, economy, and non-importation, and asked for mutual forbearance and good will between creditor and debtor.

However, both abandoned their pro-rebel policy in 1787. The Legislature passed a Riot Act on March 8 which prohibited more than 12 armed persons from assembling in public. Offenders could be shot on sight by county Sheriffs or captured and assigned to the service of any Vermont citizen for an indefinite period of time, thereby reducing convicted rioters to a state of slavery. A Treason Act approved the same day strengthened the Riot Act by extending the death penalty to anyone active in an insurrection against the Vermont government. Along with a quick militia response, the repressive legislation discouraged Court disturbances and probably accounted for the small scale of armed protest in independent Vermont.[190]

In November of 1786, Rutland was a community of less than 2,000

with about two score buildings, half of them built of logs. The relics of a picket fort were still visible. Fort Ranger, a little west, had been mostly removed to repair mills and feed the winter fires. The town had two churches, two school houses, three taverns, and a two-room Court House.

On November 21 as the Judges entered the village they were met by a group calling themselves a Committee of the People. They presented the Judges a petition asking that the Session be postponed. Ignoring the request, the Judges said their petition would be heard as a last docket item that afternoon. However as the 2 p.m. Session was about to begin approximately a hundred men crowded into the Court Room and began haranguing the Judges for not granting the people's request. The Court adjourned until 9 a.m. and the Regulators, as the men called themselves, refused to let the Judges leave, and called for arms which had been stored in a nearby house. After about two hours the Judges and Sheriff were released and the Regulators marched about the streets of the Town discussing their grievances and calling for a General Amnesty Act. That evening they went to where the Judges were lodged and again asked them not to convene and were again refused.

The next day about 150 well armed men took possession of the Court House and occupied it all day. The militia arrived the following day and Court resumed. That evening seven or eight of the Regulator's ring leaders were arrested and Capt. Benjamin Cooley of Pittsfield with about 30 or 40 insurgents exchanged rifle fire with a company of militia and all but two or three of Cooley's people were captured and jailed. They were tried the next day. Five were acquitted, 21 plead guilty and were fined from nine shillings and up and costs, and 14 were fined from£3 to £25 and were required to be bonded for good behavior for one year. Benjamin Whipple, who the previous year sat on the Bench as an Assistant Judge, was among the latter group and was fined £10.

Thus ended the northern echo of Shays' Rebellion. On March 2, 1787, the General Assembly referred to the Rutland up-rising as the late "daring insurrection against government." Participation by people of Ben's reputation and public service proves how general, deep-seated, and substantial were the grounds of discontent.[191] On October 24, 1788, Ben and others petitioned the Assembly to suspend the fines "laid on the rioters by the Supreme Court in Rutland county." The fines were suspended from being collected for one year.[192] The Assembly also continued to elect him as a Justice of Peace for the District of Rutland. He was elected to this position in October of 1787, 1788, 1789, and 1790.[193]

During his 79 years, Ben helped settle the frontier on three separate occasions. First, as a boy of 7 when he moved with his family from a comfortable life in Ipswich, Mass. which had been settled for 100 years to

Westborough in Worcester county, Mass. in 1734. Westborough was then considered to be the colony's frontier. At age 34 with a wife and seven children he was one of the first settlers in what became Bennington, Vemont. At 50 he again moved his family, now comprised of nine children, to a new frontier—Rutland county Vermont.

Wherever he lived, Ben was an active church member and participant in local and state government. He served in the French and Indian War and in the Revolutionary War. Time and again his neighbors in Bennington and Rutland elected him to office and turned to him for help in settling legal matters. He served as a Commissioner of Estates for several years, witnessing wills and appraising estates of the dead. He served as Selectman, Constable, County Judge, Justice of the Peace, and state Legislator and was re-elected to these posts many times over a 15-year period which is a testament to his standing with his neighbors. He helped create the independent state of Vermont before it joined the Union and was not afraid to stand against that government when he believed it to be wrong. His many descendants can be justly proud of this pioneer American and his many contributions to a new nation and the legacies he left us.

BENJAMIN AND HEPZIBAH'S BURIAL SITE

Benjamin and Hepzibah (Crosby) Whipple are buried in the Pleasant Street Cemetery (identified as Mount Pleasant Cemetery in early records) in West Rutland. This cemetery is on the east side of West Rutland adjacent to old Route 4 (just before crossing a railroad track) located immediately behind Artistic Memorials, a business selling cemetery monuments. The cemetery is.4 mile east of the West Rutland Town Hall. As you enter the cemetery's swinging iron gate look for a large white monument with the name FENN. The Whipples are in the second row behind Fenn. Benjamin's grave is marked by the Ann Story Chapter DAR as a Revolutionary War soldier. Hepzibah's stone is to his right. The gravestones read as follows:

> Benj. Whipple Esq. Died April 30th 1806 Aged 79 years.

The stone is still in reasonably good shape and is relatively white in color.

> Memory of Mrs. Hepzibah Whipple Wife of Benjamin Whipple Esq. Who died May 10, 1779 in the 70th Yr of Her Age.

Balance of inscription is not readable. Stone is quite black.

1. Franklin P. Rice, comp., *Vital Records of Westborough, Massachusetts to the End of the Year 1849*, Worcester, Mass., 1903, 105.
2. Walett, 156, 165, 180.
3. Ben's future brother-in-law. Nathan married his sister Lucy.
4. Walett, 166.
5. Rice, 218.
6. Henry A. Hazen, comp. *A History of Billerica, Massachusetts With A Genealogical Register*, 1833, 28.
7. 28 Sept. 1750. Benjamin Whipple of Hardwick with his wife and child here at eve. We took up three hives of bees. A great frost this evening. Walett.
8. Hardwick—Ware adjoins it on the south and west, Enfield and Grenwich on the west, Dana on the northwest, Barre on the northeast, and New Braintree on the southeast.
9. Sachem—Chief of a tribe or of a Confederation.
10. Original buyers: Joshua Lambe, Nathaniel Page, Andrew Gardiner, Benjamin Gamblin, Benjamin Tucker, John Curtis, Richard Draper, and Samuel Ruggles of Roxberry, Suffolk Co. Lucius R. Paige, *History of Hardwick, Massachusetts*, Houghton-Mifflin, Boston, 1883, 15-17. [For those without access to this book, it is available through the Family History Library, Salt Lake City, Utah, film #0868519.]
11. Paige, Lucius R., compiler, *History of Hardwick, Massachusetts With a Genealogical Record,* Boston: Houghton, Mifflin & Co. 1883. 33, 38, 44. (Hereafter Paige.}
12. Paige, 307-8.
13. Nehemiah, 25 March 1750; Hepziibah and Sara, twins, 1 July 1751; Abigail, 21 June 1753; Benjamin, 16 Sept. 1755; Prudence, 27 July, 1757; David, 17 Sept. 1759. *Vital Records of Hardwick, Massachusetts to the Year 1850.* Boston: 1917, 122-23. Jonathan, Elizabeth, and Persis were born in Bennington, Vt. Jonathan about 1764, Elizabeth 24 March 1762, and Persis 14 March 1768. Marvel G. and Donald P. Swan, comp., Dawn Hance, editor, *Early Families of Rutland, Vermont*, The Rutland Historical Society, 1990, 412.
14. Paige, 240.
15. William Thomas, a native of Marlborough, was the first schoolmaster.
16. Paige, 248-50.
17. Paige, 298.
18. The Church was established 17 Nov. 1733. The Rev. Mr. David White was Hardwick's first pastor, selected in 1736. He served for 48 years, dying in office 6 Jan. 1784. Paige, 176, 192.
19. The Council included three Ministers – Reverends Edwards, Hall, and Eaton.
20. Apparently a number of their Westborough neighbors and friends had preceded Ben and Hepzibah to Hardwick which would have made their introduction to the new community easier. They had their membership in the Westborough Church transferred to the Hardwick Church.
21. 3 Dec. 1749, Walett, 207.
22. Rev. Ebenezer Frothingham of Weathersfield, Conn. published in 1750 a discourse titled "The Articles of Faith and Practice, with the Covenant, that is confessed by the Separate Churches of Christ in general in this Land." In it he lists seven objections non Separatists have to the new movement followed by a formal reply rebutting those objections. Paige 221-25.
23. Dissenting Church members included: Samuel Robinson, James Fay, Benjamin Harwood, Silas Pratt, George Abbott, Jr., John Roberts, Jacob Abbott, Ezekiel Pratt,

Experience Johnson, Elisha Higgins and his wife, Oliver Rice, Edward Allen. Paige, 225-26.

24. 20 Oct. 1755. "Edwards and Benjamin Whipple dined here. The last is become a Separate at Lambs Town. I had some talk with him upon it." Walett.

25. These 10 acres had been set aside for public use by the Proprietors on 2 Feb. 1732/33. Paige, 166.

26. Paige, 226.

27. "THE COVENANT." We whose names are underwritten, apprehending ourselves called of God into church state of the gospel, do, first of all, confess ourselves unworthy to be so highly favored of the Lord; and admire that rich and free grace of His, which triumphs over so great unworthiness; and then with an humble reliance on the grace therein promised for those who, in sense of their inability to do any good things, do humbly wait on Him for all,—we now thankfully lay hold of His covenant, and would choose the things that please Him.

We declare our serious belief of the Christian religion as contained in the sacred scriptures and with such view thereof as the Confession of Faith and Rules of Discipline in Cambridge Platform has exhibited,—heartily resolving to conform our lives unto the rules of that holy religion so long as we live in the world. We give ourselves unto the Lord Jehovah, who is the Father, and the Son, and the Holy Spirit, and avouch Him this day to be our God, our Father, and our Saviour, and our Leader; and receive Him as our portion forever. We give up ourselves unto the blessed Jesus, who is the Lord Jehovah; and adhere to Him as the head of His people in the covenant of grace; and rely on Him as our Priest and our Prophet, and our King; to bring us unto eternal blessedness. We acknowledge our everlasting and indispensable obligation to glorify God in all the duties of a Godly, a sober, and a righteous life, and very particularly in the duty of a church state,—a body of people associated together for an obedience to Him in all the ordinances of the gospel; and we herein depend upon His gracious assistance for our faithful discharge of the duties thus incumbent on us. We desire, and intend, and with dependence upon His powerful grace we engage to walk together as a church of the Lord Jesus Christ, in the faith and order of the gospel so far as we shall have the same revealed to us,—conscientiously attending the public worship of God, the sacraments of the New Testament, the discipline of His Kingdom, and all His holy institutions in communion with one another, and watchfully avoiding all sinful stumbling blocks as become a people whom the Lord hath bound up together in the bundle of eternal life.

At the same time, also, we do present our offspring with us to the Lord, purposing with His help to do our part in the methods of a religious education that they may be the Lord's. And all this we do flying to the blood of the everlasting covenant for the pardon of our many errors; and praying that the glorious Lord; who is the great Shepherds, will prepare and strengthen us for every good work to do His will, working in us that which will be well pleasing in His sight—to whom glory forever and ever. Amen.

Its deacons were Samuel Robinson and James Fay, and perhaps John Fassett. There is no evidence it ever had a settled pastor in Hardwick but John Roberts of Grafton, whose name heads the list of subscribers may have officiated as a lay-preacher or exhorter. He was not college educated. The earliest signatures on the second page of the Covenant were arranged in two columns. Male names in *italics* moved to Bennington, Vt. in about 1761. Subscribers, first column: *John Roberts, Samuel Robinson*, James Fay, Benjamin Harwood, *George Abbott, Jacob Fisk*, George Abbott, Jr., Jedediah Rice, James Breckeridge, *Oliver Rice*, James Fay, Jr., *David*

Doane, John Fassett, Daniel Fay, *Ichabod Stratton, Jr.*, William Breckenridge, ***Benjamin Whipple***,. Eleazar Harwood, Samuel Pratt, Jonathan Scott, Elisha Field, Samuel Montague, Elizabeth Scott, Experience Richardson. Column Two: Rebekah Abbott, Lydia Fay, Marcy Robinson, Baty Pratt, Bridget Harwood, Elizabeth Roberts, Elizabeth Fisk, Elizabeth Pratt, Peace Atwood, Prudence Whipple, Martha Abbott, Mehitable Fay, Hannah Rice, Elizabeth Fay, Marcy Newton ***Hepzibah Whipple***, Joseph Safford, Ann Safford, Stephen Story, Bethia Burnham, Eleanor Smith, Aaron Leonard, John Wood, Zachariah Harwood, Philippa Wood, Margit Harwood.

It is apparent that the Bennington list of Hardwick members did not all join at the same time. Elizabeth Roberts died before the end of 1750 so had to be a member before then and Benj. Whipple and Ichabod Stratton, Jr. were still members of the Church of Christ on 14 Nov. 1753 when they were appointed to the Reconciliation Committee. Prudence Whipple was the widow of Ebenezer Whipple and was published to Deacon James Fay of the Separatist Church on 13 Sept. 1760. James and Prudence never moved to Bennington. Paige, 226-8, 371.

28. French and Indian War—The French-led St. Francis Indians came down from the north to burn farmhouses, destroy crops, slaughter cattle, chop down fruit trees, scalp settlers, and stole women and children. In addition to fighting, the men kept busy mending and greasing moccasins, washing shirts, stitching buck-skins, cleaning accouterments, fastening protecting-clothes around the breeches of muskets, cutting bullet patches, filling power horns, etc. Kenneth Roberts, *Northwest Passage*, Garden City, N.Y.: Doubleday & Company, Inc., 1936, 73, 81. Their winter diet was salt pork and bacon and thick pea soup and the bitter spruce beer drunk to ward off scurvy. Bruce Lancaster, *Ticonderoga, The Story of a Fort*, Boston: Houghton Mifflin Company, The Riverside Press Cambridge, 1959, 62
29. Paige, 263-67.
30. Vermont—No Man's Land—Ray Bearse, editor, *VERMONT, A Guide to the Green Mountain State*, Houghton Mifflin Co., Boston. Second Edition, 1966, 41.
31. In 1664 the Grant by Charles II to his brother, James, Duke of York, expressly included "all the land from the west side of the Connecticut river to the east side of the De la Ware Bay." *VERMONT*, 41-3.
32. J. Kevin Graffagnino, "_The Country My Soul Delighted In': The Onion River Land Company and the Vermont Frontier," *The New England Quarterly.* Boston: Published by The New England Quarterly, Inc., March 1992, 26.
33. Lewis Cass, editor *History of Bennington County, Vermont*, Aldrich D. Mason & Co., Publishers, Syracuse, N.Y., 1889, 244.
34. In 1771 New York sent Sheriff Ten Eyck with 300 armed men to seize the Breakenridge farm near Bennington. The "outlaw mobsters," as New York called the Green Mountain Boys, met the Yorkers at the covered bridge beyond the threatened farm and Ten Eyck and his posse fell back toward Albany.
35. A Royal order ended Wentworth's granting activity in 1764 and New York announced it would not recognize any New Hampshire titles unless their owners paid additional confirmation fees. The New Hampshire speculators interpreted the Crown's use of the words "to be" in setting the Connecticut river as the New Hampshire boundary meant a change in jurisdiction effective from the date of the Royal Order giving the Charters issued before 1764 precedence over New York's later Patents. Graffagnino, 27.
36. Many Vermonters believed it was unfair and unwise to fight for independence from New York when the colonies were engaged in winning independence from a common enemy.

37. Seventeen years earlier 4,000 French soldiers under Louis Joseph Marquis de Montcalm, French military leader in Canada, repelled an Army of 16,000 British soldiers. The joint command was not foreseen or wanted by either Allen or Arnold. Allen had been authorized by the government of Connecticut to seize "Ticonderoga and had assembled a large band of his Green Mountain Boys for the task. Arnold, a Connecticut officer, had been given the same assignment by Massachusetts and stumbled into Allen's force by accident while trying to recruit a force of his own. Each of these headstrong men insisted that he and he alone was the leader. Lancaster, 120-21. The Fort, on the N.Y. side of Lake Champlain, was an important post in the Wilderness for the English. The Americans only held the Fort for a short period.
38. Fort Crown Point contributed to the British conquest of Canada and control of Lake Champlain as a communications highway. General John Burgoyne recaptured it from the colonists in 1777 and it remained under British control for the rest of the war.
39. Vermont's early history consists of small groups of glamorous incidents including the Green Mountain Boys' defense of their land titles against the threat of the Yorkers, Ethan Allen's capture of Ticonderoga, and the crucial battle of Bennington, which affected the Battle of Saratoga, which in turn determined the fate of the American colonies. *VERMONT*, 44-6.
40. The Constitution provided for a single Chamber with members elected annually; one member for any Town no matter how small and two for any Town with more than 80 taxable citizens. There was no property qualification. Any man 21, who had lived in the state for one year, was entitled to the suffrage. Slavery was prohibited. There was to be a Governor and Lieut. Governor elected annually and assisted by 12 Councillors, also elected annually. The Councillors were to see that laws were enforced. The Governor and Council did not have the right of veto. They could suggest but not compel amendments. There were of two kinds of bills – temporary and permanent. The temporary bill was intended to meet a sudden need, and when passed could be enforced at once. Other bills, when passed, were to be printed and distributed among voters and not to become law until re-enacted by the Legislature the following year when they became permanent. Charles Miner Thompson, *Independent Vermont*, Houghton Mifflin Company, Boston, 1942.
41. Ira Allen served as State Treasurer from 1777 to 1786 and devised a plan in the summer of 1777 to confiscate and sell Tory estates bringing in much needed revenue without imposing unpopular taxes. The plan was also used to expel Yorkers and other internal dissenters. The state also profited from the creation of 92 new Townships between 1779 and 1791 in the two million acres not covered by the Wentworth Grants. The sale of these Grants helped fill the treasury and attracted settlers who supported the government. Vermont leaders won influential friends by giving thousands of acres to Members of Congress and leaders in other states. Independent Vermont's most valuable commodity was land and its judicious management during the war was a major factor in its survival. Graffagnino, 42
42. Chittenden, a one-eyed tavern keeper, was a 19-term Governor and served through most of Vermont's hectic lean dangerous years as an independent republic. He was a giant of a man, unlearned, unpretentious, and unsophisticated but most Vermonters believed as did Ethan Allen that Tom Chittenden was bound to be right even when he couldn't tell why. *VERMONT*, 47.
43. Beginning in 1780 a small number of Vermont's leaders including the Allen brothers —Ira was the principal agent —, Gov. Chittenden, and a few others met secretly with Frederick Haldimand, commander of the British forces in Canada, to discuss the possibility of Vermont rejoining the British empire. Though the discussions were

serious, they did not lead to a reunion. When information reached the Continental Congress about the talks, it discussed the possibility of invading Vermont to prevent its loss to the enemy. Haldimand sent an Army south in the fall of 1781 to welcome Vermont back into the empire but withdrew when news arrived of Cornwallis' surrender at Yorktown. Graffagnino, 42.

44. *VERMONT, 47-8.*

45. In the early 1780s New York urged the Continental Congress to intervene in its problems with Vermont causing Gov. Chittenden to write a pungent letter to the President of Congress. New York had indicated that it was not to be blamed if "blood was shed in the assertion of her authority." Chittenden told the President of Congress that Vermont "does not wish to enter into a war with the state of New York but she will act on the defensive, and expect that Congress and the 12 other states will observe strict neutrality, and let the two contending states settle their own controversy." He said the Vermont Assembly did not consider itself subject to any "earthly tribunal" and reminded Congress of the impropriety of permitting "New York and New Hampshire to vote on any motion which came before it respecting the Vermont controversy." He also repeated Vermont's desire for a Confederation with the United States. Rowland E. Robinson, *Vermont, A Study of Independence*, Houghton, Mifflin and Company, The University Press, Cambridge, Mass., 1897.

46. New York finally came to the view it would be better for it if Vermont were a part of the Union and upon payment of the $30,000 it consented to admission and that all claims of New York to jurisdiction within the bounds of Vermont should cease; that the boundary line between the two states should be the western lines of towns granted by New Hampshire and the mid-channel of Lake Champlain. Robinson.

47. Between 1760-90, Vermont developed from a wilderness inhabited by 300 white people to a sovereign state populated by 85,425. The two decades following it admission saw the greatest increase in population the state has known: 154,465 in 1800 and 217,895 in 1810, a larger percentage increase than any other eastern or northern state during the same period. During those decades six new counties and 51 townships were settled. The Constitution was revised in 1793, the permanent capitol established at Montpelier in 1805, a State House built there in 1808, the U. of Vermont opened in 1800, and the first bank chartered in 1806. It is New England's second largest state and ranks forty-third in size among the 50. It's northern boundary of about 90 miles is Quebec, the southern boundary of about 40 miles is Massachusetts, the eastern boundary of about 200 miles is New Hampshire and the Connecticut river, and the western boundary is Lake Champlain, the Poulney river and the Taconic Mountains along the New York border. It is the only New England state without Atlantic ocean coastline *VERMONT*, 48-52.

48. *VERMONT*, 336.

49. Robinson represented the New Hampshire Grants in the King's Court in London in 1766 and died there the following year.

50. Benjamin sold land to Henry Walbridge of Bennington on 24 Oct. 1764 in the northeast corner of No. 13 in Bennington for £4. The deed was witnessed by Samuel Robinson and Samuel Robinson, Jr. on 29 October. " Whipple File," The Bennington Museum, Bennington, Vt. *Bennington Records. Bennington Vermont. Town and Vital Records, Deeds 1741-1809.* Vol a-1. Film No.0027831, Family History Library, Salt Lake City, Utah, 8 Aug. 1952. [Hereafter *Bennington Proprietor's Records.]*

51. Money making was the main vocation and avocation of our Yankee ancestors and in that day speculation in land was almost the only means of making money. The English government encouraged its American subjects to produce raw materials, but for-

bade them to manufacture thus creating a profitable market for English goods. Albert Stillman Batchellor, *The New Hampshire Grants*, vol. XXVI, Edward N. Pearson, Public Printer, Concord, N.H., 1895, 180-3, 604, 729. "Waterford" by T.A. Cutler, *The Vermont Historical Gazetteer*, vol I, Burlington, Vt., 1868, 430-1.

52. Terms of the Grant required the Proprietors each to pay annual rent of one ear of corn beginning December 1762 for 10 years and beginning December 25, 1772, one shilling for every 100 acres owned forever In making these Grants, Gov. Wentworth disobeyed the careful instructions drawn up by the English government which specified that no township was to be set out or lands granted until 50 families were prepared to start settlement. Each was to "settle, plant, and cultivate at least five acres in his Grant within five years of its date." The instructions further forbade granting to speculators; it was to be granted to hard-working, competent farmers who would bring the land to its highest usefulness. Wentworth did not follow any of the instructions and made all of his Grants to speculators as political rewards and to enrich himself and relatives. He gave himself 500 acres in each township he created. Thompson.
53. Albert Stillman Batchellor, *The New Hampshire Grants*, vol. XXVI. Concord, N.H.: Edward N. Pearson, Public Printer, 1895, 189-83,604, 729.
54. Ethan Allen was the main petitioner of the Charter of Two Heroes and had 359 associates including Benjamin and Nehemiah Whipple, Gov. Thomas Chittenden, Joseph Bowker, Ira Allen, Samuel Robinson, Sr. and Jr., and Moses Robinson. They received 23,000 acres on the Grand Isle in Lake Champlain about three miles north of the mouth of the Onion river: One tract included 16,000 acres, the other 7,000 acres (m/o/l) at the end of a large island commonly called Long Island, also in Lake Champlain so each associate received approximately 64 acres. A condition of the Grant was that each Proprietor was to plant and cultivate two acres or have one family settled on each respective Right within one year next after the conclusion of the present war. The date of the Grant was "27 Oct. 1779, in the third year of independence of this state." *State Papers of. Vermont*, vol. 2 Bellows Falls, N.H.: Secretary of State, P..H. Govie Press, Inc., 1922, 192-95.
55. Benjamin was the main petitioner and his 64 associates included Gov. Thomas Chittenden. The Grant was named Littleton and one boundary line included six miles of the Connecticut river. Terms of the Grant provided that each Proprietor "shall plant and cultivate 5 acres and build a house at least 18 feet square and have one family settled by November 1783 on penalty of forfeiture. All pine timber suitable for a Navy was reserved for the use and benefit of the freemen of the state." Date of the Grant was" 8 Nov. 1780 in the fourth year of the independence of this state." *State Papers*,3: 125-26.
56. Jay Mack Holbrook, *Vermont's First Settlers*, Oxford, Mass., 1978, 104. The following page references for the Grants are from *State Papers*, 2: 20, 125, 193. The 1781 Grant was made to 23 individuals and is dated 25 October in the" fifth year of independence of this state." The Grant, titled "Charter of Benton's Gore" after Samuel Benton included 5,000 acres with the same provisions for settlement in the Littleton grant except the date to settle was July 1788 (see above). *State Papers*, 2:20.
57. *Nye Index to Vermont Manuscript State Papers,* "Stevens Papers A" p. 51.
58. *Nye Index*, vol. 21, 70, 96.
59. *Nye Index*, vol. 21, 204, 322.
60. Ben purchased: land west of Otter creek from James Mead in May 1778, *Index to Deeds 1766-1857.* Book 1: 248; from son Nehemiah in 1782, 1:230; from Wm. Post in 1784, 1:355 and in 1793, 4:158; from Ebenezer Pratt in 1790, 2:152; from Joel Roberts, Collector, in 1796, 4:88; and from son David in 1798, 4:156. Ben sold: to Aaron Thrall,

20 acres excluding my barn, in April 1789, 2:238; to Wm. Post in 1791, 2:295; to son David, mill pond on Sawmill road, in 1791, 2:321 in 1803, 6:140; to Aaron Reed in 1797, 4:139; to Samuel Jackson in 1797, 4:154; and to son-in-law David Jackson (husband of Persis Whipple) two parcels in 1803, 6:150, 158. All transactions were received and conveyed by warranty deeds except the acquisition from Nehemiah which was conveyed by a quit claim deed.

61. Edward Bellamy, *The Duke of Stockbridge*. Cambridge, Mass: The Belknap Press of Harvard University Press, 1962, 143-4. "The Duke of Stockbridge" first appeared as a serialized novel in the *Berkshire Courier*, Great Barrington, Mass., 1879.
62. Reverend Isaac Jennings, *MEMORIALS OF A CENTURY. Embracing a Record of Individuals and Events Chiefly in the early History of Bennington, Vermont and Its First Church*, Gould and Lincoln, Boston, 1869, 24.
63. Cass, 248.
64. Jennings, 21-2.
65. Both were "Separated" churches, irregularly organized in the view of the churches then existing in the two towns and therefore never recognized by the existing churches as Churches of Christ. Jennings, 55.
66. Members agreed to make an exception in the fourth paragraph in the eleventh chapter in the Cambridge Platform which provided for using the civil law to support the gospel and the ninth paragraph, seventeenth chapter which addressed the civil Magistrate's coercive power. In Massachusetts civil power compelled Separatists to support the old existing churches and civil Magistrates could, when they deemed it necessary, enforce conformity in doctrine and worship. It was for these reasons that the founders of the Bennington Church excluded those segments of the Cambridge Platform. They also voted to receive Joseph and Anne Safford, Stephen Storey, Bethiah Burnham, and Eleanor Smith into full communion with the church. Thus at its organization, the church included 32 male and 25 female members. Abbott, George, George, Jr., Martha, and Rebecca; Atwood, Pearce; Breakenridge, William and James; Burnham, Behiah; Doane, David; Eastman, Jonathan; Fassett, John, Fay, Daniel, James, James Jr., Elizabeth, Lydia, and Mehitable; Field, Elisha; Fisk, Jacob and Elizabeth; Harwood, Benjamin, Eleazar, Zechariah, Bridget, and Elizabeth; Leonard, Aaron; Montague, Samuel and Martha; Newton, Marcy; Pratt, Samuel, Baty, and Elizabeth; Rice, Jedidiah, Oliver, and Hannah; Richardson, Experience; Roberts, John; Robertson, Samuel, Silas, and Elizabeth; Robinson, Marcy; Safford, Joseph and Ann; Sears, Simeon; Scott, Jonathan, Jonathan, Jr., and Elizabeth; Smith, Eleanor; Story, Elijah, Stephen, and Sarah; Stratton, Ichabod, Tubbs, Samuel; Whipple, Benjamin, Hepzibah; Wickwire, Martha. Jennings, 31-4, 369.
67. Dewey, intelligent and gifted, only had a common school education and was a carpenter before uniting with the Westfield, Mass. church in 1737 at age 23. He left the Church in 1748 and the Church voted in 1750 that since he had become a Separatist and was ministering to other Separatists who had left the Church, they would no longer regard him and his wife as one of their numbers. He served the Bennington Church for 15 years and 4 months, dying 21 Dec. 1778. He was involved in community affairs and was indicted with others at Albany in January 1770 as a leader in the efforts of Bennington settlers to maintain their land titles. In May 1772 correspondence between Gov. Tyron of New York and the inhabitants of Bennington, the Governor wrote that "Mr. Dewey, James Breakenridge, and Mr. Fay are persons in whose judgment you have much confidence. I should therefore think they would be your proper messengers... especially Mr. Dewey, who has been favorably represented here since my appointment at this government." On the Sunday before the Battle of Ben-

nington in August 1777, Dewey preached a war sermon, telling his people to take arms and go fight for their country. Jennings, 36, 38, 82-5.

68. Benjamin and Hepzibah, are among the 66 signatories of the Covenant. The sheet with the names of approximately 30 others was lost. COVENANT OF THE BENNINGTON FIRST CHURCH is the same as the Covenant of the Separatist church in Hardwick. (See note 27.) Jennings, 398-9.
69. Jennings, 25-7.
70. Jennings, 406-7.
71. Elected Selectman at the annual Town Meeting on 30 March 1763 along with James Brakenridge, Samuel Robinson, Ebenezer Wood, and John Taylor; on 25 March 1767 along with Stephen Fay, James Brakenridge, Samuel Safford, and Simeon Harmon; on 30 March 1768 along with John Taylor, Stephen Fay, Samuel Robinson, and Samuel Safford. *Bennington Proprietor's Records.*
72. *Bennington Proprietor's Records.*
73. Elected Moderator at the Town Meetings on 4 July 1768, 29 March 1769, and 15 March 1773. *Bennington Proprietor's Records.*
74. *Bennington Proprietor's Records.*
75. Ben and John Wood were elected Fence Viewers at the Town Meeting on 31 March 1773. *Bennington Proprietor's Records.*
76. Ben and Mr. Ebenezer Wood were elected Tithingmen and sworn at the Town Meetings on 27 March 1764. That meeting also voted to accept the highway from Ben's farm to the saw mill, to pay the Selectmen 3 shillings a day for the year past, and voted that "hogs shall not run at large from April to 15 of October. Ben and Moses Robinson were elected Tithingmen at the Town Meeting on 28 March 1770. *Bennington Proprietor's Records.*
77. At the annual Town Meeting 27 March 1764 Ben, esq. Robinson, Jonathan Eastman, Samuel Scott, and Timothy Abbott were elected Surveyors for Highways. The Town Meeting of 16 April 1766 voted to accept a road laid out as follows: "Beginning at Benj. Whipple's west line running by that line to the Mill road thence by a line of marked trees westerly till they come to the (?) road. The said road to be two rods wide." On 18 Aug. 1766 the Selectmen "accepted a highway laid out from Daniel M. (____) and Joseph Barber... northward thru their land on the east side of the river as near the river as will allow them, thru Henry Walbridges, the west side of a line of market trees to Jonathan F. (?) land on the southwest side of the market trees northwesterly thru L. Taylor's land to Whipple's land northerly on the west side of a line of market trees to Esq. Robinson's land and thru the Robinson land till it comes to the road that goes from Benj. Whipples to the mill. The road to be two rods wide." *Bennington Proprietor's Records.*
78. At the Town Meeting of 6 June 1768, Mr. Benj. Whipple was chosen Surveyor of Highways in the place of Joseph Smith. The Town also voted "that all persons that work at the highways this present year shall be reasonably paid." *Bennington Proprietor's Records.*
79. The annual Town Meeting of 20 March 1770 elected Benj. along with Ebenezer Wood, Nathaniel Fillmore, Thomas Story, Simeon Harmon, Jr., Thomas Henderson, Leonard Robinson, Nathaniel Holmes, Samuel Safford, Jonathan Scott, Jr., Silas Pratt, Timothy Abbott, and Seth Warner Surveyors of Highways. *Bennington Proprietor's Records.*
80. Ben and his son-in-law, Daniel Mills, husband of Benj.'s daughter Hepzibah were chosen as Surveyors of Highways at the annual Town Meeting on 25 March 1772 Ben was also selected for the same job at the 30 March 1774 Town Meeting. *Bennington*

Proprietor's Records.

81. Ben and Ebenezer Wood were chosen Deerriffs on 20 March 1776. *Bennington Proprietor's Records.*
82. On 27 March 1776 Ben, Moses Robinson, and Thomas Henderson were chosen a Committee to look at the school wright and report to the next meeting. On 24 April the Committee reported it "would let said land out for a certain sum of time as a Committee hereafter chosen may think fit." That meeting chose a 7-man committee, including Ben., to lay out the land in a manner beneficial to the Town." The Committee was to report to the Town Meeting on 30 May but that meeting adjourned with no action to 11 June. There was no mention of the Committee in the 11 June meeting. *Bennington Proprietor's Records.*
83. Ben and John Armstrong were elected Town Constables at the Town Meeting on 29 March 1769. *Bennington Proprietor's Records.*
84. *Bennington Proprietor's Records.*
85. *Bennington Proprietor's Records.*
86. On 2 Dec. 1768 Ben, along with the other Selectmen, instructed Constable Simeon Harmon to warn Joseph Bingham, his wife Rachael and children James, Jeremiah, Joseph, and Ruth to depart the Town within 14 days. Harmon notified the Selectmen on 8 Dec. that the warning had been delivered. On 1 Jan. 1770 the Town Meeting voted to raise £50 to defray the cost spent on the Joseph Bingham family." On 9 May 1770 the Town voted to "convey Joseph Bingham to Norwich and to recover from Norwich the charges" paid by Bennington. *Bennington Proprietor's Records.*
87. *Bennington Proprietor's Records.*
88. John E. Goodrich, compiler and editor, *Rolls of the Soldiers in the Revolutionary War 1775 to 1883.* Published by the authority of the Vermont Legislature, The Tuttle Co., 1904, 632. [Hereafter *Vermont Soldiers.*] Abby Maria Hemmenway, editor, *The Vermont Historical Gazetteer: A Magazine Embracing A History Of Each Town, Civil, Ecclesiastical, Biographical and Military.* Vol. I, Addison, Bennington, Caledonia, Chittenden, and Essex Counties. Published by Miss A.M. Hemmenway, 1867, 143.
89. *Vermont Gazette*, 20 Oct. 1829. "Inhabitants of Bennington, 18 Dec. 1765. *Documentary History of New York*, 4:585. Signer of "The Bennington Declaration for Freedom," 1775. Vermont Historical Society Proceedings 1911-12, p. 108.
90. *The Bennington Declaration for Freedom* May 1775. Persuaded that the Salvation of the rights & liberties of America depends, under God, on the firm Union of its inhabitants, in a Vigorous prosecution of the measures necessary for its Safety, and convinced of the necessity of preventing the Anarchy and confusion which attend a dissolution of the Powers of Government; we, the freeholders and inhabitants of the town of Bennington, on the Newhampshire Grants, in the County of Albany and Province of N. York, being greatly alarmed at the avowed design of the Ministry to Raise a revenue in America, and Shocked by the bloody scene now acting in the Massachusetts bay; do in the most solemn manner resolve never to be Slaves; and do associate under all the ties of Religion, honor, & love to our Country, [to] adopt & Endeavor to Carrying into execution whatever Measurers may be recommended by [the] Continental Congress or resolved upon by our Provincial Convention for [the purpose] of preserving our Constitution and opposing the Execution of Several arbitrary and oppressive Acts of the British Parliament until a reconciliation between Great Britain and America on Constitutional principles (which we most ardently desire) can be obtained; and that we Will in all things follow the Advice of our General Committee Respecting the purposes aforesaid, the preservation of Peace and Good Order, and the Safety of individuals and Private Property. /Signed/

Ebn. Wood, Elijah Dewey, Nathan Clark, **Benj. Whipple**, Jonathan Scott, Jr., Committee. Other signers: Jeremiah Carpenter (by his mark), Josiah Fuller, David Bates, Eleazer Harwood, Benja. Hopkins, Thos. Hewett, Nathaniel Lawrence, Samuel Atwood, Jr., **David Whipple**, Cornelius Cady, Ephraim Wood, John Smith, Samuel Smith, Ephraim Smith, Sauel Atwood, Reuben Bass, Elisha Higgins, Griffin Briggs (by his mark), Jonathan Scott, Archelas Tupper, Nathan Clark, Jr., Stephen Hopkins, Josiah Brush, David Safford, Roswel Mosley, Saml. Montague, Gideon Spencer, Thomas Tupper, Lebbeus Armstrong, Saml. Blackmer, Cyrus Clark, Joseph Safford, Berijah Hulbert, Ithamar Hebard.

Armstrong, Briggs, Cyrus Clark, Nathan Clark, Jr., Hebard, Higgins, Hulbert, Jewett, Mosley, and Ephraim Smith fought under Capt. Dewey in the Battle of Bennington. Brush, David and Joseph Safford, Spencer and Archelas Tupper fought in the same Battle in Capt. Samuel Robinson's Co. John Smith appears on the rolls of both companies in that battle. Both Atwoods, Blackmer, Fuller, both Hopkins, Lawrence, Montague, Jonathan Scott, both Woods, as well as many of those who fought under Dewey and Robinson, went out on various alarms along the borders. Both **Whipples** served in a number of alarms and **Benj**. was given the rank of Lieutenant and appointed Muster Master of the troops to be raised on the west side of the Green Mountains on 25 Feb. 1782 by the Legislature. Booklet, "The Bennington Declaration for Freedom May 1775, published by the *Bennington Banner* for The Bennington Museum, Bennington, Vt. in conjunction with the publication of "The Shires of Bennington: A Sampler of Green Mountain Heritage.

91. The designation of "Mr." indicates he had been appointed a Justice of the Peace prior to this date.
92. 3 March 1777. Mr. Benjamin Whipple of Bennington, Vt. came to see me. Parkman unpublished diary, 1778
93. 5 Oct. 1778. Mr. Nathan Maynard here with a letter to him from his brother Benjamin Whipple of Rutland, Vt (now esquire) praying me to write a letter for him in answer to it which I did. Parkman unpublished diary, 1778.
94. *Bennington Proprietor's Records.*
95. Mead of Rutland, Mass. arrived in September 1769.
96. It is apparent that speed in recording was not of the essence in those days. *Rutland, Vermont. Index to Deeds 1766-1857.* Vol. 1. Salt Lake City, Utah: Family History Library film #0865406. Book 1:248.
97. *Early Families of Rutland, Vermont*, 410.
98. Rutland has changed significantly since Benjamin's time. What was the original Town of Rutland now is comprised of: (a) the City of Rutland; (b) the Town of West Rutland; (c) the Town of Proctor (created out of part of Rutland and part of Pittsford; and (d) the "left-overs" of all the above together are the present Town of Rutland (there is both a town and a city with he same name). Letter dated 3 June 1982 to the author from Robert L. Hagerman, Assistant Editor of State Papers,, State of Vermont, Office of the Secretary State, 109 State street, Montpelier, Vt. 05602.
99. Rutland—It is bordered on the north by Pittsford, Mendenon on the east, Ira and Clarendon on the south, and Ira on the west.
100. On the third Wednesday of November at noon the Proprietors met to draw for their lots and for the pine timber land. Each Right was entitled to 100 acres of land. H. Perry Smith and W. S. Rann, eds., *History of Rutland County, Vermont.* Syracuse, N.Y.: D. Mason and Co., 1886. 377. (Hereafter Smith and Raven.)
101. Grout had taken depositions from a number of persons who resided on the banks of Otter Creek on behalf of William Oliver of New Hampshire which were to be pre-

sented to the Superior Court at Exeter, N.H. Grout was tried at a Superior Court held at Rutland 10 June 1779. His only defense was to deny the jurisdiction of Vermont and he was found guilty of "treasonable practice against the state" and fined £120 plus costs of approximately £60. Oliver was tried by the same Court and fined £5 plus £3 court costs. Benjamin H. Hall, *History of Eastern Vermont*, New York: D. Applegate & Co., 1858, 328-31.

102. Smith and Raven, 388
103. Smith and Raven, 340.
104. *The Vermont Historical Gazetteer*, 1080.
105. Smith and Raven, 342.
106. *The Vermont Historical Gazetteer*, 1080.
107. Smith and Raven, 342.
108. *Rutland Town Meetings*, vol. 1, city clerk's office, Rutland, Vt.
109. Smith and Raven, 256-57.
110. The Rutland District Probate Court includes Brandon, Chittenden, Clarendon, Danby, Ira, Mendon, Middletown Springs, Mount Holly, Mount Tabor, Pittsfield, Pittsford, Proctor, Rutland, Sherburne, Shrewsbury, Tinmouth, Wallingford, and West Rutland.
111. Tinmouth was the first Shire Town until 1784 when the County Seat was moved to Rutland.
112. Other officers: Increase Mosely of Clarendon, Chief Judge; Obadiah Noble of Tinmouth, Clerk; Abraham Ives of Wallingford, Sheriff; Nathaniel Chipman of Tinmouth, State's Attorney; and Joseph Bowker, Judge of Probate. *Vermont Historical Gazetteerr*, Vol. III. Orleans and Rutland Counties. The Claremont Manufacturing Company, Claremont, N.H., 1877, 1080, 1144.
113. John M. Comstock, editor, *A List Of The Principal Civil Officers of Vermont From 1777 to 1918 Being a Revision and Enlargement of "Deming's Vermont Officers."* St. Albans Messenger Co., Publishers, St. Albans, Vt. 1918. 204, 334.
114. Smith and Raven.
115. *The Vermont Historical Gazetteer*, 3:1145.
116. Smith and Raven, 264.
117. Smith and Raven, 266
118. *The Vermont Historical Gazetteer*, 3:1145.
119. Smith and Raven.
120. Smith and Raven, 260.
121. *VERMONT*, 336-37.
122. Smith and Raven, 361-62.
123. Smith and Raven, 215.
124. Smith and Raven, 347.
125. Smith and Raven.
126. Smith and Raven, 347.
127. Smith and Raven, 387-88.
128. Smith and Raven, 348.
129. Smith and Raven, 347.
130. Smith and Raven, 366, 369. At least two petitions were submitted to the General Assembly to sanction the Orange Society. The first was dated 9 Sept. 1788 and submitted to the Legislature sitting at Manchester, Bennington Co. Benjamin, Nehemiah, David, and Jonahan Whipple were among the 27 petitioners. The Committee assigned the petition recommended it not be granted and on 15 October the General Assembly accepted the Committee report. The second petition, dated 2

Sept. 1796 and addressed to the General Assembly that was to meet at Rutland in early October was signed by 30 individuals with Nehemiah,'s name heading the list. Other Whipple signers: David, Abner, and Jonathan. Ben's missing signature may indicate he had moved into Rutland.The Committee's report to the General Assembly in November to deny the request was passed. *Vermont State Papers*, 9:21, 19:288 and 22:168.

131. The Legislature met in Rutland in 1784, 1786, 1792 through 1797, and 1802. Montpelier became the state capitol in 1808.
132. Smith and Raven, 393-94.
133. Smith and Raven, 386-87.
134. Smith and Raven, 398.
135. Jerimaiah Sheldon opened the first marble quarry in 1795 followed by Eli Hudson in 1799. The marble is veined, mottled, and shaded in the even-grained and takes a fine polish. Stones in the cemeteries of Rutland, West Rutland, and Whipple Hollow are bright and sound today. Marble for the UN building in New York City, the Supreme Court building in Washington, D.C., and President Franklin D. Roosevelt's tombstone in Hyde Park, N.Y. came from this area. Smith and Raven.
136. The Muster Master duties were similar to what a military recruiting officer does today. However, if he was unable to fulfill his quota, the Selectmen of the Town were supposed to make up the difference.
137. John E. Goodrich, compiler and editor, *Rolls of the Soldiers in the Revolutionary War 1775 to 1783*, published by the authority of the Vermont Legislature,, The Tuttle Co.., Rutland, Vt., 1904, 49, 97. [Hereafter *Vermont War Rolls*.] The major part of this volume was copied from a large manuscript volume in the office of the Adjutant-General as authorized by the General Assembly in 1841 and completed in 1843 by Chauncey L. Knapp, Acting Secretary of State. Other sources include the Henry Stevens Papers in possession of the state of New York, other documents in the Archives of New York, and volume XV of the *Archives of New York*. There are no records of Vermont soldiers or sailors in the Library of Congress because there was no Vermont in those years recognized by the Continental Congress.
138. *Vermont War Rolls*, 155, 188-9, 300.
139. *Vermont War Rolls*, 470, 750, 774.
140. Some of his activities as Justice of the Peace are found in the Nye Index to *Vermont Manuscript State Papers*. 1775: 30 Jan., vol. 37, 42. 1777: vol. 37, 36, 1 May and 7 July , vol. 8, 491, 495. 1778, vol. 37, 50, 17 Sept. vol. 22, 168. 1779: 10 Feb., vol. 37, 96, 24 Feb., vol. 37, 95, 127, 26 Feb. and 24 March, vol. 37, 100, July, vol. 8, 24. 1780: no date, vol. 8, 487, 30 March, vol. 8, 183, 29 Sept., vol. 8, 182. 1781: 27 Sept., vol. 8, 179. 1788: 17 Sept., vol. 22, 168.
141. *Manuscripts State Papers of Vermont*, vol. 37, 100. 1779: 23 March, vol. 8, 257, 25 May, vol. 8,245.
142. The job description was to document claims, advertise when and where they would accept claims, and present a list of accepted claims within a month of their appointment as Commissioner. At the time of appointment, Commissioners had to take an oath to their "fidelity and impartiality." *Rutland County, Vermont. Probate Records No. 1. 1784-1806.* Salt Lake City, Utah: Family History Library film #0028782, 47.
143. *Rutland Probate Records No. 1*, 44-45.
144. Volumes in the *State Papers of Vermont* series with indexes that include Benjamin Whipple. 1) *Charters Granted by the State of Vermont*: being Transcripts of Early Charters of Townships and Smaller Tracts of Land granted by the State of Vermont, edited by Franklin H. Deward. 2) *Journals and Proceedings of the General Assembly of the State of Vermont*. Parts I-IV edited by Walter H. Crockett; Parts V-VII edited by

Marlene B. Wallace and John A. Williams. Part I: March 1778 through June, 1781, 1924; Part II: October 1781 through October 1783, 1925; Part III: February, 1784 through March 1787, 1928, republished in 1977; Part IV: October 1787 through January 1791, 1929; Part V: October 1791 through November 1792, 1971; Part VI: October 1793 through November 1794, 1972; Part VII: October 1795 through November 1796, 1973; Part VIII: October 1797 through November 1799, 1979; *Reports of Committees to the General Assembly of the State of Vermont: March 9, 1778 to Oct. 16, 1801,* edited by Walter H. Crockett, 1932; *Petitions for Grants of Land 1778-1811*, edited by Mary Greene Nye, 1939; *Sequestration, Confiscation and Sale of Estates [Loyalist material 1777-1782]* edited by Mary Greene Nye, 1941; *General Petitions: 1778-1787*, edited by Edward A. Hoyt, 1952; *General Petitions: 1788-1792*, edited by Edward A. Hoyt; *Laws of Vermont, 1781-1784*, edited by John A. Williams, 1965; *The Public Papers of Governor* Thomas Chittenden, 1778-1789 – 1790-1797, edited by John A. Williams, 1969. Readers interested in any of these volumes are referred to: Custodian of Public Records, Vermont Dept. of Libraries, Montpelier, Vermont 05602.

145. Thompson.

146. Sessions usually lasted about four weeks and its business consisted principally of granting new townships, levying a small tax, and passage of necessary laws. Frequent petitions were received and granted to establish lotteries to aid towns in the building and repairing of bridges and roads; to remove obstructions from the channel of the Connecticut river; to enable individuals to pursue private enterprises such as the building of a malt and brew house. It even granted one to furnish a blind man the means to go to Europe for an operation on his eyes and at least one petition asked for a lottery to build a church. Robinson.

147. The religious test was expunged from the Constitution in 1793. "Journals and Proceedings of the General Assembly, *State Papers of Vermont*, vol. 3. Bellows Falls, Vt: Secretary of State, P.H. Gobie Press, Inc., 1924, 125. [Hereafter *State Papers.*]

148. *State Papers*, 3:127-8.

149. *State Papers*, 3:131-2, 144, 157.

150. Abraham Whipple was a descendant of Capt. John Whipple of Providence, R.I. He commanded the privateer, *Game Cock* during the French and Indian War (1754-63) and captured 23 French vessels in 1759-60. He led the party that burned the British revenue cutter *Gaspee* in 1772, an exploit considered by many historians to have been the first overt act of the Revolutionary War. During the early days of the war he was in charge of the Rhode Island Navy, before joining the Continental Navy as a Captain and one of its ranking officers and later receiving the rank of Commodore. He was a member of Commodore Esek Hopkins' expedition to the Bahamas in 1776, carried Congreses' dispatch about the American victory at the Battle of Saratoga to France in 1777, and commanded a squadron that captured eight East Indiamen, later sold in Boston for over 1 million pounds in 1779. This was the richest bounty of the entire war. At the time Navy was granted and chartered, Whipple was on parole as a British prisoner of war. The Legislature changed the name to Charleston in 1825 in honor of Whipple's historic defense of Charleston, S.C. during the Revolution. Esther Munroe Swift, *Vermont Place Names,*Brattleboro Vt.: The Stephen Green Press, 1977, 219, 344-45.

151. "The Vermont Bench and Bar," Judge Frank L. Fish, Crockett's *History of Vermont*, 5:365.

152. Chairman Whipple reported to the House on 20 Feb. 1781that the Committee recommended that the widow Elizabeth Baldwin be granted 100 acres if she could supply to the state that her "children would not become any charge to this state." *State*

Papers, 3:204.

153. As Committee chair, Ben reported to the House on 12 April 1781 that there was validity in Taylor's assertion about title to a parcel of land but the Committee had insufficient knowledge to make a decision. It therefore asked that the Taylor petition be referred to the next Session giving Taylor time to have the land surveyed before the Assembly confirmed title. *State Papers*, 3:220-1, 225
154. Chairman Ben Whipple reported to the House on 22 Feb. 1781 that his Committee to "Settle the Line Between the State of New York & this State" recommended that the Governor and Council should give Vermont's Agents "Instructions and full Power to Settle & Establish the Boundary Line." *Records of the Governor and Council of the State of Vermont*, vol. 2. Montpelier, Vt.: Steam Press of J. & J. M. Polard, 1874, 82.
155. The Committee report was presented by Ben Whipple and accepted. It stated there were about 150 men in the garrisons at Pittsfield and Castleton and about 80 men in the garrisons east of the mountains. They recommended that 400 men be immediately raised for a six week period with 350 to be stationed at Pittsford and Castleton and the remainder on the east side of the mountains. *State Papers*, 3:131-32; *Records of the Governor and Council*. 2:74.
156. *State Papers*, 3:253.
157. Colonels Gideon Warren and Thomas Lee and Mr. Ithamer Hibbard were appointed to the West Side Committee and Captains Elisha Burton and Abner Seelye and Benj. Emmons, Esq., to the East Side Committee. *State Papers*, 3:188-92, 198-201.
158. *State Papers*, 3:226-27.
159. *State* Papers, 3:fn 129.
160. Moses, six years younger than Ben, was born in Grafton, Mass., son of Deacon Jacob and grandson of Deacon James Whipple. James Whipple was a younger brother of Ben's grandfather, Jonathan. Moses was one of the earliest settlers in Croydon where he became a major public figure and was known as "the George Washington of Croydon." See generation five in the Genealogical Section for Moses' biography.
161. "Friday 6 April 1781. Mr. Moses Whipple of Croydon was elected a Representative to the House from the east side of the Connecticut river. He produced his credentials and took the oath to qualify." *State Papers*, 3:215. "Friday 22 June 1781. Moses Whipple was chairman of a Committee of three to make inquiry of the Board of War as to the number of men ordered by them to be raised and where stationed." *State Papers*, 3:256
162. The Convention met 9 May 1781 with several adjournments to the 15th in Cambridge, N.Y. with Delegates from Hoosack, Scorticook, [Schaghticoke] Cambridge, Saratoga, Upper-White-Creek, Black Creek, Granville, Skeensborough, Greenfield, Kingsbury, Fort-Edward, and Little Hoosack. Article 1st passed by the Convention asked that a tract of land lying north of a line, being extended from the north line of the Massachusetts to Hudsons river, and east of said river, and south of lattitude 45, be considered a part of Vermont and the inhabitants thereof as free citizens. Article 2nd asked that the military force of Vermont be exerted in their defense against any insurrection, invasion or incursion whatsoever. Article 3rd asked that Vermont apply to the Congress of the United States for admittance to the Union. Article 4th asked for credit for Continental taxes paid into New York. Article 5th that all Court actions be transferred from New York to Vermont. Article 6th that the change of jurisdiction will not effect or alienate private property. The Committee appointed by the Vermont Legislature agreed to all Articles and proposed the following to the Convention: Article 1st That the independence of Vermont be held sacred and no member of the Legislature will do anything to en-danger the existence, independence, or well being of the state by referring its independency to the arbitrament of any power. Article 2nd

When Vermont is united with the American states, disputes between it and any other state respecting boundary lines will be submitted to Congress or other Tribunal mutually agreed to for settlement. These Articles were agreed to by Delegates to the Cambridge Convention. *State Papers*, 3:240-42.

163. *State Papers*, 3:221-23.
164. *Journals and Proceedings of the General Assembly of the State of Vermont. 1781-1782* Vol. 3. Bellows Falls, N.H., P.H. Gobie Press, Inc., 1925, 4, 6, 8-10, 15, 23-4, 33-4, 37. [Hereafter *Journals and Proceedings.]*
165. The Farnsworth petition was about his inability to get a deed to land he had acquired on contract, settled on, and made considerable improvement on. The original seller had left the country and Farnsworth had no one to pay the balance to. Ben's Committee recommended the petition be granted contingent on Farnsworth paying the State Treasury £61 in silver money. The House accepted the report. *Journals and Proceedings*, 3:48, 58, 63, 67, 78.
166. *Journals and Proceedings*, 3:49.
167. *Journals and Proceedings*, 3:67.
168. *Journals and Proceedings*, 3:47.
169. *Journals and Proceedings*, 3:122.
170. *Journals and Proceedings*, 3:108.
171. Thompson.
172. Ibid.
173. *Journals and* Proceedings, 3:119, 123.
174. *Records of the Governor and Council of the State of Vermont*, vol. 3, Montpelier, 1875, 6. *Journals and* Proceedings, 3:127-28.
175. Since Vermont considered itself an independent entity, it was conferring the full power of Ambassadors to represent it. *Journals and Proceedings, 3:141.*
176. *Journals and Proceedings*, 3:111-12.
177. *Journals and Proceedings*, 3:148, 150.
178. *Journals and Proceedings*, 3:186-88. The Assembly addressed 11 issues it considered important: 1) That the Committee appointed to revise the laws be called on to make its report. 2) that the Auditors be called on to know whether they have completed a settlement with the Treasurer and others. 3) That the militia be put under proper regulations for the defense of this state. 4) That some provision be made for quieting ancient settlers and that the laws be opened for land trials. 5) That the Treasurer be instructed in regard to the payment of interest money now due on state notes. 6) That some effectual measures be concerted for the settlement of confiscated estates, the payment of debts or demands on the same. 7) That some method be adapted for a more equitable mode of taxation. 8) That some method be taken for the collection of Rates of those towns that have not legally made out any lists for the year past. 9) that some method be taken for printing and distributing the Journals of the House. 10) That some effectual measures be taken to adjust the cost of the 300 men raised in 1782. 11) That an Act be made adopting the scale of depreciation of the several United States so far as may concern bargains, debts, and contracts made and brought into this state for settlement; and to revise the depreciation in this state. *State Papers of Vermont*, vol. 3. Bellows Falls, Vt.: The Wynham Press, 1928, 7-8.
179. *Journals and Proceedings*, 3:191-92, 201, 204. The petitions from Samuel Bartlet and Stephen Bradley, Selectmen from Sunderland, sought credit for 314 pounds of salted beef because it had spoiled. The petition from Ben and Samuel Williams, Selectmen from Rutland had to do with highways. *State Papers*, vol. 3:5-6, 15-16, 19, 22, 41-42. He was House Chair of the Joint Committee appointed March 4, 1784 to resolve the sale

of 50 acres on Otter Creek owned by David Remingon that had been confiscated by the state. *Journals and* Proceedings, 3:40.

180. The October 1784 Session approved the petition and the Township of Middletown was created. Its name was changed to Middletown Springs in 1884. *State Papers,* 3:22, 28-9.

181. The House adopted a a ten-item calendar for the year: 1) Legislate effectual measures for the settlement and support of a preached gospel and enable towns to tax themselves to erect buildings for public worship. 2) Continue work on revising laws. 3)Devise effectual measures to quiet the present disorders in the southern part of Windham county. 4) Require the Auditors to account for their settlement with the treasurer and others. 5) Develop a suitable method to discharge debts and raise funds to support government. 6) Develop regulations for the militia. 7) Determine what money will be considered currency in the state and develop measures to prevent counterfeiting. 8) Find a way to work with ancient settlers and develop a law for the trial of land titles. 9) Authorize the complete survey of the state. 10) Develop alternatives for the fee bill. *Journal and Proceedings,* 3:189-90.

182. *Journals and Proceedings*, 3:191.

183. *State Papers*, 3:45.

184. 1) That the Legislature take into consideration the Bill passed at the last Session entitled, an Act to enable persons who have entered and made improvements on land under color of title who may be driven out of possession by a legal trial at law to recover &c. 2) That an Act be passed to put the militia under proper regulation. 3) That an Act be passed to explain the law respecting appeals and reviews in civil actions. 4) That the Committee to join a Committee from the Council appointed last Session, to receive from the Committee of Revision such Acts as might be revised and examine and report the same &c. To be called upon to report. 5) That the Land Committee be called upon for a a return of the state of lands committed to their trust. 6) That the Surveyor General be called upon for a return of the surveys he may have completed. 7) that the Auditors be called upon to make report. 8) That his Excellency be requested to inform this House what has been done in consequence of an Act passed at the last Session entitled "An act for the purpose of opening a free trade to and through the Province of Quebec. 9) That an Act be passed to enable assignees of negotiable notes, given for money only to recover the same as on inland bills of exchange. 10) That an Act be passed for a more equitable mode of repairing highways. 11) To devise ways and means to pay the interest due on the public securities and likewise to defray the Continent charges of government. The House voted to reject articles 9 and 10 as a part of its Agenda. *State Papers*, 3:119-120.

185. Thompson.

186. The National Mint was established in 1786 and initially only coined copper coins. Gold and silver coins were imported from Europe.

187. Tender—An offer of money, services, etc. made to satisfy an obligation.

188. A tender law requires two forms of commodity money in circulation to be respected as having the same face value in the market place.

189. David P. Szatmary, *Shays' Rebellion The Making of an Agrarian Insurrection*, Amherst, Mass.: The University of Massachusetts Press, 1980, 37-9, 54.

190. Szatmary, 78, 117-18.

191. "Rutland County Insurrection—1786," Rev. Frederic W. Holland, A.M., of Cambridge, *Register*, vol. 26, April 1872, 126-131.

192. *Governor and Council*, 2:177.

193. *State* Papers, 3:18, 75, 131, 195.

NEHEMIAH WHIPPLE AND SARAH ROBERT

Nehemiah*[6] *Whipple *(Benjamin[5], Francis[4], Jonathan[3], Joseph[2], Matthew[1], Matthew[A]) was born 25 March 1750; died 22 January 1809. He married before 1777 in Massachusetts Sarah Robert. He was a farmer and veteran of the Revolutionary War.*

Children of Nehemiah and Sarah Whipple:

i. *Wright, born 13 March 1777; died 15 March 1841. Married Rachel Steven.*
ii. *Betsey, born 20 March 1779; died 9 March 1841. Married Samuel Morgan.*
iii. *Anner, born 26 June 1781; died in November 1824. Married Ira Carpenter.*
iv. *Phoebe, born 6 October 1783. Married John Page.*
v. *Abel, born in 1785; died 1 August 1789.*
vi. *Enoch, born 10 September 1788; died 10 October 1857. Married Catharine Shaw.*
vii. *Abraham, born in 1790; died after 1850. Married Parthina Dimmock.*
viii. *Ada, born in 1791; died 20 January 1797.*
ix. *Nathan, born 21 April 1794; died 3 December 1863. Married Laura Mixer.*
x. *Zilpha, born 22 October 1795; died 22 February 1803.*

Nehemiah, the oldest child of Ben and Hepzibah, was born in Hardwick, Worcester county, Massachusetts and spent his first eleven years there before the family moved to Bennington, New York, later part of the New Hampshire Grants, and finally Vermont.[1] He undoubtedly began school in Hardwick where he learned to read, write, and cipher.[2] The author has been unable to find any references to Nehemiah in Hardwick histories and few in Bennington Based on his age while living in those towns, this is not an unusual circumstance.

Virtually no information has been found about his wife Sarah Robert of Providence, R.I. She was born sometime before 1752 to John Robert.[3] Her mother's name remains a mystery. Sarah and Nehemiah were married

before March 13, 1777 when their first child, Wright, was born. Where they were married is unknown but it was probably in Rutland county, Vermont. All ten of their children were born in that county and presumably in Whipple Hollow where their farm was. Whipple Hollow is in West Rutland and adjacent to the Township of Pittsfield.

Seven of their children survived to adulthood while three died at an early age: Wright, March 13, 1777, died 15 March 1841 at age 64 in West Rutland;[4] Betsey, March 20, 1779, died 9 March 1841 in Rutland county at 62;[5] Anner, June 26, 1781,[6] died in November 1824 in Athens, Athens county, Ohio at 43;[7] Phoebe, October 6, 1783,[8] date and place of death unknown; Enoch, September 10, 1788,[9] died October 10, 1857 in Benton county, Iowa at 69; Abraham, in 1790,[10] died in Pike county, Ohio after 1850;[11] Nathan, April 21, 1794,[12] died 3 December 1863 in Saybrook, Ashtabula county Ohio at 69;[13] Abel, in 1785, died August 1, 1789 in Whipple Hollow at 4;[14] Ada in 1791, died January 20, 1797 in Whipple Hollow at 6;[15] and Zilpha, October 22, 1795, died February 22, 1803 in Whipple Hollow at 8.[16] Losing three children at ages 4, 6, and 8 must have been very hard on the family. Sarah bore her children over a period of 18 years. The first four were born at two year intervals.

Nehemiah did not involve himself in politics or public service as did his father, Benjamin, and grandfather, Francis. The author found only one record indicating his participation in Township affairs. He and Henry Strong were elected Haywards at the annual Rutland Town Meeting March 17, 1781.[17]

It appears that Nehemiah moved to Rutland county before other family members. Land records show he witnessed a deed there in November 1773 and purchased Lot 20 on the Castleton river from William Roberts on May 29, 1774 at age 24.[18] If he began residence at that time, it is probable he and Sarah were married in Rutland county. It is also probable that Ben and Hepzibah and their younger children lived with Nehemiah and Sarah when they first moved to Rutland, probably in 1777. Ben purchased 100 acres from James Mead in 1778 and additional land from Nehemiah on January 4, 1780.[19]

Nehemiah probably moved to Rutland county because the Bennington family farm had too few acres to support him and his three brothers, Ben, Jr., David, and Jonathan. Rutland county had plenty of virgin soil, an abundance of water power, standing timber, and plentiful game. Rutland town stretched from north to south over a gracefully rounded low hill, a foothill of the Green Mountains. This hill sloped westward to Otter Creek Valley. Towering on the east were the majestic peaks of the Green Mountain range. The less important Taconic range stretched west of Otter Creek, their sides covered with forests.

He would have arrived in Rutland county with a rifle, ax, perhaps a dog and horse, and provisions of corn meal, pork, and rum. After building a brush shelter, his routine would have been work from dawn until dark with no company except the wild creatures. His first task was to clear the land felling as many trees as possible before summer. After setting aside logs for a house and fencing, he would have burnt the rest. The more trees drying when the hot weather came, the sooner he could burn them.

The small communities in Rutland county were separated by stretches

Whipple Hollow Cemetery, Rutland Co. VT. Several Revolutionary War Veterans, including Nehemiah Whipple buried here.

of forest and uncultivated land. Short as distance between towns seem to us in 2005, trips were only taken on urgent business. People had to depend on themselves and became self reliant and full of initiative. Most pioneers had robust health, great strength, and could see their fortunes improve with each swing of the ax and every hour of toil. They welcomed the unearned increment — which many people today find obnoxious –when every new family who settled near them added to the value of their land.[20]

It took three to four years to create a farm. Because of all the stumps, plows were ineffective and Nehemiah would have used a V-shaped implement built of stout timbers braced with strong iron spikes to break the soil. Apple trees were among the first item to be planted. Log cabins were frequently built over the low stump of a great tree providing a built-in table. Usually the family's first cabin had two rooms, three glass-less windows hung with blankets or deerskin, and a stone chimney. The floor was either beaten earth or split logs laid with the flat side up. After marriage, he and Sarah would have acquired household goods and more domestic animals which meant he had to build fences and a shelter to house them.

Nehemiah either covered his virgin soil with the ash to enrich it or if an "ashie"[21] were within a reasonable distance, he took the ash there to be made into pearlash and potash. Some early settlers made crude asheries using a kettle, an arch, and a barrel. The barrel was filled with ashes, water poured in at the top, and collected at the bottom when it seeped through as lye. The lye was boiled and reduced to potash and sold for from $4 to $5 a hundredweight.[22]

With the copious amount of wood ashes, a natural result of homesteading activities, and a plentiful supply of animal fat from the butchering of animals they used for food, were all the ingredients needed for soap making which became a spring time chore. It was generally the wife and daughters job.[23]

Nehemiah devoted most of his life to farming but this laborious life had an occasional break for fishing between lulls of spring work and haymaking. Trout were plentiful in the clear mountain streams while the lakes and rivers offered pike, pickerel, perch, and bass. In May and June salmon from the sea returned to the Connecticut river and to the tributaries of Lake Champlain. He undoubtedly went hunting when the crops were housed and the splendor of the autumnal woods and fields were fading to somber monotony of gray and dusted with a light sprinkle of the snows of early winter. Large flocks of wild fowl crammed the marshes and deer often came down from the mountains to feed with domestic cattle in the hillside pastures. He would have augmented his cash income by trapping the muskrat and mink who lived in every stream and marsh and the

fisher and sable who ranged the mountain forests.

His first crop was probably corn for corn meal which was made into mush or hasty pudding eaten with milk or maple sugar or baked into a johnny cake.[24] Later crops would have included wheat, oats, barley, and rye. Buckwheat, valuable to the beekeeper, followed. Nehemiah probably also raised flax and hemp, a source of linen and tow[25] for clothing. A vegetable garden with all the usual things except potatoes, which were still novel, was grown every summer. Springs were on most hillsides so good water was abundant.

Most farmers had horses, at least a yoke of oxen, cows, sheep, hogs and fowl. The horses were used for both work and riding. In addition to a barn the farm would have included out buildings and eventually the family would have acquired a cart, sleigh, iron plough, saddle, saddle bags, horse collars with draw ropes and lead lines, harrow teeth, whippletree, chain and rope, yoke and irons, pitchforks, hoes, rakes, fish spear, hooks, cow and sheep horns, etc.

Most of the family's food came from the farm. The usual meat was pork; sweetening came from the maple tree or wild bees. Nature provided strawberries, raspberries, blackberries, and in some places blueberries and cranberries. He would have used wild cherries to flavor his rum and Sarah would have turned wild grapes into appetizing preserves. The rich butternuts were ground with flour to make bread and the root of the sweet flag[26] was an ingredient for homemade candy. Bark was used to dye homemade clothes.

Wheat was usually the most abundant crop. It was responsible for a part of almost every farmer's income and was a principal part of the family's breadstuff after the pioneer's Johnnycake fell into disrepute and it became more honorable to eat poor wheat-bread than good Johnnycake.

The State encouraged wool growing by offering incentives and almost every farmer became a part-time shepherd making sheep husbandry a leading Vermont industry. After the Spanish Merino was introduced, the fineness and weight of the fleeces increased considerably and the tell-tale bell of the flock's leader was heard everywhere. Half blood merino wool sold for seventy-five cents a pound in 1809 and 1810. Full blood brought $2.00.[27] Shearing time was the great festival of the year. The shearers were treated more as guests than as laborers. The barn's empty bays and scaffolds resounded with the busy click of shears, jokes, songs, and the laughter of the shearers and the bleating of the ewes and lambs from morning till evening.

The household would have had a woolen wheel, a linen wheel, cider barrels, dye tubs, meat tubs, wash tub, churn, pewter platters and plates, knives and forks, spoons, table cloth, brass thimble, feather beds, sheets,

bolster, and coverlet. Nehemiah's personal items would have included a great coat, a straight bodied coat, beaver hat, vest of plain cloth, leather breeches, shoe buckles, leather shaving strap, various small tools, etc.

Most homes had a great Bible, a small Bible, Psalm Book, perhaps a small Sermon Book, a book on Revelations, a few leather bound books of history, biography, and travel and adventure. These were treasured by these isolated settlers and all family members eagerly listened as the reader, with the glare of the open fire supplemented with tallow dips[28] for light, read to them with the long howl of the wolf or the roar of the winter wind intruding during his pauses. Their heat came from an open fire in the drafty cabin.

As time passed the cabin became crowded with spinning wheels and handlooms, guns rested on forked sticks over the fireplace, powder horns and bullet pouches hung on pegs, bunched ears of drying corn and quartered apples strung on strings to dry decorated the walls. There were kettles, a churn, home-made cradle, pewter dishes, etc.

In the winter Nehemiah and his sons would have spent the time making tubs, chairs, benches, wooden dishes, bowls, wooden troughs to catch the maple sap, ox yokes, sleds, milking stools, harness pegs, and other handy things for the barn. Sarah and the girls would have spun and wove and made all the cloth for the family clothes and the household linen. They were probably responsible for the tallow dips which took at least a day to make enough to last the year.

The family log house was eventually replaced by a frame house with fireplace in the kitchen where the samp-pot[29] swung on the trammel[30] and the bake-kettle lay embedded with embers. The family gathered here in the evening where the womenfolk sewed, knitted, and carded wool; the men fashioned ax-helves[31] and ox-bows;[32] and the children popped corn on a hot shovel and studied their next day's school lessons. The brick oven, part of the massive chimney stack, was heated on baking days with wood specially prepared for it.

With neighbors came a hospitality and neighborly helpfulness. Bees were held to build houses and barns, pulling stumps, and piling stones. There were occasional neighborhood wolf hunts and a "sugaring off" party in the spring. Neighbors sat with the sick, laid out the dead, and helped the bereaved family during their time of sorrow.

Men and boys wore homespun or in-tow breeches, long woolen stockings knit at home, collarless flannel shirts, and until the cobbler came, moccasins. Their straw hats were braided by their womenfolk in the summer and their winter caps were made from fur-bearing animals — beaver, otter, muskrat, raccoon, or squirrel. Women and girls wore handwoven and home-made flannel gowns, under-shirts and pantalets.[33] They

wrapped shawls around their head and shoulders in winter and wore leggings and thick woolen stockings over their footgear. This provided warmth and the wool clung to the packed snow and kept them from slipping. They wore linsey-woolsey gowns[34] and straw shaker bonnets in summer. Both boys and girls went barefoot in warm weather.

Washing clothes was an arduous process and for most families was not a weekly chore. Some households only washed four times a year. The labor-saver of the late 1700s was a "pounder," a pole capped by a lock of wood drilled with holes. It moved up and down in a "pounding barrel" and suctioned water through the clothes, anticipating the action of the modern washing machine. Wet clothes were spread on the ground or draped over a bush to dry until the clothesline became widely available in the nineteenth century and with it a technological marvel, the clothespin.

Cheese-making was an art and using a portion of saltpeter with common salt was critical to keeping the cheese sweet. *The New-Hampshire Magazine* of June-November 1793 published a recipe which made "an excellent quality" cheese which Sarah may have read and followed.[35] The same issue of the magazine published "An Original Receipt to Cure Cancers," using old red oak bark. Its author, H. Killey of Barnstable county, Pennsylvania, said it cured the cancer when being "cut four times by a doctor" didn't. The recipe involved burning a bushel of old red oak bark to ashes, boiling the ashes in three gallons of water until reduced to one gallon, strained and boiled again until reduced to a thick substance similar to buttermilk or cream, then spread on a silk or lint plaister[36] and renewed every two hours until the roots of the cancer were well cured. Killey warned it might take four or six plaisters and not to be discouraged if it took twelve.

Use of liquor was a universal custom and the household was mortified if it could not offer guests a portion of "strong waters." The cellar of every farmhouse had a generous supply of apple cider, some of which was converted into the more potent apple-jack, known as cider-brandy in early Vermont. This and New England rum were the preferred drinks.

In October of 1773 Rutland's first Congregational Church and Society (the West Society) was formed with 14 members. There were about 30 families in the area at that time.[37] None were Whipples. In September 1778, 24 residents of Pittsfield along with seven from the Whipple Hollow section of West Rutland petitioned the Legislature for permission to organize a new parish to be known as the Orange Parish.[38] They had already adopted a Covenant and were seeking legitimacy. Nehemiah, his father Benjamin, and brothers David and Jonathan were among the seven Whipple Hollow petitioners.

The Legislative Committee appointed to hear the petition asked repre-

sentatives of Rutland's West Society for its position on the petition. The Society was opposed, causing the Committee to vote against the petition. On November 15 the General Assembly heard the Committee's report and approved its recommendation.[39] Despite the Assembly rejection, the Orange Parish continued as a Church and built a Meeting House and retained Abraham Carpenter of Plainfield, N.H. as Pastor. He was known as "a strict Congregationalist" and served until his death in 1797.[40]

Eight years later (September 2, 1796) a second petition to legalize the Orange Society was presented to the General Assembly meeting in Rutland. It was signed by 31 individuals with Nehemiah's name leading the list. His brothers David and Jonathan also signed but his father's name was missing.[41] An Abner Whipple also signed. This petition alleged that the mountains made it almost impossible for them to attend churches in Rutland and Pittsford and noted they had united about 10 years previously and formed a Society to obtain a preached gospel and hired Rev. Abraham Carpenter as Pastor. The petition noted that Carpenter was still their Pastor and there was "good harmony and agreement" among them. They were concerned that they were not properly incorporated and the petition asked that the Orange Society be allowed to incorporate and be given the same privileges of other Societies of the same nature. The petition was referred to a committee chaired by Amos Mark which voted on October 5 to deny the request. The General Assembly accepted the Report and concurred with its recommendation in November. Despite the legislative rejection, the Orange Parish continued to function.

The Meeting House, if similar to others of the period, had no heat and the congregation kept itself from freezing in winter with thick garments and little foot-stoves of sheet iron. The school the Whipple children attended would have been built of logs. The seats were rough slabs on legs driven into augur-holes. Desks, if there were any, were of like fashion. A great fireplace disbursed heat through half the room with the rest of the room too chilly for comfort. Many a Vermonter of the time learned to read, write, and cipher to the "rule o' three" in these cheerless surroundings.

The old custom of bees though no longer needed, continued for the sake of merry-making. Young and old of both sexes joined the husking bee when the corn was ripe. When their work was done they feasted on pumpkin pie, doughnuts, and cider. Then the barn floor was cleared of the husks, the fiddler played, and the huskers spent the balance of the evening doing the country dance and the French four. The first laborious stage of the quilting bee was women only with the men called in to help in "shaking the quilt" which also required the services of the fiddler and the resulting dance.

There were apple or paring bees in the long evenings of late autumn. Young and old came and lent a hand in paring, coring, and stringing the sour fruit of the un-grafted orchards for next summer's use. When the work was done they danced and played till the spent tallow dips followed the stars at dawn.

The first touch of spring stirred the sap in the maples and the sugar making-began. The tapping was done with a gouge.[42] The sap dripped from spouts of sumac stems into rough-hewn troughs and from there into buckets carried on a neck-yoke.[43] The collector made the rounds on snowshoes and deposited the sap into a big trough set close to the boiling place. The open fire faced a shanty that sheltered the sugar-maker from rain and "sugar snow"[44] while he worked all day and into the night with only the returning crow and squirrel and unseen owl and fox for companions. The sap-boiling, which sweetened the woods with sugar-scented vapor, was done in the great potash kettle swung on a huge log crane. All the young folks were invited to the "sugaring off" festivities and their chatter and laughter became a merry party.[45]

It is probable that Betsey, Anner, or Phoebe met their future husbands at one of the many bees they attended. Their wedding would have been celebrated with little ostentation and much hearty good fellowship. The only gifts were home-made beds, homespun and hand-woven sheets, table cloths, and towels given by parents and near relatives. There was no wedding trip. After the celebration the couple began the honeymoon in their new home assuming the burdens of married life that was not likely to grow lighter in the years ahead. If the burden became heavy and the light of love faded, separation or divorce was seldom the answer.

Nehemiah's descendants qualify for membership in the Daughters and Sons of the American Revolution based on his war service in 1778, 1779, 1780, 1781. His first service was in November 1778 as one of 22 members, including his father, in Capt. Simeon Wright's company in Col. Gideon Warren's regiment of militia. The service was attributed to both Vermont and the United States and included seven days. Pay was on the basis of £2 10 shillings per month. Each soldier received 11 shillings 8 pence.[46]

He was among 33 men mustered to serve in Wright's company and Warren's regiment for a three-day Alarm at Neshobe [now Brandon, Rutland county, Vermont] beginning November 22, 1779. The distance marched was 10 miles. His pay was 10 shillings 8 pence.[47] He participated in the Scout to the Lake against Crown Point and then to Ticonderoga under the same Captain and Colonel the last week of March 1780. His father and brother David served in the same company.[48] His second muster in 1780 was for 30 days beginning October 12 and ending November 12. This militia was mustered for an Alarm in the state. Nehemiah was in Capt. Nathaniel Blan-

chard's company in Col. Ebenezer Allen's regiment. His father and brothers David and Jonathan served in the same Alarm.[49] His last muster was in October 1781 for duty at Castleton, Rutland county, Vermont where he served for four days. His father and brother David served 10 days. Forty-five men served under Capt. Nathaniel Blanchard in Col. Thomas Lee's regiment of militia during this call-up.[50]

It must have been hard on Sarah when Nehemiah was mustered for this service. At the time of his first call-up in 1778, their only child, Wright, was eight months old. Betsey, their second born, was eight months old when he was called to service in 1779 and Anner their third was five months old at the time of his final call-up in 1781 when Wright was three years seven months and Betsey was two years three months. With three young children, Sarah must have been worried sick during his various times of service. However, she must have taken some comfort from the fact that her father-in-law Ben and brothers-in-law, David and Jonathan and their families, were on near-by farms and could provide assistance if she needed any.

Nehemiah was involved in a number of land transactions including the Two Heroes grant in Grand Isle county in 1779 along with his father.[51] That tract was subsequently divided into what today are the towns of North Hero, Grand Isle, and South Hero, Grand Isle county in extreme northwestern Vermont. When he purchased his first Rutland county land from William Roberts May 29, 1774, he was identified as being of Bennington. He bought additional land from Roberts in 1780 and later from a Joel Roberts. This latter transaction was not recorded until after his death in 1809.[52] He sold land to his father (both were identified as "of Rutland") and to Elnathan Moses in 1782,[53] to his brother David in 1792,[54] to Abraham Carpenter in 1796,[55] and to Charles Moses in 1798.[56] Carpenter was the minister for the Orange Society.

President George Washington was held in the highest regard by Vermonters and the rest of the nation.[57] Upon his death on December 14, 1799, Nehemiah and his family would have joined the other citizens of the state in a month-long mourning period. Both Houses of Congress adjourned immediately upon receipt of the news. Rep. John Marshall of Virginia (later Chief Justice of the Supreme Court for 34 years), in a speech to the House the next day said:

"Our Washington is no more! The hero, the patriot, and the sage of America; the man on whom in times of danger every eye was turned and all hopes placed lives now only in his own great actions and in the hearts of an affectionate and afflicted people."

There were similar proceedings in the Senate and a Joint Committee appointed which reported a series of Resolutions providing for the erec-

tion of a marble monument to commemorate the great events in the military and political life of Washington (the Washington Monument); for a funeral procession from Congress Hall to the German Lutheran church on December 26; and for an oration to be delivered before both Houses of Congress on that day by a member.

The Congress recommended that the people of the country wear crepe on their left arms in mourning for 30 days and that President John Adams send a copy of the Resolutions to Mrs. Washington with a letter of condolence. The funeral ceremony was carried out as Congress had Resolved and Gen. Henry Lee, a Member of the House from Virginia, delivered the oration, portraying Washington thusly:

"First in war, first in peace, and first in the hearts of his countrymen, he was second to none in the humble and endearing scenes of private life; pious, just, humane, temperate, and sincere; uniform, dignified, and commanding; his example was as edifying to all around him as were the effects of that example lasting. To his equals he was condescending; to his inferiors kind; and to the dear object of his affections exemplarily tender. Correct throughout, vice shuddered in his presence, and virtue always felt his fostering hand; the purity of his private character gave effulgence[58] to his public virtues. His last scene comported with the whole tenor of his life. Although in extreme pain, not a sign, not a groan escaped him; and with undisturbed serenity he closed his well-spent life. Such was the man America has lost; such was the man whom our nation mourns."[59]

Nehemiah experienced the worst winter of his life in 1803-04.[60] Sarah's last hard winter—worse than 1803-04—was in 1811-12 when many, including adults, died of spotted or lung fever (probably pneumonia). She also lived through the disastrous flood of July 1811 which carried away three-fourths of the mills and bridges in Rutland.[61] It's possible Nehemiah and some of his sons were present on Lake Champlain in 1808, a year after Robert Fulton's success on the Hudson river, when a steamer was launched at Burlington. Reports state that the spectators were astonished as it steamed at the rate of five miles per hour.[62]

By the time of Nehemiah's death in 1809, the dangers and privations of pioneer life had passed. The "plumping-mill"—the rude device for pounding corn in a huge mortar, with a pestle hung from a spring pole — went out of use and the long journeys on foot or on horseback to the grist-mill miles away were no longer necessary. The wild streams were tamed to the turning of millstones, as well as to plying the saws that were incessantly gnawing into the heart of the woods. The wild forest had receded and given way to broad fields of tilth,[63] meadow and pastures. Stumps and log heaps were replaced by a land dotted with herds and flocks. The jangle of the sheep-bell was as frequent as the note of the

thrush in the half-wild upland pastures.[64] Orchards bloomed in the spring and every acre with 40 growing trees was exempted from taxation.

When Nehemiah died January 22, 1809, the home farm of approximately 249 acres was left to Sarah and sons Wright, Enoch, Abraham, and Nathan. Sarah was appointed guardian of Enoch, 20, Abraham, 18, and Nathan, 15, and was given use, for the rest of her natural life, of the south room of the dwelling house, one-third part of the kitchen, one-third part of the buttery (?)[65] and one-third part of all of the upper rooms.

While a copy of Nehemiah's will has not been found there are references to it in probate records. The division of the land was ordered on May 8, 1809: 83 acres went to Sarah and approximately 41 acres to each son. The sons, except Wright, were to receive one-third of the house and outbuildings upon Sarah's death. Enoch's portion of the original division included the cider mill and the apple orchard known by the name "Old Nursery." The hand-writing of the 1809 division of the estate is extremely difficult to interpret and has not been reproduced here.[66]

After Sarah died September 22, 1812 her dower land portion was divided among the four sons and her three married daughters received equal portions of the value of the personal property. Probate Judge William Harrington directed Samuel Fairfield, Caleb Hendee, and Amos Kellog on November 9 to impartially divide the real and personal estate among the "devises in proportion and according to the will." They were instructed not to divide the land if any proportion would become disputable or uncertain. They were also directed to give timely notice to any interested parties that wanted to be present when the division was determined. They completed their work on the last day of 1812 with the following results:

Abraham received a tract of land bounded as follows, viz; Beginning at a stake being a corner of Nathaniel Winchel's land thence by the needle (?) running north 4 degrees, east 9 rods 17 links to the road leading from David Jacksons to said Winchel's house on the north line of the home farm of the said deceased, west 4 degrees, north 246 rods to a pile of stones, thence running on the west line of said farm south 4 degrees and west 20 rods and 22 links to a stake of stones, thence east 1 degree 24 minutes south 246 rods and 5 links to the place began as containing 23 and one half acres.

Wright received a piece of land bounded as follows, to wit: Beginning at a stake in the west part of Castleton river, so called, thence measured on the south line of said Winchel's land west 4 degrees, north 20 rods to the southeast corner of the aforesaid piece set off to Abraham, thence on the south line of Abraham's share west 1 degree 24 minutes, north 246 rods and 5 links to the southwest corner of Abraham's share, thence on the

west line of the deceased farm south 4 degrees, west 16 rods and 15 links to a stake and stones, thence east 12 minutes north 281 rods to said river, thence on the same to the place of beginning, containing 21 acres.

Nathan's portion bounded as follows, to wit: Beginning on the west bank of said river, thence running on the south line of the aforesaid piece set off to Wright, west 12 minutes, south 281 rods to the southwest corner of Wright's share, thence south 4 degrees west 16 rods and 15 links to a stake and stones, thence east 1 degree and 45 minutes north 2 degrees and 284 1/2 rods to said river, thence on the same to the place of beginning, containing 22 acres.

Enoch received two pieces bounded as follows, to wit: The first begins at the southwest corner of the aforesaid piece set off to Nathan, thence south 4 degrees west 13 rods and 5 links to the northwest corner of the aforesaid piece set off to Nathan, thence south 4 degrees, west 13 rods and 5 links to the northwest corner of land heretofore set off to the said Enoch, thence on the north line thereof and south line of what was called the widow's dower, east 3 degrees, north 191 rods to the southwest corner of an acre piece set off to said Enoch in a former division of said estate, thence on the west line thereof, north 2 degrees, north 8 1/2 rods to the south line of the aforesaid share set off to Nathan, thence on the same west 1 degree 45 minutes, south 189 rods to the place of beginning.

Enoch's other piece was on the west bank of Castleton river in the southeast corner of Nathan's share, thence running on his south line west 1 degree, 45 minutes, south 75 1/2 rods to the west side of the highway leading from David Jackson to Wm. Cornishes (?), thence on the east line of the aforesaid acre piece, south 2 degrees east along said road 8 rods 10 links to the southeast corner of said acre piece, thence on the north line of land set off to said Enoch in a former division of said estate, east 3 degrees, north 82 rods to said river, thence along the same to the place of beginning, both pieces containing 16 1/2 acres.

The several parcels of land were situated in Rutland and contained the whole of what was set off for the widow's dower. No deduction was made for highways. The inventory and appraisal of Nehemiah's personal estate amounted to $864.04 and was divided into three equal shares and distributed according to his last will and testament: To daughters Betsey Morgan, Phoebe Page, and Anna Carpenter the sum of $288.01 each.[67]

Enoch and Abraham sold their portions of the estate to their brother-in-law, Samuel Morgan, husband of their sister Betsey, four and five months later. Both used the sale proceeds to begin a new life in Licking county, Ohio where each bought land. Enoch closed his sale March 26 and Abraham had two closings, March 23 and April 28, 1813.

Nehemiah, Sarah, and their children Abel, Ada, Zilpha, and Wright

and his wife Rachel Steven are buried in Whipple Hollow Cemetery. Also buried there are Edey, daughter of Jonathan and Sarah Whipple, and Rachel, daughter of David and Sarah Whipple, nieces of Nehemiah and Sarah. The cemetery was founded in the late 1700s and contains over 120 graves. Eight Revolutionary War veterans are buried there. On the author's first visit in the early 1970s, the cemetery was so overgrown with trees, brush, poison ivy, blackberries, and brambles no gravestone were visible. People in the West Rutland Town Office didn't even know the cemetery existed. Vic Sevigny, owner of the West Rutland Pharmacy, was able to provide directions. I subsequently wrote to the Town Officials asking them to explain the plight of the cemetery at their annual Town Meetings hoping that a Boy Scout troop or a veterans or service club would accept its care as a civic project. Over the years I made several written requests without success until 1992 when Henry "Red" Sutkoski, 74, who had recently sold his tavern and retired, attended the meeting and volunteered to do the clean up.

Sutkoski had no relatives buried there and hadn't previously heard of the cemetery but in less than two years time he had cleared the site and found all but three of the gravestones listed in a Daughters of the American Revolution survey done in the 1950s. Many of the gravestones were underground and broken but Red probed for and recovered the missing pieces and placed them in their appropriate locations. Red and his daughter and son-in-law, David and Lynn Jenne, spent over 1000 hours of work on the site. Red's work was recognized by The *Boston Sunday Globe* of July 10, 1994 which printed a lengthy article about the Cemetery and its restoration with photographs of Red working there. Read the following endnote for directions to the cemetery.[68]

1. *Vital Records of Hardwick Massachusetts to the Year 1850.* Boston 1917, 123.
2. Cipher—an intransitive verb meaning to do arithmetical calculations.
3. Typewritten manuscript dated 1941 (no day or month) in the Whipple files at the Bennington Museum, Bennington, Vt. The author was Mrs. C. G. Green, Darby, Vt., who was identified as a descendant of Nehemiah and Sarah.
4. *First Book of Rutland Town Records*, City of Rutland, Vt. [Hereafter, *Rutland Town Records.*]
5. *Rutland Town Records.*
6. *Rutland Town Records.*
7. Betty Ann Prescott to Blaine Whipple. Seven letters dated between 11 May 1992 and 19 Aug. 1995 at P. O. Box 4296, Camp Connell, Calif. 95223. In possession of Whipple 2005. Her sources: research at the New England Historical and Genealogical Society Library in Boston, The Family History Library in Salt Lake City (vital statistics in films #0028772 and 0028773), the Vermont State Archives at Montpelier and Middlesex, The Rutland Co. Court House, Town Records at Rutland, West Rutland, and Ira, and County Records at Athens, Ohio.
8. *Rutland Town Records.*
9. Marvel G. and Donald P. Swan, compilers, Dawn Hance, editor, *Early Families of Rutland County, Vt.* Rutland Historical Society, Rutland, Vt., 1990, 410. [Hereafter *Early Rutland Families.]*
10. *Early Rutland Families*, 410.
11. Janice Worthington Rowe to Blaine Whipple. Two letters dated 11 May and 6 Nov. 1999 at 1429 S. 7th St., St. Charles, Ill. 60174. In possession of Whipple 2005. Sources included Preble Co., Ohio probate records, Butler Co., Ohio deed records, Cemetery records of the Old Presbyterian Cemetery in New Lexington, Twin Twp., Preble Co. and the *Biographical Cyclopedia of Butler Co., Ohio.*
12. *Early Rutland Families*, 410.
13. Roy Curwood Whipple to Blaine Whipple, Four letters. dated between 8 June 1994 and 12 Sept. 1997 at 380 W. Main St., Madison, Ohio 44057. In possession of Whipple 2005. His sources included deed records, wills, probate records, family birthday books, newspaper obituaries and U. S. census tracts.
14. *Vermont Vital Statistics to 1876.* Salt Lake City, Utah, Family History Library film #065930273. [Hereafter *Vt. Vital Statistics.*]
15. *Early Rutland Families*, 410.
16. *Early Rutland Families*, 410.
17. H. Perry Smith, *History of Rutland County, Vermont.* Syracuse, N.Y., D. Mason & Co., 1886, 340.
18. *Rutland Land Records*, Rutland, Vermont. Book 1, 46, 245.
19. *Rutland Land Records*, Book 1, 251.
20. According to 1783 probate records, Rutland county improved land was worth £6 per acre, unimproved £3, and hillside land £1. *Rutland County Vermont. Probate Records. No. 1, 1784-1806.* Salt Lake City, Utah, Family History Library Film #0028782.
21. Ashie—a factory where potash was converted to pearlash. Many manufacturers of pearlash bought wood to make their own supply of pearlash. In addition to the kiln for converting potash to pearlash, the factories included a structure called an ashery for burning large quantities of wood.
22. Charles Miner Thompson, *Independent Vermont*, Houghton Mifflin Company, Boston, 1942.

23. Soap in simple chemical terms is the sodium or potassium salt of a fatty acid. The first ingredient is a liquid solution of potash commonly called lye which is obtained by placing wood ashes in a bottomless barrel set on a stone slab with a groove and a lip carved in it. The stone rested on a pile of rocks. A layer of straw and small sticks are placed in the barrel, followed by the ashes. The lye was produced by slowly pouring water over the ashes until a brownish liquid ran out the bottom of the barrel and flowed into the groove around the stone slab and dripped into a clay vessel at the lip of the groove. Next the fat or grease saved from cooking had to be cleaned of impurities, the smelliest part of soap making. The fats—tallow from cattle, lard from pigs and cooking grease—were placed in a large kettle with an equal amount of water and boiled over an outdoor fire until all the fats had melted. The kettle was removed from the fire and more water, about equal to the first amount, was added and left overnight. By morning the fats had solidified and floated to the top forming a layer of clean fat which was placed in another large kettle or pot with lye solution. This mixture was boiled for six to eight hours, depending on the amount of mixture and the strength of the lye, until the soap was formed. After this mixture cooled, it was a jelly like substance that felt slippery to the touch, made foam when mixed with water, and cleaned. The soft soap was poured into a wooden barrel and ladled out with a wooden dipper when needed.
24. Johnny cake—introduced to the colonists by Native Americans. A mixture of corn meal with a dash of sugar and salt, combined with liquid, shaped into a flat cake, and baked or fried on a griddle. Corn was easier to grow and grind and less expensive then wheat flower. Also called ashcake.
25. Tow—The coarse and broken fibers of hemp, flax, etc. before spinning.
26. Sweet flag—A perennial march plant of the arum family with sword-shaped leaves, small green flowers, and a sweet scented rhizome.
27. Rowland E. Robinson, *Vermont, A Study of Independence*, Houghton, Mifflin and Company, The University Press, Cambridge, 1897.
28. Tallow dips—hard fat obtained from cattle, sheep, or horses used to make candles.
29. Samp—a food consisting of maize (corn) broken or bruised, which is cooked by boiling, and usually eaten with milk; coarse hominy.
30. Trammel—an arrangement of links and a hook in a fireplace for raising and lowering a kettle.
31. Ax-halves—The handle of a tool, especially of an ax or hatchet.
32. Ox-bows—The u-shaped part of an ox yoke which passes under and around the neck of the animal.
33. Pantalets—Long, loose drawers frilled at the ankle and showing beneath the skirt, worn by women.
34. Linsey-woolsey—a strong coarse fabric with a linen or cotton warp and a woollen waft. Waft—the horizontal threads interlaced through the warp in a woven fabric. Warp—to arrange strands of yarn or threads so they run lengthwise in weaving.
35. The article quotes a Mr. Twamley who said the principal requisite for making good cheese depended on reducing the milk to the proper warmth. He contended that "preparing the runnet, putting it to the milk in due proportion, standing of the milk till it becomes a firm curd, breaking or gathering the curd after it is come should be attended to with a minute exactness." He said the principal error in cheese making is performing these operations too hastily; that time for the several effects to take place is needed. "If due regard is paid to the making of good curd," he wrote, you will easily make good cheese.

    His recipe: Warm the milk to about 55 degrees. Use a thermometer because too

much warmth injures the cheese. If the milk is found to be too warm or too cold, reduce it to the proper temperature by the addition of fair spring well water, cold or warmed as the circumstances may require (a quart or two at a time). Experience shows that this addition of water does no hurt.

The best way to prepare the maw skin, or runnet-bag (the 4th stomach of a cud-chewing animal), is, as soon as it is cold, when taken from the calf, to swell it a little in water (some say it should not be cleaned at all), rub it with salt, then fill it, and afterwards cover it with salt. Some cut them open and spread them in salt, one over another in layers, and let them continue in the brine they produce, sometimes stirring or turning them for four, six, or nine months, as they can spare them, then open them to dry, being stretched out upon sticks or splints that they may dry regularly. When they are dry they may be used, though it is reckoned best to keep them for one year.

Care must be taken in drying them, and especially not to place them too near a fire, which makes them rancid. The most approved method of making the runnet is to boil a gallon of water, make it with salt into brine till it will float an egg, then let it stand till it is about the heat of blood, after which the maw-skin or runnet-bag is to be put into it, either whole or in pieces, and suffered to steep for 24 hours. The liquor may be put into a bottle or jug. When it is to be used, put such a quantity of it as you judge necessary to your milk. The quantity must be regulated by your own prudence. Though it is reckoned that about a tea-cup full is sufficient for the milk of 10 cows. Too much runnet makes the cheese strong, and liable to heave. When the warmth of your milk is suitable, before the runnet is applied, put a handful or two of salt to every 20 or 30 gallons of milk; it forwards and perfects the curd.

The great essential to having a firm curd (and in proportion as it is firm, it is perfect) is not to disturb the curd too soon when it is only in slipcurd, that is slippery, soft, and imperfect. If it is broke or disturbed before it is firm, it never can be afterwards improved, nor can it make good cheese. It ought not to remain at rest less than two hours after the runnet is applied. Slip curd, or such parts of the curd as will not sink in the whey, should be rejected, as they will never unite with the good curd; but if put into the good curd are apt to dissolve, and thus leave holes and decay the cheese. When the curd has stood the above mentioned time, gash it four or five times across the top to bottom with a wooden knife made of lath (but do not break it yet) which will admit the whey to rise, and the curd to sink.

The whey is then to be laded off, and the curd being also first well pressed down with the hand, is to stand a quarter of an hour, to settle, drain, and become solid before it is broken into the vat. The greener the color of the whey the better the curd. It is to be kept in a dark room and away from flies while drying. If any cracks come in when drying, let them be filled with a paste made of butter and flour to keep the flies from coming at them, if any should get into the room.

In general observe the main concerns, which consist in the proper warmth of the milk, the goodness and due proportion of the runnet, the allowing time enough in the tub for perfection the curd, the turning and keeping the cheese warm when quite new and tender, and cool afterwards.

36. Silk or lint plaister—A pasty preparation spread on cloth and applied to the body, used medicinally as a curative or counter irritant.
37. Smith, 366.
38. To the Honorable General Assembly of the State of Vermont to be convened at Manchester in the county of Bennington on the second Thursday of October next. The petition of the inhabitants in the southwest part of Pittsford and the northwest part of Rutland humbly showest that by reason of a range of mountains being

between them and the places of public worship in the town of Pittsfield and in the West Society of Rutland within the lines of which towns your petitioners belong that it is impracticable for them to get to their places of public worship with this _____ and being desirous to enjoy the privileges of social or public worship and a preacher of the gospel did before that there was any law made in this state that did prohibit any Societies forming themselves as such for religious purposes: viz on the 19th day of October last unite together by solemn covenant and agreement which they then did commit to writing and subscribed their names to the same and that your petitioners have ever since constantly kept up the public worship of God and a great part of the time have supported a preached gospel among them by an approved gospel minister and as your petitioners are about to settle a minister among them they would be glad to be properly and legally incorporated as a distinct society for religious purposes. Therefore your petitioners pray that the following tract of land contained within the following boundaries be incorporated into a distinct parish with all necessary privileges by the name of Orange Society: vis Beginning at the southwest corner of Pittsford thence running northerly on Pittsfield's west line three miles to a stake and stones: thence running easterly to the northwest corner of Richard Adams' land thence on the north and east lines of said Adams' land to his southeast corner thence about a southeast point to the northeast corner of Nathaniel Fairfield, Jr.'s land thence on said Fairfield's east line and so continuing a southwesterly course upon the _____ of the mountains to a stake marked on three sides with the letter O with a heap of stones around it standing on the line between Pittsford and Rutland thence running southerly on the _____ of land about one mile and an half to the southwest corner of Asa West land thence on the south line of said West and Nehemiah Gates land to the northwest corner of said Watkins' land thence southerly on said Watkins' west line until it comes to Zebulon Moses' north line thence westerly on said Moses' north line to continue the same course to the west line of Rutland thence northerly on the west line to the first mentioned bound. Excepting Benjamin Cornish and Gabriel Cornish and their lands. In granting which prayers your Honor's petitioned as in duty bound shall ever pray. Dated at Rutland this 9th day of September 1788.

Men belonging to Rutland: Benj Whipple, Nehemiah Gates, Nehemiah Whipple, David Whipple, (_____) Ratz, Jonathan Whipple, Asa West.

Men belonging to Pittsford: Nathaniel Fairfield, Jonathan Sweet, Sam'l (_____), Samuel Waters, Jonathan Jackson, (____) Jackson, David Gitchell, Israel Morgan, G_____ S_____, Jr., Samuel Jackson, Asa Stevens, Joseph Hosher, Samuel Sweet, Richard A. Durns, (____) Fairfield, Robart Sweet, Peter Harris.

39. Manuscript *Vermont State Papers*, 19:288.
40. Smith, 369.
41. Ben was then 69 and had probably retired and moved to town.
42. Gouge—a chisel with a rounded, trough-like blade used for scooping or digging.
43. Neck yoke—a frame of wood fitted to a person's shoulders for carrying pails, etc, suspended on each side, as, a milk maid's yoke.
44. Sugar snow—soft snow with a sugar-like consistency.
45. The colorless sap is 97.5% water, 2.5% syrup. It takes 40 gallons of sap to make one gallon of amber colored 100% maple syrup. An average tree yields only enough sap each season to produce one quart of syrup and it takes about 40 years before a maple tree begins to produce enough sap to have commercial value. It is only produced in the U.S. and Canada and Vermont is one of the top producing states. A legacy from the American Indians, they tapped trees and boiled the sap to make syrup long before

Columbus arrived.

46. Service commenced on 7 Nov. and ended on 13 Nov. *The State of Vermont. Rolls of the Soldiers in the Revolutionary War 1775 to 1783.* Rutland, Vt., The Tuttle Co., 1904, 97.
47. *Vermont Rolls of Soldiers*, 142.
48. This was a seven-day mission with Nehemiah serving four days and marching 30 miles and was paid 15 shillings 4 pence. *Vermont Rolls of Soldiers*, 300.
49. Fifty-five men served and most marched 33 miles. Nehemiah received £2 12 shillings for pay and subsistence. *Vermont Rolls of Soldiers*, 300-01.
50. Service began the 21st and ended the 30th of October. *Vermont Rolls of Soldiers*, 470.
51. *Vermont State Papers*, 2:193. This is Nehemiah's only dealing in speculative land activities found by the author.
52. *Rutland Deeds*, 1:46, 7:417.
53. *Rutland Deeds*, 1:230, 251.
54. *Rutland Deeds*, 2:323.
55. *Rutland Deeds*, 4:35.
56. *Rutland Deeds*, 4:228.
57. Washington was a folk-art favorite from well before his death until long after Americans stopped mourning his death. "It is noteworthy that every American considers it his sacred duty to have a likeness of Washington in his home," wrote a Russian diplomat who visited the United States in 1811. "Washington's portrait is the finest and sometimes the sole decoration..." Doug Steward, "Just Folk," *Smithsonian* Magazine, Washington, D.C., January 2002, vol. 32, No. 10, 60-61.
58. Effulgence—Great brightness, radiance; brilliance.
59. Joseph West Moore, *The American Congress 1774-1895.* New York: Harper & Brothers Publishers, 1895.
60. Smith, 348.
61. Smith, 348.
62. Rowland E. Robinson, *Vermont, A Study of Independence.* Cambridge, Mass: Houghton, Mifflin and Company, the University Press, 1897.
63. Tilth—Land that was tilled; cultivated.
64. Two shillings were deducted from the tax lists for each pound of wool raised during the year. Robinson.
65. Buttery—A cellar or pantry.
66. Readers interested in trying to decipher the writing are referred to the Family History Library Film #0865406 available in the Mormon Library, Salt Lake City, Utah. "Division of Estate - 1810. Whipple Estate to Wright, Abraham, Enoch, Widow," Book 7, page 495.
67. *Rutland County, Vermont Probate Records. No. 7 - 1812-24.* Salt Lake City, Utah, Family History Library, Film #0028783, pages 78-83.
68. From the West Rutland town hall drive.4 mile on route 4 to an underpass. Turn right onto Whipple Hollow road and continue for 4.1 miles and turn right onto an unimproved road. There is a farm house on the right and a barn on the left just before you get to the unimproved road. Drive.3 mile on the road until you come to a fork. The cemetery is on the left and a large red barn converted to a 3-plex is on the right as you are driving up the lane. The cemetery is on a small hillside with a valley view.

CHAPTER THIRTEEN

ENOCH WHIPPLE AND CATHARINE SHAW

Enoch*[7] *Whipple *(Nehemiah*[6]*, Benjamin*[5]*, Francis*[4]*, Jonathan*[3]*, Joseph*[2]*, Matthew*[1]*, Matthew*[A]*) was born 10 September 1788 in Whipple Hollow, Rutland Co., Vermont; died 10 October 1857 in Taylor Township, Benton Co., Iowa. He married 2 February 1815 in Hartford Township, Licking Co., Ohio Catharine Shaw. He was a farmer and a cooper and as the country became populated he kept moving to the next frontier—from Vermont to Ohio to Indiana, to Iowa.*

Children of Enoch and Catharine Whipple:

i. *Angeline, born 28 November 1817; died 7 April 1889. Married James McKinley.*
ii. *Lavina, born 5 January 1820; died 21 July 1899. Married John Holtz.*
iii. *Eliza, born 18 March 1822; died 20 September 1889. Married William Gardner.*
iv. *Cyrenius, born 11 October 1827; died 7 December 1900. Married Nancy Jane Cline.*
v. *Launa, born 29 June 1829. Married James Edmonds.*
vi. *Henry, born in August 1831; died 7 April 1905. Married (1) Lucinda Boyd (2) Nancy Jane (Long) Brown.*
vii. *Lucien, born 6 February 1834; died 13 May 1904. Married Sarah Sheward.*

The Ohio pioneers, including Enoch Whipple, were at the heart of a process of nation-making and their move to the Ohio territory was epic, deciding the nation's destiny was westward. Those pioneers influenced events that led to the eventual expansion of the country to the shores of the Pacific ocean. Unlike the Biblical Enoch, our Enoch lived and died in history's shadows.

After selling their share of the land received from their father's estate in the spring of 1813,[1] Enoch and his two younger brothers, Abraham, and Nathan, moved to Licking county, Ohio[2] to begin their own farming careers.[3] Ohio was then being advertised as the place to begin life anew and since the land received from their father was not large enough to sup-

port three families the brothers decided to migrate to the frontier.[4] Henry Howe wrote and published the first history of Ohio in New Haven, Conn. in 1847 and the two volume *Howe's Historical Collection of Ohio* in 1891. The latter updated the original. The two volume set is a great tool in researching the genealogy of the early pioneers and their lifestyle. Each county is treated separately and generally includes the names and stories on the first settlers, the first white children born, and the first churches and court houses with about 700 sketches of their cabins, scenery, churches, and court houses. In contrast to the county histories written in the 1880s and 90s, these were first person accounts, not tales handed down from previous generations. Most libraries have a copy of the two volume set. They are generally found in the history, not the genealogy, section. Also migrating to Licking county about the same time was their aunt Prudence Whipple, her husband Ebenezer Pratt, and their son Benjamin and a cousin, Elias Gates.[5] The Pratts and Gates settled in Granville Township.[6]

In the early 1800s New Englanders left for Ohio in an almost continuous line of wagons. Going to the new country was among the most thrilling and attainable things a young man could do. It was an investment in life with nominal risk and potentially a high return. Proof of the attraction of Ohio was the crowds rushing to it year after year regardless of the suffering and privation to be endured on the long and savage road.

Licking county, the destination for the Whipple brothers, was heavily promoted in the Rutland area.[7] Posters and flyers emphasized the fertile land, cheap price, superior weather conditions, and profit potential. After their mother's death in 1812, it was probably an easy decision to make, especially since their brother-in-law Samuel Morgan was willing to buy their Vermont land and provide the cash to make the move.

If the Whipple brothers were typical of the immigrant headed for the Ohio valley, they left with a minimum of capital and equipment. They would have loaded a wagon with bedding, utensils, axe, a crude plow, a sickle, flail,[8] forks, hoes, and shovels and joined this movement.[9] Their wagon would have been pulled by two horses with a cow or two and a yoke of oxen following.[10] They covered approximately 22 miles a day. The roads were rocky and gullied and almost impassable in some places. Consequently, the wagon often required repair. They over-nighted in taverns with air so impure it was hard to breathe. They crossed New York and New Jersey to reach Pennsylvania where they encountered lots of Dutch who couldn't speak English. When the emigrants got to Pittsburgh or Wheeling they separated or regrouped based on their final destination. Some continued with their wagons into the timbered wilderness and those with more money purchased flatboats to take them down river to

The United States of America.
TO ALL TO WHOM THESE PRESENTS SHALL COME, GREETING,
CERTIFICATE No. 13079
Whereas, Enoch Whipple of Vermillion County, Indiana

The United States of America

TO ALL TO WHOM THESE PRESENTS SHALL COME, GREETINGS,

CERTIFICATE No. 13079 Whereas, Enoch Whipple of Vermillion County, Indiana has deposited in the General Land Office of the United States, a Certificate of the **Register of the Land Office** at, DuBuque whereby it appears that full payment has been made by the said Enoch Whipple according to the provisions of the Act of Congress of the 24th of April 1820, entitled "AN ACT MAKING FURTHER PROVISION FOR THE SALE OF THE PUBLIC LANDS" for the Lot numbered One, of Section Twenty three in Township Eighty five, North of Range Ten, West, in the District of Lands subject to sale at Dubuque, Iowa, containing Forty two acres and twelve hundreths of an acre, according to the Official Plat of the Survey of the said Lands, returned to the **GENERAL LAND OFFICE**, by the SURVEYOR GENERAL, which said tract has been purchased by the said Enoch Whipple. **Now Know Ye**, That the **UNITED STATES OF AMERICA**, in consideration of the promises and in conformity with the several Acts of Congress, in such case made and provided, HAVE GIVEN AND GRANTED, and by these presents do give and grant, unto the said Enoch Whipple and to his heirs, the said Tract above described: **TO HAVE AND TO HOLD** the same, together with all the rights, privileges, immunities and appurtenances of whatsoever nature thereunto belonging, unto the said Enoch Whipple and to his heirs and assigns forever.

In Testimony Whereof, I Millard Filmore, PRESIDENT OF THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA, have caused these letters to be made Patent, and the Seal of the General Land Office to be hereunto affixed.

GIVEN under my hand, at the City of Washington, the first day of November in the year of our Lord one thousand eight hundred and fifty two and of the **Independence of the United States** the seventy-sevenths.

Recorded, Vol. 26, Page 35.

their destinations.[11] It is not known which path the Whipple brother took but it was probably the flatboats as far as Marietta on the Ohio river. It was a fatiguing trip but the scenery made one forget the fatigue. They had seen nothing was more grand or majestic before.

The waters of the wide Ohio were fresh, if muddy, and the brothers watched the great forest of butternut, tulip tree, black willows, cherry, mulberry, and plum along the bank glide by. Occasionally the woods thinned and deer could be seen grazing. Farther up on the hillside grew red, white, and black oak, hickory, walnut, ash, poplar, and sycamore. When they arrived at Marietta they probably sold their boat for lumber and began the trip inland to their destination.

As early Ohio pioneers, the Whipple brothers were beneficiaries of the "Measurement that Built America." Before any land beyond the Appalachians could be sold it had to be measured and mapped. The Northwest Ordinance passed in May 1785 provided for the sale of lands in the western territory and required that the land be surveyed. The Ordinance provided for lines running east to west six miles apart, to be cut at right angles by north-south lines six miles apart. This created a grid of squares known as townships, each covering 36 square miles. Townships were divided into 36

one-mile square sections which were to be sold at auction. The pattern of squares was Thomas Jefferson's idea. The simplicity of shape made it easy to measure and its area could readily be checked by the potential buyer. The squared-off land also became a source of capital as settlers borrowed, lent, and invested in other enterprises. A generation after surveying began in Ohio, the state possessed "33 printing offices, 27 banks, 12 cotton mills, 8 paper mills, 3 nail factories, an almost infinite number of stores, grist merchants, and sawmills." By the end of the nineteenth century most of the country had been squared off into townships and sections, half-sections, and quarter-sections, even to a quarter-quarter section of 40 acres. Each parcel was identified on a surveyor's map, registered at a federal land office, and made available for purchase.[12]

Though a land of strangers, common problems and common experiences connected the new settlers in a happy, simple society noted for its hospitality and egalitarianism. A man was not valued by family background or formal education. Opportunities were available to all men and women of good health and reasonable abilities. If a man could chop, shoot, plow, sow, harvest, distill corn, butcher a pig, tan a hide, build a cabin, construct a fireplace, and dig a well and his wife could spin yarn, sew, knit, cook, preserve, make soap, and administer backwoods nostrums to sick husbands and children, they could create a comfortable life for their family.

Enoch, bought his first 100 acre parcel at age 25 on October 19, 1813.[13] The deed stated that both the seller, Augustine Munson, and Enoch were from Granville Township in Licking county. Enoch paid $100.00 cash for the acreage—$1.00 per acre. The legal description was Lot 29 in the first section, fourth township, fifteenth range of townships[14] in the United States Military Land as surveyed and platted by James Holmes, Licking county Surveyor.[15] He bought another 100 acres from David Messenger of Granville on December 4 for $1.50 per acre.[16] The legal description was Lot 25 in the same section, township, and range. Nathan Whipple, who was 19, and Silas Winchell were witnesses to the second transaction.[17] Two years later (October 14, 1815) and nine months after being married, Enoch bought a third 100 acre parcel, Lot 32 in the same section, township, and range as the other two parcels, from John Stetson of Licking county.[18] An interesting consideration of this transaction is that Stetson agreed to accept payment in the form of labor. Enoch agreed to clear and to fence 12 acres for him. The work was completed February 14 and the deed recorded May 24, 1817.[19] Enoch probably purchased other parcels but because of the 1875 Court House fire, no other records survive to verify additional purchases.

A year following his last purchase, a nationwide bank problem greatly

increased the financial hardship on the frontier. By 1816 hundreds of unchartered banks had flooded the settlements with paper currency and the federal Act passed that year ordering redemption in specie was responsible for many banks closing, leaving devalued and/or worthless paper in people's pockets. How it impacted Enoch is unknown but it is certain it made life more difficult.[20] The Whipple family would have been hurt by the corn and wheat crisis in 1819 and 1820. Corn, which previously found a ready market at $.75 per bushel couldn't be sold at any price. Wheat, which formerly sold for $1.25 and higher per bushel was down to as low as $.25 per bushel. At the same time, dry goods and groceries became more costly. It took five bushels of wheat to exchange for one bushel of salt.[21]

The surviving deed records do not include land purchases by Abraham or Nathan. However, the Licking county tax duplicate record for 1816 shows Nathan, then 22, owning Lot 19 in the first section, fourth township, fifteenth range. His 100 acres were adjacent to Enoch's 200 acres. Since Nathan was a witness to Enoch's purchase from Messenger on December 4, 1813, we know he was in Granville by that date. For tax purposes Licking county land was divided into three classes from poorest to best. Enoch's 200 acres and Nathan's 100 acres were classified as best. They paid a tax of $1.50 for each 100 acre parcel.[22]

Nathan Whipple and Laura Mixer were married and had moved to Madison, Geauga county, Ohio by August 12, 1817 when they sold Lot 19 to Rufus Beach, also of Madison, for $266.00.[23] The land was free and clear of debt. Laura was identified as Nathan's wife and she quit-claimed her right of dower to the land. The deed was recorded December 4, 1821.[24]

Though identified as being "of Granville" at the time of the first two purchases, Enoch's land was in what became Hartford Township in the northwestern corner of the county near the head-waters of all the principal streams forming the Licking river.[25] The land was rich and equal in fertility to any in the state. With few swamps and surface stones, it was easy to cultivate.[26] The native forest was grand and gloomy and consisted of sugar, beech, white and black ash, white and black oak, hickory, white and black walnut, wild cherry, hackberry and elm. The undergrowth was water beech, dogwood, and an abundance of spice bush, the latter now extinct. The fertility of the soil and the absence of the axe for a thousand years had produced wilderness monarchs green with moss and ivy that cast shadows so dark that the only thing visible beneath them was their trunks.

The first settler in the Township was Daniel Poppleton who arrived in April 1812. Other early arrivals included Enoch and Nathan, C.L. Graves, Clark Cooley, Strong Clark, Daniel Wright, Ezekiel Wells, and Adam Kite.[27] They all settled on the northeast quarter. A Mr. Shaw and Titus S. Hopkins, also early settlers, moved onto school land. Newark, the county

seat was close by.[28] Bennington and Hartford Townships were organized about 1816 and called Bennington. Hartford was made a separate Township in September 1819 and 48 votes were cast in the first Township election that month.

The first saw-mill was built on Otter creek by John McInturf in 1817. Elijah Durfey built the first frame house in Hartford village in 1818.[29] Rev. Timothy Harris, a Congregational Minister of Granville, preached the first sermon in 1817 and the first Church Society formed was Congregational in August 1818. The first Baptist sermon was preached by Rev. Evans in 1819 and Mr. Mountain Everett became the first teacher in a District School in 1817 and the first Sabbath School was organized August 13, 1826.[30]

Crude as his Ohio beginnings were, Enoch arrived with a knowledge of farming and an understanding of how to clear the land. His axe was his most basic tool. He used it to hew a clearing, to cut the logs for his cabin, the rails for his fences, the first crude pieces of furniture, and to make the moldboard[31] on his first plow. His rifle gave him protection and fresh meat; the axe gave him his farm. Two other important tools were the mattock and adze. The mattock, also called a grubbing hoe, had two blades, one for digging or grubbing out roots, stones, etc. and one for cutting or hacking to remove stumps. The adze, a cutting tool with blades set at right angles to the handle, was used for splitting wood, making shingles (shakes), and for a variety of other purposes involving wood. He probably kept track of his working hours by beginning at sunup and quitting at sundown six days a week. When the shadows sank he knew it was around noon and when they stretched toward the east, he knew the day was waning.

Enoch's first task after acquiring the land was to clear 20 to 40 acres, construct a dwelling of some sort (probably a lean-to), and build fences. Since he bought his land in October and December he would not have begun planting until spring.[32] He cleared the land by slashing a circular strip of bark from the trees to kill them. The leaves soon fell leaving limbs and branches through which the sun could reach the ground and stimulate corn, squash, and beans to grow.

He used his axe and grubbing hoe to clear the brush and weeds and planted the corn Indian style—by hand, covering it with the aid of a mattock, and creating a small earthen mound. Corn was the most certain of all crops to grow the first season and along with a few beans and squash provided him corn meal, hominy, johnny cake, and corn on the cob. The corn also attracted his pigs, rooting in the forest, to his feeding lot. And when he could find the time he took some of the good corn to a neighboring distillery to be made into a barrel of fiery liquid to warm his innards on a cold day and/or to relax his tired muscles after long hours of hard work.

Like most new settlers, Enoch probably set fire to his deadened trees and then with his yoke of oxen and chain, his axe and mattock, he either grubbed out the stumps or left them for nature to rot.[33] When clearing the field he saved 80 logs of the same kind, circumference, and length, for the cabin he would eventually build. He would need 20 logs per side: half 16 feet and half 20 feet long. After cutting the logs, he removed limbs and knots while keeping the bark to protect the wood from dampness and decay.

To keep the deer and his own cattle from invading his fields he would have built a fence which zig-zagged down the four sides of his field. Then he would have built small rail corrals and rough timber shelters, covered with straw or sod, to protect his livestock from the elements. He would eventually build a well house, woodshed, corn cribs, henhouse, pigpen, a smokehouse, root cellar, dog house, and finally a barn.

If the house was near a cold flowing spring, Enoch probably built a spring house to keep their food fresh. A spring house was a low, sunken structure with a stone trough running through it. He channeled the flowing water through the trough, and in or near its shaded cold water, his wife placed bowls of milk and cream, crocks of butter and cheese, watermelon, etc. If there was no spring, the well was used for refrigeration. Food that could spoil was placed in a bucket or wooden frame with shelves and lowered on a rope with a pulley to just above the water level where the air was cold.

Wheat was a cash crop but since it did not do well on virgin soil he would have waited a few years before planting half his fields with it. The wheat crop made it possible for him to go from a subsistence life style to one with marketable surplus. While a great cash crop, wheat had to be harvested within a short time span after it had ripened and about 50 acres was the maximum that could be harvested with the scythe.[34] Harvesting was slow and laborious and a lot of the grain was lost during harvest.[35]

When Enoch, then 27, married Catharine Shaw February 2, 1815, it was the first marriage in the Township.[36] Catharine was a month and a half shy of her seventeenth birthday. The ceremony was performed by Moses Foster, Licking county Justice of Peace. Bridesmaids and best men were called waiters and were expected to be as well dressed as the bride and groom. Brother Nathan probably served as Enoch's best man.

The day after the wedding, known as infair, the newly married couple would have gone to the bride's parent's home where invited guests congratulated them. The wedding feast would have included wine, bear meat, venison, wild turkey, a sheep barbequed whole in a pit and covered with green boughs to keep the juices in, duck's eggs, syrup in big gourds, peaches, honey, and whiskey. A fiddler played and after dinner the guests enjoyed "sport" and "amusement" and the waiters stayed with the bride

and groom until the close of infair.[37]

Catherine's hope chest probably included a blue and white coverlet, two cotton sheets, a pattern quilt, table linens, and two feather pillows. For gifts they would have received a two-gallon cast iron kettle filled with diverse cooking necessities—iron meat hooks, four knives and forks, 2 tablespoons, a set of tea cups and saucers, and a pitcher, an iron tea kettle, a pepper box, a few bowls, a butcher knife, two grease skimmers,[38] a trammel,[39] a one pint tin cup, and a wooden trencher.[40] In setting up housekeeping, they would have had two beds and bedding, a table, bureau, dash churn, washboard, oven and skillet, and stew kettle to hang over the fire to boil meat, cabbage, potatoes, roasting ears, and beans.

Catharine (Shaw) Whipple 1798-1865.

Catharine was born March 15, 1798. Her place of birth has been listed as Rhode Island, New York, and Massachusetts in various U.S. census records. According to family legend, she was a first cousin to Commodore Oliver Hazzard Perry who beat the British fleet on Lake Erie during the War of 1812.[41] Her oldest son, Cyrenius, named his oldest son William Perry Whipple supposedly in honor of Catharine's kinship to Commodore Perry. Other offspring also have Perry as a middle name. The Perry's were from Rhode Island.

Despite extensive research, the author has been unable to identify Catharine's parents. The loss of records in the 1875 court house fire has made the job more difficult. Several Shaw families in the county were investigated but no clue was found connecting Catharine to any of them. As was noted above, a Mr. Shaw was an early settler in Hartford Township on School Land. The federal 1820 census list four Shaw families in Hopewell Township in the southeast corner of Licking county and one in McKean Township, located relatively close to Hartford Township.[42] The following Shaw families were living in Licking county in 1830:[43] Alexan-

der and James (lived next to one another),[44] and Zachariah, and Ralph in Hopewell;[45] Samuel in McKean;[46] and Stacy in Granville.[47] A Benjamin Shaw, 24, was among the original settlers who arrived at Marietta, the first settlement of the Ohio Company, on April 7, 1788.[48]

Enoch's younger brother Abraham and his wife Parthina (Dimmock), ages from 26-45, were living in Granville Township in 1820. Their family consisted of three males and one female under 10.[49] A male 26-45 lived with them. Two people in the household were engaged in manufacturing. Abraham was a stone cutter. The family had left the county by the 1830 census.[50] Nathan Whipple and his family were living in Madison Township, Geauga county in 1820.[51]

According to family folklore, Enoch's stature was huge compared to the average man of that time while Catharine was tiny. Stories handed down claim that when Enoch stretched his arms straight out from his sides, Catharine could stand under them with room to spare.

Enoch and Catharine had two daughters at the time of the 1820 census: Angeline, born November 28, 1817 and Lavina, January 5, 1820. According to that census, a female between the ages of 10 and 15 lived in the household. This had to be someone other than a daughter because she would have been born by 1810 or earlier. Catharine was 12 in 1810. The girl was probably a relative, maybe even a sister of Catharine.[52] The nine closest neighbors to Enoch and Catharine in 1820 were all farmers and they had 15 children among them, seven girls and eight boys.[53] Their immediate neighbors were Mr. and Mrs. Hiatt Willison who were in the same age group as Enoch and Catharine and had a son under age 10.[54] Most of the other neighboring adults were of a similar age to the Whipples

The 1830 federal census of Hartford Township lists two daughters between the ages of 10 and 15 in the Whipple family. They would be Angeline, 13, and Lavina, 10; and two daughters between the ages of 5 and 10. Eliza Roxana, born March 18, 1822, was 8 and there is no confirmed record of any other daughter in that age group. Either the family lost a daughter at an early age or another female was living with them. They also had a son and daughter under 5: Cyrenius Thomas, 3, born October 11, 1827, and Luana, 1, born June 29, 1829.[55] They had two sons born after 1830, both in Hartford Township: Henry G., born in August 1831, and Lucien Ransom, born February 6, 1834.[56]

It is not known whether Enoch completed their log home before or after his marriage to Catharine. It would have been small, roughly 16 x 20 feet. If a slab floor was included, foundation logs would have been set upright just inches above the level of the smoothed earth at the four corners. The base logs were set on these.[57] There were no blueprints to follow but neighbors with know-how were on hand to help in the raising. The

logs were hoisted ever higher, one above the other, until 20 were raised on each of two sides and 16 on each on the other sides.[58] An expert notcher was at each corner to notch[59] the logs and sophisticated chopping took place where the doorway and windows were placed. Smaller length logs were placed at the top of the walls at each end, pyramiding to a high point upon which was laid the ridge pole.[60] Poles were then placed in succession down the pyramid or triangle to the eaves and covered with shakes.

Space was cut in one side for a fireplace. It and the chimney were probably made of mud mixed with sticks, straw, or hog bristles as a mastic[61] molded into shape. With luck, the fireplace and chimney would be completed at about the same time as the final roof timbers were laid. The spaces between the logs were caulked with clay, moss, and mud mixed with animal hair or straw to keep out the cold winds and drifting snows of winter.

The door opening was 36 to 40 inches wide and 5 to 6 feet high; windows were 18 to 24 inches square. The door was probably a slab with an inside wood latch and crossbar and hinges made of wood or rough animal hide. A leather thong, attached to the latch, was threaded through a small hole in the door with the end hanging outside. To enter all one had to do was pull the latchstring and the door opened, usually outward. "The latchstring" as the saying went, "is always out." It was considered a mark of welcome, an invitation to come in and be sociable for awhile. Windows had a thin piece of deerskin or an old newspaper dipped in bear grease stretched across them to let in light while keeping out some of the cold. They probably also had shutters.

If they had a wooden floor, it was made of split logs laid with the rounded half down. Enoch's rifle, power horn, and the families clothes were held by wooden pegs. Catharine would have stored seeds in gourds hung by cords from the roof. Wild animal skins were used as rugs and stretched over particularly drafty places on the walls. As the family grew in size, a third to a half of the upper space would have been converted into a loft reached by a ladder or pegs in the wall.[62] A well was sunk as close to the cabin as possible and the outhouse, a sheltered seat over an open pit, was probably the last thing built.[63]

There was no special room for bathing which was a Saturday night event. During the week, most members of the family just washed the parts of the body that showed. Since the kitchen was the warmest room and the closest to the well, a big tin tub was placed in that room and filled with water heated in an iron kettle over the fireplace and poured, a kettle at a time, into the tub. Everybody bathed in the same water. Mother was first followed by the girls, then father, and finally the boys. They used homemade soft soap.

Catherine, like most of her contemporaries, married young and Ange-

line, their first child was born when Catherine was 19, a year and a half after the wedding. She was 36 when Lucien, her last, was born so her child-bearing spanned 17 years during which time she had at least four daughters and three sons. She probably weaned them to Indian pudding—corn mush mixed with water and molasses. It likely the children would have had the normal childhood diseases[64] but the family was lucky as it appears they all lived to maturity, married, and entered the mainstream of American life.

Enoch and Catharine had to be self-relying. A good farmer was also an ingenious mechanic who made what he needed from horse shoe to grist mill. She must have been an efficient housewife to raise seven children and help her husband with some of the farm work. They were probably good neighbors, affable and courteous, and Catharine was active in the Church.

There was a shortage of doctors[65] on the frontier and lack of medical knowledge led to the use of Indian remedies and the practice of folk medicine.[66] Adult illnesses included bilious fever, stagnant-water effluvia, malignant and putrid diseases. Fevers were classed as remittent, malignant or yellow, and chronic or nervous, the last named also called typhus.[67] Salt meat, heavy pastry, and fiery rum made dyspepsia common.[68] A strong constitution was mostly responsible for surviving the diseases but many gave credit to swallowing some gruesome concoction forced on them by a doctor. Basic sanitation was not practiced at childbirth so puerperal fever was common.[69] A village or range of villages in close proximity often only had one mid-wife. If a woman faced a breech birth or a fetus slow in coming, the mother suffered hours of agony. Sometimes a quill of snuff was held to her nostrils causing a paroxysm[70] of sneezing which might hurry the delivery.

Blood letting was freely practiced until about 1850. It was thought it lessened the morbid and excessive action in the blood vessels and removed fever and lessened pain, induced sleep, prevented hemorrhages, and was a safeguard against relapses. Doctors prescribed it for all sorts of fevers, for pulmonary consumption, diabetes, asthma, idiocy, hysteria, madness, catarrh, and gout. It was generally performed by a barber who was a specialist in this branch of surgery. Before being bled the patient was given an emetic[71] and a purge and mercury to produce excitement and inflammation of the glands of the mouth and throat.[72]

The children grew up quickly and could fetch water in a bucket and collect the eggs by age 4. Boys had the never ending winter job of sawing and splitting fire wood, building and tending the fire, and lugging out the ashes.[73] They could milk, harness a horse, and yoke a team of oxen at an early age. They learned to plant and weed and harvest. They helped slaughter and butcher pigs and to preserve the meat by salting.[74] They

became proficient in using an axe and gun. By the time a male child reached puberty, most knew the basics of farming and were remarkably self-sufficient, independent, and fearless.

Hartford Township had a school by 1817 but there is no record whether any of the Whipple children attended. Presuming they did, they would have attended the one room school with one teacher and all children, young and old, in the area. We know from the 1820 U.S. census there were at least 15 children of a school age in the contiguous neighborhood. It is probable that Angeline, Lavina, Eliza, and Cyrenius attended the Hartford school. The smallest children sat on the front benches with the older pupils at the back. The little ones might be as young as three learning their ABC's and studying grammar by seven. Discipline was strict. The ferule,[75] rattan,[76] and cowhide were used on naughty girls as well as boys without regard to age.

If typical, the school house was dilapidated and furnished with long benches and rude writing desks. The teacher would have had a high desk made of planks and placed on a small raised platform. Exercises were written in ink. Lead pencils had been invented but were too expensive for school use. Slates had not yet been introduced. The students made the ink by mixing ink powder and water. The teacher made pens out of goose quills.[77] Paper was unruled and expensive. Lines were made with a ruler or a piece of lead.

Students were taught manners. When they came to school in the morning the boys were to bow and the girls to curtsy to the teacher. These same signs of respect were to be made before and after reciting and when they left the school room. When dismissed at the end of the day, they were told to go home and "make their manners" to their parents.

The instruction was partly religious with the Bible being read every day and most text books included some religion. The first book the students read was *The New England Primer* published at Concord, Massachusetts in 1813. It included a Catechism which was committed to memory, usually without any comprehension of its meaning, but this was the case with most of the rules the child learned.[78]

The second book introduced to most students was the most universally used book ever written by an American – Noah Webster's spelling book, *The First Part of a Grammatical Institute of the English Language,* popularly known as the *Blue-Back Speller.* All children learned to spell, divide words, and pronounce alike. This book led to the Americanization of the English language.[79]

If the Whipples had the resources and the desire to know what was happening in the county and the nation, they would have subscribed to the county's first newspaper, *The Newark Advocate*, founded in 1820 by Benj.

Briggs of Fayette county, Pennsylvania. He retained ownership until August 1856 when he sold the paper to W. D. Morgan. *The Newark Gazette* was established in late 1827 by Rufus Henry and Dr. Daniel Marbles to advocate John Quincy Adams for President. Clark Dunham became its proprietor in 1837. That same year a Mr. Rankin and Mr. Stadden founded *The Constitutionalist* in Newark to support the Democratic Party.

In the spring after the corn began coming up, squirrels and pigeons would feast on it. The boys had to go to the fields every morning and evenings with dogs to scare them off. The big black horseflies were so bad that when working with his horses, Enoch had to cover them with quilts. He used home-made rail sleds to haul things, Ten-foot long boxes, similar to a wagon bed, were placed on the sled and used to gather and transport the corn, hay, and wheat to the barn or stack. He also used log-sleds to haul saw logs to the saw mill and to the house for firewood when snow was on the ground. Instead of shucking the corn on the stalk it was hauled to a central location and the neighbors were invited to join in the shucking. Shucks were thrown in one pile, ears in another. It was a time when you could whistle or sing and tell stories while working. All the shuckers had dinner together at the end of the day. It wasn't necessary to feed the hogs in the fall because there were plenty of nuts and acorns on the ground. The pigs were small—200 to 250 pounds—with long legs and nose and long bristles. They were called "sand diggers."

We can presume that Enoch always planted an acre of flax which was pulled by hand when ripe, spread in straight rows, and let lie until cured and dry. It was then bound in sheaves[80] and hauled to the barn where the seed was threshed before taking the straw to a clean grass lot or meadow where it was spread thin to let it rot. When the straw was tender and brittle, it was bound and put into the barn until winter when the men broke the flax and boys swingled[81] it to get it ready for Catharine to spin. She had to hackle[82] it to get out the tow which she spun and wove into linen.

It is likely that Enoch had a breaking plow, corn plow(s), and a harrow. A 2-horse wooden moldboard,[83] bar share plow was used to break up the ground, a 1-horse bar share plow or a single shovel plow was used to plow the corn field, and a 1-horse iron-tooth harrow was used to cultivate the corn. Just cleared land with green timber could not be harrowed. It took a few years for the roots to break into pieces and then it could harrowed for corn or wheat. When the corn field became weedy with Spanish needles, Enoch got a brush from the woods of a size that would fit between the rows, hitched a horse to it so oldest son Cyrenius could brush down the weeds.[84]

When first married Enoch and Catharine were completely self-sufficient. Everything they ate and nearly all their clothes were produced by their own hands. Their food, if coarse, was usually abundant but offered lit-

tle variety. There was plenty of game—deer, bear, pheasants wild turkeys, ducks, birds of all kind—fish in the streams, and wild fruits in the woods. These were dried for winter use. Their staples were corn and pork —hog and hominy—the pigs killed and dressed, cured, and smoked, the lard rendered, the corn ground in a hand-mill, generally a hollow stone. Sometime it was rubbed while still green and soft on a homemade grater, a piece of tin punched with holes, but more often it was beat with a pestle in a mortar made by burning out the inside of a hardwood stump. Corn was prepared in several ways: with lard shortening and rendered in a big kettle it made Johnny-cake; baked in lumps it was corn-dodgers.[85] It became corn pone, a kind of bread, when yeast was added to the dough. Indian pudding was the most delicious of the many corn dishes. Wheat cake was reserved for Sunday mornings. Potatoes were the only vegetable raised in any quantity and sometimes they may have been the only food on the table.

Their sugar came in large cones or loaves two to three feet high and weighing 12 to 55 pounds. It was hung from the ceiling by cords with a tin stopper between the ceiling and sugar to keep the ants away and netting over the cone to discourage flies. When she needed sugar, Catharine had to knock a chunk from the cone with a hammer or cut off a piece with "sugar cutters" and pound it into granules.[86] Salt also arrived in large blocks. Peppercorns, nutmegs, cloves, and cinnamon had to be ground as needed. Thyme, rosemary, parsley, and chives were raised in the garden, dried in a corner of the kitchen, and used for food seasoning or as ingredients in "home remedies."[87]

Catherine's domain was the kitchen. Eventually she must have acquired a variety of broilers and roasters to cook the meat over or in front of the fire. They were made of sheet iron and shaped like drums on short legs, and laid on their sides. The part of the drum facing the fire was cut away, exposing the meat to the fire while the curved rear reflected it back to the meat. Of course the meat had to be turned every so often. Other items she might have used were three or four legged grills to set pots and pans on the hearthstone as near to the heat as required and iron potato scoops to get baked potatoes from the ashes. It was impossible to regulate the temperature and Catharine must have frequently burned her fingers and scalded herself.[88]

She would have taken advantage of every product as it became available, meaning they ate as much as possible while it was fresh and preserved what they could by drying, smoking, salting, and pickling, hoping what remained would last until the next harvest or butchering. They would have had a "sarse" patch where vegetables were grown and an abundance of milk, butter, and cheese. Dinner was usually served about 2 p.m. with one table decoration—the cruet stand which held cruets[89] or vials[90]

of oil, vinegar, salt, pepper, or mustard. A good dinner consisted of boiled pork and potatoes or salt beef, turnips, and stewed pumpkin.[91] There were no napkins. Mush and milk was a standard supper dish; sometimes it was boiled hominy, dry corn with the hull and germ removed.

When Enoch butchered, the whole family would have helped—hanging hams and bacon in the smokehouse over a slow fire of hickory chips, pickling pig's feet and spareribs in stone crocks, packing chunks of beef and pork in kegs of brine. The most perishable portions of the animal—head and feet—were cut up fine, boiled, pressed, and made into head cheese which was soon eaten. The lard was rendered.

The Licking county climate was variable and subject to sudden and great changes. Fortunately, these extremes were of short duration – very cold or hot – continuing for only a few days. The warmest part of a summer day was between 3 and 4 p.m. and the coolest just before sunrise. February, the month that Lucien, the Whipple's youngest child, was born is usually the coldest month of the year. From April 1 to the last of May the weather was usually mild so that the planting of Indian corn was finished by April 7, a day celebrated for many years in commemoration of the landing at Marietta on that date in 1788.[92] July was the hottest and most humid month. Heavy rains came at or near the summer solstice and the infrequent hail storms were usually in May and June. Tornadoes were rare.[93]

Enoch received the cider mill and apple orchard known as "Old Nursery," in the original division of his father's estate in 1809. One of his Licking county neighbors was John Chapman[94] who became the famous Johnny Appleseed who was planting orchards in the Licking river bottoms as early as 1801. He was an eccentric appearing man with shaggy black beard, bare feet, ragged dress, a pasteboard visor, and a religious turn of mind. He attracted a lot of attention and became a familiar figure to the settlers in western Pennsylvania, Ohio, and Indiana. He wandered the area for over 40 years helping hundreds of settlers to establish orchards by selling or giving them saplings or seeds. He also sowed nurseries where he traveled until his death near Ft. Wayne, Indiana in 1845.[95]

When Enoch and his brothers arrived in 1813, the first sign of permanency of a new settler was determined by his first apple crop. No other fruit could be started so easily and none could be put to so many essential uses.[96] Logic tells us that Enoch would have planted an apple orchard and it is likely he received his seedlings from Johnny Appleseed[97] who was often in the Licking valley bearing his gift of trees and seeds. Most of the orchards came from his stock.[98]

Johnny was one of the earliest New Church converts in America for the Church of the New Jerusalem. He considered himself a messenger, sent into the wilderness like John the Baptist, to prepare the way for the

revelations of Emanuel Swedenborg, a Swedish scientist, religious teacher and mystic who lived from 1688-1772.[99] Swedenborg believed that individuals didn't die. Rather they became angels, retaining their human form with every sense, memory, thought, and affection intact and accessible through visitations when they might provide knowledge and guidance to mortals tied to the earth.[100]

Johnny Appleseed, a neighbor to the Enoch Whipple family in Licking Co., Ohio.

Johnny read Swedenborg tracts and discussed them freely and intelligently with the pioneers of Licking county and it is likely that he showed up at the Whipple cabin with his message.[101] Judge William Stanbery of Licking county knew Johnny well and said his knowledge of Swedenborg came entirely from talking with Chapman. He said Johnny had "a great thirst for making converts" and he left the Swedenborg tracts whenever he could get anybody to read them, picking them up on his next visit to the home and giving them to potential new readers.[102] The scriptural interpretations of Swedenborg were too intellectual to appeal widely in a frontier culture where illiteracy ran high.[103] Still, between 1820 and 1840 many small Swedenborgian Societies sprang up and flourished vigorously for a time in Licking and several other counties.[104]

Construction of the Ohio Canal began in July 1825. The opening ceremonies were held July 4 on the Licking Summit with former Gov. Clinton digging the first shovelful of earth to the enthusiastic shouts of the thousands present. The Whipples, with their three daughters,[105] probably spent Independence day there to witness the beginning of a project that

would make it possible for farmers to sell their crops in the large eastern markets.[106] Thomas Ewing of Lancaster, orator of the day, spoke from a stand in the woods. The crowd was so great that a company of cavalry was formed in a hollow square around the back and sides of the speaker's stand. The flies, after a three-day rain, were so troublesome the horses kept up a constant tramping.[107]

It is likely that Enoch may have spent time working on the canal as many farmers and their sons joined the work crews for the cash wages needed to pay taxes and other cash expenses. Wages for working on the "Roaring Canal," as it was called, were $8 for 26 working dry days from sunrise to sunset – 30 and 3/4 cents per day.[108] Another boon to the county's economy was completion of the National Road (route 40). It eventually connected Cumberland, Maryland with Vandalia, Illinois, passing through Hebron, Union Township, Licking county in 1834.[109] The Pony Express Line used the National Road in 1836 and 1837 and its speed was twice that of the regular mail stage. Licking county stations included Brownsville, Linnville, Etniers (near Jacksontown), Luray, and Etna.[110]

In the fall of 1834, the Whipples sold their home place, Lot No. 29 containing 100 acres, all improvements, water courses profits and appurtenances whatsoever, including dower right and title of dower to John Arnet for $900. Enoch and Catharine's seals on the deed were witnessed by N. Everett, Justice of the Peace, on September 6, 1834. The transaction was recorded January 12, 1835.[111] Then on October 18, they reacquired Lot 29 with all improvements for $700. An indenture of said date between Licking county property owner, Isaiah H. (____), and Elijah Dumfy and his wife was somehow involved in this transaction. In addition to getting the property back, the Whipples were to received two notes from Arnet: a note for $100 which was due and payable in full by May 1, 1835 and a note for $400 due and payable in full by May 1, 1836. The indenture was recorded April 12, 1836 when the mortgage was fully satisfied.[112]

According to Lucien, the Whipple's youngest child, the family moved to Logansport, Indiana in 1839 and to Eugene, Indiana in 1840.[113] The author has been unable to find a Logansport source showing the family lived there. There is no question that the family moved because it was not in the Licking county U.S. census of 1840. Nor was it in the Vermillion, county, Indiana census that year. The move to Logansport was probably caused by the financial panic of 1837.

Logansport, located between the Wabash and Eel rivers, may have offered Enoch an opportunity to practice the trade of cooper.[114] The lands in and around Logansport were not acquired by the U.S. government until a treaty with the Miami and Pottawattomi Indians was signed in late October 1826. The area at that time was a dense forest where only Indians

and wild beasts lived. In March 1828 Gen. John Tipton, the Indian agent, moved his headquarters there from Ft. Wayne and later that month the original plat was laid out between the rivers.[115] The town was named for Capt. Logan, the Shawnee chief who lost his life while attesting his fidelity to the white people in November 1812. "Port" was added as a suffix because the town was located at the junction of two rivers. Corner lots sold for $75, "in" lots for $50. Most lots contained enough lumber to construct a house.[116]

It was believed that its location between two rivers would make it a thriving town. It was incorporated as a town September 5, 1831 and as a city April 3, 1838 and apparently grew rapidly based on the many additions added to the original plat by 1835.[117] However, either the move didn't work out as hoped or the cooperage business in Eugene, Indiana offered Enoch a greater opportunity.

Eugene, in Vermillion county,[118] is adjacent to the Big Vermillion river which flowed into the Wabash, Ohio, and Mississippi rivers giving the town access to the markets of New Orleans and from there to the eastern ports of the United States, Europe, or any place a sailing ship could go. Eugene became a major supplier of smoked pork which was floated down to New Orleans on flatboats. The pork business went from a slow beginning and grew until Eugene's name was known in European cities as a producer of smoked pork.[119]

Samuel Grondyke, Sr., along with three brothers-in-law and a son-in-law, built a large slaughter house a little west of Eugene. The road leading to it was shown on early maps as "Slaughter House Road." Hogs were hauled and driven on foot to Eugene from as far away as a hundred miles. Only slaughtering and rough dressing was done at the slaughter house. The carcasses were hauled to a huge smoke-house on Water Street where they were cut up into hams, shoulders, and sides then salted or smoked until cured.[120] The "pork house," where the meat was packed in barrels and stored, was across the street and had frontage on the Big Vermillion river. Just south of the pork house was the lard house where lard was rendered and poured into kegs. These buildings were convenient to the river bank where the flatboats could be loaded and let stand until the early spring floods practically launched them for their long journey south.[121]

Enoch must have found all the cooperage business he could handle in Eugene. Barrels, casks, and kegs were in great demand so long as the pork business thrived. He bought Out Lot 27 in 1841.[122] This lot fronted on Water street and backed up to the river bank and was only three lots south of the Pork House. It was a large lot and the family lived and Enoch may have worked there. It's easy to imagine that Cyrenius, 13, and Henry, 10, were put to work delivering the finished product to the nearby pork

house.[123] If he didn't work for himself, he was probably employed by Isaac Brown who operated a large coopering business beginning about 1840.[124]

The family is in the 1850 U.S. census in Eugene and included Enoch, Catharine (Massachusetts is listed as her birth place), Eliza, Cyrenius, Luana, Henry, Lucien, and a granddaughter Angeline, eight.[125] Daughter Lovina married John Holtz December 10, 1840.[126] They, along with daughters Eveline, 8, and Mary, 6, were living in Eugene.[127] Daughters Angeline and Eliza were living in Warren county, Indiana in 1840. Angeline married James McKinley March 31, 1842[128] and Eliza married William Gardner September 18, 1845.[129]

In 1846, six years after the Whipples arrived in Eugene, Elias Howe showed off his amazing new sewing machine; the first telegraph line was strung between Baltimore and Washington; William Morton, dentist, administered ether in the first public demonstration of its use as a anesthetic. As a consequence, the help of three or four men was no longer required to amputate a leg or pull a tooth. It is doubtful that Enoch and Catharine had any knowledge of these events and how their world was changing.

While they would have been aware of the Mexican War, they would not realize it led to the country completing the westward course of empire that President Jefferson had dreamed of when he sent Lewis and Clark exploring 40 years before. At the beginning of 1846, the Union occupied less than half of what is the continental United States today. When the war was over it possessed, or was soon to possess all of it. President James K. Polk's policies changed the contour of the country by adding 1.2 million square miles of territory and extended its domain to the Pacific.[130] In that year the nation consisted of an uneasy union of 28 still very sovereign states. It had a population, including Indians and slaves, of less than 20 million, about as many people as live in New York today. The country's western border was roughly a north-south border from Wisconsin to Louisiana. Beyond that was what was known as the Great American Desert.

During Enoch's lifetime political parties ran elections and controlled many of the newspapers either directly or indirectly. They managed the most visible agencies of the federal government – post offices and custom houses—as employment bureaus for their loyal members.

In the 1852 election between Democrat Franklin Pierce and Whig Winfield Scott, election day was the culmination of a campaign of several months of barbeques, torchlight processions, and "monster meetings." Voters (only white males) not active in the campaign were roused on election day by a party worker and escorted to the polls. As they approached the ballot box they might be encouraged with a dollar or two, less a bribe than an acknowledgment that voting was a service to the Party. A Party worker would hand them a printed ballot with the names of the Party's

candidates. They didn't have to mark the ticket or even read it, just deposit it in the ballot box. During most of the nineteenth century, Parties were loose aggregations of state organizations focused on local and/or regional concerns and voter loyalty was related more to comrade-ship than to policy. Voting was not a matter of assent but a statement of affiliation. Drink, dollars, and drams brought people to the polls.

One of the country's most popular songs was composed about a year after Enoch and his brothers arrived in Licking county. *The Star-Spangled Banner* by Francis Scott Key, written on a boat in Baltimore Harbor in September 1814, became the national anthem on March 3, 1931.[131] The most popular of all Christmas hymns, *Silent Night*, written in 1818, was created for the Austrian village of Arnsdorf. It was an immediate success and spread all over the world.[132] *Home, Sweet Home*, (1823),[133] *The Erie Canal, (1825)*[134] *America*, (1831)[135] *The Old Oaken Bucket, (1834),*[136] and *Nearer, My God to Thee*[137] have all stood the test of time.

Old Dan Tucker (1843) became one of our most popular tunes for folk dancing and *The Blue Tail Fly (*also known as *Jim Crack Corn* (1846) achieved great popularity.[138] One of our revered patriotic songs, *Columbia, the Gem of the Ocean,* was published in 1843 and *Oh! Susanna* was the hit of 1848.[139] *Old Folks at Home* (1851) by Stephen Foster became one of the most popular songs in the world. Foster's *Jeanie with the Light-Brown Hair* (1854) is one of his loveliest melodies[140] and his *Old Black Joe* (1860) ranks as one of his masterpieces.[141] Enoch's era certainly produced its share of songs that have stood the test of time.

An apparent desire by his sons to become farmers resulted in the family moving to Benton county, Iowa in 1854 when Enoch was 66 and Catharine was 56. It could not have been an easy decision at that age to leave the comparative comfort of Eugene with its ample work for coopers to go to the Iowa frontier and begin farming again at his advanced age. But Enoch probably remembered his desire to strike out on his own when he was of a similar age and left Whipple Hollow, Vermont, for the frontier of Ohio.

In 1850 when he was 23, Cyrenius left Eugene with a team and wagon and $200 he had saved from a job (pay $8 month) on the flat boats hauling pork to New Orleans. One of the horses died en route so he sold the wagon and continued the trip through the trackless forest and unbroken prairies riding the other horse. When he reached Benton county he selected a quarter section of choice land a quarter mile west of what became the city limits of Vinton. He registered the land at the Dubuque land office on the way back and arrived home with 50 cents.[142] His description of the area and his enthusiasm about the opportunity it offered must have been persuasive because he returned to Benton county the next year and selected land, close to his, for his parents.

The family—Enoch, Catharine, Cyrenius, Henry, and Lucien— packed their belongings in two wagons and along with their daughter Luana and her husband James Edmonds[143] moved to Benton county, arriving in August 1854 and immediately built a two-room hewn log cabin on Enoch's land. Enoch, Catharine, Cyrenius, and Luana lived in Benton county the rest of their lives. Lucien returned to Eugene where his family lived until after the Civil War then moved to Kansas for two years before returning to Eugene where they lived the rest of their lives. His oldest son James E. moved to Vinton from Sidell, Illinois in the fall of 1888 and lived the remainder of his life there. Henry died in Independence, Iowa. Angeline and Eliza moved to Benton county at a later date and both are buried in Vinton. Lavina spent her final years in Bement, Platt county, Illinois.[144]

Vinton lies on the Cedar river 25 miles above and west of Cedar Rapids. When the Whipples arrived there was a magnificent grove of oak, hickory, basswood, walnut, maple, etc. on the north side of town. Top soil was three to five feet deep. In January of 1855, Vinton's population was estimated at 500.[145] There was one school with 100 pupils, a Presbyterian and Methodist church, a Court House, "five respectable-sized stores with stocks embracing everything usually kept in a country retail establishment,[146] a drug store, three hotels "overcrowded with guests," and one steam saw mill of "mammoth dimensions but limited machinery." They had weekly mail service and farm land in the vicinity sold for $10 to $30 an acre, depending on location and improvements. The Circuit Court held two terms there annually which "adds somewhat to the dignity and importance of the town."[147]

The first issue of Vinton's newspaper, the *Eagle*, was published 10 January 1855. The town doctor was A.H. Taylor and a Lyceum & Literary Society and a Library Association were formed in December 1855. In January of 1856 the population had increased to 766 including 415 adults, 110 children under 6, and 241 between 7 and 20. The gender breakdown was 426 male and 340 female.[148] By September four doctors and a dentist were in business and the Presbyterian church, attended by the Whipples, had 60 members with 50 students in the Sunday school.[149]

Vinton is in Taylor Township where the various members of the Whipple family established their farms. By August of 1856 the majority of its population of 1,297 lived in town. Even that early, transportation was no problem. The town had daily service of four-horse post coaches from Iowa City, of hacks from Waterloo, a weekly line of mail hacks from Cedar Rapids and from Independence.[150] Mabie's Circus Menagerie and Indian Troupe performed there in September and according to the *Eagle* their acts "gave universal satisfaction."[151] The town voted, by a large margin, to incorporate on March 14, 1857.[152]

Enoch, who lived to be 69 years, one month, was born five years after the end of the Revolution and the U.S. Constitution was ratified the year he was born. George Washington became the first president on March 4, 1789, six days before Enoch was seven months old. Enoch lost his father toward the end of Thomas Jefferson's second term and began farming in Ohio about the time James Madison was completing his second term. He had 12 grandsons and seven granddaughters at time of death.

Four of Enoch and Catharine's children—Angeline, Lavina, Eliza, and Cyrenius—were born before John Quincy Adams left the White House for the U.S. House of Representatives. During the eight years of Andrew Jackson's presidency, daughter Luana and sons Thomas and Lucien were born. The financial panic of 1837 occurred during Martin Van Buren's term and that may have been the cause the family moved to Indiana. By the time James K. Polk became president in March 1845, their youngest child, Lucien was eleven. Vice President Millard Fillmore became President in July 1850 and his signature appears on the land Patent for Enoch's Iowa farm.

At the time of his death in Benton County, on October 10, 1857,[153] James Buchanan was President. Enoch's life spanned 15 presidents – from George Washington to James Buchanan. While his and Catharine's names are on a monument in the Whipple plot in Vinton's Maplewood Cemetery, they were both buried on the family farm. The cemetery wasn't developed until November 1865, 8 years after his death and about the time of Catharine's death. The monument was ordered in 1901 from W.B. Sprague Tomstones, Muscatine, Iowa and was placed on the lot after the death of his oldest son, Cyrenius. It is apparent that Cyrenius and his family wanted to honor his parents by including them on the monument. In the spring of 1987 while plowing what used to be the Enoch Whipple homestead, the then owner found Catharine's stone and it has been placed at the foot of the main Whipple monument.

The cemetery was developed on 20 acres owned by Cyrenius and was located about one-fourth mile west of town. It has a full view of the town and was developed into 823 lots and was known as the Whipple Cemetery. It was divided into blocks of four lots, each 20 feet square, separated from each other by four foot wide walks. Sixteen foot streets and 33 foot avenues separated the blocks "affording ample room for the passage of teams through the grounds." Later the first 100 lot owners formed a corporation to operate it and changed the name to Maplewood Cemetery.[154]

Catharine was a widow for six years. Shortly after Enoch's death their home burned down and Catharine lived with one of her children—probably Cyrenius—until her death November 3, 1965. She owned 40 acres in Township 27 and 29 acres in Township 14 in August 1861.[155]

1. Enoch and Abraham sold their land to their brother-in-law, Samuel Morgan, husband of their sister Betsey. *Rutland County, Vermont Probate Records. No. 7-1812-24.* Salt Lake City, Utah, Family History Library, Film #0028783, 78-83
2. Licking county got its name from its principal stream, called "Licking river" by white men and "Pataskala" by the Indians. The river is a large western branch of the Muskingum river. The county contains 666 square miles, 30 miles long east to west, 24 miles broad north to south. The greater part of the county lies well for cultivation with fertile soil and well watered by Licking creek. John Kilburn, *The Ohio Gazetteer or Topographical Dictionary Describing the Several Counties, Towns, Villages, Canals, Roads, Rivers, Lakes, Springs, Mines, &c in the State of Ohio.* Tenth Edition. E. Golver, Printer, Columbus, Ohio, 1831. It is one of the state's larger counties and the 1828 opening of the Ohio canal had much to do with its early development. Thirteen of Ohio's famous covered bridges are in the county. *The Founders of Ohio*, Robert Clarke & Co., Cincinnati, 1888.
3. Congress acquired the Northwest Territories a year before Enoch was born (1787). It had provided for the survey and sale of government land when it passed the Land Ordinance of 1785. The townships were to be six miles square with the lines north-south and east-west with each containing 36 lots a mile square and to be sold for not less than $1.00 per acre. The Northwest Ordinance passed 13 July 1787 provided that at least three but not more than five states be authorized from the area; each to enter the union on equal terms with the existing states as soon as its population reached 60,000. Slavery was excluded and a condition of statehood was freedom of religion, proportional representation in the legislature, trail by jury, habeas corpus, and the privileges of the common law. Edmund S. Morgan, *The Birth of the Republic 1763-89,* Revised Edition. Chicago History of American Civilization, Daniel J. Boorstin, editor, the University of Chicago Press, Chicago and London, 113-14.
4. Ohio was first settled in July 1787 and became the 17th state 1 March 1803 after 15 years as a territory. The states of Va., N.Y., Conn., and Mass. made claims based on the vague Charters granted them by the Kings of England to portions of the territory northwest of the Ohio river. After much controversy over ownership, Congress convinced the states to relinquish their claims in favor of the United States so the land could be sold for the benefit of the U.S. treasury. The plan was adopted with reservations by Virginia in 1783 and Connecticut in 1786 and the U.S. assumed control acknowledging the special claims of these two states. Congress created the Northwest Territory in 1787. Included was much of what today is Ohio, Indiana, Illinois, and Michigan. *Ohio Land Grants*, prepared for the schools of Ohio by Joseph T. Ferguson, auditor of the state. No date, 3-7.
5. Elias Gates was the son of Sarah Whipple and Nehemiah Gates. Benjamin and Hepzibah (Crosby) Whipple were the common ancestors of Elias and Enoch Whipple.
6. Ebenezer Pratt died in Granville Township 13 Sept. 1835 at age 83. Elias Gates died 18 March 1852 at Granville, age 64 years, one month, 18 days. Marvel G. And Donald P. Swan, comp. *Early Families of Ruttland, Vt.* Rutland, Vt: Dawn Hance, editor, The Rutland Historical Society, Inc. 1990, 146.
7. Licking county was formed in 1808 from Fairfield county. Its territory belonged to Washington county from 1788 to 1798, was part of Ross county from 1798 to 1800, and from 1800 to 1808 a part of Fairfield county. Today it is bordered by Franklin and Delaware counties on the west, Knox on the north, Fairfield and Perry on the south,

and Coshocton and Muskingum on the east.

8. Sickle flail —A free-swinging stick tied to the end of a long handle, used to thresh grain by hand.
9. There were no important inventions in agriculture until 1831 when McCormick made his reaper and Manning his mowing machine.
10. Gilbert C. Fite and Jim E. Reese, *An Economic History of the United States*. Third Edition. Boston: Houghton Mifflin, 1973, 163.
11. Frequently three or four families joined in the purchase of the flatboats which cost $35 to $75. They were about 50 feet long and 14 feet wide and squared at both ends. They could hold 25 to 30 tons including the wagon, family members, horses, cows, pigs, chickens, etc. Zadoc Cramer had published a river guide, *The Navigator*, with directions for navigating the Monogahela, Allegheny, Ohio, and Mississippi rivers. It was first published in 1801, sold for $1, and eventually went through 12 editions. Richard A. Bartlett, *The New Country*, New York: Oxford University Press, 1974, 144-5.
12. Andro Linklater, "The Measurement That Built America," *American Heritage*, November/December 2002, 45-49.
13. The Licking county Court House burned down in 1875. Fortunately some land records were saved, including both purchases and sales by Enoch and a sale by Nathan.
14. In the original survey it is known as Township Four in the Fifteenth Range of Townships.
15. *Licking County Deed Records*, Vol. E:147-8. The United States Military Lands (1796) consist of about 2,500,000 acres located east of the Scioto river in central Ohio. They are called U.S. Military Lands because Congress appropriated the land to pay Continental officers and soldiers for their service. The land was divided into five mile square townships, then later divided into quarter townships of two and a half square miles, each containing 4,000 acres. Subsequently, some of these quarter townships were subdivided into 40 lots of 100 each for the accommodation of those soldiers who held warrants for only 100 acres. Ferguson, 13.
16. Munson and Messenger originally acquired the land in partition deeds from the Licking Land Company
17. *Licking County Deed Records*, vol. E:151. Munson and Messenger originally acquired the land in partition deeds from the Licking Land Company.
18. *Licking County Deed Records*, Vol. F:436.
19. *Licking County Deed Recrods,* Vol. F, 436.
20. Calling someone an "unchartered son-of-a-bitch" was the most contemptuous epithet that could be used at the time.
21. Nearly every business in the trans-Appalachian West failed in the Panic of 1819 because the Western state banks and the businesses they serviced were built on paper. "One thing seems to be universally conceded," an adviser told the Governor of Ohio, "that the greater part of our mercantile citizens are in a state of bankruptcy – that those of them who have the largest possessions of real and personal estate... find it almost impossible to raise sufficient funds to supply themselves with the necessaries of life." "Audubon America's Rare Bird," *Smithsonian*, December 2004, 76.
22. Letter dated April 29, 1981 to the author from James L. Murphy, reference librarian, The Ohio Historical Society, Inc. Archives-Library Division. A copy of the Licking county tax duplicate entry for Enoch and Nathan was enclosed. Letter in possession of author in 2005.
23. After the first clearings and plantings of 1809-10, the needs of annual immigrants cre-

ated a demand and good prices for all the surplus corn, wheat, and pork the early settler's produced. However, about 1816, surpluses began to pile up and access to settled communities did not exist. Consequently prices tumbled and this could have been the circumstance that caused Nathan and Laura to leave Licking county.

24. *Licking County Deed Records,* Vol H:452.
25. Hartford Township borders Knox county on the north, Delaware county on the west, Bennington Township on the east, and Monroe Township on the south. The Otter fork of the Licking, the main stream in the Township, passes diagonally through and leaves the Township about the center on the east. The west half of the Township was originally school land; the east half was entered under an old law, requiring a whole Military section of 4,000 acres be entered in a body. The southeast quarter was entered by Jonathan and Elias B. Dayton, the northeast quarter by Dr. Joanas Stanberry, who sold it to the Granville Company which surveyed the land into 100 acre lots. There is little or no Indian history connected with the Township but numerous flint arrow points, stone hatchets, and other relics indicates they used it as a hunting area. The Township is also the most elevated site of any land between Cleveland and Columbus. N.N. Hill, Jr. compiler, *History of Licking County, Ohio Its Past and Present,* Illustrated. A.A. Graham & Co., Publishers, Newark, Ohio, 1881, 464-5.
26. Hill, 464.
27. Rumors of a potential Indian raid toward the close of 1812 induced Poppleton to leave for a few months. Whipple, Graves, and Cooley arrived in 1813. Hill, 465.
28. Newark is on the Licking river and 33 miles east of Columbus. It had 999 inhabitants in 1830.. Henry Howe, LL.D., *Historical Collections of Ohio. An Encyclopedia of the State.* In two volumes. Published by the state of Ohio, The Laning Printing Co., Public Printers, Norwalk, Ohio, 1896. Vol II, 70.
29. The town of Hartford was laid out in 1824 by Ezekiel Wells and Elijah Durfey. *Licking Lantern*, Vol. XV, No. 1, 1990. Licking County Genealogical Society, Newark, Ohio, 14.
30. Hill, 465.
31. Moldboard—A curved plate, usually of iron, attached to a plowshare for turning over the soil.
32. Cost of various items at this time: working and milch cow, $25; Bay gelding, 4 years old, 13-hands high, $30; U.S. Harpers Ferry rifle carrying a ball of 30 per pound, $15; 1 1/4 lb. of American rifle powder, finely ground, $1.25; pouch made of weasel pelt big enough for 8 flints,.50; tomahawk-hatchet with a 2 lb. iron head and a steel cutting edge, fitted on an 18-inch long hickory haft,.67; hammered copper still, well tinned, 27.5 gal. capacity, with maple tubs $14.30; Indian corn to make whiskey,.40 bu.; charge by mill to crack 350 lbs of corn for making mash,.35; 80 proof whiskey from home still,.32 gal.; 1 qt. Maderia wine, $2.25; malt,.05 bu.; 5 gal. oaken key,.40; 3-4 year-old apple trees from Johnny Appleseed, 2 cents each; ledger bound in calf skin, known as a waste book, used to keep accounts in and as a journal,.50; steel writing pins, ,01 ea.; one stick of India ink,.11; cotton suspenders,.35; 1 _ lb. Beaver skin, $2; 1 lb. maple sugar,.10; cheese,.10 per lb.; 1 pint cream,.16; _ lb. green hyson tea, $1.50, _ lb. young hyson tea,.72; 1 pr. harness needles,.15; 1 spool waxed linen harness thread,.25; Shirting cotton,.50 yd – 4 yds for shirt, $2; 2 sleeve buttons,.03; 1 spool white thread,.20; 1 razor,.08; 1 pr. specatcles, $1; to shoe a horse,.50; supper in a tavern,.10; hired help, including use of ox to grub out three girdled black walnut trees, took 2 _ weeks including Sundays in August, $3 plus victuals. Hugh Nissenson, *The Tree of Life*, New York: Harper & Row Publishers, 1985.
33. All but the hardest wood would rot in a few years.

34. Scythe—A tool with a long single-edged blade set at an angle on a long, curved handle, used in cutting grain, long grass, etc. by hand.
35. A good reaper cut the wheat as gently as possible so few kernels fell off and the swath left the stalks so neatly arranged that the binder could gather them in a single motion of his arms and quickly assemble them in sheafs. The grain was flailed into the air or horses stomped it on a treadmill. Neighbors, when available, helped clean the wheat with a bed sheet or piece of woven flax or tow linen. A man at each end of the sheet would generate quick revolving motions which created enough wind to separate the chaff from the wheat. A third man would slowly pour the wheat into the sheet.
36. Hill, 465. See also "Ohio Marriages," extracted from *Old Northwest Genealogical Quarterly.* This publication is in the library of the Licking County Genealogical Society, Newark, Ohio 43055.
37. Branson L. Harris, *Some Recollections of My Boyhood*, The Hollenbeck Press, Indianapolis, 1908.
38. Grease skimmer—A utensil used to skim liquids.
39. Trammell—A devise with links or openings at different heights for hanging a pothook in a fireplace.
40. Wooden trencher—A board or platter on which to carve or serve meat.
41. Commodore Perry was the son of Capt. Christopher Raymond Perry and Sarah Alexander. Christopher was a native of Newport, R.I. and a Naval officer in the Revolution. Sarah, of Scotch-Irish stock, was born in County Down, Ireland. They had five sons and three daughters. Oliver, born 23 Aug. 1785 at South Kingston, R.I., excelled in the study of navigation and mathematics. He was commissioned midshipman in 1799 at age 14 rising to Lieutenant by 1807 when he served in the Tripolitan War. He received orders 17 Feb. 1813 to go to Lake Erie and build a squadron to engage the British Navy. He was given a detachment of 50 men, including his younger brother Alexander. He was 28 when he won the Battle of Lake Erie and 33 when he died of yellow fever in June 1819 at Port Spain, Island of Trinidad. He was in command of a squadron at the time. Another brother, Matthew Galbraith Perry, was also an accomplished Naval officer. Perry county, Ohio, which bordered Licking county on the south, was named after the Commodore. It was formed 1 March 1817 from Washington, Muskingum, and Fairfield counties.
42. The four Shaw families in Hopewell were: Alexander, who was identified as being over 45 with a wife between 26 and 45, three male children under 10, two between 16-18, four female children under 10, one 10-16, and one 16-18. Three of these people were engaged in farming. Osborne, age between 26-45, his wife 16-26, and two males under 10. He was engaged in agriculture. Charles, between 26-45, his wife 16-26, one male and one female under 10. He was also engaged in agriculture. Zachariah, a farmer, and his wife both 26-45, four males under 10, one 10-16, and one 26-45. Samuel Shaw in McKean Township. He and his wife were 25-45, they had one male and two females under 10. All but Samuel are found in the 1820 U.S. Census, Ohio, Licking Co., Hopewell Township, p. 028; Samuel is on page 042, McKean Township.
43. Licking county's population was 11,861 in 1820, 20,874 in 1830, and 35,096 in 1840. The county's population originated from Penn., Va., N.J., New England, Wales, and Germany. Henry Howe, LL.D., *Historical Collections of Ohio, An Encyclopedia of the State.* Columbus, Ohio: Henry Howe & Son, 1891. Vol. II, 316.
44. 1830 U.S. Census, Ohio, Licking Co., Hopewell township, p. 420.
45. 1830 U.S. Census, Ohio, Licking Co., Hopewell township, p. 418.
46. 1830 U.S. Census, Licking Co., McKean township, town of Fredonia.
47. 1830 U.S. Census, Ohio, Licking Co., Granville township, p. 476.

48. Benjamin Shaw was occupying a donation lot in Wolf Creek Association in September 1791. The lot was originally granted to John Gardiner. On 1 Feb. 1792, Benjamin was listed as owning one share in the Ohio Company. Archer Butler Hulbert, editor, *The Records of the Original Proceedings of the Ohio Company*, vol 1. Marietta: Marietta Historical Commission, 1917, 26, 113-14, 241-42.
49. 1820 U.S. Census, Ohio, Licking Co., Granville Township, p. 10.
50. Both Abraham and Parthina were born in Vermont in 1790 and were married in that state in 1813. Five of their six children were born in Granville: John in 1817, Louisa, 1819, Ransom, 1821, Borlace, 1824, and Eunice about 1828. The oldest, Manley, was born in Vermont in 1814. Parthina died 1 March 1844 in Butler Co., Ohio and Abraham, who remarried, died after 1850 in Missouri. Letters to the author dated 11 May and 6 Nov. 1999 from Janice Worthington Rowe, 1429 S. 7th St., St. Charles, Ill 60174 in possession of the author in 2005.
51. 1820 U.S. Census, Ohio, Geauga Co., Madison Township, p. 113.
52. 1820 U.S. Census, Ohio, Licking Co., Hartford Township, p. 81.
53. There were 296 people in Hartford Township in 1820. All were white. Of the total, 168 were male and 66 of those worked in agriculture, 11 worked in manufacturing of some sort, and none were in commerce. There were 128 females. The male population was almost evenly split between those 18 and under and those 19 and older. The female population was considerably younger, 95 were 18 and under. The Township experienced a rapid growth in the decade 1820-30. The population in 1830 was 713, a 240 percent increase. Of these, 362 were male, 351 female. There were few old people in the Township: 18 between 60-70; 6 between 70-80; and 2 were 80 or over. Numbering 167, the largest age group was under 5; 113 were between 5-10; 102 between 10-15; 59 between 15-20; 116 between 20-30; 86 between 30-40; 32 between 40-50; and 18 between 50-60. At 42, Enoch fell in the 40-50 class. Catharine was in the 30-40 classification at age 32.
54. Whipple neighbors in 1820: Mr and Mrs. Charles Twiggs who were both between 26-45 with 2 daughters under 10, one 18-26, and a son under 16. Mr. and Mrs. Oliver A. Thrale, both between 18-26 with no children. Mr. and Mrs. Nicholas Merrill, he between 26-45, she 18-26. Two males lived with them, one under 16 and one 18-26. It's possible they were his sons born to a first wife. Mr. and Mrs. Rufus Linscott, both 26-45 with a son under 10. Mr. and Mrs. Elisha Warren, both 18-26, no children. Mr. and Mrs. Ezekiel Wells, both 26-45 with 2 daughters under 10, one under 16. Mr. and Mrs. Richard Sinkey, both 26-45 with 3 boys and 1 girl under 10. Mr. and Mrs. James Sinkey, both 18-26 with no children. 1820 U.S. Census, Ohio, Licking Co., Hartford township, p. 81. Most of these neighbors were gone by the 1830 census.
55. 1830 U.S. Census, Licking Co., Ohio, Hartford Township, p. 484.
56. A Mr. and Mrs. E. A. Whipple lived in the town of Utica, Washington Township, Licking Co. in 1830. They were both between the ages of 20 and 30 and had no children. Utica was a thriving town of 194 including two free colored males and two free colored females. There were no slaves. *1830 U.S. Census, Licking Co., Ohio, town of Utica, Washington township*, p. 390. The author has been unable to place them in any Whipple family lineage
57. If the cabin were crude, the floor was pounded earth and the base logs placed flat on the ground.
58. Each log was held in place by its own weight, supported by the log below, and reinforced by the log above. The builders probably didn't know the mathematical principles being employed in the structure but their system resulted in excellent construction.

59. Notch—A concave or v-shaped cut or indentation in an edge or across a surface.
60. Ridge pole—The horizontal timber or beam at the ridge of a roof, to which the upper ends of the rafters are attached.
61. Mastic—Any of various quick-drying pasty cements used for cementing things together.
62. The heyday of the log cabin occurred between 1780 and 1850 when settlers surged westward. The log cabin is, quite simply, the shelter America likes to think of itself as coming of age in. Though its heyday ended before the Civil War, it has become a hallowed symbol of independence and self-sufficiency. Despite being a potent political symbol—the log cabin was the center of political controversy in the unforgettable presidential campaign of 1840 between the incumbent Martin Van Buren and Whig nominee William Henry Harrison, who won fame at the 1811 Battle of Tippecanoe against the Tecumseh Indians. A small portion of Harrison's house was log and he played to the common folk that he lived in a log cabin, neglecting to mention the other 12 rooms in his mansion. But by the 1840s, the log cabin was fading out with the advent of trains delivering sawn lumber, nails, bricks, milled woodwork, hardware, and other goods. Climate and the local forests no longer set architectural limits. The author was born in a log house in Martin South Dakota in 1930.
63. When the pit was filled, the outhouse was dragged to a new hole and the old hole was covered. On cold nights, rather than go outside, the family used a chamber pot kept under the bed.
64. Malaria was common in the Ohio river valleys. It was called the "ague" and the "shakes." "Milk/cow sickness" was prevalent. Symptoms included chills, high fever, vomiting, a swollen abdomen, and delirium. Tetanus, then better known as lockjaw, blood poisoning, typhoid fever, erysipelas, yellow fever, Asiatic cholera, and the usual run of childhood diseases—measles, mumps, small pox, sore throat, etc.—befell most families. Some of the remedies used in the early 1800s included steaming catnip tea for fever, hemlock bark tea for coughs, a strong purge of ragweed root for constipation. Boils were treated with a hot poultice of corn flower; you got rid of chills by cutting as many notches in a stick as you got chills over the next 12-hour period then threw the stick over you left shoulder into a creek without looking back; a burning stomach was treated by blowing tobacco smoke into a gill of water and drinking it. If Enoch rubbed his shoulders raw by carrying logs, Catharine would apply a poultice of boiled pine bark to the area.
65. A doctor was a surgeon and even a dentist as well as a physician. Sometimes the blacksmith relieved his frontier neighbors of toothache by rough extraction.
66. The following "medical" books were published between 1813-30: Peter Smith, *The Indian Doctor's Dispensary*; Dr. Richard Carter, *Valuable Vegetable Prescriptions for the Cure of all Nervous and Putrid Disorders*; Robert L. Foster, *The North American Indian Doctor*; Peter C. Gunn, *Domestic Medicine or Poor Man's Friend, in the House of Affliction, Pain, and Sickness*. Gunn's book sold over 100,000 copies by 1839. Bartlett, 365. There were quack doctors everywhere. "Here comes the famous Doctor Dolt," says the *Farmer's Almanac*, "with his skunk's grease and liverwort. A larnt man is the Doctor. Once he was a simple knight of the lapstone and pegging awl; but now he is blazoned on the first order of quack heraldry." Gaillard Hunt, *Life in America One Hundred Years Ago*. New York and London: Harper & Brothers Publishers, 1914, 105.
67. There was much rheumatism and gout. Rheumatism was considered an external disease caused by cold and damp; gout came from internal causes. There was also a form of malignant sore throat which occasionally became epidemic and killed many children. It was really diphtheria but was treated as croup. There was also much suffering

and disease caused by decayed teeth. Hunt, 205.

68. Dyspepsia—Indigestion.
69. Puerperal fever—Known as sepsis (a poisoned state caused by the absorption of pathogenic microorganisms and their products into the bloodstream) sometimes occurring during child birth; a term no longer in use.
70. Paroxysm—Sudden convulsion or outburst, as of sneezing, etc. usually recurring periodically.
71. Emetic—an agent that induces vomiting.
72. The barber cut open a vein in the arm, neck, or foot. Occasionally an artery was lanced but because of the danger it was rarely used. Leeches and the cup were sometimes used and toward the end of the practice they became the usual way to draw blood. Hunt, 203.
73. Four cords of wood were a winter's supply. Fires were started with a tinderbox filled with dry, crumbling wood and a small steel bar striking a flintstone until sparks ignited the tinder. Then the fire-maker blew vigorously on the sparks, praying the tinder would smoulder. Even on a dry day it could take 15 minutes to start a fire. Alonzo Phillips of Springfield, Mass invented the first striking match in 1839 but flint and steel were used well into the 1840s. Bartlett, 10.
74. Salt, now one of the cheapest of the necessaries of life, was so expensive to early settlers that is was considered a luxury. It cost from $5 to $10 a bushel. There were several salt springs in Ohio which were considered of such great value that three were reserved by the national government to prevent monopoly. The Scioto Salt Springs were the most noted and valuable and the General Assembly appointed an Agent to collect a license of three cents per gallon on the capacity of each salt kettle used by the salt makers. Eventually salt wells which furnished a superior brine were found in other sections of the state and by 1840 Ohio was a major producer of salt. Ferguson, 18-19.
75. Ferule—A flat stick or ruler used for punishing children.
76. Rattan—A cane or switch.
77. Metal pen points did not come into use until about 1830.
78. Hunt, 134-37.
79. *Blue-Back Speller*—It sold for 15 cents and by 1818 more than 5 million copies had been sold. By the time of his death at 84 (1843), 17 million copies had been printed and eventually up to 100 million. Webster believed that the last vestige of authority England held over America was its language. An ardent nationalist, he despaired of America presenting a divided sound to the world and set out to make the country "as independent in literature as she is in politics, as famous for arts as for arms." In addition to teaching children to spell it specialized in moralistic fables about honesty, thrift, patriotism, and hard work, giving American children a shared ethic and heritage. In a sense it was the Chairman Mao's *Little Red Book* of its day and made Webster schoolmaster to the nation. His greatest achievement was probably the dictionary he spent 20 years compiling. The first edition was published in 1828 and contained 70,000 carefully defined words. Webster removed the "u" from words like errour and colour, changed plough to plow, and reversed the final letters in words like theatre. "Noah Webster," *Parade Magazine*, Sunday January 18, 1987, 12.
80. Sheave—To gather grain in a sheaf or sheaves.
81. Swingle: a wooden sword-like tool used to clean flax or hemp by beating or scraping. Swingling: to clean flax or hemp by beating or scraping with a swingle.
82. Hackle—A comblike instrument for separating the fibers of flax, hemp, etc.
83. Moldboard—the curved plate of a plow that turns over the soil.

84. Harris, 49-51
85. Corn-dodger—Bread or cake made of corn meal.
86. Pre-granulated sugar was not available until after the Civil War. Then it came by the barrel, was coarse and brown, and often so caked a special "sugar auger" was needed to dig it out.
87. Buehr, 33-4.
88. On a windy day she might have a small blast furnace to contend with; on a wet day the wood would be damp so the oven never got hot enough to bake in; and on a sultry summer day cooking for company was a labor of love. Walter Buehr, *Home Sweet Home, In the 19th Century*, New York: Thomas Y. Crowell Company, 1965, 27.
89. Cruet—A small glass bottle, as for holding vinegar, oil, etc. Few families in the early part of the century owned much glassware until about 1830 when American glass makers introduced molded and later pressed glass in enormous quantities at low prices. Housewives were soon buying domestic glassware from town or country stores or from traveling peddlers. Buehr, 71
90. Vials—A small vessel or bottle, usually of glass, for medicines and other liquids.
91. Other items on the menu probably included: squirrel pie, shoulder from a fat buck, boiled venison, roasted venison dipped in bear fat mixed with maple sugar, baked stewed rabbit, roast tongue and apple pie, roasted pigeon stuffed with mushrooms, and blueberry pudding. Breakfast might be a loaf of pumpkin bread and an expectant mother might eat toast and water with a half cup of thin gruel, cold venison, mashed potatoes, and bread pudding. Nissenson.
92. Marietta was the first settlement established by members of the Ohio Company. The pioneers were 47 in number. They landed about noon and were welcomed by a party of about 70 Wyandot and Delaware Indians including warriors, women, and children. The famous Capt. Pipe was the most notable of the Indians in the greeting party.
93. S.P. Hildreth, *Pioneer History: Ohio Valley, and the Early Settlement of The Northwest Territory*, Cincinnati: H.W. Derby & Co., Publishers, 1848, 484-98. See page 489 for a condensed meterological table kept at Marietta from 1818 to 1846.
94. Chapman was born 26 Sept. 1774 (14 years before Enoch) in Topsfield, Mass. His lineage can be traced through five generations to an Edward Chapman, farmer and miller, supposedly from Shropshire, England who landed in Boston in 1639 and settled in Ipswich in 1642 where he would have known Enoch's great (4) grandfather Matthew Whipple who settled in Ipswich in 1638. Chapman arrived with a horse loaded with appleseeds packed in leather bags. They were acquired from a cider presses in western Pennsylvania. Price, 10, 50-1.
95. Chapman's story is about "how pioneers like him helped domesticate the frontier by seeding it with Old World plants, writes Michael Pollan in *The Botany of Desire*. "Without them the American wilderness might never have become a home." Chapman's frontier nurseries no doubt produced many valuable new apples. Perhaps a few even made it into W. H. Ragan's USDA Bulletin No. 56, *Nomenclature of the Apple,* the essential reference for apple aficionados, which in 1905 cataloged more than 14,000 different apple varieties. The apple is big business today with about 7,500 commercial apple producers in 36 states harvesting 48,000 tons annually, second in production only to China. The average American consumes 16 pounds of fresh apples a year, making the apple second only to the banana as the nation's most popular fruit. Tim Hensley, "Apples of Your Eye," *Smithsonian*, Nov. 2002, 111-118.
96. To the early settlers on the Licking and Muskingum rivers, apples meant not just fruit in season, they were used throughout the year. They provided a family hand-eat-

ing and cooking from the first picking in late summer until the last cold apple buried late in the autumn was dug out of the frosty earth in early spring. Bushels of apples were cut and dried in the fall and strung and hung from the kitchen ceiling or the attic rafters until needed for winter sauces. Other bushels were cooked into gallons of apple butter on pleasant Indian summer days in big brass kettles over outdoor fires. Apple butter was one of the few preserves that the pioneer housewife, with her limited equipment, could keep for many months. The portion of the crop unfit for storage or butter was hauled to the cider presses. No home could exist without cider and usually many barrels were essential. The sweet drink was luscious and healthful in early autumn, becoming increasingly enticing as it began to take on the sparkle of effervescence. In the man's world, hard cider was a normal social drink as was the stronger apple brandy and applejack. For the wife, cider was essential. Boiled cider and vinegar were the two basic flavoring and preservatives for her winter store of pickles, preserves, butters, and mincemeats.

97. No one today plants seedling orchards. Grafts or a bud are carefully set by skilled surgery from a known tree into a vigorous seedling stalk. But it was seedling stock that started the pioneer apple orchards across America. Grafting and budding were known but trips from New England to Ohio took many weeks and there wasn't room for a large number of grafted apple trees after the family essentials were packed. Also they would have demanded a constant vigil to keep the tender roots moist and alive and few settlers could have afforded to buy them.
98. Price, 64, 72, 103, 285.
99. Johnny must have been one of the first Swedenborgian followers in the Middle West and one of the earliest New Church converts in America for the Church of the New Jerusalem was still young in the years of John's first contacts with it. In 1817 it was organizing its first general convention in Philadelphia and had less than 400 receivers of the teachings in the whole country. Price, 121-2.
100. The Manchester Society for Printing, Publishing, and Circulating the Writing of Swedenborg received the following report from someone in Philadelphia: "There is in the western country a very extraordinary missionary of the New Jerusalem. A man has appeared who seems to be almost independent of corporal wants and sufferings. He goes barefooted, and sleeps anywhere, in house or out of house, and lives upon the coarsest and most scanty fare. He has actually thawed ice with his bare feet. He procures what books he can of the New Church; travels into the remote settlements, and lends them wherever he can find readers, and sometimes divides a book into two or three parts for more extensive distribution and usefulness. This man for years past has been in the employment of bringing into cultivation in numberless places in the wilderness, small patches (two or three acres) of ground, and then sowing apple seeds and rearing nurseries. These become valuable as the settlements approximate, and the profits of the whole are intended for the purpose of enabling him to print all the writing of Emanuel Swedenborg, and distribute them through the western settlements of the United States." Price, 120
101. Tracts were named "Heaven & Its Wonders & Hell From Things Heard & Seen" and "the New Church of Promoting the Heavenly Doctrines of The New Jerusalem by Translating and Publishing The Theological Writ of the Hon. Em. Swedenborg, 1801." Nissenson.
102. Price, 133.
103. Most settlers found Swedenborg's doctrines largely unintelligible and paid little attention to Chapman when it came to religion. They were, however, willing to listen to any supernatural teachings that provided ready access to emotions and to simple

understandings got a hearing, especially if it offered an escape from the harshness and misery that had to be borne in breaking of a new land. Price, 135.

104. Wayne, Muskingum, Richland, Cuyahoga, Medina, Huron, Portage, Erie, Sandusky, Shelby, and Lucas counties. Price, 141.
105. Angeline, 7, Lavina, 5, and Eliza, 3.
106. Before the canal, wheat sold for 25 cents per bushel, corn 12 cents, oats 10 cents. Even before the canal was finished south of the Summit, the north end from Dresden to Cleveland was in operation and wheat was selling for 75 cents and corn rose in proportion. A side cut of six miles connected Granville to the canal. Howe, 324.
107. and 108. Howe, 324.
109 Robert Tharp, "A Brief Sketch of Union township of Licking County, Ohio," *Licking Lantern*, Newark, Ohio: Licking County Genealogical Society, vol. XVI, No. 1, 1991, 14.
110. "The National Road," *Licking Lantern*, vol. XIII, No. 3, 1988, 54.
111. *Licking County Deed Records*. Enoch's dead is recorded in Vol. U, p. 463 Catharine's in Vol.V:125.
112. *Licking County Deed Records*, Vol U:463-5.
113. "Lucien R. Whipple, the subject of this sketch, was brought by his parents to Logansport, Ind. in 1839, and to this county in 1840, in which they settled in Eugene." *Biographical and Historical Record of Vermillion County, Indiana*, Chicago: The Lewis Publishing Company, 1888, 342. The sketch would have been written based on a personal interivew of Lucien.
114. Coopers were one of the more important classes of artisans, making the packages which many kinds of commodities were shipped. Their principal products were hogsheads for rum, molasses, fish , lard, beef, and pork. Making hogsheads was heavy, laborious work. The material was oak and a day's work was exhausting.
115. Even though Ohio was a neighboring state, the journey was down the Ohio and up the Wabash because there were no roads across country.
116. "Logansport," *History of Cass County*. Vol. I, chapter XXVII, 322-25.
117. "Logansport," 326-27.
118. Vermillion county is on the border of Illinois with Danville, Ill. the largest near-by town. John Vannest was the first settler arriving in 1816. The county was not surveyed until about 1821 and land was not offered for sale by the government until 1822. Noah Hubbard was the first settler in Eugene, arriving in 1816 and had "squatters rights" which gave him first chance to purchase when the land was offered for sale. A Benjamin Shaw settled in 1822 and Ezekiel Sheward in 1825. Lucien Whipple married Sheward's daughter Sarah in 1856. William Fultz settled in 1826 and his son William married Anna Whipple daughter of Lucien in 1881. Harold L. O'Donnell, *Eugene Township (Vermillion County, Indians) The First 100 Years 1824-1924*. Danville, Ill.: Printed & Bound by The Interstate Printers and Publishers, 1963, 9, 274-5, 332, 350.
119. Eugene was known as one of the best business towns between Terre Haute and Lafayette. The average daily kill at the slaughter house was 400 and some seasons it packed $150,000 worth of pork. O'Donnell, 48-9.
120. The smoke-house had a capacity of 2,000 hams and shoulders. O'Donnell, 45.
121. O'Donnell, 45-47.
122. He purchased the lot from John M. Coleman who had acquired it in 1835 and sold it to James B. Iles in 1855 after moving to Benton county, Iowa.
123. O'Donnell, 88, 91.
124. O'Donnell, 147.
125. O'Donnell, 360.

126. Lowell M. Volked, comp., "Vermillion County Land and Marriage Records," Salt Lake City: Family History Library, *Film #0823597, Items 13 and 14*, 2:53.
127. O'Donnell, 358.
128. Volked, 2:83.
129. Volked, 3:35.
130. Polk was a Scotch-Irish lawyer from Tennessee, a dyed-in-the-wool Democrat, a Presbyterian, and compulsive political micro manager. He had served five years as Speaker of the House – them composed of 228 members – , and was little known to the voting public. However, he defeated the Whig candidate Henry Clay in the the election 1844 and became the eleventh president and the first to keep his promises. He said he would only serve one term; would fix the Federal Treasury; adjust customs duties – in an era when Southern states frequently threatened succession over tariffs; would acquire Oregon (54-40 or Fight), a huge disputed territory claimed by both the U.S. and Great Britain; annex the Republic of Texas, and acquire California. He did it all.
131. It was first titled *The Defense of Fort McHenry* and set to the tune of *To Anacreon in Heaven*. The earliest report on the writing of the song appeared in the *Baltimore Patriot* of 20 Sept. 1814 under the heading of "Defense of Fort M'Henry." An editorial note described it as a "beautiful and animating effusion, which is destined to outlast the occasion and outlive the impulse which produced it. [It] has already been extensively circulated." While the song became quickly and widely known it attained truly national significance only after the Civil and Spanish wars. President Herbert Hoover signed the Bill making it the National Anthem. Sigmund Spaeth, *A History of Popular Music In America*. New York: Random House, 1948, Fifth Printing, 41-6.
132. Words by Rev. Franz Gruber and music by Joseph Mohr. Spaeth, 55.
133. Words by John Howard Payne (American) and music by Sir Henry Bishop (British), published by George Bacon of Philadelphia, Spaeth, 56-8.
134. Spaeth, 66.
135. Written by the Rev. Samuel Francis Smith of Boston, the song was introduced on 4 July 1831 and was an immediate success. Spaeth, 69.
136. Written by Samuel Woodworth as a poem about 1818 but not published as a song until 1823. Spaeth, 60.
137. Written by Lowell Mason, it has become the favorite song of funeral music. Spaeth, 68.
138. Both were written by Daniel Decatur Emmett. Spaeth, 94-5.
139. Spaeth, 98-9, 106.
140. Spaeth, 109, 116.
141. Spaeth, 118.
142. Title to the land was by original Patent from the United States of America dated 1 July 1851 and signed by President Millard Fillmore. The author has a copy of the patent.
143. James (1825-72) and his brothers Lloyd (1810-49), Edmond (1823-91) were among Eugene's earliest settlers. Lloyd was a flat boat captain making trips to New Orleans where he died of cholera. James was one of the 7-man crew on the trip. O'Donnell, 56, 265.
144. Other than parts of Polk, Benton, Canton, and Taylor Townships, few land entries were made until after 1852-55. There were no markets for farm products or live stock except to the immigrant. Schools and churches could not exist much before the 1850s because there were so few settlers and those were scattered. The railroads and telegraph didn't come until 1869. *History of Benton County* as quoted in the *Eagle*, semi

weekly newspaper in Vinton, Benton county, Iowa, 28 June 1904.

145. Cedar Rapids population was estimated to be 3,000 in June of 1855. *Vinton Eagle*, Vinton, Iowa, 30 Jan. 1856.
146. Vinton prices in 1856: flour, cwt. $3.25 and $3.50; apples, dried, lb..10 &.12.5c; peaches, dried, lb..11 &.12.5c; eggs, doz..10 &.15c; tallow, lb, 12.5c; cheese, lb,.12.5 &.15c; chickens, pr,.25c; shoulder, lb,.11c; corn meal, bu,.50 &.62.5c; beef, lb,.06 &.10c; butter, lb,.15 &.20c; honey, lb,.15c; lard, lb,.10 &.12.5c; Beeswax, lb,.22 &.25c; ham, lb,.11c; side meat, lb,.11; pork, cwt, $6.00; wheat, bu,.65c; oats, bu,.25c, hay, ton, $3 & 4.00; shingles, per m., $4.35 & 4.50; lath, per m., $3.25; lumber, m. ft., $20,00. *Vinton Eagle*, Vinton, Iowa, 20 Aug. 1856
147. *Eagle*, 17 January 1855.
148. The Lyceum & Literary Society met Monday evenings at Crow's School House The discussion at its second meeting was "Resolved that it is the true policy of the United States to annex Cuba and Mexico to its dominions. Shares of the Library Assn. were $5. Of Vinton's population, 360 were from Ohio, 96 Indiana, 70 New York, 56 Pennsylvania, 19 New England, and 165 from various other localities. The census was taken by Wesley Whipple who moved to Vinton from Vermont and ran a land surveying business. He was elected Township Assessor 7 April and county Surveyor in August 1856. The cost of a subscription to the paper was $1.50 yearly and it had approximately 100 subscribers by 12 Dec. 1855.. *Eagle*, 31 Oct. and 5 and 12 Dec. 1855 and 9 Jan., 26 April, and 6 Aug. 1856.
149. The doctors included Boyd & Clingan, O.C. Beck, W.P. Lathrop, and C.W. Buffum. The dentist was P.C. Branch. Church was held in Tilford's School House but a church building, expected to cost $3,500, was under construction. *Eagle*, 17 Sept. 1856.
150. A coach carrying mail left Vinton every morning except Sunday for Cedar Rapids (25 miles distant) and reached there in time for the passengers to dine before proceeding on to Iowa City; which they reached before night and in time to connect with cars for the east. A coach bringing the mail left Cedar Rapids daily at 7 a.m., arriving in Vinton by noon in time for passengers to take the hack to Waterloo, 40 miles, and arrive there in time to connect with stages for Independence, Delhi, and Dubuque on the east and Eldora, Iowa Falls, Hardin City, Homer, Webster City, and Fort Dodge on the west. *Eagle*, 17 Sept. 1856.
151. *Eagle*, 10 Sept. 1856.
152. *Eagle*,18 March 1857.
153. The author carefully read issues of the *Eagle* from 10 October through December 1857 and failed to find an obituary for him.
154. *Eagle*, 15 Nov. 1865.
155. *Eagle*, 29 Aug. 1861.

CHAPTER FOURTEEN

LUCIEN RANSOM WHIPPLE AND SARAH SHEWARD

Lucien*[8] *Whipple *(Enoch*[7]*, Nehemiah*[6]*, Benjamin*[5]*, Francis*[4]*, Jonathan*[3]*, Joseph*[2]*, Matthew*[1]*, Matthew*[A]*) was born 6 February 1834 in Hartford Township, Licking Co., Ohio; died 13 May 1904 at Newport, Vermillion Co., Indiana. Married 26 October 1856 in Vermillion Co. Sarah Sheward. He lived most of his life in Eugene, Vermillion Co., Indiana and briefly farmed in Iowa and Kansas. He was a Patent Right Agent, Town Marshal, took the U.S. Census in 1880 and fought in the Civil War with the 6th Indiana Cavalry.*

Children of Lucien and Sarah Whipple

i. *James E. (Maj.), born 3 September 1857; died 14 May 1914. Married Ellen Thompson.*
ii. *Edmond G., born in 1858; died 8 March 1898. Married Clara B. Fultz.*
iii. *Frank M., born in 1861; died 24 March 1910. Married Ellen Naylor.*
iv. *Anna M. born in 1863; died 27 February 1914. Married William W. Fultz.*
v. *Clara, date of birth and death unknown; died in childhood.*

The period from 1816 to 1825 was one of unprecedented immigration to Indiana. When it was admitted to the Union in April 1816, the Indians still claimed two-thirds of its area. The Indian's western boundary was Vermillion county, the Whipples new home, and extended northeast to Greenville, Ohio. However, in 1818, nearly all land south of the Wabash river was purchased from the Indians.[1]

The Whipples left Licking county in 1840 probably traveling the National Road to Terre Haute, 171 miles from the eastern border of the state.[2] Lute (Lucien) was six. The family lived in Logansport[3] for about a year, moving in 1841 to Eugene,[4] one of the fastest growing villages in Vermillion county until the railroad by-passed it.[5]

The family purchased Outlot 27, a 3-acre tract with a home.[6] The lot was in Section 32, close to the cemetery and the Big Vermillion river.[7] The county is 37 miles long, averages seven miles in breadth, and contains about 260 square miles. Its population in 1840 was 8,274. Eugene is seven

Lucien Ransom Whipple.

Sarah (Sheward) Whipple.

miles north of Newport, the county seat, and seven miles south of Perrysville, then the largest town in the county.[8]

The sandy soil at Eugene was good for gardening and didn't get muddy during the rainy season. There were several large springs in the vicinity and pure well water was at 18 to 20 feet. The river below the mill dam had a reputation for the best fishing within a radius of 50 miles—fish up to 60 pounds were caught. Underground coal was abundant as was oak, poplar, walnut, beech, gum, ash, maple, hickory, and other hardwoods, important to Enoch's trade as a cooper.

The first settler arrived in Eugene township in 1816 and the village was laid out in 1827 near the large saw and grist mill that had been erected on the Big Vermillion river sometime before 1824. It had a post office before the town was platted. It had been the site of Indian villages and battlefields and an early trading post. Judge J. M. Coleman and Maj. James Blair settled in 1819 and developed a friendship with the Indians, often acting as peacemakers between the Indians and "border ruffians." The were also friends of Se-Seep, the last Chief who lived in the vicinity.[9]

Ezekiel (Zeke) Sheward, who became Lute Whipple's father-in-law and the author's great great grandfather, moved to Vermillion county by 1825 from either Ohio or Virginia.[10] He was probably lured to the frontier by glowing advertisements promising good land. His trip to Indiana was not easy. There were no railroads, canals, or decent roads and all rivers except the Ohio were obstructed by fallen trees, ripples, and bars.[11] Not long after

his arrival, Zeke was digging a cellar on a farm to store vegetables. It was located on a mound in the forest and he found a coin and some pieces of metal about the size of a teaspoon handle at a depth of three feet. They were analyzed and found to be made of lead, antimony,[12] and tin. The coin had a "worshiped crocodile of Egypt... and word characters resembling Chinese or Hindustan." Professor W.D. Whitney of Yale, a noted linguist of the time, believed the characters to be ancient Arabic. The director of the British Museum in London believed them to be Hindustanee but of so ancient a date that no scholar in England could read them. It was believed the mounds had been there for over 2000 years.[13]

Former school house in Eugene, Ind for grades 1-8. Built about 1826 and attended by the Whipple kids and their cousins the Fultz and Sheward kids.

A true bill against Zeke was issued in March 1845 by the Vermillion county Grand Jury. He was charged with betting on an election. The 1844 presidential race was between Democrat James Knox Polk, Whig Henry Clay, and minor party candidate James G. Birney. Zeke bet Benjamin Richeson $5.00 that Polk would win.[14] Polk won and the Grand Jurors found that Zeke "unlawfully won" $5.00 from Richeson "contrary to the form of the Statute in such cases... against the peace and dignity of the state of Indiana."[15] Zeke had to post $25.00 bail.[16] Whether the case was actually tried is unknown. Richeson was apparently a sore loser and didn't want to pay the $5.00, a substantial sum in those days.

The Whipples move to Eugene was prompted by its growing economy. It addition to the grist and saw mill, it had a wool carding business and was a center for the pork packing industry. It had the reputation of being "one of the best business towns between Terre Haute and Lafayette."[17]

Despite its remote location and lack of roads[18] or railroads, Eugene main industry was pork packing. It didn't take long for Eugene entrepreneurs to learn that the long waterway that ended in New Orleans included the Vermillion, Wabash,[19] Ohio, and Mississippi rivers and that New Orleans was ready and willing to buy everything that could be floated down to them.[20] And what New Orleans did not need for its own population could be shipped to eastern ports of the U.S., Europe, or any place a sailing ship could go. From a slow beginning the slaughtering, packing, and shipping grew until Eugene became a name known in European cities as a producer of smoked pork.[21]

Slaughtering and rough dressing was done at the slaughter house west of town. The carcasses were hauled to a huge smoke house where they were cut into hams, shoulders, and sides and salted or smoked until cured. The smoke house could cure 2,000 hams and/or shoulders at a time. Across from the smoke house was the "pork house" where the meat was packed into barrels and stored until loaded onto the flat boats. The "lard house," where lard was rendered and poured into barrels and kegs, was south of the smoke house. Enoch made the barrels needed by the pork industry and worked year around to meet the packer's needs.[22]

The slaughter, smoke, and packing buildings were near the Vermillion river bank where flat boats were loaded and stayed until early spring floods practically launched them on their long journey south. The boat yards where the flat boats were built was nearby. This was also a major industry as the boats only went one-way so several hundred new boats were required yearly.[23]

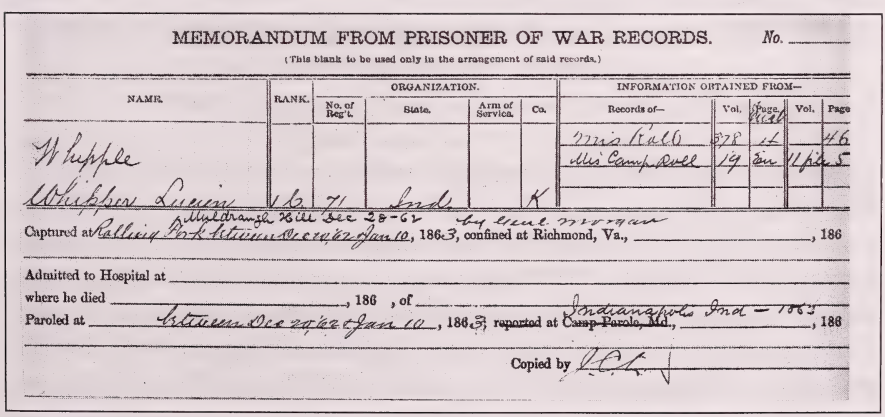
Seventy-five to 100 men worked at the slaughter house from mid November until mid February. All work was done without machinery and as many as 665 hogs were cut and packed during a 6 a.m. - 8 p.m. shift.[24] They were killed, scalded, scraped, and hung on a pole. When they cooled they were taken to the pork house, weighed, one at a time, placed on the blocks, and cut into pieces with large two-hand cleavers and knives. Some went to the smoke house, others were salted, before being packed in the barrels.[25]

As many as 500 flat boats left Eugene for New Orleans every spring. Usually 10 to 20 boats formed a fleet for the 1,000-mile trip. The boats were 40 to 60 feet long, 16 to 20 feet wide, and took a load of 30 tons to displace a foot of water. The four to six week trip was a dangerous one because it was made during high water which frequently meant raging floods. When the river banks were out of sight they sometimes found themselves floating through a corn field. Eddies from incoming flooding streams, snags, floating trees, violent storms, and other unexpected emer-

gencies required crews to man the oars with all their strength. They tied up to the bank shortly after sundown unless it was an unusually bright night and the water was relatively quiet. Occasionally they lost a crew member to drowning and to cholera caught in New Orleans. Usually the crew returned by steamer to Curtis Landing at the mouth of the Big Vermillion river, about two miles from Eugene. However, some walked home or hired on to bring supplies back by keel boat. Because they had to work against the current, keel boats didn't have the dimensions or capacity of the flat boats. They were propelled up stream by the crew walking from the front to the rear pushing long poles on the river bottom.[26]

New Orleans was considered an exciting place and virtually every young man in the Eugene area signed on for at least one trip. The six-man crew included a steersman pilot, who was also Captain, four oarsmen who manned long side-sweeps, and one utility man or boy who cooked and made himself useful in other ways.[27] When they tied up in a down-river port like Paducah, Kentucky, Natchez, and Vicksburg, Mississippi the old river men played all kinds of jokes on the first-timers. Most of the young boatmen found the theaters, gardens, churches, and stores in New Orleans incredible and there was so much to see and do they hardly slept while in the city. Both Lute and his older brother Cyrenius made many trips in their youth.[28] They were paid $2.50 a day wages[29] and $2.50 a day spending money when in New Orleans. On at least one trip, Cyrenius was hired as a watchman and remained in the city for a month.[30]

Even though the Indiana Constitution directed the Legislature to provide for a complete system of schools, there were few schools before the Civil War. Previous to 1871 the village only offered three-and-a-half months of school so Lute and his siblings were short-changed in the edu-



MEMORANDUM FROM PRISONER OF WAR RECORDS. No. _____

(This blank to be used only in the arrangement of said records.)

NAME.	RANK.	ORGANIZATION. No. of Reg't.	State.	Arm of Service.	Co.	INFORMATION OBTAINED FROM— Records of—	Vol.	Page	Vol.	Page
Whipple						Mis Roll	378	4		46
						Mis Camp Roll	19	Ein	11 pile	5
Whipper Lucien	1 C.	71	Ind.		K					

Captured at Muldraugh Hill Dec 28-62 by Genl Morgan Rolling Fork between Dec 20/62 & Jan 10, 1863, confined at Richmond, Va., _____, 186

Admitted to Hospital at _____

where he died _____, 186 , of _____

Paroled at between Dec 20/62 & Jan 10, 1863, reported at ~~Camp Parole, Md.~~ Indianapolis Ind — 1863, _____, 186

Copied by [illegible]

Lute and 400 others were captured Dec. 28, 1862 at Muldraugh's Hill by Gen. John H. Morgan and his Raiders, 4,000 strong. They were confined at Richmond, Va. later paroled, and returned to battle in July 1863.

cation department. A four-room school was built in 1873 at a cost of $6,000.00.[31] It was graded and ran for six months annually so Lute and Sarah's children, Jim, Edmond, Frank, and Anna, had a much greater educational opportunity than their parents. Edmond, Frank, and Anna, along with their cousin William Sheward were on the honor roll in November 1873.[32] Jim who was then 16 had probably finished school since before 1904 there were only two years of high school in the curriculum.[33]

Lute was 20 when he moved with his family to Benton county, Iowa, in 1854. He became a farm hand, working for his father and older brother Cyrenius, who had made trips to Benton County in 1850 and 1851 to acquire farm land for himself and his parents. Lute returned to Eugene in the fall of 1856 to marry Sarah Sheward, Ezekiel's third daughter, and took her back to Benton county to start their family. If it was the typical Indiana wedding, the ceremony was at Sarah's parents home. After the ceremony, the newlyweds sat at the head of a table around which all the guests gathered. Food and table service was provided by the whole community. After a night of dancing, including a variety of jests and pranks played on the new couple, a shivaree[34] accompanied them as they left for her parents house where they stayed until leaving for Iowa.

Two of their sons were born in Benton county: James Ezekiel (his maternal grandfather Sheward given name), the oldest and the author's grandfather, on September 3, 1857 and Edmond at the end of 1858 (actual date unknown). But Sarah could not overcome the loneliness that beset her in Iowa. The emptiness of the prairie was inescapable, even the sheltering tree was absent, thus intensifying the loneliness. So Lute left his parents and siblings and returned to Eugene in the fall of 1859 so Sarah could be with her family. Three more children were born in Eugene: Frank, about 1861, Anna about 1862, and Clara presumably born during the Civil War who died at an early age of croup and cholera infantum.[35]

LUCIEN WHIPPLE IN THE CIVIL WAR

By the time the family returned to Eugene, events that led to the Civil War were evolving. In February of 1860 Sen. Jefferson Davis of Mississippi introduced Resolutions in the Congress to allow slavery in the territories and to require the government to protect slave-holders already there. Delegates from eight states walked out of the Democratic National Convention in April in Charleston, S.C. when the pro-slavery platform was rejected. When the remaining delegates were unable to agree on a presidential nominee the Convention adjourned to Baltimore and in June nominated Sen. Stephen Douglas of Illinois after anti-Douglas delegates walked out. This was followed by a Convention of southern Democrats in

Baltimore which nominated Vice President John C. Breckenridge and adopted a pro-slavery platform. Republicans nominated Abraham Lincoln on the third ballot in Chicago in May and adopted a platform to allow slavery in the states and to prohibit it in the territories.[36]

The main campaign issues were slavery and sectionalism. Only Douglas made an effort to broaden his appeal by campaigning in all sections of the country. Despite various southern spokesmen making it clear that Lincoln's election would result in succession, he won with a plurality of popular votes and a majority of Electoral College votes.[37] For the first time in its history, the country elected a nominee of a Party that declared that "the normal condition of all the territory of the United States is that of freedom." A State Convention in South Carolina voted to secede from the Union in December.

As the Whipples went about reestablishing life in Eugene, forces were at work that would alter forever Lute's future. Mississippi, Alabama, Georgia, and Louisiana, in that order, voted in January 1861 to leave the Union. Kansas was accepted as the thirty-fourth state on January 29. Texas seceded on February 1. The seceded states met in Montgomery, Alabama on February 8 and adopted a Provisional Constitution which included the right to own slaves. Jefferson Davis was unanimously elected Provisional President of the Confederate States of America on February 9 and inaugurated on the 18th. On February 27, he sent three representatives to Washington, D.C. to seek peaceful negotiations.

Lincoln left Springfield, Illinois for Washington February 11 making numerous stops en route and asking the citizenry to remain loyal to the Constitution. In his March 4, 1861 inaugural address he vowed, as sixteenth President, to uphold the Union, and told dissident Southerners that the Union is perpetual and that the "momentous issue of civil war" was in their hands, not his. He instructed Secretary of State W.H. Seward not to meet with the Confederate representatives.

The Civil War began April 12 when the Southern forces fired on Fort Sumter in the harbor at Charleston, South Carolina. The fort surrendered the next afternoon. Lincoln's first call for Union volunteers was issued April 14.[38] Robert E. Lee resigned his Army commission April 20. The first Union strike against the South was May 18 at Sewall's Point, Virginia; postal communications were ended May 31; and Lincoln asked Congress to declare war on the Confederacy on July 4 citing the indivisibility of the Federal Union. The Union Armed Forces as of December 5 consisted of 20,334 regulars, 640,637 Army Volunteers, and 22,000 Sailors and Marines.

There was little difference in land area between the North and South. Minnesota and Iowa were on the western border of the Union (excluding

California and Oregon, also a part of the Union as the nation leapfrogged over the prairies and mountains); Texas was the western boundary of the Confederacy. The North, with 18.5 million people had twice the population of the South whose nine million included 3.5 million slaves. The two capitals, Washington and Richmond, were only 100 miles apart and the two Armies that attacked and defended them got the biggest headlines but the war was mostly fought in the West.

The Battle of Bull Run on July 21, 1861 was only 25 miles from Washington. It was the Union's first major loss. The bloody battle of Shiloh, Tennessee, fought in early April 1862, was won by the North at a cost of 13,000 men shot or captured to 10,000 for the South. Of the 77,000 men engaged, it is estimated eighty percent had never before heard a gun fired in anger and a sizeable number did not know how to work their rifles. The young recruits learned on the battlefield. By the summer of 1862 the Southern cause was infused with great vitality while the North was bungling its military leadership. The result was Southern victories at the second Battle of Bull Run in August (15,000 Union casualties to 9,000 Rebels) and the Battle of Antietam at Sharpsburg, Maryland September 17, the bloodiest single day of the war to date (2,108 killed, 9,549 wounded, 753 missing Union soldiers to 2,700 killed, 9,024 wounded, and 2,000 missing Rebels). By the end of summer it looked as if Southern independence would become a reality but in actuality the Battle of Antietam proved to be a critical turning point toward ultimate Union victory, a victory that preserved the United States as one nation, indivisible.[39]

Lincoln released a draft of his controversial Emancipation Proclamation to outlaw slavery in the rebelling states on June 19, 1862. He signed the bill authorizing a federal income tax on July 1 (3% tax on incomes of $600 to $10,000 and 5% above $10,000)[40] and signed the second Confiscation Act on July 17. This Act freed slaves coming into federal jurisdiction and gave the President powers to grant amnesty and pardon.

LINCOLN ISSUES EMANCIPATION PROCLAMATION

In his annual message to Congress December 1, 1862, Lincoln spoke of the evils of slavery and said the goal of the war was to root out this historical evil.[41] He freed the slaves on New Years Day 1863 when he ordered implementation of the Emancipation Proclamation which declared persons held as slaves in the states and parts of states in rebellion are free and that the government of the United States, including its military, will recognize and maintain the freedom of said persons.[42] The Proclamation also provided that former slaves could serve in the military and on May 28 the Union's first black regiment, the 54th Massachusetts Volunteers, left

Boston for training at Hilton Head, South Carolina.[43]

On July 29, 1862, 28-year-old Lucien R. Whipple,[44] 5'9" tall, with a dark complexion and black hair and eyes, enlisted along with eight others at Eugene in Company K of the 71st Indiana Infantry.[45] He was mustered in at Indianapolis August 18 as a corporal and was paid a bounty of $27.00.[46] His wife, Sarah, almost 27, sons James, five, Edmond, four, Frank, two, and daughters Clara, age unknown, and Anna, a newborn, were left without a husband and father for the next three years. During these years Lute served in Alabama, Georgia, Indiana, Kentucky, and Tennessee and engaged in two campaigns, four battles, and countless skirmishes, engagements, operations, and combats.[47]

The 71st was sent immediately to Kentucky to join in repelling the Confederate force led by Gen. Kirby Smith. Fourteen days after being mustered in, Lute participated in the Battle of Richmond, Kentucky where the regiment lost 215 killed and wounded and 347 captured. He was among the 225 not captured. After the captured officers and men were paroled, the 71st went to Terre Haute, Indiana where it was reorganized and refitted for service. It was presented with a "beautiful flag and banner"at Camp Thompson on November 8. The *Indianapolis Journal* of November 13, reported that "the fiery eloquence of the spicy presentation address of Miss Peppers met with a warm reception on the part of the soldiers."

The 71st was sent back to Kentucky where Lute spent his first Christmas away from his young family. Christmas was on Thursday and Lute undoubtedly thought of family and friends at home enjoying the festivities while he was on the tented field. On December 27 he was among 400 men and officers sent to Muldraugh's Hill to guard trestle-work. The next day they were attacked by Gen. John H. Morgan and his raiders, 4,000 strong, and after an engagement of an hour and a half were surrounded and captured. The Rebels then blew up the bridge.[48] The men were quickly paroled and returned to camp Burnside at Indianapolis December 31, an act that halted shipments of supplies to Union forces to the south.[49] As the year ended he must have prayed that the year 1863 would close in peace.

The 71st was in Indianapolis July 4, 1863 and participated in the ceremonies at the picnic grounds at Johnston's Grove. They left by train that evening for Lexington, Kentucky where they joined the 1st Division, 23rd Corps of the Army of the Ohio.[50] Maybe Lute's family was able to get to Indianapolis by train to spend the Fourth with him.

From the beginning, desertion was a problem in the Union Army. Late in 1862 Provost-Marshal Gen. Simeon Draper estimated 100,000 soldiers had deserted. Six of the volunteers in Indiana's 71st Infantry deserted including a soldier from Eugene.[51] Lute was detached to Eugene December 30, 1862 to arrest and return him to the Regiment.[52] A member of Co.

D., Private Robert Gay, 27, deserted on or about September 5 at Richmond, Kentucky and took the Oath of Allegiance to serve the Confederate States... "to serve them faithfully against all their enemies or opposers whomsoever." The signed Oath was found sewn in the leg of his pantaloon at the time of his arrest. He plead guilty at his Court Martial at Indianapolis December 27 and was sentenced to be shot to death. President Lincoln declined to pardon him.

The execution took place at 3:00 p.m. in Indianapolis March 27, 1863 in an open field between Burnside Barracks and Camp Morrow. The Regiment was drawn up in a hollow square with the side facing the east open. A plain black walnut coffin with a flat lid was placed near the center of the open end of the square and an officer slowly paced off approximately 30 feet to establish the line for the firing party. The 20-man firing party, two from each company, marched in and formed two ranks on the line. The prisoner, accompanied by a personal friend, the Regiment's Sergeant Major carrying a small cord and a band of black cloth, and the Chaplain marched to the front of the coffin. After the Regimental Adjutant read the order of execution, private Gay in a uniform coat and well-worn blue pantaloons tucked into his red-topped boots and holding his soldier cap in his right hand addressed the Regiment and admitted his guilt. "I suppose," he said, "my death is needed as an example. If it will serve my country and warn you, I will die cheerfully." He said he forgave those who are to fire at him and asked them to aim well. "Fire at the breast... I want to die quickly. Don't let me suffer." His voice was steady and uniform and when he finished, the Chaplain prayed for him.

The Sergeant-Major tied Gay's hands behind his back and led him to the coffin which he sat on facing the firing party. After tying the band of black cloth round Gay's eyes, he marched out of the range of fire and the Lieutenant in charge of the firing squad commanded them to bring their guns to a "ready." The clicking of the cocks was heard by all, the guns lowered to take aim, fired on command, and Gay fell straight back over his coffin without a sound or struggle. The surgeon pronounced him dead and he was placed in the coffin, the bandage removed, and his cap put on his head. All 10 shots struck him; one in the throat, one grazed his shoulder and eight in his coat of which seven were in the breast. The coffin was put in the undertaker's wagon, the troops dismissed, and the first Civil War military execution in the west was over.[53] Lincoln issued, on March 10, 1863, a Proclamation of General Amnesty for soldiers returning to their Regiments by April 1. Those not returning would be charged with desertion and arrested.

The 71st was converted to a Cavalry organization on February 23, 1863 and designated the 6th Indiana Cavalry.[54] Lute was promoted to line sergeant Sunday June 14.[55] Two additional companies, "L" and "M" were added in the fall before they were sent to east Tennessee to be a part of the siege of Knoxville. Many Union soldiers were killed and wounded in engagements on the Holston and Clinch rivers.[56] Confederate forces were commanded by Gen. James Longstreet; Gen. A. E. Burnside was the Union commander. En route to Knoxville they had to forage the country for subsistence as rations were not issued until they reached their destination. As rations grew more scarce the men had to depend on themselves and many crossed the Holston river by boat with ice running dangerously thick to forage the fields for corn, occasionally finding some meat. Many soldiers would gladly pay a dollar for the head of a beef. After it was cleaned and the eyes removed, the whole head would be boiled in a camp kettle and the bones picked clean of every fibre of meat.[57]

The destitution of the Army in east Tennessee during the winter of 1863-64 was described by Gen. Jacob D. Cox in his history of the Atlanta campaign: The country was stripped bare. The cattle given the troops for beef in January were so poor they could hardly stand. The commissaries would drive the cattle over a little ditch in the field where they were corral-led and those who could not get over were killed because they were so weak it was foolish to keep them longer.[58]

It was cold with howling chilly blasts reminding the soldiers that winter was on the way. They kept warm by burning decayed rail ties and wrote letters home by the blazing campfire. Mail call was haphazard and sometimes a month would pass before any was received. When mail call was announced every soldier attended, hoping for a letter from home; when it ended, those without were disheartened and their look of sorrow was contrasted by the smiles of joy from those who received mail.

When Lincoln gave his address at Gettysburg, Pennsylvania November 19, 1863, the 6th Cavalry was still part of the force that lay siege to Knoxville (November 17-December 4).[59] Lute and his fellow soldiers were in an engagement at Bean's Station, Tennessee when the President issued his December 8 Proclamation of Amnesty and Reconstruction, his first major statement on reconstruction.[60]

"As Christ died to make men holy, Let us die to make men free" was probably not the sentiment of the soldiers and officers of the 6th Cavalry but it was what they were virtually offering with their Army service. As they arose Christmas morning 1863 their minds were not on the President's Declaration that the country could not endure part slave and part free.

They were thinking of their current circumstances which were not joyful. There were no excited shouts of children, no visits from family and friends wishing a Merry Christmas and joining in a Christmas feast. Their Christmas dinner was probably a small piece of corn meal made of un-sifted meal mixed with water and a little salt and baked or fried in an Army frying pan along with a small bit of third or fourth grade Army bacon.

New Years (Friday Jan. 1, 1864) in east Tennessee was ushered in with winter winds that howled and whistled around the rude shelters of the Union soldiers. The fierce chilly blasts from the bleak neighboring mountain tops caused the soldiers to spend the day collecting wood to keep their fires going. Unhappy New Year probably expressed what they felt about the day. Dinner was probably johnny cake, fried beef, and coffee; supper a half pie and apples.

In January and February 1864, Lute was assigned to a forage train in the Kingston, Tennessee area. As they awoke Jan. 19 from the night's sleep on the open ground, tired in every limb and muscle, stiff in every joint, and lean as a fox, they found themselves covered with 5" to 6" of snow. It was a gloomy morning to the half-starved and poorly clad soldier but once they began working and the blood began to flow, the gloom began to disappear.[61]

Saturday February 6 was Lute's 30th birthday. He couldn't help but think of his 27th birthday, celebrated after they returned to Eugene from Benton county, Iowa. He is certainly under different circumstances on this day—pursuing the enemy with wearied limbs and hoping his 30th year will be spent in becoming a better man. If he attended a local church the next day, his thoughts probably returned to his home church and of family and friends who were entering that house of God and of the old familiar hymns. He probably thanked God for his first 29 years and for the dawning of his 30th and returned to camp with high hopes and in high spirits.

Lute probably spent much of his free time reading and writing letters. His main reading material was the Bible but he looked forward to the two Indianapolis newspapers, the *Gazette* and the *Journal,* when they showed up in camp. He probably also read dime novels and the Chicago *Tribune* on the occasions it was available. There was no set payday and sometimes it was several months between pay periods. After completing his second year of service, he was entitled to a bounty in addition to regular pay.

The Cavalry was sent to Mount Sterling, Kentucky in the spring to be remounted and was stationed at Nicholasville, until April 29. On the 30th, it began a march over the Cumberland Mountains to Dalton, Georgia where it joined Gen. William Tecumseh Sherman's Army on May 11.[62] It was assigned to the Second Brigade of the Cavalry Corps of the Army of

the Ohio commanded by Gen. George Stoneman. During the Atlanta campaign it participated in all Cavalry operations and was engaged in the battles of Resaca, Cassville, Kennesaw Mountain; aided in the capture of Allatoona Pass; and was the first to take possession of and raise the flag upon Lost Mountain. The Siege of Atlanta ended September 1, as Confederate Gen. J.B Hood retreated, blowing up the much-needed supplies they were unable to take with them.

When the Cavalry captured Allatoona Pass and its railroad line in early June, it freed Sherman to move his troops north westward to his lifeline along the railroad. There was heavy rain almost the entire time of the Battle of Kennesaw Mountain near Marietta, Georgia. The battle began on Sunday June 18 with heavy skirmishing and gun batteries shelling constantly until Friday July 1. Many soldiers caught severe colds during these wet and rainy days. The cost of this vicious battle was 1,999 Union soldiers killed and wounded to 270 Rebels. The assaults to capture the Rebel breastworks were uphill and according to a Rebel soldier, every man in their Regiment killed "five score" of the Federal soldiers "attempting to mount our works. All that was necessary was to load and shoot. I [believe] the reason they did not capture our works was the impossibility of their living men to pass over the bodies of their dead."[63] The reality of this battle is almost incomprehensible.

July 4th was on a Monday and Lute and his fellow soldiers were fighting to vindicate that freedom earned for them by their forefathers 88 years previously. An Agent for the Christian Commission visited the Regiment on July 15 and distributed paper, envelopes, religious reading matter, and games. Chess had become a popular pastime to relieve the monotony of Camp. The President's call for 500,000 more men on July 23 was an important message to the soldiers that the government wanted the war over as soon as possible.

LUTE SURVIVES STONEMAN'S RAID

Lute was Commander of his Company on the bloody raid to Macon, Georgia July 27-August 6 (also known as Stoneman's Raid). They were exposed to heavy artillery fire and he must have felt God's protecting power shielding him as 166 members of the 6th Cavalry were killed, wounded, and captured.[64] Lute and John Richardson, a farmer from Newport, Indiana, were the only members to escape capture or death in this raid.[65] As he searched among the wounded for a buddy all he saw was the mangled wounded suffering in unbelievable agony: a man with one leg torn off by a shell, another with an arm torn off, another shot in the head, a youth who two hours ago was thinking of home now wallowing in

his life blood. Hungry as he was, he probably couldn't eat that night.

While the Union's Western Armies were winning important victories, the anti-Lincoln politicians were hard at work. Publisher Horace Greeley of the New York *Tribune* called on Republicans to nominate someone other than Lincoln in the May 13, 1864 *Tribune*. A group of radical Republicans, hostile to Lincoln's conduct of the war and his Emancipation, and Reconstruction policies, met in Cleveland May 31 and nominated Gen. John C. Fremont for President. Lincoln accepted the Union Party's nomination June 27 and the Democrats nominated Gen. George McClellan August 31. Fremont withdrew on September 17 and supported Lincoln to prevent McClellan's election which he believed would lead to either a recognition of the Confederacy or at the least a reestablishment of slavery. Lincoln carried every state but Delaware, Kentucky, and New Jersey and was reelected with more than fifty-five percent of the popular vote on November 8.[66] Active duty soldiers were his strongest supporters with 119,754 out of slightly more than 154,000 voting for him. He won 212 Electoral College votes to 21 for McClellan.

The 6th Cavalry was in the expedition commanded by Gen. Lovell H. Rousseau that fought and defeated Gen. Nathan Bedford Forrest's troops at Pulaski, Tennessee September 26-27 and then pursued the Rebels to Florence and Waterloo, Alabama. October 18 was a Tuesday and by then Lute must have been thinking about the end of his enlistment. "Only 10 more months. What might happen in those 10 months? Would he survive or be buried in a soldier's grave in the soil of the South?" Of course his hope was to be back home with his family. General Sherman reviewed troops on October 26. It was his "good-bye" although the men did not know it. He had everything in readiness for his March to the Sea which was to startle the world. He assigned Gen. John McAllister Schofield's Cavalry Corp. to Gen. G.H. Thomas, commander of the Franklin and Nashville battles. These battles were as important to ending the war as was the March to the Sea.

Lute was promoted to quartermaster sergeant and granted a furlough to Indiana November 1.[67] It's possible the furlough was granted due to the death of his youngest child, Clara.[68] The Regiment was sent to Dalton, Georgia the same day and was assigned to Gen. Thomas' command on the 26th and stationed in Nashville. If Lute had some free time on December 1, he may have visited the theater where the well-known actress Miss Alice Kingsbury was playing in "Lindorum" or the "Black Hand of Death."

By Sunday December 4 the Rebel pickets were within 200 yards of the Union lines. Nashville citizens were pressed to work on the Union fortifications. By Friday it turned very cold with rain, sleet, and snow. It was such a nasty ugly day that Lute must have felt sorry for the boys on picket

and wondered if the folks at home at any idea of how disagreeable the weather was. The weather continued snowy and cold until December 12. By Wednesday it was thawing.

The Nashville Battle began December 15, 1864 when Confederate Gen. John B. Wood's attack on Overton's Hill failed, Schofield attacked Hood's position on the Union right. At the command "forward," the men went. No halting, no hesitating, no seeking shelter, they went right for the enemy. Cheers far to the right indicated that Union soldiers were pressing the enemy there too so the Rebs had to fight all along the line and could not mass at any particular point. The enemy fire was not as severe as expected and the Confederates were over-run.

Fighting stopped at nightfall and resumed at dawn. The enemy fire was now so hot that Union lines wavered briefly before reforming for another charge that breached the enemy's line. By nightfall the Rebels were driven back about five miles and over 50 pieces of cannon taken. Despite heavy rainfall—the mud was almost knee deep in places—they continued to pursue the Rebs on Saturday and Sunday.

The Battle of Nashville was one of the most overwhelming victories of the war. Hood's Army of Tennessee lost 1,500 killed and wounded and 4,462 captured and fled in disorganized retreat never to fight another major battle. Union losses: 387 killed, 2,562 wounded, and 112 missing.

The rain began again Monday December 19 continuing until long after nightfall on Tuesday. Everything—clothing, blankets, and tents—were drenched. The rain stopped on Wednesday but the weather turned cold. The men built huge fires of rails and wood and were able to dry some clothing and blankets. Thursday was even colder. Shelter was limited and most soldiers slept on the ground. The result for Lute was a vicious cold, impaired hearing, rheumatism, and piles. His symptoms continued for the balance of his service and he was excused from hard duty until discharged. Rheumatism and piles plagued him the rest of his life and he was awarded a disability pension for hemorrhoids in June 1880.[69]

13TH AMENDMENT ABOLISHES SLAVERY

Christmas was on Sunday. It was to be Lute's last Christmas in the Army. "New Years Day" 1865 was pleasant with brilliant sunshine. Many soldiers were finally saying "Happy New Year." On January 31 Congress passed the 13th Amendment abolishing slavery throughout the country.[70] On February 1, Illinois became the first state to ratify it. In his second inaugural speech March 4, Lincoln spoke of his wish "that this mighty scourge of war may speedily pass away." He called for peace with charity toward all and a lack of malice, and pledged to work for "a just, and a lasting peace,

among ourselves and with all nations."

The 6th Cavalry stayed at Nashville until April 1, 1865 when it was sent to Pulaski. On Monday the 3rd, dispatches from the President announced the fall of Richmond, the Confederate capital. The Appomattox campaign ended April 9. Lee and Grant met in the early afternoon to work out the surrender terms. Lee agreed to turn over all munitions and supplies (sidearms excepted) to the Federal Army and to send his soldiers home with the stipulation they could not fight until "properly exchanged" for a Union soldier—a condition both generals knew would never happen. Grant wrote the document in his own hand, adding at Lee's request, "all men who claim to own a horse or mule can take the animals home with them to work their little farms." The formal surrender ceremony took place April 13 at Appomattox Court House with neither Grant nor Lee in attendance. The Union was represented by Gen. Joshua Chamberlain of Maine, the Confederates by Gen. John B. Gordon of Georgia. The defeated Army folded and laid down its flags and stacked its arms. For all practical purposes, the war was over.[71]

The shocking news that the President had been assassinated was received the evening of Sunday April 16.[72] This news caused universal sorrow in the Army. No one, Gen. Grant included, came so near to the hearts of the soldiers as President Lincoln. Most had never seen him but his kind words had come to them and touched their hearts. They felt his greatness in their hearts and they loved him. Even the happy news of the great victories recently won could not dispel the gloom caused by Lincoln's death. Time alone would heal the wound.[73]

Terms of the surrender of all Confederate troops west of the Mississippi river were agreed to May 26 and President Andrew Johnson issued a Proclamation on the 29th giving general amnesty to those who participated in the rebellion – excepting those who owned more than $20,000 worth of property[74] and those who held high rank in either the military or the government. People in these categories had to apply for a pardon individually to the President. The last formal surrender of a large Confederate force was June 23 in Oklahoma Territory.

Soldiers whose enlistments expired before October 1 were mustered out of the 6th Cavalry on June 17. The active members of the 5th and 6th Cavalries were merged into nine companies on June 27 and remained in service in middle Tennessee until Thursday September 15 when all 662 were mustered out at Murfreesboro.

Lute and his comrades reached Indianapolis Tuesday June 20 and were publicly welcomed home by Gov. Oliver Perry Morton and Gen. Alvin Hovey in a ceremony at the State Capitol the next day.[75] Those who remained on duty returned to Indianapolis Thursday September 20 and

were given a reception attended by Gov. Morton and Gen. Grant, both of whom spoke.[76] It is probable that Lute made the trip from Eugene to greet his comrades and to see and hear Gen. Grant.

In December, with 27 states approving it, the Thirteenth Amendment abolishing slavery took effect.

Union veterans from ten states and the District of Columbia met in Indianapolis in November 1866 to form the Grand Army of the Republic (GAR), a national organization of veterans. Though it was to be non political, it generally supported the Republican Party which in turn enacted legislation favorable to Union veterans. It is not known whether Lute attended but the closeness of Eugene to Indianapolis made it possible for him to attend. Eugene Post No. 22 of the GAR was organized in 1876 with 22 members. Lute was its first Officer of the Day. In 1887, he was the Post's Adjutant with the rank of Colonel.[77]

POST WAR ACTIVITIES

Lute returned to farming in Eugene for the next three-and-a-half years and undoubtedly followed with interest the purchase of Alaska from Russia in 1867 and the protracted disagreements between President Andrew Johnson and the Republican Congress in 1867-68.

Thaddeus Stevens of Pennsylvania, chairman of the powerful Ways and Means Committee, was among the most radical and anti-southern members of Congress. He opposed all of Lincoln's and Johnson's measures to deal leniently with the former Confederacy. On February 24, 1868, he asked the House to remove Johnson from office, calling him a "great political malefactor." The House drew up 11 Articles of Impeachment, nine about the Tenure of Office Act,[78] one condemning the President's speeches, and one an omnibus denunciation. His trial by the Senate ended May 16 with a 35 to 19 vote for conviction, one short of the necessary two-thirds majority. Seven Republican senators voted for acquittal because they believed party politics, not impeachable offenses, motivated the trial.

Lute undoubtedly voted for Gen. Ulysses S. Grant for President in 1868. Grant wasn't associated with either the Party's radical element or with Johnson and was perceived to be a symbol of reconciliation. Horatio Seymour, wartime Governor of New York, was the Democratic nominee. The Republican campaign claimed their Party won the war and saved the Union and that a Democratic victory would undo the peace. Grant carried 26 states to eight for Seymour. The popular vote was three million to 2.7 million.

The hope of greater economic opportunities led Lute to consider a return to Iowa where his brother Cyrenius had achieved great success as a

farmer. Vinton property was purchased in July 1866.[79] However, the family didn't move as evidenced by sons Jim and Ed membership in Eugene's Joint (Presbyterians and Methodists) Sunday School as of December 2, 1866.[80]

Eventually cheap land in Kansas lured the family to Middle Creek Township in Miami county where Lute bought a 40-acre farm in December 1868.[81] It appears he preceded his family to Kansas as Sarah is not listed on the deed and his address is listed as Miami county. He probably went ahead on a scouting trip and after deciding it was a feasible move and acquiring the small farm, sent for the family to join him. If this were the case, the family probably traveled to their new home by the Hanibal, St. Joseph, Quincy, and Kansas City Short Line which served Danville, Illinois, only 18 miles from Eugene. It advertised "Fast express trains without change of cars... elegant and sumptuous drawing-rooms, sleeping and palace and day coaches, furnished with all modern improvements calculated to contribute to comfort, speed, and safety."[82] They would have changed trains at Kansas City, taking the Missouri River, Fort Scott, and Gulf Line to Paola, the county seat. The alternative to train travel was stage coach or their own wagons.[83]

Today's traveler complains about airline food and tolerates the fast food outlets on a long Interstate journey but this food is gourmet compared to what was set in front of the famished traveler in the greasy railroad stops of 1869 – rancid bacon, eggs preserved in lime, bitter coffee made with the local alkaline water, ancient beans, leaden biscuits (called sinkers), and "antelope steak" so tough you couldn't get your fork in the gravy. Meal stops lasted 10 to 20 minutes so you had to be a fast eater once the food was served.[84]

Why leave Indiana for Kansas? Roving tribes of hostile Indians still claimed Kansas as their perpetual hunting grounds and fiercely resisted its settlement.[85] But the state and federal governments were actively promoting settlement. The region was described as having fertile soil, healthful climate, pleasing landscape, gurgling brooks and rapid flowing mill streams, grassy plains and prairie billows, timber skirted water courses, broad alluvions, and exhaustless deposits of coal, salt, and gypsum. Prospective settlers were told the state was filling rapidly with cultivated fields, numberless domestic herds, and thriving towns. Troops began patrolling railroad tracks and the border and eliminated Indian attacks by 1870.

One can't help but wonder why Lute didn't take advantage of the Act of May 20, 1862 and homestead on a one-fourth section of land (160 acres) for $1.25 an acre ($200.00). Under the original Homestead Act, all he had to do was attest that he was over the age of 21 or the head of a family, was a citizen, that the land was for his exclusive use and benefit, and that he would settle on and cultivate the land. The fact he was willing to pay $350

for 40 acres with "appurtenances" suggests he was buying a small working farm with house and out buildings.[86]

What was Sarah's reaction when she stepped off the train in Paola after living most of her life in a well-established Indiana town? She must have compared it to Benton county, Iowa of 1857. The main street was little more than a wide grassy path of buffalo sod rutted by horse hooves and wagon wheels. There was a general store-post office, land office, livery stable, hotel, barber shop, several saloon-dance halls, and a train and stage depot of flimsy construction. Numerous tents and dugouts housed some of the inhabitants who were served by a public well and walked on wooden sidewalks. If the Whipple arrived late in the day, they probably spent their first night in Kansas in the Paola hotel in a room with a rickety bedstead with straw-filled mattresses and stiff pillows, wash stand with water basin and pitcher, and a small chest of drawers. Lit by dim kerosene lamps, it was dark and musty and the ever-present bedbugs caused further discomfort.

Miami county, organized in 1856, was principally a farming area with twenty percent bottom land and ten percent woodland. Middle Creek was one of its principal streams. The Township had two saw and grist mills. Springs were numerous and well water was 12 to 30 feet underground. "Water witching" with a forked branch of a peach or willow tree was the usual method to locate the well site.[87]

The 1870 federal census counted 117 family farmers in the Township, including 35 tenant farmers, six with no real or personal property.[88] The Whipples were on the lower end of the economic scale. The medium worth of the 82 families who owned their farms was $1,600.00[89] and only $700.00 for the Whipples.[90] One hundred eleven farmers had personal property valued from $50.00 to $4,295.00. The mean value was $401.00[91] compared to $250.00 for the Whipples.[92] They were not among the 29 farm families to send their children to school. They were counted with the stay-at-home-to-work group.[93]

Lute was 33, Sarah 31, Jim 12, Ed 10, Frank 8, and Anna 7 when they moved to Kansas.[94] Their immediate neighbors were the William Houston and Andrew Wise families. Andrew and Eunice Wise were in their mid-30s and had no children. William Houston, 41, was 10 years older than his wife Louisa. They had a son born in Kansas. The closest families with children of similar age were the Courts and the McCarthurs. John and Ann Court were both 39. She was born in England, he in Ohio. Their children: George, 11 and Mary 10, were born in Wisconsin, and William, eight, in Missouri. Owen and Bridget McCarthur, ages 46 and 44, were born in Ireland. This family had moved a bit during their early years in America. They had six children: John, 19 and Mary 17, born in Ohio,

William, 15, born in Iowa, Andrew, 11, and Lucy, nine, and Peter, seven, born in Illinois.[95]

It is not known whether the Whipples had a frame or a sod house. If frame, it was undoubtedly small and confining for a growing family. Usually living and dining rooms, kitchen, and bedroom were combined. The winds whistled through the walls in winter and dust blew in the summer. Typically walls were papered with newspapers and rag carpets covered the floors.

Sod houses, constructed of blocks of sod called "prairie marble," were cool in the hot summer and a warm refuge from the numbing temperatures and blizzards of winter. They could withstand sweeping prairie fires and flaming Indian arrows but lacked ventilation and were perpetually dark, damp, and musty. A heavy rain would soak through the roof causing water and mud to drip on the family and their belongings. Usually the dirt floor was covered with carpets or cow and buffalo hides and bright gingham or old newspapers adorned the rough walls. Patchwork quilts were draped over wooden beds and straw-filled mattresses. Old crates and barrels were converted to chairs and trunks and used as benches, cupboards, and cradles.

LIFE IN KANSAS

Sarah and the kids were probably in charge of the daily water and fuel supply. Rainwater was ladled from an outdoor cistern or drawn, bucket after bucket, from a nearby well. Since there was no ready source of fuel, they would have combed the prairie for twigs, tufts of grass, hay twists, old corn cobs, woody sunflower stocks, and dried dung (known as chips) left by grazing cattle and buffalo. They gathered the chips in dry weather, stored them in gunnysacks, and stacked them near the house to be burned during the long winter months.

Food and clothing were high on Sarah's task list. Few ready-made food supplies were available and a chronic shortage of cash limited what she could buy. Fruit, when available, was canned and dried, garden vegetables were stored in the root cellar, meat was dried, smoked, and salted, bread was homemade. Corn, wheat, and potatoes were the staples. They ate corn plain or cooked as bread, grits, mush, pudding, and pancakes. Wheat was boiled plain or baked into biscuits and flapjacks. She would have taken the younger children into the country side on hot summer days to pick native gooseberries, grapes, choke berries, choke cherries, crab apples, pawpaws,[96] hazel and hickory nuts. Their cow provided milk and butter for baking; chickens provided eggs and meat; and hogs provided bacon, ham, and salt pork. Wild game—buffalo, deer, antelope, turkey, quail, and prairie chicken—was a welcome addition to the food supply.

Their clothes were simple and practicable—a few drab dresses of gingham or calico, a sunbonnet, and a plain muslin apron, denim overalls, dark cotton work shirts, and caps. Sarah undoubtedly made most of them. She must have spent hours sewing, darning socks, knitting sweaters, heavy socks and long woolen mufflers. The coats and shawls brought from Indiana were a blessing during the winter. Sturdy leather shoes or boots were at a premium so Sarah and the children would have gone barefoot spring, summer, and fall.

Life in Kansas was harsh regardless of season. Winter temperatures near zero for weeks at a time were common and 20 below was not uncommon. Some days the wind was unrelenting, making the numbing weather almost unbearable. Blizzards with blinding snow isolated the family. When the wind penetrated every crack and crevice and sleet pounded against the windows and drifts reached the rooftop and buried the woodpiles, the family huddled around the fireplace wrapped in heavy overcoats and woolen blankets trying to keep warm. Livestock were left untended until the blizzard ended. The totally white landscape made everything look alike and only familiar posts and fences kept family members from getting lost. Spring rainstorms and melting snow caused floods that menaced home and field and tornadoes touched down obliterating everything in their path. Summer could unleash drought and hot winds and/or hail storms.

Nightfall with its dense, boundless blackness brought a sense of solitude broken by the chirr of a cricket, the rustle of the prairie grass, and the howl of the coyote and the wolf who roamed the plains in packs and who were known to attack without provocation or mercy. A light in the distant sky usually meant a prairie fire and caused great anxiety if the wind was blowing in your direction. Lute probably plowed a wide strip of ground around the buildings and when a fire approached, the family prayed that a swift wind would not jump the fire guard. They had to be on guard and ready to fight a fire with buckets of water, pails of dirt, and wet blankets or grain sacks. Lute's last act before going to bed during the fire season would have been to check the horizon for signs of flames.

The Whipples only spent two growing seasons—1869 and 1870—in Kansas. Success depended on sun and ample rainfall without hail, fire, and windstorm. The sun was the one constant but adequate rainfall was not. Summer temperatures often exceeded 100 degrees. For most crops twenty inches of rain would produce a substantial harvest but a single drought would break the farmer without cash reserves. Excessive rainfall was also devastating if the ground didn't absorb the moisture and caused precious topsoil to erode.

Corn was the main crop but the average farmer also planted wheat, oats, and potatoes. According to the U.S. Department of Agriculture,

Miami county averaged 48 bushel of corn per acre in 1869, 28 in 1870. Wheat production dropped from 18 to 15 bushel, oats from 42 to 31, and potatoes from 149 to 106. The 1870 yields probably convinced Lute that he couldn't support a family of six on a 40-acre farm.

The children's daily workload was physically demanding and time consuming. The 1870 census identifies Jim, 12, and Ed, 11, as farm laborers.[97] This means they helped with the plowing, planting, fence building, slaughtering, trapping, hunting, and caring for the animals. Frank, 9, and Anna, 8, undoubtedly had daily chores helping their mother. But there was also time for play. They probably didn't have the usual toys of porcelain dolls, tin soldiers, or wooden spinning tops but used their imaginations to make dolls and whistles of twigs, necklaces of berries, and crowns from woven strands of prairie grass.

The kids probably went with their dad to the grove and cut a cedar tree for the one Christmas they spent in Kansas. Lute and Sarah would have decorated the tree Christmas Eve with candles, colored ribbons, and strings of berries and popcorn and then covered it with a sheet so it couldn't be seen until morning. When they woke Christmas morning, each child would have found a long red stocking on the hearth filled with dried apples, quinces, cling peaches dried with the pits intact, popcorn balls, and a simple gift made from whatever material was available. After Christmas breakfast, the sheet was removed, dad lit the candles, and the kids emptied their stockings. If there was a heavy snow, they would have remained indoors and made taffy and ginger snaps from sorghum molasses, recited holiday poems and prayers, and sang carols.

All family members worked hard and long hours during the summer. But Sunday was picnic day, weather permitting. Neighbors got together after church with each family bringing a basket of lunch—probably consisting of fried domestic or prairie chicken, boiled ham, pickles, bread and butter, coffee adulterated with rye or beans, cream for the coffee, and cake sweetened with sorghum. Sometimes the men barbecued fresh buffalo steak over an open fire. Ball games, foot races, and community singing followed lunch and the younger kids played jump rope, tag, and hide and seek. It was a tired but happy family that went home to chores Sunday evening.

Dancing was a favorite pastime at weddings, housewarmings, and other neighborhood gatherings. They began with a grand march followed by rounds of the polka, the Virginia reel, waltzes, and square dancing. A collection plate was passed to pay the fiddler. Refreshment was punch, cookies, and cakes. Some of the younger men brought other refreshments!

The Fourth of July celebration was the big summer event. The day usually began with church services followed by a parade led by a drummer and flutist. A local orator spoke about the founding of the Republic and,

if available, a makeshift band performed. Children of all ages played games and competed in races. The evening fireworks were followed by a community dance.

On the few occasions they got to go to town, the kids marveled at what they saw at the general store. Baskets of maple sugar by the chunk; barrels of white flour, buckwheat flour, and coarse meal; New Orleans molasses, vinegar, salt, and salt pork; white, light brown, and dark brown sugar; kits of mackerel and whole salted dried codfish hung by the tail; ham, shoulder, and slabs of bacon hung from the ceiling; strings of red pepper and sacks of potatoes; turnips, cabbage, pumpkin, and long-neck squash; cheese and kegs of lard and hulled corn hominy. Shelved behind the counter were quinine and patent medicines; tobacco; boxes of soda crackers; crocks of honey; coffee and tea; starch in bulk; bottles of catsup; cream of tartar; spice; rice; and large jars of striped candy. Calico, muslin, and wool; plain white dishes; steel knives and forks and pewter spoons; jars for pickles; milk crocks; pans; wooden tubs and pails; brooms; chamber pots; hoes, rakes, and spades; ropes; kegs of nails; hand tools; and breaking plows were on display. It was a cornucopia beyond belief. Farmers' shopping day was a time to play with other kids in town and for the folks to pick up mail from the relatives back in Indiana and Iowa.

For reasons unknown to the author, the Whipples returned to Eugene after only two years in Kansas.[98] They more than doubled their purchase price, selling the farm to Rosa Chrisman for $800.00 on September 1, 1870.[99]

FAMILY RETURNS TO EUGENE; LUTE BECOMES PATENT RIGHT AGENT

Lute did not return to farming. He purchased a home in Eugene from F. B. Ragland for $350.00 on January 3, 1871.[100] He became a Patent Right Agent[101] and followed many lines of work until retiring in the late 1890s. How the family was impacted by the depression that began in 1873 is unknown.[102] He was employed that year to help build the Eugene covered bridge which still stands today.[103] He conducted the Eugene Federal Census in 1880, ran a meat market in 1894, and was named Town Marshal in 1895.[104] When the town voted to dissolve its corporate entity March 28, 1896, his law enforcement career ended.[105] He also participated in home talent plays and was in the cast of "American Born" presented by the Alexander Dramatic Combination in February 1885. Admission was 15 cents for children, 25 cents for adults, and 35 cents for a reserved front seat.[106] Proceeds were to benefit the Eugene Brass Band.[107] He was one of the organizers and the first Vice President of the Total Abstinence Society, dubbed the Reformed Roosters, organized in February 1886. His son Jim

was the Society's first Secretary.[108] The Whipple School was built in 1881 on land he owned. Between 1881 and 1909, the School had 13 teachers, including his granddaughter Clara Fultz who taught the 1911-12 school year. In the fall of 1909 only the first five grades were taught and it was closed in 1920 and the building was advertised for sale in 1923.[109]

Home purchased by Lucien and Sarah Whipple on their return to Eugene in January 1871. Picture was taken by the author 100 years later, 6 June 1971.

Most of Lute's early life had been spent on what was known as the frontier—Ohio, Indiana, Iowa, and Kansas. Ten years after the family returned to Indiana from Kansas, the frontier was closed. Through 1870, the Census Bureau designated a frontier but concluded in 1880 that so many isolated settlements existed in the "unsettled area," it could not determine where the frontier was and eliminated the designation. Continental boundaries varied little between 1801 and 1865. In 1865, only a few settlements existed between the Mississippi Valley and California and Oregon – the Mormons in Utah and a few pioneers around Santa Fe, New Mexico being the exception. From 1860 through the early 1880s, every effort was made to encourage immigration. The great prairies between Kansas and Nebraska and the Rocky Mountains, sometimes called The Great American Desert, had been considered unsuitable for settlement. But this last frontier was settled by three successive groups—miners, ranchers, and farmers—and they

Eugene, Vermillion county, Indiana about 1870.

Covered bridge spanning The Little Vermillion River in Eugene. Lucien was on the building crew.

settled more land in 30 years than was settled in 250 years on the eastern seaboard.[110] The Homestead Act of 1862 had much to do with this influx as did the expansion of railroads, improved communications, and new inventions and processes that made it possible to farm where no crop had ever been raised. A product of all this migration was the Statue of Liberty, a gift from the people of France, dedicated by President Grover Cleveland October 28, 1886.[111]

Lute was 35 when the golden spike went into the last tie to connect the last rail of the transcontinental railroad from Omaha to San Francisco—the greatest engineering feat of the nineteenth century—at Promontory, Utah May 10, 1869.[112]

The Union, held together by the Civil War, was now tied together East and West. It could happen only in the U.S. where there was enough unused land owned by the federal government, enough credit to induce capitalists to build the lines, and enough energy, labor, and imagination to complete the task.

BUFFALO DISAPPEARS. COUNTRY MODERNIZED

The buffalo disappeared during Lute and Sarah's lifetime. When the family moved to Kansas, there were about 15 million bison west of the Mississippi river. By 1875 the entire southern herd had been destroyed; the northern herd was gone in another 10 years.[113] They lived through some of the greatest changes ever seen in the United States: slavery was abolished, electricity was put to use, the telephone was developed,[114] and the telegraph system was completed.

They watched modern America evolve. The economy became continent wide. People, food, coal, and minerals moved wherever someone wanted to send them, cheaply and quickly. A national stock market was organized. Melvil Dewey helped organize the American Library Association and established the book classification system that bears his name – an indicator of growing professionalism and systematic order in the basic approach to knowledge. Samuel Clemens, writing under the name Mark Twain, published *The Adventures of Tom Sawyer*, an indicator of cultural shifts coming to the country.

Thomas Alva Edison, the greatest inventor of all time, developed the many products that make the world an easier, more pleasant, and better place to live: the phonograph, 1877, Edison's favorite invention; the carbon telephone transmitter, 1878 which made telephony a commercial art; the microphone, 1878, which is essential to radio, television, recording, and public speaking; the incandescent lamp which bathed the globe in a new brilliance, 1879; motion pictures, 1894, which revolutionized the entertainment industry; an alkaline storage battery; a machine for quadruplex[115] and sextuplex[116] telegraphic transmission, 1876-79; many appliances; and improvements for the transmission of electric light, heat, and power. His Edison Illuminating Co. switched on lights in the New York Stock Exchange, the *New York Times*, *New York Herald*, and other buildings in lower Manhattan on September 4, 1882. By 1883, he had 246 plants making electricity for 61,000 lamps. Lute and Sarah were probably amazed when they read about the Centennial held in Philadelphia in 1876 where Americans compared their achievements with older nations. It featured exhibits of arts and culture; inventions to improve agriculture, transportation, and machinery; displays of drills, mowers, and reapers, of lumber wagons and Pullman sleeping cars, of sewing machines and typewriters, of planes, lathes, and looms.

Activities that were unimaginable before the Civil War became commonplace. Travel from New York to San Francisco which took months and cost more than $1,000 now took a week and a first class ticket cost $150, $70 for emigrants. Freight rates dropped dramatically, mail that costs dollars per ounce and with uncertain delivery dates was handled for pennies and got from Chicago to San Francisco in a few days. The telegraph moved thoughts, ideas, statistics—anything that could be put on paper—almost instantly; not only from New York to San Francisco but to Europe, England, and anywhere there was a telegraph station.

By 1876 the intense animosities of the Civil War had receded leading to sectional reconciliation. Americans now looked for ways to promote their restored unity. Because 1876 was one hundred years after the signing of the Declaration of Independence it was the nation's centennial and virtu-

ally all state and local governments held festivals and ceremonies throughout the year. The most prominent event was the Centennial Exhibition in Philadelphia.

The big political event of 1876 was the deadlocked presidential election between Republican Rutherford B. Hayes and Democrat Samuel J. Tilden. Tilden won a clear majority of the popular vote but the electoral vote with 20 disputed ballots was close. Florida, South Carolina, and Louisiana sent double sets of results, one favoring each candidate.[117] Deadlock ensued causing a serious Constitutional crisis which caused Congress to establish a special Electoral Commission to make the decision. After months of wrangling the Commission voted eight to seven on the eve of inauguration day to award all 20 contested votes to Hayes. The result was a one vote victory for Hayes who then promptly recognized the election of Democrats in the three states whose Republican electoral votes had just made him President.

Songs that gained prominence during these years included *Dixie* (1859), *Drummer Boy of Shilo* (1862), *When Johnny Comes Marching Home* (1863), *Tenting on the Old Camp Ground* (1864), one of the most pathetic of the war-time ballads, and *Marching Through Georgia* (1865).

While the popular songs from 1860-65 concentrated on the war and campaign songs for Lincoln to the tunes of both *Yankee Doodle* and *Old Dan Tucker*, others such as *Killarney* (1862), *The Day Is Done*, and *Beautiful Dreamer* (1864), and *The Little Brown Church in the Vale* (1865) were big hits.

The post-war period is remembered for *When You and I Were Young, Maggie* (1866), *We're Marching to Zion,* and *Blue Danube Waltz* (1867). The big hits of 1868 was *Her Bright Smile Haunts Me Still* and *Tales of the Vienna Woods. Sweet Genevieve* was a big hit in 1869 along with *The Little Brown Jug* and *Shoo Fly, Don't Bother Me.*

The 1871 concert tour of the Fisk Jubilee Singers from Nashville's Fisk University made America aware of the simple beauty of the Negro spirituals. *Deep River; Swing Low, Sweet Chariot; Steal Away; Sometimes I Feel Like a Motherless Child; Nobody Knows de Trouble I've Seen; Standin' in de Need of Prayer*; and *By and By* are just a few of the spirituals from that time that have become an integral part of American music.

Good-bye Liza Jane and *Reuben and Rachel* came out in 1871 and *Silver Threads Among the Gold* was one of the most popular songs of 1873, selling over two million copies. *I'll Take You Home Again Kathleen* came out in 1876 and *In the Gloaming* was one of the more important songs of 1877. James A. Bland, a black man, wrote *Carry Me Back to Old Virginny* in 1879. He also wrote *In the Evening by the Moonlight* and *Oh, dem Golden Slippers. Home on the Range* and *Frankie and Johnnie* were published in the late 1870s and *School Days* in 1885.[118]

It appears that Lute first applied for a Civil War pension in 1879 at age 45. His application number was 240,559. A search of his service records failed to find evidence of a disability while on active duty and his request was denied. In 1890 Congress passed a Dependent Veterans' Pension bill which doubled the number of pensioners within four years. The law provided that veterans (and their widows) who served at least 90 days and who had physical or mental disability (regardless of cause) were entitled to a pension, if they had no other source of support. Lute was awarded a pension of $4.00 a month in June of 1880. It was raised to $6.00 in 1889, and $12.00 in 1890.[119] Apparently his rheumatism had progressed to such a degree that he could no longer work.

SARAH SUFFERS WITH PARALYSIS. DIES IN JUNE 1898

Sarah died in Eugene the last day of June 1898. She lived 59 years-three months-five days. Her death occurred a short time after she was stricken with paralysis and son Jim was unable to get from Iowa to Eugene before her death.[120] It is presumed she was buried in the Eugene Cemetery but she is not in the cemetery records and there is no marker with her name on any lot.

There is no evidence that Sarah was unhappy with women's position in life or that she was a follower of the women's movement and their *Declaration of Rights* for women issued July 4, 1876. She was three months shy of her 41st birthday when Articles of Impeachment, arraigning the United States government for violating its own fundamental principles, were presented to Pres. Grant during the Philadelphia Exposition commemorating the nation's birth with the reading of the Declaration of Independence to a host of foreign dignitaries.

Women participants protested calling the Centennial a celebration of the independence of the people "while one-half of the people are still subjects—still political slaves." They were echoing the 1869 charge by John Stuart Mill in his *The Subjection of Women* that "marriage is the only actual bondage known to our law. There remain no legal slaves, except the mistress of every house."

Elizabeth Cady Stanton, Susan B. Anthony, a Whipple descendant, and Matilda Joslyn Gage, angry that such an event should be held in honor of Independence while women were denied the vote, drafted the impeachment document. Its Articles charged the government with introducing the word "male" into state constitutions; making sex a crime; holding the writ of *habeas corpus* inoperative by allowing the rights of a husband to subsume the rights of his wife; denying women a right of trial by a jury of their peers; taxing women without representation; allowing

unequal codes for men and women (the double standard); enacting special legislation for women; denying women's right of self-government; establishing an aristocracy of sex more despotic than monarchy; and failing to render judicial decisions consonant with the spirit and letter of the Constitution.[121] Whether or not she was active in the women's movement, it is probably she would have supported their goals.

Lute met an untimely death six years after Sarah. On May 13, 1904 he took the early morning train to Newport, arriving at 4:18 a.m. Finishing his business early and not wanting to wait for the afternoon train he got a buggy ride with Tip Dallas to the Dallas home, three-fourths of a mile from where he was fatally injured. He was found alive but unconscious about noon near Walnut Grove by a freight crew of the C. & I. E. Line They took him to Newport where he died shortly afterward. He was 70 years, three months, seven days old.

No one saw the accident but it was presumed he had been struck by a train. The top of his head was badly bruised against a fence post and a lock of his hair was found fastened to the post. He was badly bruised in the right groin, his breeches were torn at the knee with axle-grease on them, and his neck was broken.[122]

In its obituary, the *Herald* of Cayuga wrote "Col. Whipple had been a familiar figure in this county for many years and his jovial manner and generous heart made him many friends who will keenly regret to hear of his very unfortunate death. Three of his five children survive him—James E. of Vinton, Iowa and Frank M. and Mrs. W.W. (Anna) Fultz of Eugene. His funeral was held Sunday May 15 at the Eugene home of his son Frank. It was attended by a large number of friends from the north end of Vermillion county. "The old soldiers turned out in a body and escorted the funeral party to the Eugene Cemetery where Col. Whipple's remains were laid to rest under the Stars and Stripes which he so nobly defended in life."[123]

Son Jim described his father "as an unusual man" in the Vinton *Review* of May 17, 1904. "He possessed a strong, active, and vigorous body and an alert and active mind. He saw only the bright side of things and was an optimist of the most pronounced type. He was a humorist through and through and of a very unusual and original sort. He was loyal to his friends and never failed to give a fair, open, and vigorous fight to his enemies.

"His late years [were] spent quietly enjoying the rewards of his neighbors, the companionship of a number of old Army comrades and the love of his children and grandchildren, the latter of whom always considered 'grand-dad' their side partner and special champion."

Lute lived during the administration of 18 U.S. presidents beginning with Andrew Jackson and ending with Theodore Roosevelt.[124]

1. Area purchaed from Indians – it was known as the "New Purchase." The Weaves, Checkups, Miamis, and Potawattomies agreed to withdraw to the north of the Wabash. The Delawares agreed to take a grant of land beyond the Mississippi. The Miamis and Potawattomie were eventually moved to Kansas where they were settled near the Osage river in the fall of 1838. Approximately one-fifth lost their lives during the removal. Logan Esarey, *A History of Indiana From Its Exploration to 1859*, W.K. Steward Co., Indianapolis, 1915, 229, 338-9.
2. The National Road is considered to be the greatest wagon road in the world. The need for the road was considered by Congress as early as 1802 as a means by which emigrants might reach the public lands of the west. Congress authorized a survey of a road from Cumberland, Md. to the Ohio river in 1806. It was surveyed 80' in width. The timber was grubbed, the roadway graded, culverts and bridges of cut stone were built, and a center tract 30 to 40 feet wide was macadamized with 10 inches of stone. The survey was completed to Indianapolis by 8 July 1827 and to the western boundary of the state by 4 September. The distance from the eastern state line was 71 miles and from there to Farrington's Ferry at Terre Haute where it crossed the Wabash is 70 and 1/4 miles. The entire length of the road in Indiana was almost straight, varying only two miles from being straight. Esarey, 255-6.
3. No record has been found of their life in Logansport but it is assumed Enoch practiced the trade of cooper, the trade he followed in Eugene.
4. *Biographical and Historical Record of Vermillion County Indiana*.. Chicago: The Lewis Publishing Company, 1888, 279. [Hereafter *Vermillion County Indiana*].
5. The railroad was extended to Danville, Ill. in November 1871 but missed Eugene by seven miles – north of the village. This was close enough to have a station named Eugene Junction but the town of Cayuga – first called Osonimon after an Indian Chief – grew up around it and eventually outgrew Eugene. Harold L. O'Donnell, *Eugene Township (Vermillion County, Indiana) The First 100 Years 1824-2924*. Danville Ill.: The Interstate Printers and Publishers, 1963. 169, 178.
6. He purchased the property from John M. Coleman who had owned it the previous six years. Enoch sold it in 1855 after the family moved to Iowa to James B. Iles. O'Donnell, 91.
7. Vermillion county deed book 14, page 250. There is a mystery about the outlots because no record exists to show they were platted or numbered. O'Donnell, 17, 89.
8. O'Donnell, 228.
9. *Vermillion County, Indiana*, 342.
10. William Fultz,, whose grandson William, married Lute's daughter Anna, and whose granddaughter Clara married Lute's son Edmond, was there by 1826. John Holtz, a native of Ohio who married Lute's sister Lavina, arrived in 1834. *Vermillion County Indiana*, 279-80; O'Donnell, 9, 274-75
11. *Vermillion County Indiana,* 279-80.
12. Coin found by Zeke – a silvery-white, brittle, metallic chemical element of crystalline structure, found only in combination; used in alloys with other metals to harden them and increase their resistance to chemical action.
13. In 1869 Prof. John Collette found a small coin in a mound near Eugene with characters closely resembling Arabic. The writing was never translated. Like the one found by Zeke, the mound was covered with ancient trees *Vermillion County, Indiana*, 190, 282-83.
14. The equivalent of $99.07 in 2005 dollars. $5 would equal 25¢ in 2005. *The Inflation Calculator*, an Internet Web Page written and maintained by S. Morgan Friedman at http://www.westegg.com/inflation. Hereafter referred to as *Inflation Factor.*
15. Vermillion county criminal and civil record, Box 101, County Court House, Newport, Ind.

16. $495.35 in 2005 dollars. $25 would equal $1.26 in 2005 *Inflation Factor.*
17. O'Donnell, 49.
18. There was not a gravel road in the county until the 1880s. O'Donnell, 108.
19. The Wabash river forms the eastern boundary line the full length of Vermillion County.
20. Pork and grain, the largest items in the trade, sold for several times its price in the midwest and for cash. Additionally there was little market for local products and the New Orleans market was easier to reach than inland towns much closer to Eugene. O'Donnell, 53-54.
21. O'Donnell, 45.
22. The barrels were made of wooden staves bound together with iron or wooden hoops. The staves were bowed to make the barrels wider in the middle than at the ends, a shape that enabled them to better withstand expansion pressure from within. A cooper was a skilled worker. He had to cut and plain the staves which were jointed at the edges so that the barrel would have a uniform bulge and taper. The staves were stood upright, arranged in a circle, and fitted with temporary hoops. After the ends of the staves were trimmed and fitted with flat headpieces, permanent hoops were put into place and the finished barrel tested for leaks. To prevent undesirable odors from forming in the barrel's contents, only high grade woods were used – oak, gum, and ash—which were in plentiful supply in the Eugene area.
23. The boat was part of the cargo as it was always sold in New Orleans for lumber. Frequently they sold for $100.00, about the cost to built it. O' Donnell, 55. $100.00 in 1848 would be the equivalent of $1,982 in 2005. $100 would equal $5.05 in 2005. *Inflation Factor.*
24. The average kill was about 400 per day. Hogs were driven to the slaughter house on foot—up to 30 miles—in lots from one to 500 head. O'Donnell, 47.
25. O'Donnell, 47.
26. The flat boat period probably reached its peak shortly before the Civil War. With increased steamboat service on the Wabash and the growth of railroads, they were no longer needed.
27. The following flat boat contract gives the reader an idea of how many barrels were required per boat and a sense of how important coopers were to the economy:

    > "Received of Grondyke and Thompson in good order on board the flat boat Number Two whereof William Curtis is pilot, now lying on the Big Vermillion river and bound for New Orleans, the following articles marked and numbered as below which I agree to deliver in like good order at the aforesaid port of New Orleans (the dangers of the river and other unavoidable accidents only excepted) unto Samuel Grondyke and James Thompson or their assigns they paying freight at the rate of agreement. "In witness the pilot of said flat boat hath affirmed to three bills of lading, all of this tenor and date, one of which being accomplished, the others to stand void. "Dated at Eugene, Ind. this 12th day of March A.D. 1844. 586 Bbls of Mess Pork; 89 Bbls of Light Mess Pork; 110 Bbls of China Pork. /s/ Wm. Curtis.

    Philo Hosford's boat No. Three which shipped out on 25 March 1848 carried 756 barrels of pork and 232 kegs of lard. O'Donnell, 46, 54.
28. O'Donnell, 57.
29. The equivalent of $49.55 in 2005 dollars. *Inflation Factor.*
30. O'Donnell, 50.
31. The equivalent of $92,452.00 in 2005 dollars. *Inflation Factor.*
32. O"Donnell, 101.
33. O'Donnell, 101-102.
34. A mock serenade with kettles, horns, etc, to a couple on their wedding night. Also spelled charivari.

35. A cure for cholera infantum was published in the *Medical Investigator* in 1847 by Horace N.T. Benedict, a botanic physician of Springfield, Lawrence county, Ind. The recipe: "Take a double handful of dewberry roots, double handful of the roots of cranebill, two gallons of witch hazel leaves. Boil these separately until the strength is all extracted. Strain and pour the liquid into one vessel and boil down to a quart. Add a pint of good French brandy and a pound of loaf sugar." The recipe for "yaller janders" (yellow jaundice): "A double handful of the bark of wild cherry root, an equal amount of bark from the root of the yellow poplar, a like quantity of sarsaparilla, same of red sumach roots, and half that amount of bitter root. Boil them in two gallons of water until it is reduced to one-half gallon. Strain and let simmer down to one pint. Mix this with a gallon of hard cider, shake it well, and add two ounces of madder. Take a half teacupful three times a day." The concoctions offered by the herb doctors or "botanic physicians" as they liked to call themselves were intentionally made as bitter and nauseous as possible. In many cases, the medicines were called bitters. Logan Esarey, 433-34.

    There were few trained physicians from the east. Most were "home-grown" quacks including the "Thompsonians" who believed diseases could be sweated out of the system and practiced "vapor treatment." They had a "vapor bath chair" in which patients, whatever the disease, were strapped and steamed as nearly to death as thought safe. Steaming was usually followed by "white walnut pills."

36. Lincoln and the Republican Party ran on a platform that pledged only to stop slavery's expansion into the Western territories – not to abolish it outright or even gradually.

37. The Republican campaign was too radical for most voters in the south and border states. A considerable portion – perhaps 46% of the northern electorate — also found it too radical. Joshua Zeitz, "Are Our Liberties in Peril," *American Heritage*, American Heritage Inc., 60 Fifth Avenue, New York, New York 10011, November/December 2001, 34-7.

38. Field officers of Volunteers and Militia in service during the Civil War (1861-65) with the name Whipple: Maj. Gen. Amiel Weeks Whipple; Maj. Henry Carlomen Whipple, Mich. Cav.; Capt. John Whipple, Minn. Vols.; Lt. Col. Charles Whipple, Wis. Inf.; Maj. John Whipple, Jr., first R.I. Cavalry; Col. Lauriston W. Whipple, 113 U.S. C. Infantry; Lt. Col. Stephen Girard Whipple, 1st batln, Calif. Mountaineers, inf.; Lt. Col. Thomas J. Whipple, 1st and 4th N.H. inf.; Lt. Col. William D. Whipple, 45th Pa, Militia; Lt. Col. William L. Whipple, 21st Mich. Inf. Francis B. Heitman, *Historical Register and Dictionary of the United States Army, From Its Organization September 29, 1789, to March 2, 1903*. Published under an Act of Congress approved 2 March 1903. Vol. 1, 1025-26.

39. It provided Lincoln the occasion to announce his Emancipation Proclamation, a crucial step in the process by which four million slaves achieved freedom and the institution, which had divided and disgraced America was abolished forever. James M. McPherson, "The Test of Reconciliation" *American Heritage*, November/December 2001, 30.

40. $600.00 of income in 1862 would be the equivalent of $12,322 in 2005 and $10,000 would equal $205,427. *Inflation Factor.*

41. The President said: "The dogmas of the quiet past are inadequate to the stormy present. The occasion is piled high with difficulty, and we must rise with the occasion. As our cause is new, so must we think anew, and act anew. We must disenthrall ourselves, and then we shall save our country. In giving freedom to the slave, we assure freedom to the free – honorable alike in what we give, and what we preserve."

42. The Proclamation had little immediate practical effect but was so important symbolically by declaring that emancipation was to be a central goal of the war.

43. The issuance of the final Emancipation Proclamation in January 1863 sparked heated arguments among hundreds of thousands of Union soldiers, who contested the merits of black freedom by campfires, in tents, and even in formal regimental debate soci-

eties. A handful of companies from the Mid West laid down their arms and returned home. Many other soldiers bridled at the thought of fighting to liberate slaves. But the vast majority continued to serve. Zeitz, 35.

44. Men of prominence during Lute's lifetime: In 1862, Christian Schusselle, an Alsatian-born academic painter, was commissioned by Jordan Mott, a New York ironmaker, to paint 19 men representative of American innovators of the 19th century. Mott picked the 19 and included himself. Cooper Union owns the painting and a copy hangs in the National Portrait Gallery in Washington, D.C. The innovators to share the century with Lucien R. Whipple were:
Eliphalet Nott, 1773-1866. Stove inventor and president of Union College for 62 years. **Peter Cooper**, 1791-1883. Built the first American steam locomotive (Tom Thumb); innovated in iron and glue manufacture; founded Cooper Union. **Samuel Morse**, 1791-1872. Inventor of the electric telegraph. **Henry Burden**, 1791-1871. Inventor of horseshoe-making machine and agricultural machinery. **Thomas Blanchard**, 1788-1865. Inventor of numerous lathes and steam vehicles. **Isaiah Jennings**, 1792-1862. Inventor of friction matches. **Joseph Henry**, 1797-1878. Physicists, electric-motor inventor, and first secretary of the Smithsonian Institution. **Jordan Mott**, 1799-1866. Inventor and manufacturer in iron and related technologies. **Joseph Saxon**, 1799-1873. Inventor whose devices included tide gauges, hydrometers, and minting machinery. **James Bogardus**, 1800-1874. Inventor whose varied output ranged from engraving machines to the cast-iron building. **Charles Goodyear**, 1800-1860. Inventor whose vulcanization process made rubber useful. **John Ericsson**, 1803-1899. Developed marine steam engines and the screw propeller and designed the revolutionary warship Monitor. **Cyrus McCormick**, 1809-1884. Inventor and manufacturer of the reaping machine and other agricultural equipment. **Richard Hoe**, 1812-1886. Inventor of the rotary printing press. **Samuel Colt**, 1814-1862. Gun inventor and manufacturer. **Erastus Bigelow**, 1814-1879. Inventor of power carpet looms. **William Morton**, 1819-1868. Co-discoverer of anesthesia. **Frederick Sickels**, 1819-1895. Inventor of cutoff valve crucial to later stationary steam engines. **Elias Howe**, 1819-1867. Inventor of the sewing machine. "People of Progress," *American Heritage*, November 1999, 83-7.

45. Men from Eugene mustered in and out on the same dates as Lucien who enlisted as corporal and was mustered out as a quartermaster sergeant: Joseph Lane, who mustered in and out as a sergeant; Wm. H. Johnson, in as sergeant, out as private; Wm. Flemming, in as a private, out as a sergeant; David Holtz, in as a private, out as a sergeant; John Manges, in and out as a private; Wilson Parks, in and out as a private; Wm. Rittenhouse, in and out as a private; Ellis Stoker, in and out as a private.

46. *National Archives Trust Fund Board, Military Service Records (NNCC)*, Washington, D.C. 20408. Various military and pension records for Lucien R. Whipple. Hereafter *Military Service Records*. His $27.00 bounty in 1862 would equal $555.06 in 2005. *Inflation Factor.*

47. The Regt. left Indiana for Lexington, Ky. 18 Aug. 1862. In the Battle of Richmond, Ky. 30 Aug. where most of the Regt.was captured. They were paroled, and sent home to Indianapolis where it was reorganized. In December 1862 it was ordered to Kentucky where it saw action at Muldraugh's Hill, 27 Dec. 1862 and captured again and paroled and sent to Indianapolis where it remained until 26 Aug. 1863. Its designation was changed to Sixth Regiment Cavalry on 23 Feb. 1863. Detachment, Reconnaissance from Olympian Springs, Ky. 8-11 Oct. 1863; Campaign, Knoxville, Tenn, 4 Nov. 23 Dec. 1863; Actions, Lenoir Station, Tenn. 15 Nov.; Engagement, Campbell's Station, Tenn. 16 Nov.; Siege of Knoxville, Tenn. 17 Nov. 4 Dec.; Engagement, Bean's Station, Tenn, 14 Dec.; Co. H Skirmish, Lee Co, Va. 24 Dec.; Detachment, Skirmish, Big Springs, near Tazewell, Tenn. 19 Jan. 1864;

Skirmish Tazewell, 24 Jan.; Campaign against Atlanta, Ga. 1 May 8-Sept.; Demonstrations against Dalton, Ga. 9-13 May; Action, Sugar Valley, Ga. 11 May; Battle of Resaca, Ga. 14-15 May; Skirmish, Pine Log Creek, Ga. 18 May; Skirmish, Allatoona Hills, Ga. 20 May; Operations on line of Pumpkin Vine Creek and Battles about Dallas, New Hope Church, and Allatoona Hills, Ga. 25 May 5 June; Engagement, Allatoona Pass, 1-2 June; Skirmish, Lost Mountain, Ga. 9 June; Operations about Marietta and against Kennesaw Mountain, Ga. 10 June 2 July; Action, Pine Mountain, Ga. 10 June; Skirmish, Lost Mountain 11-14 June; Combats about Lost Mountain 15-17 June; Skirmish, Cheyney's Farm, Ga. 27 June; General assault on Kennesaw Mountain 27 June; Operations on line of Nickajack Creek, Ga. 2-5 July; Operations on line of the Chattahoochee river, Ga. 5-17 July; Skirmish, Sandtown, Ga. 6-7 July; Skirmishes, Campbellton, Ga. 12-14 July; Skirmishes, Turner's Ferry, Ga. 16-22 July; Siege of Atlanta 27 July - 15 Aug. 15; Raid to Macon, Ga. 27 July - 6 Aug. (Stoneman's Raid); Skirmish, Sweetwater, Ga. 28 July; Combat, Macon, Ga. 30 July; Combat, Clinton, Ga. 30 July; Combats, Hillsborough, Sunshine Church, Ga. 30-31 July; Engagement, Jug Tavern, Ga. 3 Aug; Engagement, Mulberry Creek, Ga. 3 Aug.; Skirmishes, Sandtown and Fairburn, Ga. 15 Aug ; Flank movement on Jonesboro, Ga. 25-30 Aug.; Skirmishes, Pulaski, Tenn. 26-27 Sept. Skirmish, Waterloo, Ala. 3 Oct.; Battle of Nashville, Tenn. 15-16 Dec. 1864. Frederick H. Dyer, "Indiana Regimental Histories: 6th Regiment Cavalry (71st Regiment Volunteers)," *A Compendium of the War of the Rebellion*, vol. 2. Dayton, Ohio: Morningside, 1979, 131, 1107-08.

48. Morgan was later promoted to General and recognized by the Confederate Congress for his "varied heroic, and invaluable services in Tennessee and Kentucky."
49. The Indianapolis *Journal* of 1 Jan. 1863 included this news item: "The portion of the 71st Indiana captured at Muldraugh's Hill by Morgan and paroled, arrived in the city yesterday morning. They are now at Camp Burnside under command of Lieut. Col. Matson.
50. "The 71st Indiana Regiment returned to this city on Thursday (2 July) evening from its late campaign and will be on hand today at Johnson's Grove to take part in the celebration of the 4th of July. Our citizens should pay the picnic grounds a visit during the day." Indianapolis *Journal*, 4 July 1863. "In pursuance of military orders the 71st Regiment, Col. Biddle, marched from its camp on Saturday afternoon (4 July) to the Jeffersonville depot, where a train was ready to receive them. They left the city about 9 o'clock at night." Indianapolis *Journal*, 6 July 1863.
51. W. W. H. Terrell, *Report of the (Indiana) Adjutant General,* 6:156-57.
52. *Military Service Records*. The deserter is not identified by name.
53. Firing squad procedures make it impossible to know who shares in the death. The 20 guns are loaded, 10 with ball and 10 with heavy blank cartridges. Members of the squad do not see the loading done and draw their weapons from a pile unaware if it has live ammunition. Each has a reasonable probability that he has no part in the bloodshed. "The First Execution of a Deserter in the West," Pamphlet No. 27 (H973.7H739), Indiana State Library, Indianapolis,, Ind.
54. W.H.H. Terrell, 663-64.
55. Military Service Records.
56. Undoubtedly taps was played at their burial ceremonies. Taps originated during the Civil War when in 1862 Union Army Captain Robert Ellicombe in a battle near Harrison's Landing in Virginia, heard the moans of a severely wounded soldier on the field of battle and risked his life crawling through the gunfire to the soldier and pulled him back to the Union lines where he discovered the soldier was a Confederate and was dead. He lit a lantern and when he saw the soldier's face in the dim light went numb with shock. The boy was his son who had enlisted in the Confederate Army without telling his father. His request to give his son a full military burial with a band playing a funeral dirge was denied

because the son was an enemy. However, out of respect for the father, his superiors allowed him one musician. He chose a bugler and asked him to play a series of musical notes he had found in the pocket of his son's uniform. The haunting melody we now know as "Taps" used at military funerals was born. *Day is done Gone the sun* From the lakes From the hills From the sky. All is well, safely rest. *God is nigh. Fading light Dims the sight And a star Gems the sky, Gleaming bright From afar, Dawning nigh, Falls the night. Thanks and praise, For our days, Neath the sun, Neath the stars, Neath the sky, As we go, This we know, God is nigh.*

57. Richard K. and Geraldine M. Rue, editors, *Song and Sorrow. The Daily Journal of Thomas Hart Benton McCain of the Eighty-Sixth Indiana Volunteer Infantry.* Carmel, Ind., 1998. 126. [Hereafter *Song and Sorrow.*]
58. *Ibid*, 126.
59. Lincoln's "little speech" was received with polite but unenthusiastic applause and he considered it a failure. The principal speaker, Edward Everett, assured the President that the speech said more in two minutes than he (Everett) said in two hours but no one foresaw that Lincoln's 10 sentences would come to be considered one of the most moving and exquisite utterances in the language.
60. It offered a full pardon to all Confederates except government officials, high-ranking Army officers, members who left the federal military for the Confederate military, and those who mistreated white or black prisoners of war. Pardons were conditioned on an Oath of Allegiance to the U.S. All property except slaves would be restored to the Rebels. Federal statehood would be restored to seceded states when one-tenth of its citizens swore allegiance and forswore slavery. Six days later Mary Todd Lincoln's half sister, the widow of Confederate General B.H. Helm who was killed at the Battle of Chicamuga in September, was given amnesty by Lincoln after she swore allegiance to the Union.
61. The words of Margaret J. Preston's poem describe the situation:

    Halt—the march is over,
    Day is almost gone;
    Lose the cumbrous knapsack,
    Drop the heavy gun.

    Chilled and wet and weary,
    Wander to and fro,
    Seeking wood to kindle
    Fires admist the snow.

    Round the bright blaze gather,
    Heed not sleet or cold;
    Ye are Spartan soldiers,
    Stout and brave and bold. *Song and Sorrow*, 135.

62. General U.S. Grant, who was commissioned Lieut. General and given the title of general-in-chief of the Army of the United States March 2, issued orders to General Sherman on May 7 to move against Gen. Joseph E. Johnston's Army of Tennessee and "to get into the interior of the enemy's country as far as you can, inflicting all the damage you can against their war resources." Sherman's first goal was the vital sup-ply, manufacturing, and communication center of Atlanta and he assembled a force of over 100,000 men. Johnston's forces numbered about 62,000. Sherman believed the Confederacy would crumble if Georgia were destroyed and he methodically deci-mated a 60-mile wide path from Atlanta to the sea. "If people raise a howl against my barbarity and cruelty, I will answer that war is war and not popularity-seeking," he wrote.
63. John S. Bowman, editor, *The Civil War Almanac.* Bison Books, Corp., 1982. 213.

64. W.H.H. Terrell, 664.
65. *Vermillion County, Indiana*, 438.
66. Tuesday Oct. 11 was election day for state and local offices in Indiana.
67. He should have been home by 8 Nov. in time to cast his ballot for President Lincoln who won 78% of the soldier vote on a platform calling explicitly for the abolition of slavery.
68. No date of birth or death has been found for Clara. Cemetery records show she is buried in the same grave in Eugene as Lute.
69. The amount was minor. It began at $4.00 a month, increased to $6.00 in April 1888, and to $12.00 in May 1890. *Military Service Records.*
70. Congress also enacted two additional Amendments guaranteeing full citizenship and due process of law to African-Americans and banning electoral disenfranchisement on grounds of race. None of this had been remotely imaginable, let alone possible in 1860. Zeitz wrote that the Civil War was an unfinished revolution in many respects with most of the constitutional gains of the 1860s unenforced for another century. What began as a very limited war ended with a deeply radical outcome. Zeitz, 37.
71. An Englishman spelled out the consequences of the Union's success in the war. After Appomattox, Edward Beesly, a liberal political economist at University College in London, declared that "our opponents told us that republicanism was on trial" in the American Civil War. "They insisted on our watching what they called its breakdown. They told us that it was forever discredited in England. Well we accepted the challenge. We staked our hopes boldly on the result. Under a strain such as no Aristocracy, no Monarchy, no Empire could have supported, Republican institutions have stood firm." McPherson, 30.
72. President Lincoln was shot the evening of April 14 at Ford's Theater and died the next morning. Vice president Andrew Johnson took the oath of office of President at 11:00 a.m. Lincoln lay in state in the East Room of the White House April 17 and 18. Funeral services were conducted there the 19th after which his body was taken to the Capitol Rotunda for public viewing until the 21st when it was put aboard a special funeral train for Springfield, Ill. The train reached Springfield May 3 and he was buried the next day.
73. "Lincoln was not a type. He stands alone – no ancestors, no fellows, and no successors. He had the advantage of living in a new country, of social equality, of personal freedom, of seeing in the horizon of his future as the star of hope. He preserved his individuality and his self-respect. He knew and mingled with men of every kind; and, after all, men are the best books. He became acquainted with the ambitions and hopes of the heart, and the means used to accomplish the ends, the springs of action and the seeds of thought.

    "Wealth could not purchase [and] power could not awe this loving man. He knew no fear except the fear of dying wrong. Hating slavery, pitying the master – seeking to conquer not persons, but prejudices – he was the embodiment of the self-denial, the courage, the hope, and the nobility of a nation. He spoke, not to inflame, not to upbraid, but to convince. He raised his hands, not to strike, but in benediction. He longed to pardon.

    "Lincoln was the grandest figure of the fiercest Cvil War. He is the gentlest memory of our world." *Song and Sorrow*, 238-9.
74. $20,000.00 in 1865 equals $236,160.00 in 2005 while $20,000 in 2005 equaled $1,694.00 in 1865. *Inflation Factor.*
75. *Indianapolis Journal*, Sept. 21, 1865
76. Dyer, 665. *Indianapolis Journal*, 21 Sept. 1865
77. *Vermillion County, Indiana*, 285-6.
78. The Act required the President to obtain the approval of the Senate for removing any official whose appointment originally required Senate approval. Johnson saw the Act

as an infringement on the traditional balance of powers and vetoed it, but Congress overrode his veto. Secretary of War Edward Stanton, a radical Republican, actively worked against the President's reconstruction policies so Johnson asked him to resign. He refused, citing the Tenure of Office Act so Johnson suspended him.

79. Lots one and two were purchased from Samuel Aungst in South Vinton. The warranty deed vested them in Sarah's name and the deed was recorded 31 July 1866. This purchase was discovered by their then 14-year-old grandson Blaine Whipple of Vinton, whoses father James E. was county Recorder. Blaine found the deed when hunting among old records in the Recorder's office. *Vinton Eagle*, Vinton, Iowa, 31 December 1897.
80. O'Donnell, 138.
81. Lute paid Peter and Umelia J. Labedie, husband and wife, $350 for the South West quarter of the South West quarter of Section 16, Township 17 South of Range 24, East of the Sixth Principal Meridian in Kansas containing forty acres with the appurtenances, and all the estate, title, and interest of the sellers. The deed was dated 28 Dec. 1868 and recorded the next day. Miami County, Kansas Deed Record Book P, 112-13. Miami county is south of Kansas City, Mo. and borders the Missouri border. The county seat Paola is 54 miles southeast of Topeka. Today, U.S. high-ways 69 and 169 traverse the county from north to south. $350.00 in 1868 is the equivalent of $4,619.00 in 2005 dollars and $350.00 in 2005 would have equaled $26.52 in 1868. An acre that sold for $1.25 in 1868 would cost $15.70 in 2003. *Inflation Factor.*
82. F. G. Adams, compiler and publisher, *The Homestead Guide for Kansas and Nebraska*. Waterville, Kansas, 1873, 112.
83. The covered wagon, drawn by a team of horses or hardy oxen, was the most practical and economical means of travel. They were tightly packed with the provisions needed to sustain the family on the journey;: household utensils—skillets, kettles, pewter dishware—; lanterns, churns, cookstoves, and linens; farming implements such as axes, hoes, saws, hammers, plow; guns and ammunition for hunting and personal protection; staples to set up house in Kansas—sugar, flour, salt, bacon, beans, yeast, and vinegar. They traveled by day and camped by night; meals were cooked over fire Indian fashion and a piece of oil cloth spread on the ground for a table.
84. Some train crews worked a scam with dishonest restaurant owners. Passengers paid 50 cents in advance for a meal. As soon as it was brought the all-aboard sounded and the travelers scrambled onto the coach, food virtually untouched. That same food was brought out for the next passengers and the train crew was paid a dime a head. "How Good Food and Harvey 'Skirts' Won the West," *Smithsonian*, September 1987, 130-31.
85. The fear of Indians was still very real. The year the Whipples moved to Kansas, Black Kettle and the Cheyenne were defeated by Gen. Philip H. Sheridan by the Washita river in Indian territory. The Kiowa, Comanche, Arapahoe, and Cheyenne fought the Red River Wars of 1874 and 1875. The Sioux, Cheyenne, and Arapahoe led by Sitting Bull and Crazy Horse defeated Col. George Custer's 7th Cavalry at Little Big Horn June 25, 1876.
86. Kansas soil was deep and fertile requiring only moderate care and skill to raise good crops. In 1865 the 15 most productive states averaged 37 bushel per acre of Indian corn while Kansas produced 41. In 1869 the largest yield per acre other than Kansas (48) was Vermont with 34. Only Michigan and Vermont exceeded Kansas in the yield of potatoes per acre: 149 in Kansas, 155, Michigan, 160, Vermont. Prof. Charles R. Tuttle, *A New Centennial History of the State of Kansas*. Published by the Inter-State Book Company, Madison, Wisc. and Lawrence, Kans., 1976, 29.
87. When the main stem of the witching rod bent strongly toward the ground, the spot was marked and a well dug.
88. The 1870 Township population of 721 included 393 males and 328 females. They came

from Illinois, 87, Ohio, 67, Indiana, 58, Pennsylvania, 57, Missouri, 55, Virginia, 33, North Carolina, 23, Iowa, 18, New York, 16, with lesser numbers from Kentucky, Tennessee, Maryland, Michigan, Wisconsin, Connecticut, Louisiana, Vermont, Nebraska, New Jersey, Georgia, and Kansas. *1870 Federal Census for Kansas, Middle Creek Township*, taken in July by C. H. Giller, Assistant Marshal. [Hereafter *Middle Creek Census.*]

89. $1,600.00 in 1870 would equal $22,180.00 in 2005 dollars. *Inflation Factor.*
90. $700.00 in 1870 would equal $9,704.00 in 2005 dollars. *Inflation Factor.*
91. $401. in 1870 would equal $5,291.00 in 2003 dollars. *Inflation Factor.*
92. $250.00 in 1870 is the equivalent of $3,466,00 in 2005 dollars. *Inflation Factor.*
93. Kansas did not require compulsory school attendance until 1874.
94. Male heads of farm household ranged in age from 20 to 74; farm wives from 17 to 73. There were five widowers among the farmers, all with children. There were two female heads of farm households: a 43-year-old native of Ohio with five children (one in school) and a 55-year-old native of Ireland with four children, none in school. There were three bachelor farmers, a 22-year-old Iowa native whose farm was valued at $4,800.00 and $400.00 of personal property (2005 equivalent, $66,540.00 and $5,545.00); a 28-year-old native of Ireland with a $3,000.00 farm and $650.00 in personal property ($41,587.00 and $9,011.00); and a 40-year-old native of Penn. with a $2,000.00 farm and $600.00 in personal property ($27,725.00 and $8,317.00). Middle Creek Census.
95. *Middle Creek Census.*
96. Pawpaw—fruit with yellow flesh; related to custard apples; grown on a small tree with oblong leaves native to the eastern United States.
97. *Middle Creek Census*, line 35 and 36, page 12.
98. Between 1888-92, half of the population of western Kansas left. Wagons carried the ominous legend, "In God We Trusted, In Kansas We Busted." The depressions of 1873 and 1893 devastated farmers and in their fight for survival they went from ow-ners to tenants after accepting the harsh terms of loan sharks and corporations. By 1890, 25% of Kansas farmers were tenants or share croppers. Sean Dennis Cashman, *America In The Gilded Age*, New York University Press, New York & London, 1984, 282.
99. *Miami County Deed Records, Book U*, pages 176-77. In 2005 dollars, $800.00 equals $11,090.00. *Inflation Factor.*
100. The legal description is Lot 33 in the Town of Eugene, Vermillion County, Indiana,. Deed *Records, Book 23*, page 418. The 2005 value would be $5,107.00 *Inflation Factor.* He sold the home to Henry R. Strum in 1876.
101. The Patent is a certificate which identifies a parcel of land, confirms the details of the land transfer, date, place, and acts as the written proof of ownership. It is the same as a deed and applies to the original transfer of land from a king, governor, colony, state, and since 1787 the U.S. government. The definition of a Patent Right Agent in 1871 is difficult to ascertain. However, the following might be an appropriate definition. Anyone whose business it is to sell or offer for sale activities in connection with recording of deeds, transferring property rights in Patents and Trade Marks including the actual recording of such deeds, the verification of the records, searches of titles of deeds affecting Patents or applications for sales, the furnishing of Abstracts of Titles and briefs, the noting of assignment on the files for the information of the office in its further activities of the case and for issuing to the assignee and the furnishing of certified printed copies of patents, designees, and trade marks. Gustavus A. Weber, *The Patent Office, Its History, Activities, and Organization*, John Hopkins Press, Baltimore, MD, 1924, 48.
102. The panic of 1873 caused by the collapse of the greatly overextended railroads began a prolonged depression. By 1877 20% of the labor force was unemployed; 40% only worked six to seven months annually; and only 20% worked regularly.

103. He was also authorized to repair the approaches to the bridge in 1887. O'Donnell, 120.
104. O'Donnell, 29, 120, 123, 368.
105. The town was unincorporated until 1882. This meant there were no ordinances to regulate anything and no law enforcement officers. It voted to incorporate on 2 May 1892 and shortly thereafter built a sturdy calaboose nine feet square. Each window had iron bars as did the heavy oak entry door. "Clouse" Sheward, a Eugene desperado with a continuous record of in and out of various prisons around the middle west, tried to get out by setting it on fire but didn't succeed. "Clouse" was probably kin to Ezekiel Sheward. After the town dissolved its corporate existence, it sold the calaboose for $25.38 ($485.00 in 2005 dollars). O'Donnell, 122-23. *Inflation Factor.*
106. The equivalent cost in 2005 dollars would be $3.08, $5.13, and $7.18. *Infla-tion Factor.*
107. The productions were staged in the Methodist Church before the Eugene Opera House was built in 1886. O'Donnell, 81- 83.
108. *Vermillion County, Indiana*, 286. There was a Family Temperance Pledge popular about this time. It featured an ornate drawing with a sketch of a mother and father and two children with an open bible. Following are its 12 principles: 1) Moderate drinking tends to drunkenness, while total abstinence directly from it. 2) While no one means to become a drunkard, there is said to be over 600,000 confirmed drunkards in our country today. 3) Intoxicating drinks can do no good as a beverage, and there are always safer and surer remedies to use in case of sickness. 4) The idea of moderation is full of deceit, and our estimate of the power of our own will is usually a mistaken one. 5) The drinking habit is the cause of the larger portion of the misery, poverty, and crime in our land. 6) Both science and experience prove that even moderate drinking is injurious to health. 7) External interests are often forfeited through drink, for the Bible declares that no drunkard shall enter heaven. 8) The Bible pronounces no blessing upon drinking, but many upon total abstinence. 9) It is easier to keep a pledge publicly, solemnly given than a simple resolution. 10) The pledge protects us from the solicitation of friends and removes us from the temptations of the saloon. 11) Persons miscalculate their ability to drink in moderation, and become slaves to the drinking habit before they are aware of it. 12) Intemperance obstructs civilization, education, religion, and every useful reform. The pledge ended with the following in all caps: BELIEVING IT TO BE BETTER FOR ALL, WE THE UNDERSIGNED SOLEMNLY PROMISE, BY THE HELP OF GOD, TO ABSTAIN FROM THE USE OF ALL INTOXICATING DRINKS AS A BEVERAGE. This was followed by signature lines. The pledge was to be prominently displayed in the home.
109. The School was located at intersecting roads. The *Cayuga Herald* commented as follows about the sale of the old school house. "The selling of the old school houses in this Township and elsewhere is of more than passing interest. It is a new experience. One by one they are being abandoned, and in a short time after they are abandoned the Tustees offer them for sale. These school houses have been the nucleus of the community, often times giving a name to the neighborhood. Aside from the scenes and experiences in the historic little schoolhouse, the real school where "lickin" and "larning" took turn about, there were other happenings of sacred memory clinging to the old school house. There were the spelling matches, the suppers, the singings, the prayer meetings—all neighborhood social and religious gatherings for the betterment and the building together of the community – where good times were had, where incidents happened that will be remembered by the participants as long as life lasts. O'Donnell, 97, 103.
110. 409 million acres were settled and 189 million cultivated between 1607 and 1870; 430 million acres settled and 225 million cultivated between 1870 and 1900. Cashman, 268.
111. It was created by the sculptor Frederic Auguste Bartholdi and motivated New York

poet Emma Lazarus, moved by the plight of the bedraggled Jewish refugees fleeing Russian pogroms of 1881, to write the sonnet, "The New Colossus" in which she called the Statute of Liberty the "Mother of Exiles:

Give me your tired, your poor,
Your huddled masses yeaning to breathe free,
The wretched refuse of your teeming shore.
Send these, the homeless, tempest-tost to me,
I lift my lamp beside the golden door!

112. E. Ambrose, *Nothing Like It in the World: The Men Who Built the Transcontinental Railroad, 1863-1869,* Simon & Schuster,
113. Cashman, 267.
114. Alexander Graham Bell obtained his patent in 1876.
115. A system of telegraphy in which four messages could be sent simultaneously over one wire, two in either direction.
116. Six messages sent simultaneously.
117. Oregon had a contested vote caused by Democratic Governor LaFayette Grover's attempt to substitute a Tilden elector for a Hayes elector based on a constitutional technicality. However, both Parties acknowledged that Hayes had won the state.
118. Sigmund Spaeth, *A History of Popular Music in America*, Random House, New York and Toronto (1948), 138, 147-8, 153-4, 156-7, 159-61, 166, 170, 173-4, 177, 193, 196, 198, 202-6, 210.
119. In 2005, $4.00 would equal $79.21, $6.00 $123.15, and $12.00 $246.30. *Inflation Factor*
120. Notice of her death appears in the *Herald*, Cayuga, Ind. of 2 July 1898 and the *Eagle* of Vinton, Iowa of 5 July 1898.
121. Ida Husted Harper, *The Life and Work of Susan B. Antthony*, 2 vols. (Indianapolis: Hollenbeck, 1898); Susan B. Anthony, Elizabeth Cady Stanton, and Matilda Joslyn Gage, eds, *History of Woman Suffrage*, vol. 3 (Rochester, Minn: 1886); Press Release; John Stuart Mill, *The Subjection of Women* (London: Longmans, 1869), 217.
122. The newspaper report said it was not known which of two freight trains may have hit him., The first one, local south bound, arrived at the Newport depot at 10:30 a.m.; the next one with about 70 cars at 11:35 a.m. The Conductor of this train found him about 40 yards east of the road crossing near the C & E I track unconscious. He placed him on the train and brought him to Newport where he died at 12:25. No one was able to identify him until Wm. M. Shelato, the buss driver, arrived there for the 12:18 mail train going south. He recognized him a few moments before he breathed his last. He never spoke after he was hurt. *The Hoosier State*, Newport, Indiana, 18 May 1904, p. 1.

    According to a letter to Blaine Whipple from Frank Fultz, Lute's grandson who lived in Eugene, dated at Cayuga, Ind. 26 May 1955, Lute was murdered and robbed "by a Harry Shelby who had been convicted 'of a terrible deed,' who before dying in the electric chair, confessed to murdering Lute." The author has unsuccessfully tried to confirm this contention. The Indiana state prison does not have a record of a Shelby or any other individual confession to murdering Lute. Fultz' letter is in possession of Whipple in 2005.
123. *Herald*, Cayuga, Ind., 14 and 21 May 1904. He is buried in Lot 52.
124. Lute was born 6 Feb. 1834 and died 13 May 1904. The following were President during his life span: Andrew Jackson, Martin Van Buren, William Henry Harrison, John Tyler, James Knox Polk, Zachary Taylor, Millard Fillmore, Franklin Pierce, James Buchanan, Abraham Lincoln, Andrew Johnson, Ulysses S. Grant, Rutherford B. Hayes, James A. Garfield, Chester A. Arthur, Grover Cleveland, Benjamin Harrison, William McKinley, and Theodore Roosevelt.

CHAPTER FIFTEEN

JAMES E. WHIPPLE AND ELLEN THOMPSON

James[9] Whipple *(Lucien[8], Enoch[7], Nehemiah[6], Benjamin[5], Francis[4], Jonathan[3], Joseph[2], Matthew[1], Matthew[A]) was born 3 September 1857, died 14 May 1914, married Ellen Thompson 1 April 1881 at Georgetown, Vermilion Co., Illinois. He was an insurance and real estate broker and newspaper editor and publisher. He served in Cuba during the Spanish-American War and was active in Republican politics in Benton Co., Iowa where he served as County Recorder. He retired as a Major in the Iowa National Guard.*

James E. **Whipple** and Ellen **Thompson** had the following child born in Eugene, Indiana:

i. Lucien Blaine Whipple, born 22 June 1883 and married (1) Lillian Neva LeFebre in 1908 in Beaty, Kansas and (2) Pearl Julia Scott in 1927 in Albion, Nebraska

Lucien R. Whipple was 20 when he joined other family members in the move from Eugene, Indiana to Benton county, Iowa in 1854. He returned to Eugene in the fall of 1856 to marry Sarah Sheward, 21, on October 26. They returned to Iowa and set up house-keeping in Benton county. The oldest of their five children, James Ezekiel, was born September 3, 1857 on a farm southeast of Vinton, Iowa. His middle name honors his mother's father, Ezekiel Sheward. After his brother Edmond was born (1859),[1] the family moved back to Eugene where siblings Frank (abt 1861), Anna (abt 1862), and Clara (date unknown) were born.[2] Clara died at an early age and is buried in Lot 52 in the Eugene Cemetery. Lucien, who died May 13, 1904, was buried in the same lot.

Jim was born just after the outbreak of the Panic of 1857[3] which began August 24, 1857 and was one of the most severe economic crises in U.S. history. Grain prices fell, railroads over-built and defaulted on debts, and banks collapsed. The Panic had parallels in Europe, South America, South Africa, and the Far East and it became the first world-wide economic crisis.[4]

Jim's early years spanned the Civil War and he and his siblings were without a father for the approximately 34 months Lucien was in the Union Army. He was about a month shy of 5 when his father was mus-

tered into the 71st Indiana Infantry (later Indiana 6th Cavalry) and approximately two months shy of 8 when the war ended and his father returned home. It must have been trying on Sarah raising children ranging in age from 5 to newly born Anna by herself. Fortunately her parents and 12 siblings lived in the Eugene area and were probably of great help. Lucien was home on furlough November 1, 1864, possibly to attend Clara's funeral. Jim and Ed had been enrolled in the Eugene Sunday School by then and attended with some of their Sheward cousins.[5]

Jim was 12 (early 1869) when the family moved to Middle Creek Township in Miami county, Kansas where his father took up farming. During that two-year period he and Ed would have developed into productive farm hands and been of major help to their father. After their second crop, which was significantly less than their initial crop, the family quit the Kansas farm and returned to Eugene.

The children did not attend school during their brief time in Kansas but upon their return to Eugene all but James were enrolled in the Eugene School beginning with the 1872-3 year.[6] The October 1873 honor roll included Edmond, 14, Frank, 12, and Anna, 11. Two years of high school were included in the curriculum.[7]

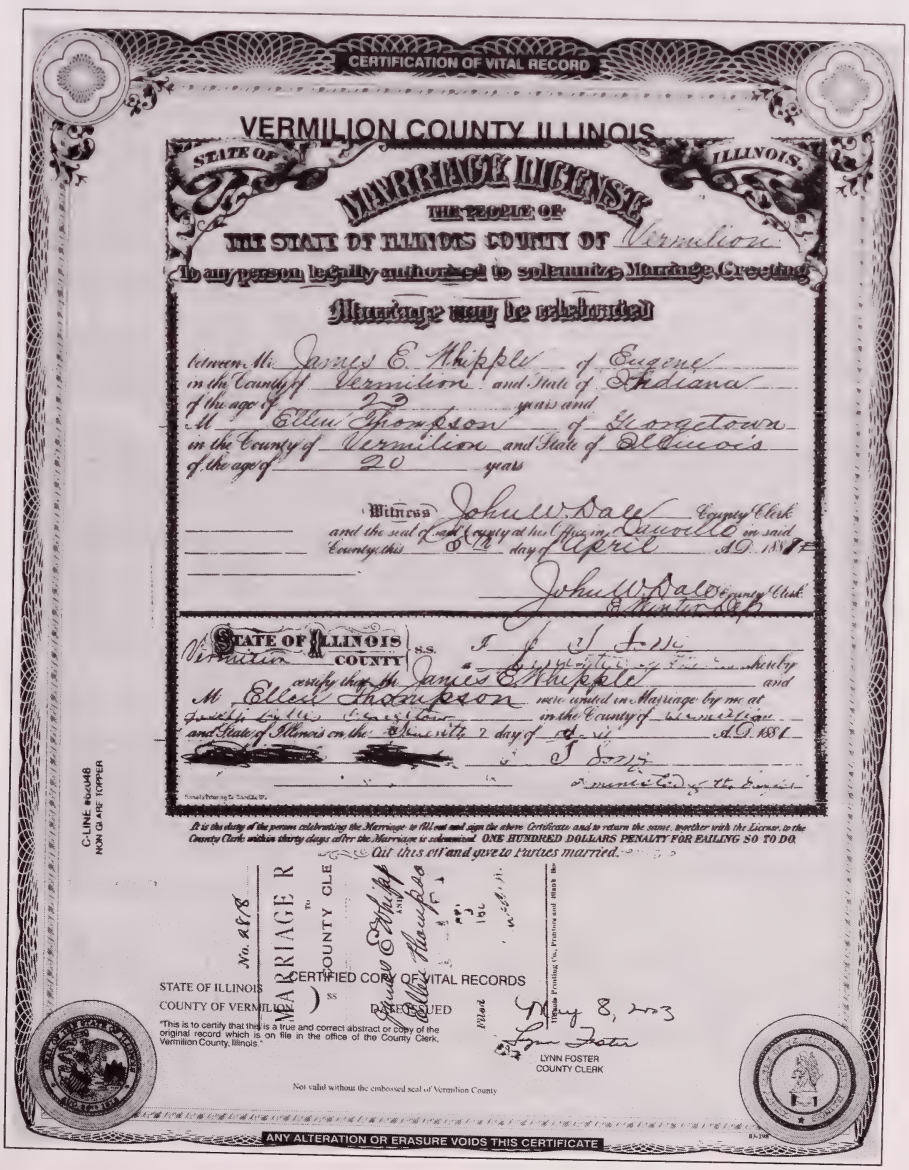
At 15 (1872), Jim began clerking in a drug store at Bethel, Illinois. It was a time when only drugs, patent medicines, and toilet articles were sold. Behind the prescription counter were rows of white medicine jars with their mystical inscriptions. Cosmetics were not an important product. Rice powder and maybe rouge was the limit for most self-respecting ladies. The tall glass bottles filled with red and green liquids in the window were as orthodox a sign for drug stores as the striped pole for a barbership. At the front of the store was the soda fountain. Most fountains were made of onyx, marble, metal, and glass with silver-plate spigots, Grecian columns, and miniature statutes of scantily-clad goddesses. The name soda jerk came from jerking the fountain handles forward to make the soda water spray. Standard flavors were chocolate, lemon, and sarsaparilla along with less common delights liked almond, claret, and wintergreen.[8] There were no sandwiches, ice cream, or fruit mixtures. The first innovations were milk shakes and egg phosphates and from this humble beginning the repertoire of the later soda fountains, reaching nearly the length of the store, evolved

He returned to Eugene in 1882 where he was a bookkeeper for H. O. Peters[9] and a Notary Public. At that time Eugene was the smallest town in the county in both population and land area. but not in personal property valuation. The township included 33 square miles with a population of 1,340, and a personal property valuation of $680,870. The latter exceeded that of nearby Clinton with a population of 3,000 and a valua-

tion of $643,675. The county's two main agricultural crops were corn and wheat[10] and this prompted him to become a grain dealer. He later added insurance to his business and sold crop and hail policies.[11]

MARRIES ELLEN THOMPSON

While in Bethel he began courting Ellen Thompson who lived in Ridgefarm, Vermilion county, Illinois.[12] She was born January 7, 1859 in Ellwood Township, daughter of John W. and Rebecca (Campbell) Thomp-


CERTIFICATION OF VITAL RECORD

VERMILION COUNTY ILLINOIS

STATE OF ILLINOIS.

MARRIAGE LICENSE

THE PEOPLE OF

THE STATE OF ILLINOIS COUNTY OF Vermilion

To any person legally authorized to solemnize Marriage, Greeting

Marriage may be celebrated

between Mr. James E. Whipple of Eugene in the County of Vermilion and State of Indiana of the age of 23 years and Mr. Ellen Thompson of Georgetown in the County of Vermilion and State of Illinois of the age of 20 years

Witness John W. Dale County Clerk and the seal of said County at his Office in Danville in said County this 8th day of April A.D. 1881

John W. Dale County Clerk
E. Winter Dep.

STATE OF ILLINOIS
Vermilion COUNTY S.S.

I, J. J. Long, a Justice of the Peace hereby certify that Mr. James E. Whipple and Mr. Ellen Thompson were united in Marriage by me at Georgetown in the County of Vermilion and State of Illinois on the Twenty day of April A.D. 1881

[redacted]

J. J. Long
Administrator of the Deceased

It is the duty of the person celebrating the Marriage to fill out and sign the above Certificate and to return the same, together with the License, to the County Clerk within thirty days after the Marriage is solemnized. ONE HUNDRED DOLLARS PENALTY FOR FAILING SO TO DO.

Cut this off and give to Parties married.

No. 2818

MARRIAGE R
TO
COUNTY CLE

James E. Whipple
and
Ellen Thompson

Filed

Dated

Illinois Printing Co., Printers and Blank Bks.

CERTIFIED COPY OF VITAL RECORDS

STATE OF ILLINOIS
COUNTY OF VERMILION SS

DATE ISSUED May 8, 2003

"This is to certify that this is a true and correct abstract or copy of the original record which is on file in the office of the County Clerk, Vermilion County, Illinois."

Lynn Foster
LYNN FOSTER
COUNTY CLERK

Not valid without the embossed seal of Vermilion County

ANY ALTERATION OR ERASURE VOIDS THIS CERTIFICATE

C-LINE #62048
NON GLARE TOPPER

son.[13] Jim and Ellen decided to marry and received their license on April 5, 1881 at the court house in Danville, the county seat.[14] He was 23, Ellen was 21. They were married in Georgetown two days later at the home of Mr. Joseph Bailey.[15] The *Danville Weekly News* of April 15 referred to James as "esquire." It also characterized the wedding as an elopement, writing that "Rev. Joseph Long is responsible for the elopement." The article noted that "The couple left immediately for Eugene."[16]

They were probably back in Danville on May 16 to see The GREAT FOREPAUGH SHOW, a 2-ring circus featuring 20 trained elephants "including two woolly elephants never before exhibited." Also featured in this "GREATEST, GRANDEST PAGEANT" was "Zuila, the female Blondin (tightrope walker)[17] wheeling her baby across a 3/4 inch wire 100 feet in mid air riding a Velocipede[18] and crossing blindfolded the same high wire."[19]

According to the 1850 federal census of Illinois John, 33, and Rebecca, 28, Thompson with daughters Mary, 4, and Margaret, 1, were living in Vermilion county.[20] They owned land in Lot three of School Land in section 30, township 17 north of range 10 west and sold 10 acres of this land to Jesse Jones for $385.00 on October 5, 1855.[21]

They were in Ellwood Township with Ridgefarm as their Post Office in 1860. Three more daughters and a son had been born by the time of that census: Martha, 7, Mahala, 5, Malissa, 1, (this would be Ellen) and Jacob, 7 months. Malissa was known as Ellen throughout her adult years. She was identified as Ellen M. in the 1910 Iowa federal census. When the author's youngest sister Mary Ann (Whipple) McPherson was informed about her grandmother being named Malissa she said that their father had told her he wanted to name her Melissa but her mother preferred Mary Ann. She named her youngest daughter Melissa.

John was missing from the 1870 census which recorded Margaret, Mahala, Malissa, and Jacob living with Rebecca. He died between August 12, 1869 when he purchased 12 and a half acres of land in Vermilion county from David and Jane Maddock for $125.00 and August 5, 1870. Rebecca was head of the Thompson household on that date when the family was counted by the census taker.[22] According to the 1880 census, only daughter Mahala, a granddaughter Mamie Thompson 11 months old, and Julia Meeks, 11, an adopted daughter, were living with her.[23]

When the author's oldest sister Elaine (Whipple) West asked their father about his Thompson grandparents he responded by letter: "Mother was born in Ridgefarm, Illinois. Her mother died in 1888.[24] I have a dim remembrance of my grandmother and her funeral. Her father had been dead many years. She also had a sister who died in Sullivan, Indiana in the 1890s."[25]

James E., Blaine, and Ellen Whipple. About 1890.

The Mamie Thompson listed as a granddaughter in Rebecca's home in the 1880 census began living with the James and Ellen Whipple family in Vinton, Iowa in 1897. An 1899 news article in a Vinton, Iowa newspaper identified Mamie as an orphan whose parents had died in Sullivan, Indiana leaving her to care for herself. She was identified as "a niece of Mrs. J. E. Whipple who had lived with the Whipple family for nearly two years."[26]

Jim and Ellen's only child, Lucien Blaine, was born in Eugene June 22, 1883. His middle name was in honor of Sen. James G. Blaine of Maine, a prominent Republican on the national scene. He was always known as Blaine. Jim was elected Justice of the Peace of Eugene in 1884 and served as Deputy Prosecuting Attorney for a short time. He was Assistant Treasurer[27] of the Eugene Joint Stock Fair Association which was organized in 1886. It held its first fair that September. He was also Secretary of the Cayuga (Ind.) Building and Loan Association.[28]

Blaine Whipple, Eugene, Indiana.

A Total Abstinence Society was organized in February 1886 with Jim as Secretary and his father Lucien Vice President. Members were known as "reformed roosters," indicating they must have previously imbibed.[29] He was Secretary of the Eugene Decoration Day Committee (same as Memorial Day today) and served on its Music Committee. His father was head of the Program Committee (1887).[30]

When Jim and Ellen were married there were no chain grocery stores with smart packaged goods or cases for frozen foods and cooled drinks and refrigerated items and in-store bakeries and large produce and meat sections and all the other items we associate today with the super market.

The grocery store Ellen and Jim patronized had long narrow rooms with counters on both sides with wooded bins behind the counters. Everything sold in bulk was in bins: tea, coffee, dried peaches, beans, rice, dried peas, cornmeal, flour, prunes, oatmeal, dried apples, etc. Salt, pepper,

cinnamon, cloves, allspice, and nutmegs were kept in smaller receptacles. In front of the counter was an open row of tubs or kegs, tipped forward for easy access, with butter, pickles, salt mackerel, fine cut chewing tobacco, etc. Cracker barrels were at the back of the store along with a huge barrel stove and a high desk where the grocer kept his accounts. At the end of the long counter, in a cage of fine wire netting, was high American cheese. On shelves near the front window were rows of glass canisters with tin covers containing stick candy, stick licorice, peppermint candies, chocolate drops, and gum drops.

Each purchase involved a distinct operation. A sheet of paper was laid on a scale and a scoop was used to move whatever was being purchased onto the scale pan, wrapped, and tied with a string. If the product was dried peaches, crackers or loaf sugar, the grocer used his hands, grabbing a handful from the bin and dropping them in the pan, more and more slowly, until the desired weight was reached. Pickles, butter, and other moist products were ladled into a small wooden boat, a piece of thin paper stuck on top, and wrapped like the rest. Molasses and vinegar were drawn into the customer's own brown jugs and plugged with a corn cob; light brown for vinegar, dark for molasses. The barrels were easily recognized by the flies that covered the gallon measure which stood beneath the spigot of the molasses barrel. There were a few canned goods of unknown origin but Ellen would have felt disgraced using them as they were emergency rations, a sign her larder was empty.

Meat was sold separate from the general store and came from slaughter houses on the edge of town. Sides of beef, pork, and mutton were delivered to the butcher who dressed it and made his own sausage. Prices were low with a prime rib roast selling for 10¢ a pound. Neither Jim or Ellen probably ever saw a lobster or an oyster on the half shell. Oysters came in square tin boxes, small but excellent for stews, and were the mainstay of church suppers in winter.[31]

Steak was pounded on a board with a mallet to make it tender. Oatmeal and beans were soaked overnight, cabbage slaw was chopped in a huge wooden bowl with a chopping knife, and butter and milk were hung down the well to keep them cool. Chickens had to be plucked and cleaned before they could be cooked. There was no baking powder so biscuits were raised with saleratus[32] mixed with vinegar. There was no granulated sugar and coffee was bought green and roasted in a dripping pan.

Chores filled Ellen's waking hours and included washing clothes, making beds, emptying the slops, cooking, cleaning, mending, darning, and baking. Today's housewife would not believe the energy Ellen exerted in lifting scuttles of coal, buckets of water, iron pots, and kettles. Clothes were washed with soap, water, and elbow grease; dishes with a rag; floors

with a mop or scrubbing brush; and furniture was dusted with a cloth or turkey wing. Washday was frequently distinguished by a peculiar odor of soap mixed with cabbage—the hot fire to boil the clothes was also used to prepare a boiled dinner.[33]

Life in Eugene was routine. People rose with the sun and retired with its setting. Breakfast was at 6:30 or 7. Even professional men and proprietors were in their offices or stores before 8. All went home to a noon dinner. Supper was at 6:30. Entertainment began by 8 or earlier. For the early hours after dark they used a saucer of lard oil with a cotton flannel wick, a device almost identical with Roman lamps dug up at Pompeii. Housewives also made candles, dipping them or shaping them in molds, which produced less than one candlepower of light. Eventually the store sold better candles and sticks to hold them and chimneys to protect the flickering flame. After kerosene arrived lamps and lamp chimneys improved. Then came the Argand Burner[34] with circular wick from which evolved the student lamp that gave a steadier and clearer light. Study, work, and social life were limited by the short radius of light.[35]

Games were played at parties and simple refreshments were served. Euchre and cinque (high five) were the popular card games. It was the era of family life. Young people brought their friends home for taffy-pulls, coasting and skating parties, straw rides, etc. Men played draw poker in the back rooms of saloons.

There were no architects until the 1890s and houses were designed by the carpenters who built them. Most were story and a half with parlor, sitting room, dining room, and kitchen. Instead of a serving pantry usually there was a large store room off the kitchen called the buttery. There was either a small side or front porch as this was the transition between the porch-less houses of the pioneers who didn't have time to sit on them and the age of greater leisure. Central heating was a novelty and upstairs rooms were unheated. Dressing in cold rooms was not considered a hardship. Fuel was hard wood and soft coal until the railroad brought anthracite when a hard coal base burner became the chief heating plant and a register in the ceiling allowed some heat to the chamber above.[36]

FOUNDS THE *JOURNAL* IN CAYUGA, INDIANA

Sometime prior to 1887 Jim worked for the Clinton *Argus*[37] writing Eugene news and a column entitled "The Old JEW" (James E. Whipple). When the Clinton *Siftings* ceased publication in May 1887 Jim purchased its equipment and type and founded the *Cayuga Journal* in Cayuga, Indiana on May 14, 1887 with John Wigley as typesetter and financial help from H.O. Peters, his former employer.[38]

The *Cayuga Journal* was a six column paper with pages one and four boilerplate[39] and pages two and three hand set type of local news items and advertising.[40] It was published on Saturdays. As editor-publisher, Jim said the paper would be "independent in all things and neutral in nothing." He included a number of opinion columns in the initial issue including:

"We expect to make the *Cayuga Journal* a purely local paper devoted to the interests of Cayuga, Eugene, and the surrounding country. Partisan opinions will not be allowed to enter its columns, although the editor's devotion to his Party is as firm as ever, and personally he will work for the success of that Party. We invite short, spicy locals from contributors, but long-winded articles from verbose contributors to be assigned to the privacy of the waste basket. In short, we intend to make a first class local paper. We will be greatly pleased to receive the approbation of the public, and if you can give us a certificate of approbation in the shape of a one dollar bill we will be still greater pleased and will also send you the *Journal* for one year.

WHAT THE *JOURNAL* WOULD LIKE TO SEE

A carriage factory at Cayuga. A paper mill at Cayuga. A canning factory at Cayuga. A Union Depot. The narrow-gauge railroad changed to a standard gauge. Two-thousand cash subscribers to the *Journal*. If you want your town to improve, improve it. If you want to make your town lively, make it. Don't go to sleep, but wake up and work for it. Push. Get in, advertise it, talk about it, and talk favorably. If you have any property, improve it. Paint your houses, clean up your back yards. Make your surroundings pleasant, and you will feel better and your property will be worth more dollars in the market.

The following comment in the original issue must have been the motivating factor to begin the newspaper:

> More building is now going on in Cayuga and Eugene than in all the other towns in the county. It shows conclusively that this is soon to be the leading place in the county. In Eugene, Dr. Kinderman is building a large and commodious barn. H.D. Sprague is adding another story to his building. Dan Sollars erected a new dwelling and Albert Fultz just finished a new house. Six new buildings are under construction in Cayuga with plans for 50 buildings to be built during the summer.[41]

Advertisers in the first issue: *Dr. W.D. Paterson*. Dealer in drugs, patent

medicines, druggist sundries, paints and oils, dye stuffs, fancy articles and brushes, Prescriptions carefully compounded Day or Night." *C.W. Simpson.* Pure whiskey, brandies, cigars and tobacco, and fresh Milwaukee beer. *The Eugene Milling Company.* High grade Fuller Roller process flour. *Nixon & Cates.* Agents for Empire Binders, Droppers, Mowers, and Advance Threshers and Engines. *Cayuga's Junction Hotel.* Boarding by the week, day, or meal. *H.O. Peters* was "Giving away 500 Palm Leaf Fans" as a promotion to induce customers to shop at his store; *Watson and Fultz.* Hardware, jewelry, furniture, and implements." Their line of implements included "The celebrated Wood Binder and Mower, Hoosier Grain Drills, Chieftain Sulky Rakes, Evans Harrower, The Snyder Farm Wagons, John Deere, Grand Des Tour and Perue City Breaking Plows and Cultivators.

Peters of Eugene also advertised "cheese cloths, 5c; muslin, 5c; gingham, 8 1/3 to 12 1/2c; white dress goods, 8 1/2, 10, 12, & 15c; kid walking shoes, 75c, $1 & $1.50; straw hats for men and boys in spring styles in still and crush hats, $1, $1.25, & $2; canned corn, 10, 12 1/2, & 15c; 4 cans of California peaches, $1. His ad proclaimed: "We can and will sell goods as cheap as any place for the money. We pay no rents, buy goods in large quantities for two stores and pay cash for them, and offer credit to customers. When you have a dollar to spend, don't think I don't know it. We will appreciate your cash too. Country Produce Taken In Exchange For Goods."

Despite Jim's high hopes and optimism the merchants of Cayuga and Eugene were not yet ready to support a newspaper and he ceased publication seven months later (December 1887). He resumed publication the following spring but soon gave it up again.[42]

LAUNCHESTHE *JOURNAL* IN SIDELL, ILLINOIS

Ever the entrepreneur, at age 30 he moved his 29-year-old wife and 5-year-old son to Sidell, Illinois and began publishing another weekly newspaper. Sidell was a small town just over the county line in Vermilion county. A number of Sidell's prominent men including the Honorable John Sidell, Postmaster J.G. Clark, Star Mill owner J.W. Orr, farm machinery dealer C.W. Forbes, dry goods and grocery merchant J.L. Jackson, and others promised him their support. He rented space in the depot building and printed the paper on a Washington Hand Press.[43]

The first issue of the *Sidell Journal* was distributed to homes and businesses in town and surrounding area on May 26, 1888. It was an 8-page folio[44] which included ready print[45] out of Chicago and local news and advertising. It was politically non partisan. Locals credited the newspaper as a chief reason for the town's growth.[46] However, for reasons unknown

to the author, Jim sold the paper three months later to Charles A. Wright of Sidell and moved his family to Vinton, Benton County Iowa, the place of his birth.

In 1986 Sidell's Historical Society opened a museum in the town's old print shop and Linda Rosnett, then owner of the *Journal,* wrote the author asking for pictures and background on the newspaper's founder to be included in the museum. The author sent a photo of Jim, Ellen, and Blaine and a background story on the family to be published in the *Journal* and placed in the new museum.

On July 28, 1888, the Sidell Methodists began builting a new church and Jim placed a hand-written letter in the Cornerstone with information on the founding of the *Journal* and personal family details. The letter ended with a request it be given to his nearest relative when the cornerstone was opened 100 years later. The Church was destroyed by fire in the mid 1980s and when the Cornerstone was opened, all items emerged intact. Jim's letter was printed in the county genealogical society's quarterly publication in the hope of locating a descendant. When there was no response it was placed in the Church's new Cornerstone. Bill D. Palmer, Chair of the Cornerstone Committee, photocopied the letter in case a descendant might eventually appear.

In 1985 the author wrote to Lucile McDowell, librarian of the Sidell District library, seeking information on his grandfather and was informed about his 1888 letter and put in contact with Mr. Palmer who sent the author a copy[47] whose contents follow:

Sidell, Ill. July 28, 1888. To Whom It May Concern:

Knowing that when this is read after having been placed in the corner stone of the M.E. Church today, I shall have passed from this world. I hereby give a short sketch of the Sidell Journal and of myself. The Journal was established in May of this year and the first number issued on the 26th day of that month, as a non-partisan paper. It was established through inducements offered me by the Hon. John Sidell, C.W. Forbes, J.W. Orr, Postmaster, and others.

My birth occurred on the 3rd day of Sept. 1857 (making me now nearly 31 years of age) near Vinton, Benton Co., Iowa. My parents removed to their old home at Eugene, Vemillion Co., Ind. in the fall of 1859. My father served three years in Co. K, 6th Ind. Cavalry, coming home as Q.M. Sergt. He commanded this Company on the memorable Stoneman Raid, sometimes known as the Macon (Ga.) Raid. We lived in Kansas near Paola, from 1868 to 1870 when we returned to Eugene. In 1872 I went into a drug store and clerked

most of the time until 1882. Was married to Ellen Thompson at Georgetown, Ill., April 7th 1881. Have one child, (a boy) born June 22, 1883, whose name is Lucien Blaine Whipple. Was bookkeeper, Insurance agent, and Notary Public several years. Was elected a Justice of the Peace in 1884. Established the Cayuga (Ind.) Journal May 14th 1887, which I run one year.

My father's name is Lucien R., the son of Enoch, who was the son of Aimiah, who was a brother of William and Abraham Whipple, both of whom were prominent officers in the Revolutionary War, the former being a signer of the Declaration of Independence and a General in the Army and the latter a Commodore in the Navy. Whoever finds this will confer a favor by sending it to my nearest relative.
/s/ James E. Whipple

Jim, like many people today with Whipple as a surname, proudly claim a close relationship to General William Whipple, a New Hampshire signer of the Declaration of Independence. Unlike most, he didn't claim to be a direct descendant, only a great grand nephew. General Whipple's only child, a son, died at age 1 so he has no descendants. Jim can, however, claim to be a distant cousin as both descend from Matthew Whipple (1560-1618), Clothier of Bocking, Essex county, England through his two sons Matthew and John who settled in Ipswich, Essex Co., Massachusetts in 1638. Jim was a great (7) grandson of Matthew through his son Matthew, and William was a great (2) grandson of Matthew through his son John. Jim's claim to be a great grand nephew of Commodore Abraham Whipple was also incorrect. The Commodore descended from a different line of Whipples—Capt. John Whipple who settled in Dorchester, Massachusetts in 1632 and later moved to Providence, Rhode Island. Commodore Whipple has no descendants bearing the Whipple name as his only son died a bachelor. He does have descendants through his daughters. Jim identified his great grandfather as Amiah. His name is Nehemiah Whipple.

MOVES TO VINTON, BENTON COUNTY, IOWA

Jim arrived in Vinton the end of September 1888 to visit his Whipple relatives and to assess the opportunities available to him were he to move his family there.[48] It was his first trip back in 29 years. He stayed with his uncle Cyrenius, who by then was one of the leading farmers in that section of Iowa. He also got acquainted with his uncle Henry and his married Whipple aunts Angeline McKinley, Eliza Kearns, and Luana

Edmonds, along with a host of cousins. By then, his cousin William P., Cyrenius's oldest son, had been practicing law and selling real estate in the county for many years and along with his brother Milo was an active member of the Republican party.[49] Apparently convinced Vinton would be a desirable new home for his family, he purchased his cousin's real estate business and moved Ellen and Blaine there.

Blaine Whipple, Vinton, Iowa.

Vinton's population at that time was estimated at 3,500 and the principal business streets, Jefferson, Washington, and Beckett, were lined with frame and brick buildings, mostly two stories high. It was a horse market of considerable importance with fine draft animals shipped east and west annually. Cattle shipments were even greater and hog exports were immense. The city water works were fed by artesian wells 1,300' deep with a capacity of 1.5 million gallons per day. Water piped from the Cedar river was used to fight fire. The Iowa State School for the Blind was established there in 1862 and the town had two graded schools and a small library. It was the county seat, home of the Benton County Agricultural Association, headquarters for the Order of Railway Telegraphers for North America, and the Tilford Collegiate Academy and Business University.[50]

It was also the home of the Watson Canning Factory which employed up to 400 on a 24-hour basis every fall. It canned sweet corn for wholesale distribution to principal cities in Kansas and Missouri. Washington Machine Company, which manufactured a washing machine with the brand name of Summit, located there in 1885. It sold to the wholesale and retail trade. There were two opera houses, the Crescent which seated 500, and The Watson with a capacity of 600, and the Ralyea House, a three-story brick hotel.[51] The City Council began investigating the possibility of electric service in June 1889.[52]

Jim began business in Vinton as J. E. Whipple & Co. dealing in the sale and exchange of real estate and personal property. His advertisement in the January 1, 1889 *Eagle*[53] noted his firm was "Successor to W. P. Whipple & Co." and wanted "all kinds of Personal Property and Real Estate including Stocks of Merchandise, Hotels, Mills, Farms, and Town Property to Sell or Exchange. Our facilities for making sales or trades are first-class as we have correspondents in all parts of the country. Office over Farmers' Land and Trust Company Bank." A news item in the paper identified him as a "cousin of W. P. Whipple and lately removed here from Indiana. Our citizens will find him a pleasant gentleman to do business with. Business entrusted to the firm will receive close attention."[54]

His advertisement of January 15 featured 24 properties for sale and trade. Included were town residences, farms, a blacksmith shop, store building, residential property in Cedar Rapids, and farm land in Nebraska. The ad stated he had lands for sale in almost every state in the Union and he could help his clients "in a jiffy." By March the business had expanded to include mortgages at 7% and 30-year-amortization and options "on a sure thing" in Pierre, the "permanent capital of South Dakota." The "sure thing options" were only available "for Ten Days."[55] Had he desired to do so, he could have attended the March inauguration of president-elect Benjamin Harrison. A round-trip train ticket from Vinton to Washington, D.C. was advertised for $24.95.[56]

The Whipple family raised part of their own food in the form of a garden, chickens, and pigs. It's possible some of these animals were given in payment for part of his brokerage fees. Jim advertised in the *Eagle* of August 20, 1889 that "two black pigs weighing 35 to 40 lbs each" had strayed from his place and offered "a suitable reward for them or their whereabouts." Ellen's fruit jars for canning were available from R.H. Quinn's Corner Grocery; Jim and Blaine's winter clothing from A.H. Wolf of Star One-Price Clothing House; if they needed a new buggy, Frank G. Ray had them on sale for $65 to $80; and they could see Miss Nellie Walters in "Criss Cross, the greatest of all comedies" for 25¢, 35¢, or 50¢ at the Opera House.[57]

Jim became an Agent for a large body of land in Renville and Clara City, Minnesota in August and advertised a land excursion leaving for there on August 6.[58] He was advertising Benton county farms and "wild land almost anywhere else to trade for livestock" in October and November. In January 1890 he left for Washington state with an excursion party. The newspaper had an article about his leaving and noted he had withdrawn from the firm of J. E. Whipple & Co. But it didn't know if he intended to move to Washington.[59] Unfortunately, the *Eagle* was not microfilmed for the period March 5, 1890 to March 6, 1891 so the author

does not know where the family was during that period. However, on April 21, 1891 he was running a real estate office over Brubaker's Drug Store in Vinton when he ran a display ad featuring several properties.[60]

The family probably attended "Sells Brothers' Enormous United Shows" which played in Vinton June 11, 1891. The show had traveled the circuit for 20 years and featured "every notable variety of rare beasts: the tremendous pair of living hippopotami; thrilling hippodrome races; the ravishing dancing of the great Spanish artiste, Cyrene; the Wild Moorish Caravan performing the most wondrous feats of barbaric agility and strength; performing mammoths; a pair of Lilliputian cattle; a wild Australian hairless horse; and a flock of giant ostriches."[61]

Jim's widowed father Lucien visited the family in September. It was his first visit to Vinton since he returned to Eugene 32 years previously.[62] In the interval two of his Vinton sisters, Angeline McKinley and Eliza Kearns, had died. He was however, able to visit with brothers Cyrenius and Henry and sisters Lavina Holtz and Luana Edmonds, his 8-year-old grandson Blaine, and meet many nieces and nephews for the first time.

Jim expanded the business in February 1892 by buying competitors, Grant J. Jones & Co. and the insurance business of George Newton and moved his office in with Gilchrist and Whipple, one of Vinton's largest legal firms. They were located over Farmers' Loan and Trust Co. Bank. In May he advertised the "cheapest and best tornado insurance in the country" and urged farmers to insure their livestock against lighting which, his ad claimed, chased the live stock

and "left it dead along side the barb wire fence."[63]

TAKES AN ACTIVE ROLE IN REPUBLICAN POLITICS

Jim's political career began in June 1892 when he and J. "Pat" Murphy, editor-publisher of the *Eagle*, were elected to represent the Third Ward to the Vinton city Republican Central Committee. He was also chosen a Delegate to the County Convention where he was an Alternate to the Judicial Convention. His cousin W.P. was a Delegate to the Congressional Convention.[64] Jim was on the campaign trail for the fall election addressing Republican meetings at Wood's School House in Harrison Township, Center School House in Homer Township, and Center School House in Monroe Township. He was active in organizing a Republican Club and a member of the Committee to organize a mass meeting to be held in Cedar Rapids just before the election.[65] The rally, the largest in years, drew 300 people from Vinton.[66] Republicans broke the solid Democratic hold on county offices in November winning the offices of Auditor, Recorder, and Supervisor. Cato Sells, Democrat, was elected County Attorney.[67]

Over 8,000 people flocked to Vinton July 4 for the parade, oration, festivities, and laying of the Cornerstone for the new Tilford Collegiate Academy building. Much of the crowd arrived on the early morning trains with one special train bringing 700. The parade route was through downtown and ended at the Court House Square where music was provided by the Center Point Knights of Pythias Band and Professor Moody and his choir. Street amusements included a tug of war between nine man teams from Vinton and Benton county. There were foot races, horse races, and wheelbarrow races. The Hon. R. G. Cousins, Republican candidate for Congress 5th District, was orator and the evening concluded with a fireworks display.[68]

The Ringling Bros. Circus gave performances in Vinton August 10 at 2:00 and 8:00 p.m. It promoted itself as "the largest, greatest, and most complete exhibition on earth" and promised a "real Roman Hippodrome, 3-ring circus, elevated stages, mighty millionaire menagerie, mammoth museum of marvels, and far famed horse fair and Equine Congress embracing 350 of the finest blooded horses in the world."

It claimed to have the "greatest aggregation of European aerialists, gymnasts, acrobats, and riders ever exhibited in this or any other country. It said it spent a "Princely fortune for regal wardrobes" for Caesar's triumphal entry into Rome with warriors in glittering armor, actors courting the dramatic Muse, senators, patricians, censors, gladiators, wrestlers, jugglers, charioteers, dancers, artisans, musicians, citizens, slaves, prisoners of

war—hundreds of men, women, and children combined to form "the most imposing picture of classic splendor ever conceived in the mind of man."[69] In those days virtually no one missed the circus and certainly Jim attended with Ellen and Blaine.

A cold wave hit Vinton Monday January 2, 1893 with the mercury plunging to 14 below followed by a blizzard Thursday. According to the *Eagle,* Ellen Whipple and her cousin-in-law W. P. Whipple were quite ill that week and confined to home.[70] On January 6 C. S. Bennett announced his intention to retire as City Clerk. Jim was elected to that position January 18 by vote of six to two for W.H. Anderson. His bond was approved and he was sworn in Friday February 3 along with cousin W. P. as City Attorney.[71] The following Monday the worst blizzard of the season roared into town and left huge snow drifts. The bad weather continued for a week. Trains were late and wagon roads impassable. The newspaper said enough snow fell to last several winters.[72] Following the city election in March, he was reelected Clerk.[73]

He moved his real estate-insurance business office to the City Council Room in April and continued to work both jobs using endorsement ads from insurance clients and continued to close real estate transactions.[74] He acquired a third job in June when the Council elected him City Water Commissioner over A.D. Griffin by a vote of 5 to 3.[75] Guy Kellogg, a student at Tilford Academy, was hired to assist him with Clerk duties in September.[76] His father was badly injured in an accident in July and Jim returned to Eugene after being notified his father was failing.[77]

THE 1893 WORLD'S COLUMBIAN EXPOSITION

It seems inconceivable to the author that Jim would not have taken Ellen and Blaine to the Columbian Exposition in Chicago which ran from May 1 to Columbus day in October. Chicago was relatively close and Vinton had good train service to the city. Additionally, his cousin W. P., along with others, had acquired a house in Chicago which they rented out to Vintonites attending the fair.[78]

No World's Fair before or since captured the national imagination as completely as the Columbian—the White City as it became universally known. Over 27 million people visited—close to half of the American population. They saw exhibits from 48 states and nations in 200 buildings on 633 acres. An elevated electric train ran around the Fair's perimeter. It was the first monorail train and no future World's Fair would be without one

Held to celebrate the four-hundredth anniversary of Columbus' discovery of the New World—even though a year late—the imperial architecture of the exposition's pavilions, the full-scale replica of the battleship

Illinois at the Fair's naval pier, and the astonishing exhibits of American advances in science, technology, and world transforming arts of mass production and merchandising, announced the approaching new century. Inside the crowded main pavilions were the newest inventions of the day. There were electric kitchens and electric calculating machines, Elisha Gray's teleautograph for transmitting facsimile writing or drawings by telegraph—the early FAX machine—and Thomas Edison's Kinetoscope, a peepshow device for viewing motion pictures on celluloid film. There were demonstrations of long-distance calls over Bell telephone lines and live orchestra music transmitted over wires from New York and broadcast over a "mammoth telephone" suspended from the roof.

Giant barns, steam threshers, buildings made of ears of corn, pyramids of giant pumpkins, piles of grain, and stacks of lumber amazed the crowds. There was a Liberty Bell in the Horticultural building made of oranges and a life-sized knight made of prunes in the California building. The Western Electric Company displayed its switches and sockets in an Egyptian temple.

People could enjoy all the benefits and conveniences of the coming age without changing their settled values and habits. Edison invented the incandescent light bulb in 1879 but to most farm and small town residents electricity remained mysterious. The average American of 1893 who cooked with wood and coal and were used to horses, kerosene lamps, and hand-pumped water could examine the new electrical devices up close and in action. The Fair demystified electricity and helped create a greater use for it.

Those who stayed into the evening saw an unforgettable display of electricity in the illumination of the Court of Honor. The palaces were "etched in fire against the blackness of the night" while giant searchlights swept the basin and settled on electric fountains which shot up illuminated jets of colored water. Electric boats strung with lines of light streaked across the waters of the lagoon like swarms of fireflies.

New products and new brands became famous. Introduced for the first time were: fibreglass, zippers, souvenir postcards, and the first demonstration of long distance telephone service from Chicago to New York City. National brands introduced: Chase & Sanborn, the official coffee of the Exhibition; Baker's Chocolate, Quaker Oats, Cream of Wheat, and Aunt Jemima in person.

Can you imagine the expression on 10-year-old Blaine's face when he saw the midway Ferris wheel that towered 264 feet above the ground.[79] The Midway had displays from modern European countries to the primitive of Africa and Asia. It was a sight and experience none of the 27 million would ever forget and was not preserved for posterity as Edison's

motion picture camera was not yet invented.[80]

JIM ELECTED REPUBLICAN COUNTY CHAIRMAN

Back in Vinton Jim began a new chapter in his life. The *Eagle* of August 22, 1893 featured the following news article:

> Mr. Jas. E. Whipple of this place was elected Chairman of the Republican County Central Committee replacing James G. Mallory who will run for the office of County Treasurer in the fall election. Mr. Whipple is a native of Vinton and one of the most active Republicans. For the most part of his life he has lived in Indiana, and for two or three years previous to his removal to Vinton took an active part in county politics. He holds the responsible position of City Clerk. He is a good executive officer, and is a splendid successor to Mr. Mallory. He will make an active, stirring campaign.[81]

On Tuesday September 19, Jim convened what the *Eagle* described as "the largest Benton county Republican Convention held in Vinton in years. It nominated a full slate of candidates and heard an address from Frank Jackson, candidate for Governor.[82] He organized a full speaking schedule for himself including eight speeches in various sections of the county in October. The *Eagle* of September 28, 1894 commended Jim "for the open aggressive campaign" he had planned for the fall election. Every town and township was to be visited "by a full commitment of local and state speakers." A full and free discussion of the issues was promised and Democrats were to be invited to all Republican meetings. "We are glad to see a genuine Republican campaign," the editor wrote. "Let every Republican give his support to it and to the Chairman."

On October 16 the *Eagle* commended Whipple for taking the Republican campaign "directly to the farmers" by holding meetings in the school houses of the smaller town and townships and for "livening" them with musical groups including glee clubs, Sprenger's Band, and the Achuff Brothers.[83] On October 19 it wrote that Jim was holding "rousing" meetings all over the county and that "Republicans are rallying for the whole ticket." It reported on October 23 that "Mr. J. E. Whipple... is hard at work pushing the campaign. Republicans are wide-awake and are anxious to discuss the questions at issue. All Whipple needs now is the solid backing of the individual members of the county." In the October 30 issue, the editor, in a political roundup article, said "the Republicans, headed by their Chairman Mr. J. E. Whipple, have made a clean, gallant campaign, and the individual members can 'clinch' the work on election

day by bringing home a full Republican ticket."

With the exception of their gubernatorial nominee, Republicans swept statewide elections and the county ticket, except Barnell was elected Superintendent of Schools. The *Eagle* of November 10 wrote that "J. E. Whipple has proved a valiant successor to Mr. Mallory and... deserves the thanks of the Party for the tireless campaign carried on." He received warm letters of thanks from J. E. Blythe, State Party Chairman, and E.G. Penrose State Senator-Elect for his "untiring and efficient work" in the campaign. Following announcement of the results, he organized a huge bonfire (flames shot 50' in the air) attended by over a thousand people, hundreds with bells, horns, and drums. On Monday evening November 13, 40 friends surprised the Whipples at home when they presented Jim and Ellen with handsome chairs and made a social evening out of the event.[84]

It's main story in the November 13 issue:

> The *Eagle* wishes to congratulate Chairman J. E. Whipple of the Republican Committee upon his second splendid victory in the county. Mr. Whipple is a hard worker, he never sleeps. The enthusiasm and energy he puts into the campaign himself inspires his coworkers. He filled every nook and corner of the county. His school house campaign was one of the most complete ever carried on in the county. The meetings were well attended, their speeches earnestly listened to, and they were undoubtedly productive of much good. The campaign was conducted on high educational grounds and the good that resulted therefrom cannot be gainsaid.(contradicted)."[85]

Following the 1894 election Jim was named local Corresponding Secretary for the Fireman's State Association, an organization that represented the Volunteer Fire Departments in Iowa. The Association scheduled its annual convention for Vinton in June.[86] In January 1895 he was installed as an officer of the Modern Woodmen, an insurance organization. He also resumed his real estate and insurance advertising.[87]

The Fireman's Association assignment required him to travel about the state to promote the meeting set for June 18-21. In May he announced that $2,500 in cash prizes would be awarded during the tournament and that 3,000 uniformed firemen from 32 cities and towns would compete. Vinton was the smallest host town ever and its tournament was judged a success.[88]

He was unanimously re-elected Clerk by the City Council April 6, 1894[89] and continued his political activity by accepting a third term as County Republican Chairman at its Convention June 26. He was also named a Delegate to the State Convention. According to the *Eagle*, it was "the general desire that he retain Party management." The editor wrote that Jim did the Party's work in an impartial manner and that his enthusiasm inspired Party associates. He also noted that Jim's conduct was agreeable to his Democratic opponents because he treated them "fairly, both politically and personally."[90]

The City Council directed Jim to go to Clarion, Iowa in April to inspect its electric light plant and to report his findings to them. At the same meeting, the Mayor issued a Proclamation directing the citizens to clean up all filth, manure piles, ashes, etc. in and about their premises.[91]

The Iowa Union Telephone Co. offered long distance service beginning July 1.[92] The city contracted with Bigelow Electric Light Co. of Lincoln, Nebraska in October to construct its electric plant at a cost of $10,883. The Waterworks building was enlarged to house the electrical machinery.[93] According to the 1895 state census, Vinton's population increased by 285 over 1890. Another 821 lived in Taylor township.[94]

Jim was injured on July 4 when the family was picnicking at the river. While in a hammock he was thrown to the ground striking his shoulder, throwing it out of joint, and tearing the ligaments.[95] In August his brother Edmond and wife Clara from Eugene visited.[96] His real estate business was thriving and he went to Pipestone, Minnesota in early September to investigate wild land offered for sale at $8 to $15 an acre. His ad of September 15 described the Pipestone land as "a good chance for permanent investment" and listed a number of farm properties for sale.[97]

Jim organized the Republican county canvass which the *Eagle* reported was "progressing smoothly" by the last week of October. In addition he had meetings booked for nearly every township. He concluded the campaign Saturday November 2, with a rally at Vinton's Watson Opera House with Congressman Cousins and Matt Parrot, candidate for Lieut. Governor, as featured speakers. His organizing efforts paid off. Republicans won all county races except Superintendent of Schools which they lost by 49 votes. The Party's majority in Vinton was 342 and the county vote was 2,815 Republican to 2,548 Democrat. The *Eagle* editor lauded his ceaseless work and complimented him on a strong campaign and said because of his work in the last three elections, Benton county can now be "placed in the solid Republican column."[98]

Jim, Ellen, and Blaine celebrated the election victory with Thanksgiving

dinner at the Ralyea House[99] and he ended the year by being elected an officer of the Knights of Pythias Lodge.[100] The county ended the year by announcing crime statistics for the fiscal year which ended October 31.[101]

A howling blizzard roared through town Thursday January 2, 1895 and the temperature dropped to 14 below. It continued through Friday and began to moderate about noon Saturday when the mercury climbed to 12 below.[102] The City Council accepted the light plant following an inspection by Consulting Engineer W. H. Schott from Des Moines. The plant cost $16,411.81 and was powered by a battery of three boilers and a Sioux City Corliss engine of 150 horsepower. The dynamo was of the Ft. Wayne type and sufficient to power 1500 16-candle power lamps.[103] E.S. Toby began advertising electrical fixtures and supplies of all kinds for residences and that he had hired an expert electrician to wire both residences and stores.[104]

APPOINTED UTILITIES SUPERINTENDENT

He was unanimously re-elected City Clerk March 18, 1895[105] and the City Council elected him the first Superintendent of the Electric Light and Water Works System effective February 1, 1896 at a salary of $50 a month. He was to continue as Clerk at the rate of $25 a month.[106] A controversy started almost immediately after the appointment was announced. J.F. Allen, County Democratic Chairman and editor-publisher of the *Benton County Times*, Vinton's official Democratic newspaper, came out against paying Jim a salary for his services as Clerk. He argued that $50 was adequate for both jobs. Councilman Murphy used the columns of the *Eagle*, Vinton's official Republican newspaper, to champion Jim's appointment and defend the proposed salary. Murphy, seeking re-election to the Council from Ward Three, was challenged by Allen with Jim's salary the major issue of the campaign. The candidates attacked each other weekly in their respective newspapers.

Murphy wrote that Allen, Chairman of the Democratic Party, was "trying to play a cute trick in politics" by misrepresenting the salary issue. He said Allen was great at finding fault and [playing] politics and that business qualification was "the least characteristic he possessed." He argued that the Superintendent would be responsible for $60,000 worth of property, would run the largest "business house" in Vinton, oversee the needs of at least 500 customers and the book-keeping necessary thereto, be responsible for thousands of dollars of fees, and have to bond himself to the city for thousands of dollars. Murphy said " a cheap man would be dear at any price and would cost the city twice his salary." He argued that the Council had a responsibility to hire a competent administrator "and

pay what it is worth." He accused Allen of misstatements and charged that Allen's campaign to paint him as being more interested "in aiding a political friend than in serving the city justly" was not true.

"I do not believe in cheap," he wrote, "nor will I vote for cheap wages to curry popular favor. It is a matter of record that I voted for the HIGHEST PRICED engine for the Electric Light Plant because I believe it was the CHEAPEST for the city. Mr. Allen's chief desire is to beat the editor of the *Eagle* and Mr. Whipple, the Chairman of the Republican County Central Committee. Backed by the vote of his Party, he came near accomplishing his object as quite a number of Republicans fell into his trap. "I pay him the high compliment of saying he is the slickest campaign liar I have ever battled against."

Murphy concluded his side of the controversy in the *Eagle* of March 17 by referring to the editor of the *Times* as his "genial contemporary" and accused him of "taking another spasm on city salaries" by trying to convince Vinton readers that the *Times* paid nearly as much taxes as the *Eagle*. Murphy's response:

"Mr. Allen pays taxes to the amount of $27.34 while Mr. Murphy pays $70.19—a slight difference." Following the election Murphy was elected Council President and named to the Water Works, Electric Light Plant, Ordinance, and Finance Committees.

Murphy won the March election 82-72.[107] L. Perrine applied for the job of City Clerk and Superintendent of the two utilities asking for a salary of $50 per month. Jim was nominated by Councilman Toby and unanimously elected by both Republican and Democratic Council members. The Council re-defined the Clerk's job as Ex-officio Superintendent of the two utilities. The new job description placed the clerk in charge of the plants, employees, and their general management with the advice of the Council and Waterworks and Electric Light Committee. Compensation was set at $35 monthly.[108]

Electricity altered existence in Vinton. Among other things it made operating rooms, dentist offices, and barber shops safer, walking the streets at night safer, and making evening hours more productive. In less than 50 years Vinton had run the gamut of illumination from the flickering home-made candle to light that appears at the touch of a switch. When streetlights were first turned on, Vintonites probably viewed them with the same wonder they gave the wood-burning locomotive in 1869.

Based on his work in a drug store as a young man, he undoubtedly was on hand when Palmer's Drug Store showed off its "Magnificent Soda Fountain" in early April. The *Eagle* dubbed it "the finest fountain in this section of the state and something that has long been needed in Vinton."[109] Palmer's fountain opening was followed by a two-day storm which

began as sleet and rain before snowing eight inches and then turning into rain. It was said to be the greatest precipitation in over two years in any one storm. Fortunately the ground was in excellent condition to absorb the moisture bringing "broad smiles" to local merchants and farmers.[110]

Jim both gave up his real estate and insurance business and relinquished his Republican Chairmanship after being elected Clerk-Superintendent.[111] He announced his candidacy for County Recorder in July "subject to the decision of the Republican County Convention."[112]

The *Blairstown Press* endorsed him for Recorder in its issue of July 21. It said he was "eminently qualified" and that the nomination was due him as "a reward for merit and for his work as County Chairman in advancing the Party's principles and helping to elect "many candidates to positions of honor" over the past several years. His candidacy "will honor the Party and his election will result without doubt," it concluded.

ELECTED COUNTY RECORDER

The County Convention, one of the largest ever with every Township except Homer represented, was held in Vinton August 19. All seats were taken and delegates overflowed into the aisles. William Jennings Bryan was on the minds of most delegates and W.S. Palmer, the Convention Chairman, said the defeat of the Republican party "would mean the degradation of the American wage earner and the establishment of silver mometallism (sic)."

The names of Jim and A.E. Graves of Jackson were placed in nomination for Recorder. Jim won 46 to 37 and the Vinton vote of 16-0 provided his margin of victory. M.J. Tobin of Vinton was nominated for County Attorney, B.F. Mossman of Polk for Clerk, R.F. Smith of Belle Plaine for Supervisor, and Mr. Bickel from the south part of the county for Auditor.[113] The *Eagle* of August 25 called the Republican ticket "one of the strongest in all its parts ever put before the people." They noted Jim was the first native of Vinton to be nominated by either Party and "his ability to conduct the office is conceded and the office never had a more painstaking official than he will make."

The Urbana *Monitor* wrote that "James Whipple and M.J. Tobin have done as much as any two men in the county for the cause of Republicanism and if in the selection of officers competency and integrity to party principles are to be considered they ought to receive the entire 600 majority Benton will give McKinley, and a few hundred votes of Democrats who are interested in good government and recognize merit and its need in positions of trust."[114]

Vinton's first bank failure occurred Friday September 18 when the

banking house of S. H. Watson & Sons closed its doors about 2 p.m. The excitement in town was intense that afternoon and Saturday. Founded over 40 years ago, it was one of the best known banks in the state and appeared to have unlimited resources. It was heavy in real estate loans and "the money agitation of this year" made it impossible to turn this asset into ready money and the bank was unable to meet its depositor's demands. Its assets including the Cedar Valley Packing Co. and the Benton County Land and Investment Co. were placed in the hands of Matt Gaasch for disposal. W. P. Whipple and C.W. Mullen of Waterloo were retained by Gaasch to assist in "making sure the property was properly disposed of and depositors paid." Two hundred creditors met at Watson's Opera House October 1 to hear a detailed accounting of the banks assets and liabilities by W.P. Whipple.[115]

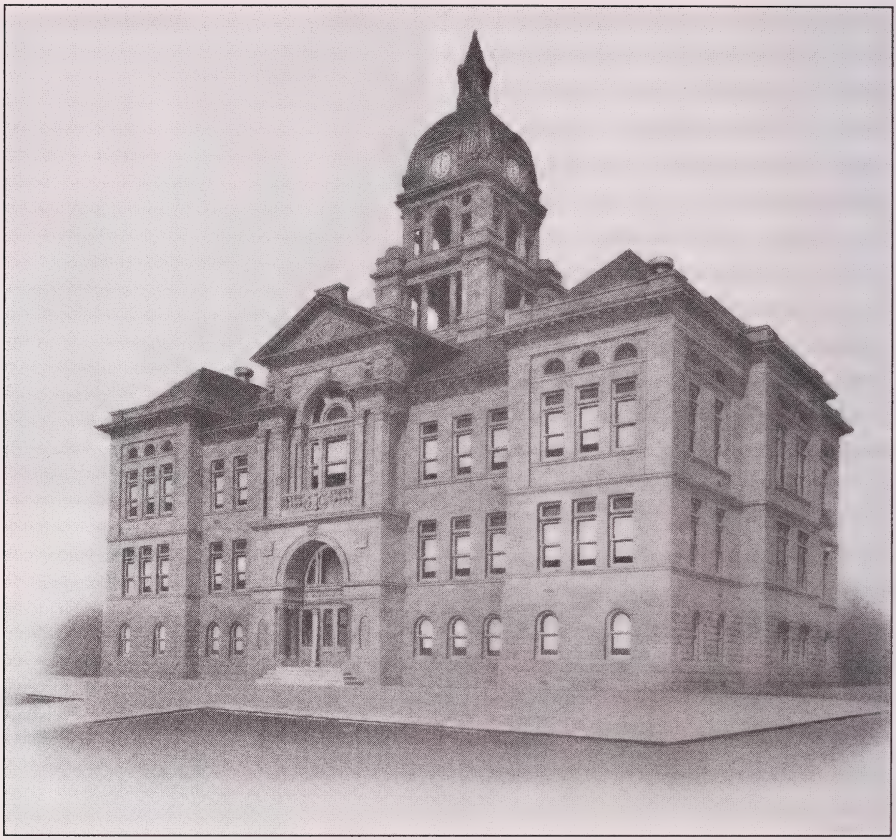
James E. Whipple, Benton Co., Iowa Recorder in the vault in his office in the Court House at Vinton with two unnamed employees. About 1897.

The main issue of the national election of 1896 was clear: Republicans supported the gold standard and nominated handsome, genial, and thoroughly conservative William McKinley. William Jennings Bryan, Congressman from Nebraska, was the leader of the silver wing of the Democratic Party and won his Party's nomination July 9 in Chicago. The Populists, realizing nominating their own candidate would insure the election of the "gold bug" McKinley, endorsed Bryan.

Both campaigns realized they were in for a close and crucial contest. Seldom had the two great Parties divided so clearly on fundamental issues. Silver against gold led to the real contestants: city against countryside, industry against agriculture, East against South and West; the nineteenth century against the twentieth.

Mark Hanna, McKinley's campaign manager, raised huge sums by "assessing" the great bankers, oil refineries, insurance men, and meat packers, using the threat of impending business chaos and wild inflation to loosen the purse strings of the tycoons. McKinley's campaign was dignified and carefully organized. The candidate received delegations of voters on his front porch in Canton, Ohio.[116]

With little money and no organizational genius like Hanna to direct



Benton Co., Court House Vinton.

his campaign, Bryan created a "modern" campaign. Heretofore, it was considered undignified for the nominee to go out and seek votes. But Bryan, realizing the concerted power of business and the press were against him, and that his greatest assets were his magnificent ability as an orator and his personal sincerity and charm, took his campaign to the voters. Between summer and November, he traveled a precedent-shattering 18,000 miles, made more than 600 speeches, and directly addressed an estimated five million Americans.[117]

When it became apparent that Bryan's campaign was effective, Republican leaders became frightened and circulated a rumor that Bryan was insane.[118] A manufacturer told his workers they could "vote as they pleased but if Bryan is elected the whistle will not blow Wednesday morning." The *Nation,* which supported McKinley, reported many companies had placed orders with their suppliers "to be executed if Bryan is defeated and not otherwise."

The McKinley organization made a monumental effort to get out the vote on election day. They provided free transportation to and from the

polls, paid men for time lost in voting, and expended enormous efforts in the crucial North Central states. McKinley carried them all and with them the nation. The vote was 6,036,000 to 5,468,000 a margin of 568,000. The change of a handful of votes in half a dozen key states would have swung the election to Bryan. The electoral college vote was 271 to 176.[119]

Republicans won all county offices by large margins. The official canvass showed Jim carrying 20 of the 29 voting precincts and winning with a majority of 600. Party members celebrated the election the following Saturday with a noon barbeque where 750 pounds of ox, 200 loaves of bread, and 75 pounds of cheese were served. After the feast a large crowd assembled at the Court House where Jim, M. J. Tobin, W.O. Smith, and B. Murphy spoke. A huge bonfire was lit that evening at the corner of Washington and Jefferson and the Marching Clubs were out in force along with many townspeople with tin horns and Roman candles. After the fire burned out, the crowd again assembled at the Court House for speeches by Jim, Tobin, Sherman T. Mears, and Dr. Avery.[120]

Jim resigned his job as City Clerk and Utilities Superintendent on January 1, 1897 and was succeeded by Geo. K. Covert. The *Eagle* of January 5, in commenting on his resignation, said he "has made a splendid official" during his four years in office. "His records are in splendid shape and his statement of the financial condition of the city is ample evidence of his ability in that line. Mr. Whipple retired with the good wishes of the Mayor and Council."

Later that month he was installed as Master of Work for the Knights of Pythias and gave a patriotic address at the high school for Washington's birthday celebration on February 22. In April he reported collecting recording fees of $485.30 for the first quarter of 1897. His office expense was $12.45. His office and the office of the County Clerk were papered and painted in May and their rooms looked "as bright and cheerful as rooms can be made in the old rookery."[121]

He was a Captain in the Vinton Chapter of Sons of Veterans and in May Gen. Gibson, Camp No. 56, Division of Iowa, nominated him to be Division Commander at the next Division encampment to be held at Marshalltown. He was described as "exceedingly well qualified for the position" based on his work with the Eugene Camp, Division of Indiana and the reorganization of the Vinton Camp. He was elected a Delegate and attended the National Convention Indianapolis in mid-August and from there went to Eugene to visit his parents.[122] It was the last time he saw his mother who died while he was in the Army during the Spanish-American War. He returned to Vinton in mid-September refreshed after "a much needed rest."[123]

George Knapp of Vinton developed 112 acres on the east bank of Fish

lake into a summer resort. Located six miles north of Vinton in a wooded area, it had a gentle slope to the water's edge. He platted 35 lots in three blocks and named the streets Knapp, Lake, McElroy, and Whipple. He named the resort Minne Estema, an Indian name meaning sleeping water.[124]

Reverend B.M. Williams held a 25-night tent revival in Vinton in May and June. Crowds of approximately 1,500 attended his nightly meetings. He also held morning prayer meetings and gave Bible readings most afternoons. His final revival Sunday night June 6 was attended by almost 2,500. About 150, principally men and boys, came forward and pledged to live a Christian life. Rev. Williams was said to be the cause of several Bible classes and cottage prayer meetings organized that evening and almost 500 conversions.[125]

The Barnum & Bailey Circus was in Cedar Rapids for a show July 30 and the railroads scheduled extra runs at a special low rate. The circus featured 70 horses performing in one ring, a dog that plays football, a pig that actually talks so you can distinguish its words, Miss Ella Ewing, the tallest person in the world, over 8 feet, Great Peter, the smallest man in the world, age 17 and weighing six and a half pounds. They had a herd of performing elephants and all the big aerial acts including the little girl who is shot from an arrow sixty feet through midair. They advertised the finest menagerie on earth including over 400 horses of the finest breed. It is presumed that the James Whipple family attended.[126]

The Republicans lost the election in November as their candidates for Treasurer, Sheriff, Surveyor, and Supervisor were handily defeated. The *Eagle* editor, noting that the Republican vote was 1,000 fewer than last year's election,[127] laid the blame "on sore Republican Convention losers who campaigned against the ticket when they failed to gain the nomination."

Jim was elected Vice Chairman of Fidelity Lodge No. 47, Knights of Pythias[128] in December and later that month attended the Convention of County Recorders in Des Moines. In January 1898 he reported $408.50 in fees collected in the fourth quarter. Early February found him busy recording the largest mortgage ever in the county's history. The recording was for $165 million and encompassed 83 printed pages. The recording fee was $25.[129]

Jim and Ellen were among 12 couples attending a Winter Picnic at the home of Mr. and Mrs. J. E. Young February 6. Progressive initials and other games were enjoyed until time to eat. Each lady was weighed before and after eating. Weight gains ranged from three to four and three-fourth pounds. The one who gained the most received a "water color portrait" of herself—a pig in water colors. A dozen men walked unceremoniously into the room at 7:30 p.m. and surprised their wives and the balance of the

evening spent in all sorts of sport. The gentlemen trimmed hats while the ladies sawed wood. Mrs. Young gave a few selections from Sousa and all declared the Winter Picnic a success.[130]

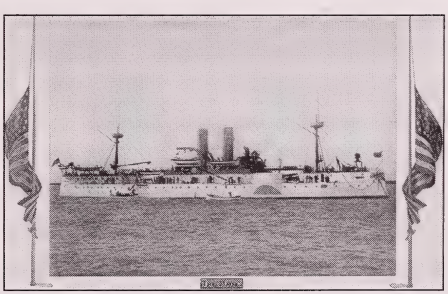
The Watson Opera House featured Hyers Company of Colored Comedians" the first week of February 1898. They played two shows: "Colored Aristocracy" and "Plantation Frolics." Their star, May C. Hyers, offered $10,000 to anyone singing a "contralto of her compass," (range) she being able to sing from C to C in two octaves. Prices: children, 15¢, adults, 35¢. Vintonites who enjoyed band music entrained to Cedar Rapids on February 16 for the John Phillip Sousa Band performance.[131] The heaviest snow storm in years began February 18. Approximately 18 inches fell from Friday night to Monday morning and a heavy wind caused large drifts.[132]

SPANISH AMERICAN WAR SERVICE

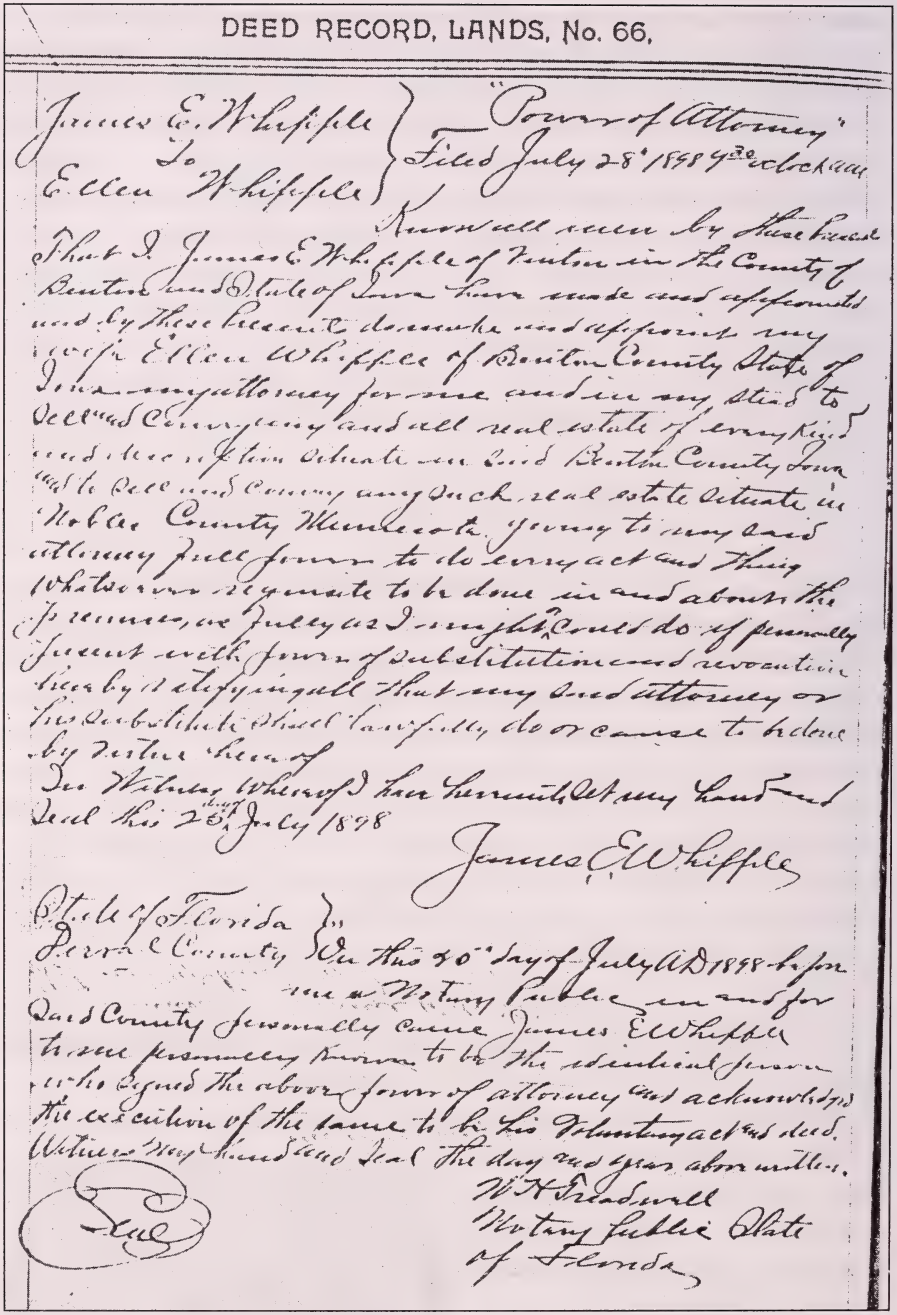
The battleship, USS *Maine*, was blown up in Havana harbor. February 15, 1898. That event significantly altered Jim's life as he chose, at age 40, to volunteer for active Army duty after Congress declared war on Spain. Cuba was fighting for its independence from Spain and the *Maine* was in Havana on a mission of friendly courtesy and to protect American lives and property should the need arise. The ship's commander was Capt. Charles D. Sigbee and he sent a telegram to Washington, D.C.: "*Maine* blown up in Havana harbor at nine forty tonight and destroyed. Many wounded and doubtless more killed or drowned... Public opinion should be suspended until further report... Many Spanish officers, including representatives of General Blanco,[133] now with me to express sympathy."

Newspapers initially reported the tragedy without elaboration. However, two days later William Randolph Hearst's New York *Journal* headlined: THE WARSHIP *MAINE* WAS SPLIT IN TWO BY AN ENEMY'S SECRET INFERNAL MACHINE and published drawings of an explosive device it claimed had been planted beneath the ship and detonated from shore. The New York *World*'s headline: *MAINE* EXPLOSION CAUSED BY BOMB OR TORPEDO? New York's *Herald* and *Journal* offered a $50,000 reward for evidence of a mine.

President McKinley and John Long Secretary of the Navy considered the possibility of an acci-



USS Maine, Battleship sunk in Havana Harbor and started the Spanish-American War.



DEED RECORD, LANDS, No. 66,

James E. Whipple
To
Ellen Whipple

"Power of Attorney"
Filed July 28' 1898 9:30 o'clock AM

Know all men by these Presents
That I James E. Whipple of Benton in the County of Benton and State of Iowa have made and appointed and by these presents do make and appoint my wife Ellen Whipple of Benton County State of Iowa my attorney for me and in my stead to sell and convey and all real estate of every kind and description situate in said Benton County Iowa and to sell and convey any such real estate situate in Nobles County Minnesota giving to my said attorney full power to do every act and thing whatsoever requisite to be done in and about the premises, as fully as I might or could do if personally present with power of substitution and revocation hereby ratifying and confirming all that my said attorney or his substitute shall lawfully do or cause to be done by virtue hereof.
In Witness Whereof I have hereunto set my hand and seal this 28th day July 1898

James E. Whipple

State of Florida }
Dade County } On this 30th day of July A.D. 1898 before me a Notary Public in and for said County personally came James E. Whipple to me personally known to be the identical person who signed the above power of attorney and acknowledged the execution of the same to be his voluntary act and deed.
Witness my hand and seal the day and year above written.

W. H. Treadwell
Notary Public State of Florida

dent and the U.S. and Spain conducted separate investigations in an effort to find the cause. However, neither side allowed representatives of the other to appear before their Investigation Board. The Spanish investigation produced convincing but circumstantial evidence that the explosion was caused by the proximity of the ship's magazines to its coal bunkers.

The American inquiry concluded the blast was not accidental but found no evidence to determine who was responsible. Public opinion ignored the disclaimer. Americans were convinced Spain was guilty of mass murder.

President McKinley wanted to wait until the formal Investigation was concluded but most Americans had no patience. Teddy Roosevelt said the President was spineless as "a chocolate éclair." Families of dead sailors urged war. Newspapers fed the fever; Congress was deluged with letters calling for revenge. The slogan "Remember the **Maine**" reverberated throughout the country and was easily understood in the cities, towns, and villages and in the cornfields of Iowa as in the boardrooms of industry in our largest cities. War was declared April 25.[134]

Jim, E. L. Elliott, and Geo. D. McElroy were commissioned by Gov. Shaw on March 28 to organize a military company. The *Eagle* referred to them as "the genial recruiting officers." Jim had his first "war meeting" and enrolled "quite a number of recruits" on April 19, six days before war was declared.[135]

The day after war was declared, the *Eagle* reported that the town was "thoroughly inculcated with the spirit of patriotism" and that most conversations were about the war.[136] They opined that no town in Iowa had "war fever at a higher pitch" than Vinton. A new military order directed the National Guard to take over recruiting and Company G of Vinton was given a quota to enlist 45 enlisted men. Many of the husky young fellows around Vinton didn't find much excitement in a grain elevator so they enlisted to free Cuba.

When the decision to turn recruiting over to the National Guard was issued Jim took a leave as Recorder[137] and enlisted as a private.[138] The *Eagle* described him "as enthusiastic from the start" reporting that he said "if the government needs men he would go at the first call." Iowa's quota for the war was a little over 3,000. Jim's last function as Recorder was to report the office collected $615.80 in fees the second quarter of 1898. Governor Shaw and Adjutant General Marvin H. Byers decided that the historic numbers of Iowa Regiments in the Civil War would be retained, designating the 1st Iowa National Guard Regiment as the 49th Iowa infantry volunteers.[139] (Forty-eight Regiments of infantry went from Iowa to the Union Army. Iowa followed the example of Indiana and Ohio which began numbering their Civil War Regiments where the numbers from the war with Mexico left off.[140]

Co. G received orders to march Monday April 25 and left at 2:35 a.m. Tuesday.[141] The orders were to bring all state property and camp equipage, full dress uniform packed separately and well marked, and only those who desire to go to the front and who can probably pass the examination.[142] The main *Eagle* headline of April 29:

Even the old vets admitted that the excitement in Vinton last Monday night on the departure of Co. G for Des Moines exceeded anything witnessed in 1861. The town has been on a nervous strain since Saturday. All day Sunday and Monday the "boys" lay on their arms expecting the call, and when it came the town simply broke loose and continued until the train departed at 2:30 a.m. An impromptu reception at the Union Hall was arranged and the Company marched in a body to the Hall. Speeches were made by M.J. Tobin, Dr. Avery, M. Meredith, and Cato Sells. After the talks coffee and buns were served. Just before the close of the reception, Capt. Traer received a telegram ordering the Regiment to Des Moines which he read aloud. Quick as a flash the news spread, acting on a pre-arranged signal, fire and church bells rang and the Water Works whistle blew for fully half an hour. The Water Works whistle again blew while the company marched to the train.

Although it was nearly midnight when the news came, nearly a thousand people left their beds and homes and gathered at the armory and remained till the train departed. But it was not all sunshine and cheer. While those having no relatives were cheering, many bitter tears were being shed by mothers and sisters as well as the fathers who realized they were giving their boys up to the fate of war.

One of the interesting scenes was when the Company was drawn up in a line and Capt. Traer stepped forward and announced to the "boys" that they were going to Des Moines for the purpose of enlisting in the United States Army and if there were any in the ranks who did not intend to do so, to please step out. Not a man flinched and the Armory rang with the applause of the crowd followed by three cheers for Company G.

The train arrived in Des Moines about 10 a.m. and the men marched to Camp McKinley where they were billeted in horse barns with straw for their beds. Their 10 box stalls were assigned to Capt. Traer and Lieuts. Young and Kellogg, Sgts. Sanders and Goodwin, Corp. Thompson and Pvts. Whipple, D'Acres, and Bickel. Bugler Clyde D'Acres, just past 15, was was the youngest, the same age as Jim's son Blaine, and Jim at 40 one of the oldest enlisted men.[143]

The Burlington, Cedar Rapids & Northern Railway (B.C.R.& N.) offered Vinton folks a special $2 round trip excursion to Des Moines Sunday May 15. This was the last time for relatives to visit before the Company was shipped south. By then the Company's regimen was 5:45 reveille; 6:00 roll call; 6:15 sick call; 6:30 breakfast; 8:00 guard mount; and brigade drill at 2:30 p.m. Large crowds from the city came to watch the drills. Supper was at 5:30; dress parade, 6:15 tattoo (a signal on a drum,

bugle, etc. summoning soldiers to their quarters at night), 9:00; call to quarters 9:45; taps at 10:00. While he enlisted as a private on April 22, Jim was mustered into U.S. service as a quartermaster sergeant on June 2. This is the same rank his father held in the Civil War.[144] He was 5 feet seven and a half inches tall, had a dark complexion, slate blue eyes, dark brown hair, false upper teeth, and varicocele, left testicle.[145]

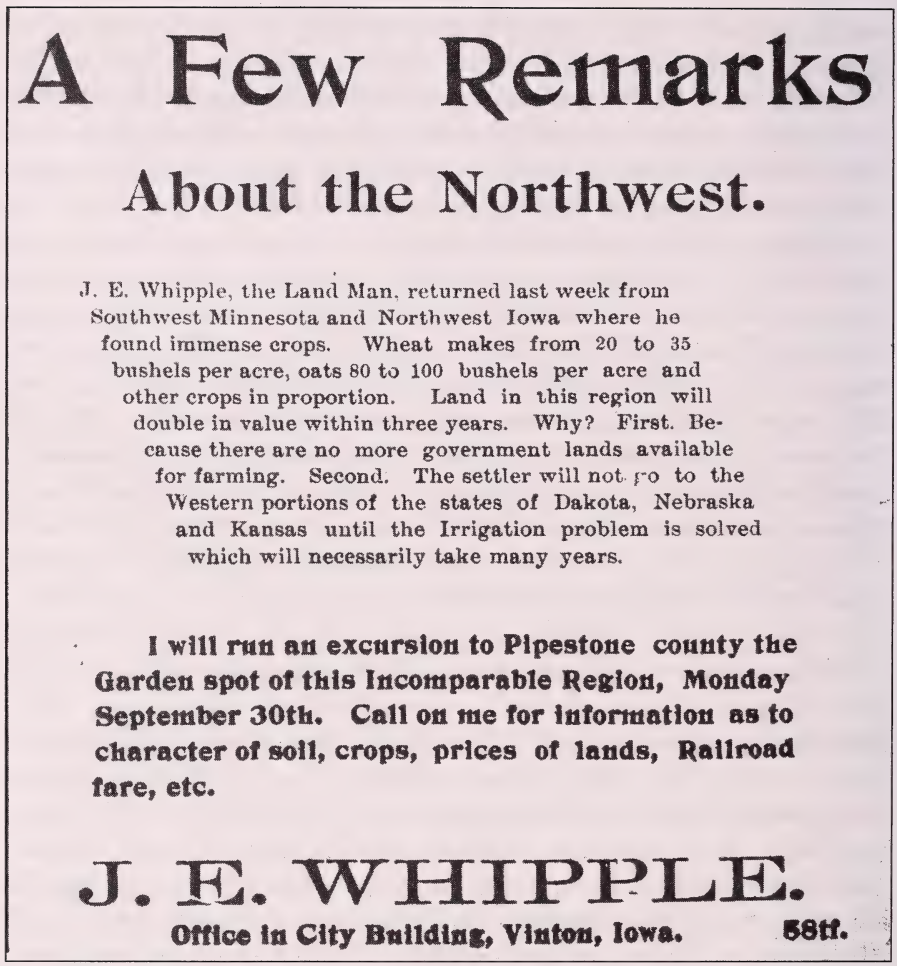
Company G left Des Moines Saturday June 11 for Camp Cuba Libre in Jacksonville, Florida stopping at Waterloo, Dubuque, and Chicago where they stayed overnight at the stock-yards. Their train was met by crowds with food, flowers, and flags as they crossed Iowa and Illinois but there was considerable less public interest in them as they crossed Tennessee, Mississippi, Alabama, and Georgia.[146] As the train slowed down through the towns in these states, the men stuck their heads out of the train windows and gave the Sioux yell to everyone along the track. The Vinton Opera House showed Thomas A. Edison's projectscope Saturday June 25. The program "presented in life motion the realistic pictures of the Hispano-American war" to a full house.[147]

SERVES AS COORESPONDENT TO THE *EAGLE*

Jim was engaged by the *Eagle* to be a special correspondent and to send a weekly report, "more often in case of important news." Jim's first report was published June 18 under the headline AT THE FRONT. He shared their daily routine which included drills in the morning and afternoon and commented that the days were warm and the nights cool enough for a thick blanket. They played Double Pedie, smoked corn cob pipes, cussed the rations, and referred to the President as "Mac." They were one of nine Regiments in camp and in the Third Brigade, Second Division of the Seventh Army Corps.[148] He reported that the Iowa 49th was the best equipped Regiment in camp with good, clean clothing and money. Troops from other states had not yet received any pay and most were poorly equipped with clothing and attended the 49th first Dress Parade as spectators. He described Jacksonville as a nice city with paved streets.

Jim's mother, Sarah, died June 30 after being stricken with paralysis. The *Eagle* of July 5 reprinted her obituary from the Cayuga, Indiana *Journal* and commented that "The many friends of Recorder Whipple will extend their sympathy to him in his great loss and regret that it was impossible for him to be at the bedside of his mother."

The Chaplain of the 49th, O. H. L. Mason, wrote Rev. Avery of the Vinton Presbyterian Church that the Regiment refused to "permit the canteen system within its limits" and that they were trying to keep the boys from visiting the resorts of the city." As a result, no men of the 49th



A Few Remarks

About the Northwest.

J. E. Whipple, the Land Man, returned last week from Southwest Minnesota and Northwest Iowa where he found immense crops. Wheat makes from 20 to 35 bushels per acre, oats 80 to 100 bushels per acre and other crops in proportion. Land in this region will double in value within three years. Why? First. Because there are no more government lands available for farming. Second. The settler will not go to the Western portions of the states of Dakota, Nebraska and Kansas until the Irrigation problem is solved which will necessarily take many years.

I will run an excursion to Pipestone county the Garden spot of this Incomparable Region, Monday September 30th. Call on me for information as to character of soil, crops, prices of lands, Railroad fare, etc.

J. E. WHIPPLE.

Office in City Building, Vinton, Iowa. 58tf.

Vinton Eagle 10 Sept. 1895

have been arrested while 150 arrests were made from other Regiments. He lamented the lack of a meeting place for religious services or social enjoyments and said that a tent and equipment will cost at least $300. He hoped that every community could send at least $25 to help buy the tent which would end the "questionable pastimes which infest camp life." Vinton raised $125 and sent $25 to pay for Co. G's portion. The balance was set aside "for such use as the Company may see fit, or as it is needed for sickness in camp or hospital." Adequate funds were received by the middle of July and the tent, dubbed "a branch of the YMCA," was dedicated July 24 with the first services at 7 a.m.[149]

Jim's AT THE FRONT report of July 18 described a trip about a hundred soldiers took to St. Augustine., Florida. Three other Vinton men joined him in chartering a small boat. They "put in" at north beach to swim and hunt shells. They saw "many big fish and porpoises four or five

feet long." They had dinner in the city and then visited the plaza, monuments, city gates, cathedral, old slave market, Fort Marion sea wall, St. Francis Barracks, and the oldest house in America. They were intrigued by the narrow streets which were smooth as a floor and made of cement and oyster shells and by the chameleons and how they changed color to conform to the color of the object they were on. He wrote of the fine residences owned by "Northerners who spend their winters here."

It was "a hot time in the old town" of Vinton Saturday afternoon and evening (July 14) when word of the fall of Santiago, Cuba was received. "Bells were rung, whistles were blown, and fire works were fired." In the evening small boys with tin horns and bonfires made the air rattle as "everybody rejoiced over the great victory."[150] Five days later a 60-mile-an-hour wind storm struck scooping up so much dust it was impossible to see in many parts of town. Many small buildings, fences, and windmills were blown down, haystacks toppled, and grain scattered.[151] The drought that summer had a serious effect on crops. Late potatoes were badly damaged and 25% of the corn crop was damaged.[152]

Jim's AT THE FRONT report of July 26[153] noted that life had become routine and most boys fixed up their quarters "as if they were going to stay for months." The tent he and seven others occupied was 12 x 14 with a floor. While crowded, things were arranged so they "got along nicely." The Company reported few illnesses because of the care of their professional nurse Harry Potter. To show their appreciation the boys presented him a leather medical case. He reported that the Col. William Jennings Bryan's 3rd Nebraska Regiment was expected any day and that Jacksonville's leading daily newspaper, even though Democratic, "earnestly endorsed the administration in its prosecution of the war." At mail call he received a letter from "the kid" who asked when he was going "to send him an alligator." He said he sent "the ugly animal" and presumed Co. G. Jr. would adopt it as a mascot.[154]

Jim's interest in politics hadn't diminished and he was getting acquainted with Florida Republicans. Professor C.T. McCarty of Ankona, about 250 miles south of Jacksonville, visited the Regiment twice and invited Jim to dinner at the Windsor, the leading hotel and Gen. Lee's headquarters. Jim felt conspicuous as the only "common soldier" in the dining room with majors, colonels, and generals. He said he "took in the situation from the corner of my eye" while enjoying the bill of fare from deviled crabs to finger bowls.[155]

The Watson Opera House showed REMEMBER THE MAINE July 29 and 30. It was a Wargraphe with 150 moving pictures of navy ships, Havana Harbor, Morro Castle, and the *Maine* before and after her sinking.[156] The admission was 10¢ and 25¢.

Cora (Whipple) Kellogg, Jim's first cousin, left Vinton July 28 to visit her husband, Lieut. Guy Kellogg, the Brigade's Judge Advocate. She wired her brother, W. P. on August 21 that Guy had died of typhoid fever. The attack of fever was severe and lasted a little over a week. Jim was detailed to accompany the remains to Vinton.[157]

SECOND NOMINATION FOR RECORDER

The county Republican Convention was held while Jim was in Vinton (Aug. 30) and his candidacy for Recorder was the only office to draw opposition. He was accused of being part of the "Murphy Ring" which "disregards the will of the Republican masses" by K.G. Ball of Taylor Township who nominated Alex Miller. Jim won 54 to 27.

Murphy's follow-up article in the *Eagle* stated that "not in years has the Party had before it a man who had as strong a claim upon its favors as Mr. Whipple." He wrote that Ball tries to make people believe Murphy is obnoxious, that Murphy is a friend of Whipple, ergo, he must oppose Mr. Whipple. He said Ball is continually fighting somebody; that last year his victim was Sam Metcalf who Murphy supported; that he wasn't satisfied with Metcalf's defeat so Whipple was this year's victim.

John Lorenz, Chairman of the Democratic Central Committee, immediately issued a circular to take advantage of the Republican fight. The circular highlighted Ball's attack against fellow Republican Whipple and the "Murphy Ring" and contrasted what he called a fractious Republican convention with the united and harmonious Democratic Convention. He urged Democrats to take advantage of the split by working until election day and predicted their entire ticket would win.

Murphy responded with an attack on Lorenz calling him a "dirty liar" who could not defeat the Republican nominees by honest methods so was using scurrilous tactics. He called Lorenz "a hired servant of one of the south slope bankers" and reminded his readers that Lorenz was a defeated Democratic candidate in the previous election. "He cannot forgive Mossman, Tobin, Bickel, and Whipple for that defeat and is using Ball in an effort to unseat Whipple." Lorenz will find he "should have attended to his legitimate business rather than to have again entered politics," Murphy said. He also blasted Ball for his "persistent misrepresentation of the Republican ticket."

The *Eagle* published a history of the public service of Mossman, Bickel, Whipple, and Tobin and concluded that "their records which are such that they cannot be assailed but the managers of the Democratic Party are prolific in schemes and they won't hesitate to adopt any means to defeat the ticket whether fair or foul."

Murphy told Republicans their county ticket "is worthy of your vote and your warm, active support and should receive it. They are your standard bearers and you should take pride in seeing that they are triumphantly elected."[158]

He praised L. J. Kirkland, newly elected Chairman of the County Republican Party, as a leader who will conduct a clean campaign. "There will be no scurrilous campaign circulars issued by him. The opposing candidates will be treated as gentlemen, and the campaign pushed along the lines laid down by the platforms issued by both parties."

He continued to attack Lorenz and added J. F. Allen, editor of the Democratic newspaper, the *Benton County Times,* and Alex Miller, the Republican candidate Jim defeated for nomination as Recorder, to his list of bad guys. He called Democratic headquarters "Mud Alley" and characterized Lorenz as a "hired servant of the bankers" and "chief mud slinger" whose only hope for a Democratic win "is to throw mud and lots of it."

"It is a matter of public notoriety that the Chairman of the Republican County Central Committee is the target of abuse by the opposition managers," Murphy said and added that Jim had been a target ever since he conducted three successful campaigns for the Party. Now those managers, headed by Lorenz, "are pouring their slimy poison against him and the other successful candidates of two years ago." He said Lorenz is enjoying the fruits of the Army's success while issuing a "slanderous circular" against Whipple who is in the Army. "Mr. Whipple isn't the first Chairman they have slandered and he won't be the last." Lorenz and his ilk "will use the same dastardly measures" in future campaigns.

He called Allen's distortions worse than Lorenz adding they were "like Satan trying to serve the Lord." "And," he continued, "Allen isn't worth paying any attention to. His reputation on misrepresentation is so well established, even among Democrats, that his circulation is curtailed by Democrats refusing to take his paper."[159]

The Belle Plaine *Union* joined the battle editorializing that it was "sorry to see the mud throwing and the bearing of false witness" and predicted it would continue through the whole campaign. The editor said it was high time for Belle Plaine Republicans to give notice they will look out for themselves and that no Democratic candidate, "shall have one inch of quarter from us, either for locality or friendship sake." The editor wrote he was prepared to take his chances with an open campaign by such men as Whipple, Mossman, Tobin, Bickel, Kerr, and Smith "and would wager his reputation that the young bosses of Benton county democracy will, in November, be the worst whipped set of pigeons you ever saw out in the rain."[160]

Murphy in his issue of September 27 ran an article headed: "HOT

STUFF—ANOTHER BUCKET OF MUD. The Office-Grabbers Can't Stand the *EAGLE'S* Hot Stuff." He said the office-grabbers had no "political principles" and were using the *Benton County Times* as their "mud sprinkler." He labeled editor Allen as "an ultra-populist" who "pelted" bankers and corporations in past elections and was now in the awkward position of supporting two bankers on the Democratic ticket, including a cashier of a bank Allen held stock in. "Poor old Allen of the poor old *Times*" was helpless and had to submit. It was the "gold-bug's inning," which Allen was finding hard to accept.[161]

Murphy took on Alex Miller in his issue of October 4. When he announced his candidacy for Recorder, Miller claimed to have been a Republican for 25 years. Murphy re-printed a story from the August 28, 1888 *Eagle* reporting Miller sought the nomination for Recorder on the Democratic ticket that year. Miller's conduct then and now were similar, Murphy said, pointing out he quit the Democratic Party then and today is going around the county preaching his love for Republicanism while tearing down the county ticket calling it rotten. "Voters will not believe him," Murphy said, "because it is well known that Benton county never had more faithful officials than Messrs. Whipple, Mossman, Bickel, and Tobin." He said Miller lacked credentials to tell life-time Republicans what they shall not do, "and a stronger man than he could not have prevented the nomination of Mr. Whipple"

Murphy reprinted a story from the *Vinton Review,* saying it was tired of Allen's misrepresentation of Republican officials. Murphy said the *Review* article "dressed Allen down in good shape and leaves him in that pitiable condition of being unable to reply" and predicted that Allen would now "practice upon the young editors of that paper as he does the editor of this paper."[162]

RESIGNS RECORDER NOMINATION

The *Eagle* of October 11 published a letter from Jim to Kirkland, the County Chairman, announcing he was resigning his nomination. Jim wrote said he expected to be discharged in time to canvass for votes and had made application for a discharge immediately after receiving the nomination but it was not forthcoming. He had assured his friends he would be home in time to make the canvass but since that is not now possible he did "not want to be placed in a false position and embarrass my Party and friends." He said he was withdrawing early to give the Party's candidate time to make the canvass.

In being unable to fill the office for a second term (which is usually

conceded county officers), I realize the financial sacrifice which I must make. I knew when I enlisted in April that I might be required to make the greatest sacrifice one can make for his country—that of his life. When I think of the deaths in the ranks during the last few weeks and of the hundreds laid low by sickness,[163] and then consider my own perfect health and full strength (which I hope may be preserved that the wife and boy and aged father, himself a disabled veteran of the Civil War, may be provided for in the future), then I feel that mine is sacrifice not worth mentioning. I have one regret above all other and that is my inability to face the contemptible, cowardly curs, who taking advantage of my absence, question my motives in enlisting in the war. Without heart, without conscience, without patriotism and with but pygmy brains, they are totally incapable of the glorious feeling of every boy of the 49th, when on the Dress Parade, the flag without a peer makes its appearance, or when standing at attention with bared heads they listen to the grand strains of "The Stars and Stripes Forever." I would ask but a corporal's guard of company G's beardless lads to put to rout a Regiment of such cravens. Regretting my inability to take part in the campaign and hoping for the success of the entire ticket, I remain, Respectfully yours.
/s/ J. E. Whipple.[164]

Murphy's article in the issue of October 14 said Jim's letter "stamps him as the true Republican patriot and soldier." He wrote that Jim's father was a "gallant soldier" of the Civil War and that Jim had said as long ago as last winter he would go if President McKinley called for troops. "In view of the facts, Mr. Whipple is fully justified in his criticism of those who have made efforts to impugn his motives. He can rest assured his calumners (those who make false and defamatory statements intended to damage the reputation of that person) do not represent the sentiment of his Party nor of the people of Benton county."

Daniel S. Rosenburg of Eden Township was nominated as Jim's replacement. The *Eagle* described him "as of the salt of the earth and one of the leading farmers in the county, of splendid intelligence, and business qualifications." He was going to canvass as much of the county as possible but, the *Eagle* editorialized, if voters don't "get a glimpse of him" they could vote "unreservedly" for him as a man amply qualified for the position. It said he was "entitled to the hearty and enthusiastic support of all Republicans." Republicans won all county offices in the November election.[165] Jim probably would have won without a personal canvas and the author wonders if, in hindsight, he regretted resigning his nomination.

The 49th was moved to Savannah, Georgia October 25 and was told to

get ready to go to Cuba to be a part of the Army of Occupation.[166] They received their sailing orders December 6 and set sail for Havana on the transport *Minnewaska* December 17. They were berthed on the second deck below the main deck with the mules and horses above them.[167]

Jim described their quarters as similar to a big cellar about eight feet deep with an iron floor. Their bunks were hammocks and cooking was done by steam in big iron kettles on the main deck. The average meal took two to three hours to serve. Many of the men including himself, got seasick. They reached Havana the 21st but did not enter the harbor until the 22nd and anchored near the wreck of the *Maine*.[168]

Jim's first report from Cuba, now named OUR CUBA LETTER, was written Christmas Day. He said the animals and baggage were removed from the ship first. The men, except Jim with a squad of 10, were in Camp Friday night. As quartermaster sergeant he and his squad had to remain dockside until Saturday to oversee shipment of baggage and supplies to Camp. He said the Cubans received them "as if they were saviors" and that the Spanish soldiers seemed friendly. Their Camp was on a high ridge in a potato field with a view of the sea which was about a four-mile hike away.[169] Everyone was in Camp Christmas day for a meal of beef steak, boiled potatoes, gravy, canned tomatoes, hard tack, and coffee. They spent the rest of the day on the beach swimming.[170] During their time in Cuba the hot rain drenched them and the tropical sun steamed them and had they mud on their clothes and had to sleep out.

In his OUR CUBA LETTER of February 2, Jim speculated that the local police assisted by a few batteries of artillery and a man of war or two in the harbor would be sufficient to maintain order and the rest of the Army of Occupation could go home. A Camp of Cuban women soldiers, who had been through the entire war "with all of its discomforts and dangers," were about a mile away. He said their efforts gave him another reason to endorse "long life and eternal sunshine to womankind." He noted it had been nine months since they left Vinton and that there had been considerable change in personnel. In writing about the death of members of the 49th, he said "many tears had been shed, many heartaches endured" and he wondered if they had been wasted.[171]

Jim and several other men visited Havana and the battleship *Texas* in mid February. The rail fare was 23¢ U.S. round trip from Camp. He wrote they were hoping for quick ratification of the peace treaty as they were tired of the inactive life they were leading. "Notwithstanding this feeling, no applications for discharge are being made as all want to be mustered out with the Regiment." He closed this report saying "I smoke my good night pipe, confident that our country, which has accomplished so much is fully able to take up the white man's burden."[172]

The Regiment participated in the Parade of Troops and the formal ceremonies in Havana January 1, 1899 of lowering the Spanish flag and the raising of the U.S. flag. Service in Cuba was more or less arduous. Companies were detailed to guard Havana's water supply, to perform Provost Guard Duty, and take charge of some of the forts and public property surrendered by the Spanish.[173]

Jim's next report was about an eight day march in February to impress the Cubans with U.S. strength. Every man carried a rifle, bayonet, belt with 25 rounds of ammunition, canteen filled with coffee, haversack with mess outfit and grub for one meal, and blanket roll. The grub was bacon and bread or hardtack; the blanket roll was a dog tent with blanket, tent stakes, change of underwear, etc. Ambulances and wagon trains followed. The wagon train consisted of two 4-mule wagons for each Company and carried grub, wood, cooking outfit, and officer's tent and baggage.[174]

With a dateline of Havana, April 9, Jim's HOMEWARD BOUND article in the issue of April 21 reported the Regiment boarded the Ward Line Ship *Havana* April 7 and encountered seas so rough that everyone got seasick—he described himself as the "sickest man who ever lived." They arrived at Savannah after dark on the 9th and remained in quarantine for five days when all their belongings were fumigated.

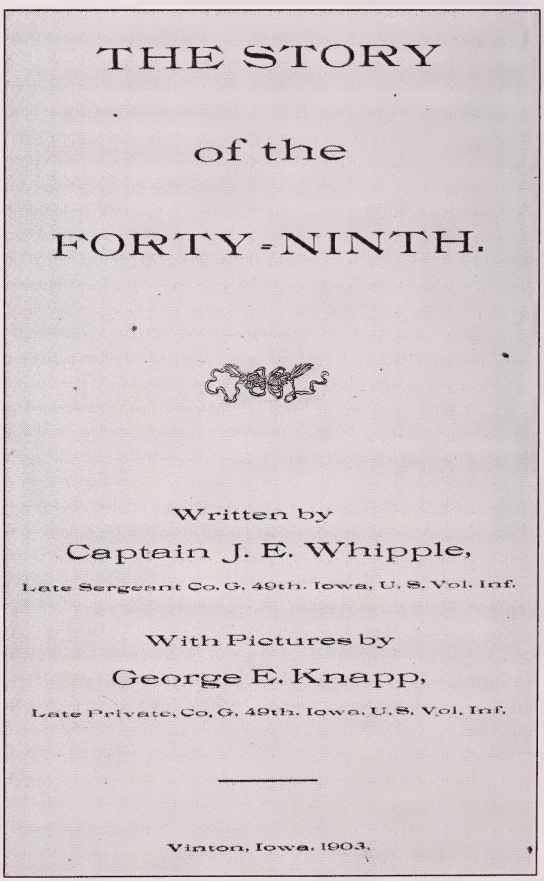
His article in the May 12 issue, WHEN JOHNNY COMES MARCHING HOME, reported they would be paid and mustered out May 13 at Savannah and leave on a special train traveling through Macon, Atlanta, Chattanooga, Lexington, Cincinnati, and Chicago where they would lay over until midnight when a special train would take them to Vinton. The Company mascot, "Old Dewey," an eagle, was coming with them and the Company hoped Dewey could be housed on the Court House Square. Hosa Fandies, 16, from San Juan, Puerto Rico, who spent six months on a Spanish prison ship, was also with them and would go to Nora Spring with Corp. Pierce to attend school. Most of the boys brought a machete home as well as pockets full of Mauser cartridges.

FORTY-NINTH RETURNS FROM CUBA

They arrived at 10 a.m. Tuesday the 15th and despite inclement weather 7,000 greeted them "with the grandest reception ever recorded in the history of Benton county." There was music by a Belle Plaine group, a chorus of 140, and martial music by drum corps playing "See the Conquering Hero Comes." Company G Jr., commanded by Capt. Blaine Whipple, was part of the welcoming procession.[175] W.P. Whipple and M.J. Tobin welcomed them home and gave speeches about Old Glory. Jim responded for the company:

The experiences of the past year will not soon be forgotten by the members of Co. G and this splendid reception will always keep a place in our memories. Many times as we sat around the campfire we talked of when we would get home. We expected joyous greetings from relatives and friends, and were pretty sure there would be a banquet. But we did not hope for all this. Proper expression of our thanks is beyond me. I can only say, on behalf of every member of Co. G that we gratefully accept your hospitality and are truly thankful for it. We fully appreciate your words of welcome and the welcome that is stamped on every countenance and the smiles and firm hand clasps which have captured our hearts.

Today I have seen eyes dimmed by tears of joy and other eyes filled with tears saddened by thoughts of those for whom the taps have sounded. Opposite those names on the company roll call have been written "Detailed for Duty Above." In five cemeteries in Iowa are five members of Co. G at rest in the long last sleep. Wrapped in the soil of a now happy Cuba is our sixth sacrifice to the cause of humanity. None fell in battle, nor did they hear the singing of bullets, except across the rifle range, yet they surely gave their lives for the starry banner as if they had fallen in the trenches about Santiago. Most of us had to contend with the fever at Jacksonville. I have seen Dress Parades with no more than 200 although we were nearly 1,300 in number. When the Secretary of War reviewed the 7th Corps only 300 men of our Regiment were able to carry a gun and march in the ranks. The 49th suffered more than most regiments.


THE STORY

of the

FORTY-NINTH.

Written by

Captain J. E. Whipple,

Late Sergeant Co. G. 49th. Iowa, U. S. Vol. Inf.

With Pictures by

George E. Knapp,

Late Private, Co. G. 49th. Iowa, U. S. Vol. Inf.

Vinton, Iowa. 1903.

Had it not been for

the precautions taken and the care given the sick, the death toll would have been much larger and would probably include some of the boys here today. Much praise is due the sugeons and the hospitals but most praise goes to the hospital nurses, those splendid women who unselfishly, devotedly, and tenderly cared for the boys who succumbed to the dread typhoid. These angels of mercy are everywhere, whether in our country or on foreign soil, where we have military hospitals. They work earnestly soothing the fevered brow, encouraging the depressed, and coaxing the convalescent to recovery. I was not in any hospital except as a visitor but my observations and information received from the boys who were have convinced me that we cannot give too much credit to the Army nurse.[176]

My memory runs back to the Civil War and I lived during the days of Reconstruction, and being the son of a Union soldier and surrounded and influenced entirely by northern ideas, I unconsciously became somewhat prejudicial against the southern people. The year just passed has materially changed my views. I am satisfied they can be relied on to stand by the north in defense of the flag. Some close friendships were formed between individuals and between Regiments. The two Regiments most noted in this respect were the 49th and the 4th Virginia. This feeling has existed since we first went to Jacksonville 11 months ago. As far as these two Regiments are concerned, the last vestige of the Mason and Dixon line has been erased from the map.[177]

Among the many things which interested us in Cuba were the cemeteries. They are surrounded by high walls built of brick or stone. Having been used for many years, they are very crowded. An annual rent is charged for each grave. If not paid, the bones are dug up and thrown into enclosures built for that purpose. As I looked at the great pile of bones and grinning skulls, I thought of them filled with life. That skull may have cradled a brain that dreamed of schemes for the betterment of mankind or for the liberation of enslaved people. That small one belonged to a child who never knew the trials and sorrows and troubles of its elders.

The world was startled on February 15, 1898 by the news of the most dastardly crime ever perpetrated—the blowing up of the *Maine*. Because of the time-consuming investigation required before any action was taken, many Americans were accusing our President of possessing a wobbling vertebra. Three months later when victory had been achieved, thanks to the men behind the guns on land and at sea, the same people were praising him for the course he pursued

and saying "I told you so." The genius of Dewey and the bravery of his crews have given our country new problems and responsibilities. Is there anyone here who would tarnish the fame of the great Admiral, and discount his own patriotism by refusing to uphold the arm that is supporting the brave boys in the Philippines while they are maintaining those responsibilities? The smiling faces and words of cheer and waving flags before us today cannot belong to a people who would repudiate a responsibility incurred while defending so righteous a cause as that which impelled this country to war and which gained the plaudits of the civilized world.[178]

A banquet was held that evening in the Armory. The straight plain walls had been transformed into bowers of beauty with greens and fragrant flowers. The menu included cold ham, roast chicken, spanished deviled eggs, vealed salad in lettuce, cranberry sauces, pickles, jelly, potato chips, rhubarb, berry, and apple pie, angel food, demon's, and coconut cake, lady fingers, Cuban cake, macaroons, white and brown bread, rolls, buns, ice cream, oranges, bananas, strawberries, and coffee.[179] During the banquet the Sons of Veterans Quartet stood on the rostrum with their heads together and sang: "Tenting tonight! Tenting tonight! Tenting on the old Campground!" Then they knew they were heros.

Ellen gave Jim a gold Elgin pocket watch as a coming home gift. It was engraved to J. E. Whipple from Ellen and included the date May 15, 1899. It is now a proud possession of the author. Jim gave his cousin W. P. a unique souvenir, a large paper weight made of a section of a palm tree with the name Whipple standing in relief and two pieces of wood from the wreck of the battleship *Maine* embedded in the surface.[180]

Life back in Vinton began where it had left off for Jim. He commanded the firing squad Decoration Day with members of Co. G wearing campaign hat, blouse, blue trousers, and leggings. He was named to the Resolutions Committee of the County Republican Convention in June and reentered the real estate brokerage business in July with offices on Washington street over Miller's grocery store. He advertised improved farms for sale in Madison, Lake county, South Dakota describing them as good for cattle, hogs, sheep, corn, wheat, oats and native grasses "richer than timothy or clover." He scheduled a land excursion to Madison August 18.[181]

The Whipples had a near tragedy Monday night July 17 when their niece Mamie Thompson, who had been living with them for two years, attempted suicide by jumping off the Fifth street bridge in Waterloo into the Cedar river. She mailed a letter to Jim and Ellen from Waterloo, received Tuesday, telling them of her intent to take her own life. The

police pulled her out of the river and called the Whipples who took the midnight train to Waterloo and brought her back on the early Tuesday train. Other than a badly sprained ankle, she was uninjured. During the previous few months she had been working at a Vinton restaurant. The motive for the attempted suicide was thought to be poor health. She was an attractive 20-year-old and regarded "as an upright Christian girl" but her illness kept her from the company of other young people.[182]

ELECTED CAPTAIN OF COMANY G

Early in August Iowa Adjutant General Byers issued orders for the reorganization of Company G 49th Iowa Volunteers which took place at a meeting in Vinton September 21. General Byers mustered the Company which elected Jim its Captain. Among the 48 officers and enlisted men were Blaine Whipple, 16, and Hiram D. Whipple, Blaine's second cousin and Jim's first cousin once removed. The members met three days later to be measured for uniforms and for a short drill.[183]

Buffalo Bill's Wild West and Congress of Rough Riders of the World played Cedar Rapids September 28. The show featured the Battle of San Juan with many of Teddy Roosevelt's Rough Riders. It also had an exhibition of " Filipinos and Hawaiians, the new American citizens in all their savage picturesqueness." People were encouraged to come and "compare them with the American Indian." The Whipple family undoubtedly entrained to Cedar Rapids to take in this event.[184]

Jim bought the J. S. Brooks residence two blocks south of the depot in early August, re modeled it and turned it into a rental.[185] He and W. P. were delegates to the Republican State Convention in Des Moines August 2 and Jim also accepted appointment to the Republican speaker's list for the November election. Miller, who opposed Jim for the Republican nomination in the previous election, was now a hired agent of the Democratic candidates. Editor Murphy gleefully reminded voters how Miller "rode over the county day and night a year ago, spent time and money without stint, circulated vile and slanderous stories, spread debased and unmitigated falsehoods, and resorted to all the mean and low devices known to a fourth-ward Chicago politician." Each Party won three offices in the general election,[186] the Republicans carried the state ticket, and Murphy was appointed State Printer.[187]

Company G held it first drill with its new uniforms October 30. Unfortunately, there were only 42 uniforms for 49 men. Jim, anxious that the Company become proficient, held many drills in both the Armory and into the countryside as well as camp outs for several days at a time.[188] A fund raising program was held at the Armory December 28 to benefit

"Old Dewey," their eagle mascot. Various pictures taken while the 49th was on active duty, especially Cuban pictures, were shown. Jim narrated the program. Admission was 15¢, children under 12, 10¢. Dewey was clubbed by three individuals and died November 14, 1900. When he first came home he was caged in the Court House Yard but as he became tame, he was given the "run" of the yard. No reason for the clubbing was given. He was buried with military honors.[189]

Vinton experienced a number of events in 1900. A new water fountain for horses was built and the ice harvest on the Cedar river began in January.[190] The federal census showed its population grew by 600 over 1890 to 3,499. The B.C.R. & N. announced a new train to Chicago leaving at 8:30 a.m. daily except Sunday. It had a parlor car of the latest design where chairs could be reserved for 75¢ and a dining car was added at Rock Island, Illinois which served a 50¢ dinner described "as fine as any that can be obtained anywhere." It also discontinued newsboys on its trains.[191] Edison's Great Motion Pictures were shown at the Opera House May 14 and featured scenes of the Spanish-American War, the Switzerland Alps, Flags of all Nations, President McKinley and escort, Queen Victoria in royal carriage drawn by eight horses, a fast train, a fire scene, and a storm in mid ocean taken from the deck of a steamship.[192]

The Vinton Savings Bank was chartered with capital of $20,000 with W. P. a director. The Benton County Telephone Co. was organized to provide long distance service countywide and to LaPorte in Blackhawk and Brandon in Buchanan counties. W. P. was one of the incorporators and Treasurer. Horses were no longer to be left standing in the Court House Yard. They were to be unhitched and tied to the chain. Rural Free Delivery was inaugurated in the county in October and Republicans swept all county and statewide races in the general election, including a large victory by McKinley over Bryan.[193]

BUYS AND EDITS THE VINTON *REVIEW*

Jim was named Chief Marshal of the Benton County Agricultural Association on February 22 and in March 1900 purchased, along with Ed Gerberich, the Vinton *Review*, a weekly newspaper.[194] Like Jim, Ed was a native of Vinton and also a printer. Ed and his brother Frank had previously owned the paper selling it in June of 1899 to A.L. Flude of Springville, Iowa.[195] In their first issue, Whipple, the editor, and Gerberich, the business manager, said the paper would be Republican politically but their principal aim was "to publish a first class country paper."[196] The *Eagle* editor said Messrs. Whipple and Gerberich "will make a good team and will bring good business management to the paper."[197] Blaine, 17, was hired as the

paper's "printer's devil" and represented the paper at LaPorte for its July 4th celebration "since his girlfriend was from that town."[198]

A large crowd was on hand for the dedication of the new B.C.R. & N. depot Thursday February 29. W.P. Whipple recalled when as a boy he saw the first train arrive at Vinton December 14, 1869. The new facility cost $75,000. Company G announced a grand program to be held at Watson's Opera House Friday March 23.[199] Twenty-five to 30 of Vinton's best talent were booked to present new songs and new jokes. Music was by the Mandolin Club and Bigger's Trio. The Company's drill team would perform and the Coontown Belles and Swells would run a cake walk. Jim was named manager of the production and Edwin H. Achuff, director. Prices were 25¢ for the lower floor and 15¢ for the gallery.[200]

The James Whipple family signed up for telephone service from Vinton's new telephone exchange, the Vinton Telephone Co., the end of March. Rates were 03.5¢ per day. Their number was 172. The *Review*, also a subscriber, was given number 72.[201] The *Eagle's* hand power press broke down March 16 and the paper was printed by the *Review* until the *Eagle's* new Babcock press arrived. The new press printed 1800 pages per hour vs. 800 for the old.[202] Jim was one of the more active men in Vinton in 1900. He presented a Stereopticon[203] program sponsored by the Woman's Relief Corps at the City Hall April 5, was elected to the Republican Congressional Convention later in April, named to the Executive, Speaker's, and Program Committees of the Memorial Day observance (May 30), appointed to the Finance Committee of the Benton County Veterans Association (which was planning its 22nd annual reunion in late September), elected President of the McKinley and Roosevelt Club in September (met with Gov. T. Roosevelt in Waterloo October 5),[204] was in charge of the Republican rally attended by approximately 7,000 October 26, and elected Chancellor Commander of Fidelity Lodge of the Knights of Pythias[205] in December.[206]

Company G joined 11 other Companies at Camp Kellogg in Cedar Rapids August 15-18. Jim was the First Officer of the Day. Cora Kellogg, widow of Lieut. Kellogg, received special attention and along with Ellen Whipple was entertained at the headquarters mess on Sunday on the occasion of the Governor's visit.[207]

DECLINES TO SEEK POSTMASTER JOB

When B. "Pat" Murphy, the Vinton Postmaster, announced his retirement in the fall of 1900 Jim and George Covert announced they would seek appointment but Jim later withdrew. In commenting on the race Murphy, both Postmaster and *Eagle* owner-editor, complemented him on with-

drawing in favor of Covert, the candidate of the veterans of the Civil War. Jim published his reasons in the *Review* November 15:

> It has been my ambition for some time to be Postmaster of Vinton. Many of my friends urged me to be an applicant which I did and received the written endorsements of two-thirds of the business and professional men of Vinton. I believe that I have the backing of most of the Republicans in Vinton and vicinity. This support is gratifying. It was given because of certain honorable services I have rendered my Party.
>
> Accepting the Chairmanship of the Central Comittee in 1893 when the Democrats were in control of most of the county offices and their candidate for Governor had carried the county by a margin of 600.
>
> I organized a campaign that resulted in Republican victories. I have been active in every campaign for more than 20 years except in 1898 when I was under a contract with Uncle Sam which required me to remain at Savannah, Georgia. This work has made me a host of friends in the Party.
>
> With these things in my favor, it will be a surprise to my friends to learn that I have withdrawn as a candidate. I do this, not because I have no claims or sufficient strength to win, but out of my regard for that body of men who stood by the government in its most trying hour, the soldiers of the Civil War.
>
> They are practically unanimous that one of their number is entitled to the appointment. I recognize the justness of their claim, since they ask it with such unanimity. I have always been an advocate of the cause of the old soldiers. At this late day I will not be so inconsistent to allow ambition to stand in the way of their desires. No other influence on earth could have caused me to do this.
>
> George K. Covert gave the best years of his life to his country and should be appointed to succeed Mr. Murphy who resigned to become Iowa State Printer. I extend my most grateful thanks to the many friends who have so freely given me their support in the past.
> J. E. Whipple

From September through the election the *Review* was full of Republican propaganda. Jim's column was almost entirely devoted to the campaign, always positive Republican and negative Bryan and the Democratic Party. Most issues also contained many other columns of anti-Democratic and pro-Republican content.

Various Vinton stores were advertising specials the first week of Janu-

ary 1901[208] and the town had 12 inches of snow the first two weeks of February. Jim was named to the Program Committee for Decoration Day, Reception Committee for the Fourth of July celebration, Chairman of the Entertainment and Lodging Committees for the 23rd annual reunion of the Benton County Veterans Association, elected Commander of the new organized Tent of the Macabees April 5,[209] and the Republican Speakers Committee for the fall election. The Fidelity Lodge No. 47, Knights of Pythias, opened their new Castle Hall April 30 with Chancellor Commander Jim and Grand Chancellor Bernard Murphy calling the gathering to order.[210]

In July Jim placed third in the state National Guard marksmen tournament with 121 points. He sold Lot 2, Block 2 in Whipple's addition to Martha Morton for $25.[211] Company G went to Camp in Dubuque in late July on A special Illinois Central train. Captain J. E. and Corp. Blaine Whipple among the members. Pawnee Bill's[212] Wild West Show gave two performances in Vinton August 31. It had a cast of 1,000 people and animals and featured Indians, Cossacks, Arabs, Cowboys, Japanese, Mexicans, Gauchos, and Daring Lady Equestrians in heroic pastimes on foot and in the saddle. Special features included champion rifle and pistol shooters and Australian bushmen. It also included a juvenile Wild West Show for the youngsters.[213]

Jim's cousin W. P. was elected to the Iowa State Senate in 1901 to represent Benton and Tama counties. The Republicans also carried every county office with Whipple's Benton county margin of 1,016 the largest margin ever by any candidate for county or district office. It was the first time in 15 years that Democrats held no office in the county.[214]

WHIPPLE AND MURPHY WAGE WAR OF WORDS

Jim and Pat (Bernard) Murphy started an editorial war against each other in late July 1901 when each supported a different candidate for governor. In those days when most towns had more than one newspaper, editors regularly lambasted one another over any issue possible. The war of words usually increased circulation of both papers because readers enjoyed the sparing with words. How serious Jim and Pat were is unknown but they threw some pretty good blows at each other as the following demonstrates:

> **Jim, July 24.** In Benton county is revealed a quietude that is all the more remarkable because of the continuous assaults made on the candidacy of Mr. Cummins in the columns of that most excellent sheet, the Vinton *Eagle*. It's able editor and our good friend Mr. Murphy is well pleased with this quietness for it will the more easily

enable him to control the 19 votes in the state convention, which theoretically, are supposed to be controlled by the 3,600 Republicans of Benton county. Among these 3,600 is a curious desire to know who is to get the Benton county vote. Of course as one of the 3,600 it is none of our business, but we are still curious to know whether the vest pocket of our friend of many distinctions contains the name of Trewin or Harriman.

Pat, July 26. Our genial friend, J. E. Whipple of the *Review*, who supports someone other than we do for the office of Governor, registers a mild kick against the editor of this paper in his last issue. It is a mild kick. He wouldn't have the nerve to register a hard one. Jim has drawn on our resources too often and the time came when we had to ask Jim to try and walk alone. We supported him loyally as City Clerk, and then to give him more salary we helped to attach another salary by helping him to get the Superintendency of the Waterworks and Electric Light Plant. Jim grew and wanted to be Chairman of the County Central Committee and like a true soldier we obeyed and did what we could to bring it about.

Jim grew and wanted to be Recorder of the county and like a true soldier we obeyed orders. He got it and then wanted a renomination and like a true soldier we obeyed orders and did what we could to bring it about. It came about and it goes without saying we got more "cussing" than hardly ever falls to the lot of a mortal man.

Jim runs the harpoon into us because we did not help him get the job of Postmaster, and insinuates that we were trying to dictate to the 3,600 Republicans of Benton county. Jim can rest his soul in peace. We are going to be with 3,600 Republicans. We always have been with them. We cannot help Jim being sour. God knows we have done all in our power to make life easy for him.

Jim, Aug. 1. The editor of the *Eagle* deals the editor of the *Review* one of his celebrated neck blows in Friday's issue of his paper. Brother Murphy has a habit of doing this with people who fail to appreciate the importance of the fact that Pat owns the earth—in his mind.

This is the second exhibition of this kind by Pat within two weeks. About that time he "et up" W. E. Bickel because that gentleman has a habit of doing his own thinking thus relieving Pat of that duty. And now he goes after us. He does it editorially too. Just think of the honor to have one's name on the same page with those ponderous editorials that regulate the universe.

Mr. Editor Murphy says that Jim (meaning the editor of the *Review*) hasn't nerve enough to make a hard kick against his being the whole thing. Now as to that Jim has only to say that according to his (Murphy's) idea of nerve he is probably correct. It also is probably true, according to this standard that he (Murphy) is the nerviest individual now living. The commodities that constitute that kind of nerve is wind and unlimited gall.

However, Jim does not need the endorsement of Mr. Murphy in order to demonstrate whether he has the kind of nerve that is nerve. He will leave the decision of that question to those who know him. In the assurance that is characteristic of Pat, he claims to have put in most of his time getting jobs for Jim. In answer to this we have to say that the facts do not at all dovetail with Pat's statement. When Jim was first elected City Clerk, Pat was not a member of the City Council. But with his usual gall, he takes credit for it. The subsequent elections were unanimous, every one of the eight members of the Council giving Jim his vote. Murphy was one of the eight but according to his usual custom he would have all the readers of his esteemed journal believe he owned the other seven, all of which they will appreciate.

Pat says Jim wanted to be Chairman of the County Central Committee and he landed the place for him. Pat is very forgetful or else a most consummate prevaricator. The facts are that in 1893 the Republican Party was in poor condition. Two years before the Democratic candidate for Governor carried the county by a plurality of 661. Under those conditions there was not much hopefulness among Republicans. However, it was decided to put up a hard fight and to that end it was necessary to have some one at the head of the Committee who could and would do hard fighting and who would make sacrifices of time with little hope of reward. he Committee felt that Mr. Murphy was the man and they elected him. Did he accept? He did not. There was no hope of reward save the consciousness of doing his duty to the Party that had loyally supported him and his paper. Murphy refused to perform that duty assigned him by his Party.

The Committee then asked Jim to make the fight. Did he accept his duty? He did. Did he perform this duty? As it is Jim who is penning these lines we must refer you to any Republican who remembers that campaign and the two succeeding campaigns. Go ask Murphy himself, or any of his lieutenants who are entirely familiar with all the circumstances. They will admit he did his duty. Was there any lack of nerve on the part of Jim in performing these duties? We again refer you to Mr. Murphy and his staff. If there is

any one thing in his life that JIM WHIPPLE is prouder of than anything else of a political nature it is his work as Chairman during those three years when Benton county was redeemed from the Democrats. How will these three years compare with any other three years. Again, we ask Mr. Murphy to arise and testify.

In 1898 Jim was nominated for Recorder. From Murphy's editorial we are asked to believe he waved his magic want and the thing was done. "Honest Injun," did not Jim's work in those campaigns have something to do with his nomination? As Murphy is not a liar, we again refer you to him. Murphy says that Jim wanted to be re nominated and once more his magic wand waved. Again the God of forgetfulness takes up his abode in Murphy's brain. As he does not give any of the facts surrounding this matter we find it necessary to do so. This was in the summer of 1898 when Uncle Sam was engaged in a little scrap with Spain. Jim was at Jacksonville, Florida with the 49th Iowa.

He received letters from a number of men in Benton county asking if he wanted a renomination, which he was entitled to on political grounds alone, but felt he should not accept unless the Regiment was soon mustered out. As the fighting was over it was reasonable to expect the Regiment would soon be sent home and mustered out. For advice on this point he had an interview with Colonel Dows. The Colonel had no information that would indicate when our Army service would end. As a result of this interview and acting largely on the advice of Col. Dows, Jim wrote his friends that he was not a candidate at that time but hoped that he would not be forgotten after he was discharged.

That would probably have ended the matter but for the death of a comrade, whose body he accompanied to Vinton. Murphy met Jim at Burlington and they rode together to Vinton. The two had a long talk on the political situation in the county and Mr. Murphy felt Jim should take the nomination.

The convention was held only a few days later, and acting on the advice of Murphy and others, Jim consented to take the nomination. At that time it was expected the Regiment would be mustered out in a few weeks. After he returned to his Regiment Jim learned it would be kept in the service for an indefinite period and he promptly withdrew, thus relieving his fellow nominees from the duty of making his campaign for him. For this sacrifice, protestations of remembrance flowed in upon Jim and the *Eagle* said "Amen" in a manner that would have done credit to a Methodist class leader.

Mr. Murphy says that Jim wanted to be Postmaster but that he

wouldn't consent. He says he doubts Jim could have gotten it even with his help. In other words he means that the people wouldn't have it that way. On this point we only have to say that Jim has in his possession a petition asking his appointment and containing the names of two-thirds of the businessmen of Vinton. The petition was not presented for Jim withdrew in favor of an old soldier of the Civil War. The real reason Murphy did not support Jim for Postmaster is because Jim went into a business that competes with Murphy without first asking Murphy's consent.

Murphy says he has been getting offices for Jim. Let us see what he himself has been doing in the way of holding offices, and whether Jim has contributed anything towards his getting them. Three times Murphy was a candidate for the City Council and each time Jim had to help round up enough votes to elect him. One of these times Murphy was an independent candidate against the regular Republican nominee. It is the only time Jim ever failed to support the regular ticket and he is heartily ashamed of that action. Once Murphy ran against Allen of the *Times* and there was a square fight on Party lines. Murphy only had a seven vote majority, though the regular Republican majority at that time was more than 60. Murphy aspired to be State Printer. He failed of election the first time, but resolved to wait six years and then get the office. Every influence was used to get him the job then. Jim contributed his mite and he does not regret it. He is glad that Murphy is now State Printer and hopes he will hold the job. Incidentally, Murphy took in a few offices. It is Jim that circulated the petition that got Murphy the job as Postmaster. Whenever Murphy wanted anything else from Grand Chancellor to being a delegate—and Murphy always wanted to be a delegate—Jim helped in his best way, weak though it may have been.

Pat seems to be impressed with the idea that everybody is afraid of him. He has scared off men before now and thinks he can scare Jim. But the facts are that Jim don't know enough to be scared. If he did he could realize how awful it is to be "sat on" by Pat who says Jim is dead.Well! Well! Just think how horrible it is to be dead and not know it. But after all Murphy will discover he has run up against a pretty lively corpse. Leaving the above lines for Mr. Murphy's consideration we will close this awaiting his appearance at the bat.

The entire front page of the *Review* of September 19 was devoted to the death of President McKinley. He was described as our martyred President and a large picture of him graced the center of the

page. Jim also ran Dr. Henry Gannett article, "THE AVERAGE AMERICAN," reprinted from *Everybody's Magazine*: The average American is a man five feet eight inches in height, with a chest girt of 36 inches and a weight of 150 pounds. He is nearly an inch taller than his English cousin and more than an inch taller than his distant cousin, the German. He probably looks over the heads of all European people. In weight, however, he is exceeded by both Englishmen and Germans, being of slimmer and lighter build, although he is probably as heavy as the average European.His family consists of a wife and three children, a fourth child having died in infancy. His age is 37 and he expects to live 30 more years. His expectation of life is greater by a year or two than that of any other people, those who most nearly approach him being our kin, the English and Germans. His wife is 35, five feet four inches, and weighs 126 pounds. She will live to the age of 68. They were married 10 years ago. The two older children are pursuing their studies in the public school, which the youngest child has not yet entered. Both he and his wife received a common school education but did not continue their studies in the high school.

He is a slave to tobacco. He consumes 20 pounds of the narcotic weed a year, or one ounce per day, and although he has used it freely since he was grown, as did his father and grandfather, it does not appear that he has suffered any mental or physical deterioration in consequence of such indulgence. Though by no means an intemperate man, neither is he an advocate for total abstinence. Annually his family, which means in the main himself, consumes 7.5 gallons of spirits and wine, and not less than 75 gallons of beer. This last item illustrates a characteristic with his German strain. He used less spirits and more malt liquors than did his immediate ancestors.

In the *Review* of November 21, Jim gave credit to a Democrat, probably the first time he had done so in his life. The object of his praise was State Senator Nolan of Dubuque who apparently was re elected by a small plurality. However, upon official canvas of the vote, one township showed 100 more votes for Nolan than had been cast. The Board of Supervisors believed it did not have authority to change the outcome. Nolan settled the issue stating "he would not take an office to which he had not been fairly elected and asked that the Certificate of Election be issued to his opponent. In an editorial comment Jim wrote that when he was younger he believed that Democrats were lost to all sense of shame or honesty. His view was caused by the bitter partisan feelings that existed for 20 years after the Civil War. He said he eventually changed his mind and said Nolan, a prominent

Democrat, "did honor to himself and to his sense of justice."

The year ended with an illustrated stereopticon show with views of the Iowa 49th Regiment made from photographs taken by Major Clapp. The views showed life in Cuba of both the Army and the Cubans.

The year 1902 was more of the same for Jim.[215] He was elected Delegate to the City Republican Convention from the First Ward (his previous elections were from the Third Ward so the family must have moved), to the County Central Committee, and he and W. P. were elected Delegates to the State Convention. The family changed its patronage to the Vinton and Benton County Telephone Co. in May and were given the number 385. He was in charge of the annual inspection of Company G conducted by Col. J. R. Prime, Inspector General of the Iowa National Guard. A large crowd was on hand and the 40 men in line made an excellent showing. He commanded the Company in late May when it fired the salute and decorated 22 graves at the Bear Creek Memorial Services.[216] He was named both Vice President of the day and to the Program Committee to observe Decoration Day, and commanded the Grand Lodge of the Knights of Pythias as it observed Memorial Day with services at Evergreen Cemetery.[217]

He was the surprise recipient of a fine new sword given him by members of Company G while at annual camp in Cedar Falls in late August. The men asked Col. Dows to make the presentation and the Colonel decided it should be done at Dress Parade. Everyone from Gov. Cummings, who was present, down to the Company bootblack knew of the presentation except Jim and he did not catch on until Col. Dows began his presentation speech. It was one of the few times Jim was at a loss for words although he did attempt to express his thanks. The blade is of the best steel, the hilt and mounting of the scabbard are gold, and the grip silver. The blade was inscribed "Co. G to Capt. J. E. Whipple."[218]

May and June were extremely wet months with 17 days of rain in May and 20 in June. One of the worst rain storms in years hit Thursday night June 5 and washed out many railroad and wagon bridges leaving Vinton without train service for several days. The ground was so soaked it was impossible to put up hay and the oat harvest was late. The river was at its highest since 1884 and the bottoms were flooded and many cattle drowned. Another cloud burst hit Tuesday August 19 with six inches falling within an hour. Lightening burned out several telephones, many basements were flooded, and sidewalks washed away.[219]

The Post Office issued a new series of stamps in November – the first new issue since 1869. Included were a 2¢ stamp displaying the Stars and Stripes and one with a photo of Gilbert Stuart's painting of Washington.[220]

The *Review* and a number of other Iowa papers began publishing Jim's

Story of the Forty-Ninth in August. Many officers and men asked him to undertake the task and made their diaries available. He wrote an article two columns in length weekly based on events in order of their happening. He published it in book form at the *Review* plant in January 1903. It was a 66-page soft cover book illustrated with 116 pictures taken by members of the Regiment while in service. The book was copyrighted by Jim and a copy is in the Library of Congress in Washington, D.C. The author also has a copy. It sold for $1.[221] In his Introduction, Jim wrote:

> In presenting *The Story of the Forty-ninth* to the public I have only endeavored to give some of my recollections and not a history of the Regiment. My point of view was from the ranks, and the things of which I have written are naturally those experienced by the enlisted man.
>
> Of the enlisted men of the Regiment a volume could be written. They were from every grade and class of our citizenship. Army life in the ranks is a great leveler. The hod carrier and the banker slept under the same blanket. The well digger and the preacher touched elbows and shared each other's troubles and pleasures. The day laborer and the lawyer were partners in games of cinch,[222] while the farm hand and the doctor ran the guard lines together. There were enough men of every profession, line of business, or occupation to supply any community. It is said that the wealthiest man in the Regiment was the Colonel, and the next in line with this world's goods was a high private. It must be admitted that the enlisted men of the Forty-ninth were able to "make good" under all conditions or circumstances.
>
> The officers of the Regiment were in every respect fitted to command such men. For the most part it was their chief aim to care for their men, and by their own example set the standard for soldierly conduct.
>
> The author desires to express his thanks for kindly assistance rendered by many, and especially to Lieut. Frank M. Haradon, of Co. H, and Private Joseph H. Allen, of Co. F for a number of the plates used in illustrating this humble book. Colonel Dows, Lieut. Nattinger, Serg't W.E. Bickel, and *The Times Citizen Union* of Jacksonville, Fla., are also entitled to credit for favors shown.
>
> He who looks for literary merit in this book will waste his time. If my former comrades read its pages with any degree of interest then I shall be satisfied.
>
> J. E. Whipple, Vinton, January 5, 1903.

Company G presented its fourth annual minstrel entertainment at Wat-

son's Opera House March 17. Blaine Whipple played Lawyer Fleece in the "Kangaroo Kourt" during Part 1 and gave the lecture "Any Old Thing" in Part 2. Admission was 25¢ and 30¢. Frank G. King, "Chic" Perkins, and a good company presented "The Boy Tramp" at Watson's March 23. It was dubbed "one of the best comedy-dramas now before the public." King was described as handsome and graceful with a fine voice who was "an unusually fine comedian and splendid actor."[223] The King-Perkins Co. was back in Vinton December 16 with its fifth annual tour and presented the comedy "Old Farmer Hopkins," described as "a delightful idyll of rural life, enhanced by a lavish display of costly scenery and paraphernalia." The *Eagle* of December 16 said that a King-Perkins company means "a collection of players whose art is acknowledged and complete and that you can take your family to without worrying about vulgarity."

Jim began advocating for a new Armory in January 1904 to replace the existing inadequate building. He proposed a concrete 60x100 foot building to contain a drill hall, quarters for assembly, locker rooms, and room for quartermaster supplies. He estimated it could be built for $5,000 and proposed issuance of stock to fund the building. The stock would be issued by an entity composed of members of Company G and pay 4% interest annually. He said the $300 annual Armory rent would meet the interest obligation. He noted the building would be available for other community events and be a boon to the community.[224]

The Company announced it fifth annual entertainment program would be held February 26 at the Opera House. A military drama of the Civil War would be presented with Jim as John Bosworth, an old soldier. Cost was 25¢ and 35¢ with no extra charge for reserved seats.[225]

The Knights of the Maccabees elected Jim a Trustee of Titus Tent No. 93 in January and in April he announced he would seek the office of County Clerk. Hugh Mossman of Vinton and a former County Clerk announced for the same position. Jim defeated Mossman at the Vinton Republican caucus April 23 by a vote of 271-181. He carried all four Wards. However, Ferman G. Bryner of Newhall defeated him at the County Convention later that month.[226] Blaine Whipple, 21, was in the cast of "The Mansion of Aching Hearts," a comedy drama in four acts to be presented July 22 and 29 at the Watson Opera House. It was a benefit for the Fire Department. It was a play about New York City society.

Company G entered a rifle team to compete at the State Marksmen Contest in June. Team members were Jim, sergeants Blaine Whipple, J.A. Benfer, and O.J. Metcalf, and private Guy Thompson. The Company trained at a Camp in Des Moines in August and Jim was reelected Captain in September followed by a surprise presentation of a "fine library table" to the Whipples. The Company spent eight days in St. Louis later

in the month where they visited the World's Fair. The wives of several officers, including Ellen Whipple, accompanied their husbands. Jim was on the Republican Speakers Bureau for the fall campaign and Theodore Roosevelt carried the county by 1,552 votes.[227]

According to the *Des Moines Register and Leader* of January 31, 1905, Jim was being urged to seek appointment as Assistant Adjutant General of the Iowa National Guard. The paper said he stood "high among guardsmen everywhere in the state." However, Capt. W. H. Thrift, the Adjutant General, was a member of the same Regiment and it was policy

For, and in consideration of Fifty (50) Dollars
we hereby convey to Mrs Ella Whipple
Lot 2 3 In Block L ~~Addition~~ Vinton, now Evergreen Cemetery, Benton County, Iowa.

The same is sold by said Association to said purchaser with the distinct understanding of such rules and regulations as have been adopted by said Board of Trustees of said Association, and are as follows, to-wit:

FIRST: In no event shall there be on one lot more than one moument, with as many markers as there are burials. Uniform markers shall be used, and in no case shall said markers project above the ground so as to interfere with lawn mowing.

SECOND: No trees, or shrubbery shall be planted or grown by purchaser on any lot.

THIRD: No lot to be graded above the natural condition of the ground, but same will be leveled and put in smooth condition by this Association, including the grave.

FOURTH: No lot shall be sold in Blocks K—L—M—and Lots 3 to 20 inclusive in Block N, until said purchaser shall have deposited with the Trustees appointed by the Court, the sum of $100.00 for the perpetual care and maintainance of the lot, in accordance with the law duly enacted by the State of Iowa: See Code 254-A4, 1907 Suplement. And the said Trustees reserve the right of making further Lots or Blocks to come under said act, for the perpetual care of Lots and Blocks as in their judgment may seem just and proper.

The above rules apply to the sections of said Cemetery designated as Blocks F—G—K—L—M—and Lots from 3 to 20 inclusive, in Block N.

We warrant the title against all persons whomsoever.

S. Robinson President.
Arad Thompson Secretary.

Dated Vinton, Iowa, May 25 1914

STATE OF IOWA } ss.
Benton County }

On this 25th day of May 1914 before me, a Notary public in and for said county, personally appeared the above named S. Robinson and Arad Thompson to me personally known, who being by me personally duly sworn, say that they are President and Secretary, respectively, of the said Evergreen Cemetery Association, a corpor-

not to name men of the same Regiment to the two highest positions. The appointment went to Guy E. Logan of Red Oak.

In commenting on the selection, *Eagle* editor Murphy said Jim was "eminently satisfactory to the powers that be but lost because of the Regimental situation. Captain Whipple holds a strong position in the National Guard and if the selection would have been made from the stand-point of merit, he would have won—even military matters have a tinge of politics," he concluded.[228]

Company G attended military drills and maneuvers at Grundy Center and participated in a sham battle in September 1906. One or more of the shot guns was inadvertently loaded with fine shot and when fired a yell of pain went up from several soldiers and the battle was stopped. Jim, Lieut. Sanders, and Pvt. Brewer were shot in the hands, face, and neck. While painful, none of the wounds were dangerous as the shot was fine bird shot and the surgeons were able to pick the shot out of them.[229]

Jim purchased Ed Gerberich's interest in the *Review* and turned its management over to Blaine, 23, with the issue of January 3, 1907. The headline read 'JIM'S KID ASSUMES THE REINS.' However, his tenure was short-lived because Jim sold the paper February 25 to H.S. Havener and E.K. Allen, experienced newspapermen and printers. They changed the publication day to Wednesday and added many new fonts to their type case in the hopes of increasing the job printing side of the business. Jim's swan song editorial:

> In bidding good bye to the readers of the *Review*, I wish to say that I yield up the pen with reluctance. In fact, I wouldn't quit at all if it was in my power to stay. The facts are that the *Review* has lately been suffering from a severe financial paralysis. In the language of the great British general, "I regret to report" that in the effort to keep the paper afloat I have gone completely broke. The reasons for the "fall down" need not to be referred to now. (Note: A financial panic began in 1907 and businesses throughout the country suffered severely.) I spent seven eventful years (eventful to me, at least) as Editor of the *Review*. She had a very large place in my affections. During those years I made and lost friends.
>
> The new proprietors of the *Review*, Messrs. H.S. Havener and E.K. Allen, are experienced newspaper men. Both learned the trade in the *Times* office. Mr. Hevener has been foreman in that office for a good many years. They are worthy young men, and being good printers, can save the principal items of expense by doing most of the work themselves. I hope to see them make a success of the business. They deserve success and should have it.
>
> J. E. Whipple

About the time of the sale, Jim became Deputy to J. A. Redenour who was elected County Recorder in the November election, serving for four years.[230] He then worked in Des Moines as a Legislative Clerk when the Assembly was in session. Jim and Blaine were awarded five year service medals from the Iowa National Guard in January 1907. Jim was eligible for a 10-year medal in 1908. The Guy Kellogg Camp No. 5, United Spanish American War Veterans, celebrated the ninth anniversary of Company G at a banquet April 26 at the Presbyterian Church. Jim was Toastmaster for the event which was attended by 244. Proceeds went to a fund to erect a monument to the veterans of the Civil War.[231]

Vinton Chautauqua Assembly opened August 13, 1907 for a 10-day run. It featured vocal and instrumental music, biblical, historical, humorous, scientific, and general lectures with stories of travel aided by pictures from real life and popular entertainments of moving pictures, and exhibitions of the magician's art. The star number was the Innes Band.[232]

The 49th was changed to the 53rd Iowa Infantry Regiment and Jim was promoted to Major January 11, 1909.

Jim suffered a stroke March 4, 1911 following what was believed to be a hemorrhage of the brain. His left side was paralyzed. His arm and hand were useless, the leg could be moved only with great difficulty, and he required assistance with dressing and undressing. The family was living at 612 E. Jefferson Street. He applied for a military pension of $50.00 a month in January 1913 claiming the malarial fever and acute diarrhea he contacted while on duty at Savannah, Georgia the first week of November 1898 was the ultimate

Major James E. Whipple

cause of the stroke. The surgeon's certificate, dated February 19, 1913, filed with the pension application called them "possible causes." The surgeon also said his paralysis "required the frequent and periodical, though not regular and constant, personal aid and attendance of another person." The pension was rejected June 10, 1913 on the grounds the stroke occurred 12 years after he was treated for malaria and diarrhea, therefore was not due to military service in line of duty.[233]

The date of his second stroke and any additional problems it caused is not known. His third and final stroke occurred at noon Wednesday May 13, 1914, three years after the first one. He was eating lunch with Ellen at the Court House at the time. He died at home on Friday and was given a Military Funeral with Honors on Sunday.[234] The main story in the May 21 *Review* featured a picture of Jim in his Major's uniform under the headline

TAPS SOUND FOR MAJOR WHIPPLE

Spanish War Veteran Succumbs to Third Stroke of Paralysis
Funeral Held Sunday

Funeral services at the Whipple home at 2:30 were conducted by Rev. P. Marion Simms, pastor of the Presbyterian Church. Company G Iowa National Guard, acted as escort while six of the Spanish War veterans from Major Whipple's Company acted as pall bearers. Delegations from the Knights of Pythias, Woodman, and Macabee Lodges, of which he was a member, attended in a body.

In the march to the cemetery (Evergreen), Company G preceded the hearse, the pall bearers marched on either side and six other Spanish American veterans marched in the rear of the hearse. After the casket had been lowered into the grave a salute was fired by a firing squad from Company G and Taps was sounded by the Company bugler.

In the fall of 1899 the Iowa National Guard was reorganized and Company G of this city was mustered in with Mr. Whipple as Captain. He was later elected Major and held this commission when he suffered his first stroke of paralysis in February 1911 while holding a Clerkship in the State House at Des Moines. The stroke left him disabled and he was honorably discharged April 1 on account of physical disability. However, he retained his love for military matters and was in attendance at the annual encampments when possible. He was a favorite among the officers and enlisted men and with his comrades who served with him during the Spanish-American War.

Major Whipple was instrumental in organizing Guy Kellogg Camp No. 5, United Spanish War Veterans and was senior Vice Commander at the time of his death. His comrades feel a deep sense

of loss in his death and their sympathies are extended to the wife and son who are left to mourn.

The death of Major Whipple is the third that has occurred among those from Vinton who served in Company G since the Regiment was mustered out. The others are William Simmons who died in February 1906, and Jay Forrester who died May 2, 1914.

Ellen applied for a Widow's Pension September 10, 1914 based on Jim's Spanish-American War service.[235] Her residence was then 303 E. Elm St. The records provided by the National Archives Trust Fund Board of Washington, D. C. do not indicate whether a pension was granted. Ellen died September 2, 1918 at the University Hospital in Iowa City. She was ill the previous four months during which time she suffered a great deal. When first taken ill she was living in the home of Mr. and Mrs. C. C. Williams who cared for her during her first two months of illness. Blaine and his family were living in Toganoxie, Kansas at the time. When her condition didn't improve, she was taken to the hospital June 29 where it was discovered she was suffering from a complication of several diseases. She initially improved while in the hospital and was able to walk about her room. However, she suffered a hemorrhage the day of her death and was dead in a few hours.

Her body was brought to Vinton and prepared for burial at the Fry Funeral Parlor. R. C. Cully, pastor of the Presbyterian Church conducted funeral services at the Williams home at 2 p.m. September 5 and she was interred next to her husband in Evergreen Cemetery.

She was a long-time member of the Pythian Sisters and held many offices in the organization including Presiding Chairman. After Jim's death she became the Matron at the rest room at the Court House, a job she held until her last illness. Alexander Runyon was appointed Administrator of her estate in September.[236] Mr. Runyon died August 23, 1919 before the estate was settled and J.F. Traer was appointed to complete the Administration.[237]

From about the time of the birth of James and Ellen passionate hygienists and social reformers began campaigns to clean up water supplies and raw sewage in American cities. New York city established a Board of Health in 1866. By 1892 Health Department were operating bacteriological laboratories where doctors could get diagnostic tests for their patients. In 1894 the labs were producing a diphtheria antitoxin serum. From then until now public health institutions have stationed a nurse at every school, established centers for disease control, and vaccinated masses of people against a variety of diseases. The U.S. Surgeon General declared in 1967 that infection had been controlled in the country. A decade later the World Health Organization had completed a worldwide

campaign to eradicate smallpox.

Ellen was 33 when the Allegiance to the American flag was first pledged. It happened on the future grounds of the Chicago World's Fair on Columbus Day in 1892 (it was also the first Columbus Day celebration). The pledge, written by Francis Bellamy, originally read, "I pledge allegiance to my Flag and to the Republic for which it stands; one nation, indivisible, with liberty and justice for all." Two years later Congress required that the flag fly over the east and west fronts of the Capitol. In 1897 John Philip Sousa composed the definitive American march, "The Stars and Stripes Forever." Addition of the words "under God" added to the Pledge of Allegiance by Congress in 1954.[238]

Thirteen Presidents served during Jim and Ellen's lifetimes and Jim must have been in hog heaven considering all but four were Republicans. The first, James Buchanan, was a Democrat (1857-61) and some of the significant events during his presidency include establishing an overland mail line to California, announcement of the Dred Scott decision, John Brown's raid on Harpers Ferry, Virginia, the beginning of Pony Express Service, and the admittance of Oregon to the Union. During Abraham Lincoln's presidency (R-1861-65), Fort Sumter, South Carolina was attacked, the Legal Tender Act gave the country a national currency, the Homestead Act was approved, the Emancipation Proclamation was issued, the Gettysbury Address was given, and Gen. Robert E. Lee surrendered at Appomattox Courthouse, Virginia.

Under Andrew Johnson (D-1865-69) the 13th (abolished slavery) and

STATE OF IOWA,
County of Johnson

COUNTY REGISTRAR
Vital Statistics

CERTIFICATION OF DEATH

NAME OF DECEASED Ellen Whipple Sex Female

Date of Death September 2, 19 18. Place of Death Iowa City

Date of Birth or Age of Deceased January 7, 1859 Date Filed non given

Cause of Death Fall broken humerus-abscesses Pulm. Tbc. Hemorrhage

Muscular Dystrophy

Accident initiated activity of above conditions

I HEREBY CERTIFY that the above information was taken from the Record of Death on file in this office in accordance with the law of Iowa requiring filing of vital records. Recorded in Book transcripPage 9

Date December 4, 19 86. Edward F. Steinbrech
County Registrar and Clerk of Iowa District Court.

[SEAL] By Wanda Sedivec
Deputy Clerk

14th (established equal rights) Amendments to the Constitution were passed, Alaska was purchased from Russia for $7.2 million, and the President was impeached by the House of Representatives but acquitted by the Senate. When Ulysses S. Grant served (R-1869-77), trans-continental railroad service began, the 15th Amendment (right to vote) was passed, the Dept. of Justice was created, the Civil Service Commission was authorized, the country suffered through the economic panic of 1873, and Alexander Graham Bell successfully transmitted human voice by telephone.

Under Rutherford B. Hayes (R-1877-81), Reconstruction ended in the South, women were permitted to practice law before the U.S. Supreme Court, and Thomas Edison invented the electric light. James A. Garfield only served 199 days (R-1881) before being shot and killed by a crazed office-seeker. He was the second President to be assassinated. Not much happened during Chester A. Arthur's term (R-1881-85) but Congress did pass the Chinese Exclusion Act, suspending immigration for 10 years, the Civil Service Commission was established, and Standard Time was adopted.

Grover Cleveland, a Democrat, was the only President to serve two terms which were not consecutive. During his first term (1885-89) the Presidential Succession Act was approved, the Interstate Commerce Act provided for the regulation of railroads, the Statute of Liberty was dedicated, and the American Federation of Labor was organized. The county suffered a severe financial depression (Panic of 1893) during his second term, 1893-97. The Wilson-Gorman Tariff became law and the Supreme Court declared the income tax unconstitutional.

During Benjamin Harrison's term (R-1889-93) the Sherman Antitrust Act became law, six states, North and South Dakota, Montana, Wyoming, Idaho, and Washington, were admitted to the Union, the McKinley Tarrif Act became law, and the 51st Congress was the first to spend $1 billion. William McKinley (R-1897-1901)was the President to declare war on Spain after the battleship *Maine* was blown up in Havana Harbor, the country annexed the Hawaiian Islands, the Treaty of Paris ending the Spanish American War ceded Puerto Rico, Guam, and the Philippines to the U.S., and Dr. Walter Reed proved mosquitoes transmitted yellow fever.

While Theodore Roosevelt was President (R-1901-09), Marconi received the first wireless signal from England, the Department of Commerce and Labor was created, the Wright Brothers first successful flight took place at Kitty Hawk, North Carolina, the Canal Zone was acquired from Panama, the Meat Inspection Act and the Pure Food and Drug Act passed, and the country suffered through the economic panic of 1907. Under William Howard Taft (R-1909-13) Robert Perry discovered the North Pole, the Boy and Girl Scouts of America were founded and the

16th Amendment was ratified (power to collect income tax). Woodrow Wilson (D-1913-21) was in office when both Jim and Ellen died. During that time the Federal Reserve Act was signed into law, the Panama Canal opened to traffic, World War I erupted in Europe, the Federal Trade Commission was established, the U.S. declared war on Germany and the Armistice ended World War I fighting.

Jim and Ellen were married in 1881 and the 1880s saw the arrival of Barnum's elephant, Jumbo, Edison's electric light, the founding of *The Ladies' Home Journal*, the introduction of the fountain pen, the Kodak, the electric trolley, and golf. The American Red Cross was founded by Clara Barton and it took heavyweight boxer John L. Sullivan 75 rounds to beat Jack Kilrain. Jim would have loved to have known that Clara Barton was his distance cousin (remember his claim to William and Abraham Whipple of Revolutionary War fame).

The 1880s decade saw a number of songs still sung today: *Twinkle, Twinkle, Little Star, Bring Back My Bonnie to Me, Sweet Violets*, *There Is a Tavern in the Town, Clementine, Hush Little Baby Don't You Cry,* and *Johnny Get Your Gun.* The most popular number of 1884 was *Love's Old Sweet Song. While Strolling through the Park One Day* was also a 1884 hit as was *Titwillow* in 1885. John Philip Sousa scored the *Gladiator March* in 1886 and wrote *Semper Fidelis* in 1888. *Oh! Promise Me* by Reginald DeKoven came out in 1889 as did *When You Were Sweet Sixteen* by James Thornton.

The 1890s saw the introduction of *The Bowery, When the Roll Is Called Up Yonder, The Sidewalks of New York, I Don't Want to Play in Your Yard,* and *On the Banks of the Wabash, Far Away. A Hot Time in the Old Town Tonight* (1896) was an opening chorus for minstrel shows and was sung by Teddy Roosevelt's Rough Riders up San Juan Hill. *Sweet Rosie O'Grady* was a song everyone could sing. Sousa's *Stars and Stripes Forever* was a big hit in 1897 as were *Because* in 1898 and *Always* and *My Wild Irish Rose* in 1889.

Harry von Tilzer celebrated the turn of the century with *A Bird in a Gilded Cage* and gave us *In the Sweet By and By* in 1902 (words by Raymond A. Browne) Tilzer and Andrew Sterling gave us *Wait Till the Sun Shines, Nellie* in 1905. Tilzer and Jimmy Lucas wrote *I Love My Wife, but Oh You Kid* in 1909. Tilzer and Will Dillon wrote the immortal *I Want a Girl Just Like the Girl that Married Dear Old Dad* in 1909 and *In the Evening by the Moonlight* in 1911.

Memories came out in 1915 and *Pretty Baby* in 1916. *Over There* was first performed at a Red Cross benefit in New York in the autumn of 1917. Other hits of 1917 included *The Bells of St. Mary's, For Me and My Gal, Round Her Neck She Wore a Yellow Ribbon,* and *Swing Low Sweet Chariot.*[239]

Compared to most of his ancestors, James E. Whipple's life was rela-

tively short. He died at a younger age than any of his nine ancestors whose average age at death was 69; ranging from 57 to 82. The 57-year-old was Matthew, Jr. who left Bocking, England to settle in Ipswich, Massachusetts in 1638. The 82-year-old was Francis who moved from Ipswich to Westborough on the western frontier of Massachusetts in 1734.

Francis, Benjamin, and James were extremely active in the political and civic life of their communities. Benjamin (French and Indian and Revolutionary wars), Nehemiah (Revolutionary War), Lucien (Civil War), and James (Spanish American War) served their country in times of crisis. James joined Matthew, Jr., Jonathan, Francis, Benjamin, Nehemiah, Enoch, and Lucien in moves from their settled communities to new opportunities in distant communities.

Without the benefit of higher education, Jim had successful careers in brokering real estate and insurance and in publishing and editing a newspaper. He served Vinton as City Clerk and Superintendent of the Water and Electric Utilities, Benton county as Recorder, civic organizations in both Eugene and Vinton in many capacities, his political party as Chairman, and was a leader in the Iowa National Guard. It was a comparative short life but it was a successful and fulfilled life.

1. Jim's birth year was the year oil was discovered in Titusville, Penn. The earth's first petroleum well hit oil at 69 feet and changed the world. It led to the invention of the internal combustion engine, the electric generating plant, the turbine ship, and the jet. Subtract oil and we are in the dark and almost motionless.
2. Vermillion county is on the border between Indiana and Illinois. The Illinois county is also Vermilion, however spelled with one "l" and the county Seat is Danville, the largest city in the immediate vicinity of Eugene. Eugene was a flourishing village on the south bank of the Big Vermillion river (it flowed into the Wabash river) seven miles north of Newport, the County Seat, and seven miles south of Perryville. Eugene was laid out in 1827 and was mosquito heaven during the summer. One old-timer said the mosquito's were so big that four of them could hold a person down while their offspring enjoyed a Sunday afternoon picnic.
3. A Panic is the worst moment of a financial crisis and is followed by a more serious and prolonged period of low economic activity marked by rising unemployment.
4. The *Harper's Weekly* of 10 Oct. 1857, five weeks after James was born, published the following editorial: It is a gloomy moment in history. Not for many years—not in the lifetime of most men who read this paper—has there been so much grave and deep apprehension; never has the future seemed so incalculable as at this time. In our own country there is universal commercial prostration and panic, and thousands of our poorest fellow citizens are turned out against the approaching winter without employment and without the prospect of it. In France, the political caldron seethes and bubbles with uncertainty; Russia hangs, as usual, like a cloud, dark and silent upon the horizon of Europe; while all the energies, resources, and influence of the British Empire are sorely tried, and are yet to be tried more sorely, in coping with the vast and deadly Indian insurrection, and with its disturbed relations in China.

   It is a solemn moment, and no man can feel an indifference (which happily, no man pretends to feel) in the issue of events. Of our troubles no man can see the end. They are, fortunately, as yet mainly commercial; and if we are only to lose money, and by painful poverty to be taught wisdom—the wisdom of honor, of faith, of sympathy, and of charity—no man need seriously to despair. And yet the very haste to be rich, which is the occasion of this wide spread calamity, has also tended to destroy the moral forces with which we are to resist and subdue the calamity. Good friends – let our conduct prove that the call comes to men who have large hearts, however narrowed their homes maybe; who have nothing but manhood, strong in its faith in God, to rely upon; and whoever shows himself truly a God-fearing man now, by helping wherever and however he can, will be blessed and beloved as a great light in the darkness.
5. Harold L. O'Donnell, *Eugene Township (Vermillion County, Indiana) The First 100 Years 1824-1924*, Danville, IL: Printed & Bound by the Interstate Printers and Publishers, 1963, 138.
6. O'Donnell, 101.
7. O'Donnell, 101-02.
8. Ice cream made its way into soda water in October 1874 at the semicentennial celebration of Philadelphia's Franklin Institute when Concessionaire Robert Green who was selling drinks made of syrup, cream, and soda water, ran out of cream and bought some vanilla ice cream to melt and use as cream. But his customers were so impatient that he used the frozen product—and they liked it. Daily receipts went from $8 the first day to $400 before the exhibition was over. Ice cream and soda were inseparable

from then on and the soda fountains and ice cream parlors became virtually one and the same. In 1885 W.B. Morrison, owner of the Old Corner Drug Store in Waco, Texas, tasted a unique flavor invented by his pharmacist. He named it Dr. Pepper and advertised it as Dr. Pepper's Phos-Ferrates and touted it as a "Brain food, exhilarant." Hartshorn's Root Beer Extract was advertised as "The Greatest restorer of health;" Hires called itself "The Best Blood Purifier in the World." "Dr." John S. Pemberton, an Atlanta pharmacist, developed a syrup laced with two potent botanicals—coca leaves, a staple of Bolivian Indians, and kola nuts, reputed to double the work output of West African "kola chewers." While it contained a trace of cocaine it was alcohol free, a virtue extolled in its earliest ads, which called it "The Great National Temperance Drink." By 1902 Coca-Cola was the most recognized product in America. "Soda Fountains," *Smithsonian Magazine*, vol. 17, No. 4, July 1986, 114-24.

9. Peters was one of county's major businessmen. He owned general stores in Eugene and Newport, a drug store in Eugene, dry goods store in Ridgetown, Ill, several lots in Eugene, and a farm near Eugene. He was county Treasurer for two terms (1880-84) O'Donnell, 322.
10. *Biographical and Historical Record of Vermillion County, Indiana*, Chicago: The Lewis Publishing Co., 1888, 224. [Hereafter *Vermillion County, Indiana.]*
11. Jim advertised that he represented the leading insurance companies of the country and had offices in Eugene and Cayuga. *Cayuga Journal*, Cayuga, Indiana, Vol. 1, No 1, 14 May 1887.
12. Ridgefarm was the Post Office serving the Township. It is 16 miles south of Danville. In 1870 when Ellen was 11, the town had two churches, one hotel, a graded school, and a dry-goods, grocery, drug, hardware, and boot and shoe store, as well as other shops and professions. Henry Asa Coffeen, *Vermilion County, Illinois*. Danville, Ill: Published by the author, 1870. The 1880 federal census counted 2,612 people in Georgetown Township, 741 in Georgetown Village, 2,670 in Elwood Township, including the village of Ridge Farm where 238 lived.
13. Rebecca, surname is believed to be Campbell. The *Illinois State Marriage Index* includes a marriage of John Thompson and Rebecca Campbell on 17 Aug. 1843 in Fulton Co. which is north and west of Vermilion Co. John's birth year is ca 1817, Rebecca's 1822.
14. *Danville Weekly News* (Danville, Illinois), 8 April 1881.
15. Joseph Bailey served as both an elected Supervisor of Georgetown and as a Township School Trustee. The author presumes some sort of relationship between Ellen and the Joseph Bailey family. However, proof is lacking. The 1880 census of Georgetown taken 3 June includes an Alice Thompson, 22, living with the Bailey family as a house keeper. Joseph Bailey was the census enumerator so it is logical to assume Alice was not mis-heard as Ellen. Alice is probably the daughter of Thomas Thompson and a cousin of Ellen.
16. *Danville Weekly News*, 15 April 1881.
17. A Blondin is named for Charles Blondin of France, the foremost tightrope walker in the world in the late 1880s.
18. A velocipede is an early bicycle with the front wheel much larger than the rear wheel. Developed in France, it achieved its greatest popularity in the late 1860s.
19. *Danville Weekly News*, May 20, 1881.
20. John Thompson of Vermilion county purchased for cash 80 acres from the United States on 1 Nov. 1849 recorded as Certificate No. 10,005 at the Danville, Illinois Land Office. The land was identified as the North half of the Southeast quarter of fractional Section 18 in Township 22 North of Range 11 West in the District of Lands subject to sale at Danville, Illinois. According to Certificate No. 11,596, he purchased for cash

another 42 and fifty-eighth hundredths of an acre on 1 Aug. 1855. This Certificate was also registered at the Danville Land Office. It's legal description: The North half of Lot 2 of the Northwest fractional quarter of fractional Section 18 in Township 22, North of Range 11, West in the District of Lands subject to sale at Danville, Illinois. Elizabeth Thompson, 55, with sons Isaac, 19, and Samuel, 17; and William Thompson, 34, and wife Martha, 27, with two sons and a daughter lived next to John and Rebecca in 1850. All three families are found on page 342 of the census. Based on her listed age, Elizabeth was born ca 1795 and was probably also the mother of John and William. Elizabeth is not in the 1860 census and John and William and their families are living in close proximity in Ellwood Township with Ridgefarm as the Post Office address. William's family had increased by one daughter. The two families lived side by side in 1870 and in 1880, Rebecca's family was living in the same dwelling with William and his family. Ellwood Township and Ridgefarm Post Office remained constant. They are on page 19 in 1870 and the combined families were listed as family no. 153 in 1880. Enumeration District 213, SD 5, enumeration date 11 June 1880.

A Thomas Thompson, 35, wife Mary and seven children and Isaac Thompson with wife Martha lived between John and William in 1860. They were probably living on Elizabeth's farm. Samuel with wife Osa and a son and daughter were living in the same township. The dwellings of Rebecca, William, and Samuel were side by side in 1870. Thomas and his family were adjacent to the combined families of Rebecca and William in 1880 and Samuel was still living in Ellwood Township.

The author believes William (ca 1816), John (ca 1817), Thomas (ca 1823), Isaac (ca 1831), and Samuel (ca 1833) were brothers and sons of Elizabeth. Based on a birth year of 1795 suggested by the 1850 census, Elizabeth would have been 21, 22, 36, and 38 when the sons were born.

21. Be it known to all whom it may concern that we John Thompson and Rebecca Thompson his wife for and in consideration of $385 have bargained and sold and hereby grant, bargain, and convey to Jesse Jones of the county of Vermilion in the State of Illinois to wit: Ten acres off the West end of Lot No. 3 of School Land in Section 30 in Townhip 17 North of Range No. 10 West bounded as follows —— & commencing at the Northeast corner of Jacob Kendels land, thence East 49 rods to a stake thence north 33 rods to Jesse Jones line, thence West with Jesse Jones line 49 rods to Jesse Jones corner thence 33 rods South to the place of beginning, containing 10 acres be the same more or less. The said Jesse Jones, his heirs, executors, administrators, and assigns to have and hold the said land and the appurtenances forever. And we do covenant and bind ourselves, heirs, executors, and administrators to warrant and defend the title to said land against the lawful claim of any person whomsoever. Witness our hands and seals this fifth day of October A.D. 1855. John Thompson. Rebecca Thompson (X her mark).

On 6 Oct. Jacob G. Thompson, Justice of the Peace, certified that John and Rebecca were personally known to him and executed the deed; that Rebecca had been examined apart from her husband and declared she signed and sealed the deed and relinquished her rights of dower in and to the land of her own free will without fear of compulsion of her husband. *Deed Records*, Vermilion County, Illinois, Court House, Danville, Ill., Book S, p. 94.

22. Warranty Deed. This indenture made the 12th day of August 1869 between David Maddock and Jane H., his wife, of the county of Champaign in the state of Illinois of the first part, and John W. Thompson of the county of Vermilion and state of Illinois, of the second part. WITNESS, that the said party of the first part, for and in consideration of the sum of one-hundred-and-twenty-five dollars in hand paid by the said

party of the second part, the receipt whereof is hereby acknowledged, gave granted, bargained, and sold, and by these presents do grant, bargain, and sell, unto said party of the second part, his heirs, and asigns, all the following described lot, piece, or parcel of land situated in Ellwood Township in the county of Vermilion and state of Illinois, to wit:

Twelve and one half acres of land off of the north end of twenty-five acres which is off of the south end of the east half of the southeast quarter of Section 25 in Township 17 north of Range 11 West. The deed was notarized by Samuel Weeks, Notary Public, on 12 Aug. 1869 and filed for record 30 March 1871. George Dillon, Recorder. *Deed Records*, Book 27, p. 575.

23. Rebecca joined her presumed brother-in-law William Thompson and others on May 28, 1874 in conveying an acre of land to the Trustees of the Bethel C.P. (Cumberland Presbyterian ?) Church to be used as a burial ground for the public. Rebecca, her son Jacob, and presumed brothers-in-law William, Thomas, and George and their spouses are buried in Bethel Cemetery, Love Township, Vermilion county. John and his mother Elizabeth are not.

Warranty Deed. This indenture made this 28th day of May 1874 between William Thompson, Martha his wife, Cornelius Vanduyne and Catharine his wife, and Rebecca Thompson of the county of Vermilion and state of Illinois, party of the first part, and T. A. Vanduyne, D. Wise, J. Hunnickhous, Jacob M. Kendall, and Levi Long, Trustees of Bethel C.P. Church, to hold for the public of the county of Vermilion and state of Illinois, party of the second part, WITNESSES, that the said party of the first part, for in consideration of the sum of $10.00 in hand paid, the receipt whereof is hereby acknowledged, convey and warrant to the said party of the second part for a public burial ground the following described real estate situate in the county of Vermilion and state of Illinois hereby releasing and waiving all rights under and by virtue of the homestead exemption laws of the state to wit:

Part of William Thompson's land beginning at the southeast corner in half of the southeast quarter of Section 25 Township 17 north of Range 11 and running west 8 rods, thence north 8 rods thence southeast 9 rods, thence south 4 rods to place of beginning, also part of Rebecca Thompson's land beginning at the northeast corner of southeast corner of Section 25 17 Range 11 north running 5 rods south, thence west 8 rods thence north 5 rods thence east 8 rods to the place of beginning. Also part of C. Vanduyne's land beginning at the southeast corner in half of the southeast corner of Section 25 Township 17 north Range 11 and running north 4 rods thence 9 rods southeast thence 5 rods south, thence 8 rods west thence north 5 rods to place of beginning, being on the west end of School Land in Lot 2, Section 30 Township 17 Range 10 west, the whole of the lot above described containing one acre more or less to held by party of the second part for a burial ground for the public. The transaction was witnessed by J.P. Hillerby, Notary Public, on 28 May 1874. It was filed for the record 2 June 1874. *Deed Records*, Book 44, p. 7.

24. James E., Ellen, and Blaine, 5, Whipple were living in Sidell, Vermilion Co., Illinois at the time.

25. Letter to the author from his sister Elaine (Whipple) West (Mrs. Stephen) dated 29 June 1987 at 497 Highway One South, Mt. Vernon, Iowa 52314. In possession of the author in 2005.

26. *Eagle*, Vinton, Iowa, 21 July 1899. This newspaper has been microfilmed and is available at the Iowa State Historical Library, Iowa State Historical Department, East 12th and Grand Avenue, Des Moines, Iowa 50319. It is also available through Inter-library loan.

27. Other officers: James Malone, Pres., H.D. Sprague, Vice Pres., John S. Grondyke,

Secretary, M.G. Hosford, Ass't Sec., H.O. Peters, Treasurer, J. E. Bennett, Superintendent, and G.L. Watson, Ass't Superintendent. *Vermillion County Indiana*, 284.

28. Organized in the spring of 1887 to serve Cayuga and Eugene. Shares sold for $100 and were payable in monthly installments of $1. Other officers: Eli McDaniel, President, G. L. Watson, Vice Pres., H. O. Peters, Treasurer. *Cayuga Journal*, Vol. 1. No. 1, 14 May 1887.
29. Other officers: Capt. W.S. Jewell, Pres., Ben Lang, Treasurer, and David Higgins, Sergeant-at-Arms. *Vermillion County Indiana*, 286.
30. 1887 Lucien was also Adjutant of Eugene Post 22 of the Grand Army of the Republic (G.A.R.) which met on the first and third Saturdays of each month in the Odd Fellows Hall. *Cayuga Journal*, 14 May 1887.
31. Earnest Elmo Calkins, *They Broke the Prairie*. New York: Charles Scribner's Sons, 1937, 346.
32. Saleratus was aerated sodium (sometimes potassium) bicarbonate used in cooking.
33. Calkins, 336-37.
34. The Argand Burner applies the principle of increased air supply by way of a central tube surrounded by a round wick. The tube allows combustion air to enter the burner, usually from the sides, and travel up through the opening in the round wick. This burner is designed to fit on any lamp fount—it does not require a central draft tube down through the fount like the next burner.
35. Calkins, 365-66.
36. Calkins, 335.
37. Located in Clinton, a Vermillion county town close to Eugene. The *Argus* began publication in 1884.
38. "Last week Mike Casey sold the entire outfit of the *Siftings* to Mr. J. E. Whipple of Eugene. Tuesday (May 3) Mr. Whipple came down (to Clinton, Ind.) and removed his purchase to Cayuga where he will begin the publication of a new local paper devoted to the interests of Cayuga. Mr. Whipple is a young man of sterling qualities and considerable ability as a paragrapher and we sincerely wish him success in his enterprise. He is backed by all the citizens of Eugene and Cayuga irrespective of politics and the people up there seem determined to make a success of their newspaper as well as everything else." Clinton *Argus*, Clinton, Indiana, 7 May 1887.
39. The stereotyped news, feature, and editorial items that are syndicated to small publications.
40. Jim's advertising policy was published in the first issue; 1) Notices under the head of "Special Notices," 5c a line each insertion. No charge made for less than 25c. 2) Business notices or editorials, calling attention to business enterprises inserted in editorial or local news columns, 10c a line. 3) No kind of business notices or advertisements will be inserted regularly among reading or local news matter, at any price. 4) Unless otherwise contracted, display advertisements cannot be changed oftener than quarterly, without extra charge, bills payable monthly. 5) The price of legal advertising is fixed by law and advertising of this character will be charged for at legal rates. 6) Advertisements ordered out before expiration of contract, will be charged for at transient rates. 7) No "Special Position" will be given for foreign advertisers. 8) No advertisements will be inserted for foreign advertisers at a less rate than that charged home patrons. 9) All transient notices or advertisements MUST be paid in advance. 10) All electrotype or stereotype advertisements must be on solid metal bases, as no wooded bases will be inserted. 11) Advertisements and business notices not marked with number of insertions will be published until ordered out and charged for accordingly. 12) Obituaries, wedding notices, list of wedding or birthday presents, or resolution of

condolences exceeding 10 lines will be charged at the rate of 5c per line. 13) Church notices for festivals, etc., or any notice that pertains to money-making, 5c per line will be charged for each insertion. 14) No deviation will be made from any of the above rules. J. E. Whipple, Editor and Proprietor.

41. Jim anticipated advertising from the following Cayuga and Eugene businesses: Cayuga: general stores operated by Peters and Peters, J. Lewis & Son, C.E. Richardson, E.G. Peters, Coffin Bros., and Dr. W.C. Patterson; Eugene Milling Co.; Lumber: Nixon & Cates and Cayuga Lumber Co.; contractors and builders: W.C. Bly, J.G. Hesler, and W. J. Jewell; saloons: C.W. Simpson and John Adams; hotel and boarding houses: T. Thompson and Mrs. Simpson; T. Thompson meat market; Tom Connor, barber; and William Brown, blacksmith. Eugene: general stores operated by H. O. Peters, D. I. Duncan, and Towle & Sturm; hardware: Watson & Fultz and L. Brown; saloons: J. L. Peters and H. D. Sprague; blacksmiths: Joe McClellan and J. F. Pollard; Miss M. McClellan, millinery; Hasford & Bell, drugs; William Morris, meat market; E. B. Johnson, contractor and builder; and D.L. Sollars, barber who also had a billiard parlor in connection with the shop.
42. The *Cayuga Times* began publication in September 1889 and lasted five months. The *Cayuga Herald* was started in 1891 by C.E. Cook with financial assistance from E. L. Hiberly who sold real estate in Cayuga and surrounding area. It changed owners several times over the years but was supported by the community and became a long-living newspaper. In those times publishers were in a constant battle to get subscribers to pay for the paper. In the Nov. 11, 1893 *Herald* was the following: A TOUCHING APPEAL, a poem appealing to subscribers to pay up their subscriptions. The editor expressed the hope that it would touch and tender the hearts of those who are in arrears to the *Herald* to the extent that they can't sleep until they pay what is due. Read these lines and if you owe us please respond to the appeal. "*Lives of poor men oft remind us honest men won't stand a chance. The more we work there grows behind us bigger patches on our pants. On our pants, once new and glossy, now are stripes of a different hue, all because subscribers linger and don't pay us what is due. Then let us be up and doing; send in your mite, however small, or when the snow of winter strikes us we shall have no pants at all.*" O'Donnell, 224-25.
43. The Washington Hand Press was invented by Samuel Rust in 1821 and R. Hoe & Company acquired the patent rights in 1835 and began making this famous press.
44. Folio—a large sheet of paper folded once, so that it forms two leaves, or four pages.
44. Ready print was plates of national and international news which fitted on newspaper presses and became part of the local paper. They were created by central news organizations and sold to local newspapers.
46. The *Journal* was still being published ninety-eight years later (1986). Linda Rosnett was the owner-editor. Letter to the author from Linda Rosnett dated 5 June 1986 at R. R #1, Box 91, Indianola, Ill., 61850. Indianola is just east of Sidell.
47. Jim's letter was the only personal item in the cornerstone. Palmer was impressed with the personal information it contained and encouraged church members to deposit letters in the new cornerstone which many did.
48. Vinton, originally known as Fremont, was laid out in November 1849. It is located on the south side of the Cedar river, one of the largest streams in the state. It offered abundant water supplies and the finest sand for concrete and cement found anywhere. It is located in the north central part of Benton county.
49. Cousins then living in the Vinton area: William. P., Milo, Selmon, Callie, and Cora, Cyrenius' children;; Guy, Enoch, William., Lucinda, Catherine, Samuel, Lution, Julia May, Martha, and Iva, Henry's children; Eliza, Joseph, and William McKinley,

Angeline's children; Hiram, Archibald, and Perry Kearns, Eliza's children; and Ida Edmonds, Luane's daughter.

50. The Burlington, Cedar Rapids & Northern Railroad was built to Vinton in 1868. Hog raising was the greatest wealth producing industry with butter, eggs, and poultry a close second. Corn, oats, and grass seed were also major crops. The Water Works cost $31,000. The College for the Blind occupied 40 acres in the southwest part of town and its average attendance in 1888 was 156. In addition to academics, male students were taught broom making, hammock and harness netting; female students bead and fancy works. The 4-story building was 100' wide and 275' long. In 1888 650 of the 881 school age children were enrolled in a nine-month school taught by a staff of 12 teachers and a Superintendent. The county Agricultural Assn. owned 25 acres in the south part of town, half a mile from the business center, and held an annual fair. It had permanent buildings for art exhibits and farm products, sheds for shelter of stock, judges stands, and a half mile race track. The Railway Telegraphers had a membership of 14,000 and its publication, *The Weekly Telegrapher*, was mailed to 6,000 subscribers throughout the country. Tilford Academy owned five acres in the south part of town and offered study in classical, scientific, philosophic, musical, fine art, and commercial subjects. F.M. Tobin, owner and Principal, was assisted by five instructors. *Eagle*, 24 Sept. 1889.

51. The canning factory was built in 1879 at a cost of $40,000. The washing machine company cost $10,000 to build. The Crescent Opera House was lighted with costly and elegant chandeliers and the Watson Opera House's stage was 24 by 40. It opened in 1873. The Ralyea charged $2 per day. *Eagle*, 24 Sept. 1889.

52. In October 1889 it granted J.P. Smith of Northfield, Minn a 5-year exclusive franchise to build and operate an electric light plant. It was to be completed within nine months. The city also considered placing five arc lights on downtown streets and was negotiating a 15-year contract with the Thomson-Huston Electric Light Co. The lights were to cost $10 each and the power $800 annually. *Eagle,* 14 June and 25 Oct. 1889.

53. *The Eagle* was Vinton's first weekly newspaper and one of four in town when Jim and family moved there.

54. Jim's business was one of seven real estate offices in town. The county population exceeded 24,000 and was served by three railroads (B.C. R.& N, Pacific branch; C.M. & St. P.; and the C.&N. W). Vinton had 3 banks, 6 law offices, 7 physicians, 2 bakeries, 5 barber shops, 1 bath house, 2 pool parlors, 7 blacksmiths, 3 boarding houses, 1 book bindery, 5 book and stationery stores, 4 boot and shoe dealers, 3 boot and shoe manufacturers and repairers, 1 bottling works, 2 brick yards, 1 bus and baggage line, 1 butter and egg dealer, 2 carpenters and builders, 3 carpet dealers, 1 clothes cleaning repairing service, 3 clothing and men's furnishing goods, 3 coal dealers, 6 confectionery and fruit dealers,, 1 cooperage, 1 creamery, 7 crockery and glassware dealers, 3 dentists, 4, druggists, 3 dry goods stores, 1 express company, 5 firms dealing in farm or other loans (including Jim), 2 feed mills, 4 flour and seed stores, 2 furniture dealers, 1 grain dealer, 4 grass and seed dealers, 10 grocery stores, 1 gunsmith, 3 hardware, stove, and tinware stores, 2 hotels, 5 insurance agents (including Jim), 2 jewelers, 2 Justice of the Peace, 1 laundry, 2 cement, stucco, and plastering firms, 5 livery, feed, and sale stables, 1 lodging house, 2 lumber yards, 1 machine shop, 1 cannery, 1 washing machine manufactory, 4 meat markets, 3 tailors, 3 millinery and fancy goods stores, 3 musical instrument stores, 3 news depots,, 2 weekly Democratic newspapers, 2 Republican newspapers, 1 German newspaper, *The Deutsche Zeitung*, 1 novelty store, 2 opera houses, 2 painters (house and sign), 1 pension agent, 2 photographers, plumbers, and steam fitters, 2 wholesale poultry dealers, 5 restaurants, 3 saddle and

harness dealers, 2 saw filers, 1 second-hand store, 3 sewing machine stores, 5 stock dealers and shippers, Western Union, Iowa Union Telephone Co., 6 tobacco and cigar stores, 3 undertakers, 1 upholsterer, 2 veterinary surgeons, 4 wagon buggies and road cart dealers, 4 wagon makers and repairers, 1 wood turning and scroll sawing dealer, and a National Guard Company. The Fire Dept. had a Rescue Hook and Ladder Co., a Hose Co., a steamer engine, and a fire engine. There were a dozen societies and 6 churches: Baptist, Catholic, Christian, Methodist Episcopal, Presbyterian, and Wesleyan Methodist. L.S. Keagle was Mayor, C. B. Bennett Clerk, W.C. Bills, Treasurer, and W.C. Connell, City Solicitor. R. E. Avery was Pastor of the Presbyterian Church, L. J. Harrington of the Wesleyan Methodist, A.W. Fuller of the Baptist, M. H. Smith of the Methodist Episcopal, and Father McInerny of the Catholic. The Christian Church was without a Pastor. *Eagle*, 1 Jan. and 24 Sept. 1889.

55. *Eagle*, 15 Jan. and 5 March 1889.
56. *Eagle*, 22 Feb. 1889.
57. Quinn also advertised 9.5 lbs fine granulated sugar, 10 lbs Confectioners "A", 11 lbs extra "C" or 12 lbs California Brown for $1; flour was $1.30 a sack; 25 bars of soap $1; Best College brooms, 25¢; Fruit Jars: _ gal. $1.50 per doz; quarts, $1.25 doz, pints, $1 doz. He also advertised crockery and an excellent assortment of Dinner, Tea, and Toilet Sets. The Clothing House advertised Men's heavy Chinchilla overcoats at $4.50, extra heavy all-wool double-breasted Beaver overcoats, $10, heavy Storm King overcoat, $5, a good busi-ness suit, $3.50, a good child's suit, $1.25, heavy all-wool pants, $2, Percale shirts, 35¢, all wool scarlet underwear, 35¢, worsted suits, $7.50, Scotch caps, 25¢, fur caps, 50¢, good cotton hose, 5¢, all wool hose, 10¢. Every customer buying goods valued at $20 also received Bradbury's Encyclopaedia of Pract-ical Information valued at $6. *Eagle*, 24 Sept. 1889.
58. Son Blaine would have just turned 6 at this time and probably paid no attention to the fact his father was off for Renville. *Eagle*, 2 Aug. 1889. Interestingly, Blaine became editor of the Renville newspaper in the 1950s.
59. *Eagle, 18 Oct. and 1* Nov. 1889 and 28 Jan. 1890.
60. *Eagle,* 21 April 1891.
61. Eagle, 5 June 1891.
62. *Eagle*, 1 Sept. 1891.
63. *Eagle*, 9, 12, and 23 Feb. and 17 May; 1892
64. *Eagle*, 24 June 1892.
65. *Eagle*, 26 Oct, 1892
66. *Eagle*, 4 Nov. 1892.
67. *Eagle*, 12 Dec. 1892.
68. The Tilford Academy building will be 96' long by 53' wide, 3 stories plus basement. An observatory tower will extend above the third floor. The basement is of cut stone to extend 5' above grade. Side walls are of brick veneer with trimmings of cut stone and galvanized iron. The main floor is devoted to recitation rooms, music rooms, art studio, library, and a large class drill room. The second floor features a 60 x 45 foot chapel which can seat 300, recitation rooms designed to be converted into one large audience room, and a commodious cloak room for the ladies. The third floor is devoted exclusively to the commercial department. Its main room has offices for the practical department and tables and desks for the theoretical. Adjoining are recitation rooms for short-hand and typewriting. Placed in the Cornerstone was a history of the institution; a biography of Mr. And Mrs. J. S. Tilford; a history of Vinton; names of city, county, state, and federal officers; copies of local papers, catalogues, circulars, etc. of the institution; coins bearing an 1892 date; and information on the Committee

that raised the funds to make the building possible. *Eagle*, 5 July 1892. Son Blaine attended the Academy and played quarterback on the football team.

69. *Eagle*, 5 Aug, 1892.
70. Eagle, 6 Jan. 1893.
71. Minutes of the City Council meeting of 18 January 1893. The author was given access to the minutes on 6 Sept. 1985. [Hereafter City Council Minutes.] The duty of the City Clerk was to keep account of the city funds as follows: General water works; street and alley and electric lights; also such other accounts as this Council may deem necessary; all city warrants shall designate upon which fund they are drawn and shall report to the City Council at its first meeting of each month the condition of the several funds. The City Council meetings shall convene in the evening of the first and third Fridays of each month. Special meetings may be called by the Mayor or any three members.
72. *Eagle*, 7 and 10 Feb. 1893.
73. The Council members were A.M. Rowe, First Ward; J. E. Ravenscroft, Second; W.C. Boggs, Third; and W. H. Anderson, Fourth. All were elected on the Republican ticket. Boggs left the Council and B. Murphy, editor of the *Eagle,* was elected to replace him in a special Ward election. *Eagle*, 24 March and 7 April 1893.
74. J. E. Whipple, who is the Agent, has settled the fire losses of J. W. Barr, Dr. Singleton, and Mrs. McConnell. "Our house was insured at the Insurance Agency of J. E. Whipple. It was recently damaged by fire to the extent of $106.84 which was paid in full. The adjustments of the loss was entirely satisfactory. Mrs. W.R. McConnell." "My hotel which was recently damaged by fire was insured at the Insurance Agency of J. E. Whipple, in the Milwaukee Mechanics' Insurance Co. The loss was so promptly and satisfactorily adjusted that I voluntarily recommend both Mr. Whipple and the company to persons needing insurance. C.E. Singleton. J. E. Whipple & Co. closed three sales of real estate last week —the 240 acre farm of D.S. Chafflin in Eden Township to Grant Carrier for $11,400, two houses to Frank Salisbury, and a block of lots to Neils Deng. *Eagle*, 28 April and 22 May 1893.
75. City Council minutes. *Eagle*, 9 June 1893.
76. Kellogg later married Jim's cousin Cora Whipple, daughter of Cyrenius. He died while serving in the Spanish-American war and Jim was assigned to return his body to Vinton for burial. *Eagle*, 16 June and 19 Sept. 1893.
77. *Eagle*, 21 July 1893.
78. An exhibit at the Fair showed how a family of five could live comfortably on $500 a year. The average family would spend 40%—$200—on food. A typical menu was corned beef, cabbage, boiled potatoes, bread and butter. A pound of meat was six to eight cents; a head of cabbage about a dime. Rent was $10 a month—24% of the income—for which they got a 2-story house including a living room 13 feet square, a small kitchen, a bath with tub and water closet, and three upstairs bedrooms. Fuel was budgeted at $30; anthracite coal was less than $2 per ton. The balance went for clothing—$100, with almost all items made by the woman of the house—and $50 for miscellaneous expenditures. The *Oregonian*, Portland, Ore., 26 Nov. 1981. The *Oregonian* report referred to an article by Joseph W. Barnes in the November issue of *American Heritage* magazine.
79. The Ferris Wheel was taller than the Eiffel Tower in Paris. George Washington Gale Ferris got his inspiration for his invention from Daniel Burnham's challenge to the American engineers to create something that would outdo the Eiffel Tower, the chief exhibit at the Paris world's fair of 1889. More than 1.4 million riders paid 50¢ each for two revolutions in one of its 36 wood-veneered cabins, each larger than a Pullman car. The wheel was ringed with 3,000 electric bulbs and the top of its revolution was

higher than the crown of the Statue of Liberty.

80. Phil Patton, "Sell the cookstove if necessary, but come to the Fair," *Smithsonian*, Vol. 24, No.3, June 1993, 38-54. Donald L. Miller, "The White City," *American Heritage*, July/August 1993, 68-85.
81. He was also elected Chairman of the Vinton Central Committee. *Eagle*, 22 Aug. 1893.
82. The meeting was held at the Crescent Opera House. Those nominated: Byron McQuin for Representative, James G. Mallory for Treasurer, Jas. M. Elson for Sheriff, Y.G. Barnell for Superintendent of Schools; Hiram Lipe for Surveyor, Dr. G.M. Nesbit for Coroner, R.F. Smith and James Johnson for Supervisor. *Eagle*, 19 and 22 Sept. 1893.
83. Ed, one of the Vinton Achuff brothers, was a world famous minstrel man who played every major city in the U.S., many in Europe, including a long run at the Drury Lane Theatre in London. He was also a balladeer and member of the famous "Quaker City Quartette" of Philadelphia. He began his career with amateur minstrel groups in Philadelphia after learning how to play the banjo earning $5 to $7 a night. His first professional engagement was with Skiff & Gaylors' Minstrels at $18 a week. In 1873 he teamed with Billy West, one of the most famous minstrel men in the world, and from that time his stock soared. Among the songs he wrote: "A Curl from My Baby's Head," "The Lighthouse by the Sea," "Irene, Good Night," "When Nelly was Raking the Hay," "I'll be Waiting in the Dell," and "Sweet Baby Nell." He quit minstrely in 1890 and did black face for several years, retiring in Vinton in 1899. *Eagle*, 13 Jan. 1905.
84. What made the win so important was that Democrats had swept the county in the two previous elections by 400 to 500 votes. *Eagle*, 17 and 21 Nov. 1893.
85 The official vote canvass showed the Republicans winning all county races except Clerk. W.A. Hunter lost that office by 87 votes. Their County Attorney candidate won by 499 votes and the Recorder was reelected with a 350 vote margin. They also carried the state ticket. *Eagle*, Nov. 16, 1894.
86. *Eagle*, 27 Nov. 1894.
87. *Eagle*, 8 and 11 Jan. 1895.
88. Thomas A. Edison's "celebrated grand concert phonographs" were exhibited. For 5¢ patrons heard Sousa's Grand Concert Band of N.Y.; the U.S. Marine Band of Washington, D.C.; Gilmore's Band of N.Y.; Baldwin's Cadet Band of Boston; and the famous Phonograph Band of Cincinnati as well as Issler's Orchestra of Newark, N.Y.; Bvanta's Orchestra of N. Y. C.; and Johnson's Orchestra of Cincinnati. *Eagle*, 21 and 31 May and 14, 18, and 21 June 1895.
89. City Council minutes.
90. *Eagle*, 28 June and 5 July, 1895.
91. Clarion owned its own lights. The Vinton Mayor was Matthew Brown. *Eagle*, 5 and 9 April 1895.
92. The telephone line was built of hand drawn copper wire which was supposed to be superior to a steel line. Rates were 20¢ for 5 minutes inside the county and 30¢ outside the county. *Eagle*, 25 June 1895. In its issue of 20 March, the *Eagle's* editor complained about the service provided by the Bell Company saying that "service is so bad that hardly a store in town has a phone. He suggested a rate reduction would double telephone service in Vinton.
93. The city referred the decision to build a light plant to the voters. Four-fifths voted yes The city sold bonds in the amount of $6,500 to finance it. The 5% interest rate was to be paid semiannually and the bonds were due in 10 years. The Council levied a five mill tax to pay off the bonds. Shaffer & Starks was awarded the contract to enlarge the waterworks building. *Eagle*, 10 Sept. and 8 and 15 Oct. 1895 and 28 April 1896.
94. *Eagle*, 8 Oct. 1895.

95. *Eagle*, 5 July 1895.
96. Jim's brother Edmond has been born in Benton county 36 years previously but was an infant when his parents moved back to Eugene. Thus he was a stranger in his native town. Jim's brother Frank had visited from Eugene the previous February, *Eagle*, 13 Feb. 1894 and 2 Aug. 1895.
97. Farms listed for sale included a 320 acre farm only one mile from a town of 500. Good house of 6 rooms. Large barn for 15 horses and 40 head of cattle. Hog house large enough for 100 head. Land for $26 an acre with small down payment and balance to suit purchaser. Half section for $19 an acre, no buildings but in high state of cultivation. *Eagle*, 10 Sept. 1895.
98. The vote to build a new Court House in Vinton failed by a large margin. *Eagle*, 5 and 8 Nov. 1895.
99. Thanksgiving menu, Raleya House, Vinton, 1894: Oyster soup, celery, olives; prime roast of beef, brown gravy; young turkey stuffed, cranberry sauce, baked chicken pie; boiled ham; apricot roll; mashed potatoes, browned sweet potatoes, tomatoes; string beans; French mustard, salad dressing; pepper sauce, Worcestershire sauce, tomato catsup; cold slaw, pickled beets; apple pie, mince pie, lemon pie, Indian pudding; brandy sauce, oranges, bananas, grapes, assorted nuts, cream cheese; tea, coffee, milk. *Eagle*, 3 Dec. 1895
100. *Eagle*, 6 Dec. 1895.
101. Vinton crime statistics in 1894: $2,650 was assessed in fines and $2,055 collected from law breakers; trial and associated costs, $4,406.31; salary of $1,201.02 to the County Attorney. *Eagle*, 29 Nov. 1895.
102. *Eagle*, 7 Jan. 1896.
103 One hundred forty-seven lights were installed at most intersections of the town's residential section. The lamps had 32-candle power. The blocks toward the end of town had lights on every other corner. Nine arc lights of 1200-candle power each were placed on the principal business district corners. Nine large transformers distributed the electricity. Between 700 and 800 poles were installed averaging about 125' apart and strung with 16,000 pounds of wire covering 13 miles of pole line. *Eagle*, 20 March 1896.
104. Lamps, brackets, wire, etc. would be stocked and fancy fixtures were available through a catalog. The wiring work would be done according to the rules of the Underwriters' Association, "thus doing away as far as possible with the danger of fire." *Eagle*, 21 Jan. 1896.
105. Nominated by Councilman Kelly. City Council Minutes of 18 March 1895.
106. He was to supervise both water and electricity; keep account of patrons; make all collections; attend to reading meters; see that repairs were promptly made; purchase all required supplies (expenditures of more than $100 required Council approval); and make monthly reports to the Council. *Eagle*, 24 Jan. 1896.
107. The author did not have access to the *Benton County Times* and thus Allen's side of the controversy is not fully presented here. *Eagle*, 18, 25, and 28 February; 3, 6, 10, and 20 March 1896.
108. The Council also set salaries of $50 monthly for the Chief Engineer of the Water Works and $40 for the Assistant Engineer; and $60 for the Electrical Engineer and $40 for the Assistant. The Waterworks Plant operated at a deficit of $639 for the fiscal year ending 13 March. The plant cost $43,588.71. The water cost 20¢ per 1,000 gallons and 40,000,000 gallons were pumped during the fiscal year. The water was not metered and income of $3,643 came from rentals and taxes; expenses were $4,274.26, including interest on bonds. The year-end report showed receipts of $7,136.64 includ-

ing $45.02 carry forward; $50.50 in fines; $241.50 in licenses; $82.70 rent of hall; $1.10 sale of barrels; and $6,715.81 corporation tax. Expenditures: $530.40 to operate the Fire Department; $100 to the Mayor; $280 to Councilmen; $300 to the Clerk; $50 to the City Physician; $100 to the Solicitor; $36 for insurance; $537.10 to the Marshal; $477.10 to the Deputy Marshal; $180.35 to extra police; $171.25 for printing; $100 for coal. *Eagle*, 17, 20 and 27 March 1896.

109. A.D. Puffer & Sons of Boston made the fountain which featured a Mexican and Italian onyx front, marble ends, with an oak top. The latter was made by Mr. Graver in Vinton. It had two soda and two mineral draughts and 14 syrups and was warranted to draw soda of 33 degrees of coldness. Palmer pledged "to use nothing but the purest of fruit juices in making his syrups." The *Eagle* described it as an ornament to the store and the city and the place to go for ice cream sodas, crushed fruits, mineral waters, phosphates, etc." *Eagle*, 7 April 1896.

110. *Eagle*, 10 April 1896.

111. There was no further advertising of the J. E. Whipple Co. after 6 March. *Eagle*, 6 March 1896.

112. Bunten, a 29-year resident of the county and staunch Republican, lives in Vinton. "No Republican has ever been more interested in Party success than John." Graves is a successful merchant at Garrison and has been a county resident a good many years. "He has always been an active party worker." Smock has been a county resident every since the war and "has been an active Party man." He was Recorder several years ago and held the position for a number of years. Whipple is a native of Vinton and for the past three years has been "the efficient and successful Chairman of the County Committee." *Eagle*, 21 July 1896.

113. *Eagle*, 21 Aug. 1896. Democrats nominated A. L. Mitchell of Polk Township for Recorder, John Lorenz of LeRoy, Clerk, B.F. Tamblyn of Florence, Auditor, Matt Gaasch of Taylor, County Attorney, Ferdinand Schluntz of Kane, Supervisor. Their Convention was held in Vinton 16 Sept. *Eagle*, 18 Sept. 1896.

114. McKinley was William McKinley the Republican nominee for President in 1896. The *Monitor's* editorial was reprinted in the *Eagle* of 25 Aug. 1896.

115. *Eagle*, 22 Sept. and 2 Oct. 1896

116. The Party sent 1,400 paid speakers to seek votes in every doubtful district. The national campaign committee distributed more than 120 million pieces of literature printed in 10 languages. Boilerplate editorials and other releases were sent free to thousands of small-town newspapers. Theodore Roosevelt said McKinley was advertised "as if he were a patent medicine." The Republican organization reached a peak of efficiency and thoroughness never before approached in a political contest and which profoundly affected every subsequent presidential contest. John A. Garraty, "The Progressives: Part I," *American Heritage*, vol. 13, No. 1, December 1961, 4-11, 108-115.

117. William Jennings Bryan was a superb stump speaker and could be heard by an open-air restless throng numbering in the tens of thousands without straining his voice. He was equally effective speaking from the rear platform of his train at whistle-stops. In addition to the currency, he addressed other issues. He attacked the railroads and the great monopolists and the "tyranny" of the eastern bankers. He deplored the use of militia in labor disputes and of the injunctions as a means of breaking strikes. He spoke in favor of income taxes, higher wages, and relief for hard-pressed mortgagees. But the silver issue was symbolic. Because of the currency shortage deflation was injuring millions of debtors and pouring a rich unearned increment into the pockets of bond holders. Garraty. Bryan became one of most successful Chautauqua speakers in the early 1900s and Jim's son Blaine was his manager one season in the 1920s.

118. The New York *Times* devoted columns to the rumor and printed a letter from a supposed psychologist charging Bryan was suffering from "paranoia querulenta,, graphomania, and oratorical monomania." Garratty.
119. Bryan lost the 1900 campaign to McKinley by 861,459 votes and also the 1908 campaign to William Howard Taft. He is the only man to have been nominated three times by a major political party.
120. *Eagle*, 6 and 13 Nov. 1896.
121. *Eagle*, 5 Jan., 26 Feb., 16 April, and 18 May 1897.
122. Eagle, 7 May and 15 June 1897.
123. *Eagle*, 17 Aug. and 14 Sept. 1897.
124. *Eagle*, 21 May 1897.
125. *Eagle*, 8 June 1897.
126. *Eagle*, 13 July 1897.
127. *Eagle*, 5 Nov. 1897.
128. The Knights of Pythias founded in 1864 devised a set of five wildly eclectic rituals: Roman senators sauntered through Hades, and crusaders through medieval castles. Within a decade membership in the order exceeded 250,000, a figure that doubled by the end of the century. An official in 1887 attributed the order's growth to a ritual that had "taken hold of the hearts of men." In nearly every community the Temple of the Knights of Pythias was a landmark. They declined rapidly in the 20th century when a new generation of men found their initiation hilarious and their meaning purposeless. It is estimated that 20 to 40% of adult men belonged to at least one of 70,000 lodges by the turn of the century. Because only the highest paid manual workers could afford the dues, paraphernalia, and initiation fees, and because Catholic lodge members were threatened with excommunication, the fraternal movement was chiefly an activity of middle-class Protestant men, many of whom belonged to several orders.
129. The mortgage was from the Chicago & Northwestern Railway to the United States Trust Co. of New York. It ran until 1987 and covered the entire Northwestern system and had to be recorded in every county the road runs through in four states. *Eagle*, 14 and 17 Dec., 1897 and 4 Feb. 1898.
130. *Eagle*, 8 Feb. 1898.
131. *Eagle*, 4 Feb. 1898.
132. *Eagle*, 22 Feb. 1898
133. Gen. Blanco—Cuba's Governor-General who had assumed the post only three months earlier replacing the repressive General Valeriano Weyler.
134. All the catalysts that bring on war were in place: land to be grabbed, money to be made, diplomatic trump cards to be played, wrongs to be righted, influence to be widened, evil to be avenged, and a military ready to be mobilized. The U.S. had been eyeing Cuba for almost a century. "I candidly confess, wrote Thomas Jefferson in 1809, "that I have ever looked upon Cuba as the most interesting addition that can be made to our system of states." In 1810 President James Madison warned Great Britain to keep its hands off the island. In the late 1820s, President John Quincy Adams declared that Cuba had become "an object of transcendent importance to the commercial and political interests of our Union." He likened the island to an apple that could fall from its native tree and "gravitate only towards the North American Union." Tom Miller, "Remember the Maine," *Smithsonian*, Vol. 28, No. 11, February 1998, 46-57.
135. Early in March W. P. Whipple was elected President of a Committee to benefit the starving in Cuba. *Eagle*, 29 March, 1 and 19 April, 1898
136. *Eagle*, 26 April 1898.

137. His Deputy George Thompson, acted as Recorder during his absence. Thompson was elected Recorder in the 1902 election and he named Hiram D. Whipple, Jim's cousin, Deputy. *Eagle,* 6 Jan. 1903.
138. Officers with the surname Whipple to serve in the Spanish-American War with Spain and Insurrection in the Philippines 1898-1903. Capt. Everett E. Whipple, 1st R.I. Inf.; 1st Lt.. Henry L. Whipple, 5th Ill. Inf.; Lt. Col. Herbert Sidney Whipple, 2nd Ky. Inf.; Maj. Reuben A. Whipple, 2nd, Mass. Inf.; Maj. Charles Henry Whipple, Minn. paymaster; 2nd Lt., Charles Henry Whipple, Jr., Minn.12th Inf.; Lt. Col. Charles William Whipple, N.H. Vols. Heitman, 1025-26
139. Letter to the author dated 5 March 1975 from Headquarters Iowa National Guard, Office of the Adjutant General, Camp Dodge mailed at P. O. Box 616, Des Moines, Iowa. In possession of author in 2005.
140. *Eagle*, 26 April 1896.
141. Approximately 1,508 enlisted personnel and 49 officers served in the 49th Regiment during the Spanish American War. They served in field and staff, band, and companies A, B, C, D, E, F. G, H, I, J, K, L, and M. The average age of the enlisted was 23.5 with 1,383 being under 30. Those 30 and older totaled 121; 40 and over, 4. Thirty-four officers were under 30; 11 were 30 through 39; two were 40 and two were 44. The oldest enlisted person was private James Henry, 43, of Clarksville, Butler Co. serving in Co. D. Musician George E. Knight of Coggon, Linn Co., and private George Hofuis, a wagoner from Maquokita, Jackson Co. were 41. The Regiment also had one 15, two 16, and three, 17 year-old teens. Members of Company G from Vinton: Charles F. Young, 33, Captain; Guy Kellogg, 23, 1st Lieut.; Herbert E. Crawrford, 21, 1st Lieut,; George W. Sanders, 23, 2nd Lieut.; Holland M. Scott, 30, (Jim's first cousin once removed) 1st serg't.; James E. Whipple, 40, Q. M. serg't.; Clyde H. D'Acres, 15, Miles F. Kelley, 16, Elmo K. Allen, 17, and Frank Wood, 18, Jay Forrester, 20, George E. Knapp, 20, Peter A. Moeller, 20, Earl Shaw, 20, David A. Lane, 21, Timothy E. McDonald, 21, Herman Kagley, 21, all corporals; Harry D. Kirk, 18, Henry M. Ralson, 18, Oren J. Metcalf, 19, all privates. Serving from Reinbeck: James N. Myers, 18, Charles G. Mitchell, 18, Roy Coffin, 19, Emil C. Frahm, 19, Orlyn D. Warner, 19, Nicholas E. Walters, 21, all privates. La Porte City: George H. Heath, 19, Walter S. Carlise, 20, Charles R. Betts, 21, all privates. Nora Springs: August P. Hemrich, 18, , Everett V. Scoville, 21 all privates; Clarence Dearmin, 20, and Charles D. Sheckler, 21, corporals. There was one soldier from each of the following towns: Ira J. Davis, 19, Cedar Falls; Alonzo K, Peterson 18, Clarion; George M. Vail, 19, Des Moines; Stacy L. Cowles, 21, Fayette; Jesse L. Fellows, 19, Grinnell; Benjamin T. Clagg, 21, Le Mars; Claude Elliott, 21, Morrison; Edward C. Parker, 21, Oelwein; Julian C. Cole, 21, Rudd; Warren Gilchrist, 21, Walker, Walter D. Cline, Urbana, 18, all privates; and corporal John Shirry, 20, Oelwein. *Report of the Adjutant-General to the Governor of the State of Iowa for the Biennial Period Ending November 30, 1899.* F. W. Conaway, State Printer, Des Moines, 1900, 58-131.
142. *Eagle*, 26 April 1898.
143. *Eagle*, 29 April and 3 May 1898
144. *Eagle* 13 and 17 May 1898
145. The description is from the Spanish War Muster Roll dated 2 June 1898. Varicocle, left is a condition of the veins of the spermatic cord in the scrotum. Because of the impaired circulation of blood created by a varicocle, the blood does not cool as it does normally. The increased temperature of the blood raises the temperature of the testes, which is believed to contribute to infertility, as heat can damage or destroy sperm. Approximately 40% of infertile men have a varicocle and among men with secondary

infertility – those who have fathered a child but are no longer able to do so – prevalence may be as high as 80%. This may be the reason the family only had one child. His rank was quartermaster sergeant. The total value of the clothes issued him by the state was $1.20. When he was discharged at Savannah 13 May 1899 he was due from the U.S. $37.29 for clothing and $1.49 for arms and equipment. Copies of Veterans Records provided 16 May 1975 by the General Services Administration, National Archives, Washington, D.C. 20408 to the author. In possession of author in 2005.

146. *Eagle*, 21 June 1898.
147. *Eagle, 17 June 1898.*
148. The Third Brigade was commanded by Brig. Gen. Henry C. Hasbrouck of the regular Army. The location of their first Camp proved to be a mistake, for as soon as the rains began, the ground was flooded and they had to move to higher ground near Panama Park, about three miles from Jacksonville. The long hot summer was a was a severe test to the health and strength to some of the men used to a more temperate climate. The Regiment was recruited to maximum strength at Jacksonville and brought to a high standard of drill and discipline. *Roster and Record of Iowa Soldiers in Miscellaneous Organizations of the Mexican War, Indian Campaigns, War of the Rebellion, and the Spanish-American and Philippine Wars Together with Historical Sketches of the Volunteer Organizations.* Vol. VI Miscellaneous. Des Moines: Published by authority of the General Assembly, under the direction of Brig. Gen. Guy E. Logan, Adjutant General. Emory H..English, State Printer; E.D. Chassell, State Binder, 1911, 281. [Hereafter *Roster Iowa Soldiers.]*
149. The YMCA International Committee furnished paper, pens and games. *Eagle*, 8 and 19 July and 2 Aug. 1898.
150. *Eagle*, 19 July 1898.
151. *Eagle*, 22 July 1898.
152. *Eagle*, 29 July 1898.
153. On 20 July, because of the uncertainties of war, Jim prepared a Power of Attorney, investing in Ellen the power to sell and convey his property in Benton and Noble (Minn.) counties. The document was written and notarized in Dural Co., Fla. and recorded 28 July at the Court House in Vinton. Deed Records, Land, No. 66, Benton Co. Recorder's Office.
154. Alligators were on sale in the numerous curiosity shops and ranged in length from 6" to 10 or 12 feet and in price from 25¢ and up. A "somewhat large" one cost, including express charges prepaid to Iowa, 75¢.
155. McCarty was described as one of Florida's prominent men who was being urged to become the Republican candidate for Congress. *Eagle*, 26 July 1898.
156. The author was unable to find a definition for Wargraphe.
157. All business houses were closed during his funeral and over 1,000 crowded into the auditorium of the Presbyterian Church. Former members of Co G, veterans of the Civil War, members of the Bar, etc. gathered at the deceased home and escorted the funeral to the Church for the 3 p.m. service. The funeral cortege covered several blocks. The remains were laid to rest in the Whipple Lot in Maplewood Cemetery. *Eagle*, 29 July, 23 and 26 Aug. 1898.
158. *Eagle*, 1 and 6 Sept. 1898.
159. *Eagle*, 9 Sept. 1898.
160. Reprinted from the *Belle Plaine Union,* "MALICIOUS CIRCULAR ISSUED BY JOHN LORENZ". *Eagle*, 16 Sept. 1898.
161. The "gold-bug inning" was in reference to the national presidential campaign where the Republican nominee, William McKinley, campaigned for the Gold Standard

while William. J. Bryan, the Democratic nominee, advocated the coinage of silver.

162. *Eagle*, 4 Oct. 1898.
163. One-hundred-twenty-four men were left sick in the hospital when Co. G left Jacksonville for Cuba.
164. *Eagle*, 11 Oct. 1898.
165. *Eagle*, 11 Nov. 1898.
166. Receiving similar orders were the 2nd Illinois, 6th Missouri, 4th Virginia, 1st North Carolina, and the 161st Indiana.
167. President McKinley reviewed the troops on 16 December. They numbered 1,200 men, 48 officers, 15 horses, 130 mules, and a number of ambulances. *Eagle*, 23 Dec. 1898.
168. *Eagle*, 3 Jan. 1899.
169. The Camp was at a small station called Quemadas—a part of the town of Marianoo—eight miles from Havana. *Roster Iowa Soldiers*, 281.
170. *Eagle*, 6 Jan. 1899.
171. *Eagle*, 7 Feb. 1899.
172. *Eagle*, 24 Feb. 1899.
173. *Roster Iowa Soldiers*, 281.
174 *Eagle*, 14 March 1899.
175. *Review*, Vinton, Iowa, 18 May 1889.
176. While Jim spent no time in a hospital, his service record shows he was confined to quarters from the first through the seventh of November 1898 with malaria fever and acute diarrhea acquired in the line of duty. Application for pension for service during the Spanish-American War by James E. Whipple, dated 23 Jan. 1913. National Archives Trust Fund Board, Washington, D.C. 20408.
177. The fierce hatreds generated by the Civil War were still dominate by the end of the century. No Northern child had a good opinion of a Southerner. They marched about the playground to the tune of "We'll Hang Jeff Davis on a Sour Apple Tree." They poured over the harrowing stories of Andersonville and Libby prisons, and learned, not that war was despicable and made beasts of men, but that war was glorious.
178. Col. W.G. Dows was scheduled to respond on behalf of the Regiment but did not accompany the men to Vinton.
179. *Eagle*, 16 and 19 May 1899.
180. *Review*, 6 July 1889.
181. His partner in the South Dakota venture was Frank L. Mease, formerly of Benton county, now editor of the *Daily Sentinel* and Post Master of Madison. Purchasers of land would have their fare paid. *Eagle*, 18 July 1899; *Review*, 20 July 1889.
182. Waterloo *Courier*, Waterloo, Iowa 18 July; *Eagle*, 21 July 1889. Mamie eventually came out of her despondency and developed an active life. She worked at the Vinton *Review* for her uncle Jim, became a friends of Cora (Whipple) Kellogg and Ida Edmonds, cousins of Jim's, and traveled with them and eventually took a job at the skirt factory in Waterloo. She married Frank Cosgrove, in Champaign, Illinois, and had at least two children. *Eagle*, 20 May, 3 June, 15 July and 12 Aug. 1902; *Review*, 21 May 1914.
183. *Eagle*, 28 July, 11 Aug. and 26 Sept. 1899.
184. *Eagle*, 12 Sept. 1899.
185. *Review*, 10 Aug. 1899.
186. *Review* 9 Dec, 1899.
187. Republicans won the Coroner race; Democrats the Sheriff, Treasurer, and Superintendent of Schools. *Eagle*, 31 Oct. 3 and 10 Nov. 1899 and 16 Jan. 1900.
188. Review, 2 Nov. 1899.
189. Eagle, 26 Dec. 1899 and 16 Nov. 1900.

190. The blocks of ice were 12 inches thick and were getting larger by the day.
191. Instead of the newsboy, it had more periodicals on its library cars and doubled the number of news stands at its stations. The rest of their Vinton schedule: Minneapolis Express, 1 a.m.; Chicago Mail and Express, 7:22 p.m.; Chicago Fast Express, 11:40 p.m.; Spirit Lake Passenger No. 601B, 9:25 a.m.; Sioux Falls Passenger No. 605A, 1:10 a.m.
192. *Eagle*, 24 April, 8 and 11 May and 18 Dec. 1900.
193. *Eagle*, 1 June, 17 and 24 July, 7 Aug. and 7 Nov. 1900. *Review*, 4 Jan. and 18 Oct. 1900.
194. The *Vinton Review* was originally *The Benton County Herald* established by J. F. Pyne & Sons on 2 July 1878. Its politics were Democratic and for several years it was the only paper in the county to espouse the Democratic view. The Pynes sold the paper to George Weber in 1884 who changed its name to *The Benton County Review*.
195. Six months later Flude sold it to P.E. Low of Pennsylvania. *Review*, 14 Dec. 1899.
196. It was an 8-page, 6-column paper published on Thursdays. Four of the pages were boilerplate. Annual subscription, $1, single issue, 5¢. Their first issue was Vol. 19, No. 25.
197. *Eagle*, 4 July 1899; 27 Feb. and 6 March 1900. *Review* 1 March 1900.
198. Jim wrote that Blaine and his girl friend were expected to consume lots of ice cream, red lemonade and pop corn – said goodies will vanish like a Kansas corn field before the irresistible march of a cloud of grasshoppers. *Review*, 5 July 1900.
199. W. P. Whipple and H. Wilcox purchased the Watson Opera House for $6,000 in June. *Review*, 21 June 1900.
200. *Eagle*, 16 March 1900.
201. *Eagle*, 28 Feb., 25 Aug., and 27 Oct. 1899; 27 March 1900.
202. *Eagle*, 23 and 30 March 1900.
203. A machine that projected a clear, brilliant, and perfectly outlined picture 10 feet square. It had a burner of vapor light or criterion generator and Sim-plex burner for acetylene illuminations. They were available from the Sears, Roebuck & Co., Catalog and included 52 magnificent photographic views made on glass and magnified by the powerful lenses and projected on a screen giving them a depth and appearance so true to nature that the audience almost forgets it is not looking at the original. Included with each purchase were 1,000 large advertising posters made of paper and illustrated with attractive engravings and blank spaces to list the place, date, and price of the lecture; a printing outfit of movable large rubber type letters and numbers with holder, tweezers, and ink pad; and a book of instructions with lectures on The Spanish-American War and the Philippines, The Boer-English War and scenes of South Africa, Scenes in Paris and the Exposition of 1899, Shadows of a Great City, Cuba, the *Maine* and the Cuban War, etc. *Sears, Roebuck & Co., Catalog*, No. 110, fall 1900. Reproduction by DBI Books, Inc., Northfield, Illinois, 1970.
204. Over 100 members attended the organizational meeting of Vinton's McKinley and Roosevelt Club. Jim also helped organize clubs in Blairstown, the Secesh School House in Benton county, and Mt. Auburn. *Review*, 20 Sept.; 4 and 11 Oct. 1900.
205. Titles in the Knights of Pythias in order of importance: Chancellor Commander, Grand Chancellor, Grand Vice Chancellor, Grand Prelate, Grand Keeper of Records and Seals, Grand Master o f Exchequer, Grand Master at Arms, Grand Inner Guard, Grand Outer Guard, Grand Trustees.
206. *Eagle*, 3 and 17 April, 11 May, 17 and 21 July, 18 and 28 Sept., 12 and 30 Oct. and 11 Dec. 1900.
207. *Review*, 23 Aug. 1900.
208. 17 lbs fine granulated sugar $1; 13 lbs brown sugar $1; clover syrup 30¢ per gal.; fancy California naval oranges 29¢ per doz.; fancy crackers (oyster or butter) 7¢; solid Main bulk oysters 35¢ qt.; fancy California prunes 5¢ lb.; fancy California peaches 10¢ lb; 10

lbs. oatmeal 25¢; Rio Coffee 7 lbs $1 or 15¢ lb; 7 bars Santa Claus or Lenox soap 25¢; 12 bars Lyon soap 25¢; 3 cans Lewis Lye 25¢; 5 lb laundry starch 25¢; homemade mince meat 10¢ lb.; bottle of bluing 10¢ qt.; Gedney's best sauer kraut 10¢ qt.; extra fine homemade sausage 10¢ lb.; good bacon 11¢ lb.; homemade head cheese 8¢ lb.; pickled port 8¢ lb.; lard 10¢ lb.; cooked corn beef 12.5¢ lb.; fresh roasted peanuts 10¢ lb; pickled head cheese 10¢ lb.

Comforts from 75¢ to $2; half wool heavy extra 10x4 blankets $1.85; full 10x4 cotton blankets 55¢; 10x4 all wool blankets $3.48; Ladies' high instep overshoes 65¢; Mens' rubbers 85¢; Ladies' jackets $2.49 to $7.49; Fedoras, Pashas, and stiff hats 79¢ to $1.69; Mens' calf shoes $2.45 & $2.85; dress shoes $1.85; Ladies' dress shoes $2.15 to $2.65; Mens' overcoats $3.49 to $5.98; Mens' cassimere (sic) suits $4.98; Mens' fancy mixed Chevoit suits $3.98; Mens' diagonal Chevoit pants 98¢; Mens' mule skin work gloves 15¢; silk-lined Mochka quality celluloid cuffs 5¢; muslin underskirts from 39¢ to $2.98; Kadues' corset covers from 19¢ to 98¢. *Eagle* 8 Jan. and 12 Feb. 1901.

209. The Macabees were an insurance order with strong fraternal features. It was named the Titus Tent in honor of Vinton's young soldier in the China War. W. P. Whipple was elected Past Commander.
210. *Eagle*, 26 July and 3 and 13 Sept. 1901.
211. *Review*, 2 May 1901.
212. Pawnee Bill was Major G. William Lillie, famed guide, scout, U.S. interpreter, and Oklahoma hero.
213. Pawnee Bill's show included an Indian village, Indian Museum, Hippodrome, Mexican bull fight,, and an exhibition of trained animals. Genuine and true: his Indians are Indians, his Mexicans are Mexicans, his cowboys are cowboys, his Vaqueros are Vaqueros. See the Indian as he was in his might; see him in sage brush covered plains; in the valleys of the Rocky Mountain range. Miss May Lillie, the 19th century Diana, champion girl horseback rifle shot of the world; Senor Jose Valasques, riding and driving 35 horses at one time; a herd of buffaloes and a drove of long-horned Texas steers; Indian ponies, broncos, mustangs, etc.; a band of Australian bushmen, famous black tracker and boomerang throwers; a troupe of famous Japanese lancers, fencers, and fighters and sword combats on horseback. Oriental stars, Arabian acrobats, and human pyramid builders; 5,000 animate and inanimate curiosities making one of the grandest and most wonderful exhibitions that every appeared in your city. 10,000 seats under waterproof canopies that encircle the vast arena. A diminutive stage coach, Lilliputian prairie schooner, and hundreds of other features for the little folks. *Review*, 22 Aug. 1901.
214. Official canvas in Benton county: Whipple, 3,091. Jackson, 2,075. *Review* 7 and 14 Dec. 1901.
215. What a difference a century makes. U.S. statistics in 1902: the average life expectancy was 47; 14% of the homes had a bathtub; 8% had telephones; a 3-minute call from Denver to New York City cost $11.00; there were 8,000 cars and only 144 miles of paved roads; the maximum speed limit in most cities was 10 mph; Iowa, Alabama, Mississippi, and Tennessee had more population than California with a mere 1.4 million population was only the 21st most populous state; the Eiffel Tower was the tallest structure in the world; the average wage was 22¢ an hour; the average worker made between $200.00 and $400.00 annually; a competent accountant could expect to earn $2,000.00, a dentist $2,500.00, a veterinarian between $1,500.00 and $4,000.00 and a mechanical engineer about $5,000.00 per year; more than 95% of all births were at home; 90% of physicians had no college education—they attended medical schools, many of which were condemned in the press and by the government as substandard.

Sugar cost 4¢ a pound, eggs were 14¢ a dozen, coffee 15¢ a pound and most women only washed their hair once a month and used borax or egg yolks for shampoo. The five leading causes of death were pneumonia and influenza, tuberculosis, diarrhea, heat disease, stroke; the flag had 45 stars—Arizona, Oklahoma, New Mexico, Hawaii, and Alaska hadn't yet been admitted to the Union; the population of Las Vegas, Nevada was 30; crossword puzzles, canned beer, and ice tea hadn't been invented; only 6% of all Americans had graduated from high school; and there was no Mother's or Father's Day. Marijuana, heroin, and morphine were available over the counter at drugstores—pharmacists advertised "Heroin clears the complexion, gives buoyancy to the mind, regulates the stomach and the bowels, and is, in fact, a perfect guardian of health." There were only about 230 reportered murders and 18% of households had at least one full-time servant or domestic. What will it be like in another 100 years?

216. In October 1902 the number of the Regiment was changed from the 49th to the 53rd. Camps attended by the company: Cedar Rapids, August 1900; Dubuque, July 1901; Cedar Falls, July 1902 and August 1903; Des Moines, August 1904 and thereafter.
217. *Eagle*, 22 April, 13, 16, 20, and 27 May, 17 June 1902.
218. Whatever happened to the sword is unknown. *Review*, 24 July 1902
219. *Eagle*, 6 June, 4 July and 22 Aug. 1902.
220. The stamp being replaced had a likeness of Washington from Jean Antoine Hounon's profile which had been in continuous use since the beginning of the use of stamps, except for the year 1869 when a wood-burning locomotive of the Rocket type was used. *Eagle*, 7 Nov. 1902.
221. *Review*, 31 July and 25 Dec. 1902.
222. Cinch, a noun—a card game in which points are won for taking the high or low jack or Game. Fifty-one points make a game.
223. *Eagle*, 17 March 1903.
224. The state and federal governments contributed $1,200 annually to the Company: $650 camp pay, $250 drill pay, and $300 Armory rent. *Eagle*, 5 Jan. 1904.
225. *Eagle,* 15 Jan. and 23 Feb. 1904.
226. Two other Vinton candidates, Nichols for County Attorney and Thompson for Recorder were unopposed so were sure of nomination. Delegates from other sections of the county were unwilling to nominate three Vinton candidates so after the first ballot Jim withdrew in favor of Bryner. In his editorial following the Convention he wrote: The Republican Convention last week made an excellent choice of a ticket. In this respect we do not think that the Party ever did better. There was not the slightest evidence of bad blood and all the defeated candidates accepted the situation with the best possible grace. *Review*, 5 May 1904. *Eagle*, 26 March, 26 and 29 April 1904.
227. *Eagle*, 15 July, 23 Aug., 16 Sept., 4 and 26 Oct. and 11 Nov. 1904.
228. *Eagle*, 10 Feb. 1905.
229. *Eagle*, 18 Sept. 1906.
230. *Review*, 14 May 1914.
231. *Review*, 1 May 1907.
232. Chautauqua—An educational and recreational assembly with a program that includes lectures, concerts, etc. They were sponsored by the business men of the towns and brought many customers into town to shop. All businesses closed at 6 p.m. except Saturdays. The Chautauqua grounds were 8 blocks from city center and fully lighted at night. Free telephone service was available in the headquarters tent and a dining room was on site. Breakfast was 20¢ and dinner and supper 25¢. The first Chautauqua was in August 1906. *Review*, 7 Aug. 1907.
233. Jim's 1913 Pension Application 1407489, Department of the Interior, Bureau of Pensions,

Washington, D.C., National Archives Trust Fund Board, Washington, D.C. 20408.

234. Cemetery deed: For, and in consideration of Fifty (50) dollars we hereby convey to Mrs. Ella Whipple Lot 23 in Block L Vinton, now Evergreen Cemetery, Benton County, Iowa. The same is sold by said Association to said purchaser with the distinct understanding of such rules and regulations as have been adopted by said Board of Trustees of said Association, and are as follows, to wit: FIRST: In no event shall there be on one lot more than one monument, with as many markers as there are burials. Uniform markers shall be used, and in no case shall any markers project above the ground so as to interfere with lawn mowing. SECOND: No trees or shrubbery shall be planted or grown by purchaser on any lot. THIRD: No lot to be graded above the natural condition of the ground, but same will be leveled and put in smooth condition by this Association, including the grave. FOURTH: No lot shall be sold in Blocks K-L— and Lots 3 to 20 inclusive in Block N, until said purchaser shall have deposited with the Trustees appointed by the Court, the sum of $100.00 for the perpetual care and maintenance of the lot in accordance with the law duly enacted by the State of Iowa. See Code 254-A4, 1907 Supplement. And the said Trustees reserve the right of making further Lots or Blocks to come under said Act for the perpetual care of Lots and Blocks as in their judgment may seem just and proper. The above rules apply to the sections of said Cemetery designated as Blocks F-G-K-L-M and lots from 3 to 20 inclusive in Block N. We warrant the title against all persons whomsoever. (S) S. Robinson, President. (S) Arrad Thompson, Secretary. Dated Vinton, Iowa May 25, 1914.

On this 25th day of May 1914 before me, a Notary public in for said county personally appeared the above named S. Robinson and Arad Thompson to me personally known, who being by me personally duly sworn, say that they are President and Secretary, respectively, of the said Evergreen Cemetery Association, a Corporation organized according t the laws of Iowa. That said Corporation has no seal. That said instrument was signed in behalf of said Corporation by the authority of its Board of Directors, and the said President and Secretary acknowledged the execution of the same to be the voluntary act and deed of said Corporation. Witness my hand and seal the day and year last above written. J.F. Traer, Notary Public in and for Benton County, Iowa. Filed for record this 26th day of May 1914 at 4 o'clock 15 minutes P.M., and duly recorded in Book 14, page 319 of the Record of T.Lt Deeds. Joe S. Pyne Recorder

235. Ellen's Pension application No. 10335660. Act of War with Spain.
236. *Review,* 9 Dec. 1908 and 5 and 12 Sept. 1918.
237. The final report was filed with the Court on 18 Oct. 1919. Ellen owned no real estate at the time of death but had $3,390.99 in a savings account. Disbursements amounted to $599.43 including $110.00 to Drs. Luckey & Luckey for her final illness and $45.00 for a grave marker. Blaine was the sole heir and of the $2,691.56 remaining, he authorized the payment of $1,700.59 to four entities including $500.00 to Mamie Thompson Cosgrove, Ellen's niece, and $1,000.00 to the Farmers National Bank of Vinton. That left $990.97 for distribution to Blaine. However, the Administrator was garnished in the case of D.L. Bryan against Blaine Whipple which was pending in Court and the funds were held by the Administrator as Trustee until the garnishment proceedings were completed. D.L. Bryan and Blaine had been partners in promoting stage shows in Vinton in the late 1900s. Book 14, p. 244, 3714, District Court of Benton Co., Iowa.
238. Stuart Lutz, "Seasons of the Flag," *American Heritage*, February/March 2002, 59.
239. Sigmund Spaeth, *A History of Popular Music In America*. New York: Random House, 1948, fifth printing.

CHAPTER SIXTEEN

LUCIEN BLAINE WHIPPLE MARRIED (1) LILLIAN NEVA LEFEBRE (2) PEARL JULIA SCOTT

Lucien[10] Blaine Whipple *(James[9], Lucien[8], Enoch[7], Nehemiah[6], Benjamin[5], Francis[4], Jonathan[3] Joseph[2], Matthew[1], Matthew[A]) was born 22 June 1883 at Eugene, Vermillion Co., Indiana; died 27 August 1954 at Dresden, Weakley Co., Tennessee. Married (1) Lilllian Neva LeFebre 18 December 1908 at Beatty, Kansas. (2) Pearl Julia Whipple 21 September 1927, at Albion, Boone Co., Nebraska. He was a professional actor, salesman, Chamber of Commerce Executive, newspaper editor and publisher, State Printer of North Dakota, and active in a variety of civic and political organizations. He was known by his middle name.*

Children of Blaine and Lillian Neva Whipple:

i. *Helen, born and died 20 August 1909.*
ii. *Ellen Elaine, born 6 August 1910. Married Stephen Ely West. Known by her middle name.*
iii. *James Earl, born 29 October 1911; died 20 February 1983. Married (1) Olive Maxine Hancock (2) Joyce Ann Reinet.*

Children of Blaine and Pearl Julia Whipple:

i. *Patricia Ellen, born 1 February 1929 in Des Moines, Polk Co., Iowa. Married 18 June 1951 at Yankton, Yankton Co., South Dakota Edwin LeRoy Drotzman.*
ii. *Robert Blaine, born 22 February 1930 at Martin Bennett Co., South Dakota. Married 6 August 1966 at Portland, Washington Co., Oregon Ines M. (Peterson) Steele. Known by his middle name.*
iii. *Nancy Jane, born 5 January 1932 at Ryder, Ward Co.,North Dakota; died 26 December 1987 at Glencoe, McLeod Co., Minnesota. Married 30 July 1950 at Tracy, Lyon Co., Minnesota Donald J. Jasperson.*
iv. *Richard Earl, born 12 September 1933 at Underwood, McLean Co., North Dakota; died unmarried 18 May 2005 at Minneapolis, Hennepin Co., Minnesota.*

v. Mary Ann, born 8 December 1937 at Bismarck, Burleigh Co., North Dakota. Married 21 August 1955 at Yankton, Yankton Co., South Dakota Billie Nathaniel McPherson

The only child of James Ezekiel and Ellen (Thompson) Whipple, Lucien Blaine, was born Friday June 22, 1883.[1] He was named after his grandfather Lucien Ransom Whipple but was always known by his middle name, occasionally preceded by the initial L.[2] He lived his first five and a half years in Eugene where his father was involved in a variety of activities. In addition to his Whipple grandparents,[3] two Whipple uncles and an aunt,[4] 12 Sheward great aunts and uncles,[5] and eight cousins[6] of similar age lived in Eugene. His Thompson grandmother, Rebecca, lived just over the county line at Ridgefield, Vermilion Co., Illinois. One of the cousins, Frank Fultz of Eugene and a year older than Blaine, wrote the author after Blaine's death about the fun times they had as lads exploring along the banks of the Big Vermillion river.[7]

Blaine spent the rest of his formative years in Vinton, Benton county, Iowa where the family moved late in 1888. Numerous Whipple relatives had settled in Benton county in the early 1850s. Two of his grandfather's brothers and three sisters had raised large families and there were many second generation cousins Blaine's age to acquaint him with his new home.[8] Vinton was much larger than Eugene and was also on a river – the Cedar river.

He completed his elementary and secondary schooling in Vinton and graduated from Vinton's *Tilford Collegiate Academy*. Among the books he studied in the primary grades were: Montgomery's primary and advanced history;[9] Hyde's *Lessons in English*, Book I and II for language and grammar;[10] Reed's *Higher Lessons in English*;[11] and Merrill's *Copy Books* for advance grammar. His readers included *New Franklin*, first through fifth, and the *Modern Spelling Book*. He studied three texts for arithmetic: White's *First Book* and his *New Complete*[12] and Piper's *Graded Seat Work*. His geographies included Butler's elementary and complete and he learned about physiology (biology) from Smith's *Primer* and Steel's *Hygienic*.[13] He also studied Latin.

A typical school day would find Blaine, along with the other neighborhood kids, leaving home about 8:30 a.m. in a hurry to beat the "last bell" at 8:45. The play ground around the school was divided into areas for boys and girls with an unsanitary privy in the corner of each. During their morning 15-minute recess, the boys played "hornaway" – running from one fence to the opposite without being "tagged" by those in the center who were "it." They also played marbles and most boys carried a draw string bag filled with them.

They were kept after school for misdemeanors such as whispering and shooting paper wads. Girls read *Chatterbox, Little Women,* and *Elsie Dinsmore* and the boys read *Jules Verne, Oliver Optic,* and *Harry Castlemon*, hid behind their geographies and histories. The more daring had dime novels, easier to conceal, but warranting a greater penalty if caught. On Friday afternoons, each pupil in turn had to recite a "piece," an agony for most but probably welcomed by Blaine.

During his formative years he did all the things most kids did including skating, sledding, hayride parties, biking, swimming, studying, going to parties, live theatrical performances, circuses,[14] home chores, etc. One of his memorable parties was Halloween in 1895 at the Dr. Meredith home where daughter Harley was the hostess. The house was in darkness except for a succession of pumpkins pointing the way through diverse and dark windings to the reception room where a fire blazed and fantastic goblins darted along the wall into obscure corners like ghosts in some deserted manor. Once all the young guests were in the room a curtain rose slowly disclosing a weird wizard nook with blue flame, burning incense, and a pagan sibyl[15] chanting muffled incantations. She told every kid's future with such startling exactness that many quaked and trembled. As she slowly melted away into the darkness, the kids were taken singly to the haunted chamber of such stygian[16] darkness and heat it reminded them of Dante's[17] *Inferno* as terrifying visages mysteriously appeared on the walls. After being scared witless they calmed down by playing old time Halloween games, the most picturesque of which were tiny boats with lighted tapers floating in tubs. Each guest received a souvenir.[18] He was among Vinton's youngsters to attend Buffalo Bill's Wild West Show at Cedar Rapids Wednesday September 30, 1896.[19]

He did some things most other kids didn't do. After his father became Superintendent of the city's Electric Light Plant he subscribed to the *Detroit Electrical Student,* a bright, illustrated weekly paper devoted to simple lessons in electricity for beginners.[20] These lessons stayed with him all his life, enabling him to do electrical repairs at his various homes. He was 13 when his dad was elected Benton County Recorder and he would spend hours in the Recorder's office going through old records. The Vinton *Eagle*, referring to him as "Master Blaine Whipple," reported on December 31, 1897 that he had found the original plat of Benton City (name later changed to Vinton) showing the town originally contained 16 blocks in Section 20 Township 85.[21] He also found a warranty deed from Samuel Aungst to his grandmother Sarah Whipple. The deed was for lots one and two in south Vinton and was recorded July 31, 1866.[22]

Blaine lost his cousin Cyrenius Whipple, one of his closest friends, to drowning six days before his (Blaine's) fourteenth birthday. Blaine,

"Rene," and about 15 other children were on a picnic June 16, 1897 about two miles below Vinton. Several boys joined Rene soon after lunch swimming in deep water. After he cried for help, Blaine and several other boys tried unsuccessfully to save him. His body wasn't found until 5 p.m. the next day.[23]

Following the departure of Company G from Vinton to Des Moines in April 1898 for training prior to going to Cuba, a 40-member junior Company G was organized with 32 privates, two corporals, three sergeants, a first and a second lieutenant, and a captain. Blaine was elected Captain. In a report on activities of the 1898 Decoration Day, the *Eagle* said "Captain Blaine Whipple handled his company of juvenile soldiers in a masterly manner yesterday (Monday May 30). It escorted the Committee in charge to the Maplewood "Cemetery and then to the Evergreen Cemetery." The paper was critical of the junior soldiers in June "for getting into the bad habit of shooting birds instead of Spaniards with their air guns," pointing out it was against the law. It also reported the Company attended the veteran's reunion at Spencer's Grove on Wednesday June 8.[24]

JOINS THE NATIONAL GUARD AT 16 AND ATTENDS TILTON ACADEMY

When Company G 49th Infantry of the Iowa National Guard was organized September 21, 1899 he enlisted as a private at age 16. His father was Captain and commander of the Company. He spent 16 years in the Guard and rose through the ranks from private to Second Lieutenant and was honorably discharged July 4, 1915.[25] He and his father were members of

Blaine Whipple is the second guardsman from the left. The time is between 1910 and 1913.

the Company's rifle team and competed in team matches with other National Guard companies. Both became expert marksmen.

Instead of graduating from Vinton High School he attended Vinton's Tilford Collegiate Academy, completing its two year academic course which was described as "An excellent education for any of the professions."[26] Tuition was $10.00 per 12 week term.[27] He played quarterback on the football team. They lost to Cedar Rapids in November 1900 (his first year at Tilford)[28] 46 to 0. According to the *Eagle*, the Tilford boys were "too light for the Cedar Rapids club."[29]

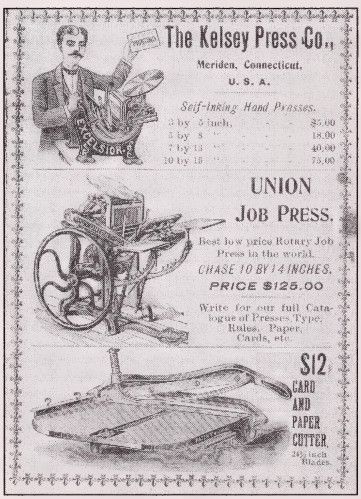
After his father and Ed Gerberich purchased the weekly Vinton *Review* in March 1900, Blaine, who had ambitions to become a reporter, was hired as a "printer's devil.[30] In theory he was an apprentice printer but in fact initially he was an errand boy, janitor, general roustabout, folded papers on press day, and did all the menial or unpleasant jobs around the print shop. Over the years he became a competent journeyman printer and learned to operate a linotype and to repair the various presses.

Work as a devil was required before one could learn the basic skills of printing. The first thing an apprentice learned was the type case, a large wooden drawer partitioned into small separate sections for each individual letter and punctuation mark. You "learned the case" just as a typist learns the keyboard of a computer or typewriter. Your hand must learn where to reach for each letter. There were two cases set on a rack. One held type in small letters and was directly in front of the typesetter. The other held capital letters and was just beyond at an angle uptilted. This is how the terms upper case for capital letters and lower case for the other letters originated. A typesetter had to learn to hold a printer's stick and to justify a line. The printer's stick was a short, shallow, metal tray held in the left hand. Type was placed in it letter by letter and line by line with the right hand until the stick was full, about a dozen lines. That type was transferred to a long steel tray called a galley and the printer then started over with the empty stick and continued to set type until the galley was full.

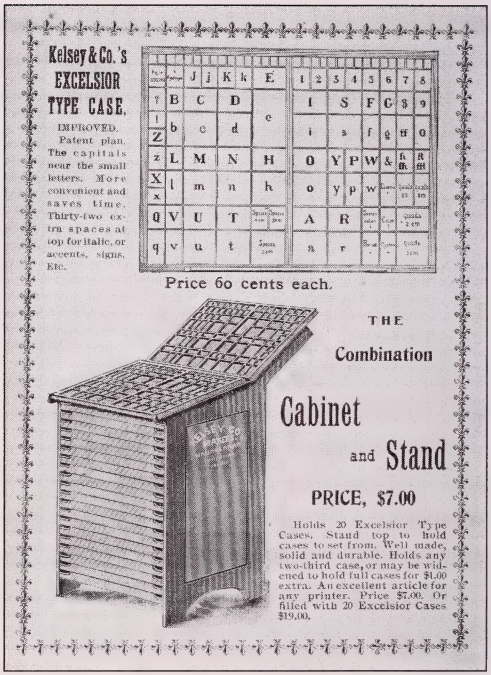
Learning the upper case with the capital letters was easy because the letters were placed in their designated space in the tray alphabetically, left to right and top to bottom. But the space in the tray holding the lower case were of various sizes arranged by frequency of use. The largest spaces were placed closest to the front and contained the most used letters: e, t, a, i, s, n, h, and r. The rest of the letters and punctuation marks and blanks for spaces between words, except for the logotypes, were arranged around those letters. Logotypes are compound letters like "fl, ffi"on a single piece of type used for words such as flies, official, etc. Their designated spaces are at the top of the lower case.

When the galley was full a proof was pulled and proofread and mis-

takes corrected. Reading the type to make corrections was not easy for an apprentice. Type is backward, the reverse of the printed letters, so the printer had to read type upside down, from left to right from the bottom up line by line. It was a skill that took practice and is now a lost art except for a few special purposes. It was also a skill that honed the printer's grammar, syllabification, punctuation, and spelling. Printers were among

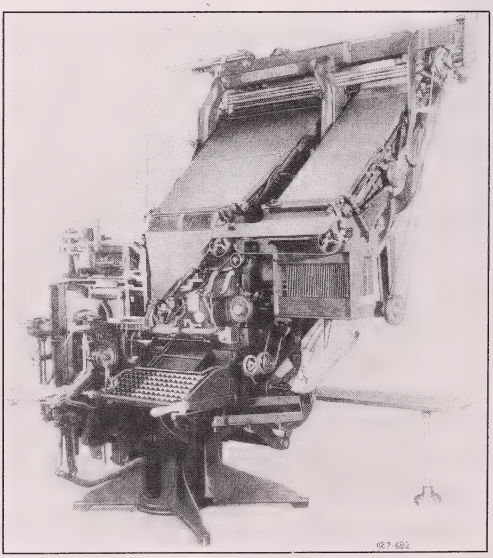


Called press feeding, it wasn't complicated but required coordination, timing, and rhythm.[32] After achieving apprentice status he learned to make extra letters for the big wood type display font by gluing linoleum to wooden cut bases and carving out the extra letters with a sharp pocket knife, how to cast new ink rollers with a mixture of



the few people who actually studied the dictionary.

After he became proficient at setting type, Blaine learned to feed the presses. Every sheet of paper had to be fed into and taken from the press by hand.[31]



glycerine and molasses; the formula for tabbing glue, how to overlay and underlay and mask to get special effects on the job press. He also learned to work with color and to layout advertisements and special print jobs. He learned to coordinate type faces, the value of white space, how to emphasize important facts with color, and how to estimate the cost of job work, including a profit for the firm. Job printing was an important source of income for weekly newspapers. He put all these skills to good use in later years.

NAMED EDITOR OF THE VINTON *REVIEW* AT 23

His father acquired sole ownership of the *Review* January 1, 1907 and turned over its management to Blaine, then 23, with the issue of January 3, 1907.[33] The banner headline in that issue was *REVIEW* UNDER NEW MANAGEMENT; BLAINE WHIPPLE, JIM'S KID, ASSUMES THE REINS. He was identified as managing editor in the masthead and his father was listed as publisher. He informed readers that news would be his one purpose in life and noted he had never run a newspaper before but had ideas on how it should be run. He reminded *Review* readers he was young and asked them to give him time to learn. "Don't be afraid to help us," he wrote. "Help us get the news and in any other way you can."

The *Benton County Signal* reported that Blaine started out with "a very credible number and with bold declarations that he is going to run the paper as he dern pleases." The Belle Plaine *Union* said his first issue was "newsy and interesting" and the Toledo *Chronicle* wrote that the paper "shows improvements indicating that "Jim's Kid" is onto his job." The Shellsburg *Call* wrote that the paper "is bristling with the personality of the young editor" and predicted "a successful career" for the new editor.

Blaine's first column as editor asked the question: IS EVERYBODY HAPPY?

> Tuesday morning I started thinking of the beauties of nature, and comparing winter with summer. While in the midst of a glorious contemplation of the advantages of winter, I was brought to earth by a merry voice wishing me a happy new year. Right then I started to be happy.
>
> Wouldn't it make anyone happy to know that someone thought enough of you to want you to feel happy? There is nothing in the world to equal happiness. It is more useful than a red necktie and a heap more filling than an ice cream soda. It is good for the liver and is not a bad thing to have around when the coal bill arrives. Yes, it is a great thing to be happy.

> But don't be half way happy. Be happy all over. Let's form a "Happy Club" as an auxiliary to the"Boosters Club." Then watch those Boosters boost. How do we start? By BOOSTING. Boost your neighbor, boost yourself, and above all boost Vinton.

Blaine's initiation as an editor was doomed to failure by the Panic of 1907 which brought the business of the country to a standstill.[34] There were to many newspapers in Vinton competing for limited advertising dollars, causing the *Review*, in Jim's words, "to suffer a severe financial panic." He sold the paper to H.S. Havener and E.K. Allen on February 25.

Blaine may have given his first public performance as an actor at age 14 when he and his cousin Milo Whipple had prominent parts in the Junior Endeavor Society Program at the Presbyterian church.[35] He was 17 when he gave an oration at the Company G minstrel show at the Watson Opera House in December 1900[36] and was in the comedy drama, *The Corner Store,* in March 1902 for the benefit of Vinton's Fire Department. In March 1903 he played the part of lawyer Fleece in *Kangaroo Kourt* in the fourth annual minstrel entertainment presented by Company G. In the second part of that program he gave a lecture entitled *Any Old Thing*. He was also in the cast of *The Mansion of Aching Hearts*, a comedy drama in four acts, Friday evenings July 22 and 29, 1904. The play was about New York City society.[37]

BECOMES A PROFESSIONAL ACTOR AT 20

He began his professional show business career in the spring of 1903[38] at age 20 with the James-Younger Wild West Show[39] which featured Frank James and Cole Younger, the notorious bank robbers between February 1866 and October 1882. Younger had been wounded 26 times and still carried 17 bullets. Both had been paroled from prison and decided to cash in on their most valuable asset – notoriety. There were at least 116 different Wild West shows performing across the country at one time or another and the James-Younger show was considered one of the worst.

Few players had lessons in acting. They learned by doing. Rehearsals numbered three, sometimes four, when playing stock giving two new plays a week. They were held at 10 a.m. daily. Even the leads didn't have a copy of the whole script – only half sheets with their cues and lines typewritten – so the director presented the idea of the play. The cast was supposed to know all their lines by the second rehearsal. Learning lines became second nature, especially when there were two or more new bills to learn a week. The third rehearsal came close to performance time. There were matinees two afternoons a week in permanent stock and only occasionally in repertory. Evenings were long with plays usually beginning

at 8:15 and lasting until around 11. Then the company went to a restaurant and finally to a hotel for a hard-earned rest. Blaine definitely learned by doing, working with many shows in many venues.

He joined the Curts Dramatic Company in 1904. The Vinton *Review* of May 26, reported he was home for a visit and "had attained a considerable degree of success for a beginner." The balance of 1904 he was with the Hickman-Miller Stock Company doing a one-nighter, *A Study in Scarlet*, and the Dick Ferris Stock Company in *Homespun Heart*. On March 23, 1905 he was both an actor and manager of *Oh, What a Night* which played to a full house at Vinton's Watson Theatre. He was the director and played the title role of Lysander Lyon in *The Prince of Liars*, a 3-act farce-comedy at the Watson on April 21. The *Eagle* called it "quality entertainment" and said the cast showed marked ability. The *Review* lauded his performance and said "he had become an actor of unusual merit."[40] He joined the Daniels Stock Co. in May 1905 to play the lead in comedies. After a week's engagement at Fairbault, Minnesota, they played Sioux City, Iowa. Among their repertory[41] were: *Oh What A Night, Way Out West, The Bells of Richmond, A Study in Scarlet, A Woman's Power,* and *The Prince of Liars*. He joined the Wallock Theater Company in July, remaining with the company until the manager's illness caused it to close. He then joined Miller Bros. Stock Company at Moberly, Missouri where he played leading roles.

There were many stock companies in those days, playing a circuit of small towns for a few months before returning to their base to learn a new repertory. Many actors worked with a variety of these companies and kept track of job opportunities by reading the *Opera House Reporter*, published monthly at Estherville, Iowa.[42] It reported the news – including good and bad reviews — of the various companies and a route list of where they were booked.

Every thriving town along the main rail lines had small theater buildings called Opera Houses. Some were on the main floor, others on the second. Even branch lines had a hall where plays could be performed. The railroads gave special rates to the troupers and the companies prepared several plays so they could stay in one town for longer than one day and night. The greatest period for repertory shows was from 1890 to 1910. After 1913 the movies took over the opera houses and forced the rep companies into tents. The greatest development of repertoire in tents took place between 1919 and 1930.

Stages on these old theaters were usually 25 feet deep by 25 feet wide with a proscenium 13 to 15 feet high.[43] Roll-up curtains rather than drops were used. The opera houses furnished the scenery before the invention of diamond dye scenery.[44] The companies carried their props and costumes

and the same four sets were used for every play. Theaters in the smaller towns provided kerosene footlights and overhead lights. When the Coleman gasoline lantern was invented, lights were brighter and safer. These lamps were used as late as 1929 in towns without electricity. The facilities in many of the opera houses did not include the obvious and necessary creature comforts. Modern plumbing was unknown and the actors had to dress and put on their makeup in cold discomfort, and undress and wash in the same way. They were provided a bowl and pitcher for washing and a slop pail for dirty water and a comfort station. Dressing rooms and central heating and air conditioning were in the future.

Actors had to furnish their own make-up,[45] wardrobe, and separate clothes for street wear. The wardrobe ranged from the rough costumes of the G-string comedian,[46] the fantastic Toby get-up,[47] the hired-girl clothes of a character like Tildy Ann, and minstrel costumes[48] to full dress wear for both afternoon and evening for leading men and beautiful up-to-the-minute fashion dresses for the leading ladies. Maintaining wardrobes was a high cost item. Costumes were only worn on stage and were kept in theatrical trunks at the theater. Wigs were required for many parts, especially those played by comedians and general business people. Blaine had several.[49] The actor's salaries were adequate, often high, and work was steady for most. Nevertheless the acquisition of a full wardrobe was a financial strain so it was acquired in bits and pieces as they played different roles. Many of the costumes were second hand.[50]

People in small towns and the surrounding farms were relatively isolated. The work was hard and the hours long. Few had automobiles and asphalt roads were in the future. For farmers, a weekly trip to town was an event as was the opening of a show. Both were major events that broke the monotony of seeing the same place and people and doing the same tasks every day. To the farmer and town resident, the rep shows were a welcome break and the ticket prices were affordable.

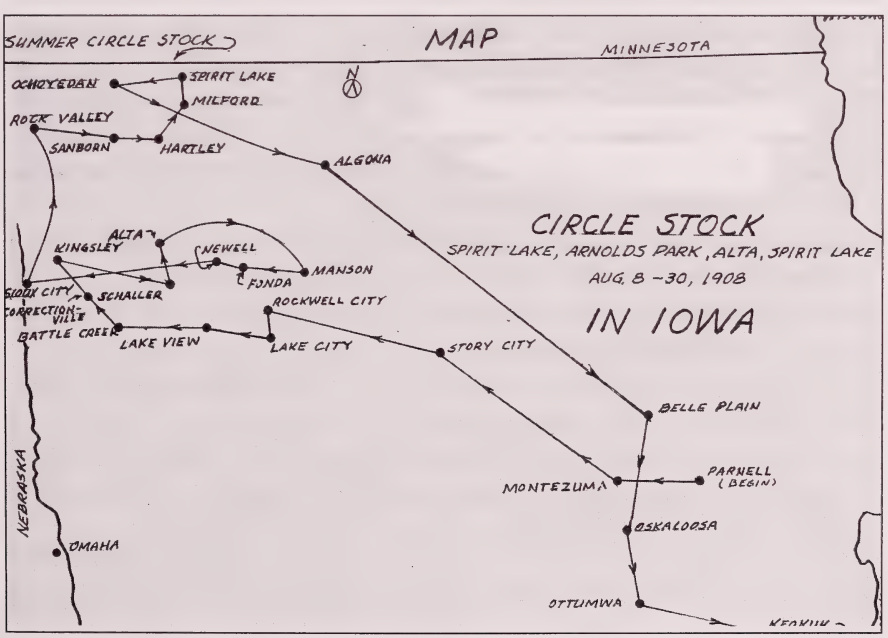
In January 1906 Blaine joined the Frank G. King and "Chic" Perkins Homespun Heart Company, considered one of the better theatrical companies on the circuit.[51] One of his fellow actors was Boyd Trousdale of Estherville, Iowa. The Trousdale family had been in the business since 1896 and Blaine joined the Trousdale Theatre Company[52] May 1, 1906 at Spirit Lake, Iowa as they began a tour with a three day repertory – a different play every night for three days – in every town on the circuit.[53] One of those towns, Buxton (population about 5,000 but no longer existing), a coal-mining town owned by the Chicago Northwestern Railroad, was mostly Negro and Blaine and Boyd roomed with "a high-toned colored family who owned a nice home on the outskirts of town." The town had a number of blind pigs (saloons), small cafes, and a dance hall. One evening

after their show they watched through the dance hall window as two girls attacked each other in a bloody knife fight.[54]

When the Trousdale company closed in Vinton Blaine joined summer stock at Stone-hill Garden, Peoria, Illinois then went with the Ferris Comedians for the winter season in Indiana, Illinois, and Missouri. He was in Springfield, Illinois in August 1906 during the race riot.[55]

LAUNCHES FIRST TENT REPRETORY SHOW

In the spring of 1907 Blaine and John L. Miller of Fort Madison, Iowa launched what is believed to be the first tent repertory show. They opened in Fort Madison May 10 in a snow storm. The tour was not successful and they were broke by the Fourth of July.[56] Blaine then joined Dubinsky Brothers Wallack Theatre Company, the first of many Dubinsky repertory shows. He was with the J. Frank Jersey Company in November 1907 when it presented *At a Wayside Inn* at the Watson. The *Review* said it was a "high-class drama and the best play of the season." In February 1908, he was manager of the Warner Comedy Company, and with D. L. Bryan presented six shows at the Watson beginning with three performances in repertoire.[57] The other plays were *East Lynne, Montana, Joshua Simpkins, The Cow Puncher,* and *The Wizard of Wall Street.* The latter, a musical, featured "15 numbers, 14 great singers, and 10 great dancers."[58]



Blaine Whipple's August schedule for circle stock in Iowa in 1908.

In March of 1908[59] he joined the Trousdale Bros. Stock Co. as manager for six weeks while Earle Trousdale took a vacation. They did repertory in towns in Iowa, Minnesota, Nebraska, and Missouri. In addition to managing the company Blaine played a variety of roles from leading man to colored mammy.[60] He also made the curtain talks preceding the last act, thanking the audience for their patronage and described the show to be given the next night. They performed 15 different plays.[61] The *Manson Journal* of April 8 said they offered "three splendid entertainments [deserving] the patronage of the public [and] Manson people will always welcome their return." Blaine, who had a photographic memory, usually learned all the roles and performed them when cast members were ill.[62]

The Trousdale Company was so successful it decided to put a second troupe on the road in May.[63] Boyd and Earle Trousdale continued with the original company and Merle Trousdale and Blaine formed a partnership for the second one. Merle brought the name to the partnership and Blaine had saved enough money to buy "an armful of paper" – advertising to bring the crowds out. They played the Airdome circuit which Earle and his wife Minnie had done in 1907 with good success. They opened at Oskaloosa, Iowa May 25 at the Airdome where Blaine's former partner John Miller was manager. They presented *Sealed Lips* and *Out of the Fold* in June and July in Ottumwa and Keokuk, Iowa before playing the following Missouri towns: Kirksville, Fulton, Jefferson City and closed the season at Columbia July 15-25 with *Wildcat*.[64] Merle left the show after Columbia and Blaine took it to Marshall and Nevada, Missouri and two or three towns in Kansas. The daily newspaper at Marshall, the *Democrat-News*, said in its review that *Out on the Hills Astray* was a great hit. The reviewer said the 4-act rural drama "gave scope for fine acting." He said Blaine, who both managed the company and played the part of Long Jim, a simple shepherd who quotes Biblical verses, "grew in favor with the audience from the first to the last act. He is earnest and impressive and was very fine in his fatherly care of Helen Grey, 'the little gal' who had gone astray" and he was "one of the best speciality comedians to appear before a Marshall audience."[65]

At Salina, Kansas several actors left to join winter shows so Blaine and Frank Moore joined forces and presented shows in Ottawa and Lawrence, Kansas until cold weather drove them indoors. They booked 14 weeks in Leavenworth, Kansas before disbanding. Blaine then went to Kansas City to work with Roy Crawford.[66]

He purchased his first automobile in 1908. This was only 15 years after historian Jackson Turner declared the American Frontier closed and 12 years after brothers Charles and Frank Duryea built and sold 13 automobiles (2 seats and 2-cylinder 6-horsepower engine) inaugurating America's

automobile industry.[67] Imagine yourself at the Court House Square in Vinton in the summer of 1908. The vehicles are almost all pulled by one or more horses. Their iron shoes clang on the paving blocks; their harnesses and bells jingle; their snorts, whinnies, and occasional screams fill the air and they produced an overwhelming smell.[68] As a visitor from the future you are gagged by it but Vintonites don't notice it because they've smelled it all their lives. There were only several hundred paved roads in the whole country so Blaine was driving on dirt roads.[69] He bought gasoline at general stores, bicycle shops, and blacksmiths. St. Louis had a gas station by 1905 but it was 1913 before the big oil companies began opening stations.[70]

At one time or another Blaine did virtually every job associated with the stock companies. Initially he was primarily an actor but gradually began helping with staging, lighting, make-up, music, pitchman between the second and third act, directing, managing, did advance work, and owned his own companies. He performed in repertory, circle theater, vaudeville, the Chautauqua circuit, dog and pony shows, on the radio,[71] and minstrel shows.

The minstrel show, created by white men for white audiences, had no relationship to the folks whose lives it was supposed to depict. The stock character, a black-faced comic played by a white man whose face was covered by burnt cork, represented what was once white America's vision of the plantation Negro: carefree, cunning, greedy, and perpetually optimistic. It was usually a three-part performance consisting of banter between the white interlocutor[72] and black faced comedians; an olio[73] of variety acts; and an afterpiece or concluding farce.

In a 1949 letter to Truly (Trousdale) Latchaw of White Bear Lake, Minnesota, he described the job of advance man:

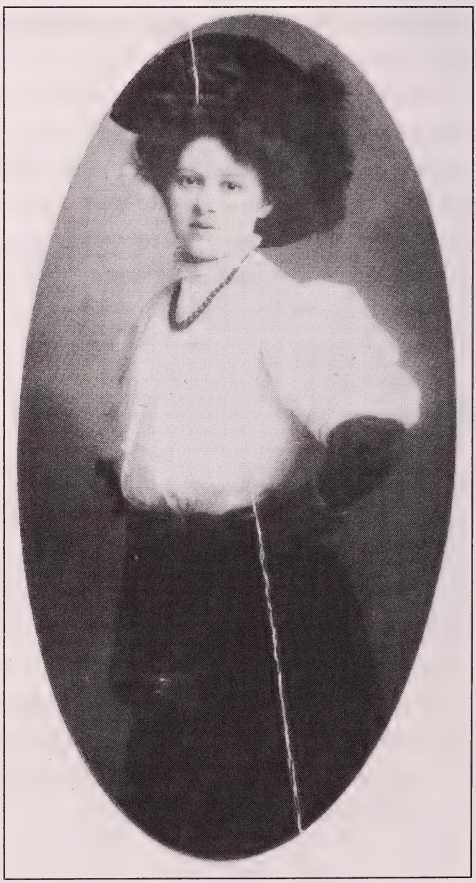
> The advance man had many duties: leasing the show lot, arranging city licenses when required, contracting for hay to feed the animals and groceries for the cook-tent, placing newspaper advertising, seeking free newspaper publicity, and plastering the town and surrounding area with show bills and handbills.
>
> The handbills – heralding the coming of the show – were tacked in bunches at public places where passers-by could help themselves or passed from house to house by small boys who earned a ticket to the show for several hours of work.
>
> The big publicity weapon in the advance man's battery was the twenty-four sheet show bill. This was 24 times the size of the 1-sheet which was 28 x 42

inches. The 24-sheet came in six 4-sheet sections.

In addition to the 24-sheet, there were one half, 1, 2, 3, 4, 6, 8, 12, and 16-sheet posters. With this variety almost any surface could be covered – a wooden fence, an outhouse Many a farmer welcomed the bill poster because the paper covered cracks in the barn or outhouse and might keep out winter's wind. Some got admission tickets for allowing them to be posted. The small sheets, up to 4-sheet, were posted in store windows.[74]

MARRIES LILLIAN NEVA LEFEBRE

During his time on the circuits, Blaine met Lillian Neva LeFebre of Kansas City who worked in the costume department of traveling companies. She and Blaine began dating and were married December 18, 1908 by a Justice of the Peace at the City Hall in Beatty, Kansas. She was a member of a troupe he was managing[75] and they wintered in Kansas City.



Lillian LeFebre.

Lillian, born in Chicago November 20, 1888, was the daughter of Henry LeFebre and Helen Margarite Ruhl. Her father was a French-Canadian and she attended a convent school for part of her early education. Her parents were divorced and her mother married (2) Gustav E. Kloss, an electrical engineer.[76] He moved the family to a small village in Mexico where he was employed by a large silver mining company. Their community had one other American family, operators of the hotel, and a large population of Chinese. The family took most of their meals at the hotel. Lillian learned Spanish during the five years they lived in Mexico and taught English to Chinese children. She began her show business

Lillian LeFebre.

career when the family returned to Chicago and she took dancing lessons with Gloria Swanson, apparently a cousin, who went on to become a super star in silent and early talking pictures.

Blaine and Lillian's first child, Helen, was born prematurely August 20, 1909 at St. Luke's Hospital in Kansas City, Missouri. She died the day of birth.[77] Blaine and Lillian moved to Vinton in 1910[78] where they initially lived with his parents[79] and he worked for the Post Office for the next few years. They were living at 105 E. Market St. in 1913.[80] Their second child, Ellen Elaine (she was known by her middle name), was born there August 6, 1910. The Eagle of August 10 noted her birth with the headline:

ALL PUFFED UP

As Blaine Whipple passed through the business streets of our little city last Saturday night one could not help but notice the importance and rapidity of his step. He scarcely had time to greet his friends, and many remarked that he must be going to return to the stage and was doing a little practice work.

But later in the evening it became known that he had a right to demand over half the sidewalk, as Mrs. Whipple had presented to him, early in the evening, a little daughter. Grandpa Major J. E. is a little sore at present for he has been denied the pleasure of pushing the go-cart the first time.

Their son James Earl was born in Vinton October 29, 1911.[81] Lillian took the children to visit her parents in Chicago in the summer of 1914. They returned home Sunday June 7, arriving by train at Waterloo where they were met by Blaine who drove them home in his car.[82]

Elaine remembers her mother as a fine-boned woman with curly, short, black hair, dark brown eyes and a good seamstress who made us "pretty things to wear." She was "a happy homemaker" and our homes were to live in, not to look at. While clean, they always had that "lived-in look." Whenever we moved to a new house or apartment, everything was scrubbed and all windows were washed. When we moved out, it was left

Elaine Whipple with her mother Lillian.

spotless – even the basement floor was swept. She was an excellent cook. With an English grandmother, a French father, a German step-father, and a Bohemian (her second husband's nationality), she had to be good. "I wish I could cook the way she did." Mom was content to stay home in her later years. When the weather permitted she liked to go for a ride and made occasional trips to Chicago to see her family and buy shoes. She wore a size three and Chicago stores were the only ones who could fit her.

Of her father, Elaine said he was "truly a family man who thoroughly spoiled Jimmy and me as children." We eagerly looked forward to his return from a business engagement and the gift he always brought us. One of those gifts was "the most beautiful doll in the world. It was a little Chinese girl, black bobbed hair, round white face, and dressed in a beautiful kimono." I feel we were lucky to have been raised before there was a radio and television in every room because Dad read wonderful stories to us. He had the ability to paint pictures with words and we used our imaginations to fill in the shapes and colors. "I believe that is why I still have a vivid imagination." When Jimmy was run over by a truck when we lived in Hutchinson, Kansas (September 1920), Dad read *Little Lame Prince* to us. He made Dicken's *Tiny Tim* a personal friend to me and I couldn't get enough of him reading *Black Beauty*. She remembers a crystal radio[83] when they lived in Kansas City in the early 1920s. After she and Jimmy put on the head set, "Dad would use the tiny wires to find a station." The one to come in clearest was usually from Cincinnati, Ohio.

Elaine Whipple, Kansas City, Mo.

My memories of Dad are from my youth. He took Jimmy and me to rodeos, circuses, tent shows, silent movies, etc. I remember when he took

Elaine and Jimmy Whipple.

us to see *Uncle Tom's Cabin* in Vinton. Jimmy must have been three or four. The audience was dead quiet. Little Eva was dying and Jimmy sensed something was wrong and stood on his chair and yelled: "Doctor Lucky, doctor Lucky, come quick!" Little Eva had trouble dying after that. She couldn't stop laughing. "I'm sorry we didn't see him during our teen years and cherish the visits, letters and cards I received from him in my adult years."

Jimmy and Elaine Whipple.

The date Blaine left his post office job is not known but was probably after September 25, 1914, the date he was promoted Second Lieutenant and Battalion Quartermaster.[84] He held a variety of jobs including acting in and managing stock companies, running a Dog and Pony Show during the summer months with help from Lillian, Elaine, and Jim, working the circuit for the Redpath Vawter Chautauqua, and managing the Majestic Theater in Cedar Rapids, Iowa when it featured vaudeville.[85] Cedar Rapids was also the headquarters of Redpath Vawter Chautauqua. He also worked at a variety of sales jobs and joined his step father-in-law Gustav E. Kloss in the dried milk business. These jobs caused the family to move many times and the children to attend a variety of schools.[86]

Jimmy Whipple, summer 1922 traveling with Dog and Pony Show.

Four Generations Elaine Whipple and her mother Lillian (left) with Lillian's mother Helen Margarite Ruhl (right) and Helen's mother Helen Forest (center).

The family lived in Davenport, Iowa in 1916 where Blaine was a Deputy with the MBA and an Agent for the Metropolitan Life Insurance Co. of New York.[87] They lived in Moline, Illinois in September 1916 when Elaine enrolled in the first grade and Jim in kindergarten at the Lincoln school. They lived in Iowa City,[88] Iowa in 1917 and Tonganoxie,[89] Kansas in 1918 where he was in business with Kloss, who became President of the National Association of Practical Refrigeration Engineers in 1923.[90] Blaine's mother died September 3, 1918 and he returned to Vinton for the funeral. The family lived in Kansas City in September 1919 where Elaine and Jim attended both Woodlawn and Horrace Man schools.[91] They lived in Canton and Hutchinson, Kansas in 1920.[92] Both kids were enrolled in the third grade in Hutchinson. They moved to Joplin, Missouri in November 1920.[93] In the fall of 1921, both kids were enrolled in the fourth grade at Campbell school in Springfield, Missouri where the family lived at 627 Campbell Street. He joined in business ventures with Kloss involving dried milk in a number of Kansas and Missouri towns The families frequently lived in the same house or apartment buildings during these times.

LEASES THE HERALD OF MARCELINE, MISSOURI

Blaine leased the *The Marceline Herald* of Marceline, Missouri[94] effective with the issue of April 6, 1923. In a front page article announcing the change, Harry C. Webster, owner for the previous 10 years, said he was "compelled to quit and take a rest because of a physical break-down." He

expressed the hope of returning "as full of pep as ever." He introduced Blaine as "Mr. L.B. Whipple, recently from Kansas City and a newspaperman with years of experience" and asked the business community to give him the same assistance given him. He said he would keep in close touch and assured his friends that though it was impossible for him to be actively engaged for a time, his "heart is with the paper." He left for Bloomington, Illinois to place himself under the care of a specialist.

Blaine announced in his first issue that he would work for the best interests of the community and would publish all the news without fear or favor. Noting that agriculture is the "greatest business in the state," he said farm news would be given prominent coverage. He invited everyone to bring or send in "any news items on any subject," expressed the hope that he would receive "the patronage extended to Mr. Webster," and that he would "make the *Herald* a real paper."[95] The paper consisted of four pages, six columns wide. It was located at 110 fi N. Kansas Avenue and the telephone number was 242.

Under the headline "Watch the Herald Grow" he reported that over 200 names of local people appeared in its columns in the April 13 issue and said it was his ambition to make it one of the best local papers in the state. He also announced the American Press Association of New York City as the paper's representative for National Advertising and the hiring of Lloyd King as a reporter.[96]

Clarence G. Sheets, editor and manager of the La Plata, Missouri *Home Press*, published the following in his issue of April 20.

> A Quarterback for N. E. Missouri Journalism:
>
> L. Blaine Whipple, one of our boyhood friends, a scholar and student, has very recently leased the the Marceline, Missouri *Herald*. Mr. Whipple knows type, and his ancestors rubbed shoulders with Noah Webster. Marceline is fortunate in having a newspaperman of his experience at the helm and we are sure he will publish The *Herald* in the moral and civic interests of that community at all times.
>
> We might jot down a few things from memory – and otherwise – about Blaine Whipple. They would not do him substantial justice; but as one who enjoys intimacy with him, we cannot lay aside our personal delight in his personality long enough to give him the tribute which his essential qualities as a newspaperman entitle him.[97]

Blaine took note of the article in his issue of April 27 with the headline OUR PAST LAID BARE. Noting that the headline called him a quar-

terback he said Sheets was "recalling that in his younger days he [Blaine] played football and held down the quarterback position on the old Tillford Academy team" of Vinton. Since Sheets had used his middle name in the article, Blaine hoped that Sam Parker read the article because knowing his name should put Parker's mind at rest concerning Blaine's political affiliation. "Sam, the first man we met in Marceline, has been wondering which way we lean politically. We don't lean, Sam. We stand right square in the middle of the G.O.P. pasture."[98]

THE MARCELINE HERALD.

Vol. X. No. 52 MARCELINE, MO., FRIDAY, JUNE 29, 1928. $1.50 A YEAR

Permit Not its Spirt to Abate

To Study Under Famed Teacher

NOTICE TO CONTRACTORS.

COAL! COAL!

Another June Wedding.

Auto Tourist Are Plentiful.

NOTICE.

In a 2-column front page editorial he encouraged Marceline merchants to work at "becoming the trade center for the area." He advocated the "radius idea" and said the community should publish a radius map of the trade territory it felt it could legitimately serve and that every business firm in town should work to expand their trade to the outer circles of the radius.

He also decried "as disgraceful" a lynching at Columbia, Missouri Saturday April 28, saying if the law had been allowed to take its course . . . the criminal would have been punished. "It is a pleasure to know," he wrote, "that prof. Almstedt, the father of the little girl attacked by the Negro, pleaded with the mob not to take the law into their own hands. It is disgusting to note that the mob resented his pleadings and greeted his efforts to uphold the law as well as the honor of Missouri with cries of 'Hang him, too."[99]

He promoted the opening of J. E. Ellis' new shoe store in the May 18 issue and encouraged all readers to attend. Ellis was not advertising in the *Herald* because of differences with the former publisher. Blaine wrote that he was promoting the opening in keeping with his pledge to boost the town. He asked the readers to tell Ellis they read the announcement of his

opening in the *Herald*.[100] The promotion paid off as the Ellis Shoe Store began advertising in the issue of May 26.[101]

Marceline, Carrolton, Bosworth, and Brunswich organized a 4-club baseball league in May and announced an 18-game schedule. Since the towns were in three counties it was named the Tri-County League. As a part of his effort to boost the town, Blaine was a member of the organizing Committee and was elected Second Vice President of the League.[102] Marceline beat Bosworth 11-1 in the first game of the season.

In the May 25 issue in a front page article headed MARCELINE FALLS DOWN he scolded the town for not having an organized effort to observe Memorial Day and wrote that he would march to the cemetery and decorate the grave of at least one soldier. He invited interested readers to meet him at the *Herald* office at 10:30 a.m. May 30 and accompany him to the cemetery. He wrote that if the article offended readers he would march alone. In the June 1 issue he wrote that dozens of readers had called to express appreciation for the article and hundreds showed up at the cemetery to pay their respects.[103]

An action by the Marceline City Council on June 22 was contrary to today's standards. It passed an ordinance providing that only lead or cast iron pipes could be installed in future water connections.[104] The town had no public sewers and Blaine published a lengthy article on page one of the June 15 issue pointing out the need to install a public system. He suggested that the town was ripe for a "serious filth-borne epidemic." Even though votes for public sewers had been defeated several times, he believed public sentiment was now strong enough to carry the issue.[105] The City Council voted in August to hold a bond election to fund a sewer system and to improve the water system.[106]

Business in the newspaper's job printing department was increasing. An article on June 8 announced the completion of a large order of printing for the Hale Brokerage Co. of Kansas City. On June 15 he reported that the Dixie Grain and Mill Feed Co., one of the largest firms of its kind operating on the Kansas City Board of Trade, ordered 5,000 each of letterheads and envelopes because "the quality of the work was superior to Kansas City printing plants." The paper also promoted its Classified Columns, advertised old newspapers for sale, "Just the thing to put under your rugs," typewriter paper, carbon paper for transferring and copying work, and "anything printed; we can do it."[107]

The *Herald* was receiving complaints that Marceline's traffic rules were excessive and contrary to the laws in neighboring town. Visitors used to their own laws were being ticketed, generating a bad reputation for the town. Acknowledging that the police had no choice but to enforce the law, Blaine suggested the Council address the problem. To highlight the

issue, he published an article from *The Chillicothe Tribune* (Misssouri) about a $5 fine received by Walter Jackson, President of Jackson University, for a "questionable offense." He expressed concern about similar articles giving visitors and unfair opinion of Marceline.[108]

The Marceline Auto and Supply Company, the Willys-Knight dealer, took a full page ad the first week of August. In addition to listing models and prices, it pointed out that 409 Willys-Overland cars were sold (290 Overland and 119 Willys-Knight) in Toledo compared to 576 new cars of all other makes: Ford 227, Chevrolet, 119, Buick, 41, Dodge 38, Maxwell 33, Columbia 26, Studebaker 23, Jewett 19, Durant 15, Hupmobile 12, Nash 12, and Star 11.[109]

Page one of the August 10 issue featured a 2-column wide proclamation by President Calvin Coolidge enclosed with a wide black border about the death of President Warren Harding:

To the People of the United States

In the inscrutable wisdom of Divine Providence, Warren Gamaliel Harding, twenty-ninth President of the United States, has been taken from us. The nation has lost a wise and enlightened statesman and the American people a true friend and counselor whose whole public life was inspired by the desire to promote the best interests of the United States and the welfare of all its citizens. His private life was marked by gentleness and brotherly sympathy, and by the charm of his personality he made friends of all who came in contact with him.

The deep grief which fills the hearts of the American people should find fitting expression.

Now, therefore, I, Calvin Coolidge, President of the United States of America, do appoint Friday, next, August 10, the day on which the body of the dead President will be laid in its last earthly resting place, as a day of mourning and prayer throughout the United States. I earnestly recommend the people to assemble on that day in their respective places of divine worship, there to bow down in submission to the will of Almighty God and to pay out of full heart the homage and love and reverence to the memory of the great and good President, whose death has so sorely smitten the nation.

In Witness, I have hereunto set my hand and caused the Seal of the United States of America to be affixed. Done at the City of Washington, the fourth day of August, in the year of our Lord one-thousand-nine-hundred-and twenty-three, and of the Independence of the United States one-hundred-and-forty-eight.

Calvin Coolidge
By the President
Charles E. Hughes
Secretary of State

Immediately below the above was a PROCLAMATION from the Mayor of Marceline:

In keeping with the spirit and purpose of the Proclamation of the President of the United States and also of the Governor of our own great Commonwealth, the people of Marceline will abandon all secular pursuits as far as possible and join with bowed heads and reverent spirit the people of the United States in mourning the departure of the lamented executive chieftain of the United States – Warren Gamaliel Harding. Words are entirely inadequate to express the nation's loss and deep sorrow at the sudden passing of our beloved President.

That the citizens of our city may be characterized by considerate action, we earnestly recommend that on August 10 at 2 p.m. joint services may be held at the First Baptist Church as the resident pastors of the churches of our city may elect.

Alfred Munyon, Mayor
Attest: L.E. Shelton, City Clerk[110]

In a follow-up article about the memorial service, the paper reported "The services were simple but proved the esteem in which the late President was held by all. Tears were in the eyes of many, and voices shook with emotion as the audience sang the songs that are beloved not only by the late President, but by the entire nation." Marceline stores were closed at noon for the balance of the day and the city electric plant shut down for five minutes at 3 p.m. A short service was conducted at the Santa Fe offices for the railroad employees.[111]

The *Herald* editor thought the city was making great progress when it authorized the oiling of North and South Kansas avenue, Missouri avenue, and E. Gracia street from Missouri avenue to Kansas avenue. Half the cost was borne by the city, the other half by the property owners. He lauded the Council's response to a petition of 112 citizens to establish a free tourist camp ground in the east part of town near the high school. A local item in this issue pointed out that G. E. Kloss of Atlanta, Georgia was visiting the family of his daughter. Mrs. L. B. Whipple. He was en route to California for a vacation.[112]

In musing about the 1924 presidential campaign, editor Whipple noted that Coolidge and Hyde were being suggested as a "good running team."[113] He said he favored the Coolidge part but not the Hyde part. This issue also reported that Mr. and Mrs. L.B. Whipple had visited in Kansas City Saturday August 11.[114]

After 18 months as Mayor, Alfred Munyon tendered his resignation effective September 3 and a special election was authorized for September 18 to elect his successor. The *Herald* was sorry to hear of the resignation and said Munyon had always "advocated a cleaner and better Marceline." George Kee, Councilman from the Third Ward, announced his candidacy. While encouraging others to seek the office, the *Herald* described Kee as "someone with the courage to stand on his feet and fight for what he believes to be right. Right or wrong, he always has the best interests of the city at heart."[115] At its first meeting in September the Council unanimously asked Munyon to withdraw his resignation and serve his full term. The Council felt his talents were needed to implement the sewer plan which they believed would pass. Munyon agreed to remain.[116]

Howe's Surprise Store had a large display ad in the August 24 issue advertising school supplies: Great Big Tablets 5¢, Bigger Ones 10¢, Lead Pencils 1¢, Simplex Pencil 10¢, Combination Pen and Pencil 10¢, Dinner Pail with Pie pan 15¢, Wood Pencil Boxes 10¢, Drinking Cups 10¢.[117] The public schools opened Monday September 8.[118]

A lengthy article by *Herald* owner Harry C. Webster was featured on page 1 of the August 31 issue. It was written at Winona, Minnesota and concluded with Webster sending "regards to all our Marceline friends" and assuring them he was "anxious to see their faces and get back in harness." A brief story in the same issue about a caterpillar infestation included a suggestion they "be burned otherwise our beautiful shade trees are doomed."

The *Herald* announced it had become the 213th member of the National Highways Association headquartered in Washington, D.C. In making the announcement editor Whipple said he agreed with the Association's stand that good roads everywhere were the means to progress.[119] After printing that M. H. Taylor, a prominent farmer north of town, had presented the *Herald* editor with "some of the finest Alberta peaches seen this season," several other farmers brought him samples the following week. The largest one was weighed 13 ounces and was 11 inches in girth. He and several others were treated to a watermelon party by Frank Steiner. "With the exception of the Herald editor, all the guests wore collars and neckties."[120]

Half of page one of the September 14 issue was devoted to the need for voters to pass the sewer and water bond issues. A major statement from

the Mayor outlined the financial details and general needs. Blaine ran two columns of support, one of which pointed out the potential health hazard, the other the economic benefits. On the economic side he said the town's high unemployment caused by the closing of the mines the previous spring, caused a drug store to close, Dr. E.R. Geeman, dentist, to leave town after three years in practice, and another business was expected to close shop in the near future. Passage of the bond issues would also provide work for local laborers. The sewer bonds passed 774 to 106; the water bonds by 790 to 79. Blaine commented that "Marceline is out of the 'has been' class."[121]

The September 21 issue reported that Marceline would have a Chautauqua next summer. The White-Myers Chautauqua System received promises from 100 citizens, including L. B. Whipple, to subscribe for five season tickets at a cost of $2.50 per ticket. Apparently Harry Webster recovered from his illness and returned home in September as the issue dated September 21 is the last one published and edited by Blaine.[122]

FAMILY MOVES TO CEDAR RAPIDS

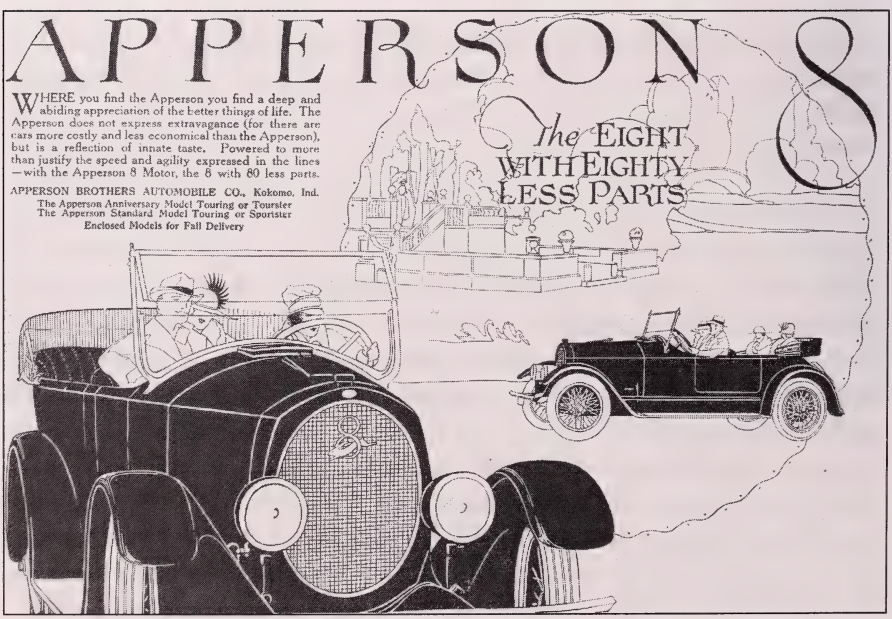
The family moved to Cedar Rapids, driving in their Apperson "8" Chummy Roadster.[123] Elaine and Jimmy were enrolled in the sixth grade at Jackson School October 1. This was the beginning of stability for the kids as they finished their schooling there and continued to live in the town until their marriages. Blaine joined the Majestic Theater as Manager in 1923 where his old colleague, Merle Trousdale, was Treasurer. The Majestic was one of the top ranking Orpheum Circuit Vaudeville Houses,[124] featuring stars like Will Rogers, Buster Keaton, Al Jolson, Jack Benny, Fred Allen, and Bill "Bojangles" Robinson in their "two-a-day" careers. Houdini was one of the most popular attractions. Ed Wynn brought *The Perfect Fool* to the Majestic. It had a seating capacity of 1,434 and was frequently filled to overflowing. The best acts came here because of the city's geographical locations half-way between Chicago and Omaha and between Minneapolis, St. Louis, and Kansas City. It provided an ideal spot for breaking a long jump between the larger cities.[125] After the Majestic closed on March 5, 1924, Blaine joined the Keith Vawter Redpath Chautauqua.[126]

In the days before radio, television, and motion pictures, Americans welcomed Chautauqua, even in the most remote mid-western towns. For most it was the biggest six or seven days in the whole year.[127] It brought town and farm people into contact with the world by informing them on the social and political events of the day, and entertained them, according to the hand-bills, with the world's greatest talents.[128] It was so important

that rival townspeople signed the agreements to bring it to the community.[129] President Theodore Roosevelt called it "the most important American thing in America." Programs included something for all ages. Morning performances had a "story-lady" and talent pageants for the children;[130] magicians, folk-music, and temperance lectures entertained the women and older children in the afternoon. The evening featured drama, classical music, and "famous-name lecturers" for adults.

Keith Vawter invented tent or circuit Chautauqua in 1904.[131] His territory was roughly Iowa, Minnesota, the Dakotas, Nebraska, and Missouri. From the time the first posters were put up announcing seven days of culture in a tent, to the performers' final bow, a slowly rising excitement ran through town.[132] When the tent went up in pastures, fair grounds, agricultural pavilions, school yards, and Court House Squares many came to watch.

Even though about half of a Chautauqua's program consisted of music,[133] the program centered on the lecturer. There were three types of lecturers: the Challenge, the Informative, and the Inspirational.[134] Religion, temperance, and politics were the most popular subjects.[135] William Jennings Bryan, Democratic Presidential nominee, three times, was the favorite political lecturer. He once gave 50 lecturers in 28 days. Towns asked for him over and over again.[136]



Make of car owned by Blaine Whipple when living in Marceline, Mo. and Cedar Rapids, Iowa in 1923.

While with the Chautauqua on the Redpath Vawter circuit, Blaine came in contact with prominent men and women in politics and various other lines. He worked with the most famous Chautauqua lecturer, William Jennings Bryan, the great Commoner, on one year's Chautauqua program and found him the most likeable of men, easy to work with and to travel with. Great crowds met him everywhere. Even the most rabid Republicans came to meet and hear him and to shake his hand. Blaine recalls a hotel man rushing out to meet Bryan to tell him, "I voted for you twice, Mr. Bryan." "What happened to you the third time?" quietly asked the Commoner with a twinkle in his deep-set, far-seeing eyes.[137]

William Jennings Bryan.

Next to Bryan, Opie Percival Read (1852-1939) was Blaine's favorite. "My only worry about Mr. Read," said Blaine, "was whether he would be sober enough to make his talk. Read, a printer, author, and humorist, was one of Chautauqua's most popular lecturers. He was born in Nashville, Tennessee but lived most of his professional life in Chicago.[138]

When the Chautauqua circuit ended in 1924 he became manager of the "Premier Players" with headquarters in Marion, Iowa. This company presented a repertoire of Broadway's best plays. The family lived at 8460 6th Ave., Cedar Rapids.[139] He was with The Elwin Strong Players as business representative (advance booking and advertising)[140] and an actor with the Sherman Stock Company in early 1925. Among the plays done with the latter was *Lightnin* in which he played dual roles, Nevin Blodgett, Sheriff, and Fred Peters. He also worked with the Hagenbeck-Wallace Circus whose winter quarters were in Peru, Indiana.

On July 11, 1925 "The Blaine Whipple Players" did a week's engagement in Vinton with his tent show.[141] The run concluded on Saturday night with *The Old Home Town*. The Vinton Review reported, "Blaine has presented some mighty good shows here this week. And his company has rendered them in a laudable way. His tent show is decidedly above the average. All in all the aggregation is deserving of far better crowds than

Advertisement for Redpath Vawter Chautauqua, Blaine Whipple's employer in 1924 when he managed William Jennings Bryan's tours.

Vinton has given them."

By winter 1925[142] Lillian decided she needed more stability than Blaine had provided for her, Elaine, and Jim. She was no longer willing to disrupt the children's schooling by the constant moves of the previous ten years. She separated from Blaine in October, took the children, and filed for divorce in Cedar Rapids on January 9, 1926.[143] She was represented by Burke B. Hickenloope[144] and asked for sole custody of the children. Blaine, represented by Carl Hendrickson, initially contested the divorce but later withdrew his objection and the divorce decree was awarded March 16, 1926.[145] Full custody of the children was given to Lillian. Both parties were barred from remarrying until one year from the time of filing the decree.[146] Lillian married Charles Harold Zastera in Vinton in July 1928. The family lived on the west side of Cedar Rapids close to the drug store Harold owned and near the Cedar river. Elaine remembers it as a friendly neighborhood and as the first time since living in Vinton the family lived in the same house for more than a year. She and Jimmy swam and boated in the river in the summer and skated on it in the winter. Jimmy worked for his step-father in the drug store. Lillian died in Cedar Rapids in April 1941 after a lengthy illness weighing only 68 pounds and is buried in Cedar Rapid's Oak Hill Cemetery.

Blaine was touring with a stock company in North Dakota the summer of 1926 and when it played Minot he went to Peggy's Beauty Shop one morning to visit the owner whom he had known previously in Chicago. Peggy introduced him to Pearl J. Scott, one of her beauticians, who acknowledged the introduction and returned to complete a manicure on her customer. No other words were exchanged between them. Blaine left, found a telephone, called the shop, asked for Pearl, and invited her to lunch. Her private reaction was, "Why not, it's a free lunch." From then on he saw her every day and gave passes for every play to her and her friends. At least for Blaine it was love at first sight and he courted her long distance by letter and telephone.[147]

"The Old Home Town."

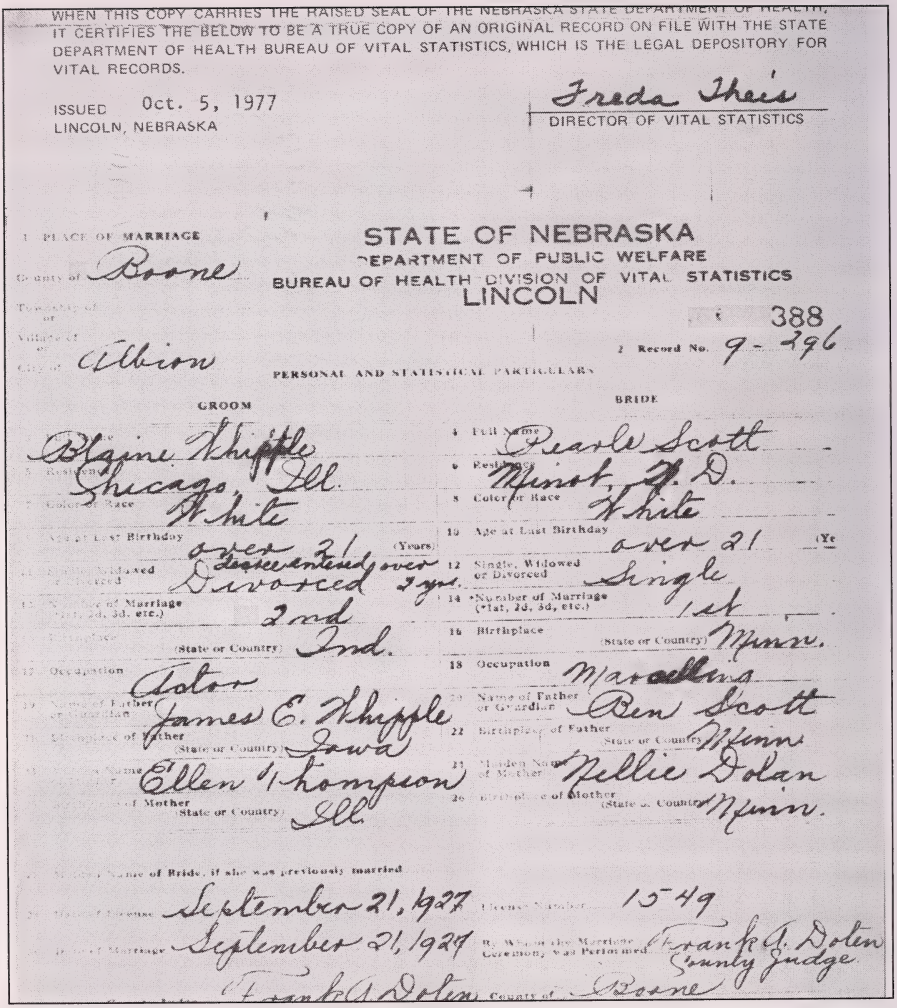
As a climax to his week's engagement here Blaine Whipple will present his own show, "The Old Home Town." at his tent theatre tomorrow (Saturday) night.

Blaine has presented some mighty good shows here this week. And his company has rendered them in a laudable way. This tent show is decidedly above the average. All in all the aggregation is deserving of far better crowds than Vinton has given them.

In September 1927[148] Pearl and Peggy were vacationing in Minneapolis when Blaine called, proposed marriage, and convinced Pearl to come to Albion, Nebraska where the Walter Savidge Co., the stock show-carnival he was then associated with, was playing. She agreed and they were married by a Justice of the Peace on September 21.[149] She wrote her mother after getting married and sent her $300.00, all the money she had. She was feeling guilty, thinking she had run out on the family. After her dad lost his railroad job she moved to Minot, vacationed in Minneapolis, and then went to Nebraska to get married.

Pearl Scott about 1927.

Pearl, born August 29, 1905 in Hamel, Hennepin Co., Minnesota, was the second of 14



WHEN THIS COPY CARRIES THE RAISED SEAL OF THE NEBRASKA STATE DEPARTMENT OF HEALTH, IT CERTIFIES THE BELOW TO BE A TRUE COPY OF AN ORIGINAL RECORD ON FILE WITH THE STATE DEPARTMENT OF HEALTH BUREAU OF VITAL STATISTICS, WHICH IS THE LEGAL DEPOSITORY FOR VITAL RECORDS.

ISSUED Oct. 5, 1977
LINCOLN, NEBRASKA

Freda Theis
DIRECTOR OF VITAL STATISTICS

STATE OF NEBRASKA
DEPARTMENT OF PUBLIC WELFARE
BUREAU OF HEALTH DIVISION OF VITAL STATISTICS
LINCOLN

1 PLACE OF MARRIAGE
County of Boone
Township of
or
Village of
City of Albion

388
2 Record No. 9-296

PERSONAL AND STATISTICAL PARTICULARS

	GROOM	BRIDE
4 Full Name	Blaine Whipple	Pearle Scott
5 Residence	Chicago, Ill.	Minot, N. D.
7 Color or Race	White	White
10 Age at Last Birthday	over 21 (Years)	over 21 (Ye
12 Single, Widowed or Divorced	Divorced 2 yrs.	Single
14 Number of Marriage (1st, 2d, 3d, etc.)	2nd	1st
16 Birthplace (State or Country)	Iowa	Minn.
18 Occupation	Motor	Waitress
20 Name of Father or Guardian	James E. Whipple	Ben Scott
22 Birthplace of Father (State or Country)	Iowa	Minn
24 Maiden Name of Mother	Ellen Thompson	Nellie Dolan
26 Birthplace of Mother (State or Country)	Ill	Minn.

Name of Bride, if she was previously married

License issued September 21, 1927 License Number 1549
Date of Marriage September 21, 1927 By Whom the Marriage Ceremony Was Performed Frank G. Dolen County Judge
Frank G. Dolen County of Boone

children (7 boys, 7 girls) born to Benoni "Ben" Scott and Ellen "Nellie" Dolan. All the boys and five of the girls lived to adulthood. Ben worked for his uncle John Scott in his general store in Hamel when they were married. Later he was employed by the Soo Line Railway Co., working as a section laborer in Hamel until promoted to section foreman and transferred to Logan and from there to Drake, and finally to Douglas, all in North Dakota. The family lived in railroad housing near the tracks in those towns.[150]

The thing that stands out in Pearl's mind when young was that the Scott family was poor. Her father supplemented their meals by hunting jack rabbits, geese, pheasant, and grouse. She said she hated that her dad put the hides of the rabbits on the garbage so the neighbors knew what they were eating. Among her jobs was to empty the chamber pots in the morning and to make the beds. She said she always checked to see if any

Pearl Scott when she worked as a beautician.

neighbors were out and wouldn't empty the pots until they couldn't watch.

She completed her first six grades in Drake[151] where their house was about a mile from school. "As we walked along the railroad tracks I was scared of all the hoboes. They would stop at our home and ask for handouts and mother never refused any of them." She had a mild case of rheumatism caused by having to go to and from the Drake school through big snow drifts. "I remember my mother coming out and carrying me into the house because my legs ached so. I got pneumonia three or four times which affected my lungs and as kids we all got measles, mumps, chicken pox, and whooping cough. Our tooth aches were so painful and the medicine mother put on our teeth caused big sores and the only thing we could eat was soup. We didn't have the money go to to a dentist. Other than that I've had relatively good health until I reached my eighties."[152]

She was graduated from the eighth grade at Douglas where she was a member of the basketball team[153] and valedictorian. She said during the worst winter storms when the house shook the family would go into the root cellar until the storm was over because it couldn't be blown over.[154] She said winter fun after schools and on Saturdays was bobsledding and skating on a lake at the edge of town.

She described her mother as the kindest person she ever knew. "She was loved by everyone and almost always had neighbors over visiting. Every Sunday there were at least two or three extra kids eating with us. She made 3-day buns every Sunday morning and was known county-wide for her buns. When anyone died she was called on to help prepare their bodies and she served as a midwife at most births in Douglas."[155]

She remembers one of the big events of the day was getting to the Post Office just as the afternoon train arrived. It was the meeting place for adults and kids while the mail was being sorted. She also had fond memories of summer Saturday nights in Douglas when the farmers came to shop for their weekly needs. The stores were open until at least 11 p.m. and after

their shopping was finished townfolk and farmers would sit on the benches merchants put in front of their stores and visit until closing time.

She also remembered the winters with snow and cold and bitter wind. When a blizzard swept across those treeless flats it seemed to come all the way from Manitoba and Saskatchewan, Canada gathering strength with every mile. Snow storms were more frequent than blizzards and most winters there were intervals when Chinooks, relatively warm, dry winds, came rolling across the plains from the eastern slope of the Rocky Mountains bringing periods of melt and balminess. Then they knew winter's end was near.

DRUMATER MILLINERY DEPT.

Here's What's What in the New Spring Hats

"What is smart in the spring bonnet" seems to be the most popular question as Easter draws near. Everyone was familiar with the Empress Eugenie style hit of last fall but the day of the Eugenie hat is gone. The leading style this spring is developed from the Bi-Centennial Comemoration of George Washington and is called the Martha Washington, which is characterized by the turned up back. Hats dented over the right eye are called Touchdowns. You will also find the turbans and straw tam effects smart. The new spring hats consist of Rough Straw bodies, imported braids, and are trimmed with flowers, ribbons and ornaments.

Pearl clerked in Drumater Millinery about 1924.

Douglas residents faced winter's problems by placing dried cow pies along the house's foundation to lessen the impact of the wind blowing in. Like every other family, the Scotts' shoveled snow off their walkways, dug paths to the privy and chicken house. The big road grader pushed enough snow to the sides of the main streets so what little traffic there was could move: the drays[156] from the depot, the local wagons hauling coal from the lumber yard, a delivery wagon or two from the food store to deliver groceries to the lame and aged. Except where there were snow fences or the wind blew them clear, the roads were blocked until the farmers plowed or dug out a tract.

The Scotts' lived with winter and let it make the rules. The automobile was going to change that but they didn't know it then. They thought the Model T was a mechanical wonder but they didn't own one and Ben never owned an automobile. Travel beyond Dou-

Blaine, second from left, with some show business colleagues.

glas was by train and the Soo Line had a rotary plow to clear the rails after the storm. Trains were often late and occasionally a freight would get stuck in a deep-drifted cut and had to wait for a snow plow and a booster engine to get them out.

They heated their house with coal and knew at a glance when the bin was getting empty; it wasn't like burning oil from a buried tank. They had a few bushels of potatoes, a bag of onions, a couple of bushels of apples and a keg of cider vinegar in the cellar. They had a sack of flour, several pounds of sugar, and at least five pounds of roasted coffee beans. Nellie always canned every fall and they kept a sack of dry beans in the pantry so they could always survive a couple weeks of being snowbound if the storm was that bad.

Because the family needed money Pearl quit school half way through her junior year and began doing domestic work. She then got a job with the Douglas telephone exchange as an operator making 10 cents and hour. Customers were assigned a certain number of rings – e.g. 3-long and 1-short – and answered to that number of rings. Most customers had party lines and all the rings were heard in each house so anyone sharing the line could listen to their neighbor's private business. To make a call you spoke directly to the operator and gave her the number you were calling – e.g. 41.[157] She would ring the line and connect you when they answered. Most operators knew where the doctor and fire chief were and if they didn't they would track them down in an emergency. Within limits they took and relayed messages and would tell you the time, weather, bus schedule, and if school was cancelled. You could even call and ask what was playing at the movie.[158]

She was the first of the Scott girls to work for Mrs. Drumater (they all eventually did) in her millinery shop where she sold scarves and hats. Almost all women wore hats in those days. Her desire to become a beautician was realized when a local school teacher lent her $200.00 to attend a beauty school in Minneapolis. She saved on expenses by staying with her aunt Maggie (Mrs. Arthur Frick), a sister of her mother.[159] The note she signed was to be repaid at $20.00 month including interest beginning after she was graduated. After getting her diploma she got a beautician's job in Red Wing, Minnesota and paid off the note in nine months.

She returned to Douglas and began to do marcel waves, manicures, and facials[160] charging $1.00 for each. She often worked late and sometimes made as much as $20.00 a day, a lot of money in Douglas in 1925. Ladies in the various towns on the Soo line heard of her service and induced her to come to their towns weekly. Her appointments were set up in advance and she would go from appointment to appointment with one woman in each town providing her food and overnight accommodations gratis.

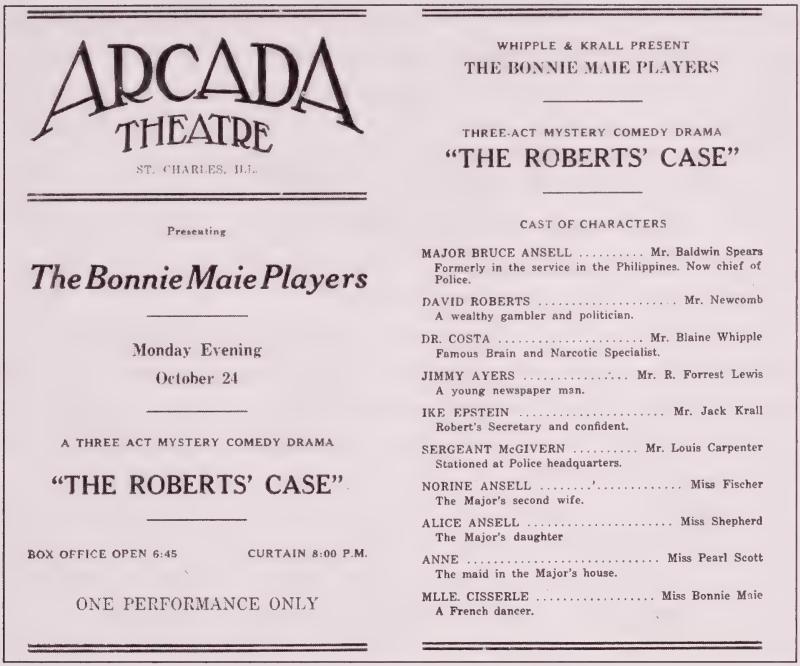
After finishing her appointments at Sanish, the end of the line, she returned to Douglas and did the same circuit the following month. Peggy heard of her work and drove to Douglas to watch her give a marcel and offered her a job. Since she was tired of the circuit, she accepted and moved to Minot taking her big Angora cat with her.

Blaine was Assistant Manager of the Walter Savidge Company, one of the largest shows in the western part of the midwest. It was the only company which consistently included a carnival as an adjunct to the dramatic show. They traveled by railroad as the company owned a 15-car train (freight, baggage, dining, and living cars) to transport the Company. The living cars, bought second hand from the Pullman Co., had "mahogany berths surrounded by long, beveled, glass mirrors with silver wash basins."[161] Savidge employees lived in comparative luxury.[162] Pearl said their quarters included a sitting room, bedroom, and bath and they ate all their meals in the dining car. She was assigned a job on the carnival grounds selling chances on a hoopla – the big hoops people tried to loop around the prize they wanted. She collected their money and handed them the prize if they won. The show closed the 1927 season with performances in Valentine, Nebraska. After the season Blaine and Pearl went to Chicago for a two-week honeymoon.[163]

In 1928 Blaine and Jack Krall, a member of the Savidge orginazation, organized their own company with headquarters in De Kalb, Illinois and played circuits in Illinois and Iowa. They had their own trucks to move stage equipment and traveled in their own cars. We were

Albion, Nebraska
6 Big Days and Nights 6
Starting
Monday, Sept. 19th
Including
THE WALTER SAVIDGE PLAYERS
MONDAY, 8:30 P. M.
"Applesauce"
By Barry Conners
THURSDAY, 8:30 P. M.
"A Red Man's Love"
By Lawrence Bingham
TUESDAY, 8:30 P. M.
"No, No, Nora"
By Nelson Lewis
FRIDAY, 8:30 P. M.
"THE BAT"
By Mary Roberts Rinehart and Avery Hopwood
WED'ESDAY, 8:30 P. M.
"Square Crooks"
By James P. Jude
SATURDAY, MAT. 2:45
"The Come Back"
By Robt. Sherman
SATURDAY, 8:30 P. M.
ON THE AMUSEMENT ZONE
Rides Galore New Side Shows Clean Entertainment
Joyous Amusement Fun for Young and Old
Including the Monkey Speedway
MERCHANTS' MATINEE
Saturday at 2:30
BIG FREE ACTS
Each Day
at 2 and 7 P. M.
BETTER THAN EVER

Albion (Nebr.) Weekly News in September 1927.



ARCADA THEATRE

ST. CHARLES, ILL.

Presenting

The Bonnie Maie Players

Monday Evening

October 24

A THREE ACT MYSTERY COMEDY DRAMA

"THE ROBERTS' CASE"

BOX OFFICE OPEN 6:45 CURTAIN 8:00 P.M.

ONE PERFORMANCE ONLY

WHIPPLE & KRALL PRESENT

THE BONNIE MAIE PLAYERS

THREE-ACT MYSTERY COMEDY DRAMA

"THE ROBERTS' CASE"

CAST OF CHARACTERS

MAJOR BRUCE ANSELL ..... Mr. Baldwin Spears
Formerly in the service in the Philippines. Now chief of Police.

DAVID ROBERTS ..... Mr. Newcomb
A wealthy gambler and politician.

DR. COSTA ..... Mr. Blaine Whipple
Famous Brain and Narcotic Specialist.

JIMMY AYERS ..... Mr. R. Forrest Lewis
A young newspaper man.

IKE EPSTEIN ..... Mr. Jack Krall
Robert's Secretary and confident.

SERGEANT McGIVERN ..... Mr. Louis Carpenter
Stationed at Police headquarters.

NORINE ANSELL ..... Miss Fischer
The Major's second wife.

ALICE ANSELL ..... Miss Shepherd
The Major's daughter

ANNE ..... Miss Pearl Scott
The maid in the Major's house.

MLLE. CISSERLE ..... Miss Bonnie Maie
A French dancer.

living "high on the hog" that year Pearl remembers.[164] "Our home was a hotel in De Kalb and when I came back from shopping one day Blaine told me he had bought me a car. I asked what kind and when he said Ford, I refused to go look at it because I didn't want a Ford. So he took it back and got me a Chrysler. A few years earlier I would have been glad to get a buggy ride."

The companies were named "The Edwidge Players" and "The Bonnie Maie Players." Edwidge was one of Pearl's sisters and Bonnie Maie was Jack Krall's wife. Blaine tried to develop Pearl into an actress but she was unable to project her voice to be heard in the back rows. She played a few small parts – cook, maid, etc. – but usually helped on the business side. Bonnie Maie played in most of the shows. Blaine handled the business details as well as directing and acting in most of the plays. According to Pearl he had a fabulous memory and was known for his comedy roles and as a soft shoe dancer. The troupe included a cast of eight plus a stage manager, projectionist, electrician, and property man.[165]

They opened Thursday January 19, 1928 at the De Kalb Theatre with *Keep to the Right*, a four act drama. They did one show a night starting at 8 p.m. The bill changed every Thursday and their second show was *The Mysterious Dr. X*, advertised as the greatest of all mystery comedies. They opened their repertoire at the Arcadia Theatre in St. Charles, Illinois with *The Road to Happiness*, a four act comedy drama. It took place in Wash-

ington, D.C. with a cast of seven actors: Gerald Hawthorne, a young easterner, owner of a gold mine in Goldfield, Nevada, who was blinded by an accidental gunshot in Nevada; Jim Clancy, a desperado and supposed friend of Hawthorne who came east to see Gerald; Cool Hawkins, owner of the Silver Moon in Goldfield who came to Washington to receive his appointment as U.S. Marshal; Bert Summers, a habitual failure; Nellie Melrose, one time pianist at the Silver Moon who came east to forget the past and is Hawthorne's secretary; Mazie Smythe, a poor relation; and Amelia Grayson, Gerald's old maid aunt.[166]

The box office opened at 6:45 with an organ recital by George Goldkette from 7:30 to 8:00 when the curtain rose. George played *Desert Song, On The Old Plantation*, a southern medley, *Schoen Rosmarin*, and popular songs. He also played between the first (*Buried Treasurers*) and second (*Mystic India*) intermissions.[167]

Following the very successful 1928 season, Blaine and Pearl moved to 1411 Locus in Des Moines, Iowa where he organized the "Blaine Whipple Players" and did circle stock throughout Iowa. Their first child, Patricia Ellen, was born in Des Moines February 1, 1929[168] From then on, Pearl did not travel with the company. Unfortunately, financial conditions were beginning to change in the rural areas of Iowa that spring and the new company did not flourish. Just the opposite, it went broke and the Whipples lost everything – their hand bills, show bills, stage equipment, trucks, costumes, etc.[169]

RETURNS TO THE NEWSPAPER BUSINESS

In August 1929 Blaine, Pearl, and Pat moved to Valentine, Nebraska[170] from Sioux City, Iowa where he briefly worked in the advertising department of the *Tribune*. His new job was with the Valentine *Democrat* where he was responsible for the news columns and advertising sections of the paper.[171] D. W. Reed was editor and publisher. The 12-page weekly newspaper included three pages of boiler plate with subscription rates of $2 inside and $2.50 outside the county. It was published on Thursdays. There was one other paper in town, the Valentine *Republican*.

Valentine was in Cherry county, the state's largest (about the size of Connecticut) and situated on the Niobrara river. Great buffalo herds roamed the area until exterminated by hunters hired by the railroads.[172] Lining the banks of the Niobrara were stands of bur oak,[173] hackberry,[174] wild grape, and buffalo berry.[175] Lazuli Buntings[176] and Western Flycatchers[177] filled the air with their singing and painted turtles slipped off the banks into the river. On summer night fireflies danced up and down the river's lush bank. Today Fort Niobrara National Wildlife Refuge is five

If You Want "Nearly Everybody" to Read Your Advertisement, Put It in the Newspaper "Nearly Everybody" Reads

The Valentine Democrat

VOLUME 45 NUMBER 26 TWELVE PAGES VALENTINE, CHERRY COUNTY, NEBRASKA THURSDAY AUGUST 8, 1929

BLAINE WHIPPLE NEW MAN ON DEMOCRAT FORCE

The Democrat has employed Blaine Whipple, an experienced newspaper man, as the front office and outside representative. Mr. Whipple will be responsible for the news columns and advertising section of the paper.

In addition to gathering the news of the city and vicinity, Mr. Whipple will be available at all times to assist and advise our customers in the preparation of advertisements, either for a single issue of the Democrat or for a persistent campaign.

He has made advertising his hobby and has been connected with a number of most excellent newspapers, both in the advertising and editorial departments, where he has been brought into personal contact with the advertising problems of a great many merchants in various lines of business.

Through these contacts he has found that the larger and most successful ones are usually persistent advertisers, and it is their publicity that makes the average newspaper possible. The advantages of newspaper advertising for retail stores no longer need be argued. The right kind of newspaper advertising pays. Thousands of stores the country over have proved it. If a store is a good store, if it sells good goods and gives good service only one thing more is essential to success—that the public shall know about the store and what it has to offer. And the best and least expensive way to tell the public is through the newspaper.

Mr. Whipple, together with his wife and baby arrived in Valentine Sunday. They are not altogether strangers in the city as they made many friends here during the last two years when they were here as members of the Walter Savidge Amusement Co., of which Mr. Whipple was the assistant manager. Mr. Whipple came here from Sioux City, Iowa, where he was employed by the Tribune on special advertising work.

YOUNG ROBBERS ADMIT GUILT ON CHARGE FROM WOOD LAKE THEFT

Gerald Sherburn, 21, of Ainsworth, and Henry Mundt, 19, of Wood Lake, entered a plea of guilty to breaking and entering the A. L. Randall store at Wood Lake last Friday night.

They are being held in the local jail pending the return of District Judge E. L. Meyer from a vacation trip, when they will be taken to Alliance for sentence.

Sherburn and Mundt secured $6.75 cash and merchandise to the value of fifty dollars by breaking a window in the rear of the store. The cash and most of the merchandise were recovered by the Sheridan County Sheriff, who arrested the young robbers at Rushville Saturday evening.

Mr. Randall suspected young Mundt and his companion, as they had been seen together during the day, and did not notify Sheriff Hammon until late Saturday afternoon, thinking that they would probably drive to Sherburn's home at Ainsworth. Not being able to locate them there, he notified Sheriff Hammon who immediately telephoned their description to all towns as far west as Crawford.

This resulted in their capture within a few hours at Rushville, where we are told the boys had arrived Saturday morning and immediately secured employment on a farm, coming to town that evening only to be especially conspicuous by wearing an old pair of shoes taken from the Wood Lake store.

FORMER NORINE SHIELDS DIES IN CALIFORNIA

M. P. Jordan was called to Long Beach, California, Sunday night by the death of his neice, the former Norine Shields, remembered as a resident of Valentine.

Upon arrival in Long Beach Mr. Jordan wired that funeral services and high mass would be held in that city at 8:30 Friday morning, and that interment would be made in ...

TAYLOR SELLS HOME

Fred Taylor last week sold his residence property in Valentine ...

Pests

VALENTINE WINS EASILY FROM BASSETT TEAM

FIRST LOCAL OWNED AIR SHIP DUE HERE SOON

Harrison Harper, son of Mr. and Mrs. J. W. Harper, ...

WALTER WAS WILD

MRS. W. A. SHELBOURN DIES

...ANDER DIES AFTER LONG ILLNESS

"LIGHTS OF NEW YORK" TALKING THRILLER

August 8, 1929. Column 1, BLAINE WHIPPLE NEW MAN ON DEMOCRAT STAFF

miles east of town on Highway 12. It is home to elk, bison, deer, and over 230 songbirds. A beautiful pine-dotted canyon with many waterfalls it is the "putting-in" spot for canoeists on the river. The Refuge is open year-round.

The town, population approximately 1,650,[178] did not have street lights – not even on Main street – or paved streets. Some were graveled, others were dirt. There were sidewalks but no curbs. The street the *Democrat* office was located on was graveled the first week of August with the cost borne by the business establishments located on the block.[179] The town was served by Pacific Northwest Bell, Chicago and Northwestern Railway, and Nebraska State Bank.

An Indian village of about 500 population was in the east part of town and in the middle of September about 20 of the men "filled up on bad liquor, went on the war path, and tried to tear up the entire village." The police were able to stop the riot but since the jail was to small to hold all the offenders, many were tied to their wagon wheels to sober up.[180]

Harrison Harper of Valentine purchased a Mono Coupe airplane in Omaha the first week of August. Powered by a Velje M-5 motor, it was

the first locally owned airplane in or near Valentine. Harper flew it to Valentine after his 2-plane hanger and landing field was finished. He also had to make arrangements for a supply of aviation gas. The *Democrat* didn't think it would attract as much attention as the first motor car in Valentine did. It also expressed the hope that this plane would be the "forerunner of a municipal landing field."[181]

A 15-passenger Ford airplane owned by the Rapid Airways Co. visited Valentine October 23. Of all metal construction, it was equipped with comfortable chairs and a wash room. A number of local people enjoyed a ride over the city. The *Democrat* didn't think this type of plane would become common because of its cost – $50 to $65,000.[182]

These were the days before rural electrification and the Valentine Delco Dealer advertised dependable farm electricity available on a co-operative purchase plan. The advertisement said neighbors could join in a community purchase club and buy Delco-Light Plants at a big savings. "A Delco-Light Farm Electric Plant will make your home a better place in which to live and work – and it will pay its cost to you many times over. Here's what it will do for a nickel: It will milk 10 cows, separate 1400 pounds of milk, churn 20 pounds of butter, turn the grindstone to sharpen six scythes, pump two days' supply of water, or do two large family washings. It's the cheapest help your farm can have. You can end farm drudgery forever. You can ease the burdens for the women. You can operate your farm on a more modern, more profitable basis. My special offer includes freight, delivery, wiring, and installation. This is positively one of the greatest money-saving chances you have ever had." The Delco Dealer was also selling Deep Well Water Systems for $74.00 f.o.b. (free on board) Dayton, Ohio. He promised "water under pressure from wells as deep as 300 feet; capacity as high as 440 gallons per hour; automatic oiling; and small operating costs."[183]

The Jewell Theatre booked Warner Bros. *Lights of New York* for a 3-day showing beginning Sunday August 10. It was promoted as the "first all talking picture in the world with a tense and hair raising story." It portrayed the grim adventures of two small town sweethearts who brave the big city. A policeman is murdered in a rum raid and the owner of the cabaret where the girl dances frames the country boy as the killer. The shadow of the electric chair is over him until a jealous woman reveals the real murderer. Rin Tin Tin and a star cast in *Million Dollar Collar* played August 30 and 31.[184]

New automobiles advertised in the *Democrat* included the Pontiac Big 6, E. E. Flynn, Dealer; two models of the Chevrolet Six, Miller Bros. Dealers; and the De Soto Six, T.D. Van Buren, Dealer. Miller Brothers Chevrolet also advertised used cars including Chevrolets, Fords, Willys

Knight, and Chrysler. A 1928 Chevy Coup in A-1 condition was priced at $474.00, a 1926 Ford Coupe with four balloon tires, $190.00, a 1927 Chrysler 52 Coupe, $365.00, and a 1929 Chev 6-cylinder truck with 4,000 miles, $750.00.[185]

Ten days after the Whipples arrived in Valentine, the Walter Savidge Shows passed through town on it way to an engagement in Ainsworth, Nebraska. Blaine and Pearl entertained the executive staff and in turn were invited to join them in Ainsworth for dinner on the Savidge's private Pullman car.[186]

The Chicago & North Western Railway promoted a Labor Day excursion to the Black Hills by offering round trip fares of $4.85 to Rapid City and $5.75 to Deadwood. Children were half fare and no baggage was checked. Valentine's daily mean temperature the last week of August was 75 degrees with a high of 99 and a low of 60.[187]

Grocery specials included Borden's Eagle Brand Milk, 21¢ per can; Hershey's Cocoa, half lb can 17¢; Advo Corn Flakes, large pkg. 10¢; Pink Salmon, tall cans, 21¢ ; Snowdrift, the ideal shortening, 2 lb. can, 49¢; boneless beef roasts, lb. 30¢; loin steaks, lb. 35¢; pork chops, lb. 35¢; picnic hams, lb. 18¢; Empire bacon in slabs, lb. 30¢. Grimes, Golden, Delicious, and Snow apples from Colorado were priced from $1.75 to $4.50 a bushel. A horse-hide jacket with sheep-skin collar and wool lining sold for $12.95, a Lee Brand wool-lined overall jacket for $3.75.[188]

A number of prehistoric fossils found south of Valentine in September by University of Nebraska geology students included: Mery Codus, a deer-like animal 18 to 20 inches high when standing and identified with the Paleocene Epoch;[189] fossils of a 3-toed horse; jaw bones of camels; and skeletal parts of two mammoth elephants.

A snow storm which began Monday night October 28 quit Wednesday night after 14 inches fell. Automobile travel was almost impossible county wide. With the winter at hand James Mansour advertised Williams Oil-O-Matic furnaces which were "entirely automatic, turning itself on and off, maintaining precise healthful temperatures, unusually quiet, thrifty, and built to last a lifetime." Apparently television was on the minds of consumers in Valentine in 1929. H. & W. Tire Service advertised the Stewart-Warner Radio. Model 900 had a Jacobean Cabinet No. 35, eight tubes including rectifier, plug in for television and phonograph, and illuminated visible angle dial for $142.50 less tubes. The Table Model 900 with a Cabinet of American Walnut, electro-dynamic reproducer, was 38 inches in height, 27 inches in width, and 15 inches in depth was advertised for $89.75 less tubes.[190]

Black Thursday struck the nation October 29, 1929 and this stock market crash acted as a trigger to the already unstable economy. It turned out

to be the worst economic slump in U.S. history and spread to virtually all of the industrialized world. Shortly thereafter the *Democrat* reported the closing of the Chadron, Nebraska State Bank and the Ranchers State Bank of Cody, Nebraska by state bank officials.[191]

The issue of January 9, 1930 reported "that Old Man winter hit this part of the country a knockout blow last Sunday evening (Jan. 5). By noon the temperature had climbed to 65 degrees. Shortly after 5 p.m. a cold wind from the north hit Valentine right in the solar plexus. By midnight the temperature was one below zero, a drop of 66 degrees." Wednesday night January 15 produced the coldest weather of the winter when the temperature dropped to 21 below.[192]

MARTIN, BENNETT COUNTY SOUTH DAKOTA

Blaine severed his relationship with the *Democrat* towards the end of January to take over management of the Martin, South Dakota *Messenger* and *Bennett County Review*, the only newspaper published in the county. The family left Valentine for Martin January 28[193] and arrived there that evening. It was just three days before daughter Pat's first birthday. The family initially moved into the Wordeman "cottage," a log house, and later into a basement apartment in the Catholic parsonage of Our Lady of the Sacred Heart Church.

Bennett was the state's youngest county, created in 1911 and organized in 1912. About a third of its 750,720 acres were farmed. Flax, wheat, corn, and oats were the leading crops in that order. Hogs and cattle were the main animals raised followed in order by horses, sheep, chickens, and turkeys.[194] It had rich soil, rolling prairies, small spring fed streams and plenty of good soft water. The only thing it lacked was settlers "to come and turn the virgin soil and reap a golden harvest," said Frank D. Kriebs, the state's Secretary of Agriculture. There was no railroad in the county, U.S. Highway 18 ran east to west, and state Highway 63 north to south. Neither were graveled. Grain and livestock were shipped from Nebraska.[195]

The Pine Ridge Indian Reservation was in Bennett, Shannon, Washington, and Washabaugh counties and covered an area of 4,500 square miles; nearly 3 million acres. E. W. Jermark, Agency Superintendent, was headquarted at Pine Ridge in southern Shannon county. The Reservation was divided into seven districts. It's population was approximately 8,000 adults and 2,300 school children.[196] Martin was the only community on the Pine Ridge Reservation listed as a town.[197] Trading villages were Oglala, Manderson, Porcupine, and Brennar.[198]

Martin, with a population of 720 (1930 federal census) was the county

seat and was considered a "frontier" town. It did not have a water system, a telephone exchange,[199] library, or train or bus service,[200] but did have a private power company, an artificial ice plant, cement sidewalks and a graveled main street without curbs. It had the only high school in the county with over 100 students in the 1929-30 school year.[201] There were four churches: Catholic, Father Thomas A. Carroll, pastor; Episcopal, Rev. P.C. Bruguier, pastor, Presbyterian, Rev. Fravel, pastor, and a Lutheran congregation with no settled pastor. There was no dentist but Dr. Mattison held office hours at the Lessert Hotel three days a week.[202] The mail arrived by train at Merriman, Nebraska and was delivered in Martin at 9 a.m. and picked up at 4 p.m. The west bound passenger train (No. 3) left Merriman at 4:02 a.m.; the east bound (No. 14) at 8:40 p.m.[203]

Homes and businesses had their own wells and there was a public well on the Court House property. A windmill was erected at the Court House pump in February 1930.[204] The Town Council scheduled an election to be held October 20 to authorize construction of a city water works to supply water for domestic use and fire protection and to sell bonds in the amount of $32,800 to pay for the improvements. It was defeated.[205] Martin voters also defeated 151-49 a ballot issue to grant a franchise to construct and operate an electric light plant.[206]

Water provisions were of concern during the County Fair and other functions that attracted large crowds. The public well and Cecil Burton's private well were used to pump water into tanks and other private well owners were asked to let visitors have all the water they needed for human and animal consumption at no charge. The town and county government stressed that "it was good business and would bring visitors back for other occasions." Martin borrowed the water sprinkler from Gordon, Nebraska to keep street dust down during major summer events such as Chautauqua, circus, carnival, and county fair.

Following an annual inspection, W.J. Dawson, Deputy State Fire Marshal, said Martin was "the poorest equipped town for its size west of the Missouri river. This caused the Town

Blaine, Bob and Pat.

Council to adopt an ordinance February 18, 1930 requiring all businesses heating by fire to install brick flues or chimneys, prohibiting straw, hay, or other combustible material to be placed within 60 feet of any building unless enclosed, permission of the Town Marshal to burn hay, straw, chips, shavings, or other combustible material[207] and requiring future commercial buildings to have external and party walls of brick, tile, stone, iron, or other suitable and incombustible material.[208]

Pressure for public water continued and the same bond issue that failed in October was presented to the voters in early February 1931 and won by a margin of 149-68.[209] The Northwestern Engineering Co. of Rapid City, South Dakota was the low bidder. The Town Council let the bid contingent on selling the bonds which also included money for a Fire House and equipment. Since Martin lacked railroad service, the Council expected difficulty in selling the bonds.[210] However, they were sold in April and the contract awarded. The system was to include a 50,000 gallon steel tank on a 100 foot tower, nearly 2.5 miles of water mains, 19 fire hydrants, two wells equipped with pumping machinery, and a Fire Station with fire hose, hose cart, chemical engine, and other miscellaneous items. The contract was deferred in May because the contractor was unable to furnish the necessary bonds.[211]

In May of 1931 the Council authorized the purchase of a 20-gallon anti-freeze chemical engine for the Fire Department and authorized the reconditioning of all present equipment and the building of a shed to store the equipment. Funds for a fire bell were unavailable so the Episcopal Church bell was designated to sound the fire alarm. To distinguish it from summoning parishioners to church, it was decided to ring the bell faster for fire alarms.[212] The chemical fire engine, mounted on wheels and guaranteed to withstand temperatures of 40 below zero, and an extension ladder were purchased in August. Since the Fire Department had no axes, residents who owned two were asked to donate one – even if it didn't have a handle because the department would buy the handle.[213]

The *Messenger-Bennett County Review*[214] was a six-column publication and the shop was modern enough to have a linotype. It promoted Martin as the "metropolis of the Pine Ridge Indian Reservation" and the best "trading place in the area." It claimed a subscription list of over 1,000 and also sold subscriptions for any magazine published.

W.G. Pugh bought half interest in the paper prior to 1915 and later acquired the other half, finally leaving to enter the electrical business. Mrs. Fern Pugh was editor and publisher for several years and in December 1929 announced the sale of the paper to a Mr. A. Shadbolt simultaneously announcing she had purchased the Dandy Café and would remain in town. Shadbolt lasted four weeks. In the January 16, 1930 issue, Mrs.

Pugh announced "the sale had fallen through since Shadbolt "failed to make his initial payment as agreed." She also announced that she couldn't operate both the newspaper and the café and was negotiating with another party. Two weeks later she announced she was no longer selling and that Blaine Whipple would assume charge of the newspaper.[215]

Pat and Sonny about 1931.

The first issue under Blaine's management was dated January 30, 1930. Despite only two day on the job, the issue was 10 pages, two more than usual. The additional pages were mostly advertising. Ford and Chevrolet national advertising was included. In most models Ford was the lowest price.[216]

In the February 6 issue he announced a new feature, "The Alibi," space for schools news on a semi-monthly basis. He editorialized asking his readers to write to Congressman Williamson requesting he work to get U.S. Highway 18 graveled within the Reservation. He pointed out that U.S. Highway 20 in Nebraska was graveled and that most locals traveling east and west used that superior highway and bought their gas in and paid gas tax to Nebraska. He also stressed that federal monies should pay the full cost of the road through Reservation land. He announced the paper would sponsor a "Clean-up Day" early in the spring and expressed the hope that the Town Council would make it an official event. Printer Ben Elmer left the paper for a job in Snyder, Nebraska and was replaced by Marshall Robertson, a former employee.

The Allen Theater announced the installation of an Electrograph, a synchronizing machine, that played musical scores for moving pictures. Father Carroll of the Catholic church announced local talent will present *A Poor Married Man* at the Allen Theater Wednesday February 19. It was a 3-act farce-comedy by Walter Ben Hare. Blaine wrote that business or pleasure trips taken by *Messenger* readers would be included in the paper if submitted for publication. Most issues of the paper contained a column titled "Taken up for Trespass." It was a list of livestock taken up and held for damages.[217]

The page one lead story in the February 20 issue called on citizens west of the Missouri river to band together to make sure their roads were graveled before state funds were spent to pave roads east of the river. There was a brief article about a 40 acre farm adjacent to the town of Tuthill which sold for $75 an acre — the highest price ever paid for Bennett

county land. Advertisers included 32 local businesses, seven local professional firms, five merchants from Merriman, Nebraska, 11 firms from other towns in South Dakota and Nebraska, and four national advertisers. Ballin Bros. of Minnesota owned Hampton's Cash Grocery, two stores in Nebraska, and one other in South Dakota making it the first chain operator in Bennett county.[218] Most of the legal notices advertised mortgage foreclosure sales, chattel mortgage foreclosures, lists of strayed stock, and proceedings of the Town Council, County Board of Commissioners, and High School Board of Education. Blaine's editorial that week was:

"NO HARD TIMES HERE"

There is no need to camouflage facts. From one end of our country to another there is fear that business may take a decided slump during the next few months. The automobile and the radio industries have given us evidence of over production and a threat of considerable under-employment. Other industries are likewise facing difficulties. But we seriously doubt if this depression will have any great influence on business locally. Our community is rather fortunately situated and has been entirely without the inflation that comes with a boom in industrial growth. While we may find business slow, we will not find any actual suffering in our midst.

The armies of unemployed will not go through our streets. No long lines will stand waiting for a turn at the soup kitchens. No one will experience serious suffering and want of a job if he really desires to work.

Records show our community is remarkably stable. We do not get a high during a period of prosperity and consequently do not get a low during a depression. The next few months will tell. We will hazard a guess that Bennett county residents are not going to discover the meaning of hard times this winter.

ROBERT BLAINE BORN IN LOG HOUSE

Blaine and Pearl's second child, Robert Blaine, was born Saturday February 22. Since there was no hospital in town, he was born at home in the log house. His birth certificate gave his name as Blaine. However, it was altered shortly thereafter with Robert written in front of Blaine. He was baptized at Our Lady of the Sacred Heart Church by Father Carrol September 16.[219] His Godparents were Arthur E. (Bud) and Clara Scott, brother and sister of his mother. They had moved to Martin from Douglas, North Dakota and lived with the Whipples. Bud was an apprentice

printer for Blaine and Clara helped care for the two children.[220]

An "old fashioned blizzard" struck Martin February 28 bringing severe cold weather Saturday and Sunday. A second storm hit Thursday March 6. Despite the weather William Palmer began constructing a new meat market west of the Martin hotel. The 16 by 60 foot building was of tile construction.[221]

Charles Allen, manager of the Allen Theater, announced he had purchased the equipment for talking pictures and effective April 10 would be presenting them to local patrons. He predicted that "talkies would bring in many out-of-towners" and benefit other Martin merchants. He booked *Gentlemen Prefer Blonds* for Wednesday and Thursday March 11 and 12 and advertised that "every picture accompanied by the Electrograph, brings you the world's greatest musical artists."[222]

U.S. Highway 18 boosters met at the Capitol in Pierre Tuesday March 11. All towns between Winner and Hot Springs sent representatives including 11 from Martin. Future Congressman and U.S. Senator Francis Case of the Hot Springs *Star* was spokesman, presenting the need for a wet weather road.

The Biggest Show Ever Attempted in Martin was presented at the Allen Theater March 17 and 18. It was a minstrel show with a cast of 50 and an orchestra. Blaine and Marion Robinson did a skit, "Breaking Into Vaudeville." The show was a success, playing to full houses both nights. It cleared $361.20 with proceeds going to the building fund for the new Community Hall. It was also booked to perform at Merriman, Nebraska Saturday March 22.[223] The Allen Theater showed its first all-talking movie, *Sweetie* on Saturday May 24. Jack Oakie, Nancy Carrol, and Helen Kane were the stars. Harold Lloyd in *Welcome Danger* was booked for June 6, 7, and 8.[224] The first color movie was *Rio Rita* starring Bebe Daniels in her first all-talking picture was shown in September. While advertised as all color only certain sequences were technicolor.[225]

J. C. Cozard, Justice of Peace, was appointed to take the 1930 federal census in Martin between April 2 and 30. The First National Bank of Marmarth, N. Dak. foreclosed on Fern L. Pugh, publisher of the *Messenger*, for failure to pay $968.40 on a 3-acre tract she owned in town. The sheriff's sale was set for April 28.[226] There was a major prairie fire in Bennett county the first week in April and much to the relief of local residents the road between Martin and Merriman, Nebraska was being graveled. A Minnesota group announced plans to survey farmers and businessmen about starting a bank. L.W. Rooney, Martin insurance agent, was to conduct the survey.[227]

The American Legion announced it would present *In the Army Now* with local talent on April 28 and 29. Blaine knew the author and was able

to negotiate a reduced royalty price for the Legion. He was cast as Private Buddy Hawkins in the production. Clair C. Long, incumbent Clerk of Court, was the lone Democrat to file for election to county office. Twenty-eight Republicans were competing for the various offices.[228]

LAUCHES THE BENNETT COUNTY NEWS

Blaine must have strongly believed in his editorial "NO HARD TIMES HERE" in the February 20 issue because he left the *Messenger* and started *The Bennett County News* on Thursday April 24. In announcing the new competition, the *Messenger* welcomed "Mr. Whipple to our midst and although we feel that this community is too small for two papers, we wish him success. This is the third time that a second paper has been started here, each time to be absorbed by the *Messenger,* but maybe the time is ripe for it."[229] Publisher Pugh announced the sale of the *Messenger* on May 15 to the Messenger Publishing Co. She retained an interest in the new company but ceased all active participation. The other principles in the new company were M. J. Tronvold, business manager, and Marshall Robertson, foreman.[230]

The new newspaper must have found support because Blaine published it for 17 months before selling it in late September 1931 to Mrs. Fern Pugh Noll (former owner of the *Messenger*) who sold it to Frank Rogers on August 18, 1932. On February 8, 1933 when the temperature was 22 degrees below zero, a fire lasting two hours destroyed the building and ruined all the equipment of the *Bennett County News*. From then until April 13 a miniature edition was printed on the *Messenger's* press. Regular publication resumed in April when a new printing plant was acquired from a suspended paper in Crookston, Nebraska.[231] All copies of the *News* published by Blaine were destroyed in the fire. Thus the following information relating to the Whipple family's time in Martin was culled from the *Messenger*.[232]

By October 1931 Blaine has made some inroads with local government entities as the High School Board of Education and the County Board of Commissioners authorized payments to the *News* for printing services. However, the bulk of this business went to the Messenger Publishing Co.[233]

A major hail storm struck west and south of Martin on Saturday July 5. The paper called it the "worst hail storm ever experienced in this section." It caused major crop damage. Work was begun on graveling the road from Martin to Gordon, Nebraska in August 1930 and an electric popcorn machine was installed in the Alamo pool hall the same month.[234] The big news in Martin in early October was the purchase of the Frank E. Levermont's 5,000 acre ranch southeast of town by Carl Jorgerson of Hyamis,

Nebraska. The purchase included 600 head of cattle and a 13-room house with its own electric light plant and running water.[235]

A case of diphtheria caused the school to be closed in late October. A second case was reported in early December. The families of the ill children were quarantined. In both cases.[236] Pearl Whipple was taken to the Rushville, Nebraska hospital Friday November 14 to consult with doctors. A two-day heavy snowstorm with high winds hit Martin Wednesday and Thursday and Blaine had a difficult time motoring to the Nebraska town. Pearl was seriously ill and was admitted to the Broz Hospital where she remained until returning home Tuesday December 2.[237]

Despite the depression a roller rink was opened in the Martin Pavilion in January 1931. It cost $2,000.00 to renovate the pavilion and to install an electric driven band box. The newly elected county officials took office January 6: Dan Page and Clark Francis, Commissioners; J.W. Snyder, Auditor; George Smith, Register of Deeds; and N.B. Bartlett, States Attorney.[238]

"Your Bank" of Eli, Nebraska voluntarily closed January 15. It said it was closing "because it wasn't making any money and didn't want to go into a negative position." All depositors received one hundred cents on the dollar. L. & E. Mercantile Co. advertised a two week sale[239] and the Martin Trading Post advertised a variety of winter garments.[240] The Allen presented Kenn Maynard in *The Fighting Legion*, a Universal part-talking picture, two comedies, and a talking news reel.[241] The Midway Café closed its doors for lack of business, leaving three restaurants in town. The wolf population was reduced in 1930 as shown by the county's disbursements for the quarter ending December 31 of $67.39 paid for wolf bounty.[242]

The B.E.O., a Woman's Club, announced in February that it would organize a Free Public Library. Donations of books were requested to be left at the Court House. The drive was successful and the library opened Saturday afternoon July 25 in the Court House with approximately 300 volumes. Hours were 2- 5 p.m. Tuesdays and Thursdays and 7:15 - 9 p.m. Saturdays.[243] A local production of *Blundering Billy* played at the Allen Tuesday February 17. The one-night performance was a benefit for Our Lady of the Sacred Heart Church. Blaine played Ezra Tuttle, a rich mine owner.[244]

A new Fire Department, with membership limited to men 18 and over was organized February 13. C. W. Darbyshire was elected Chief, Cliff Godby, Assistant, and Harold James, Secretary-Treasurer. A miniature golf course, named "The Little Country Club," opened across from the Post Office at the end of February. It featured 19 holes and cost 25¢ per round. Permanents were available at Mary Lou Beauty Shop from $4.50 - $7.50.[245]

A blizzard accompanied by a heavy snow fall closed the schools on Thursday March 19 and prevented mail service until a crew of 15 men removed the snow from the highway between Martin and Merriman. The town's electrical source, the Burd Electric Light Plant, burned to the ground Sunday March 22 destroying all generators and motors. However, within three hours power was restored to part of the town by using a tractor to run a generator. As a consequence Martin merchants sold their entire supply of lamps and the following businesses developed their own power plants: Bartlett Oil Co., Martin Service Station, Martin International, Milliken's Dance Hall, Darby's Garage, Allen Theater, and the Messenger Publishing Co.[246]

The Town Council responded to the Burd fire by voting to build a Municipal Electric Light Plant. It sought a bid from Fairbanks, Morse, and Company of Omaha and began negotiations to purchase the lots the Burd plant had occupied. The plant was to include generating units of 110 horsepower and 50 horsepower as well as smaller generators and other equipment. The cost was estimated at $20,400.00. The proposed rate to patrons was four cents for the first 175 kwh per month and two-and-a-half cents above 175 kwh with a minimum billing of $3.00 monthly.

Lot owner Cecil Burd countered the Council proposal by asking for a franchise to provide the service. The Council then called a special franchise election to authorize a 20-year franchise to Burd. The issue carried in all three Wards by a vote of 171-50.[247]

Blaine was one of a dozen Martin businessmen to attend a hearing before the State Highway Commission in Pierre April 15. The Martin contingent, which included members of the County Commission but not the editor of the *Messenger,* protested the Commission's decision to postpone graveling Highway 18 west of Martin.[248]

L.W. Rooney, County Superintendent of Schools and unsuccessful Republican candidate for County Auditor in the November election, paid for the following notice to be published on page one of the April 23, 1931 *Messenger*:

> NOTICE TO THE PUBLIC BY L. W. ROONEY
>
> The editor of the *Bennett County News* in his issue dated April 9th stated that I had proposed to Governor Green that I be appointed County Superintendent for the unorganized counties of Shannon, Washabaugh, and Washington. I deny that I made such a proposition to Governor Green and asked for a retraction. My attorney, "Windsor Donerty of Winner, S. Dak., drew up the following demand for retraction and asks me to have someone serve a copy upon the News editor in order that he be given a chance to correct the article appearing in his paper. The notice follows:

NOTICE. TO *THE BENNETT COUNTY NEWS* AND TO BLAINE WHIPPLE, EDITOR AND PUBLISHER THEREOF: You are hereby notified that a certain article appearing in *The Bennett County* News under the date of April 9, 1931, on the undersigned, L.W. Rooney, is libelous and untrue, false and defamatory and unless you make a full and fair retraction of the erroneous matter, correcting any and all misstatements of fact therein contained, in the next issue of your paper, the undersigned intends to commence an action against you for damages for the false and defamatory statements therein contained, besides punitive damages. Dated April 14, 1931. L. W. Rooney

There is just one point at issue. Whipple said I proposed that the Governor appoint me as Superintendent of the three counties. I did not propose to the Governor that he appoint me Superintendent. Let us wait and see if Whipple and the News publishes the truth.

Since copies of *The Bennett County News* are unavailable it is impossible to know how Blaine responded to the charge. Reporting that an individual had asked for a gubernatorial appointment to an office, even if untrue, is not libelous or defamatory. Blaine either reported in his issue of April 16 that he had been misinformed and apologized, cited his source as a defense, or ignored Rooney's "loony" charge. Apparently the controversy was resolved without resort to the legal system as there were no followup reports in the *Messenger*. And since *The Bennett County News* and the *Messenger* were competitors, any continuation of a controversy would have been reported by the *Messenger*.

Superintendent Rooney, also an insurance agent in Martin, was appointed Superintendent of Schools at Conata, South Dakota in August. His wife was also appointed to teach several lower grades. They moved to Conata but Rooney announced he would be in Martin every two to three weeks to oversee his insurance business.[249] Mrs. Clara W. Ford, fifth and sixth grade teacher in Martin, replaced Rooney as Superintendent in June. Her monthly salary was $116.66.[250]

At the end of April the Town Council leased land southeast of town to be used for a dump.[251] The Council encouraged citizens to use the dump and refrain from dumping their garbage and other waste along the highway. The town enjoyed a two-week gas war in May which ended when the price went back to 18¢ a gallon from 16¢. The Allen booked *All Quiet on the Western Front*, "the greatest picture of all time," for a three-day showing in early June.[252]

Blaine, Pearl, and Pat Whipple, accompanied by Arnold Dauven, left Martin Thursday June 4 after the paper had been put to bed for a visit to Douglas, North Dakota.[253] J. E. Markley of Merriman began offering

refrigerator service between Martin and Sioux City, Iowa in mid June. He left Martin Sundays and Wednesdays and returned Tuesdays and Fridays. His service (an International refrigerated truck) made it possible for Martin merchants to handle fruit that would otherwise spoil before reaching town. Gordon, Nebraska dedicated its municipal airport in mid June with Martin residents hoping it would be of benefit to them also.[254]

Blaine developed a rapport with the Reservation Indians and was frequently asked to their settlements to speak with them.[255] Pearl's brother, Leonard Scott of Minneapolis, visited the Whipples in 1931 and went to a number of those meetings. He told the author he was always "scared to death" until they got back to Martin. Pearl remembers a big Pow Wow at the edge of Martin as being "awfully scary" to her but not to Blaine.[256] Pearl had some problems with some of her upper teeth in Martin and let the dentist talk her into pulling all of the uppers. She was only 25 and didn't want anyone to know she was getting false teeth. After pulling the teeth, the dentist stuck false teeth into the holes in her gums until he could make a temporary plate and about two months after that a permanent plate. She said she never told anyone about her false teeth and her mother never knew.[257]

The Martin baseball team was defeated 11-5 by the Mission, South Dakota team on Saturday June 28. Mission's second baseman was an Indian named Whipple, a right-hand hitter who had three hits in three times at bat. One of his hits scored two runs, another, a triple with three men on base, scored three.[258] Members of Martin's business community met Friday July 24 to discuss forming a Commercial Club. Thirty became charter members and formed a Committee to solicit additional members. Harold James was named temporary Secretary.[259]

South Dakota Governor Warren Green rejected a proposal to declare a moratorium for all 1931 taxes as a farm relief measure. He refused on the ground that a tax moratorium would result in closing schools and ceasing all government activities. He also rejected lower valuations on real property on the grounds doing so would result in higher levies. He also expressed concern about reports that many financially able farmers "will refuse to pay their taxes."[260]

The County Board of Commissioners passed a Resolution September 1 asking the State Highway Commission to allocate monies for Bennett county roads so needy persons could be employed. They wrote that most Bennett county farmers suffered a complete crop failure and many were unable to feed and clothe themselves. The Highway Commission allocated $5,000.00 for county road work. Needy workers were to apply for the jobs through the County Commissioners.[261]

Twenty-one Indians from the Pine Ridge Reservation joined the Cir-

cus Sarrasani in Dresden, Germany as a feature attraction. The troupe included Chief Blackhorn, 74-year-old Sioux brave, Chief White Buffalo Man, and Big Charger and Mark Sit on the Spider, two old Scouts. Their act featured a stagecoach robbery and other wild west specialities.[262]

There were 103 students at Martin High School for the 1931-32 school year.[263] Tuition was $9.65 a month. Length of the school year was 179 days (six months). Expenses for the school year ending June 30, 1931 were $8,942.65. In addition to Superintendent Francis J. Harty, who was paid $1,800.00 annually, there were four female teachers whose annual salary averaged $1,279.00. Text books cost $279.76 and supplies and other expenses $1,746.89. The county levied a tax of $100.00 on each elector to support schools.[264]

The county levy on real and personal property was expected to raise $48,770.14 for 1932. In addition a road poll tax of $2.00 was levied on each male age 21-70 living in an unorganized Township and a tax of $1.00 for each dog in the county. The Allen Theater discontinued mid-week movies in mid-September opening only on Friday, Saturday, and Sunday nights.[265] The Whipples sold *The Bennett County News* the end of September and left for greener pastures in North Dakota. The *Messenger* did not print an article about the sale or their move.

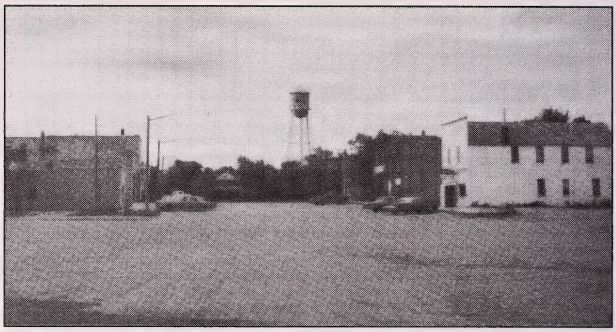
DAMN THE DEPRESSION; FULL SPEED AHEAD[266]

The Whipples moved to Ryder,[267] Ward county, North Dakota, in November 1931. Ryder was a small farming town located between Bismarck and Minot. Blaine leased the *Ryder News*[268] and simultaneously founded the *Douglas News*. Douglas[269] was a small town 12 miles east of Ryder. Both towns were on the Soo Railroad line. Pearl's parents and a number of her siblings lived in Douglas.

Blaine was an optimist and an entrepreneur when selecting Ryder as the place to do business. The depression had staggered the town and its only bank, First National Bank of Ryder,[270] became insolvent and was suspended and taken over by the comptroller of Currency of the United States three months previously (August 7). It was one of four banks on the Max-Sanish branch of the Soo line to close that day.[271] Ryder was left without a place of deposit. C. H. Christensen, manager of the Agriculture Credit Co., cashed checks for the public but would not accept deposits.

The first issue of both the *Ryder News* and the *Douglas News* published by Blaine was November 19.[272] The mastheads listed Blaine as Editor and Manager. Subscription rates were $2 per year, $1 for six months, $3 for subscribers out of the Ward-McLean county area. Together they contained six pages, four of local news and advertising and two of boiler-

plate.[273] The *Ryder News* was the official village newspaper and included legal notices as well as national advertising.[274] It was distributed on Thursdays.[275] The legal notices were mostly foreclosures.[276]



Ryder, North Dakota.

Weekly features were prices paid for commodities at the Ryder Market[277] and "Items of Interest" from the small community of Makoti. He also began a weekly picture montage of the Ryder Churches.[278]

The Douglas office of the *News* was in the Drumater Drug Store. A number of business establishments in that town signed, in advance, advertising contracts for one year and agreed to purchase 200 subscriptions at $1.50 each which were to be mailed to residents in their trade area. Blaine described himself "as a Douglas man by marriage" in the first issue.[279]

After organizing the two newspapers Blaine produced a vaudeville and dramatic show at the Orpheum Theater. Ryder High School faculty and students were the cast. Admission was 15 and 25 cents and it played to a full house on December 4. The Norwegian Coon Singers and the Hickville Silver Cornet Band were crowd favorites. In his review in the December 10 issue he wrote:

> One of the most pleasing of the many nice things the News editor has observed since taking over this household companion four weeks ago, was the large crowd that turned out for the local talent show last Friday evening. Long before the performers were ready, seats were at a premium. The theatre was jammed with a mighty fine looking group of people, who by their actions showed that they intended to enjoy the performance.
>
> In these days of depression, this magnificent turn out speaks well for the entire community. Our citizens showed that they were willing to look on the bright side of life instead of standing at the edge of things and howling "Wolf." Getting together is what really counts. Mingling with our neighbors makes life worth living. We hope to see many more of these community entertainments during the coming months.[280]

He immediately began to promote advertising as a means to bring more business to the town.[281] His first promotion featured the Ryder Co-oper-

ative Creamery and local merchants[282] directed at turkey growers. The goal was to get them to sell their turkeys through the Co-op. Merchants offered a variety of prizes and a 10% discount on all goods and merchandise sold during "Turkey Pool Week."[283] He also promoted a "Letter to Santa Clause" in a front page article December 3 which produced 19 letters.[284]

Blaine holding Nancy, Pat, and Sonny, Ryder, 1932.

The depression prompted a bit of levity in a boxed item on page 1 of the December 3 issue. "The story is told that President Hoover called heaven long distance to talk to President Grover Cleveland. 'Grover, didn't you have soup lines when you were President?' 'I sure did,' President Cleveland replied. 'Well,' said President Hoover, 'what did you do with all the soup bowls and spoons?'"[285]

The Ryder Village Board and Park Board combined forces and erected a "stately" Christmas tree with "beautifully colored lights" the week before Christmas and 22 businesses purchased "Seasons Greetings" in the issue of December 24.[286] Blaine published "Santa's Ode to 1931" on the front page of that issue. The first three verses are on the left, the second three on the right, and the last in the middle.

We've got banks with no money,
Horses, but no hay, cribs with no corn
And hens that fail to lay.

We've cows with no milk at all,
Hog pens, but no porkers,
Pastures without grass
And auto's without gas,

We've farm relief but no relieving,
We have boars but no buyers,
Rubber checks that bounce right back,
Heavy steers when they wanted light ones,
They have the farmers in a sack.

We have wells but no water,
Plenty of clouds but no rain,
Bankers getting tough and tougher,
It surely gives us all a pain.

Prohibition with its rotten booze,
Politics that isn't ticking
And sox but no shoes.
We've had trouble by the peck.

We had grasshoppers and no grass to feed 'em,
And the Farm Board's wheat around our neck,
Hot winds that scorched our eye-balls,

But cheer up, folks, cut out the gloom,
It's Christmas time at last,
SANTA CLAUS IS STILL ALIVE
SO LET'S ALL FORGET THE PAST.[287]

According to the December 31 issue "The meanest man in the world" had visited Ryder. Blaine's main front page article reported that "the colored electric light bulbs" on the Municipal Christmas Tree had been stolen and that the tree was dark on Christmas night. He wrote that a person who would stoop to such petty thievery would do almost anything low and vile and would be "a fit associate for a skunk." But, he wrote, "the hide of the most lowly skunk had some value but the hide of the Christmas tree thief could not be disposed of on a cannibal island whose inhabitants are the least particular of any on earth."

The Ryder Home Economic Club distributed Christmas boxes to 21 local homes. Pearl's mother, Nellie Scott,[288] spent Christmas Eve with the Whipple family and there were 15 subscription renewals at a $1.50 each and three new out-of-area subscribers at $3 each to end the year. The $31.50 in cash was a welcome way to end the year.[289]

SECOND DAUGHTER, NANCY JANE, BORN

There was good news for both the town and the Whipple family to begin 1932. The highway running north and south through Ryder was to be graveled[290] and the Whipple family welcomed the birth of their third child, Nancy Jane. She was born at 10:35 p.m. on Tuesday January 5, arriving on one of Dr. H. O. Grangaard's personally conducted tours.[291] Her grandmother, Mrs. Ben (Nellie) Scott and Mrs. Howard Fowler, both of Douglas, assisted in the birth. A *News* reporter interviewed the new resident shortly after birth and wrote she seemed highly pleased with Ryder and expected to make it her permanent home. Her opinion on the depression was that "it would soon be a thing of the past. After her father, editor of the *News*, questioned the doctor about the cost of the trip, he decided the depression had just started.

The year also began with chattel mortgage sales at public auction in Ryder[292] and high school students were invited to produce the January 28 issue – except for the mechanical work.[293] The first blizzard of the new year arrived January 12 and received prominent page 1 coverage with a headline and story as follows:

CANADIAN ROWDIES TERRORIZE TOWN

Two rowdy and undesirable characters arrived in our town shortly before noon Tuesday and played havoc in general. They are reported to have come direct from Canada; and the better element of our village believe they should be deported as undesirable aliens. They rushed helter-skelter through the streets and across lawns, striking every person who crossed their path. They forced their way into homes, stores, and offices and screamed loudly as they scampered down the alleys.

They were recognized as old offenders known as George W. Winter and Jack E. Frost, both having visited this section in the past, although they have given little trouble recently. They usually travel together, although Frost sometimes slips ahead of his white beared companion to nip the fingers and pinch the ears of the unwary.

As old man Winter topped a hill northwest of town, he filled his lungs with the fresh, balmy air we have enjoyed for so long and suddenly released it, together with an ocean of snow. Young Jack Frost jumped into the air, kicked his heels together, and fanned the air with his ham-like hands, causing the snow to lash itself into a fury. All through town and the country around, doors were slammed shut, stoves were stuffed with coal, and everyone said with a sigh, "Well, winter is here," but no one seems to be doing anything about it.[294]

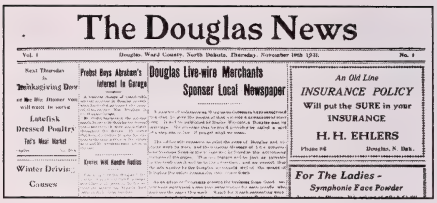
Ryder joined a national celebration of George Washington's 200th birthday and formed a Committee to plan the event. Blaine was named Secretary.[295] In response to the depression, the Flour Relief Committee of the Farmers Union shipped 655 sacks of flour (100-pounds each) to Ryder for distribution to members of that organization. The only cost to locals was the freight.[296] The *News* announced it would begin a weekly WANT ADS section at a cost of two cents per word the first week, one-cent per word for each additional week, and a minimum cost of twenty-five cents per insertion. Seven individuals were the first customers and advertised a heating stove, household goods, houses and farms for rent, and for a salesman with car.[297]

The January 28 edition written and edited by high school students devoted most of the space to information about the schools. They reported operating costs for 1930-31 of $14,776.19 provided education for 104 grade and 90 high school students and that the 1931-32 budget of $12,900 would educate 110 grade and 102 high school students. The cost per capita the latter year was $60.85.[298]

The Ryder News

Circuit Convention Decided Success

News Under New Management


The Douglas News

Douglas Live-wire Merchants Sponser Local Newspaper

Blaine wrote about the Depression in a 2-column front page editorial in the February 4 issue with the goal of prodding the business community to become more aggressive:

AND I WAS AFRAID AND WENT AND HID MY TALENTS

For two years business has been burying its talents, putting its money under cover. Today men wonder why there is no crop of profits. Two questions are asked at every business discussion: What will it cost? Is it absolutely necessary?

Withering questions, these. In times of reduced income they wear an air of finality that shrivels initiative. It is no joke that business conditions have been called "The Depression." Business men talk about orders – products the other fellow should be ordering. A wealth of ideas lie in every store, factory, and office but they're all covered with dust that no man dares scrape away for fear of being called extravagant

Yet the talent must emerge, the silver brightened, wealth put to work for its master, The Public. We cannot continue watching idle funds, idle ideas, idle hands. American Business must turn to the task of making each measure of silver earn another.

Business is first of all a movement of minds; not a staking of ideas to one spot. And printing is the best medium to move a mass of minds to constructive action. Trade and industry – half of the wealth-producing activity of the country – depend on the constant interchange of ideas on paper – on letterheads, record cards, printed forms, advertising pages.

It is time for American Business to return to its normal habits – to balance wise buying against aggressive selling, to earn new dollars instead of merely burying old ones, to make the printed word again take up its load of business management. The printing business is basic to the prosperity of America and a barometer of business thinking. Idle presses are an index of idle ideas in industry. Let's put ideas to work, dollars to work. The time has come for an accounting of stewardship.

Let it no longer be said that we are afraid, and hide our talent in the earth.

In the same issue he ran an article on the benefits of tariffs on agriculture combined with the stabilizing effect of the Agricultural Marketing Act. According to the article, North Dakota and Montana wheat was averaging 62.5 cents per bushel compared to the 44.5 cents paid to the Canadian farmer in Alberta, Manitoba, and Saskatchewan. It also pointed out that the price of wheat in Liverpool, England was the lowest in 400 years; that Australia had gone broke on its wheat crop and repudiated its public debts; Argentina had gone broke and was selling its distressed wheat at any price. Claiming that the U.S. fared better than any other country during these distressing times, the article said credit should be given to the Republican Protective Tariff[299] and the stabilizing machinery of the Farm Marketing Act.

Blaine announced he would produce a 3-act farce, *Listen to Leon* at the Orpheum Theatre February 22 using home town talent. The setting was a summer resort hotel in western New York featuring a young doctor, Leon Bryant, who could truthfully be called the champion liar of the world. One lie got him into great trouble and he continued to lie to get out only to find he stepped from the frying pan into the fire. He cast himself in the lead as Leon. Stormy weather caused postponement to February 26. There were two performances: 4 p.m. matinee for school children 10¢ and 8:15 p.m. for adults 35¢.[300] It drew a full house and was pronounced a "howling success." In his review, Blaine said he had directed many local talent casts and could "truthfully say he never before had a cast so nearly 100% perfect." It was booked for a March 7 performance at the Douglas High School gym with proceeds going to the school.[301]

He editorially opposed the Constitutional Amendment on the March 15 ballot to move the State Capitol from Bismarck to Grand Forks. He argued that the state's population was moving west and eventually would equal the east's population, making it desirable to have the Capitol in Bismarck which was in the center. Bismarck received 114 votes to one for Grand Forks in Ryder and the margin was 73-4 in the Township.[302]

In an effort to build circulation Blaine ran a full page ad in the February 25 issue. The page was enclosed in a heavy black border to draw attention to it. The *News* offered "A Beautiful Durham-Duplex Safety Razor with two Durham-Duplex Hollow Ground Blades in a handsome Pin Seal Leather Case, complete in an attractive lithographed red and gold container" with every paid up subscription – new or renewal – of $2.

The main story in the *Douglas News* of the same date asked the question whether it should continue publication? Many of the merchants who had signed a year's contract for advertising were not living up to the contract so printing costs exceeded income. Acknowledging that some merchants felt business was so poor they could not advertise, the article stated

that not advertising in a paper that reached 90 percent of residents in their trade territory allowed merchants who advertise in Minot, Garrison, and Ryder to get the business. He expressed concern about ceasing publication because it meant breaking the contract with those merchants who were honoring the contract. He asked the readers to let the editor and the merchants know if they wanted the paper to continue.[303]

The March 17 issue reported that Ben Scott[304] was an unsuccessful candidate for Assessor of Douglas in the March 15 election and R.G. Miller, Ryder Village Clerk, reported the Village had $5,000 in bonded indebtedness and no outstanding warrants. The *News* published the Village's financial statement as of March 8, 1932[305] and announced that Ward county was designated one of 15 North Dakota counties to receive free wheat for the needy. It was to be distributed as flour for people and feed for livestock.

Items of Local Interest on March 24 disclosed that a contingent of Underwood, North Dakota businessmen were Ryder visitors. This visit spelled the beginning of the end for the Whipples in Ryder. Underwood had no newspaper and its merchants wanted one. This issue had far fewer display advertisements than the previous months. It was becoming more apparent that Ryder and Douglas were not going to support a newspaper.[306]

More legal notices of mortgage foreclosures and chattel sales were in the March 31 issue. The largest amount was $387.35 but times were so bad the owner's couldn't raise the funds to save their land or equipment. The April 7 issue reported that the *News* was one of 189 weekly newspapers in the state. Their combined circulation totaled 301,317. The state's eight daily papers had a circulation of 80,434. This issue also included the required annual statement of ownership of the paper. Blaine certified that as of April 1 he was the publisher, editor, managing editor and business manager, that LeRoy Gilbertson of Grand Forks was the owner, and that Charles F. May of McVille, North Dakota had a security interest in the paper of 1% or more. No circulation information was included.[307] Because of a lack of advertising the April 14 issue was reduced to four pages tabloid size.[308]

Ryder schools advertised for students for the 1932-33 school years in the May 19 issue. The ad listed general and cultural courses, time, class, and instructor, and included an admission application form. A news article said the 1932-33 curriculum was strengthened by replacing a commercial arithmetic and high algebra course with trigonometry, offering a new literature course of advanced reading for seniors, and a second year music course to teach music reading the first semester and elementary harmony the second. The issue also contained a full page ad of Congratulations to

the Class of '32.[309]

Blaine was appointed Marshal of the Day and head of the Memorial Day celebration.[310] He was also elected Secretary-Treasurer of the Ryder Community Club at its annual meeting June 3. That he was reaching the end of the line in subsidizing the Ryder and Douglas publications was apparent in a front page article in the June 2 issue. Many subscribers were in arrears. He reminded them it takes money to operate a newspaper and asked them to check their mailing labels which showed when their subscription ended. He said if they would pay their subscription – and they could pay as little as 50 cents for three months – enough money would be received to buy paper, ink, and other supplies used in printing the paper.[311]

To add to the woes of the depression, the area was hit with a grasshopper infestation in June. Trustees from eight south Ward county Townships met in Ryder to plan a campaign to get rid the of the pests. Ben Daggett, County Agent, said the County Commission would furnish sufficient poison and molasses for two tons of mix if the townships provided the bran, mixed the ingredients, and distributed the poisoned feed to their farmers.[312]

The issue of June 23 carried four pages of editorial material on the forthcoming primary. Governor George F. Shafer, candidate for U.S. senate, was scheduled to speak at a Ryder luncheon June 27. Blaine was the master of ceremonies. Shafer was opposing the incumbent Gerald P. Nye. The *News* endorsed the Independent Republican ticket over the Non Partisan League (NPL) ticket. The Independent candidate for Governor, State Sen. Frank H. Hyland, opposed former Attorney General William Langer of the NPL.[313] The issue was full of political advertisements for both state and county candidates.[314]

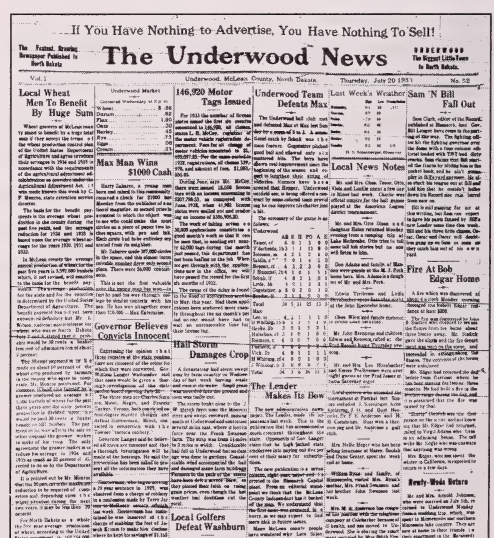
Ryder voted for the NPL candidates by substantial margins and elected Blaine a Republican Precinct Committeeman by an overwhelming margin. Only 11 Democratic votes were cast. Blaine noted that "Ideal weather prevailed on election day in spite of the fact that several candidates were snowed under." Blaine and Pearl, accompanied by Mr. and Mrs. L. S. Officer, spent Friday June 22 in Minot celebrating Blaine's 49st birthday.[315]

The Rode Motor Co. was placed in receivership in early July and Blaine published his last issue of the combined *Ryder-Douglas News* July 7, 1932. It was a 4-page issue.[316] The two main stories in the July 14 issue reported that Harold O. Anderson was the new editor and manager and that the Blaine Whipple family had moved to Underwood where he was launching a new paper.

Blaine was induced to move to Underwood in McLean county by a number of its merchants who understood the importance of a weekly newspaper to the town. While one of the smaller towns in the county,[317] its Main street housed a goodly number of progressive merchants who wanted the farmers to shop in Underwood instead of Garrison, Max, Washburn, or Turtle Lake, all much larger towns. In March of 1932, a group of Underwood businessmen led by Lewis J. Vonder Heide, owner of the Outlaw Trading Post Co., and I. Kreiteiger, proprietor of the I.G.A. store, went to Ryder and convinced Blaine that Underwood was a more fertile town to publish a newspaper.[318]

As an inducement, Vonder Heide, owner of the Outlaw Trading Co., prepaid for enough advertising to provide Blaine the cash to purchase the printing equipment. In addition, Vonder Heide signed a contract for additional advertising which the bank accepted as collateral allowing Blaine to borrow additional funds for operating costs.[319]

In a September 1, 1987 interview Sylvester Vonder Heide, son of Lewis and then proprietor of the Outlaw Trading Co., told the author that "inducing Blaine Whipple to come to Underwood was the greatest thing his father did for the town. Not only did we get Blaine and Pearl Whipple, who soon became our most outstanding citizens, we also got Q. T. (Quarantine Titanic) Bottleson." Q.T. was a fictional local farmer created by Blaine. "Q. T.," Vonder Heide said, "soon became the most talked about person in the county. Farmers flocked to town for Wednesday trade days (a promotion started by Blaine) just to see him and to hear him talk. Underwood area people loved Blaine Whipple. He made the depression more bearable."



If You Have Nothing to Advertise, You Have Nothing To Sell!

The Fastest Growing Newspaper Published in North Dakota

The Underwood News

The Biggest Little Town in North Dakota

Vol. 1 — Underwood, McLean County, North Dakota, Thursday, July 20 1933 — No. 52

Local Wheat Men To Benefit By Huge Sum

Wheat growers of McLean county stand to benefit to the extent of $1,000,000 if they accept the terms of the wheat production control plan figured out by officials of the United States Department of Agriculture and sign a contract to their acreage in 1934 and 1935 to conform with the terms of the allotment of the agricultural adjustment act, which was made known this week by C. W. Warren, state extension service director.

The basis for the benefit payments is the average wheat production in the county during the past five years, and in accordance with the reduction for 1934 and 1935 is based upon the average production for the years 1928, 1931 and 1932.

In McLean county the average production for the past five years is 1,370,000 bushels which, if not viewed, will amount to the basis for the benefit payments to farmers for Mr. Warren, unless assistance from persons who own in North Dakota, Minnesota, Montana, Wyoming and Canada for 1934 is received, the cost of allowances on wheat will amount to 30 cents per bushel.

The 30 cent payment to be given to each farmer will amount to 30 cents per bushel on the difference between the wheat crop produced by farmers in the county and the average of 1,370,000 bushels mentioned. For instance, if each farmer had a 30 cent payment on the average of 1,000 bushels of wheat for the past five years, and his crop for 1934 was reduced to 500 bushels, he would be paid 30 cents a bushel, amounting to $150. The payment is to be effective in the case of those who signed the contracts to make up the crop. The wheat allotment plan is figured to reduce the acreage in 1934 and 1935 as much as 20 percent if required to do so by the Department of Agriculture.

It is pointed out by Mr. Warren that the 30 cents per bushel payment is figured on the basis of 70 cents per bushel, the average wheat price for the past five years, and if the wheat sells for more than 70 cents per bushel the payment will be less.

In conference with Warren with officials representing more than 60 counties were: of Manitoba, Minnesota, South Dakota and the state Legislature of Saskatchewan. Each of these states were present at the meeting.

That the cost of local allotment system will not be high is pointed out by Warren, who says that the cost of the allotment system in Minnesota, Montana, Wyoming, South Dakota and the state Legislature of Saskatchewan. Each of these states were present at the meeting.

That the cost of local allotment system will not be high is pointed out by Warren, who says that the cost of the allotment system in Minnesota, Montana, Wyoming, South Dakota and the state Legislature of Saskatchewan. Each of these states were present at the meeting.

Max Man Wins $1000 Cash

Harry Zalazer, a young man here and raised in the community of Max, was awarded a check for $1000 Monday from the president of the United States, Franklin D. Roosevelt, as a result of which he signed up to see who could raise the most acreage of wheat per person in his own square, with pen and ink. Harry Zalazer, a young man here and raised in the community of Max, was awarded a check for $1000 Monday from the president of the United States, Franklin D. Roosevelt, as a result of which he signed up to see who could raise the most acreage of wheat per person in his own square, with pen and ink. Harry Zalazer, a young man here and raised in the community of Max, was awarded a check for $1000 Monday from the president of the United States, Franklin D. Roosevelt, as a result of which he signed up to see who could raise the most acreage of wheat per person in his own square, with pen and ink.

Governor Believes Convicts Innocent

Expressing the opinion that three convicts of the state penitentiary, who have been serving terms which they were convicted of the murder of the Bottineau, Mrs. Bridget Darnell, is convinced of the innocence of the three men, Governor Langer has announced that he will grant them a pardon.

Hail Storm Damages Crop

A destructive hail storm swept the Wilton Lodge Wednesday and Thursday, damaging crops to the extent of thousands of dollars, according to reports received here.

The storm broke over the district from the northwest, and was accompanied by heavy rain and a high wind. Considerable damage was done to the crops in the vicinity of Wilton, Lodge Grass, Max, Regan, and Pleasant Valley, according to reports received here.

146,920 Motor Tags Issued

For 1933 the number of license plates issued the first six months of the year totaled 146,920, according to the motor vehicle registration department. Fees in charge of motor vehicles amounted to $1,470,697.20. For the same six months of 1932, registrations, at about 120,000, brought fees of less than $1,000,000.

During June, says Mr. McCarthy, there were 25,000 licenses issued with an income amounting to $250,000, as compared with June, 1932, when 10,000 licenses were issued and only $100,000 in revenue was collected. Motor vehicle registrations for the first month of the present year totaled 30,000, with $300,000 in fees collected.

The cause of the delay in issuing the 1933 motor vehicle licenses, he says, is the delay in the passage of the new law. Had these applications been received in January, as they usually are, the state would have had its money much earlier than it did.

Hail Storm Damages Crop

A destructive hail storm swept the Wilton Lodge Wednesday and Thursday, damaging crops to the extent of thousands of dollars, according to reports received here.

The storm broke over the district from the northwest, and was accompanied by heavy rain and a high wind. Considerable damage was done to the crops in the vicinity of Wilton, Lodge Grass, Max, Regan, and Pleasant Valley, according to reports received here.

The Leader Makes Its Bow

The new administration paper, the Leader, made its appearance last week. The paper is published this week by the Leader Publishing Company, with offices in the Underwood building. The paper is said to be a Democratic publication that will support the administration of President Roosevelt. The paper is published by the Leader Publishing Company, with offices in the Underwood building.

Local Golfers Defeat Washburn

Seven Washburn golf addicts were defeated by seven Underwood golfers on the local course last Sunday afternoon by the score of 7 to 0. The Washburn players were: [illegible]

Special School Election

A special election has been called for the Underwood school district for the purpose of voting on a proposition to issue bonds in the amount of $[illegible] for the erection of a new school building. The election will be held on the school house on [illegible].

Underwood Team Defeats Max

The Underwood ball team defeated Max at Max last Sunday by a score of 5 to 3. Good catch by Schick was the feature. Carlson, Carpenter pitched good ball and allowed only six scattered hits. The boys have shown real improvement since the beginning of the season and will get to bigger their league, ed.

Local News Notes

Mr. and Mrs. Chas. Peters Otto returned last Sunday from a visit to Minot last week. Charles was down to look after some property he owns on the corner of the block.

Mr. and Mrs. Chas. Green, a son, Monday at the John Lavender home.

Chas. Wire and family motored to Max Sunday.

Mr. John Brennan and children of Edna and Raymond, called on Paul Ronald's home Thursday evening.

Mr. and Mrs. Lee Hershberger and James Thompson were over night guests at the Fred home on Monday evening.

Underwood was crowded last Saturday as Farmers' Day. Sales are reported. A barbeque, lots of fun, and good time.

Mrs. P. F. Anderson and Mrs. Hansen. Hope was a business visitor on Monday.

Mrs. Nellie Singer who has been visiting relatives and friends here and Dunn County spent the week with friends.

William Rose and family, of Washburn, visited Mrs. Rose's mother, Mrs. Frank Swanson and her brother John Swanson this week.

Mr. M. E. Sandall returned Friday from Minneapolis where he had taken several weeks in a hospital. Although he had several pounds in weight he says that he feels much better.

Special School Election

A special election has been called for the Underwood school district for the purpose of voting on a proposition to issue bonds in the amount of $[illegible] for the erection of a new school building. The election will be held on the school house on [illegible].

Last Week's Weather

	Max	Min	Rain
Sunday	92	58	
Monday	90	58	
Tuesday	92	60	
Wednesday	94	62	
Thursday	96	64	
Friday	92	60	
Saturday	90	58	

H. D. Schoenberger, Observer

Underwood Baseball Standings

	AB	R	H	PO	A	E
Turner, cf	4	1	1	1	0	0
Wachenbe, 1b	3	1	1	13	0	0
Swanson, ss	4	0	1	1	3	0
Smith, c	3	0	1	4	1	0
Carpenter, p	3	0	0	0	3	0
Hansen, 2b	3	0	0	2	2	0
Total	30	5	11	25	13	0
Max						
Lee, ss	4	1	1	1	3	0
Schick, 1b	4	1	2	10	0	0
Nordbo, 2b	3	1	1	0	1	0
Hutchen, cf	3	0	0	1	0	0
Hansen, c	3	0	0	6	1	0
Tallacre, c	4	0	0	1	0	0
Vick, lb	3	0	0	0	0	0
Whitney, rf	3	0	0	1	0	0
Nilsson, p	2	0	0	0	1	0
Total	29	3	4	20	6	0

Sam 'N Bill Fall Out

Sam Clark, editor of the Record, published at Bismarck, last Carl Bill Langer have come to disagreeing of the way. The fighting editor hit the fighting governor over the fence with a four ounces adjustable wrench. Bill Langer, it is said, has taken the full share of the blame for striking him in the head with a wrench, and will appear in Richland postmaster, he allegedly struck the mayor on a 3.2 beer party, but he couldn't bother down to Bismarck to appear in court.

Bill is still pouring for air at this writing, but Sam can report it is here he says issued by Bill's physician that he will soon be able to be up and around. Both editor and governor have been given a severe warning by their physicians that they must watch their step or they may catch him out of his own.

Fire At Bob Edgar Home

A few when was discovered at the home of Bob Edgar, prominent farmer. The extension of the home was damaged.

Mr. Edgar had returned the day before from a trip to Minot, and had just entered the house. Some smoke. He had built a fire in the stove to warm the room, and, after it is presumed that the fire was extinguished by the

Shorty' Hayward was the Goat

Shorty Hayward was the goat on the St. Edgar ball incident, and was called by Virgil Adams who, true to his word, administered the goat while Mr. Knight was unconscious on the floor.

Mrs. Knight, who was nearby, the goat to the hospital where it was given a treatment.

Weds Helen Brown

Mr. and Mrs. Donald Johnson, who were married on July 5th, at the Underwood Methodist parsonage, are now residing in the Albert Johnson building. Mrs. Johnson was formerly Miss Marion Wagner.

Wheat Falls 16 Cents Wednesday

After reaching $1.02 a bushel at the local elevator, wheat took a tumble of 16 cents per bushel on the market opening on Wednesday of this week, when it reached the low mark of [illegible].

Mr. Tweeter reports a number coming from the John Brunette [illegible] Mountain, where he spent several days during the week-end. Mr. Tweeter says that there have been many of these fine streams in many parts of the state, but that in fact they were no longer as a preferred site as to what streams to locate them home. So he says he spent a very pleasant week-end at the lake.

{ 592 }

Underwood Postmaster, introduced me around town and all of the old timers wanted to shake the hand of Q. T. Bottleson's son.

Anything with the tenacity of life as country newspapers must have a real meaning and perform a genuine function because subscribers do not support weekly newspapers that do not set their claws deep into their common life and hang on. The editor knows nearly everybody in town. Blaine believed the country newspaper should print all the little things possible. What's the protective tariff or the Chinese-Japanese question to L.J. Vonder Heide compared with the price of wheat, he would ask.

That's why he wrote about the big pumpkins raised by Miles Steele, that Emily Jasperson had the first ripe tomatoes of the season, about the meetings of the Bridge Club, who visited the Koenigs and the Eisemans, and the goings-on of Q.T. Bottleson. His newspapers were full of just such personal news and on publication day subscribers watched eagerly for the Postman.

Blaine was editor, publisher, compositor, pressman, advertising and subscription solicitor. If he couldn't get cash for a subscription he would take a chicken, or the making of a quilt, or a packet of circus tickets. He helped set and distribute the type, make up the forms, ink the rollers, print the paper,[320] oversee the assembling, folding, and addressing,[321] sold advertising[322] and job printing, and did much of the job printing, all the while smoking one cigarette after another. He wrote the editorials, the obituaries, the main local news, a weekly column, attended City and School Council meetings, political meetings, and was always much in demand for speeches at various celebrations. He was even called on to conduct funerals.

Volume 1, No. 1, Blaine's first issue of the *Underwood News*, was published July 28, 1932.[323] Since he started without subscribers, copies were sent to hundreds of addresses in McLean county. The main headline on page one was:

UNDERWOOD HAS OWN NEWSPAPER

The *Underwood News* is now a reality. We hope that you will like it and that it will become a regular visitor to your home each week hereafter. We believe that a newspaper will succeed in Underwood. The town is surrounded by some of the best farm land in North Dakota. It has a live bunch of businessmen and well stocked mercantile establishments which makes it an excellent trading center. Heretofore the Underwood merchants have been handicapped because they had no medium to advise their customers of the bargains on their well-stocked shelves. The *News* will overcome this handicap.

We are proud of our list of advertisers in this first issue.[324] We know if they continue to advertise consistently their business will increase in spite of financial conditions. This paper gives them this opportunity and we feel sure they will continue to take advantage of it.

We have no particular axe to grind. We plan to print the news of the town and the county in an interesting manner. If we lean one way or another in politics, it will be because we think the best interests of the community will be served. If we can be of assistance in building up the entire community, we shall be satisfied. **Blaine Whipple.**[325]

Arthur E. "Bud" Scott of Douglas was hired to oversee the printing department;[326] Ray Gergen to solicit subscriptions which were $1.50 annually and 75¢ for six months. The price increased to $2.00 August 25. The first issue was four pages with no boilerplate and the pages were six columns wide. In addition to Underwood, news from Butte, Byersville, Coleharbor, Falkirk, Russo, and Snow Township was included. The first Q. T. Bottleson story appeared on page 1. It was about Q.T. discovering the fluid which causes the curl in a pig's tail. He expected to open a factory in Underwood and make a fortune selling a permanent wave fluid to beauty parlors throughout the country. A "Want Ad" column was started beginning with the August 4 issue.

The Whipple family had quite a scare their third week in Underwood. Daughter Patricia, 3 FI , was struck by a truck as she was crossing Main street Monday August 1. She suffered several cuts on the head and face but fortunately was not seriously injured.[327]

Underwood had three churches: St. John's Lutheran, Lorenz G. Weber, pastor; St. Bonaventure Catholic, Father William Wigger, pastor; and the M.E. church, F.W. Gress, minister. The Whipples were members of St. Bonaventure. It also had a private library operated by Edward Erickson which closed after his death in June 1932. In August the News began a campaign to find some group or individual to re-open the library. Blaine suggested some other town would receive the benefits of "this valuable collection of approximately 8,000 volumes" if Underwood wasn't interested. Garrison had expressed strong interest in getting them.

When it became apparent that no individual or group in Underwood was willing to assume the care of and the bookkeeping required to issue them, Blaine announced in April 1933 that the News office would house the books and provide the necessary bookkeeping for them to be circulated. He established a rental charge of two cents per copy for a 14-day period.[328]

The first promotion Blaine talked the merchants into was Wednesday

Trade Days with the stores open at night. This augmented the traditional Saturday shopping day which brought most farmers into town. Q. T. Bottleson was a regular speaker on Wednesday evenings and it wasn't long until the Wednesday night crowds equaled Saturday's turnout which resulted in increased business for the merchants. The final Wednesday Trade Day for the year 1932 was October 5 with an all-day celebration, including contests with prizes given by the business community.[329] Following is an example of the Bottleson personality:

EX-SEA CAPTAIN WILL SPEAK HERE WEDNESDAY

A real treat is in store for the people of Underwood and vicinity when they gather for the final weekly get-together next Wednesday. After a great deal of persuasion on the part of former sea Captain Q. T. Bottleson, the Committee in charge of arrangements finally consented to allow Commodore Bottleson to address the assembled populace on the evening of October 5. Bottleson says he will talk regardless of the direction of the wind, or the condition of the weather.

Just what he will talk about has not been finally decided. He may decide to tell of his experience in the Arctic Ocean, which he explored in an open row boat, wearing a palm beach suit and a pair of ear muffs. It was on this trip the famous explorer pushed more than 200 miles north of the North Pole. Or he may tell of the political forces that brought to bear, which finally caused him to withdraw as a candidate for President of the German Republic, and which resulted in the election of Von Hindenburg. Or perhaps he will tell how the pygmies of central Africa make dill pickles without the use of either dill or cucumbers. Whatever he talks about will not be worth listening to.

Other than offering these three suggestions, Mr. Bottleson will say no more at this time. It appears he is in the midst of a promotion scheme that will make him extremely wealthy and will doubtless double the population of Underwood within the next few weeks. So of course he cannot be bothered at this time with a speech which is still a week away.

Mr. Bottleson's latest promotion is an oat meal mine he found on his farm. He says the vein is only four feet underground and can be mined by the "strip" method. Mr. Bottleson says this is the first time that an oat meal mine has been found north of the Mason and Dixon Line and his discovery will doubtless change the entire future of North Dakota.

Beginning with the issue of August 18 he published "The Underwood

Directory" so his readers would know where to go when they had problem or an issue to discuss. In addition to the various public entities he included the leadership of the American Legion.[330] The *News* began sponsoring a one hour radio program on station KLPM Minot. The first program on Saturday October 1 promoted the final Trade Day of the year. It included a variety of entertainment provided by local talent with Q.T. as master of ceremonies. It also benefitted the merchants whose advertisements in the *News* for that week were highlighted. The program ran for several weeks.[331]

Blaine was among thousands of people in Bismarck Saturday October 8 to watch Gov. George F. Shafer and U.S. Vice President Charles Curtis lay the cornerstone for the state's new $2 million capitol building.[332] Underwood was hit with a sleet storm Tuesday October 18 which turned into a blizzard on the 20th. Power lines were down, telephone and telegraph service discontinued, and the southbound train failed to arrive. It was a week before the north bound bus service was restored.[333]

Underwood voters favored Franklin D. Roosevelt, the Democratic nominee for President, over the incumbent Republican Herbert Hoover in the 1932 general election. The vote was 159 (63.6%) to 91 (36.4%). They also voted 127-126 to repeal prohibition and 155 to 70 to reduce the salaries of state officials. There were 270 votes cast and Q.T. Bottleson received all but 269 for the office of President. While not a candidate the *News* received 20 write-in votes for official paper of McLean county. The editor advertised that he would trade a year's subscription for a Thanksgiving turkey.[334]

Q.T. Bottleson, prominent boxing expert, had a ringside seat at the recent heavyweight championship fight and wrote the following account of the fracas:

> Roughhouse Roosevelt of New York scored a knockout over Honeyboy Hoover in the fourth round of a finish fight at the Public Auditorium on November 8. A few scattered boos greeted the fall of champion Hoover, but the rank and file hailed the new title holder as a boon to a stagnant sport.
>
> "Aw, that guy's nothin' but a hollow shell. I could lick him myself," said Al Smith, one of Roosevelt's sparing partners. Smith was knocked out by Hoover in 1928, but always claimed someone hit him from behind with a rough hewn piece of religious bigotry. He had trained hard since that time and was thought by many as being the logical contender for a return bout, but the big boys selected Roosevelt, and Smith became his sparring partner.

ROUND ONE. They entered the ring last summer. Hoover wore elephant trunks held up by a Ford cotter pin, instead of the corn belt he formerly wore. Roosevelt wore knickerbockers and waved to senators Johnson and Norris and North Dakota's congressional candidate Bill Lemke who had deserted the champion's camp, claiming he had a glass jaw. Charles Curtis and John Garner, substitute main bout principals, hid behind opposite ring posts and made faces at each other.

At the bell, Roosevelt rushed from his corner and swung an acceptance speech from the floor, Hoover sparred briskly at a red enemy within our gates. Roosevelt's blow caught the champion in the District of Columbia and knocked him against the ropes. Disregarding advice from the ringside, Hoover jumped on his bicycle and succeeded in finishing the round.

ROUND TWO. Party workers labored hard during the interval between rounds and Hoover came back fresh amid cries of "two chickens in every pot." He rushed into a clinch and began swinging tariff rights and left, but they were high. The contender countered with the same blow only lower. Failing to get any where with this, they both seized prohibition planks which they were swinging wildly at the bell.

ROUND THREE. Both boys came out fast. Honeyboy fainted and the spectators cheered. Later it was discovered that the spelling was bad and he only "feinted," whereupon Roughhouse dropped his guard for a minute and the champion shot a right across to the region of Des Moines, and the challenger clinched, holding on till the end of the round. During the interval, the Roosevelt handlers applied a bottle marked "Farm Relief" to their man's nostrils and he rallied quickly.

ROUND FOUR. Apparently sensing his only chance was to stay the limit, the champion began backing away relying on his tariff left jab and to occasionally lunge forth with a cry of "Moratorium." This caused his blows to act as a boom-a-rang, and to bounce back on his own nose. Almost before Honeyboy had a chance to recover from his own blow, the challenger landed a hard right loaded with prosperity to the region of the fireside. The champ sprawled to the canvass and lay perfectly still while the referee counted 472 electoral votes. When the count reached this number it occurred to the spectators to inquire into the identity of the referee whom some one finally noticed was wearing a mask. This caused Mr. John C. Public to leap into the ring and pull the mask off disclosing the referee was none other than the Forgotten Man.[335]

February 1933 started off with a blizzard which struck Underwood Sunday the 5th and didn't end until Tuesday morning with the temperature 40 below.[336] Train service was halted and rural mail carriers were not making deliveries. As a consequence the paper was reduced to tabloid size and only contained four pages.

In an editorial supporting newly elected Republican Governor William Langer (the head-line: WHO IS GOVERNOR?), Blaine pointed out that all other states with gubernatorial races elected Democrats. He scolded the "big guns of the Nonpartisan League" (its Executive Committee) who were making demands on Langer and pointed out the people, not the Executive Committee, elected Langer.[337] He opined that the voters would continue to back the Governor in preference "to a Committee composed of politicians appointed by a few more politicians."[338]

Blaine was featured speaker at the PTA meeting in March which elected Pearl to the Program Committee and Blaine to the Publicity Committee. The paper announced it would trade subscriptions for anything of equal value.[339] Following an examination by J. M. Shriek, Deputy Bank Examiner, the First Security Bank opened in early April.[340]

A new creamery opened in Underwood on April 8[341] and 10 inches of welcome snow fell on the 9th. It was welcome because of the additional moisture it produced for the 1933 crop year. Talking pictures finally arrived in Underwood. The first picture was a King Vidor production starring Delores Del Rio in *Bird of Paradise.* The movies were to be shown at the City Hall on Saturdays beginning June 3 with one showing at 9 p.m. The late starting time gave farmers time to do their weekly shopping before the show.[342]

While Underwood had electricity and telephone service it had no public water or sewer system.[343] An article in the June 22 issue described "Kitchens of Today and Yesterday" displayed at the Chicago World's Fair. Yesterday's kitchen was in the Whipple home: a wood-burning stove, hand water pump, ice box, slop pail under the sink, laundry bench and large metal tubs. Visitors to the Fair saw a demonstration of television at the Hudson-Essex Television Theater in the Electrical Building.[344] The paper also announced that postage rates would drop from three to two cents July 1. The Outlaw Trading Co. Advertised a variety of specials while Schemp's Store advertised meat specials.[345] The paper also ran a display ad: WANTED. Several more good rains! Apply at *News* office or any farmer in this vicinity.[346]

Governor Langer defended his proposal for an administration newspaper in a speech to several hundred people attending the Underwood Nonpartisan League Club picnic. The Governor was asking state employees to give five percent of their annual salary to support the paper "so people

might know the truth about your administration." The paper, named *The Leader*, was launched in mid July with Langer's critics claiming he "highjacked state employees" to buy subscriptions.[347] Blaine wondered editorially why Lars Siljan, editor of the Garrison *Independent*, had not been named editor. He said Siljan would go all the way in a fight for League principles and answered his own question when he further said Siljan "would stand hitched if someone tried to tie his hands." Interestingly, both Lars and Blaine became editors of the *Leader* in the early 1940s.[348]

A devastating hail storm swept the Underwood area Wednesday July 12. It continued several miles east leaving waste and ruin in its wake. Small grain was pounded to the ground, corn was badly cut, and wind damaged many farm buildings.[349] The News sponsored a census of the town in August which showed the population as 593, up 103 from the 1930 census (21.5%). This made it the fourth largest town in the county behind Garrison, Wilton, and Washburn. Dr. E. J. Larson returned to Underwood and set up practice with Dr. F. E. Anderson. They outfitted operating rooms at the Underwood Hotel and were doing general surgical work and caring for patients following surgery. School opened September 4 with the largest enrollment in its history: 110 in high school and 182 in the grades.[350]

The Whipple's fourth child, Richard Earl, was born at 10:45 p.m. September 12.[351] He weighted six pounds eight ounces. It was a difficult breech birth and caused a 24-hour delay in the publication date of the *News*. In coming to a decision on the name, Blaine wrote in a front page article: "Dad wants to call him Caesar Napoleon; grandma telegraphed instructions to name him Archibald Llewellyn, auntie leans to Ronald Coleman, Q.T. Bottleson suggests Plenty. Mother hasn't said much, so we presume we will compromise on Richard."[352]

In an effort to help farmers keep their livestock, the Minneapolis Crop Production Loan Office offered feed loans for drought, storm, and otherwise devastated areas. The loan maximum was $250.00 which was expected to feed 20 head of cattle, 50 sheep, six horses, and five brood sows. The purpose of the loan was to preserve foundation stock. The loan was due August 31, 1934 and the security was a first chattel mortgage on the livestock. H.J. Becker, Underwood farmer, was unwilling to sell his wheat at the going rate so he drove to Grand Forks and exchanged 71 bushels and 10 pounds for 2,000 pounds of wheat flour, 200 pounds of graham flour, and two sacks of whole wheat breakfast food.[353]

Blaine was elected Secretary-Treasurer of the McLean County Publishers and Printing Association at its annual meeting in Underwood October 6.[354] A "relief" road construction program was authorized for 10.5 miles of county road running west of Underwood. The road was to be

surfaced with gravel at an estimated cost of $16,000.00. Workers were to come from the county relief rolls and would receive relief credit at the rate of 45¢ and teams 25¢ an hour. The maximum work week was set at 30 hours. All work was to be done with man and team labor.[355] At the same time Governor Langer announced a wheat embargo for the state. He ordered all common carriers not to accept shipment for out-of-state points. Pointing out that 53¢ a bushel is unacceptable, the Governor said the embargo was an effort to make it possible for farmers "to maintain a livelihood and to stimulate commerce and trade among our people."[356]

Q. T. Bottleson shared his thoughts on the National Recovery Administration (NRA), created by the Roosevelt administration to coordinate and regulate activities in all industries. Its emblem, the Blue Eagle, appeared in factories and store windows everywhere as a symbol of labor and management's willingness to cooperate for the general well-being.

> We farmers are still strong for the NRA in spite of the fact every time we see the Blue Eagle in a window we turn as blue as the eagle itself. We proudly note the majestic manner in which he holds three bolts of lightening in one claw and a spare part for a Model T Ford in the other. Then a note of sadness strikes us when we notice that the poor bird only has one eye. Of course that eye has seen to it that food stuffs and overalls have gone up, and that eastern factory whistles are daily calling more and more workers to work which is a lot for one eye to see.
>
> Then as we tighten our belts another notch, so the kids can divide an extra slice of bread between them, and stoop over so the missus can attach another patch to the back of our pants, we think how nice it would have been if Mr. Roosevelt would have given him two eyes so he could turn one in our direction and see how patriotically we farmers are allowing the price of grain and beef and pork and cream and poultry to creep lower and lower while we watch the things we have to buy mount higher and higher. There is nothing that makes us more cheerful than seeing that good old Blue Eagle NRA emblem in store windows. It makes us so excited we forget about winter coming on, and the fact the kids will find December 25th crossed off the calender, and the whole darn family will probably starve to death sometime around Washington's birthday – providing they haven't frozen to death by Lincoln's birthday.
>
> We are going to continue to hooray for the NRA until the wolf creeps in through the front door and drags us out to the dump grounds. If we don't, someone is liable to say we are not a good Democrat and that we ought to go back to the old country where our ancestors came from more than 300

years ago. We just couldn't bear to be talked about like that. We much prefer to starve.[357]

Citizens of McLean county began a lobbying effort to convince Congress to authorize a dam on the Missouri river between Underwood and Garrison. In November a telegram containing 50 signatures, with Blaine's leading the list, was sent to Col. E.M. Waite, Federal Administrator of Public Works in Washington, D.C. The message: "Since July 11th, this community has had only 80/100 of an inch of rain. It is possible to correct this condition by adoption of the Missouri River Diversion Plan. We urge you to consider this plan carefully as it is an economic fact impossible to overlook." The *News* also published articles on how the Bonneville Dam on the Columbia river had stimulated business in that area and at Glasgow, Montana, largest town near the Ft. Peck dam site.[358]

Pat standing, Nancy and Sonny Whipple about 1933.

The issue of November 16 contained 20 pages and included all county wheat allotment applicants and amounts. However, payment was held up because the seeded acreage figures were 26 percent more than allocated and until applications conformed with government allotments, no one would be paid. It was mid December before the requested allotment conformed. While the allotments reduced wheat acreage, corn or other feed crops and summer fallow was allowed on that acreage.[359]

The Red Cross drive had collected $18.00 by the first week in December. Sixteen individuals, including Blaine, had contributed $1.00 each; eight contributed amounts ranging from 10 to 50 cents. The final week of December was cold with every night below zero (36 below was the coldest) and two days above zero (10 above was the warmest). The year ended with $400.00 being allocated to the Underwood School by the Civil Works Administration. The money was used to paint and varnish the school's interior and to paint the windows which hadn't been painted

since the building was built.[360]

The *News* began 1934 on an optimistic note. Its issue of January 4 extended GREETINGS TO 1934:

> The United States has come to the end of the most momentous year in its history. It has been a year in which vast and unprecedented experiments have been tried. It has been a year in which governmental problems and issues have, to a greater degree than at anytime since the World War, engaged the attention and interest of the public. It has been a year of trial and error, of achievement and failure. And finally, it has been a year of astonishing change.
>
> For the first time since government was founded, there has been sweeping legislation to control the wages and hours of the entire working population and the competive methods of industry. A dramatic and frankly experimental effort to solve the farmers' problems has become part of the law of the land. The largest public works program we have ever known has been inaugurated. Everything the present leaders of government believe would spur recovery has been done. Advisers who had no previous connection with politics have been called in and their plans have been adopted. The whole prestige of government and the immense power of the public treasury have been used whole heartedly and sometimes ruthlessly to bring us stability and prosperity. To say these efforts have been entirely successful is to close our eyes to facts. To say they have failed is unjust. They have fallen between these extremes.
>
> Men have been put to work by the hundreds of thousand – men who had little or no work for two or three years, and had been forced to suffer the ignominy of organized lies and themselves from utter privation. Wages have been appreciably raised and sweat shops encouraged by the depression have been eliminated. Child labor is on the wane. The Civilian Conservation Corps (CCC) camps, whatever their shortcomings, have served to provide thousands of young men with useful work under Army pay and discipline, and kept them away from debilitating and demoralizing influences.
>
> And in other fields, the Administration has much on which it can honestly pride itself. It has started a program whereby the transportation difficulties of the country may eventually be solved. It has done a good job in solidifying and safe-guarding the banking structure. It has attempted to protect the public against stock swindlers and fly-by-night promoters, who reaped a fine harvest in the boom years and even after. It has created a machinery seeking to encourage home financing and private construction.
> In summing up, the American people have the best of reasons for looking

> to the future with confidence. The country is still here. The land is no less fertile than it was. Its industries are no less great. Its individual spirit is no less potent. Its railroads, insurance companies, mines, banks, and farms will be doing business as usual when new forces and new changes, of which we know nothing now, have usurped center stage.

The need for water was the main story in the February 1 issue. The *News* printed a petition addressed to the President asking for favorable consideration and approval of the Missouri River Project. Readers were asked to clip it and get as many signatures as possible. Petitions were to be mailed to the News no later than February 28.[361]

McLean county had 13 wheat allotment districts for 1,939,802 bushels in 1934. The purpose of the allotment program was to reduce the wheat surplus. Farmers who participated were paid for leaving part of their fields idle. Only 161 McLean county farmers with 8,434 acres chose not to participate. The *News* consumed seven-and-a-half pages of agate type to print the names and allotments of county farmers.[362] Hog producers were also eligible for hog reduction payments of $5.00 per head on a number of hogs equal to 75 percent of their past average of market hog production.[363] The government also offered to buy approximately 10,000 head of McLean county cattle. Recipients had to endorse lien holder checks at the County Director's office before the payment could be released.[364]

Underwood streets were graveled in March with $1,000.00 received from Civil Works Administration (CWA) funds.[365] The town was also notified that it would receive federal funds for a Municipal Airport to be constructed on a 160 acre tract east of town.[366] The Airport was dedicated October 24 with the largest crowd in Underwood history on hand. Pilots from around the state attended and held races, did sky writing, stunt flying, bomb dropping, and dead stick landing. The public was offered flights at $1 per passenger and Blaine took Patricia, Robert, and Nancy up for their first ever flight.[367] Central Light & Power Co. of Harvey, N. Dak. purchased a half page ad in the News to advertise electric ranges at $70.75 including installation. A small down payment was required with $1.35 to be added to the buyer's electric bill for 45 months.[368]

ELECTED JUSTICE OF THE PEACE

Blaine was elected Justice of the Peace at the annual village election May 20. He defeated incumbent Jacob Koeing 51-40. The Township voted 36-34 to dissolve itself effective January 1, 1935 at which time the County Board of Commissioners will take over road matters. Doctors E. J. Larson and F. E. Anderson announced plans to construct a 20-room hospital and

clinic in Underwood. The 25 x 60 foot building was to include a spacious waiting room, operating room, X-ray room, sterilizing room, nurses quarters, private office space for the physicians, and an office for a dentist with the hope of luring one to Underwood.[369]

As in the past, Blaine devoted a lot of space to political happenings. He reported that the State Democratic Committee had started a weekly newspaper, *The New Era*, and that the *News* would receive $2.00 subscriptions on its behalf. He said "any good Democrat who wanted to keep up to date politically should subscribe." He attended the county NPL Convention in Garrison which unanimously endorsed Governor Langer's reelection and the State Convention in Valley City which also endorsed Langer. The State Convention sent a collect telegram to Senator Gerald P. Nye condemning and repudiating him for his "unwarranted and unfair attack on Governor Langer on the floor of the U.S. Senate." Nye responded with a collect telegram which the Convention refused to accept. When it was unable to control the Convention, the NPL Executive Committee called it "an outlaw organization" and announced the Regular Convention would be held in Jamestown March 8. That Convention nominated T. H. Thorsen of Grand Forks for Governor and chose *Onward Christian Soldiers* as its campaign song.[370] The Independent Voters Association (IVA) nominated State Senator Cain of Dickinson. These candidates were all seeking the Republican nomination for Governor.

Four of the seven newspapers in McLean county organized a Non Partisan League printers group. Blaine was elected Secretary. Previously only Garrison's *McLean County Independent* identified itself as a NPL paper. However, the editor-publishers in Max, Turtle Lake, and Underwood considered themselves to be progressives in politics and opposed the conservative platform adopted by the Jamestown Convention. The editors said they believed Langer was the best answer to get North Dakota out of its present economic fix.[371] Blaine was placed in charge of the NPL State Campaign Headquarters in Bismarck and named head of the State Publicity Committee.[372]

Langer was indicted by a Federal Grand Jury in April for the alleged solicitation of political funds from federal employees.[373] He and four associates were found guilty by a Federal Court Jury of conspiring to obstruct the orderly administering of an Act of Congress. The four week trial in Bismarck ended after nearly 60 hours of deliberation by the Jury.

Despite the verdict, the NPL continued to support Langer and its state headquarters issued this statement:

> As far as the NPL headquarters are concerned the verdict against Governor Langer and his associates will have no bearing on the campaign. The fight

> for the nomination of the League ticket will proceed along original plans. North Dakota voters are more concerned with whether enemies of the administration will be successful in their attempt to stop Governor Langer in his fight for the common people, and whether the various moratoriums and other beneficial measures taken by the Governor shall remain in full force and effect. The guilty verdict has not shaken people's confidence in the Governor. Let us get out a hail storm of Langer ballots June 27.[374]

Langer was renominated by an overwhelming majority.[375] Underwood cast its largest vote in history with 233 Republican and 67 Democrats voting. Langer came within two votes of doubling the combined votes of his opponents. Thomas H. Moodie of Williston won the Democratic nomination statewide and in Underwood.[376] By a 4 to 1 vote, the state's Supreme Court removed Langer from office in July. He resigned his nomination in August and the State Central Committee nominated his wife, Lydia, to replace him. Leaders of the IVA, a faction of the Republican Party, fought her nomination. The NPL Langer Defense Committee set up fund raising organizations in 49 counties to raise fund to appeal the conviction. They planned "Langer Dances" to be held statewide simultaneously.[377]

The McLean county Relief Ordinance removed males who reached the age of 15 from the relief rolls. This created a problem in Underwood when a fifth grade student reached the age of 15. His family was told he would be forced out of school and placed on a farm where he could work for his board and room. To keep him in school, the barber, Arnold Johnson, allowed him to take over his shoe shining stand. All monies were deposited in the bank to purchase necessary clothing and pay for his board at home. The *News* encouraged its readers to help the boy by buying a shine for a dime.[378]

George Stutsman, County Agricultural Adjustment Agent, announced in April that 30 percent of the county's crop acreage was infested with grasshopper eggs and predicted severe damage to 210,000 acres unless control action was taken.[379] By May, McLean county suffered the longest protracted spring drought in 50 years. Underwood teachers received their April salaries from the federal government. Seventeen schools in the county received aid.[380] Blaine began a subscription drive in May. In a page one, 2-column ad he offered a Remington portable typewriter (value $33.50) to everyone bringing in 20 new paid annual subscriptions and a $45.00 Remington for 45 subscriptions.[381]

Underwood was selected as one of 14 North Dakota towns to get a canning factory to process and can cattle purchased with federal funds. Women were to be hired for the work and paid by the relief agency. Three

or four men were to be hired for the heavier work. Funds were not available for equipment so the *News* published a "wish list" of needed equipment: wash boilers; two or three gas or oil stoves, a range if possible; hand sealers, dishpans, preferably a large vat; butcher knives; meat saws; frying pans; large kettles; measuring cups; pails; two or three large serving trays. The equipment did not need to be new and would be returned at the end of the season. The factory opened August 10 and employed five each in processing and canning. More than 1,600 tins of beef were canned by the middle of August and were to be given to families on relief that winter.[382]

Families who had received relief in the past, former servicemen, and old people were eligible for fresh meat August 16. The meat was disbursed at the old Security Bank building. Recipients were asked to bring wrapping paper or some other container. The amount issued was to last a day or two. Housewives who wanted to can for winter use could apply for a larger allotment. The distribution depot was to remain open until all government cattle had been shipped out of the community. Approximately 11,000 cattle remained in the county.[383]

A special school election to increase the tax levy was held August 14. Defeat would mean the District would no longer be eligible for federal aid which amounted to $2,000.00 in 1933. It passed 66 to 13.[384] The *News* went to eight pages August 23 adding new features including a serial, Zane Gray's latest novel, *Robbers Roost*; a news letter from Washington, D. C; and news from every part of North Dakota. Since many of the farm readers didn't take a daily paper, the motivation was to inform them on more than local matters. The editor reminded his readers that the subscription books are always open and if a potential subscriber didn't have cash, he was open to swap. He also announced the employment of Joe E. Eckert as a subscription solicitor. A Commercial Club with 21 charter members was organized in Underwood August 24. Its purpose was to boost the community. Dues were $3.00 annually, payable at 25¢ a month. It was to meet monthly and any citizen was eligible for membership. Blaine was elected Secretary-Treasurer.[385] He was also named one of five members of the County Republican Central Committee. The Committee made plans to hold from 15 to 20 school house meetings and a number of rallies between October and the November 6 election.[386]

The Underwood School opened September 3 with an enrollment of 259, including 105 in the high school. The average lineman on the high school football team (the Comets) was 156 pounds – much heavier than in 1933. One lineman weighted 170 pounds and two carried 165 pounds "of beef and muscle." Twenty-four children, including 5-year-old Pat Whipple, entered school for the first time. She was enrolled in Miss Orluck's first grade class.[387]

The McLean County Commission placed a cap on medical help for the needy in September. No fee was to exceed $20.00 in confinement cases with mileage limited to 20¢ each way for necessary travel. Authorization, except for absolute emergencies, was required in advance.[388] The County Relief Committee hired Miss Dagney Flagstad to direct people needing care to the doctor or dentist and to investigate cases for the Committee. Underwood's First Security Bank was closed and the receiver expected to pay a dividend of 10% of the amount on deposit.[389]

Underwood's first NPL rally of the campaign was held at the City Park on October 15. A crowd of almost 500 was on hand to hear Governor Langer speak on behalf of his wife's candidacy.[390] McLean county voted Republican for all federal, state, and all but one county office in the November election.[391] Mrs. Langer's margin over Democrat Thomas Moodie, a Williston editor, was 3,184 to 2,286. But the Democrats swept the state. Much to Blaine's chagrin, Underwood voters gave large majorities to all the Democrats. They also voted against Sunday movies 184 to 165.[392] His page 1 column with the heading SAILING SALT CREEK reflected his disappointment:

> Your disgusted correspondent is busily engaged in packing his satchel for an extended trip up Salt Creek. The journey will last at least two years. The seagoing tug, G.O.P. has been chartered for The trip. The old craft is pretty badly bunged up, but will probably be able to navigate the stagnant waters of the creek.
>
> The writer is only one of the crew, but does not expect to be over-worked on the cruise. A number of passengers of note have already booked passage, and several more may join in the excursion within a day or two. The undecided ones are simply waiting for the final count of votes before booking passage.
>
> Mr. And Mrs. Bill Langer came aboard late Tuesday night. They were accompanied by Lars J. Siljan and Art Bonzer, who will act in the capacity of personal body servants, and do all in their power to make the passage a pleasant one for the distinguished passengers. Just as they were walking up the gang plank, a portly gentleman rushed onto the deck dragging a large crate behind him. He called a couple of deck hands and asked them to deliver the crate to the Langer stateroom. A note, tacked to the crate, read: *Dear Bill: I am sending a couple of life preservers which may come in handy. I have used them with excellent results. Use them if the waters of the creek get too rough. Yours Lovingly,* Sam Clark.

> The crate was unpacked by Sen. Bonzer who discovered that while the so-called life preservers were built to the correct dimensions as far as shape and size was concerned, they were only immense rings of bologna.
>
> I hope to write to you from time to time giving you a description of our voyage.[393]

An ice rink was built on some vacant lots on main street by high school boys and the Boy Scout Troop. A Public Club Room was also planned for the winter months to be located in the basement of the old bank building. Charles Tauer contributed coal to keep it heated. Donations were requested to furnish the room with books, magazines, checker board, cards, cribbage boards, tables, chairs, etc.[394]

ACQUIRES SECOND NEWPAPER

Blaine ended 1934 by leasing the *Golden Valley American*, a weekly newspaper in Golden Valley, Mercer county, North Dakota. The paper had served the community for 25 years and was well equipped, including a Model 14 Merganthler linotype machine.[395] He said the acquisition will make it possible for the job printing department to handle larger and more complicated print jobs for Underwood and Golden Valley customers. Since the Underwood plant was without a linotype, he hoped much of the type used in the News could be set at Golden Valley.

He hired Paul Gress, an experienced linotype operator and printer, to be in charge at Golden Valley. He expected to spend no more than two days a week there. It is a 60 mile drive from Underwood when the Missouri river is crossed by ferry at Stanton. When the river froze, it was crossed by car.[396] W. V. Jackson, ferry operator, marked a safe crossing by stakes. His first issue of the *Golden Valley American* was published December 16.[397]

Blaine was on an Inquest Jury December 28 to determine if Corliss A. Leithe took his own life by suicide. Four witnesses testified at the hearing conducted by County Coroner A.W. Bartz. Following the testimony the Jury viewed the body and returned a verdict that the cause of death was poisoning. When they were unable to locate any relatives, village authorities had the body buried in Potter's Field on January 3. The Whipple family and Bud Scott motored to Minot Sunday December 30 to visit Ben Scott, father of Pearl and Bud, who was in the hospital with cancer.[398]

Nineteen-hundred-thirty-five began with a high of 3 below to a low of 33 below on January 2. For the week of January 20, Wednesday was the

only day the temperature climbed above zero: 12 above during the day and 1 below at night. A fire at the Hendricks and Landgren Garage broke out Sunday evening the 20th and in spite of the intense cold and a wind of almost blizzard proportion, firemen confined the blaze to the stock room. Though covered with ice, the firemen stuck to their posts.[399]

Pearl's father, Ben Scott of Douglas, died January 8 of stomach cancer at a hospital in Minot. Short funeral services were held at the Finnegan Funeral Home in Minot and the body was shipped to Hamel, Minnesota for burial at St. Anne's Cemetery January 11. Pearl and Blaine attended both services.[400]

Frank Windschitl opened a beer parlor on Main street in January and named it "The Palm Garden." It was decorated with a potted palm trees and featured nine spacious booths. It also had a lunch counter and kitchen. Miss Marie Shere, a graduate of a Bismarck beauty school, opened a Beauty Parlor in her home just off the Main street district. It featured all the latest equipment used in hair dressing including one of the latest model permanent wave machines. Underwood finally got a dentist when Dr. E. J. Hepper, a 1934 graduate of the Dental College at the U. of Nebraska, opened an office on February 3. Underwood merchants inaugurated a monthly open house Wednesday February 6. It was to be held the first Wednesday of the month and featured special sales and a free old-fashioned minstrel show at 2:30 p.m. at the City Hall followed by a free lunch. The minstrel show featured local talent and was produced and directed by Blaine who also acted as Interlocutor. He promised the shows would "make even the most down and out person in the community forget the depression."[401]

Blaine was among 35 Underwood men who donated money to purchase feed for starving game birds in the area. Relief workers who worked with their own teams received a wage increase of fifteen cents in February – from 10 to 25¢ per hour. The increase was caused by the high cost of animal feed and was to provide enough money to maintain the strength of the teams.[402] March came in with a roar as a good old fashioned snow storm, the heaviest of the winter, hit Underwood Monday March 4. County roads and the state highway were blocked. The Soo Line was forced to turn around at Garrison and return south.[403]

A Citizens' Caucus nominated Blaine and Jacob Koenig for Justice of the Peace. Blaine won with 56 percent of the vote at the town election March 19. Attorneys G. S. Lindell and Hugh McCulloch of Washburn represented the defendant in the first case he tried two days after being re-elected. He fined a stranger, who refused to give his name, $15.00 for disorderly conduct in July. Because of the extreme shortage of hay caused by the drought, North Dakota farmers were encouraged to feed their live-

stock wheat straw treated with molasses. Farmers buying 50-gallon drums of molasses, which would treat three ton of straw, were offered the straw at $5.00 a ton. It was believed the low grade roughage mixed with molasses would help keep horses strong for spring work.[404]

The Village Board adopted a Resolution in April asking citizens to take advantage of the free labor offered by the Federal Emergency Relief Administration (FERA) to construct sanitary pit privies.[405] The Board also purchased a new fire alarm siren which could be heard at a distance of three miles and FERA scheduled a free diphtheria and small pox immunization clinic in town for Wednesday May 1.[406] McLean county wheat farmers received $846,782.39 and corn-hog contract signers $34,279.43 up to March 1. The County Commissioners purchased 35 caskets from the State Penitentiary to bury indigents.[407]

The village contest for school children to draw a map of Underwood and vicinity was won by Delbert Soderquist who won the $2.00 first prize. Blaine, Rev. L.G. Weber, and W. W. Flatt were contest judges. Because the editor of the *Garrison Independent* was injured in an auto accident, Blaine edited and published that paper as well as the *News* the second two weeks of June. He also served as General Arrangements and Program Committee Chairman of the McLean county NPL picnic held June 9. Governor Walter Welford was featured speaker.[408]

The *News* editorially supported passage of the sales tax referred to voters. It passed both statewide and in Underwood where the vote was 99 to 83. As a result, the Underwood School District cut its levy to $5,500 from previous years levies which ranged from $10,000 to $12,000.[409] In August the town announced that 28 blocks of streets would be graded and surfaced with gravel. Men on the relief rolls as of May 1 were offered jobs at the rate of $32.00 a month for unskilled labor to be paid with federal government funds. Work was expected to last a year.[410]

The Village announced it would celebrate its 32nd anniversary September 25 with a parade, sporting events of various kinds, a baseball game, a wildlife and landscape slide show, an evening program featuring Thomas H. Moodie, former Governor and now WPA Director for North Dakota, and entertainment by the Pretzel Busters of Garrison. Blaine was named to the Finance and General Entertainment Committees. Despite cold and windy weather the celebration was well attended and featured a parade of more than four blocks in length.[411]

Oleet Ivereson advertised vegetables for sale at his farm home eight miles southeast of town. He was selling cabbage for 1.5¢, parsnips, onions, carrots, and beets for 2¢. The prices are per pound. He also offered potatoes at market price. Blaine was re-elected Secretary-Treasurer of the Commercial Club on October 4. Price of coal at the Falkirk mine ranged

from $1.50 to $1.75 per ton. A Gamble store opened in Underwood in October in the old Security Bank building.[412]

McLean county had 2,642 farms and ranches in 1935 with an average size of 464.6 acres and an average value of $7,069.00 ($15.21 per acre). The county had 4,539 wheat adjustment contracts in effect, more than any other county in the U.S. North Dakota was the state leader with 106,750; Kansas was second. The value of farm land and buildings in the county dropped from $26,269,322 in 1930 to $18,675,511 in 1935, a 29 percent decrease.[413]

Underwood's Gold Club announced it would present *The Antics of Andrew,* a 3-act farce that dealt with a husband who loved golf and a wife who loved bridge. Blaine was producer and director and played the lead. Pearl played Marie, the maid. It was presented on December 20 and 21. Cost was 25¢ for adults and 10¢ for children 12 and under. According to Blaine the actors arranged with local grocery stores not to sell eggs on the two days the play was to be given. It drew a fair crowd on Friday night and a near capacity house on Saturday. Cast members Krist Kjelstrup and Dr. E. J. Larson provided the cast a turkey dinner following the Friday night performance.[414]

The New Year began with the Social Security program taking effect January 1, 1936. It's initial cost was one percent on gross payroll. Blaine was elected a delegate to the NPL Convention to be held in Garrison February 25. The Convention supported former Governor William Langer 63 to nine for Governor Walter Welford. Underwood was hit by high winds and heavy snow February 16 which blocked roads in all sections of the state. The north bound bus reached the Village about 5:30 p.m. Sunday and was stalled there until Wednesday evening. The driver and his nine passengers stayed at the hotel and in private homes. Most residents were caught with a short coal supply and those in dire need were allowed to get coal from the supplies at Village Hall and the school. School officials said more than 300 ton of coal had been burned by mid-February which was more than the entire previous year.[415]

In March the State Health Department sponsored a Community Sanitation Project in Underwood. Toilets were built for anyone who furnished the material which cost about $20.00. Labor provided by the Works Projects Administration (WPA) was free. The goal of the Health Department was to prevent typhoid fever, and diarrhea and the toilets were built to control fly and vermin access.

Blaine and Pearl motored to Marmarth, North Dakota on June 22 (Blaine's birthday) on business. They returned the 24th. This trip resulted in the family leaving Underwood to start a newspaper in Marmarth based on published reports that oil had been discovered in the area. Blaine pur-

chased the printing equipment of the *Golden Valley American*[416] to start the Marmarth paper and sold the *News* to his brother-in-law Arthur E. "Bud" Scott who had worked for him since he founded the *News*.

When asked about their life in Underwood Pearl said they had a lot of fun there and became good bridge players. They were in group that met weekly in each other's home. The routine was to take a large water pail to the "beer joint," fill it, and bring it to the host home to play cards, drink beer, and end the evening with something to eat. She recalled there was a barn on their lot where pigeons would roost and how she taught Pat and Sonny[417] how to quietly sneak up and catch them. If they caught enough she would fry them for a meal.

She said her Saturday evening ritual was bathing the kids so they would be clean in church on Sunday. She would fill a tin washtub full of warm water that had been heated on the cook stove and bathe two at a time in the same water. The kids were never allowed to go to bed without being washed and she polished their shoes every night. Each child had two pair of shoes – one for everyday and one for Sunday. She said despite the depression and drought, the family lived well in Underwood.

Blaine published his last issue of the *News* on July 2, 1936. The main headline in the July 9 *News*.

ARTHUR E. SCOTT PURCHASES NEWS

A deal was consummated this week whereby Arthur E. Scott became the publisher of the *Underwood News.* Mr. Scott took charge of the paper at once. Blaine Whipple, publisher and founder of this paper, will move his family to Marmarth Slope Co., N. Dak. where he will establish a new publication to be known as the *Marmarth Messenger.* He has purchased the *Golden Valley American* and will move that paper to Marmarth.

Marmarth is now enjoying a small boom as a result of an oil strike by the Montana-Dakota discovery well on the Little Beaver dome of the Cedar Creek anticline, a few miles southeast of the town. This well, which lies 900 feet west of the N. Dak. State line, proved to be the largest producer in Montana when it flowed at the rate of 7,500 barrels per day.

Oil was found at the depth of 6,740 feet. Five-thousand barrel wells in this field should be common, oil observers said. A second well has been started half a mile north of the discovery well and five other wells are expected to be sunk within a very short time.

Mr. Scott needs no introduction to the people of this vicinity. He has been

employed as foreman of the paper since it was established in 1932. He is a graduate of the Douglas High School and was employed on a South Dakota paper before coming to Underwood. He will be assisted by his sister, Margaret Scott who will act as bookkeeper and local news writer.

In leaving Underwood the former publisher feels he has left the destiny of the News in capable hands inasmuch as the new publisher is acquainted with the policies of the News, knows the people of the community, and should be able to give his patrons a good small town newspaper. His mother, Mrs. Ben Scott of Douglas, expects to move to Underwood in the near future.

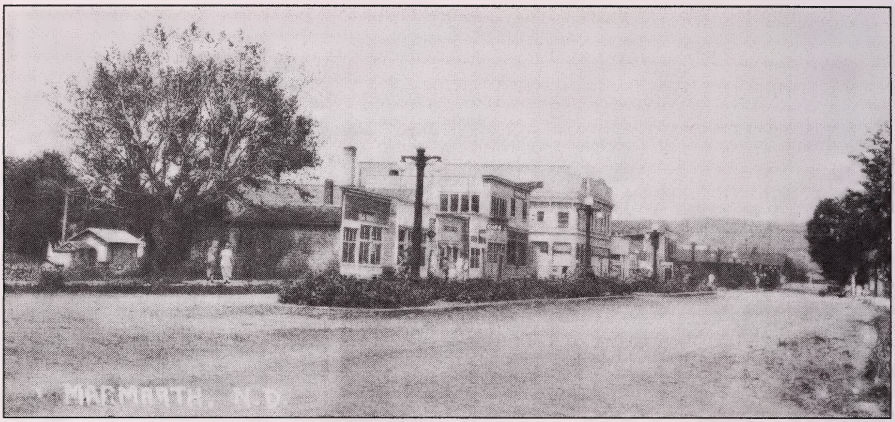
We hope the people of the community will continue to support "Bud" Scott as well as they did the former owner. He has invested all the money he could possible scrape together because of his faith in the future of the community and we feel positive he will work for the betterment of the town and vicinity.[418]

A farewell party was held at the J. E. Eckert home July 3 in honor of Pearl, who with the rest of her family left July 7 for Marmarth. Mrs. Nellie Scott and family moved to Underwood from Douglas the end of July into the home vacated by the Whipples.

THE OIL BOOM PROVED TO BE A BUST

The *Marmath Mail* was first published December 20, 1907 and continued through December 22, 1933 when it suspended publication. In 1936 the local merchants believed a major pool of oil was waiting to be tapped and in anticipation of growth and prosperity for the area pledged to support the new paper. This pledge of support induced Blaine to establish the *Messenger*. The first issue was off the press July 23, 1936. It was a 6-column, 8-page newspaper, including four pages of ready print. Annual subscriptions cost $2.00. The equipment included a linotype, a type setting machine he didn't have in Underwood.

Marmarth's population was between 600 and 700. It was located in the southwestern part of the state at the confluence of Little Beaver creek and the Little Missouri river and was a Division Point town of the Milwaukie Railroad. A. J. Eardling, Chairman of the Railroad, wanted Division Point towns to be named after family members and Marmarth was named for his granddaughter Margaret Martha Fitch. She was three or four at the time and when asked her name she answered "Mar-Martha." The town's name came from this little girls trying to pronounce her name.



Blaine Whipple founded the *Marmarth Messenger* in July 1936.

It was one of the most modern towns in the west with an inexhaustible supply of cold, soft water flowing through the water system. Public water and sewer was connected to almost every home and electricity and natural gas, the latter used for cooking and heating, was supplied by the Montana-Dakota Power Co. All the streets and many of the alleys were surfaced with gravel. Hundreds of feel of concrete sidewalk was poured in July.[419]

In a banner headline in his first issue, Blaine reported that the Discovery Well was 16 miles southwest of town on the Little Beaver Dome in the Tri-State Oil Basin. Oil men and other interested persons flocked to Marmarth because it was the nearest rail point to the well and local hotels, cafes, and other business places benefitted from their visits. "The magic of oil," he wrote put new life into the entire community." He said boom towns were not to be envied because they come with various problems, many unsolved, and have an unpleasant way of exploding, leaving wreckage over a large area. He concluded by writing that "the economic growth of Marmarth should bring general improvement to its citizens and that the town should keep its balance in an age that worships mere size."[420]

Advertisers from Marmarth and Baker, Montana were well represented.[421] The City Council, in its August meeting, appointed the *Messenger* its official newspaper. This meant new business for the paper as all future notices required by law – election notices, advertisements for bids, the city budget, new ordinances, etc. — would be published. A news article highlighted the housing shortage.

On August 8 he reported that drilling was continuing on No. 1 Well with three drilling crews working 24 hour days and that the Tri-State Field was being developed under the Unit and Cooperative Plan passed by Congress in 1931. This required all land owners, lessees, royalty owners, and all other interest owners to pool all of their interests in one common

"jack pot" and divide all returns based on their interest in the whole. On the 13th he reported the housing situation was acute. There wasn't a vacant house in town and several could be rented if they were available. Under these circumstances he said the town could not expect much growth unless "the men with sufficient resources would begin building houses and/or apartments."[422] Because of the housing shortage newcomers were living in Baker, Montana

He began a subscription drive in August with a goal of adding 500 new subscribers and offered to swap subscriptions for eggs, chickens, potatoes, or other farm and garden produce. In mid September the goal was 335 new subscribers to join the 165 acquired in the first drive.

Despite starting new wells, the Montana Dakota Utilities Company officials refused to divulge any information about potential production. But Stern & Rogers, Contractors were unloading equipment in Marmarth to build a natural gas Compressor Station about a mile from the Discovery well. The Compressor Station compresses natural gas from wells that have been capped. Pipelines from the Compressor Plant were to be connected with the Black Hills Pipeline. Stern & Rogers also announced they would build a 5-plex for the Compressor Plant employees.[423]

The Compressor Plant, 22 by 112 feet in size was to be made of steel and concrete, house five V type Ingersol Rand compressors. Their 190 horsepower engines will draw gas from many wells, equalize the pressure, and send the gas through the main pipe lines for use in distant cities. Reports were circulating that the Montana-Dakota Utility Co. was planning a $50 million 560 mile 24-inch pipeline to connect the gas fields with the Twin Cities, the Minnesota Iron Range, Duluth, Minnesota and Superior, Wisconsin.[424]

The Slope County Agricultural Agent reported "a complete crop failure," at the end of August. No wheat was cut and only 300 ton of hay, "mostly Russian thistle" had been cut. Approximately 50 families left the county to seek a better life on the west coast. Ten other counties also reported a complete crop failure.[425]

Other than reporting a cave-in had caused a drilling delay, oil news was scarce. No one in authority was willing to give information except "Dame Rumor" who said "a fabulous strike had been hit at a level over 8,000 feet."[426]

Marmarth schools opened at 9 a.m. Monday September 7 and Robert B. Whipple was enrolled in Florence Griff's first grade class. Patricia Ellen was in third grade. Text book rental rates were 25¢ per book in grades 1 to 8 and 50¢ per book in the high school. Harry A. Westley was the new Superintendent and Alfred H. Goode was Principal. Enrollment included 121 in the grades and 62 in high school. The Board of Education

approved spending $325.00 for new text books including the new Gates-Huber Readers in grades 1 to 6 and number stories in first and second grades.[427]

The Montana-Dakota Co. awarded a contract to the Rocky Mountain Drilling Co. in mid September to drill two more wells. Three loads of equipment arrived in Marmarth the 24th to be used at No 2 well, a half mile north of the Discovery well. An official of the Ohio Oil Co. was in town seeking housing for his family. The Superintendent of the drilling operation was Elmer E. Whipple, no relation to Blaine.[428]

In an effort to bring the farmers into town to shop, Blaine convinced the Commercial Club to lease the Barber Auditorium to promote entertainment during the winter months. A monthly dance was to be held and a Dramatic Club organized to present dramatic and musical productions. Blaine was named Manager and the first program was October 9. It featured music by the Wokel Orchestra. Prices were 40¢ for men, 25¢ for women.[429]

Various government relief programs gave 747 Slope county residents $55,426.53 in August. The money was paid for Works Projects Administration (WPA) drought relief, rural settlement subsistence grants, WPA workers, old age assistance, CCC Camp boys, and county welfare assistance.[430] Forty Slope county boys were selected to be enrolled at Dickson on October 16. The large number was due to the county being in the drought area.[431]

The Montana-Dakota Co. controlled 113,927 acres in the oil field and announced tests showed oil and gas in commercial quantities at the 6,747 horizon and that they planned to drill two additional wells.[432] In a speech in Marmarth Sunday night October 25, state Highway Commissioner W. J. Flannigan announced that the state would extend state Highway No. 16 from Marmarth to the oil fields when the 1937 construction season begins.[433]

President Franklin D. Roosevelt carried both Marmarth and Slope county in the November 3 election. There were 296 votes cast in Marmarth with – 213 for Roosevelt, 55 for Kansas Governor Alf Landon, and 6 for Congressman William Lemke of North Dakota. Roosevelt carried the county 886 to 377 for Landon and 190 for Lemke. William Langer carried the county in the gubernatorial race with 548 votes to 482 for Walter Welford the Republican nominee and 430 for Democrat John Moses. Langer ran last in Marmarth with 41 votes to 134 for Welford and 106 for Moses.[434] Langer became the first person in any state to be elected governor in an individual column on the state ballot. In 1936 the voters also legalized, by referendum, the sale of liquor. It was also the year the state recorded its lowest and highest official temperatures up to that time –60

below at Parshall and 120 above at Steele. The drought devastated crops statewide that year.

On November 12, Whipple was called to Bismarck and asked to accept appointment as North Dakota State Printer and Secretary of the State Printing and Publication Commission.[435] He replaced Hugh Black, publisher of the *Dunn County Spotlight,* who had served since April 1935. The appointment was approved by Governor-elect Langer and was to be effective that day. He retained ownership of the *Messenger* while seeking a buyer or manager.[436] Earl Rundle, an unsuccessful candidate for Slope county Treasurer, was listed as editor in the masthead in the January 14, 1937 issue. There was no news story announcing his appointment. Blaine had hopes of selling the paper and to keep its postal permit, he reproduced the January 14 issue weekly for 21 weeks. He leased the paper to Rundle in June 1937. In July a new well was drilled a half mile west of the state boundary and supposedly was pumping 540 barrels per day.[437] In his first issue Rundle promoted job printing, noted the subscription list included about 450 individuals, and encouraged the business community to begin advertising. Three months later Rundle reported that he had purchased the paper and that Whipple had given him a Bill of Sale for the title, good will, and mailing list.[438] Rundle won third place in the annual improvement contest sponsored by the North Dakota Press Association for the year 1937.[439]

Oil was found at 6,826 feet in a Marmarth test hole in August 1941. In January of 1942, after sinking to a depth of 9,680 feet, the latest test hole was declared dry and drilling efforts were abandoned.[440]

The author had occasion to be in North Dakota in September 1987 and made it a point to visit Marmarth on his return to Oregon. He had lunch at Mert's Café and learned that its population was estimated at 166, there were 84 hookup to the water system, and the residents were all retired people living on social security. Virtually no businesses remained in town and many of the houses were boarded up. Those who remained shopped in Baker, Montana.

FAMILY MOVES TO BISMARCK; MARY ANN BORN

The family moved to Bismarck[441] in November because as State Printer, Blaine had to estimate the printing needs for the State Legislature convening in January. He also had to establish procedures to take care of the state's fifth class printing needs as mandated by the previous legislature.[442] He hired Pearl's younger sister, Margaret "Babe" Scott (later Mrs. Rudolph Ronning) of Underwood as his secretary.

Lars J. Siljan, editor of the *McLean County Independent* at Garrison,

wrote the following editorial in November 1936:

> In this column which so often must deal with injustice it is a pleasure to lay aside a fault-finding attitude occasionally in favor of unqualified commendation and we submit this as evidence that we still see sunshine about us.
>
> Many will remember an editorial written by Blaine Whipple of Underwood at the time Crown Prince of the Mudhole Brigade rode to victory over the candidacy of Mrs. Langer. It was a time when eight or nine different kinds of cussing seemed in order and an occasion when a leader might find some justification for gnashing his teeth.
>
> But Blaine Whipple, weary at the end of a hard campaign, bitterly disappointed as he must have been, rose superior to defeat and drew on his seemingly unlimited supply of humor and sportsmanship to write the following words: "Your editor is about to make an extended cruise up Salt Creek."
>
> The good ship Whipple did sail up Salt Creek. It went a long way from the mouth. It threaded the sandbars of disappointment and the snags of discouragement. It scraped hard on the bottom of political defeat.
>
> But the S.S. Whipple did not stay up Salt Creek. Eventually the ship swung about and came down riding the waves of patience, persistence, and sportsmanship. Finally it returned to port and Blaine Whipple became State Printer of North Dakota.
>
> We know of no better example of sportsmanship and gracefulness in defeat than Blaine Whipple has given us. We know of no finer illustration of courage in retreat and resourcefulness in counter attack.
>
> The *Independence* offers its congratulations to Blaine Whipple in his hour of Victory and to Governor Langer for confirming the appointment. And we suggest to the Governor and the other denizens of North Dakota's largest silo that when things look blue and discouraging they drop in and have a chat with the ever gentle, always humorous, and never discouraged master of the good ship Whipple.

During his almost four-year tenure, Whipple made the office far more visible than ever before in its history. He attended annual District meetings of the North Dakota State Press Association, was a speaker on each program, and knew most of the publishers and editors in the state. By keeping the office free of politics, he was named to a second term follow-

ing the election of Democrat John Moses as Governor in 1938.

Since the state did not own its own printing plant, the State Printer's job was to purchase printing required by most state agencies from independent printing establishments. He was responsible for the purchase of five classes of printing: Classes 1 and 2, printing required by the Legislature; Class 3, printing and binding of executive and public documents and reports, books. pamphlets, catalogs, etc.; Class 4, printing and binding of laws passed by each Session of the Legislature; and Class 5, all blank office forms, circulars, and other miscellaneous job work required by various offices of state government.[443]

Dick Whipple about 1937, Bismarck.

Departments, executives, or institution heads sent a standard requisition form to the State Printer who engaged a firm to print what was needed. The completed job was checked by the State Printer for the correct grade of paper and to see that other elements of the order were carried out. His careful review saved the taxpayers a considerable amount of money in discovering errors in pricing.

State law required its printing be done in Union Shops and in July 1937, the weekly *Kidder County Farmer Press* took the State Printing Commission to Court claiming the Union Shop law was unconstitutional. Whipple had disapproved payment of a $51.61 bill for 3,000 adjusters' daily reports ordered directly by the State Hail Insurance Department. He refused to pay the bill because the Kidder printing plant was not affiliated with the International Typographical Union.

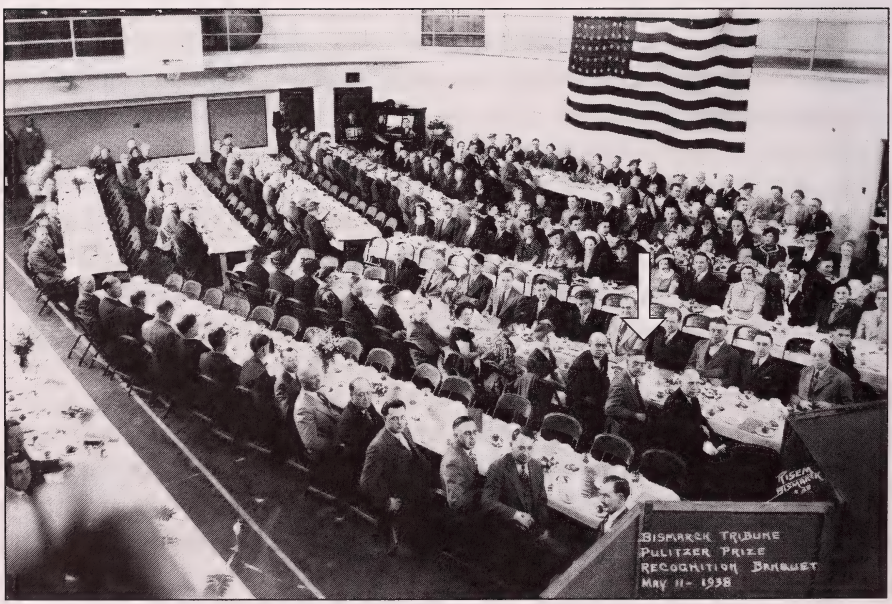
It was a friendly suit since Whipple and the State Printing Commis-

sion wanted more competitive bidding for fifth class printing orders. Under the Union label law, printing was a virtual monopoly for the *Bismarck Tribune* and the Quick Shop in Bismarck; the Knight Printing Co. of Fargo; and the Holt Printing Co. of Grand Forks. Most printing shops in the state were non union job printing shops operated as a part of the weekly newspapers in most towns.

In December 1937, District Judge R.G. McFarland of Jamestown declared the Union Label Printing Law unconstitutional in a proforma or oral decision. This decision made it possible to take the case to the State Supreme Court for final determination. In July 1938, the Supreme Court ruled that fifth class printing was exempt from the Union Label Law and the State Printing Commission could award contracts to newspapers and/or job printing plants equipped to print and furnish the stock at a price fixed by the Commission and State Printer.[444] As would be expected the decision was welcomed by the weekly newspaper publishers and Whipple was in demand as a speaker to explain how they could benefit from the decision.

In April 1938 he originated a bid process for class 1, 2, 3, and 4 printing with bids to be opened June 1. He estimated the state spent approximately $166,058 for printing, including special printed matter used by the legislature in 1937, and would spent $125,000 in 1938 for a total of $291,000 for the biennium.[445] His annual salary was $3,600.00. The Governor was paid $4,000.00.

While serving as State Printer Blaine used his skills as a communicator



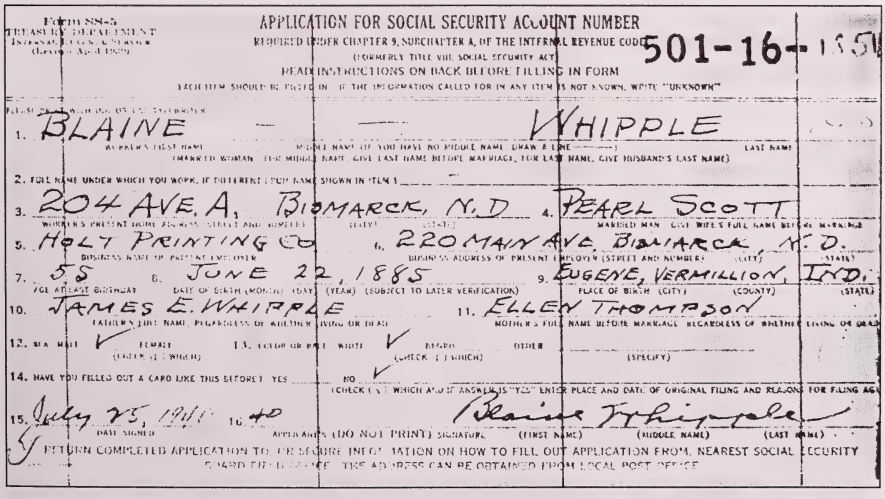
Blaine Whipple, second from right at second table at right.

doing a radio program with Colonel Irving "Speed" Wallace promoting the North Dakota State Mill. Its name was the "Dakota Maid Flour" program and was carried by seven stations. In September of 1937 he was asked by P.H. McGurren, Commissioner of the State Highway Department, to host a 15-minute weekly radio program to explain state highway laws and safety regulations. Blaine convinced "Senator" Q. T. Bottleson to be the spokesman. The program was aired on KFYR Bismarck on Friday at 8 p. m.

Pat, Mary Ann, and Sonny first row; Nancy and Dick Whipple about 1939.

Whipple resigned as State Printer in July 1940 to manage a photo lithographing plant for the Holt Printing Co. in Bismarck. Owner Henry Holt was a prominent member of the Democratic Party and was elected Lieutenant Governor on the ticked headed by Governor John Moses in 1942. Holt's two sons Arthur and Lawrence would work under Blaine. J. Bernard Smith, publisher of the weekly newspaper in Selfridge, succeeded him as State Printer.

William Langer was elected to the U.S. Senate in November, Republican Wendell Wilkie carried the state, Republicans Charles R. Robertson and Usher Burdick were elected to Congress, and Democrat John Moses was re-elected Governor.[446]



Form SS-5
TREASURY DEPARTMENT
INTERNAL REVENUE SERVICE
(Revised April 1939)

APPLICATION FOR SOCIAL SECURITY ACCOUNT NUMBER
REQUIRED UNDER CHAPTER 9, SUBCHAPTER A, OF THE INTERNAL REVENUE CODE
(FORMERLY TITLE VIII, SOCIAL SECURITY ACT)
READ INSTRUCTIONS ON BACK BEFORE FILLING IN FORM
EACH ITEM SHOULD BE FILLED IN. IF THE INFORMATION CALLED FOR IN ANY ITEM IS NOT KNOWN, WRITE "UNKNOWN"

501-16-1551

PLEASE PRINT WITH INK OR USE TYPEWRITER

1. BLAINE — WHIPPLE
WORKER'S FIRST NAME — MIDDLE NAME (IF YOU HAVE NO MIDDLE NAME, DRAW A LINE) — LAST NAME
(MARRIED WOMAN — FOR MIDDLE NAME, GIVE LAST NAME BEFORE MARRIAGE; FOR LAST NAME, GIVE HUSBAND'S LAST NAME)

2. FULL NAME UNDER WHICH YOU WORK, IF DIFFERENT FROM NAME SHOWN IN ITEM 1

3. 204 AVE. A, BISMARCK, N.D. — 4. PEARL SCOTT
WORKER'S PRESENT HOME ADDRESS (STREET AND NUMBER) (CITY) (STATE) — MARRIED MAN — GIVE WIFE'S FULL NAME BEFORE MARRIAGE

5. HOLT PRINTING CO — 6. 220 MAIN AVE. BISMARCK, N.D.
BUSINESS NAME OF PRESENT EMPLOYER — BUSINESS ADDRESS OF PRESENT EMPLOYER (STREET AND NUMBER) (CITY) (STATE)

7. 55 — 8. JUNE 22, 1885 — 9. EUGENE, VERMILLION, IND.
AGE AT LAST BIRTHDAY — DATE OF BIRTH (MONTH) (DAY) (YEAR) (SUBJECT TO LATER VERIFICATION) — PLACE OF BIRTH (CITY) (COUNTY) (STATE)

10. JAMES E. WHIPPLE — 11. ELLEN THOMPSON
FATHER'S FULL NAME, REGARDLESS OF WHETHER LIVING OR DEAD — MOTHER'S FULL NAME BEFORE MARRIAGE, REGARDLESS OF WHETHER LIVING OR DEAD

12. SEX: MALE ✓ FEMALE (CHECK (✓) WHICH) — 13. COLOR OR RACE: WHITE ✓ NEGRO (CHECK (✓) WHICH) — OTHER (SPECIFY)

14. HAVE YOU FILLED OUT A CARD LIKE THIS BEFORE? YES ___ NO ✓ (CHECK (✓) WHICH AND IF ANSWER IS "YES" ENTER PLACE AND DATE OF ORIGINAL FILING AND REASONS FOR FILING AGAIN)

15. July 25, 1940 — 16. 40 — Blaine Whipple
DATE SIGNED — APPLICANT'S (DO NOT PRINT) SIGNATURE (FIRST NAME) (MIDDLE NAME) (LAST NAME)

RETURN COMPLETED APPLICATION TO OR SECURE INFORMATION ON HOW TO FILL OUT APPLICATION FROM NEAREST SOCIAL SECURITY BOARD FIELD OFFICE. THE ADDRESS CAN BE OBTAINED FROM LOCAL POST OFFICE

Blaine Whipple's July 1940s application fudged two years on his age. He was born in 1883, not 1885. He had just left his job as State Printer of North Dakota to manage a new state of the art printing plant. This is a good example of his signature.

The Non Partisan League, the progressive wing of the Republican Party, recruited Blaine to join its staff in April 1942. He signed on as a state organizer, co-editor, reporter and columnist for its official newspaper, *The Leader*, published weekly with a statewide circulation. Lars Siljan, prominent North Dakota newspaperman, was simultaneously hired as co-editor, replacing R. S. "Speed" Nelson who left to enter active duty in the Naval Reserve. Oscar E. Erickson, State Insurance Commissioner, was publisher. Their first issue, four pages, was published April 16, 1942, Volume II, No. 1. By May 28, it had grown to eight pages.

Bigelow Neal, a prominent North Dakota author,[447] wrote in the Garrison *Independent*, that the *Leader* needs the best talent it can obtain, "It has that talent now. The fate of the Nonpartisan League lies in the hands of Lars and Blaine. Through the magic touch of their typewriters, they must bring new faith, new blood, and new hope to their cause."

In commenting on Siljan Neal said "name the dozen most brilliant men in North Dakota and you will have counted Lars Siljan twice" He wrote that Lars' knowledge of North Dakota politics was legendary and that his logic was deadly and that he had a kind heart. He said that Blaine was similar and yet different and they constitute a perfect team. "Blaine is man of great ability, tempered only by too much modesty, and perhaps too much gentleness. He is first a children's man, and perhaps I can say without offense, a dog's man. You see children and dogs are the best judges of character." He is a newspaperman with years of experience and an actor of professional standing. He is well versed in North Dakota politics, has few, if any, enemies, and brings a fine sense of humor to his work. He is a logician who prefers to drive his points home with a smile. "Don't dislike Blaine Whipple without knowing him because you will love him when you do.

L to R. Dick, Pat, Nancy holding Mary Ann, Sonny Whipple. Bismarck.

"These men will take advantage of the

opposition's weaknesses but are above slander, unfairness, and untruth. Neither will attack you or your family personally and both will pull their punches rather than cause pain. No better men could have been chosen."

The team of Siljan and Whipple softened *The Leader's* rhetoric. While still a hard hitting political paper, it stressed issues, refraining from the personality digs previously prominent in its pages. The column "Under The Whippletree" graced the editorial page weekly. It usually addressed a series of concerns in a graph or two and seldom included a long winded dissertation on a single issue. Siljan's weekly column, "Siljanetes," addressed the single issues elsewhere in the paper. Q. T. Bottlesons political observations appeared frequently.

Whipple usually had a page one byline reporting on the political topic of the moment. They were lengthy, detailed, and usually deflated an issue or a politician in a manner that brought a smile to the reader. There was no bitterness or sourness in these articles. Siljan and Whipple took the paper from four to eight pages and greatly increased circulation.

Governor Moses was a frequent target. He was identified as one of the masterminds of the plot to deny Langer his Senate seat. "For that." the editors said, "he will find that the voters will have about as much demand for his services as a public servant as they have for the purchase of a reconditioned harpsichord." They wrote that the inaccessibility of the Governor has become proverbial. "If Almighty God is as unapproachable as North Dakota's Governor, few of us ordinary folks, if any. will have a chance to ever see him. John Moses reacts to humble and earnest prayers with the warmth of an animated iceberg and the chilly atmosphere of his private office has penetrated into the other executive rooms."[448]

In one of his articles, Blaine took Moses to task for not trying to get a defense plant in the state. While all other states were exerting great effort to get them, Moses, in a Fargo speech, said North Dakota did not want a defense plant making Blaine wonder why thousands of the state's citizens left to work in defense plants in other states.[449]

Sonny, Nancy, and Pat about 1936.

In an "Under The Whippletree" column in September Blaine wrote that a rumor about Governor Moses not having any influence in Washington, D. C. was

not true. The rumor was based on the Governor asking the federal government "to do this and to do that and to do the other thing." but none of his requests are granted. "Every person in North Dakota knows that statement to be untrue. I am referring to the request made by the Governor back in 1940 when he asked Washington not to establish war industries in the state. Washington backed the Governor in this request 100 percent. The next time someone tells you that our Governor has no influence in Washington, remind them of this fact and watch their face turn all colors of red when they find out you have caught them in an untruthful untruth."[450]

In addition to *The Leader* assignments, he traveled the state organizing city and county Non Partisan League Committees and doing advance work for appearances by the State Ticket, headed by Lt. Governor Oscar Hagen of Watford City, League nominee for Governor.

The entire family enjoyed living in Bismarck. With the exception of Mary Ann, born in Bismarck December 8, 1937, except for the four months they lived in Marmarth, it was the first place the other four children had lived with a public water system and indoor plumbing. It meant no more thunder mugs[451] under the bed, trips to the 2-seated outhouse with its Sears or Wards catalogs whose pages were used as toilet paper, emptying the slop pail under the sink, pumping water to drink, cook, and wash clothes, no more Saturday night baths in a copper or tin wash tub with water heated on the coal-burning kitchen stove with all four kids bathed, two at a time, in the same water. Their homes were larger with heat in all rooms and they had more neighbor kids for playmates. One of their homes was close to the Capitol Building and they could walk up to see Dad and ride the elevator to and from his 13th floor office.

Pat and Sonny were initially enrolled in a parochial school – Pat in the third grade and Sonny in the first. They brought their homework home daily and Sonny would get a perfect score in spelling but the Sister always gave him a D. When Pearl went to school to find out why, the Sister said because his handwriting wasn't good enough. She told the Sister she didn't agree with that kind of incentive and moved them to the public school.

Mary Ann's 4th birthday party was held a day early on Sunday December 7, 1941. The house was filled with kids when Blaine heard the radio report about the Japanese sneak attack on Pearl Harbor. He gave the then 11-year-old author a nickel and told him to bicycle down town to buy a newspaper. I reluctantly left the party, protesting that the Bismarck Tribune didn't print on Sunday afternoons. That I was surprised when I got down town is putting it mildly. There were newsboys everywhere hawking the extra edition of the Tribune. I wondered how my Dad was smart enough to know there would be a newspaper that afternoon.

The family responded to the government's call for help in the war effort and immediately began a door to door campaign in the neighborhood collecting wire clothes hangers, paper and empty tooth paste tubes. Blaine drove the kids to the country where they searched roadsides, ditches, and dump grounds for abandoned scrap metal and rubber tires which they collected and turned into a central collection area in town. The summer of 1942 they joined other Bismarck families by planting a Victory Garden on acreage near the Missouri river set aside for that purpose by the city. The entire family would work the large garden evenings and weekends and enjoyed a bountiful harvest in the fall.

Under authority of the Alien Enemies Act, the U. S. Justice Department converted Fort Lincoln, about five miles away and across the Missouri and the former headquarters for Gen. George Custer,[452] from a surplus military post into an internment camp for people arrested as enemy aliens. These so-called "enemy aliens" of German, Italian, and Japanese nationality were removed from their homes, primarily on the East and West coasts, and sent to camps in isolated parts of the country. The government put up a 10-foot tall chain link fence topped with strands of barbed wire around the fort. Armed guards, bound by oaths of silence, patrolled the grounds. Over its five-year operation it housed about 1,500 men of German and Italian nationality and over 1,800 Japanese. Life for inmates was lonely, boring, and generated much bitterness. The first Sunday it was opened, the Whipples joined hundreds of other Bismarck and Mandan families who drove to the fort, a place they had visited many times on other occasions, to see the inmates. Many of them were outside milling about and when we kids strolled by, they tried to frighten us by yelling and jumping toward us. Today Fort Lincoln is a United Tribes Technical College with stately buildings and a mission to educate American Indian students. *Enemies: World War II Alien Internment* is the only book written on Fort Lincoln. It reports on the lives of eight internees prior to incarceration, life once there, and life after internment. The book reveals a chapter of American history as astounding as accounts of the West Coast relocation of persons of Japanese ancestry.[453]

Blaine joined the Bismarck Elks Club and the family participated in many of its family oriented functions. He also cast and produced a variety of stage plays – including minstrel shows – for the Club. Bismarck was only 60 miles from Underwood and the family frequently motored there to visit the Scott family. The kids, except for Mary Ann, annually and individually spent a couple of summer weeks there with their grandmother Nellie Scott. Blaine took the whole family to every carnival and circus that came to town.[454] We were always amazed at how many of those show people he knew. We also went on lots of picnics and every

Fourth of July Blaine set off his own fireworks show. Most of the neighbors were there to watch.

EDITOR-MANAGER OF WATFORD CITY WEEKLY

The Whipple family moved to Watford City, McKenzie Co., North Dakota 26 September 1942 where Blaine became the editor-manager of the *McKenzie County Farmer and Watford City Guide*. Watford City was in the extreme western part of the state, bordering Montana. McKenzie was the largest county (land area of 2,735 square miles) in the state. The terrain was badlands, grasslands, plains, and valleys. The Yellowstone and Little Missouri rivers flowed through the county. There was no place in the state more rural. Watford City's population was 1,073, making it, excepting Bismarck, the largest community the family had lived in in either North or South Dakota.

The family moved into the newest and fanciest house in town. It's design was ultra modern for the time and featured large view windows and exterior walls made of glass brick. Following the first winter storm of 1942 the Whipples learned why the house was unoccupied when they arrived in town. It was virtually impossible to keep it warm in winter. Fortunately the community had a public water and sewer system, services the family had become accustomed to in Bismarck.

The move to Watford City was in response to a request from Lt. Governor Oscar Hagen, a McKenzie county farmer, former publisher of the *McKenzie Leader* at Arnegard (population 222), an adjacent town, and a Board Member of the McKenzie County Farmers Publishing Co., owners of the Watford City newspaper. Illness had forced Don Moffatt, editor-manager for the six previous years, to resign and move to Oregon. The *Watford Guide*, founded in March 1915, was absorbed by *The McKenzie County Farmer* in 1928. It was an 8-page, 7-column paper with an annual subscription of $2.00. It was also the official city and county newspaper and its editorial policy prohibited endorsing political candidates.

Blaine's first issue, Volume 35, No. 1, published October 15 included his "Under The Whippletree" column. It was on the editorial page and touched on a variety of issues, mostly local. Q. T. Bottleson, a well-known local farmer-rancher, made his first appearance in the second issue. He called himself the "Sage of the Badlands" and said he had homesteaded on a quarter section in 1901. His family lived in an unoccupied bear's den and did its cooking on a burning coal mine near their dugout. Q. T. named their spread "Difficult Acres."

From then until Whipple moved his family to Wisconsin in 1944, news of the Bottleson family regularly appeared and soon became a favorite

topic of conversation after the paper appeared on Thursday. Sixty new subscribers were added in his first month. And his "Whippletree" column became widely quoted in weeklies across the state.

The editor of the *Walsh County Press* in Park River, North Dakota had the following to say about Blaine in his "Read-em and Weep" column November 12, 1942:

> One thing about Western North Dakota, it never does things by halves. When the weather takes a notion to act up it does a bang up job. A dry spell is likely to burn up crop after crop in about the time it takes to say Skat, or any other 4-letter word that comes to mind. It rains more and faster than anywhere else and when it gets cold it really gets c-o-l-d. I know because I lived in a western North Dakota county for quite a spell.
>
> Same way with the people. When they decide to do anything they do it in a wholehearted way. For example, a western North Dakota Nonpartisan Leaguer would make the Red River Valley variety seem pale and spineless by comparison. I don't know what causes this but merely report facts as I find them. Even the editors in western counties are likely to be colorful gents like my friend Editor Blaine Whipple of Watford City. Mr. Whipple traveled over most of the country on lecture tours with the famed William Jennings Bryan. He also toured the country with tent shows and at one time traveled with Mr. Frank James. It is fair to explain that Mr. James had reformed and was not then engaged in the Train & Bank Robbing Business. Even the close association with the former bad-man had no noticeable ill effects on Mr. Whipple except he later became editor of a newspaper – a rabid Nonpartisan League newspaper. I blame neither Mr. Frank James nor the Nonpartisan League for Editor Whipple's ability to spin tall stories. I feel sure he had a good mother and father so I can't blame heredity. I blame only the intoxicating air of western North Dakota for making people the way they are.
>
> Editor Whipple's latest yarn is about one of his readers with the quaint name of Q. T. Bottleson. According to Whipple, Mr. Bottleson was "butchering a pig last week and accidently stumbled onto a gland that has been overlooked by thousands of butchers. This gland secretes a solution that causes the curl in the pig's tail. Being of a scientific mind, Mr. Bottleson dipped the end of his daughter's hair in the solution and now that young lady has about the finest permanent wave in the county. Q.T. then tried it on a crow bar and is now using the bar as a spring for the storm door. He expects to put it on the market in the spring if he can find time to get around to it."

When I read of Bottleson's amazing discovery I was inclined to disbelief. However, I've reached the stage where I am willing to believe most anything. Most of us two score years of age or more can remember a time when we did not believe automobiles would really be a success. The same goes for airplanes, radio, and colored motion pictures with sound. Before our age other skeptics didn't believe steamships or railroad trains would work. Nor did they believe electricity, the telephone, and telegraph would ever amount to much.

If Mr. Bottleson really has made such a discovery it is bound to be a valuable one. Aside from the financial benefit that should accrue to him, it will be quite a boon to a great many ladies who every so often think it necessary to spend time and money for a permanent wave in a beauty shop – a wave that is just about as "permanent" as a Hollywood marriage.

Mr. and Mrs. Whipple became immediate participants in community activities. She assumed a leadership position with the Red Cross, Girl Scout Troop, served as President of the Womens Club, and Publicity Chairman of the PTA. He became Secretary-Treasurer of the Association of Commerce, Secretary of the County Finance Bond Committee, a member of the McKenzie County Labor Recruitment Committee, Secretary of the North Dakota-Montana Veterans Hospital Association, Chairman of the County Salvage Committee, and the Victory Gardens Committee.

He negotiated the purchase of the *McKenzie County Chronicle* of Alexander (population 415), another close by community, that paper being absorbed by the Watford City paper in April 1943. He published a special "Pioneer" edition of 16 pages in July 1943, was emcee of War Bond Programs featuring Watford City participants on radio station KGCX Sydney, Montana, judged debate contests at the high school, served as General Chairman of the Harvest Festival in August 1943. He seldom said no to any request that would boost the community.

Weather in Watford City was like nowhere else the Whipple's had lived. Winters were cold, with weeks at a time below zero, windy, and prone to blizzards. The first blizzard came without warning and caught the family unprepared. They hadn't ordered a load of coal and their bin was almost empty. Fortunately their oldest son knew of coal bin about three blocks away and he made several trips forth and back hauling coal to the house in boxes loaded on a sled. The wind and snow never let up during the two hours he was at this task. He was bitterly cold but his family was warm. That winter also produced the mother of all blizzards, snowing

and blowing day and night. When it ended, the Whipple house was completely enclosed by drifts of snow. The only exit was from an upper window and the drifts were up that high so you stepped out on them. The town's wide main street was one continuous drift, high enough to walk the length of a couple blocks and step onto the roofs of all the buildings. The winters did provide a lot of fun for the kids because they liked to ice skate. In addition to the town rink the nearby creek was frozen solid and many of the town kids, the Whipples included, would skate long distances up an down that creek on weekends. They kept warm by building fires along the bank.

Blaine and Pearl Whipple.

Summers were hot and humid and this was before air conditioning. On one July day the temperature topped out at 114 degrees. On that occasion a member of the staff fried an egg on the sidewalk in front of the newspaper office. The Badlands were located in part of McKenzie county and its weather may have contributed to that name.

WW II RATIONING BEGINS

World War II saw the implementation of rationing in the U.S. Each town had its Ration Board. Registration took place at the school. One person registered for the entire family and received a War Ration Book based on family size with stamps which were used to buy rationed goods in the amount and time designated. Color coded stamps were assigned points and the rationed item required a designated number of points to buy. Red stamps were for meats, butter, fats, and oils and cheese. Each family member received 16 red points a week. Blue stamps, 48 points a month,

were for canned, bottled, and frozen fruits and vegetables and their juices, dry beans, peas, lentils, etc., and processed foods such as soups, baby foods, baked beans, catsup, and chili sauce. White stamps were for flour, bread, and sugar.

Examples of what stamps would buy: 1-lb steak, 12 pts to 7 pts for 1-lb of hamburger or ham; 16 pts for 1-lb of butter to 4 pts for 1-lb of margarine. Canned milk was 1 pt, a jar of baby food 1 pt., 1-14 oz bottle of catsup 15 pts. People began to use oleomargarine instead of butter. It looked like a slab of lard until stirred with a yellow colored ball until its color looked somewhat like butter.

The grocery stores displayed the number and color of stamps required with the product. Whenever a parent sent a child to the store he had to have the ration book and what seem complicated at first eventually became second nature. The Office of War Information promoted the ration program with posters that stated simply, "Do with less so they'll have enough and Be patriotic, sign your country's pledge to save the food." The government also printed a monthly meal-planning guide with recipes and a daily menu and various national publications featured articles explaining what rationing meant to America and some like *Good Housekeeping* included a special section for rationed foods in its 1943 cookbook. It was patriotic to observe "meatless Tuesdays.

Blaine and Pearl.

Mary Ann.

L to R. Dick and Mary Ann. Back-row Don Jasperson, Blaine, Pearl, Nancy Whipple.

Miscellaneous stamps were issued for shoes, tires, and fuel oil. Retreaded tires or "recapping" with reclaimed rubber were not rationed. Other items not rationed were eggs, fresh fruits, and vegetables, dried and dehydrated fruits (prunes, raisins, etc,), fish and shellfish of all varieties (except in sealed containers), cereals, milk, grain products, such as spaghetti, macaroni and noodles, poultry and game, jams, preserves and jellies, mayon-

naise, salad dressing, and perishable cheeses.

Four stickers were used for gasoline rationing. The Sticker had to be placed on the windshield of the car so the service station attendant knew how much gas the owner could buy. Owners whose cars were non essential received "A" Stickers good for 3 or 4 gallons a week. These cars were not to be used for pleasure. "B" Stickers (green) for driving deemed essential to the war effort. Industrial war workers, for example, could buy 8 gallons per week but because of the shortage were lucky to get that much. "C" Stickers (red) were for physicians, ministers, mail carriers, and railroad workers. The "T" Sticker was for truckers and had no limit. In the case of A and B the Ration Board determined the mileage to your place of work and set the number of gallons needed per week. The gas stamps were guarded as carefully as cash. The government established a national speed limit of 35 mph.

To replace a tire required a trip to the Rationing Board. After checking the applicant's record he was given a form that had to be certified by two garages that the tire could not be repaired. When certified, the Board issued a coupon for a new tire. The tricky part was finding someone to sell a new tire of the right size and without extra gas to go searching. Rationing ended in 1946.

During these years war slogans were used to promote patriotism. Some of the common ones that appeared on posters everywhere: Remember Pearl Harbor, Uncle Sam Needs You, Loose Lips Sink Ships, Big Brother Is Watching You; War is Peace, V for Victory, Yellow Peril. A large number of patriotic songs were recorded: *Praise the Lord and Pass the Ammunition, The White Cliffs of Dover, Boogie Woogie Bugle Boy of Company B, This is the Army Mr. Jones, Remember Pearl Harbor, Comin' In On A Wing And A Prayer, I Left My Heart at The Stage Door Canteen, God Bless America, Any Bonds Today, We Did It Before and We Can Do It Again.*

We were also urged to conserve and recycle metal, paper, and rubber and to buy War bonds and stamps. The War Advertising Council promoted the sale of bonds and stamps with the greatest volume of advertising ever produced up until that time. New York's best advertising agencies, famous entertainers, and comic strip characters were used to enhance the advertising effectiveness. The first Series E U.S. War bond was sold to President Franklin D. Roosevelt. The bonds were sold at 75 percent of their face value in denominations of $25.00 to $10,000.00. Blaine was active in the McKenzie Co. War Bond drive and school kids were encouraged to buy 10 cent saving bond stamps. All the Whipple kids participated in this program with a goal to eventually buy enough stamps, which were pasted into booklets, to be worth $18.75. When the goal was reached the stamps were exchanged at the post office for a $25.00 War Bond in

your own name. The government also issued promotional cardboard with slots for 75 quarters which when full equaled $18.75.

Blaine became one of the most respected persons in the county and developed a strong working relationship with the Board of the McKenzie County Farmers Publishing Co., owners of the Watford City paper. The paper had prospered with increased advertising, circulation, and job printing. However, he had a strong desire to get back to working for himself and when the opportunity came to lease a newspaper in Viroqua, Vernon county, Wisconsin, a much larger community than Watford City, he decided to move. He and Pearl were feted by a variety of organizations including the Chamber of Commerce and the Publishing Board before they left for Viroqua in June 1944. His final column stated he left McKenzie county. with regret. "I will miss the hundreds of fine and loyal friends I have made during my time in Watford City. If I intended to work for a salary I am sure I would stay here for I am positive I could find no better bosses in the country. Goodby now. I won't see you in church Sunday."

WISCONSIN MOVE A FAILURE

Heretofore when Blaine made a move to better himself, he had visited the town and had commitments from the business community to support the venture. Unfortunately, that was not the case with the move to Viroqua when he leased the weekly *Vernon County Broadcaster*. He did all of his negotiations long distance. The lessor provided inaccurate information about the newspaper's acceptance by the community – there was a newer competing weekly in town, *The Vernon County Censor* – and overstated advertising revenue, the number of paid subscribers, and the volume of job printing, – all items essential to establish value and critical to a buying decision. Because of the war, newsprint, the lifeblood of a newspaper, and job printing stock were rationed and the lessor was not forthcoming about his quota for these key ingredients. It was apparent, almost from the first day he took over the operation, it was a loser. He assumed control of the paper July 1, 1944 and ran it for four months giving it up after the October 26 issue.

The family's move to Wisconsin was by train as gas rationing made a trip by automobile impossible. In scheduling the trip, arrangements were made to spend several hours in Minneapolis, Minnesota to visit Pearl's brother Leonard and his family. Leonard had also made arrangements to take us to see Pearl's aged grandfather, Thomas Dolan, whom she had not seen for years and none of the Whipple children had ever met. He was 84, frail, and unable to stand or walk by himself. He was happy to see Pearl who used to visit the Scott and Dolan relatives in the summer months

when she was a young girl. He died a week later.

There was no housing available in Viroqua so the family set up housekeeping in Westby, a nearby community where all five children enrolled in school. Blaine accepted a job on a weekly newspaper in a Chicago suburb and renewed his acquaintance with his widowed first mother-law, Helen M. (Ruhl) Kloss who lived in Chicago. He learned that his daughter Elaine and husband Steve West were farming near Mt. Vernon and son Jim, wife Olive, and daughter Nancy were living in Cedar Rapids. He returned to Iowa in early 1945 for his first family visit in 17 years.

The family returned to North Dakota in March when Blaine accepted a job as editor of the *Dickinson Press*, a 5-day a week newspaper. The only housing available was in a trailer court and after living there for several months, Pearl announced she would no longer live there. So the family moved again, this time to Redfield, Spink Co., South Dakota where they moved into a commodious house. They knew this move would not be permanent as Blaine signed on to run *the Redfield Press*, a weekly newspaper, for several months while the publisher was recovering from a serious illness. Pearl clerked in the local dime store. By opening school date in the fall of 1945 they were in Yankton, Yankton Co., South Dakota where all but Pat were enrolled in grade and high school. Pat had graduated from Redfield High School in June 1945. Blaine became a salesman for a large printing plant in Yankton and Pearl clerked at the J. C. Penney store. Yearning to return to weekly newspapers, Blaine became an itinerant and spent several months each in Windom and Colleraine, Minnesota and

Blaine Whipple about 1951.

Pearl Whipple about 1951.

Brooking, South Dakota replacing those publishers who took family vacations for the first time in years.

BECOMES CHAMBER OF COMMERCE EXECUTIVE

The family moved to Tracy, Lyon Co., Minnesota in August 1947 where Blaine became the first full-time Secretary of the Civic and Commerce Association. Pearl clerked at J. C. Penney. His first assignment was to produce the annual Box Car Day celebration held Labor Day. In an editorial welcoming Blaine to Tracy, the *Headlight Herald* predicted that if local businessmen joined their new full-time Secretary in his efforts to make the town a "better and bigger place to live and do business," Tracy would go places. The editor wrote they would have to spend a little money and contribute a lot of effort "to gain the end we all desire, A Better Tracy."

Blaine's first Box Car Day turned out to be the largest and best attended in the history of the celebration. It featured a two-mile long parade of decorated floats, seven bands, three drum and bugle corps, 200 horse riders, two free stage shows, two baseball games, and two evening dances. He also made arrangements with KMHL Marshall and KWLM Willmar to do remote broadcasting of the day's events. The crowd was estimated at 35,000. Blaine's extensive experience in producing and promoting shows paid off big in his first major project in Tracy.

His second project was a questionnaire to all members of the Association seeking information on the three civic activities they considered most important to the future welfare and development of the city. He was also responsible for the development of a youth recreation center, the Hacienda, which opened December 29. Co-chairmen of the committees to develop the center were Rev. Philip A. Tutle of the Adult Committee and Bob Whipple of the Youth Committee. The Center opened with a Mexican fiesta attended by approximately 150 young people.

In January 1948 he organized the first town and farm get-together, a mid-winter party designed to build a stronger relationship between the two groups. The attendance of approximately 1,000 prompted a congratulatory editorial in the *Headlight Herald* with the suggestion that it be an annual affair. He booked the Hollywood Star circus to perform in Tracy for three days in March in the municipal auditorium. Usually a Shrine sponsored event in large cities, Blaine's contacts in the show business world got them to Tracy, by far the smallest town they had booked in years. It featured 30 acts including elephants, horses, dogs, clowns, acrobats, aerialists, contortionists, jugglers, etc. All three days were a sellout and an estimated 8,000 attended. The *Headlight Herald* editorially called it "A Successful Party" and opined that members of the C of C took "a

Nancy, Blaine, Pearl, Mary Ann, and Pat Drotzman at Blaine and Pearl's 25th wedding anniversary, in 1952 Tracy, Minn.

definite gamble" when contracting for the show and that the gamble "paid off handsomely."

He also proposed the Association create a permanent Planning Committee responsible for housing and industrial expansion. The members agreed and a 7-person Committee, including Blaine, was appointed, surveyed the town, and began to work with the City Council. In June he organized a flight breakfast at the Tracy Municipal Airport, inviting flyers from all over the Upper Mid West to visit. Pilots – 161 of them – from Wisconsin, Iowa, South Dakota, St. Paul, and Minneapolis participated in the fly-in. In August he organized an industrial survey of the town to be made available to the Minnesota Employment Bureau for distribution to potential new firms to develop in town. In addition to determining the number of business establishments in Tracy, it also listed the number of employees in town, the total payroll of city residents, and suggested additional business possibilities.

He then developed a 4-page brochure, "Welcome to Tracy," that included information on the city's location, business possibilities, entertainment, health facilities, sporting activities. It included pictures of the business district, high school, hospital, and Lake Shetek and was enclosed in all out-of-town correspondence and provided to Association members to include with their mailings. This was the first folder of its kind in Tracy's history.

He recommended organization of a Tracy Historical Society with a goal for Tracy to participate in the

Pearl and Blaine's 25th wedding anniversary.

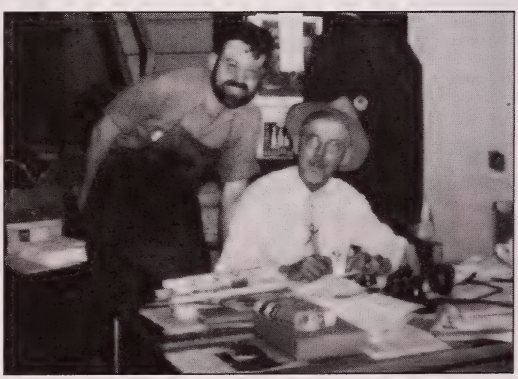
1949 Minnesota Territorial Centennial. Both the Mayor and the Chamber of Commerce endorsed the program and agreed to help organize the Society. He was appointed a representative of the Minnesota Department of Employment and Security to assist farmers in the harvest season. Farmers in the Tracy area were to make their employment needs known to him so he could assist in finding workers. He was Chairman of the March of Dimes campaign in 1949 and became Tracy City Recorder in February 1949.

With his many years of producing and promoting stage shows, he convinced the Chamber to sponsor an amateur talent contest with the winners performing at the 1948 Box Car Day celebration. The contest was open to Lyon, Murray, Cottonwood, and Redwood counties with a weekly tryout to be held Thursdays on radio station KMHL. The tryouts began in mid June and ran for 10 weeks. The acts were many and varied and the winners of each tryout appeared on the Box Car Day program.

When, by the summer of 1949 it became apparent the Chamber was unwilling to underwrite efforts to lure new business to the community, he resigned and the family moved to Mankato, Minnesota where he became a salesman for a national paper products firm. Pearl worked in a department store.

RETURNS TO NEWSPAPER BUSINESS

However, he was first and foremost a newspaper man and when he was offered the editorship of the *Headlight Herald*, the family returned to Tracy in the fall of 1950. After two years in Tracy, the family, which now only included Blaine, Pearl, and Mary Ann, moved to Renville, Renville Co., Minnesota in September 1952 where he became editor of the *Renville-Star Farmer*. As in other towns, he became Renville's "go-to guy" whenever the business community or civic officials needed an event organized or produced. He was President of the Civic and Commerce Association, President of the PTA, and President of the Renville County Historical Society. His weekly column, "Birdies, Eagles and Aces" written under the pen name "B. Doubleyew" became the best read item in the newspaper. Pearl managed Mar-



Tom Linklater and Blaine at *Reville-Star Farmer* 1953.

DRESDEN ENTERPRISE

It's Circulation That Sells — AND SHARON TRIBUNE — It's Circulation That Tells

THE WORLD MOVES

Rev. Edwin Earl Deusner Will Speak To Gleason Rotary Monday Night

District Rotary Governor to Speak At Gleason Monday

Edwin Earl Deusner

Mrs. Gibbs Dies At Her Home In Martin Monday

Dove and Squirrel Season Opens With Prospects Excellent

DADDY AND HS LITTLE GIRL

Today my daughter, who i 7 years old, started to school as usual. She wore a dark blue dress with a white collar. She had on black shoes and wore blue slops. Her cocker spaniel, whose name is Coot, sat on the front posh and whined his canine belief in the folly of education as she waved good-bye and started off to the hall of learning.

Tonight we talked about schol. She told me about the girl who sits in front of her, the girl with yellow curls, and the boy across the aisle who makes funnyfaces. She told me about her teacher, who has eyes in the back of her head, and the trees in the school yard, and about the big irl who doesn't believe in Santa Claus. We talked about a lot of things—tremendously vital, unimportant things, and then we studies spelling, reading, nrithmetic and then to bed.

She's back there now—back i the nursery sound asleep, with "Princess Elizabeth" (that's her do) cuddled in her right arm.

You guys wouldn't hurt her would you? You see, I'm her daddy. When her doll is broken or hr finger is cut or her head gets bumped, I can fix it—but when she tarts to school, when she walks across the street, then she's in your ands.

She's a nice kid. She can runlike a deer and dart about like a chipmunk. She likes to ride horsesand swim and hike with me on Sunday afternoons. But I can't be ith her all the time: I have to work to pay for her clothes and he education. So please help me look out for her. Please drive slowly past the schools and intersections—and please remember that children run from behind parked cars.

Please don't run over my litti girl.

SELF INFLICTED BULLET FATAL TO JOHN A. HOPPER

Purchased Rifle at Local Furniture Store

Services at .ocal Pentecostal Church

GRADE SCHOOL INCREASED; HIGH SCHOOL DECLINES

Five New Teachers Added To List at Dresden

Enterprise Manager Suffers Heart Attack Friday Night, August 27

Former Weakley County Resident Dies in Illinois

Error of 100 Votes Shown in Smith's Magistrate Race

garet's dress shop for an out-of-town owner.

The Minnesota winters finally got to Blaine and June 21, 1954 the family moved to Dresden, Weakley Co., Tennessee where he became managing editor of the *Dresden Enterpise And Sharon Tribune*. Pearl was in charge of the business office. Dresden is in the northwest part of the state and is the county seat.[455] Mary Ann had just completed her junior year in high school and the family moved into a home on West Main street. Two days after arriving in Dresden, he was off to Johnson City with publisher J. Frank Barlow to spend the last three days of the 86th annual convention of the Tennessee Press Association. He began writing his "Under the Whippletree" column in the July 2 issue.

The family's time in Dresden was short as Blaine died of a heart attack at home August 27 at 11:45 p.m. He went home from the office about 5:30 and told Pearl he wasn't feeling well. She called the only doctor in town who wasn't able to respond until he had finished with other patients. He and Mary Ann were supposed to go to a carnival that evening but he wasn't up to it and told her to go and take two rides on everything – one for her and one for him. He took a bath and called for help because "I can't seem to lift my arm." Neither he or Pearl recognized that as a sign of a heart attack. She got him in bed, gave him some pain killers, and lay beside him. She heard him give a gasp and he was dead. Shortly thereafter the doctor arrived. His body was sent to Tracy for burial.

In reporting his death, the Tracy *Headlight Herald* wrote "The passing of Mr. Whipple was a shock to his many friends in Tracy, as he was well known and highly respected here." Reverend J. F. Baldwin, pastor of the

L to R. Pearl's brothers and sisters attending Blaine's funeral Alice Johnson, Don Scott, Babe Ronning, Pearl, Leonard Scott, and Tuts Bjorlie. All but Leonard are from North Dakota. Leonard Minneapolis.

Tracy Presbyterian Church, officiated at the 11 a.m. funeral September 2. Miss June Hedger and Miss Ellen Nash were vocalists at the final rites and Mrs. C. D., Nash was organist. Many beautiful floral tributes were sent and the Lutheran Aid served lunch at the Tracy Lutheran Church after services. Pall bearers were Herb Meyers, Vic Keul, Earl Schoephoerster, John Vahle, Jr. Tom Linklater, and Charles Johnson, the latter two of Renville, Burial was in the Tracy Cemetery.[456]

Out-of-town relatives and friends in attendance included Mr. and Mrs. Edwin Drotzman and son of Yankton, S. Dak. (daughter and son-in-law); sons Bob and Dick Whipple with the Navy in Hawaii; wife Pearl and daughter Mary Ann from Dresden. From North Dakota Mrs. Rudy Ronning, Bismarck, Mrs. C. S. Bjorlie, Minot, Mrs. Burnell Johnson and Don

L to R. Attendees at Blaine's funeral in Tracy. Dick, Pat, Pearl, Mary Ann, Bob Whipple, September 1954.

Scott, Underwood; and the L. J. Scott family from Minneapolis. The church was filled with friends from Tracy and Renville. The following editorial appeared in the *Renville-Star Farmer* September 2:

> It is impossible to adequately express in words the feeling of sorrow experienced by us on hearing of the sudden death of Blaine Whipple in Dresden, Tennessee, last week.
>
> Blaine, during his tenure as editor of the *Star-Farmer*, made many friends in this area who will always remember him as Renville's greatest booster. Although he had been away from Renville for about two months and we had lost his direct services, there is no denying that his works live after him.
>
> His interest in civic affairs and his untiring efforts to promote Renville set an example and provided an inspiration that will long be felt by us who try to carry on what he started.
>
> Even though he will no longer be among us, we in Renville can consider ourselves fortunate that we were blessed with his presence for at least a couple of years. However, the fact that the community benefitted from his personal and professional touch does not alleviate the grief experienced by his good wife and children. We extend our sincere sympathy to them in their loss.
>
> Even though Blaine has written "30" to his life's editorial, the reading of it by the Editor-in-Chief is the real test. We know the Editor-in-Chief will find a prominent place for it in His book.

PEARL AND MARY ANN RETURN TO YANKTON

Pearl and Mary Ann returned to Dresden for an auction of family possessions before moving to Yankton to start life anew. The owner of Margaret's Dress Shop in Renville asked Pearl to manage his dress shop in Austin, Minnesota. He told her that of all the people who had ever worked for him, she was the tops and that he had complete confidence in her ability. However, by this time Mary Ann and met and fell in love with Bill McPherson in Yankton and didn't want to leave so Pearl declined. She worked at Dollys Dress Shop and completed "a course of study and practice prescribed for the course in Typing, Bookkeeping & Accounting" at Yankton Business College. Mary Ann and Bill were married in August 1955 and moved to Arkansas that same month so Pearl moved to Le Mars, Iowa where Don Jasperson had become Assistant Manager of the J. C.

Penney Store. She worked on the business side of the Le Mars *Globe-Post* weekly newspaper.

When Penney's transferred Don to Marshall, Lyon county Minnesota in June 1958 to become Assistant Manager of that larger store, Pearl also moved there and became Head Bookkeeper and Office Manager for the weekly *Marshall Messenger*. She remained in that job for 12 years, moving to Portland, Oregon in 1970 to manage an apartment complex for her son Blaine. After eight years in Portland, she returned to Minnesota, this time to Appleton in Swift county where Don had become Manager of the J. C. Penney store and Manager of Radio Station KBMO. When Penney's closed its Appleton store in 1973, the Jaspersons opened Jasperson's Department Store in August and Pearl worked for them as a clerk. She followed the Jaspersons to Glencoe, Minnesota in January 1983 where she lived the rest of her life in retirement housing for people 55 and over. During these years she would travel to Massachusetts to visit the extended McPherson family, to Portland to visit Blaine's extended family, and to Yankton to visit Pat's extended family. She also visited grandson Mike Drotzman and family who were living in Germany.

Mary Ann and Bob 1955.

All of the children were baptized Catholic and all attended Sunday School from their earliest grades through high school. Blaine, who was Presbyterian, offered to join the Catholic church but Pearl said it wasn't necessary. So they attended different churches as they were growing up – Catholic, Lutheran, Presbyterian, Methodist, Congregational. Pat is the only one who remained Catholic. Nancy was active in the Lutheran Church and Bob taught Sunday School in the Presbyterian Church. Pearl left the Catholic Church after Mary Ann was born. She decided five children was enough and told her Priest in Bismarck she was going to practice birth control. When the priest told her she "was doomed to burn in hell," she left the church.

Pearl was known as "Mrs. Clean" to her grandchildren. Her home always ran smoothly, was well provisioned, ultra clean, and made sweet and cheerful. That she was able to do it while raising five children and

working outside the home and with many other activities, is an accomplishment not sufficiently appreciated in this world. She had this ability highly developed and had a genius for orderliness.

She enjoyed good health most of her adult life. She took excellent care of herself and took pride in her appearance and in her home. Medically, her last years were difficult. She had a history of polymyalgia rehumatica (PMR)[457] manifested in the fall of 1984 with a diagnosis delayed until the spring of 1985 by sural nerve biopsy.[458] She also had problems with chronic sinusitis[459] and an abnormal chest x ray caused by a past history of pneumonia. She was treated for PMR with the drug prednisone which took bone and muscle mass from her, making it difficult to walk and caused her to use a walker. She became depressed, her memory was impaired, she gained weight, and a "moon face." The doctors also prescribed cytoxan, a chemotherapeutic cancer drug used in an investigational way on rheumatic diseases. The side effects were very hard on her causing nausea and hair loss. Because of constant insomnia she was given sleeping pills which affected her walk even more and she fell and fractured her left humerus[460] in the spring of 1986.

The disease became so debilitating she was unable to remain in her home and often expressed the wish to die.[461] Her wish was finally granted April 1, 1988 as a patient at the Glencoe Area Health Center. Her granddaughter Molly Jasperson was with her at the end. She requested that no services be held, was cremated, and her ashes buried in the Evergreen Cemetery in Vinton, Iowa next to Blaine. When son Dick died May 18, 2005, he was cremated and his ashes are buried next to Pearl.

Obituary: Pearl Julia (Scott) Whipple of Glencoe died April 1 at the Glencoe Area Health Center following a long illness. She was born Aug. 25, 1905 in Hamel, Minn., daughter of Benoni and Ellen (Dolan) Scott. She married Blaine Whipple in Albion, Neb. Sept. 21, 1927.

In her younger years she was a beautician in Minot, N. D. Her husband managed several newspapers in the Dakotas and Minnesota, including Tracy and Renville. After he died she was office manager of weekly newspapers in Le Mars, Iowa and Marshall, Minn. She lived in Appleton, Minn. for several years and worked in a department store there.

In 1983 she moved to Glencoe to be near her daughter and son-in-law, Nancy and Don Jasperson. She was a member of the First Congregational Church in Glencoe. She is survived by her sons, Blaine (wife Ines) of Portland, Ore. and Richard of Eagan; daughters, Patricia Drotzman of Yankton, S. D., Mary McPherson (husband Bill) of Littleton, Mass.; brothers, L. J. Scott (wife Irene) of Minneapolis, Bill (wife Ruth) of Kansas City Mo., Arthur (wife Josephine), Gordon (wife Kay), and Donald (wife Florence), all of Underwood, N. D.; sisters, Edwidge Bjorlie of

Minot, N. D., Clara Gunderson (husband Gunder) of Turtle Lake, N. D., and Alice Johnson (husband Burnell) of Underwood.

She was preceded in death by her parents, her husband, daughter Nancy, brothers John and Robert, and sister Margaret.[462]

Blaine and Pearl were a good couple and greatly enjoyed each other. The author only remembers one quarrel between them. It occurred in Marmarth after it became apparent that there was no oil pool to exploit and that the newspaper wasn't going to be a success. Pearl expressed her opinion they should not have left Underwood and he defended the move, pointing out that Marmarth was by far the more modern town and at the time of the move the prospects of the oil boom seemed reasonable. Fortunately, the job as State Printer and the move to Bismarck resolved the problem. After his death, Pearl often remarked how much she missed him and she never dated anyone else. When death was near she made it clear that she wanted to be buried next to him.

DROUGHT, DUST, AND DEPRESSION

Blaine and Pearl began their family during the worst worldwide depression ever known. Added to this were years of drought followed by dust storms and grasshopper plagues. The condition that made the thirties dirty and memorable began in 1929, Pat's birth year, when rainfall was below average. Several years of limited rainfall and excessive summer heat were followed in 1934 by dust storms which lasted for years. The hottest, coldest, and driest year recorded in North Dakota was 1936. Only 8.8 inches of rain fell and that summer millions of grasshoppers descended on the state. The sky was so filled with them that streetlights had to be turned on at mid day. At Killdeer, west of Underwood, they blacked out the sun and piled up four inches in the streets. The dry weather and the grasshoppers combined to cut crop yields dramatically. Most counties had no wheat harvest at all. Ranchers who raised some cattle had to sell most

Pearl's 80th birthday Aug. 27, 1987 Glencoe, Minn. L to R: Pat, Nancy, Pearl, Dick, and Blaine.

of their animals as range grasses and forage crops failed.

Without rain the farmers couldn't grow crops. No crops meant that the wind blew bare soil as high as 6,500 feet in the sky creating dust storms that traveled as far as 2,000 miles. Also known as black blizzards, the dirt drifted the same way the snow did. Drifts covered fences and vehicles, closed roads, and partially buried houses and barns. School was cancelled because of dust storms, not snowstorms. Teachers lit lanterns in the middle of the day so students could see to recite their lessons. Sometime the children were kept in the schoolhouse all night to make sure they didn't get lost walking home or overcome by the dust. People caught in their own yards groped their way to their doorstep. Cars came to a standstill because headlights couldn't penetrate the murk. It some places it was so bad people thought the end of the world was coming. There were 38 storms in 1933 and by 1934 100 million acres of American farmland had lost all or most of its topsoil.

Dirt sifted into everything in the house. Sometimes there was so much it had to be shoveled out before you could wash floors and furniture You had to wash the boiler, wash tubs, and the washing machine before they could be used. Every towel, curtain, piece of bedding and garment had to be taken out doors to shake out the dust before washing. Rugs and sofa pillows had to have the dust beaten out of them. You had to clean closets and cupboards, dust all the books and furniture, wash the mirrors and every dish and cooking utensil only to suffer another storm before the end of the week.

The Great Depression struck North Dakota long before other states felt its effects. When President Calvin Coolidge, a distant cousin of Blaine,[463] left office the national per capita income was $703; for North Dakota it was $375. In 1933, the depth of the Depression, the national per capita had fallen to $375; it was $145 in North Dakota. Over the five-year period 1932-1937, North Dakotans earned 47 percent of the national average. The state suffered more than any other. One-third of its farmers lost their property by foreclosure of mortgages. The unemployed in the towns and the few cities swelled the relief rolls. By late 1936, half the population received stipends of some kind. Relief was the biggest business in North Dakota. In the 1930s more than 120,000 residents left the state. Of the 53 counties, 43 lost population and Slope, the county the Whipples moved to in 1936, lost 29 percent.

In mid-October 1929 when Patricia Ellen was 10 and a half months old, the average middle class American thought he faced a limitless vista of prosperity. President Herbert Hoover had announced in the previous year that poverty was about to be defeated. "We have not yet reached the goal, but given a chance to go forward with the policies of the last eight

years, we shall soon see the day when poverty will be banished from this nation."

Motorcars, bath tubs, electric refrigerators, radios were among the tests of progress. Pressures of salesmanship, including advertising which became Blaine's specialty, urged the duplication of luxuries – two cars in every garage. *Time* Magazine hailed Walter P. Chrysler as "Man of the Year" in January 1929 because during the previous 12 months he introduced the Plymouth and DeSoto cars, bought the Dodge Corporation for $160,000,000, and began building the Chrysler Building, a 68-story skyscraper in New York City.[464]

The *Time* cover of October 14, 1929 featured William Wrigley, Jr.,[465] followed in successive weeks by Harry Guggenheim,[466] Ivar Kreuger,[467] Samuel Insull,[468] and T. W. Lamont,[469] all financial heros who constantly flooded the mind of the average magazine reader with thoughts of easy money and financial independence. Masses of Americans invested in the stock market as the road to permanent prosperity. By 1930 there were 70,950 stockbrokers in the country compared to 29,609 in 1920.

Most stock was bought on margin. Investors with little cash and high hopes put up about a fourth of the price of the stock with the broker advancing the rest by borrowing from banks. In Pat's birth year, this method of buying had trebled causing the Federal Reserve Board to order member banks not to lend for speculative purposes. But private bankers made their millions available, further stimulating the Bull Market and the age of confidence on which it was built. This caused buyers to buy and borrow more despite the lack of consumer demand, gains in productive efficiency, or real earnings of the stocks.

Much of the country's production had been converted into luxury and durable goods whose purchase could be postponed without affecting daily needs. At the first storm warning these goods piled up in warehouses, causing production to stop and creating huge areas of joblessness. The Depression that followed 1929 was unparalleled for severity and duration.

On October 23, 1929 a minor panic began on the New York Exchange on stocks speculators had pushed to fantastic heights. The next day, "Black Thursday," devastated the Market and hysteria was rampant. The national income dropped from $87 billion in 1929 to a low of $40 billion in 1933, the year Richard Earl was born. This extreme collapse marked 1929 as the frontier between an old and a new world. People with jobs and regular incomes made their adjustments by staying home for their recreation. Hobbies like stamp collecting and jigsaw puzzles and table games like checkers and chess achieved unprecedented popularity. Bridge captured the greatest number of new players. In its new more intricate form, contract bridge grew in all sections of the country and was almost a social

requirement. It certainly was the game of choice of Blaine and Pearl in Ryder, Underwood, and Bismarck and both became expert players. The Department of Commerce found one prosperous business statistic to announce in 1930. Almost 30,000 miniature golf courses were in operation, representing an investment of $125 million, including a new course in Martin South Dakota. Many were earning 300 percent a month.

Unemployment of 4 million in 1930, the year Robert Blaine was born, doubled to 8 million in 1931 to more than 12 million in 1932, the year Nancy Jane was born. That year about 25 percent of the unemployed received relief in the form of food benefits. About 2 million people were roaming the country – many of them young people – looking for a job, hope, or anything to confirm that life had not passed them by.

Franklin D. Roosevelt (FDR), a distant cousin of Blaine,[470] was inaugurated President Saturday March 4, 1932. Out-of-towners, in Washington D.C. for the inauguration, were greeted with this sign posted over hotel check-in desks: "Due to the unsettled banking conditions throughout the country, checks on out-of-town banks cannot be accepted." Banking in every state was wholly or partially suspended,[471] flags flew on Wall Street in honor of the inauguration, but the Stock Exchange was closed. For the first time in 85 years the Chicago Board of Trade was also closed. The financial heart of the country had ceased to beat.

Before FDR took power ordinary citizens rarely encountered the federal government in peacetime. There was no Social Security, unemployment compensation, federal guarantees on bank deposits, regulation of the stock market, commitment to equal opportunity, or high employment. All that and more changed during his "New Deal" years. When fascism threatened to destroy democracy he prepared a reluctant nation to fight back and helped to lead the Allies to victory. When he died in office in the spring of 1945, the United States was the most powerful country in the history of the world.

Upon taking office he declared a bank holiday and convened the Congress which swiftly enacted a flood of legislation, much of which was passed in the first hundred days:

March 9	The Emergency Banking Act.
March 20	The Economy Act.
March 31	Creation of the Civilian Conservation Corps.
April 19	Abandonment of the Gold Standard.
May 12	The Federal Emergency Relief Act.
	The Agricultural Adjustment Act.
	The Emergency Farm Mortgage Act for the refinancing of farm mortgages.

May 18	The Tennessee Valley Authority Act setting up a system of dams to produce power.
May 27	The Truth-in-Securities Act requiring full disclosure of facts in all stock issues.
June 5	Cancellation of the gold clause in public and private contracts.
June 13	The Home Owners' Loan Act to refinance home mortgage.
June 16	The National Recovery Act creating a system of industrial self-government under federal Supervision and a $3.3 billion Public Works Program.
	The Glass-Steagall Banking Act separating commercial and investment banking and Guaranteeing all bank deposits.
	The Farm Credit Act reorganizing agricultural credit.
	The Railroad Co-ordination Act.

The Civilian Conservation Corps was assigned to the Department of Labor and the War Department mobilized regular and reserve officers to operate the camps. It was voluntary for single men between 18 and 25 whose families were on relief. It was an immediate success with 1,300 camps established by June 1, 1933 and by the end of July 300,000 men were in the woods. They planted trees, constructed reservoirs and fish ponds, built check dams, dug diversion ditches, raised bridges and fire towers, fought blister-rust, pine-twig blight, and Dutch pine disease, restored historic battlefields, cleared beaches and camping grounds, and protected and improved parks and recreational areas in a multitude of ways.

The young men came from every background. One out of every 10 or 11 was Negro. Many had never seen mountains, waded in running brooks, or slept in the open air. In addition to reclaiming and developing the nation's natural resources, they reclaimed themselves. Their muscles hardened, their bodies developed, their self-respect returned. They learned trades, learned about America, and about other Americans. They wore green uniforms in winter and olive-drab in summer. They earned $30.00 monthly, part of which was a family allotment. Approximately 1,750,000 recruits served between 1933 through 1941.[472]

The National Youth Administration (NYA) began in June 1935 and enrolled more than 600,000 boys and girls between 16 and 25. Most were given student aid to finish high school or college. The others were given aid in the form of part-time employment – sewing, lettering signs, soil-erosion control, etc. The youth of a depression era family had their hope and faith in the future restored by the CCC and the NYA.

The nickel was probably the most used coin of the Thirties. It purchased many things and services. A child could buy the biggest and best candy bar or a double-dip ice cream cone. A local telephone call cost a

nickel as did a cup of coffee and the weekly magazines: *The Saturday Evening Post, Colliers, Liberty,* etc. The juke box began when the nickel dropped. It took two nickels to go to a movie.

The car trailer was developed in the 1930s and roadside cabins – the motels of today – were built. Public beaches and national and state parks were being built in large numbers by the government's public works projects. By the middle of the decade some 30 million people were traveling around the country, visiting and vacationing by car. Thousands of men and women went to bingo parlors, teen-agers perched in trees vying for records for the longest periods, college boys swallowed goldfish, and the chain-letter craze threatened to swamp the mails. The Thirties also saw more Americans participating in bowling, skiing, softball, bicycling, and golf.

Among comic strips born in the 30s were *Blondie, Dick Tracy, L'il Abner, Joe Palooka,* and *Terry and the Pirates.* Vaudeville died and was replaced by radio and the movies. But the great comedians of the time – the Marx Brothers, W. C. Field, and Charles Chaplin – had developed and perfected their work in the days of vaudeville. By 1930 the silent film was a thing of the past. The public reveled in sound movies which became an antidote for the drab realities of the Depression. With a visit to the theater they heard their favorite stars talking and singing, the crack of a pistol, the roar of a motor, the ring of a telephone, and were entranced the never ending variety of stories. Almost 400 movies were produced in 1939. Many enjoyed the double feature because it kept them in the theater twice as long. In 1933 theaters offered Bank Night, Dish Night, Bingo, Keeno, Screeno, and other games to lure more customers.

Films of the decade included *Little Caesar* (1930), *The Public Enemy* (1931), *Dr. Jekyll and Mr. Hyde* (1932 with Frederick March), *Queen Christina* (1933 with Greta Garbo), *You're Telling Me* (1934 with W. C. Fields), *The 39 Steps* (1935), *Mr. Deeds Goes to Town* (1936 with Gary Cooper), *Easy Living* (1937 with Jean Arthur), *The Lady Vanishes* (1938), and *The Grapes of Wrath* (1939 with Henry Fonda).

Stars of the decade included Shirley Temple and Mickey Rooney, the youngest, Constance Bennett, Edward G. Robinson, Tallulah Bankhead, James Cagney, Joan Crawford, Clark Gable, Marlene Dietrich, Paul Muni, Greta Garbo, Spencer Tracy, Katherine Hepburn, Cary Grant, Betty Davis, Lionel Barrymore, Claudette Colbert, Wallace Beery, Barbara Stanwyck, and Charles Laughton.

Sally Rand's bubble and fan dances at the 1933 World's Fair in Chicago were such a sensation that her earnings jumped to $6,000.00 a week. Children bounced their rubber balls to the rhyme: "Sally Rand has lost her fan; Give it back you nasty man."

Women's hair style was a shoulder-length page-boy or curled bob.

Dresses and skirts dipped to as low as 10 inches off the floor in the early 30s but began to creep up until they were just below the knees as the decade ended. Most women colored their fingernails without complaint from their man who fought the style when first introduced at the beginning of the decade. Men's styles mostly remained static but collars, garters, vests, and spats were discarded in the interest of economy. Boys wore knickers with laced boots, the choice of Robert during his early school years in Bismarck.

Ownership of a book had become a luxury for most so millions of readers discovered the public library. Three to four million more people borrowed books in 1933 than in 1929. Total circulation increased nearly 40 percent. Private circulating libraries developed where persons could rent a book for 3¢ a day. Beginning in 1933, Blaine ran a private library in Underwood with rates of 2¢ a book for two weeks. It was 1939 before paperback editions were successful. Best sellers: Pearl Buck's *The Good Earth* in 1931 and 1932; *Anthony Adverse* by Hervey Allen in 1933 and 1934. Margaret Mitchell's *Gone With the Wind* was the No. 1 seller in 1936 and 1937. *Northwest Passage* by Kenneth Roberts was also a 1937 favorite. John Gunther's *Inside Europe* and Dale Carnegie's *How to Win Friends and Influence People* were big sellers. There were fifteen authors whose books sold 50,000 copies or more in 1934.

Radio came into its own and 28 million homes had them and listened daily for four and a half hours by 1939. The number in homes in 1929 was about 12 million. Advertisers began to buy time in 1932 and used it to build product identification. Wheaties is still known as *The Breakfast of Champions* and in the 1930s was inseparable from *Jack Armstrong*, an after school serial listened to by most boys. *Amos and Andy* was a favorite serial and listeners enjoyed amusing episodes of *Lum and Abner, The Goldbergs,* and *Fibber McGee and Molly*. Rudy Vallee was the first crooner and Jack Benny was radio's top entertainer and best salesman. He was hired by General Mills to sell Jell-O and the increase in sales was phenomenal. *Major Bowes Amateur Hour* had a large following and "Murray Hill 8-9933," the number to call to vote for the amateur of your choice, became the most famous telephone number in the world. Other favorites were *The Fred Allen Show, Edgar Bergen and Charlie McCarthy,* and Fanny Brice as *Baby Snooks. The Metropolitan Opera, The NBC Symphony Orchestra,* and the *New York Philharmonic Orchestra* were broadcast weekly without commercials. Daytime serials for women dominated afternoons Monday through Friday. Their sponsors sold products women would purchase. Most were 15 minutes and the most successful and longest running included *Women in White, Old Ma Perkins, Young Doctor Malone, The Guiding Light.* Shows ending with a suspenseful situation or a tragedy

garnered more listeners than shows with joyful endings.

Kid serials, sponsored by advertisers whose goal was to influence household purchases, dominated late afternoon and early evening. The psychology was to sell the kids and let the kids sell the parents. A giveaway the kids wanted was part of the promotion. At the end of *Jack Armstrong The All American Boy, Little Orphan Annie, Gangbusters* or *The Lone Ranger*, the commercial included the offer of a free badge making the kid a full-fledged member of a "special" Club or a mask or pocketknife, exact replicas of those used by the character in the serial, with each box top or wrapper of the advertised product sent in.

The night time shows were comedies and drama. Some of the latter were Lux Radio Theater, First Nighter, and *Mercury Theater.*

We're still singing the songs of the 1930s. They include:

1930. Robert Blaine's birth year. *The Man I Love, I Got Rhythm, Embraceable You, Biding My Time, Body and Soul, Love for Sale, Three Little Words.*

1931. *Dancing in the Dark, Goodnight Sweetheart, Life Is Just a Bowl of Cherries, I Found a Million Dollar Baby, All of Me, I Love a Parade, As Time Goes By, "Swonderful.*

1932. Nancy Jane's birth year. *You're an Old Smoothie, Night and Day, You're Getting to a Habit With Me, , Shanty In Old Shanty Town.*

1933. Richard Earl's birth year. *Smoke Gets In Your Eyes, Yesterday, We're in the Money, The Last Round-Up, Lazybones, Stormy Weather.*

1934. *I Get a Kick Out of You, You're the Top, Wagon Wheels, Swing Low, Sweet Chariot, Love in Bloom, June in January, The Continental, Stay as Sweet as You are, Cocktails for Two, All I Do Is Dream of You, Moonglow, The Object of My Affections.*

1935. *Summertime, I Got Plenty of Nuting, It Ain't Necessarily So, Begin the Beguine, Just One of Those Things, Cheek to Cheek, Isn't This a Lovely Day, Top Hat, White Tie, and Tails, I'm In the Mood for Love, Paris In the Spring, Red Sails In the Sunset, When I Grow Too Old To Dream, You Are My Lucky Star, The Music Goes Round and Round,*

1936 *A Fine Romance, The Way You Look Tonight, Pennies from Heaven, I'm an Old Cowhand, Let's Face the Music and Dance, Is It True What They Say About Dixie, It's a Sin to Tell a Lie. Goody! Goody!*

1937. Mary Ann's birth year. *Where or When, Johnny One-Note, In the Still of the Night, The Lady is a Tramp, Rosalie, That Old Feeling, September in the Rain, Once in a While, Sweet Leilani, I've Got My Love to Keep Me Warm, Nice Work if You Can Get It.*

1938. *Little Sir Echo, A Tisket, A Tasket, Penny Serenade, I Married An Angel, This Can't Be Love, Thanks for the Memory, Whistle While You Work, Jeepers Creepers, You Must Have Been a Beautiful Baby, Flat Foot Floogey With the Floy Floy.*

1939. *All the Things You Are, The Beer Barrel Polka, And the Angels Sing, I Get Along Without You Very Well, Three Little Fishes, I'll Never Smile Again, South of the Border, Sunrise Serenade, Stairway to the Stars, Scatterbrain, If I Didn't Care.*

THE 1940S

As the Great Depression molded the 1930s so did World War II set the tone for the next decade. The U. S. had a sluggish economy in 1939 with 9.4 million unemployed. By 1943-44 it was fully employed making one ship a day and one aircraft every five minutes for the 15 million men and women in the Armed Forces. America produced 25 times as much ($37.5 billion in 1943-44 against $1.5 billion in 1940). Germany, Italy, and Japan combined produced only half of the U. S. total. Our manufacturing productivity was an incredible achievement by government planning, business enterprise, and labor flexibility – 20 million Americans moved to take jobs.

The war produced huge deficits, peaking at $53 billion in 1943, yet inflation was contained by a mix of taxes, bond drives, and price and wage controls. Consumer prices rose less than two percent in 1944 and 1945 and the war was on the way to being won. At no period before or since has there been anything to equal the 15 percent rise a year in general industrial expansion created by the war.

With the removal of war restrictions on commercial transportation and on the use of gasoline, Americans set out on wheel and wing after the war ended. By 1949, Americans owned nearly 45 million automobiles. By the 1950s, air travel became commonplace. The airplane was now so much a part of ordinary life that newspapers printed daily schedules for flights to all the large cities and most of the countries of the globe.

During the war years, with consumer durables unavailable, people spent more money on entertainment. Theaters and motion pictures flourished. Despite the drafting of professional athletes, baseball, boxing, and other spectator sports drew audiences equal to those of the 1920s. When defense production swelled and before controls were imposed, installment credit reached $5.9 billion and dropped to about $2 billion during the years of controls then rose steadily from $4 billion in 1946 to $13 billion in March 1952. An economist declared in 1943 that Puritan notions of thrift had vanished and people began "saving" by buying the goods they wanted on the installment plan. By 1948 Americans viewed the good life as including immediate enjoyment of what they wanted.

Population growth increased as incomes rose and war prompted young people to marry. During the decade 1940-50, the population grew by 19 million people and the nation had grown from 76.1 million in 1900 to

150.69 million in 1950. Only 8.7 percent were foreign born compared to 13.6 in 1900. And the population was older – 27.8 percent were over 45 vs 17.6 percent in 1900.

War needs stimulated wider use of new materials, like synthetic rubber and greater utilization of older materials such as plywood and plastics. Radar was developed and industry made use of electronic devices for governing motor speeds and inspecting metals. Industries also began to use computers.

Advances in public health and medicine led to an increase of 4.75 years in life expectation at birth. Higher wages, shorter working hours, and safer working conditions made the manual worker's life longer. Maternal mortality fell 63 percent between 1935-45, a period of rising birth rates. Medicine made notable advances. The number of antibiotics was enlarged with the discovery of streptomycin, aureo-mycin, tyrothrycin, chloromycetin, and neomycin. Scientists began to work on polio, cancer, diseases of the heart, arthritis, and cerebral palsy. Spending for study in pure science increased.

Elementary and secondary education suffered. By the 1950s, three-fourths of the states had inadequate school space; half the nation's children lived in areas served by ill-trained, overburdened poorly trained teachers. But the GI Bill of Rights made higher education available to millions of young veterans. In 1951 one in every 50 white Americans was enrolled in college. It was 1 in 123 in 1930-31. Another significant enlargement of educational opportunity came with the growth of adult education. The Great Books project which used public libraries as a source of texts and meeting place brought many persons into contact with the primary sources of modern thought. To a far greater degree than was common before WWI, Universities advanced creative work in literature, art and scientific research.

105 YEARS OF FEDERAL GOVERNMENT

Blaine's 71 years coincided with the terms of 13 Presidents beginning with Chester Alan Arthur who served three years and 166 days between 1881 and 1885 and Dwight David Eisenhower who assumed the Presidency in 1953, the year before Blaine's death. Pearl's life span included 15 Presidents beginning with Theodore Roosevelt and ending with Ronald Wilson Reagan.

Significant events during these presidencies included: establishment of the Civil Service Commission, Standard Time adopted, regulation of the railroads, dedication of the Statue of Liberty, panic of 1893, North and South Dakota admitted to the Union as the 39th and 40th states, the 51st Congress was the first to spend one billion dollars, the battleship *Maine*

was blown up in Havana, Cuba harbor, U.S. annexed the Hawaiian Islands, President McKinley was mortally wounded by an assassin, Department of Commerce and Labor created, Wright Brothers first flight at Kitty Hawk, N. Car., San Francisco earthquake, economic panic of 1907, Robert Peary discovered the North Pole, first transcontinental air flight, Boy and Girl Scouts founded.

Federal Reserve Act signed into law, U. S. declared war on Germany, women's suffrage amendment passed, Tomb of the Unknown Soldier dedicated, President Harding died in office, all U.S. Indians given citizenship, Tennessee prohibited teaching of evolution, first talking movie, Charles Lindbergh's solo flight across the Atlantic, stock market crash, beginning of the Great Depression, *Star-Spangler Banner* adopted as national anthem, Amelia Earhart's solo flight across the Atlantic.

Hitler came to power in Germany, Congress abandoned gold standard, Social Security Act enacted, Japanese attacked Pearl Harbor, D-Day invasion of Europe, FDR died in office, war in Europe ended, atomic bombs dropped on Hiroshima and Nagasaki, WW II ended.

Berlin Airlift, Marshall Plan enacted, Korean War began, first atomic submarine "Nautilus" launched, Supreme Court ruled segregated schools unconstitutional, Civil Rights Commission created, first U. S. satellite in orbit, Alaska and Hawaii admitted to Union as 49th and 50th states, Peace Corps created, first man in space flight, Soviet Maj. Yuri Gagarin.

First American in space, Alan Shepard, first American to orbit earth, John Glenn, Nuclear Test Ban Treaty signed, JFK assassinated by Lee Harvey Oswald, Civil Rights Act and Voting Rights Acts passed, Medicare established, Rev. Martin Luther King assassinated in Memphis, Tenn.

American astronauts Neil Armstrong and Edwin Aldrin were the first men to walk on the moon, President Nixon visited Red China, end of U. S. involvement in Vietnam, Nixon resigns presidency, Suez Canal opened after 6 year closure, Bi-centennial celebration, 200th anniversary of the Declaration of Independence, Viking I landed on Mars, Energy Department created, Panama Canal treaties signed, U. S. formally recognized Communist mainland China, Space Shuttle "Columbia" maiden voyage, first woman appointed to the Supreme Court, Sandra Day O'Conner, Vietnam Memorial dedicated, President Reagan submitted $1 trillion budget to Congress.

1. Blaine's birth year 1883 is the year George Catlin's Indian Gallery (450 portraits and some 160 artifacts) created and collected over the six years he portrayed Western tribes, was displayed by the Smithsonian Institution. The display ran to 1890. Bruce Watson, "George Catlin's Obsession," *Smithsonian*, December 2002, 70-79. It was also the year Emma Lazarus wrote the poem "The New Colossus" whose best known lines:

Give me your tired, your poor,
Your huddled masses yearning to breathe free,
The wretched refuse of your teeming shore;
Sent these, the homeless, tempest-tost to me . . .

are engraved on the Statue of Liberty's pedestal. She had written her poem in 1883 to raise money at an auction (it raised $1,500.00) to help pay for a pedestal for Frederic Auguste Bartholdi's gigantic "Liberty Enlightening the World" formally given to the people of the United States by the people of France in 1884. The statue was dedicated October 28, 1886 and her poem was not read or even alluded to. Instead, President Grover Cleveland emphasized the spread of American ideals.

Emma died of cancer in 1887, age 38, and it was not until 1903 that "The New Colossus" plaque was placed on an interior wall of the pedestal. It was ignored until the 1930s when Europeans seeking asylum from Fascist persecution began arriving in large numbers. Then, recognized as expressing the statue's true intention, it was quoted in speeches and set to music by Irving Berlin and in 1986 the plaque was moved to an introductory exhibit in the pedestal. No one has described the American dream in a more memorable way.

*Not like the brazen giant of Greek fame,**
With conquering limbs astride from
land to land;
Here at our sea-washed sunset-gates
shall stand
A mighty woman with a torch,
whose flame
Is the imprisoned lightning,
and her name
Mother of Exiles. From her
beacon-hand
Glows world-wide welcome, her mild
eyes command
The air-bridged harbor that
twin-cities frame.
"Keep, ancient lands, your storied
Pomp!" cries she
With silent lips, "Give me your tired,
your poor,
Your huddled masses yearning to
breeathe free.
The Wretched refuse of your
teeming shore;
Send these, the homeless, tempest-tost
to me,
I lift my lamp beside the golden door!"

*(*The brazen giant of Greek fame refers to the Colossus of Rhodes, one of the Seven Wonders of the World, a bronze monument to the sun god, destroyed by an earthquake in 226 B.C.)*

2. Blaine's middle name is in honor of James G. Blaine, Representative and Senator from Maine, Secretary of State in the Cabinets of Presidents James Garfield, Chester A. Arthur, and Benjamin Harrison, and unsuccessful Republican nominee for President in 1884. His father, James E., was an early supporter of Blaine's presidential aspirations.
3. Lucien and Sarah (Sheward) Whipple.
4. Edmond G. and his wife Clara B. Fultz; Frank M. and his wife Ellen Naylor; Anna

M. and her husband William W. Fultz.

5. James, Stephen, Oliver, Phebe, Mary, Emily, Susan, Jane, Cynthia, Pamelia, Mariah, and Ellen Sheward.
6. Zoe and Edna Whipple, daughters of Frank and Ellen; Arch, Paul, Frank, James, and Lucien Fultz, children of Anna and William; and Blanche Morris, daughter of Mariah Sheward and William L. Morris.
7. He also gave the author pictures of Blaine as a boy, his parents Jim and Ellen, his grandparents, Lucien and Sarah, and a copy of volume 1 number 1 of the Cayuga *Journal*, founded by Jim in 1887.
8. There were Whipple, McKinley, Edmonds, and Kearns cousins.
9. David H. Montgomery, *The Leading Facts of American History*. Boston: Ginn & Co., 1892.
10. Mary F. Hyde, *Practical Lessons In The Use Of English for Grammar Schools With Supplement*. Boston: D. C. Heath & Co., 1890.
11. Alonzo Reed, *Higher Lessons In English*, 1877, 1895.
12. Emerson E. White (1829-1902). The name of the first book was *A Primary Arithmetic* published in 1868. The second was named *A New Complete Arithmetic* published in 1883, Blaine's birth year.
13. These books ranged in cost from 17 to 85 cents. The copy books cost 6 and 8 cents. *Eagle,* Vinton, Iowa, 16 July 1895.
14. The circus parade was one of the biggest and most anticipated events of the year. It was a colorful, noisy procession of performers, brass bands, jugglers, exotic animals, and the bright, shrill notes of the calliope, and drew young and old to the parade. The massive, ornately decorated circus wagons dazzled the town folk. They featured painted "tableaux" or elaborate hand-carved reliefs and were drawn by teams of draft horses festooned with brightly colored plumes. Whether to purchase big top show tickets with their limited disposable income was a decision often made after observing the splendor of the wagons. More than 200 antique circus vehicles are on display at the Circus World Museum in Baraboo, Wis.
15. A witch; sorceress; fortune teller.
16. Stygian – the infernal regions; helllish.
17. Dante Alighieri (1265-1321), Italian author of the *Inferno, Divine Comedy*, and many other books.
18. *Eagle*, 5 Nov. 1895.
19. *Eagle,* 2 Oct. 1896.
20. It was published by the Student Publishing Co., Detroit, Mich. The subscription was $1 a year.
21. Main street was 100 feet wide, all other streets were 80 feet; alleys were 16 feet wide. Lots were 66 feet on the north and south by 132 feet east and west. The land was originally owned by John Royal and John Graham and the town was surveyed by Joseph O'Brien, deputy county surveyor.
22. Augnst's wife Angeline was a niece of Blaine's grandfather Lucien.
23. Because of the condition of the body, the funeral was held that evening at the family home with 500 friends in attendance. He was buried in the family plot at Maplewood Cemetery. *Eagle,* 18 and 22 June 1897. Rene was the oldest son of William P. and Katherine (Joyce) Whipple. When his father was informed of the tragedy, he initially though it was his younger son Milo who had died because Rene was the more obedient of the two sons and his father couldn't visualize him going back into deep water so soon after lunch. Interview with William P. Whipple II at Cedar Rapids, Iowa 21 Aug. 2005.
24. *Eagle,* 31 May, 3 & 10 June 1898.
25. Blaine was promoted to corporal on October 20, 1901, sergeant on February 20, 1902,

first sergeant on August 5, 1911, battalion sergeant major on July 30, 1912, and Second Lieutenant and battalion quartermaster office on September 25, 1914. His father was quartermaster sergeant in the Spanish American War and his grandfather Lucien was quartermaster sergeant in the Civil War. The 49th became the 53rd infantry in 1904. His second enlistment was 21 Sept. 1902; third 16 Dec. 1904; fourth 20 Jan. 1908; fifth 30 March 1910; sixth 30 March 1913. Statement of service for L. Blaine Whipple supplied by letters to the author dated 14 Feb. and 5 March 1975 from the Headquarters Iowa National Guard, Office of the Adjutant General, Camp Dodge, P.O. Box 616, Des Moines, Iowa 50303. Letters in possession of the author in 2005. (Hereafter Statement of National Guard Service.)

26 An early Tilford Academy catalog stated that "No school in the state affords such excellent advantages for a complete education." It described the academic course as being designed for young people who "desire a strong practical education to enable them to perform intelligently all the duties of life. This course includes all the common English branches of algebra, geometry, trigonometry, zoology, botany, philosophy, chemistry, rhetoric, astronomy, and geology." Every day at 11:30 the entire school met in the assembly room for half an hour of compulsory penmanship.

27. Tilford also offered a commercial course in business, a normal course to train teachers, shorthand and typewriting, music, fine art, and a course to prepare teachers to pass the state examination. Catalog from Tilford Collegiate Academy, Vinton, Iowa in possession of author.

28. According to Record Book 8 of the Vinton Schools, Blaine was 16 when he enrolled in the Vinton schools on 18 Sept. 1899. Letter to the author from Katherine Peterson, Secretary of Vinton Consolidated Schools, dated 11 Jan. 1957 at Box 360, Vinton, Iowa.

29. Team members; Messrs Whipple, Finley, Oyler, Wood, Snyder, Allen, Kline, Allen, Keer, Stice, and Markham. *Eagle*, 20 Nov. 1900.

30. *Review,* Vinton, Iowa 19 April 1900. A printer's devil is an apprentice responsible for the shop's drudging tasks, most of which involve printer's ink. He washed forms of inky type and inky presses, cleaned and refilled the ink fountains on those presses, washed the rollers that ink the type, gathered and burned the inky waste paper. In short, at every turn he is working with printer's ink, thick, sticky, and usually black. He could scrub his skin raw but the black ink remained and he looked like an imp of hell, a devil indelibly marked.

31. Today big rolls of paper are fed into the presses and simultaneously printed on both sides.

32. The presses were platen presses, machines with big iron jaws that opened and closed with a simple mechanism of cogs and lever arms. A form of type was locked on the back jaw of the press and soft rollers that had been inked from the ink fountain at the top rolled down and inked the type for each impression. The front jaw or platen had movable guides to hold the paper in position as it was inserted, sheet by sheet. The sheet was printed when the jaws closed and when they opened the sheet was taken out and a fresh one inserted. Once the type was set and the form locked in, the press was started and the operator put sheets in one at a time with his right hand and withdrew it a moment later with his left hand and piled them on a ledge affixed to the front of the press. If the operator missed putting in a sheet or placed one in crooked, a throw-lever on the press prevented the impression being made. The secret of feeding the press was rhythm. Hands had to work together even though they were doing different things.

33. Jim became Deputy County Recorder 7 Jan. 1907. The duties were full time so he had to give up editing the paper.

34. The Panic of 1907 was of such severity it focused public awareness on problems with

the monetary and banking system. Although the issue of a Central Bank was unpopular because of its connotations of powerful central authority, Congress was forced to act. The Aldrich-Vreeland Act, passed in May 1908 provided for the issuance of emergency currency and created a bipartisan National Monetary Commission to study central banking and other alternatives for monetary banking. The final result of the Panic was the Federal Reserve Act of 1913.

35. *Eagle,* 11 Feb. 1898.
36. *Review*, 29 Nov. 1900.
37. *Eagle,* 28 Feb. 1902; 17 March 1903; 15 July 1904.
38. 1903 is the year the Wright Brothers proved at Kitty Hawk that men could fly.
39. "Read em and Weep," *The Walsh County Press*, Park River, N. Dak., 12 Nov. 1942. In 1903 Frank James joined Cole Younger in the James-Younger Wild West Show. It started in Chicago in the spring and after a tour of Illinois and a swing into the south, it ended the season in Missouri. William A. Settle, Jr., *Jesse James Was His Name.* Columbia, Mo.: University of Missouri Press, 1966, 25-6. The show was owned by professional showmen from Chicago. Frank and Cole were paid for being with it. Cole Younger did not appear in the performance but walked here and there in the tent, now and then waving a hand or speaking to the people he knew. Frank James took a prominent part. Both were prohibited from carrying revolvers. Homer Croy, *Jesse James Was My Neighbor.* New York: Duell, Sloan & Pearce, 1949, 212-13.
40. *Eagle*, 16 Dec. 1904; 28 March 1905; 21 & 25 April 1905; *Review,* 27 April 1905.
41. Repertoire – the stock of plays, roles, songs, operas, etc. a company is familiar with and ready to perform. Traveling repertory was a great training ground for actors and provided live entertainment for areas starving for it. A typical company would stay a week in a small town and put on a different show each night. The companies were small – usually five men and three women so plays were written for this type of cast — and actors helped pack, sell tickets and candy, "doubled in brass" or vaudeville as well as acted. The Museum of Repertory America is at Mt. Pleasant, Iowa.
42. The author wrote to the publisher Robert Cox 20 Aug. 1990 asking for access to the publication so he could do further research on his father's acting career. He received a reply from Mrs. Robert Cox, 1215 5th Ave. N., Estherville, Iowa 51344, 25 Sept. 1990 informing him her husband had died in December 1989 and she had yet to make a decision to make the books available for research. She said she had received many similar requests, that the books were "in a delicate condition and very important to the history of the Tent Show Days."
43. Proscenium – the apron of a stage; the plane separating the stage proper from the audience and including the arch and the curtains.
44. Instead of using conventional scene paint which cracked and flaked when taken down and rolled up they used the dyes available in any drugstore under the trade name Diamond Dyes. It was invented by Jesse Cox in Esterville, Iowa. This scenery was hung from battens, could be folded after the show closed, and packed into trunks. It enabled the companies to advertise "Carloads of Spectacular Scenic and Dramatic Effects. Jere C. Mickel, *Footlights On the Prairie*, North Star Press, St. Cloud, Minn., 1974, 45-6.
45. Make-up added glamour to the actors' personalities; smoothed out wrinkles, refreshed faded complexions, and aided in the creation of character parts. Percy Ewing's establishment in Decatur, Ill was the best known make-up source and he was known throughout the Midwest as the actors' friend in need. Before WWI, express packages could be sent "subject to examination." This allowed the cash-poor actor to order make-up after the first few weeks of the tour when he had money to pay for it.

When the package arrived the express agent opened it and the actor selected what he wanted, paid for it, and the agent sent a money order to Ewing. Mickel, 77.

46. G-string Comedian – Dressed like the Yankee character of the early 19th century; it had no relationship to the term as used today to describe a strip tease artist's smallest piece of body coverning.
47. Toby – A silly kid or light comedy role.
48. Minstrel show costumes were dark, tight-fitting suits with white wing collars, white gloves and curly wigs.
49. Wigs – A curly red one for silly comedy parts, a dark Frenchman's, a white Colonial, a partly bald red one for western roles, and several bald and partly bald ones in grey and white. Letter from Blaine Whipple dated 24 Nov. 1949 at 206 W. 9th St., Mankato, Minn. To Truly Trousdale Latchaw of White Bear Lake, Minn; copy in possession of the author in 2005. Ms. Latchaw was doing research for a book on the Trousdale Brothers show business careers. (Hereafter Blaine Whipple Letter.)
50. Mickel, 75.
51. They played in Minnesota at: Madison, Montevideo, Appleton, Ortonville, and Wheaton; and in North Dakota at Whapeton, Mayville, Portland, Northwood, Sharon, Aneta, Hope, and Finley.
52. Pearl White, a famous star of the silent screen, best known for her *Perils of Pauline* films, joined the Trousdale Stock Company in Galena, Kansas in April 1907. She lasted about eight weeks before being fired in Emporia. She later rejoined the company in Topeka as a replacement for the woman who had replaced her. This job didn't last long but she got her "salary and a wonderful thrill on the opening and closing nights." Pearl White, *Just Me,* George H. Doran Company, New York, 1919, 69, 79.
53. Spirit Lake, Milford, Spencer, Hartley, Emmestburg, Lakeview, Deep River, and Buxton, all in Iowa.
54. Blaine Whipple Letter.
55. Blaine Whipple Letter.
56. They bought a 60 foot round top with two 30 feet middle pieces from the Golmer Bros. Circus that had been used as a horse tent. Blaine Whipple Letter. A roundtop tent had both front and back ends exactly the same. Their chief handicap was the center pole in front of the stage area obscured the view of some of the audience. The invention of the dramatic end tent, which replaced the center pole with masts at each side of the stage opening, eliminated this problem.
57. Repertoire – All the stock of plays, roles, songs, etc. that a company is familiar with and ready to perform.
58. Prices for the *Wizard of Wall Street:* gallery, 25¢, first seven rows of parquet 35¢, balance of parquet and dress circle, 50¢. Manager Whipple guaranteed the attraction "to be clean, moral, and refined" and to "refund money to any patron the least dissatisfied." *Review* 29 Jan. and 12 Feb. 1908.
59. Henry Ford introduced his Model T in 1908 and the age of motoring began. The new game of ping pong was also introduced about this time.
60. Blaine played a Negro in *The Counterfeiters*, a young American in *Graustark*, and a comedy Negro in *KuKluxKlan*. The latter was a dramatization of *The Clansman*, a popular novel at the time. Blaine Whipple Letter.
61. *The Counterfeiters; Graustark; A Little Child Shall Lead Them; Lost Paradise; The Girl I Left Behind; Broken Heart; Teddy; The Man From The North; Out On the Hills; Astray; In a Race for a Princess; The Devil's Webb; the Klansman (KKK); David Harum; Sealed Lips; The Avengers; and Wildcat.*
62. Trousdale Brothers Collection, University of Iowa Library Special Collections, Iowa

City, Iowa.

63. March receipts averaged $340 weekly (1,350 patrons at an average ticket price of 25¢ and 971 at 35¢); April $375.weekly, (1,500 at 25¢ and 1,071 at 35¢).
64. The airdome in Jefferson City was near Governor Herbert Hadley's home and the Governor often stopped by to visit with the actors between scenes. Blaine Whipple Letter.
65. Reprinted in the *Review* of 12 Aug. 1908.
66. Frank Moore later became an actor's agent in Kansas City. Blaine Whipple Letter.
67. *American Heritage*, Nov. 1996.
68. Many of the horses are sweating profusely as they labor in the heat and humidity. Most are urinating an defecating — horses produce about two gallons of urine and 20 pounds of excrement a day. Some dray animals die in harness and may lie on the street for a day or two, selling and stinking, and covered with flies before being removed.
69. In 1912 Carl Graham Fisher, President of the Prest-o-Lite carbide headlight manufacturing company and founder of the Indianapolis 500 advocated a road from the Atlantic to the Pacific on a "rock highway." He was soon joined by Henry Joy, Packard Motor Car Co. President, and they proposed a 3,389-mile route starting in New York City's Times Square, spanning the Hudson river via ferries, climbing the nearly 3,000-foot ridges of the Allegheny Mountains, traversing the mammoth mid western prairie, crossing he deserts of Utah and Nevada, and weaving through the Sierra Nevada mountains before ending in San Francisco. While audacious, the proposal was prescient. In 1912 those who wanted to travel quickly and comfortably across country went by train. The 901,000 cars operating in 1912 tripled by 1915 and by 1920 automobile registration exceeded 8-million. Phillip Langdon, "Westward on the Old Lincoln Highway," *American Heritage*, April 1995, 49-50.
70. Seven Innovations That Made Automobile History: **Self-starter 1911**. The driver had to crank the first cars to start them. If the car was in gear or the driver forgot to retard the spark the cranker could easily break a bone. Charles Kettering of Dayton, Ohio made a modest battery deliver a short intense burst of power that started the engine. His starter was installed on the 1912 Cadillac and virtually every American car had a self-starter, except the Model T by 1916. **V-8 Engine 1914**. As Americans demanded more power manufacturers moved from 2 to 4 cylinders, the early standard, then to 6, 8, and more. The V-8 appeared in 1907 but it was 1914 before it became standard on Cadillacs and remained a luxury until the 1932 Ford. Ford cast the engine in a single block, making big-car power cheap enough for everyone able to afford a new vehicle. **4wheel hydraulic brakes 1920.** Initially, braking was pressing something against the wheel rim but these brakes wore unevenly, pulling to one side and often broke. Stopping took a strong forearm and plenty of space between cars. Malcolm Loughead (later changed to Lockheed) patented a braking system in 1918 which transmitted fluid pressure from the driver's foot to all 4 wheels. The 1922 Dusenberg was the first to use the system and the 1924 Chrysler Six was the first production car to use it. Ford didn't make the change until 1939. **Balloon Tires 1923.** The early cars had bicycle-style pneumatic tires about 4 inches wide using 60 lbs. of pressure. At 20 miles per hour over rutted roads it was intolerable and the public demanded improvement. Harvey S. Firestone developed a balloon tire in 1923. It was 6 inches wide, made with belts of cord fabric that only required 30 lbs. of pressure. They didn't blow out as often so fixing flats was no longer routine on excursions and spares went from the fender or running board to the trunk. **Duco lacquer 1923.** Ford produced black cars because black lacquer dried faster vs drying time of a week applying varnish. GM introduced Duco laquer on its Oakland line in 1923 which reduced drying time to hours. By 1935 heat lamps made drying time a 5-minute step. **Automatic transmis-**

sion 1939. Changing speeds and road conditions required different gear ratios which required manual shifting. If you didn't do it right, your gears were be stripped. Cadillac introduced Synchromesh in 1929 which kept all gears in place – the unused ones turning freely on the shaft – made shifting easier and less perilous but still required simultaneous manipulation of the accelerator, the clutch, and the shift lever. Semautomatic transmissions appeared in the mid 1930s. The first fully automatic fluid-operated transmission appeared in the 1940, Oldsmobile Hydra-Matic. **Air conditioning 1950s.** Packard introduced modern automotive air conditioning in 1939 to little public interest. It was revived as a luxury in the early 1950s. Ford and GM first offered factory a/c in 1953 and today it is nearly universal. Frederic D. Schwarz, *American Heritage,* Nov. 1996, 48-54.

71. "So you have been talking to Blaine Whipple – what a fellow. A swell guy, and what a fine job he did when he was a special announcer on my network radio show. He is a veteran who should be on Broadway or out in Hollywood doing character parts." Letter to Truly (Trousdale) Latchaw (2562 S. Shore Blvd., White Bear Lake 10, Minn.), dated 29 May 1951 at 322 3rd St. NE., Mason City, Iowa from Col. Irving "Speed" Wallace. Letter in possession of the author in 2005. Wallace wrote the best-sellers *Mexico Today, Wing of Scarlet,* and *Mystery in the Tropics.* His articles appeared in leading publications including *Saturday Evening Post, Collier's, Cosmopolitan, Liberty, True, Nation's Business, Argosy, County Gentlemen, True Detective, True Crime, Western Family, Aviation Week, Boys Monthly, Mechanics Illustrated* and many others.
72. Interlocutor: A person taking part in a conversation or dialogue; an entertainer in a minstrel show who serves as master of ceremonies and as a foil for the end men. End men: the comic performer in a minstrel show at each end of the first row, for whom the interlocutor serves as a foil.
73. Olio: a medley or miscellany as of musical numbers
74. Blaine Whipple Letter.
75. "Mr. Blaine Whipple, son of Mr. and Mrs. James E. Whipple, was married at Beatty, Kan. 18 Dec. 1908 to Miss Lillian Le Febre of Kansas City. The bride is a member of the theatrical troupe of which Mr. Whipple is manager. The troupe is located at Kansas City for the winter. The many friends of Mr. Whipple in Vinton will send congratulations to the happy couple. Mr. Whipple has been in dramatic work for some time and has met with great success." *Eagle,* 25 Dec. 1908.
76. Gustav E. Kloss was born in Germany and came with his parents to the U.S. at age 9. He died 23 May 1937. In 1891 he joined with other family members in the dairy business in Chicago. At age 20 he was employed by the Monarch Cold Storage Co., and later by the Northwest Elevated Lines, both in Chicago. He eventually became Superintendent of motive power for a mine in Mexico where he remained for five years. Upon returning to the U.S., he did construction work for the Baker Ice Machine Co. and in 1914 became Superintendent for the Franklin Ice Cream Co., in Kansas City for eight years. Blaine joined his step father-in-law working for the Dried Milk Co., in Tonganski, Kans. and Springfield, Mo. Gustav also served as President of the National Association of Practical Refrigerating Engineers.
77. Death Certificate D No. 00722, File No. 33268-1909. Department of Health, Bureau of Vital Statistics, Department 050 Org 2000, 2400 Troost St., Ste. 1200, Kansas City, Mo.
78. Events of the 1910 decade – Mark Twain and O'Henry died in 1910, Caruso sang Puccini's new opera, *Girl of the Golden West*, at the Metropolitan, and Fanny Brice starred in *The Ziegfield Follies* of 1910. John and Ethel Barrymore were Broadway idols. Between 1910 and 1920, jazz came out of the South and developed into the

well-known derivatives danced to from the days of Irving Berlin's *Alexander's Ragtime Band* in 1911, through the Harlem nightclub era of the 1920. The motion picture had developed from a 12-minute flickering nickelodeon novelty, *The Great Train Robbery* in 1903 into the art form created by D.W. Griffith in his full-length *Birth of a Nation.* Aided by the popularity of Lillian Gish, Mary Pickford, Charlie Chaplin, Fatty Arbuckle, Douglas Fairbanks, and others, motion pictures were becoming the world's favorite form of entertainment.

79. According to the 1910 Iowa federal census, James E. and Ellen were living in a rented house at 100 E. Jefferson. Living with them were Blaine, 26, Lillian, 22, and Mamie J. Thompson, 30. Lillian was identified as a daughter-in-law who was self-employed salesman at a news stand. Mamie was listed as a niece, single, and unemployed.
80. Market Street was later renamed Third street. James and Ellen were living at 612 E. Jefferson in 1913. Jefferson was later renamed Fourth street.
81. *Eagle,* 1 Nov. 1911. James died 20 Feb. 1983 in Pineallas, Fla., survived by daughter Nancy (Whipple) Nuce and sons James Michael, Jay Allen, and Jerry William. All live in Florida. Elaine, widow of Stephen West, lives on a farm in Mt. Vernon, Iowa and winters in Tucson, Ariz.
82. *Eagle,* 9 June 1914. Iowa was a state notoriously challenging to automobile travel. The rich, deep topsoil, while great for farming, was nearly impassable for motor vehicles. Guide books in the 1910s and '20s warned drivers caught in a rain storm to save their temper by stopping until the roads dried rather than get mired in mud. In 1900 there were about 200 miles of paved roads in the entire country outside of cities. There was little need as only 4,000 cars were manufactured that year. However, by 1910, 187,000 cars were produced in a single year, causing a demand for good roads. By the 1920s a system of interstate highways – greatly improved and expanded in the 1950s – was beginning to take shape. Gasoline was purchased at general stores, bicycle shops, and blacksmiths until 1905, the year the first gas stationed opened in St. Louis. By 1913 the big oil companies began opening their own stations. John Steele Gordon, "Engine of Liberation," *American Heritage,* Vol. 47, No. 7, November 1966, 45.
83. "The crystal radio set was like a big spool with a square board on the top and bottom. The round part was wrapped with copper wire and the crystal was mounted on top." Interview with Elaine (Whipple) West.
84. His father retired from the National Guard with the rank of Major 1 April 1911 following his first stroke. Statement of National Guard Service.
85. Blaine Whipple Letter.
86. Elaine and Jim enrolled in Lincoln elementary school in January 1916 in Davenport, Iowa. She was five years and five months old in the first grade and Jim was four years four months in kindergarten. The family lived at 607 LeClair Street and Blaine was employed as a deputy with the Metropolitan Life Insurance Company of New York. They were discharged from Lincoln 9 March. [Letter to the author from Susan Scott, Pupil Records, Davenport Community School District dated 17 Feb. 1987 at 1002 W. Kimberly Rd., Davenport, Iowa 52806.] and enrolled at Willard school in Moline, Illinois 13 March where they stayed until May 1917. While in Moline they lived at three different addresses and changed school with each move. They lived at 1622 15th St. A, 2407 7th Ave., and 841-1/2 18th Ave. [Information provided the author by Office Records, Moline Public Schools, Moline, Ill.] Moline is across the Mississippi river from Davenport. They lived in Tonganoxie, Kans. in 1918. The author was unsuccessful in obtaining records from the Tonganoxie school system. They enrolled in Woodland school in Kansas City, Missouri 9 Sept. 1919 until 29 March 1920 when they transferred to Horace Mann school. They lived at 1515 E. 10th and 2115 E. 36th in

Kansas City. [Pupil Records, School District of Kansas City, 1211 McGee St., Kansas City, Mo. 64106.] The school records state Blaine was a salesman. They moved to Canton, Kansas in the middle of April where Jim, but not Elaine, was enrolled the last month of the 1920 school year. [Letter to the author from Don Margreiter, Supt. Of Schools, Canton - Galva Unified School Dist. 419, P. O. Box 317, Canton, Kan. 67428.] Both began classes 6 Sept. 1920 in Hutchinson, Kansas. [Grade Record provided to the author by the Public Schools of Hutchinson, Kansas 16 Feb. 1987.] Jim was run over by a truck when they lived in this town which caused him ongoing medical problems the rest of his life.. Their time in Hutchinson was short as they moved to Springfield, Missouri where both were enrolled in the fourth grade at Campbell school. They were living at 627 S. Campbell St. [Letter to the author from Ardell Tilyeu, Records Dept., Pupil Personnel Services, Springfield Public Schools, Kraft Administrative Center, 940 N. Jefferson, Springfield, Mo. 65802-3790.] The family lived in Joplin, Mo. in 1921. [Letter to the author dated 27 Feb. 1987 from Margaret W. Emerson, president, Joplin Genealogical Society, P.O. Box 152, Joplin, Mo. 64802 wherein she wrote that the family was included in Leshnick's *Joplin City Directory* 1921. Publishers and Compilers, Leshnick Directory Co. 514 Main St. Peoria, Ill.] No Joplin school records were found.

Both entered the sixth grade at Jackson school in Cedar Rapids, Iowa October 1, 1923 and completed the sixth grade there and the seventh, and eighth grades at McKinley junior high school. Despite all the interruption of their schooling, they were able to keep pace with the educational requirements of the time. Both entered the 10th grade at Cedar Rapid's Washington high school in the fall of 1927 and were graduated 4 June 1930. Jim was a member of the Academian, a reporter on the *Pulse*, and a cheer leader. [Letter to the author dated April 21, 1987 from Student Services, Educational Service Center, 346 Second Ave. S.W., Cedar Rapids, Iowa 52404.]

87. The family lived at 607 LeClaire Street.
88. Elaine remembers she had her tonsils and adenoids removed when they lived in Iowa City.
89. Tonganoxie is named for Chief Tonganoxie of the Delaware tribe. The town was founded 21 July 1866 by the Delaware's who were living in the area as early as 1824. The stage line began stopping at chief Tonganoxie's tavern about 1845. The dairy industry was important. Butter and ice cream mix were shipped to markets on the Kansas City Northwestern Railroad. The Tonganoxie Creamery was on First and Main streets and the Star Creamery on E. Fourth street. John Lenahan Cass, Sr., *Yesteryears, A Pictorial History of the Tonganoxie, Kansas Community*, 1981.
90. No school records were available from either Iowa City or Tonganoxi. Most of the family got "war flu" in Tonganoxi.
91. They had 3 different addresses in Kansas City: 1515 E. 10th, 3541 Olive St., and 2115 E. 36th St.
92. Prohibition became law in 1920 and produced exactly the opposite results of those intended. Speakeasies multiplied as people responded to the dare of illegal drinking, even at the risk of drinking the bootleg brew that poisoned 2,000 in 1926.
93. The *Joplin City Directory* of 1921 listed seven Whipple families but it's possible two of them may be the same family. There are listings for Whipple, L. Blaine (Lillian) at 119 N. Byers Ave. He was identified as a commercial traveler; and Whipple, Lucien D. (Lillian) at 2231 Pearl Ave. He was Assistant Manager of Hanks-Maxwell Rock Products Co. Elaine remembers the family lived in two different houses in Joplin. Neither family was in the 1922 city directory.
94. Marceline was in Linn county and was incorporated 6 March 1888. The first town lot was sold 28 Jan. 1888. Within six months 2,000 people lived there. The Atchison,

Topeka & Santa Fe Railroad served the town. Its Division offices were located there. Local coal mines were the source of fuel for the railroad. The town acquired its water works in 1909 and four blocks of streets were paved in 1912. Marceline, including its township, had a population of 4,382 in 1923, the county had 24,778. There were 462 Negroes and 284 illiterates in the county which had 6,091 dwellings occupied by 6,342 families. It had 2,513 farms. *The Marceline Herald*, Marceline, Missouri, 13 July 1923, [Hereafter *Herald.*] The Herald is on microfilm and available from the Missouri State Historical Society.

Marceline's B.B. Putman Memorial Hospital opened Monday 22 Jan. 1923. The town had a steam laundry and paid its Superintendent of schools $2,800 annually. The silent movie *The Battle Cry of Peace* was shown in Marceline in 1916. It was a dramatic photoplay designed to arouse the patriotism of Americans. It included views of Washington, Lincoln, Dewey, and many others and emphasized the violence wives, daughters, mothers, and sisters would be subjected to in the event of an invasion. An aeroplane ride over New York City, a submarine surfacing, torpedoes being launched, forts in action, battleship maneuvers, and Army drills were shown.

The average wage for Marceline railroad workers in 1915:

	Passenger	Freight	Yard
Engineers	$2,038	$1,737	$1,218
Conductors	$1,772	$1,624	$1,292
Firemen	$1,218	$973	$832
Brakemen	$921	$1,000	$1,026

Ice boxes with inside measurements of 22 FI inches long, 16 FI inches wide, and 14 inches deep, with ample room for 50 lbs of ice and 50 lbs of food sold for $6.55 in 1916 at the Marceline Artificial Ice Co. B.J. Thomas, tailor, charged from $13.50 to $18 for a 2-piece tailor made suit. A package of Chesterfield cigarettes cost 10¢. A customer at Snyder's Novelty Store could buy a garden hoe and rake, a good house broom, an oil floor mop, or seven bars of laundry soap for 25¢. A 42-piece dinner set cost $3.50, a 56-piece $8. A 96-piece Bavarian china set, $12, an assortment of candy, 25 flavors to choose from, 10¢ lb. June 5, 1917 was the day fixed for all men from age 21 to 31 to register for military duty. Registration was required regardless of physical condition. Those refusing to register were subject to a year's imprisonment. In February 1918 the Marceline State Bank advertised "Baby Bonds;" $5.00 bonds cost $4.13 and mature 1 Jan. 1923 paying 4% interest compounded quarterly. Those who didn't have $4.13 could buy 16 25¢ stamps and exchange them for a bond when paying the additional 13¢ at the end of February and 14¢ the end of March. In April 1918, responding to a wheat shortage, the government promoted wheat-less meals. All meals wheat-less Monday and Wednesday; one meal wheat-less Tuesday, Thursday, Friday, and Saturday. People were asked not to eat bread, crackers, pastry, or breakfast containing wheat. Anheuser-Busch closed it various plants 1 Dec. 1918 after president Wilson issued a proclamation prohibiting the manufacture of cereal beverages. Various issues of *The Marceline Herald* between 1916 through 1918.

95. *Herald*, 6 April 1923.
96. Lloyd King was a Marceline native and had just completed his freshman year at the U. of Missouri journalism school where he would return in the fall. *Herald* 4 May 1923.
97. Sheets, who was then editor of *The Bevier Appeal,* visited Marceline 7 July. In a brief notice in the issue of 13 July Blaine wrote that he "was especially glad to see Mr. Sheets, as we were boys together back in the old home town. Mr. Sheets learned the rudiments of the art preservative on the newspaper published by the *Herald* editor's father."
98. *Herald* 27 April 1923.

99. *Herald*, 4 May 1923.
100. *Herald,* 18 May 1923.
101. Display advertising was steadily growing. Miss Roots Toggery Shop purchased a large institution ad with no prices; Marceline Ice & Fuel Co. advertised coal screened lump, delivered for $7.50 a ton, slack $2.50. Our coal is clean, no rock, no sulphur. We want your coal business, and can make prompt deliveries; Pendleton Hardware Co., Peninsular flat finish point; The Electric Shop, wiring, repairing, supplies; Marceline Trust Co.; W.E. Parks, office work notary public, and insurance; Frank van Tiger, experienced live stock and general auctioneer; B. J. Thomas, tailor, a cleaner, and presser; Earl Riddle, cash paid for your old stove, range, or refrigerator; Woodstock Typewriter Co.; Red Crown gasoline; Southwestern Bell Telephone Co.; Oliver Cramer, Ladies Ready to Wear; H.S. Sportsman, livestock auctioneer; Col. John Bixmann, auctioneer; Dr. H.V. Jones, Dentist; Dr. E.R. Greenman, Dentist; Central Hardware Co., radio sets; Dr. Elizabeth Todd, Osteopathic; Lillards Confectionery; Albert Zurcher, Jeweler and Optometrist; Hise's Real Estate and Insurance Agency; Royal Baking Powder; Dodds Furniture Store; Cater Theatre, prices 20¢ and 40¢; Staats Grocery Co., no sale items listed; T.M. Ludden, Real Estate, Loans, and Insurance; Fletchers Castoria; Lucky Strike; Raws Café; First National Bank; Central Bakery; Claud Dail Mens Wear; Kreig Shoe Shop; Myers Clothing Co.; Wright & Downing Quality Food Store; The Ice Plant; Linn Co. Lumber Co.; Sig Steiner Shoe Store. Line ads appeared throughout the local columns: obituaries, resolutions, and card of thanks and were charged at 6¢ a line; 10¢ if in black type or on page one.
102. *Herald,* 18 May 1923.
103. H*erald* 25 May and 1 June 1923. Thompson Motor Co. advertised used Fords for sale on 1 June: 1923 Touring Starter, $300; 1922 Touring Starter, $250; 1921 Touring Starter, $175; 1917 Touring Regular, $75; 1919 Maxwell, $100.
104. The City Attorney had recommended banning the use of iron pipe in the water mains on paved streets. Aldermand Hosford introduced a resolution that lead pipes be used in all future installations. *Herald,* 8 and 22 June 1923. In 1986 the Environmental Protection Agency warned the American public about the dangers of lead in their drinking water. The Agency called the metal highly toxic and said it caused damage to the nervous system and could cause mental retardation, high blood pressure, liver and kidney disease, strokes, and other problems and prohibited the use of lead pipes or plumbing joints to provide drinking water.
105. *Herald,* 15 June 1923.
106. The plans provided for two main trunk lines and two disposal plants – one on the east side of town, the other on the southwest side — at a cost of approximately $55,000. Bonds to improve the water system amounted to $20,000 and would enlarge the present reservoir assuring the city sufficient water in the future. *Herald,* 24 Aug. 1923.
107. *Herald,* 1 and 15 June 1923.
108. The speed limit was 15 mph in residential areas, 12 mph in the business district. *Herald*, 26 June and 6 and 20 July 1923,
109. Prices of the Overland models: Touring $425, Roadster $525 ($5,800 in 2005), Coup $795, Sedan $860, Red Bird $750. Willys-Knight models: 5-passenger Touring $1235, 3-passenger Roadster $1235, 7-passenger Touring $1435, 5-passenger Country Club $1635 ($18,062 in 2005), 5-passenger Coupe-Sedan $1595, 5-passenger Sedan $1995. All prices f.o.b. factory. *Herald,* 3 Aug. 1923.
110. *Herald,* 10 Aug. 1923.
111. *Herald*, 17 Aug. 1923.
112. *Herald,* 10 Aug. 1923.

113. Arthur M. Hyde was a lawyer and governor of Missouri 1921-25. He was President Herbert Hoover's Postmaster General. Charles Gates of Illinois was Coolidge's running mate in 1924.
114. *Herald*, 17 Aug. 1923.
115. *Herald,* 24 Aug. 1923.
116. *Herald,* 7 Sept. 1923.
117. *Herald,* 24 Aug. 1923.
118. School staff: G.H. Merideth Superintendent, Mrs. Fleeta Taylor Principal at Central with teachers (all Miss.) Faye Pratt 7th grade, Opal Jenkins 6th, and Frances Faith 5th. Miss Muade Cook was Principal of Park school with teachers (all Miss) Lillian Nichols 7th and 8th, Helen Montgomery 6th and 7th, and Margaret Day 5th and 6th. *Herald,* 7 Sept. 1923.
119. *Herald,* 7 Sept. 1923.
120. *Herald,* 31 Aug. and 7 Sept. 1923.
121. *Herald* 21 Sept. 1923.
122. The last 1923 issue of the *Herald* microfilmed by the Missouri Historical Society is dated 21 Sept. 1923. Blaine is on the masthead as editor and publisher. No further issues are microfilmed until 15 Feb. 1924 with H.C. Webster, editor and owner on the masthead.
123. The Apperson car was built in Kokomo, Ind. by Elmer and Edgar Apperson They were the actual mechanics who built the cars, closing their plant in 1926. Among their cars were the Apperson Eight touring car and the Apperson "Jackrabbit," a faster and sportier car named after their first cousin, Jessie Apperson.
124. The Orepheum Circuit was tops in the vaudeville world.
125. The Majestic Theater was built in 1909 at a cost of $150,000.00. The first boulevard lights in Cedar Rapids were installed by the Theater on the west side of Third street leading from First Ave. to the theater entrance. In those years vaudeville was the stepping-stone to fame for most actors and actresses. They did two shows a day, six or seven acts to a program, and two program changes a week. The building was gutted by fire in May 1934 and was razed in December 1935. *Cedar Rapids Gazette* 22 Dec. 1935.
126. "My friend editor Blaine Whipple of Watford City (N.Dak.) traveled over much of the country on lecture tours with the famed William Jennings Bryan. Bryan did the talking, Blaine did the work." *The Walsh County Press*, Park River, N. Dak., 12 Nov. 1942. The Redpath Lyceum Bureau was founded in 1868 by James Redpath. He divided the business into three sections in 1901 with a head office in Boston, the second in Philadelphia and sold a third share to Keith Vawter who called it Chautauqua after the permanent establishment on Chautauqua Lake in New York. Under Vawter's direction it became the Lyceum without a pulpit and show business without the ballyhoo of P. T. Barnum. Redpath Chautauqua Collection, Special Collections Department, University of Iowa Libraries, Iowa City, Iowa. Included are approximately 200 boxes of posters, programs, handbills, financial records, numerous personal letters, etc. donated by the Keith Vawter family of Cedar Rapids. [Hereafter Chautauqua Collection.]
127. Circuit or tent chautauqua became a major influence about 1913. It reached its peak attendance in 1920-'24. Twenty-one companies operated 93 circuits in the U.S. and Canada in 1920. Programs were presented in 8,580 towns to 35,449,750 people. It seldom played in towns over 5,000 and was generally ignored or misunderstood by the metropolitan press. Chautauqua Collection.
128. Over supply was a major reason for Chautauqua's decline. As the numbers increased, the balance between education and entertainment shifted towards entertainment and the quality decreased. Another reason was the country was changing. The small town,

the little red school house, evangelistic christianity, and Wm. J. Bryan were losing their grip. Farm and small town isolation was changed by rural free delivery, rural electrification, mail order catalogues, hard surface roads, automobiles and trucks, the telephone, radio, talking motion pictures, golf courses, and summer vacation trips. Chautauqua Collection.

129. A cooperative contract was signed by various communities and Redpath Vawter to bring the Chautauqua to their towns on specific dates. Following are the contents of a letter from Keith Vawter, manager, dated at Cedar Rapids 20 Sept. 1922 to the Committees in the various communities: As a signer of the contract for your Chautauqua for 1923, we beg leave to welcome you to our official family. By signing this contract, you do not guarantee our business. You assure your town of a worth-while Chautauqua; you subscribe to our service; you made your town one of the 90 plus, which have subscribed and who have agreed to cooperate with each other and through us toward making these Chautauquas the very best. The contract provides for an advance sale in your town equal to 70% of the cost of conducting the Chautauqua (said cost being based on the average costs of 1919, '20, and '21); we are to receive all the receipts up to such cost figures, plus a brokerage or a possible profit of 10%; and above this amount the local committee and the management divide equally. Chautauqua Collection.

130. The children's program was known as "Junior Chautauqua." A junior girl took charge of the children for the seven days they were in town. She told them stories, organized games, parties, stunts, folk dances and athletic contests; set up a "junior town" organization with a mayor, town clerk, etc; and directed a pageant which was produced for admiring parents. Chautauqua Collection.

131. Harrison John Thornton, "Chautauqua in Iowa," *Iowa Journal of History and Politics*, 50. April 1952, 97-122. There were at least three other circuits doing Chautauqua in Iowa: Acme Chautauqua in Des Moines, Travers-Newton Chautauqua in Des Moines, and Jones Chautauqua System in Perry. The Redpath Vawter Chautauqua System was dissolved December 1, 1927 by its stockholders in a meeting at Cedar Rapids.

Chautauqua Collection. Circuit or "tent" Chautauqua had its beginning in the Lyceum movement, which started in Massachusetts as early as 1826, and in the Chautauqua Assemblies held at Lake Chautauqua, New York beginning in 1874. Vawter of Cedar Rapids, Iowa launched the first Chautauqua circuit serving a number of towns with a uniform program of talent. Under terms of Vawter's contract, he furnished all talent, tents, advertising, and work crews with the local citizens responsible for selling advance tickets. By 1909 he was selling a seven-day Chautauqua where a tent was set up in a new town on a Monday morning with the Chautauqua ready for business that afternoon. The last program was on Sunday after which the tent was taken down, put into a railroad baggage car, and moved to another town. He improved the program in 1910 by assigning each performer or group to a definite day on the program and they performed in that sequence throughout the season. The tent, but not the talent, remained in town for the week under the supervision of a Superintendent who was in charge of all programs in that town. The talent moved to another town and opened another first day. Vawter's contract required "Guarantors." The final circuit folded its tents in 1932 and the splendor of the tent Chautauqua was over. Robert A. McCown, *Books at Iowa.* Iowa City: University of Iowa, 1973.

132. When the train carrying the first day talent and the baggage arrived in a town early in the morning, there was usually a parade to the Chautauqua grounds. Then the crew (college boys known as the "anvil chorus") erected the huge brown tent usually about 125 by 175 feet. When the tent was up, wooden benches and folding chairs were

set up and a stage or platform erected. The first two rows of seats were reserved for older people and people with hearing difficulties. In the event of a large crowd, the sides of the tents could be raised and people could sit outside. However, a large canvas wall encircled the area of the tent to keep out non ticket holders. Violent rain storms, heavy wind, and tornadoes were feared and eventually the contract provided for a weather committee in each town to warn the superintendent if the weather was too threatening. A tornado once destroyed a Redpath Vawter tent in Woodbine, Iowa. Fortunately it hit after the people were gone. Chautauqua Collection.

133. There were Swiss bell ringers, orchestras, glee clubs, string quartets, grand opera stars such as Madame Schumann-Jeink, oratorio artists, bands (Bohumir Kryl's Bohemian Band was a favorite) and male quartets. One of the most famous male quartets was made up of farm boys from Charles City, Iowa, the Weatherwax Brothers. Chautauqua Collection.

134. It was the quality in the speaker's life and demeanor and words that made men and women want to freshen their ambitions, to aspire a little higher, to become better neighbors and friends, to cleanup the town a bit, to kiss the children when they returned to their homes, and, perhaps, to pray a little more. Chautauqua Collection.

135. Popular lecturers included Maud Ballington Booth, Frank W. Gunsaulaus, Judge Ben B. Lindsey, John T. McCutcheon, Opie Read, Lincoln Steffens, Ida Tarbell, Francis J. Heney, Warren G. Harding, and Robert M. LaFollette. These people needed a hardy physique and a strongly controlled mind to endure the daily grind of a tent circuit. There were many difficulties: insects in the dressing room, the heat of the tents, missed train connections, bad hotels, "greasy spoon" restaurants, few laundry facilities, and constant travel. Chautauqua Collection.

136. Bryan spoke in a deep and solemn tone for he knew he was speaking to the heart of America. He usually spoke twice daily and was often asked to remain in the town of his Saturday night engagement to speak on Sunday. In later years his favorite lecture was "The Prince of Peace." The week after his death the editor of the *Lyceum* magazine noted about half of his speeches were given free or for a charity, and when booked for a stipulated fee he made it a rule never to let a local committee lose anything on his lecture. He kept the price of admission low, usually 25 or fifty cents, never more than $1 for reserved seats; and was generous with his managers, nearly always paying more commissions that the agreement called for. *The Memoirs of William Jennings Bryan*, by Himself and his Wife. New York: Haskell House Publishers Ltd., 1925, 1971. "Chautauqua and Temperance Speaker," Chat. VII. by Mary Baird Bryan.

137. It would be interesting to have overheard some of the conversations Bryan and Blaine had. The author wonders if Blaine ever told "The Great Commoner" that as a 13-year-old he was the Vinton Chairman of the Youth for McKinley Club.

138. Read wrote 37 works of fiction between 1888 an 1940 (the last one published posthumously; 20 works of short fiction between 1890-1919, and two short stories about young adults, *Tom and the Squatters Son* (1910) and *The Gold Gauze Veil* (1927). "Opie (Percival) Read," *Contemporary Authors,* vol 183. Scot Peacock, managing ed. Detroit: Gale, 2000.

139. 1924 and 1925 Cedar Rapids City Directories. His occupation was listed as Manager of the Premier Players. Lillian's occupation was listed as dress maker in 1925.

140. The Elwin Strong Players were known in the business as "the white collar show of the road." In 1906, as Ray Savidge, Strong joined his brother Walter Savidge began trouping with a dramatic show that included a carnival, the only dramatic show to do this. The brothers eventually dissolved their partnership and each trouped his own

shows. Mickel, 198. Blaine was with the Walter Savidge Show in 1927 and 1928.

141. These shows made money and paid better than average salaries. Shows playing in the hinterlands generated more money than Broadway and all the rest of the theater industry combined. It estimated that 400 companies visiting 16,000 communities played to more than 76 million customers. K. C. Young, "Tent Shows." *New York Times,* 21 April 1927.

142. F. Scott Fitzgerald was a popular spokesman for this age. In 1925 his third novel, *The Great Gatsby,* was a best seller as were Aldous Huxley's *Those Barren Leaves*, Anita Loos' *Gentlemen Prefer Blondes*, and Sinclair Lewis' *Arrowsmith.* Women wore short skirts, bobbed hair, plucked eyebrows, and lips crimsoned to a cupid's bow. Long earing were the height of fashion; so were long cigarette holders and even longer necklaces. The in dances were the fox-trot, tango, Charleston, and black bottom.

143. Blaine was living in Maquoketa, Iowa where he worked on the *Maquoketa Excelsior*, published by A.C. McKinney. *Underwood News,* Underwood, N. Dak., 29 Nov. 1934.

144. Hickenlooper (1896-1971) was admitted to the Iowa State Bar in 1922 and began his law practice in Cedar Rapids. He served as governor of Iowa (1943-45) and as U.S. Senator (1945-1966). He was a Republican.

145. The 1926 Cedar Rapids City Directory showed Mrs. Lillian Whipple residing at 801 Camburn St., occupation Dress Maker. The 1927 Directory showed the same resident occupied by Charles H. and Lillian Zastera. Blaine was living in Chicago.

146. Record of Divorce No. 35081, filed in the District Court of Linn County at the Court House, P. O. Box 1468 (Civil), Cedar Rapids, Iowa 53406-1468

147. Author's taped interview with Pearl Whipple in Portland, Oreg. 22 June 1986. Written record of interview in possession of author. [Hereafter Pearl's Interview.]

148. Installment buying, started in a small way in 1915, was widespread by 1927. That year was also historic for Charles Lindberg's solo trans-atlantic flight, and the first talking movie, *The Jazz Singer*, with Al Jolson.

149. Blaine Whipple and Pearl J. Scott Marriage License, 21 Sept. 1927, Vol. 388, Record No. 9-296, State of Nebraska, Department of Public Welfare, Bureau of Health, Division of Vital Statistics, Lincoln, Nebr. Pearl was a Catholic and Blaine a Presbytrerian. He offered to join the Catholic church after they were married but she said it wasn't necessary. They both attended the Catholic church up until the time their fifth and last child, Mary Ann, was born. At that time Pearl left the church and began attending various Protestant denominations. Pearl's mother was a very strong Catholic so they never told any members of the Scott family that Blaine was non Catholic, divorced, and had two other children. Pearl's Interview.

150. The section foreman's house in Douglas had a living room, dining room, and kitchen on the main floor and two big bedrooms on the second floor. We slept four in a bed – two at the top and two at the bottom. I remember our arguments: "Get your feet out of my face! Move over!" And there was no heat upstairs. In the winter we would rush downstairs as fast as we could to get near the stove Some winter winds and blizzards were so bad we went into the root cellar until they ended. To keep the house somewhat warmer, we would pile straw and cow pies along the foundation. Sometimes it was so blustery and snowy we couldn't see across the road as we were walking to school. We didn't have snow pants and we'd sink in up to our knees. Ibid.

151. Ibid.

152. Ibid.

153. There was no gym in the school so all their games were played outside. Ibid.

154. A root cellar was a hole dug in the ground with a dirt top supported by timber. Entry was by a trap door. It was used to store vegetables and fruit.

155. Pearl's Interview.
156. Dray – a horse drawn wagon without sides used to haul freight, personal effects, etc, from the railroad depot to customers. Pearl's younger brother Gordon was in the dray business in Underwood before he became a plumber after WWII.
157. In 2005 it is almost extremely difficult to get through to a live operator when calling a business. Callers are told to press a variety of numbers taking the caller through a multi level of tiers only to be put on hold, waiting, waiting, waiting. The *Wall Street Journal* of 8 May 2002 published "In Search of the Operator" which reported that companies are spending $7.4 billion to make it harder than ever to reach a real person, even when pressing zero. According to reporter Jane Spencer Wells Fargo and Key Corp are charging some customers $1 and $2 if they talk to an agent too many times in one month.
158. Most companies hired unmarried females in the 17-20 age group. An operator who married was expected to resign. The telephone has come a long way since Alexander Graham bell invented the first crude transmitter in 1876. In 1890 a Kansas City undertaker designed the motorized-gear switching system to move telephone calls from one place to another. Today, fibre optic cables with fine glass strands convey information as pulses of light in clear digital language. We place calls from automobiles, ships at sea, airplanes in the air, and fax documents around the world. Millions of people throughout the world, including children, have wireless telephones that they carry with them everywhere. Someday individuals might receive a personal phone number at birth and keep it the rest of their life. Consumer-driven telecommunications is now the electronic lifeblood of commerce throughout the world. Everything depends on it – communications, transportation, education, business, hospitals, etc.
159. Margaret (Dolan) Frick, Mrs. Arthur E. Frick, was a younger sister of Nellie (Dolan) Scott. The Frick's lived in North Minneapolis.
160. Pearl remembers frequently giving her mother facials because she so enjoyed them. Marcel wave - a series of even waves put into the hair with a curling iron. It was the most popular style at that time. It took approximately 45 minutes to do a marcel. Pearl's Interview.
161. When the Pullman Co. wanted to discard a car, it was sold to a Chicago firm, Hotchkiss and Blue. They sold the cars to circuses, dramatic shows, or any other entity that depended on rail travel. Mickel, 39.
162. Walter Savidge started using trains for his combined carnival and dramatic show as early as 1906. He continued to use his 15-car train throughout the 1920s. Savidge dropped the dramatic company and continued with the carnival in 1930, gave up his train, and became motorized. Mickel, 29, 34, 39, 198.
163. Pearl's Interview.
164. The decade of the 1920s was the decade of jazz, big college football games, prizefights, gangster murders, prohibition was at its peak, and people had more money than ever before.
165. The cast: Mr. Baldwin Spears, Mr. Forrest Lewis, Mr. Jack Krall, Mrs. Ollie Newcombe, Miss Sheperd, Miss Bonnie Maie, Miss Fischer, and Mr. Blaine Whipple. Robert Cronkelton was stage manager, Earl Nippert, projectionist, Tom Tucker, electrician, and Fred Castleman, property man.
166. The repertory play above all other things had to be clean. It generally pointed to a moral. The general rule about gags was, "If you are doubtful, its dirty and must not be used." Another measure was, "If you can't tell the story Sunday Morning in church, you can't tell it Monday night on the stage," except maybe in the Saturday night show. Mickel, 68.

167. Shows always presented music, if only a piano and drums. This was necessary between acts Copies of old show bills mentioned are in possession of the author.
168. Birth Certificate No. 077-22833, Registered No. 254, 1 Feb. 1929, Iowa State Dept. Of Health, Des Moines, Iowa. H. R. Peasley, M.D., the attending physician "certified her eyes were treated as prescribed by law."
169. Most people think the stock market crash of 1929 caused the Great Depression of the 1930s. However, the national economy began to move into recession in the summer of 1929 and the Crash of 1929 was an effect, not a cause of the economic forces at work. Blaine, Pearl, and their partners were among the earliest to feel its effects, losing their show business venture and then switching to the world of weekly newspapers to survive the Great Depression.
170. The family moved into the Marley Apartments
171. *Democrat,* Valentine, Nebr., 8 Aug. 1929. The headline on page 1 read BLANE WHIPPLE NEW MAN ON *DEMOCRAT* FORCE. The story: The *Democrat* has employed Blaine Whipple, an experienced newspaperman, as the front office and outside representative. Mr. Whipple will be responsible for the news columns and advertising sections of the paper. In addition to gathering the news of the city and vicinity, he will be available at all times to assist and advise our customers in the preparations of advertisements, either for a single issue or for a persistent campaign. He has made advertising his hobby and has been connected with a number of most excellent newspapers, both in the advertising and editorial departments, where he has been brought into personal contact with the advertising problems of a great many merchants in various lines of business. Mr. Whipple, together with his wife and baby arrived in Valentine Sunday August 4. They are not altogether strangers in the city as they made many friends here when they were here as members of the Walter Savidge Amusement Co. of which Mr. Whipple was the assistant manager. Mr. Whipple came here from Sioux City, Iowa where he was employed by the *Tribune* on special advertising work.
172. Today there is a buffalo herd at the Fort Niobrara National Wildlife Refuge in Nebraska's Sand Hills, a 265-mile wide deposit of sand. It is the largest dune formation in the western hemisphere and the largest tract of relatively undeveloped mixed–grass prairie left in North America. Native plants such as the prairie sand reed, sand bluestem (tufted grasses) and sand love-grass grow here and it is home to bushy-tail woodrats, short-tailed shrews, moles, pocket gophers, grasshopper mice, and several species of pocket mice. The grasshopper mouse, the wolf of the mouse world, is the most carnivorous of its kind. It eats more insects than seeds and even eats other mice. It shrieks in the middle of the night to proclaim its territory which leads to its comparison with wolves. *National Geographic*, Vol. 184, No. 4, October 1993, 110-11.
173. Buroak – White oak with large acorns with fringed cups.
174. Hackberry – A member of the elm family with a small fruit resembling a cherry.
175. Buffaloberry – A shrub of the oleaster family with silvery leaves; its red, fleshy berries are edible.
176. Laszuli Buntings – A brilliantly colored songbird that relies on river and stream bed vegetation and requires a dense thicket for nesting.
177. Western Flycatcher – A small bird that catches insects in flight.
178. The population information is from Ruth E. Harms, Curator, Cherry Co. Historical Society provided to the author in a later dated 23 April 1987 at Box 284, Valentine, Nebr. 69201
179. *Democrat*, 15 Aug., 19 Sept., and 10 Oct, 1929.

180. *Democrat*, 19 Sept. 1929.
181. *Democrat*, 8 Aug. 1929.
182. *Democrat*, 24 Oct. 1929.
183. *Democrat*, 2 May 1929.
184. *Democrat*, 8 and 29 Aug. 1929.
185. *Democrat*, 29 Aug. 1929.
186. *Democrat*, 22 and 29 Aug. 1929.
187. *Democrat*, 29 Aug. 1929.
188. *Democrat*, 8 Aug., 3 and 17 Oct. 1929.
189. The Paleocene Epoch began 65 million years ago after the extinction of the dinosaurs. Mammals that had lived in the shadows of dinosaurs for millions of years eventually evolved into a vast number of different forms to fill the new vacant environmental niches. May early mammal "designs" of this time would soon become extinct; other would survive and evolve into other forms. At the beginning of the Epoch, most mammals were tiny. With time, they grew in size, number, and diversity.
190. *Democrat*, 7 and 14 Nov. 1929. A rectifier converted alternating current to direct current.
191. *Democrat*, 28 Nov. and 5 Dec. 1929.
192. *Democrat*, 9 and 16 Jan. 1930.
193. *Democrat*, 30 Jan. 1930.
194. Bennett county acreage under cultivation was 241,700, up from 120,000 the previous year. Flax was planted on 37,250 acres, wheat 34,300, corn 24,200, oats 12,500, spelt 12,400 (a primitive species of wheat with grains that do not thresh free of the chaff; now seldom cultivated), alfalfa 5,230, rye 4,700, potatoes 300. There were 388 bearing fruit trees. The hog population was 30,500 including 8,000 spring pigs; 23,700 head of cattle including 1,500 milk cows; 6,600 horses including 141 colts; 4,000 sheep including 1.165 lambs; 21,000 chicken; and 3,500 turkeys. *Messenger and Bennett County Review,* Martin, S.D., 30 Jan. 1930. [Hereafter *Messenger.*]
195. *Messenger*, 30 Jan. 1930.
196. *Messenger*, 30 Jan. 1930.
197. *Messenger*, 27 March 1930.
198. *Messenger*, 3 July 1930.
199. The Rapid City district of Northwestern Bell announced in early January it would install a telephone exchange in Martin. *Messenger*, 9 Jan. 1930.
200. Bus service was scheduled to commence one-way each day in February between Winner and Hot Springs, South Dakota with a stop in Martin. *Messenger*, 23 Jan. 1930.
201. Salaries at the high school: two teachers were paid $150 a month, two $135, one $126, and the janitor $50; $32.52 was spent for texts and $303.36 for coal. Authorized at the January school board meeting. *Messenger*, 20 Feb. 1930.
202. *Messenger*, 17 March 1930.
203. *Messenger*, 19 Feb. 1931.
204. Windmill – It cost $234.20. *Messenger*, 6 Feb. 1930.
205. The vote totals were not published in the paper. *Messenger*, 9 and 23 Oct. 1930.
206. *Messenger*, 27 Nov. 1930.
207. Permission would be granted only during daylight hours and on non-windy days.
208. *Messenger*, 20 March 1930.
209. *Messenger*, 5 Feb. 1931.
210. *Messenger*, 19 March 1931.
211. *Messenger*, 16 April and 7 May 1931.
212. *Messenger*, 4 June 1931.
213. *Messenger*, 3 September 1931.

214. The *Messenger* was established 25 Feb. 1911, *The Bennett County Review* on 3 Aug. 1927. The papers were merged 19 May 1929.
215. *Messenger*, 30 Jan. 1930.
216. Roadster, Ford $435, Chevy $495; Phaeton, Ford $440, Chevy $495; Coupe, Ford $500, Chevy $565; Town Sedan, Ford $670, Chevy $675; Sports Coupe, Ford $530, Chevy $525 for the Sports Roadster and $625 for the Sports Coupe. Chevrolet advertised its cars as 6-cylinder and 50 horsepower. The Martin Motor Company was the Chevrolet dealer and advertised its sales were on a "Strictly Cash Basis." Ray E. Milliken was the Whippet dealer and the Martin Service Station the Nash dealer. *Messenger*, 30 Jan. and 20 Feb. 1930.
217. *Messenger*, 13 Feb. 1930.
218. L & E Mercantile, Dandy Café; Dollie's Café; Log Cabin Café; The Coffee Shop; Martin International Co.; Lundstedt Trading Station; W.F. Wycoff, Farm & Livestock Auctioneer; C.H. Enstsminger Lumber Co.; Dorothy's Beauty Shop; Mary Lou Beauty Parlor; R.E. Milliken, selling Frigidaire with the Hydrator; Martin Service Station offering "Free air and water;" E. A. Farr Shoe Repair; Burd's Light and Ice Plant; Martin Machine; Sasenbery's Hardware Co.; Lamoraeaux, Brown, & Jones, Ladies' & Children's Wear; Martin Produce Co., buying cream, eggs, and poultry; L.W. Rooney, crop insurance; Lee Pratt, Drayage; Bushnell Truck Line; J.W. Dodd, Agent for Mid-West Steel Products; W. C. Steel, Painting Supplies; R.D. Cook, General Merchandise "Where Everybody Trades," Drugs, Meats, Groceries, Dry Goods, Notions, Shoes, Fire Works; Martin Motor Co., Chevrolet Dealer; C.R. Taylor, Blacksmith; J.J. Cawer, Agent for Wood Bros Combines; Hampton's Cash Grocery; Molumby's Clothing & Shoe Store; C.E. Freeman, Well Driller; F.H. Roth, "Red Top grain bins, good for storing combine or thresher wheat," $92.50 for 500 bu. size, $136 for 1000 bu. size."

    Professions: David F. Heffron, John George Day, H.M. Robertson, and James Ryan, attorneys; Home Abstract Co.; Farm Abstract Co.; and Dr. J.B. Walton, Physician and Surgeon. Advertisers from Merriman, Nebr.: Eyl Pharmacy, F.C. Johnson Dry Goods; Merriman Grain Co.; the Merriman Mercantile; and Walrath-Sherwood Lumber Co. Other non-Martin advertisers: Bank of Cody, Nebraska; Mellette County Agricultural Credit Corp. of White River, S. Dak.; S & S Theater of Rushville, Nebr. with "Talking Pictures Every Night;" Sister's Hospital of Hot Springs, S. Dak. offering "Ambulance Service. National advertisers: Phillips Milk of Magnesia; Fletcher's Castoria; Karo Syrup; and Bayer's Aspirin.
219. Eventually the Whipple family moved from the "cottage" to an apartment in the basement of the Catholic parsonage. According to Pearl, whenever Father Carroll got "miffed at his housekeeper he would come down to our apartment to visit. He and Blaine were great friends and produced a number of talent shows together. Pearl's Interview.
220. *Messenger*, 18 Sept. 1930.
221. *Messenger*, 6 March 1930.
222. *Messenger*, 6 March 1930
223. *Messenger*, 13 and 20 March 1930.
224. *Messenger*, 29 May 1930.
225. *Messenger*, 4 Sept. 1930.
226. *Messenger*, 27 March 1930.
227. *Messenger*, 10 April 1930.
228. *Messenger*, 10 April 1930.
229. *Messenger*, 27 March 1930.

230. *Messenger*, 15 May 1930.
231. Rogers sold *The Bennett County News* to James H. And Nella McGregor on 1 Jan. 1937 who sold it three months later to W.O. Simunds (on 8 April 1937), formerly of Milton, N. Dak. Simunds published it for five years until November 1942 when he entered military service. Harry Beck then published it until May 1944 when Marshall Robertson (formerly with the *Messenger*) ran it until June 1944 when it was suspended. The law at that time protected the legality of the newspaper up to six months following the end of WWII so the News retained its legal rights. After his discharge from service, Simunds returned to Martin and bought the *Messenger* on 18 Oct. 1945 and the News was permanently suspended. The *Messenger* moved into the *News* office on 1 Nov. and began using the *News*' seven-column format. Simunds operated the *Messenger* until April 1952 when he became a patient in the Veterans hospital in Hot Springs, S. Dak and leased the paper to Jack Wycoff and Harry Beck. Beck died 6 July 1952 and the issue of 10 July was the last one as publication was suspended. Wendell and Mary Long began publishing the *Bennett County Booster II* 27 July 1950 and moved into a new building constructed to house it in 1961. It is still publishing. The above information is from a history of Bennett county published in 1981. The author received the information in the form of copies of pages (56-58) from the book which did not include the title or place of publication. In a letter to the author dated 29 May 1987 at Martin, Wendell E. Long said he knew Blaine Whipple when he published *The Bennett County News* and that in the late 1940s both were employed at the *Brooking Press*, Brookings, S. Dak.
232. The *Messenger* coverage of news was skimpy at best. Much of the information did not appear in the form of news, rather it was gleaned from reading the published minutes of the County Board of Commissioners, the Town Council minutes, and the High School Board minutes. With few exceptions, the Messenger was content to publish one and two sentence items about what local people had done over the previous week. These "locals" always appeared in column one and eight on page one.
233. *Messenger*, 8 and 15 Oct. 1931.
234. *Messenger*, 10 July and 4 and 21 Aug. 1930.
235. Levermont was a 30-year resident of Bennett county and a County Commissioner. *Messenger*, 9 Oct. 1930.
236. *Messenger*, 30 Oct. and 4 Dec. 1930.
237. Miss L. Nyffler, RN, was in charge at the hospital. *Messenger*, 20 Nov. and 4 Dec. 1930.
238. Holder over Commissioner H. S. Ireland was elected Commission Chairman. *Messenger*, 8 Jan. 1931.
239. Men's suits, $12.95 - 17.95; Men's overcoats, $14.95; Boy's overcoats, $4.95; Boy's suits, $5.95 - 8.95; Boy's all-wool pants, wide bottoms, $1.98; Double Blankets, 66x80, $1; Men's flannel and wool shirts, $1; Men's pure, all-virgin wool shirts, $3.75; Men's heavy Mackinaw coats, $7.50; Ladies' coats, $12.95 - 14.95; Ladies' silk dresses, $2.95 - 5.95; Ladies' aprons, 35¢; Bleached sheets, 81x99, 89¢; Cannon huck hand towels, 2 for 23¢; Pillow cases, 42x36, bleached, pr. 55¢; Ladies' extra quality rayon vest, 79¢; Fancy Percole, per yd. 15¢; Kalburnie gingham, yd. 19¢; Extra quality muslin, 36 in. brown sentinel, yd. 7¢ and brown heavy grade, yd. 14¢. *Messenger* 15 Jan. 1931.
240. All-rubber overshoes, $3.95; Men's winter leather mittens, 98¢; Men's pajamas, $1.25; Ladies' flannel gowns, $1.25; Ladies' house dresses, 89¢. *Messenger*, 15 Jan. 1931.
241. *Messenger*, 15 Jan. 1931.
242. *Messenger*, 22 Jan. 1931.
243. *Messenger*, 12 Feb. and 23 July 1931.
244. *Messenger*, 12 Feb. 1931.

245. *Messenger*, 16 and 26 Feb. 1931.
246. *Messenger*, 26 March 1931.
247. *Messenger*, 9 and 16 April and 7 May 1931.
248. *Messenger*, 16 April 1931.
249. *Messenger*, 27 Aug. 1931.
250. *Messenger*, 4 June 1931.
251. The town dump was one mile east and one-fourth mile south of town on the west side of the highway.
252. *Messenger*, 30 April, 7 and 14 May 1931.
253. *Messenger*, 4 June 1931.
254. *Messenger*, 11 and 18 June 1931.
255. The name Whipple was well known to the South Dakota Sioux people. Henry B. Whipple (1822-1901), the first Episcopal bishop of Minnesota, was headquartered in Fairbault and ministered to Indians in Minn., North and South Dak. for several years. He intervened with President Lincoln on behalf of the Indians following an uprising in Minnesota. He was known as "Straight Tongue" and several Indian families took his surname. There was no relationship between the bishop and Blaine.
256. Pearl's Interview.
257. When the family lived in Yankton, South Dakota in the mid 1940s she had her front lower teeth replaced with a bridge. Pearl's Interview.
258. *Messenger*, 2 July 1931.
259. *Messenger*, 23 July 1931.
260. *Messenger*, 27 Aug. 1931.
261. *Messenger*, 10 and 17 Sept. 1931.
262. *Messenger*, 3 Sept. 1931.
263. Twenty-three freshmen, 29 sophomores, 31 juniors, 19 seniors, and one special student. *Messenger* 3 Sept. 1931.
264. *Messenger*, 3 and 10 Sept. 1931.
265. *Messenger*, 17 Sept. 1931.
266. In the Great Depression one of every four workers could not find work. Banks and businesses failed by the thousands. Income dropped sharply. Investments and production plummeted. Credit dried up. The vast tragedy hit almost every U.S. family as jobs, homes, college educations, and hopes for the future were forfeited to hard times. The Depression lasted from 1929 to 1933, but weakness persisted through the 1930s even after president Franklin D. Roosevelt mounted his New Deal. Only World War II finally put the nation back to work.
267. Ryder was founded 19 July 1906 when the Soo Railroad Co., sold lots for the village at public auction and construction was begun immediately. The towns of Max and Plaza were platted at the same time. Douglas and Makoti were platted and sold at a later date. In its early years, Ryder had three banks, four lumber yards, two hotels, four restaurants, livery barns, land offices, law offices, newspapers, and many other businesses. It legally became a village 8 May 1907. In 1931 it was served by the Queeen City Telephone Co. and had an orchestra, The Nite time Frolickerrs. J.W. Campbell was the postmaster.
268. The *Ryder News* was established in 1903 at Cedarville and when that village was abandoned it moved to Ryder. A linotype was installed in 1928 and by 1931 it was one of the best equipped weekly newspapers in the state. It's mailing list covered half of two counties – the north half of McLean and the south half of Ward – and encompassed the neighboring towns of Makoti and Douglas. It's office was in what used to be a garage. Blaine took control from Otto B. Hallan and (___) Hofstad. He retained

Hallan as a compositor. The telephone No. was 48.

269. Businesses in Douglas included: Douglas Farmers Elevator, Douglas Grange, Drumater Drug Store, Eng's Cash Grocery, H.H. Ehlers, Insurance, Kragness Bros. General Merchandise, Kruger's Service Station, City Dray Line, "Shady" the Barber.

270. In July 1931 Ryder had 29 business establishments including the bank. Two hotels, two garages, three bulk oil stations, two filling stations, three grocery stores, four grain elevators, two implement dealers, two dray lines, a drug store, lumberyard, creamery, blacksmith shop, meat market, billiard parlor, law office, hardware store, harness shop, cream station, shoe repair shop., theatre, telephone exchange, light and power company, hatchery, truck and transfer line, tin shop, barber shop, and daily train and bus service. It also had two dentists, an M.D. who also fitted glasses, and a funeral parlor.

271. By 1933, 573 of the 898 banks in business at the beginning of the 1920s had closed. Robert P. and Wynona Hutchette Wilkins, *NORTH DAKOTA A Bicentennial History*. New York: W.W. Norton & Co., Inc., American Association for State and Local History, 89. [Hereafter *N. Dak. History.*]

272. The O.K. Café advertised a Thanksgiving special: traditional turkey with trimmings and lutefisk with lefse.

273. The boilerplate carried the continuing story of "Heart of the North." Comics included "Finney of the Force," "The Featherheads," "Mickie, the Printer's Devil," "The Clancy Kids," "Our Pet Peeve." It also included feature stories on a variety of subjects, News Review of current events, and Items from North Dakota. The boilerplate advertising included Musterol for Sore Throats, Phillips Milk of Magnesia "When Food Sours," Syrup Pepsin for the Poison in your Bowels.

274. National advertisers: Firestone, Ford, Bayer Aspirin, Oxydol, Scott's Emulsion of Norwegian Cod Liver Oil, Cuticura Shaving Cream, Castoria, Made Specially for BABIES and CHILDREN. In one ad Ford promoted 15 different body styles and stressed economy, claiming it cost 2.284 cents a mile to operate, excluding depreciation and insurance. Prices for 1931 models ranged from $430 to $640 F.O.B. Detroit. Firestone offered 4.40-21 size tires for Ford and Chevy cars for $4.98 each or $9.60 a pair; 5:50-19 for Studebaker for $8.90 each or $17.30 a pair; 7.00-20 for Packard and Lincoln for $15.35 each or $29.80 a pair.

275. Business card advertisers: Business Serv. Co., "General Collections, Insurance;" H. E. Mielke, Attorney-at-Law; Farmers Elevator, Ole Lunden, Mgr.; Community Radio Serv., Sales – Service, Orin Knutsen; Hotel Fredeen. Europen Plan. Steam Heated. Electric Lighted. Dining Room in Connection. Bath; M.T. Roach, Auctioneer; J.H. McDonald Barber Shop, "It Pays to Look Well;" Ryder Dray Line, M.M. Rogneby, Prop.; Drs. Hubler & Hubler, Dentists; H.D. Grangaard, M.D., "Glasses Fitted;" General Draying and Hauling, Chas. Stults; C. A. Olsen and T.W. Hungate, Funeral Directors. *Ryder News*, 19 Nov. 1931.

276. Notice of Chattel Mortgage Foreclosure Sale against the Rode Motor Co. of Ryder. The company had borrowed $1,140 from the First National bank of Ryder on 4 May 1931. The note plus 9% interest was due 1 October ($1,196.10.) The foreclosure sale was advertised for 2 p.m. 27 Nov. 1931 in Ryder. Personal property to be sold: one Ford truck, one Whippet coach, one Ford roadster, one Chevrolet touring car, one Ford tudor, one Ford coupe, and one Ford touring car. *Ryder News* 19 Nov. 1931.

277. The following shows how the Ryder market declined from 19 Nov. 1931 to 6 June 1932. The first column is November, the second June.

Wheat .	.54	.36	66.6%
Durum	.50	.28	56 %

Amber Durum	.54	.30	55.5%
Red Durum	.43	.21	48.8%
Flax	1.22	.79	64.7%
Oats	.16	.09	56.2%
Barley	.25	.14	56%
Rye	.34	.12	35.3%
Eggs	.30	.08	26.7%
Butter	.25	.12	48%
Butter Fat	.30	.13	43.3%

Ryder News, 19 Nov. 1931, 9 June 1932.

278. Churches advertising: St. John Lutheran in Ryder; Immanuel Lutheran in Roseglen; St. Peter Lutheran at Emmet; E. Kristensen, Pastor; Immanuel Evangelical Lutheran (Missouri Synod) Rev. A.F. Beaver, Pastor, and the Ryder Mission. There was a Presbyterian Church which did not offer weekly services and did not advertise its services. *Ryder News*, 26 Nov. 1931

279. Children living with Ben and Nellie were Bud, 19, Clara, 16, Margaret, 14, Gordon, 13, Don, 11, Alice, 8, and Bob, 6. Son Bill, 18, was a student at the State School of Forestry at Bottineau and was a member of the basketball team. Pearl's married sister Tuts, 23, (Mrs. Sid) Bjorlie, lived in Wolford, N. Dak. Churches serving Douglas were Catholic, Father Fischer, pastor; Lutheran, Rev. Sorline, pastor; and Methodist, Effie A. Baker, pastor. *Douglas News,* 19 Nov. 1931.

280. *Ryder News*, 19 Nov. and 10 Dec. 1931.

281. Front page banners promoting the value of advertising were run above the newspaper's name every week. The banners included: Advertising Will Convert Depression Into Prosperity; Advertising Will Coax Timid Dollars Out of Hiding; Let's Advertise Our Way Back to Prosperity; The World's great Need is Courage – Show Yours By Advertising; Bring Buying Dollars Into the Open – Advertise!; To Sell – Tell!. Advertising Is Your Best Bet Now; The Printed News Chases the Blues – Advertise!; The Printed Word Tells the Herd – Advertise! You Can Sell 'em If you Tell 'em in The News.

282. Products advertised by local merchants included: Tomatoes, No. 2, Standard Can 9¢; sweet potatoes, 3 lbs 25¢; Pompeian Day and Night Cream 49¢; IGA soap chips, pk. 17¢; IGA dill pickles 32 oz. 26¢; Bulk Cocoa, 2 lbs. 27¢; Tall Pink Salmon, 2 cans 25¢; Calumet Baking Powder, can 29¢; Hamburger or Sausage, per lb. 10¢; Ladies Silk Hose, 98¢; 32 oz. Jar Olives 37¢; 3 pk Jelly Powder 19¢; 1 gal. can Peaches 57¢; bulk hulless popcorn, lb. 10¢; Dressed Dolls 25¢ to $5; Toilet Sets 75¢ to $11; Fountain pens 50¢ to $5; Box Stationery 25¢ to $1.50; Box Candy, 1 lb. 59¢ to $1.50; Soda Crackers, 2 lb. 21¢; Grapes, lb. 19¢; IGA Fancy Blue Rose Rice, 3 lbs. 16¢; IGA Peanut Butter, 32 oz. 29¢; IGA Pancake Flour, self rising, 3 FI lb. pk. 19¢; Cod Liver Oil 75¢; McKesson Toothpaste & Brush 25¢; Pork & Beans, can 8¢; IGA Hosuehold Cleaner, 4 cans 19¢; Fig Bars, 2 lb., 23¢; Mennen Shaving Cream and Balm 49¢; Men's 3-piece Leather Set (Cigarette case, Key case, Billfold) 49¢; Sugar, fine granulated, 10 lb. 59¢; IGA coffee, "A" blend, 3 lbs. 49¢; IGA Mayonnaise, 8 oz jar 17¢; Marshmellows, lb pk. 19¢; Marcaroni, Spaghetti, or Noodles, 6 boxes 27¢; Lucky Girl Dress Prints, fast color, per yd 12¢; Men's Rayon Socks, pr 15¢; Haircut & Shave 50¢; Corn Syrup, 5 lb can, dark 34¢, white 35¢; Oranges, doz. 35¢; Candy Bars, 5 for 10¢; Latest Sheet Music, 3 for $1; Ladies Pumps $2.35 to $4.75; Men's Oxfords $3.25 and up; Men's Work Shoes $1.95; Men's Dress Shirts 98¢; Men's Work Shirts 49¢; Men's Overalls & Jackets ea. 89¢.

283. Prizes were offered for the largest old hen, largest old Tom, largest number of pounds by any one farmer, largest young hen, largest young Tom, farmer coming the longest distance and to the first three farmers bring all No. 1 turkeys. Prized included gro-

ceries, a box of apples, 100 lbs of corn, toilet articles, a full tank of gas, 50 lbs of flour, a roaster for a Christmas turkey, a gallon of oil, 3 packages of crystal soap flakes, an $11 Rowe hog oiler, and free lunches at the O.K. Café. *Ryder News*, 3 Dec. 1931.

284. Gifts requested: candy, peanuts, a handkerchief, overshoes, sack of raisins, pencils, tablet, box of colors, sweater, toilet set, doll, overalls, mittens, jackknife, fountain pen, animal cookies, rocking horse, a ball, a sled. *Ryder News,* 10 Dec. 1931.
285. *Ryder News,* 3 Dec. 1931.
286. Farmers Elevator Co., R.N. Haugaen, Manager; Ryder Independent Elevator Co., R. G. Miller, Manager; Minnekota Elevator Co., Theo Dahlen, Manager; Queen City Telephone Co., O.J. Lunden, Mgr.; Farmers Shipping Assn., O.J. Lunden, Mgr.; H.E. Eley, The RED & WHITE Store; Edel Billiard Parlor, Thos. Edel, Prop.; A.J. Neukom Hardware; Piper-Howe Lumber Co., M.D. Dyrstad, Manager; Economy Merc. Co.; The O,K. Café, Inga Lykken, Prop.; Farmers Union Oil Co., Chas. Inches, Mgr.; Rode Motor Co; Samuel Snippen, Farm Machinery, Battery Charging, Machine Repairs; The Ryder Garage, Joe Cannon, Manager; E.C. Schiewek, The Master Tailor; Ryder Motor Co., E.F. Van Hook, Mrg.; The Public Drug Co.; G. W. Meyer, Harness & Shoes; Ole Olness, IGA; Farmers Co-op Creamery Assn., Carl G. Petersen, Mgr.; and Pioneer Barber Shop, J.H. McDonald, Prop. *Ryder News,* 24 Dec. 1931.
287. *Ryder News*, 24 Dec. 1931.
288. Nellie got a Crosley radio from her children for Christmas. It was purchased at the Douglas Garage. *Douglas News,* 31 Dec. 1931.
289. The Christmas boxes contained food, candy, and toys and were distributed Christmas Eve. Local merchants contributed the candy and various citizens the food and toys. *Ryder News,* 31 Dec. 1931.
290. The contract was awarded to M. E. Thompson of Minot and the cost was less than $700 per mile. Some of the costs: $30 per mile to prepare the sub grade; $10 per mile to add and mix binder; 12¢ per yard to crush oversize; 12¢ per yard for loading and spreading; .07¢ per yard for hauling; and .02¢ per yard for screening. *Ryder News*, 7 Jan. 1932.
291. Nancy Jane Whipple – Certificate of Birth State of North Dakota. State File No. 12502. Born in the county of Ward, Village of Ryder at 10:35 p.m. Certificate signed by H. O. Grangaard, M.D. North Dakota Dept. of Health, 600 E. Boulevard Ave. Dept. 301, Bismarck, ND 58505-0200.
292. Farmer Mike Zavalena had purchased some farm equipment from Rode Motor Co. In April and June 1929 and was in default of his note payments plus 8% annual interest. Rode had sold the notes, which totaled $1,072, to the Oliver Farm Equipment Sales Co. and it ordered the sale at public auction. The Minot law firm of Mestos, Herigstad, and Stenersen represented the Oliver Co. *Ryder News*, 7 Jan. 1932.
293. The students organized a staff which included an editor, managing editor, society editor, sports editor, reporter, advertising manager and assistants, and proof reader. *Ryder News,* 14 Jan. 1932.
294. *Ryder News*, 14 Jan. 1932.
295. Other members: H.E. Mielke, General Chairman; A.J. Opland, represented the public schools; Mrs. H.O. Grangaard and Mrs. H..E. Mielke, the Home Economics Club; Miss Margaret Campbell and Mrs. O.F. Eide, the W.C.T.U.; Mrs. S. C. Schellenbaum, the Rebekahs; Mrs. R.N. Haugen, the Study Club; A.D. Lindstrom, the Village Board; R.N. Haugen, the Community Club; J.N. Campbell, the U.S. Government; and L.S. Officer, the I.O.O.F. *Ryder News*, 21 Jan. 1932.
296. *Ryder News*, 21 Jan. 1932.
297. *Ryder News,* 21 and 28 Jan. 1932.
298. The student editor said the "figures are doubly interesting when considering the

numerous extra-curricular activities offered. Fifty-eight of the high school students were non resident. Eight students take voice lessons every week; the band rehearses every morning at 8:15; the high school has a boys quartet; 25 boys report for basketball at every practice; the attendance at the Makoti-Ryder games was the largest in two years; the girls are requesting a class in gymnastics; the ventilation system was improved; the juniors are working daily on their play; a large number of students have already ordered their declamations; and the high school girls have organized a basketball team. *Ryder News,* 28 Jan. 1932.

299. It was the Smoot-Hawley Tariff, the highest in American history, which forced other industrial countries to retaliate, and world trade collapsed. Contrary to Blaine's belief, the tariff, instead of saving the American market for American workers, cost the jobs of millions of people in the U.S. and abroad.

300. It was a 12-person cast and included Rudolph Ronning who later married Margaret "Babe" Scott of Douglas, a younger sister of Pearl Whipple. *Ryder News,* 11 and 18 Feb. 1932.

301. *Ryder News,* 3 March 1932.

302. *Ryder News,* 18 Feb. and 17 March 1932.

303. *Douglas News,* 25 Feb. 1932.

304. Pearl Whipple's father.

305. Ryder's financial statement as of March 8, 1932

Receipts	
Cash on hand March 10, 1932	$ 936.16
Received from County Auditor for taxes levied.	1,576.13
Rent of Building	90.00
Attorney General (70% of fees)	35.00
Ward County (75% of poor relief)	262.34
Dray License	10.00
Fines by the Justice of Peace	10.00
Bank of North Dakota (interest a-c)	4.01
TOTAL	$ 2,923.64

Expenditures	
Fire Department	$212.39
Election expense	15.00
Printing and supplies	26.63
Premium on bonds and compensation	40.50
Poor Relief	370.48
Lights and bulbs	520.00
Officer's salaries	150.00
Assessor's salary	81.00
Road and street work	89.00
Marshal and night watchman	238.00
Premium on Fire Insurance	82.17
Miscellaneous Expense Items	33.25
Total	$1,858.42
Cash in general fund March 8, 1932	1,065.22
TOTAL	$2,923.64

Sinking Fund	
Balance in Sinking Fund March 10, 1931	$2,295.63
Received from taxes and interest	218.72
TOTAL	$2,514.35
Less interest paid on bonds	$ 150.00
Total amount in Sink Fund	$2,364.35

Ryder News, 10 March 1932.

306. One of the advertisements in the issue promoted the new Coleman Instant Gas Stove. The Coleman Lamp and Stove Company described it as an "amazing invention" and featured four models in its ad. An accompanying article in the news columns reported the stoves were available at the local I.G.A. Store and said "Gas service for cooking is no longer the exclusive privilege of the big city homes. There is a stove made now that brings real gas service right with it when it comes in the door of your home. It is the Coleman Instant Gas, which is really a gas plant and a gas stove, all in one complete unit. The stove lights right at the burner exactly like natural gas. There is no waiting for pre-heating and generating, just strike a match and turn a valve." *Ryder News,* 24 March 1932.
307. This annual statement was required to be published by the Act of Congress of 24 Aug. 1912. *Ryder News,* 7 April 1932.
308. The Douglas High School honor roll was published and it showed that Clara and Margaret Scott, sisters of Pearl Whipple, were among the seven students with an average grade of 90 and over. Clara was No. 1, Margaret No. 5. It also reported in the local news section that Margaret had moved to Ryder to complete the last six week of school there. She was living with the Blaine Whipple family.
309. *Ryder News,* 19 May 1932.
310. The News devoted a full page to the Memorial Day plans and listed the times of the festivities: 10:45 a.m. Band Concert in the City Park; 11.00 Parade forms on the south side of the park and marches to the Cemetery where the soldier's graves will be decorated by the L.C. Jensen Post of the American Legion; 12:00 noon dinner, meals served free to ex-servicemen; 1:30 Band Concert; 2:00 Invocation, Flag Drill by grade school pupils, song by high school chorus; address by Hon. V.E. Stenersen; song by High School quartet; benediction; 3:45 baseball game, Ryder vs. Roseglen. *Ryder News,* 26 May 1934.
311. *Ryder News,* 26 May, 2 and 9 June 1932.
312. *Ryder News,* 9 June 1934.
313. By the 1932 general election Blaine had shifted his allegiance to William Langer who was elected Govenor in November on the Non-partisan League ticket.
314. *Ryder News,* 23 June 1934.
315. *Ryder News,* 30 June 1934.
316. *Ryder News* 7 July 1934.
317. Underwood's population in the 1930 federal U.S. census was 488. Its elevation is 2008 feet above sea level. The village speed limit was 20 mph. The Soo line train arrived in town at 8:24 a.m. and 3:05 p.m. The south bound bus left for Bismarck at 7:45 p.m. arriving there at 9:15.
318. Underwood had been without a newspaper since 18 Sept. 1930 when the *Underwood Reporter,* founded on 5 Sept. 1929, ceased publication. The town's first paper, the *Underwood Leader,* was founded 14 April 1904. The *Underwood Miner* published from Nov. 1907 to July 1910 when it was replaced by the *Underwood Journal* which started in Aug. 1910 and lasted until 9 Oct. 1914. The *Underwood News,* founded by Blaine

Whipple, is still published in 2005, 73 years after its birth on 28 July 1932.

319. Vonder Heide had previously sponsored a similar situation in 1925 in Turtle Lake, N. Dak. which was successful. He moved to Underwood in 1930 and opened the Outlaw Trading Co. which sold everything from groceries, hardware, clothing, and farm supplies. He opened a similar store in Butte, N. Dak. In 1931.

320. The *News* was printed on an old flatbed press. The type, assembled in a metal frame and locked in place by sets of serrated wedges that expanded with the turn of a key, was placed on the press' flat surface that moved back and forth beneath a roller carrying single sheets of paper fed by the pressman. An ink roller inked the face of the type before each pass under the paper roller. The printed sheet was deposited on a table at the end of the press.

321. When the press run was finished Thursday afternoons, mailing labels had to be pasted on individual copies as they were delivered by mail. The subscription list was printed in columns on sheets of newsprint, the type preserved and additions, deletions, or corrections made as necessary. The sheets of names and addresses were cut into strips and pasted end-to-end in a continuous strip which was then coiled. The paper coil was inserted into a crude but ingenious hand-held device that fed the strip over a brush which applied paste. As the operator raised and lowered the gadget and rolled the paper forward with his thumb, a knife descended, cutting off the next name and address, and the label was pressed against the next newspaper on the stack. It was the printer's devil's responsibility to make the paste which was a simple flour-and-water mixture boiled in a pan on an electric hot plate.

322. Some of the advertising was received in the form of mats which were sheets of heavy paper with negative impressions of the type and/or pictures and illustrations. They were placed in an iron frame which was turned on end and molten metal was poured into the frame by hand from a small electric melting pot. After cooling, the fresh metal slab with positive images from the mat impressed on, it was removed from the frame, nailed to a block of wood making it "type-high," and clamped into the page frame with the rest of the type. After the press run the castings were cleaned, and if not scheduled to be used again, were removed from the wood blocks, and melted so the metal could be reused.

323. Only pages 1 and 2 of the original 4-page issue survive.

324. Advertisers included Underwood Hotel and Café, Sanitary Beauty and Barber Shop; Fuchs Implement Co., McCormick-Deering Dealer; Koenig Bros. Grocery Store; Hulsebus Billard Parlor; F.E. Anderson, Physician and Surgeon; J.O. Wenger, Meats and Groceries; Occident Elevator Co.; First Security Bank; Schemps Store; John Presser, Pool Hall; The Outlaw Trading Co. The latter dominated the paper with two pages of specials. The following began advertising in the 4 Aug. issue: Kreitinger's IGA; Anderson's Garage; Olson & Smith Hardware; Piper-Howe Lumber Co.; Madigans (lunch, candy, ice cream, gifrs, cosmetics); Evander's Drug Store; and Harmon's Store in Russo, N. Dak. Additional advertisers in later issues: Johnson's Dairy; Frank Windschetle, Machine Shop & Blacksmith, Dodge & Plymouth Cars; Otto Olson, Insurance; The Home Bake Shop; Soo Line Railroad; Mrs. Hasksins, Piano Instructor; Dr. E.T. Klein, Dentist, Washburn; Ford Motor Co.

325. In commenting on the new newspaper, the *McLean County Independent* of Garrison wrote that "Blaine Whipple is a newspaper man of much experience. In addition to publishing the Ryder paper, he has operated papers in Martin, S. Dak., Vinton, Iowa, and Marceline, Mo. He has been employed on a number of daily papers in both the editorial and advertising departments. Included in this list is the *Chicago Tribune* and the *Chicago Daily News*. Other dailies on which he has been employed were in Kansas

City, Mo., Sioux City and Cedar Rapids, both in Iowa, and Rock Island, Ill.

326. Bud, Pearl's younger brother, was introduced to the printing trade in Martin where he worked for Blaine on the *Bennett County News.*

327. Jimmy, Blaine's son by his first marriage, was run over by a truck in Hutchinson, Kansas 12 years earlier (September 1920).

328. *News*, 11 Aug. 1932 and 13 April 1933.

329. The Committee in charge was Blaine Whipple, Sylvester Vonder Heide, Krist Kjelstrup, P. J. Fuchs, and Emil Borchart. *Underwood News*, 15 Sept. 1932. [Hereafter *News.*]

330. Village officials: H.. G. Rasmussen, Mayor; H.W. Samuelson and C.T. Smith, Council Members; Henry Koenig, Clerk; Wm. A. Gogstetter, Treasurer; R.H. Gergen, Assessor, J. Koenig, Justice of the Peace.; Dale Zeller, Marshal. School Board: G.K. Temason, Chairman; C. O. Thompson and Ed Radke, Board members; C.W. Gannon, Clerk. Park Board: C.E. Sheeran, Chairman; I Kreitingaer, member; W.F. Schmidt, Clerk. Underwood Town Board: Gust Yager, Chairman, John Busch and John Schall, Board members; C.W. Gannon, Clerk. American Legion: H.G. Rasmussen, Commander, G.F. Schemp, Vice Commander, P.J. Fuchs, Adjutant, H.M. Cummings Finance Officer, Frank Eiseman, Sergeant at Arms, Henry Samuelson, Chaplain. *News*, 18 Aug. 1932.

331. *News*, 22 Sept. 1932.

332. *News*, 13 Oct. 1932. In that same issue he published the annual statement of ownership, management, circulation, etc. required of newspapers by federal law. That statement showed him as the owner-publisher, editor, managing editor, and business manager and that there were no bondholders, mortgagees, and other security holders owning 1% or more of the newspaper.

333. *News*, 20 and 27 Oct. 1932.

334. *News*, 10 Nov. 1932.

335. *News*, 8 Dec. 1932

336. North Dakota blizzards are a savage combination of fine snow, high winds, and low temparatures. They come with little warning and cut visibility to zero. *N. Dak. History,* 15-16.

337. With the State Treasury empty, Langer persuaded the Legislature to slash appropriations by 50%. To save the property of hard pressed farmers, he proclaimed (4 March) the day of President Roosevelt's bank closing order, a moratorium on foreclosures. He used the National Guard to halt sheriff sales. In October 1933 he placed an embargo on the movement of wheat out of the state and watched the price rise to 23¢ per bushel. He placed a similar embargo on beef on 7 December. And prices rose slightly as a result. These actions were declared unconstitutional and were recinded but became part of the legend of Langer's concern for people. His foreclosure moratorium heartened farmers, but little help came their way until the federal Agricultural Adjustment Administration paid the farmers for not growing crops. *N. Dak. History*, 116.

338. *News*, 9 Feb. 1933.

339. *News*, 23 March 1933.

340. *News*, 6 April 1933.

341. The creamery had a 250 gallon churn, a pasterurizer, steam cream tester, butter tub paraffin, can washer, and a large cold storage room. The back of the building was used for the purchase of poultry and eggs. *News*, 13 April 1933. In August 1934, the creamery was paying the following prices: Hens, over 4.5 lbs., 9¢ lb.; Hens under 4.5 lbs., 7¢; Old Rooster, 7¢; springs, over 2.5 lbs, 11¢; Springs under 2.5 lbs., 9¢; Leghorn hens, 5¢. *News*, 30 Aug. 1934.

342. Movies for the following three Saturdays: *Animal Kingdom, Air Mail,* and *King Kong.*

News, 1 June 1933.

343. In 1933 North Dakota had 30 miles of paved roads, 364 miles of oil mix surfacing, and 4,738 of graveled roads. *News*, 14 Sept. 1933.

344. *News*, 6 July 1933.

345. Outlaw Trading Co.: 13 qt. Tin Milk Pails, 35¢; Horse nose baskets, wire, 20 to 28¢; Cartridges, 22 shorts, box of 50, 15¢; Fly Spray, pint can, 25¢; Fly Swatter, 5¢; Petticoats, Women's rayon, 59¢; Girdles, 59 and 89¢; Creepers, infants, 29¢; Bloomer, 25¢; Boys Wash Suits, 59¢; Mens Shoes and Boys Oxfords, $1.48 to $2.98; Womens' Pumps and Oxfords, $1.69 to $2.98; Overalls, 95¢; Window Shades, 3x6, 39¢; Sugar, granulated, 18 lbs., $1; Coffee, lb., 19¢; Crackers, 2 lb. pkg., 2 pkges, 35¢; Macaroni & Spaghetti, 7 pkges, 25¢; Corn Flakes, lge. pk., 10¢; Corn, Golden Bantam, 3 for 25¢; Fruit Nectar, 4 oz. Bottle, 15¢; Dill Pickles, gal. can, 85¢; White Corn Meal, 5 lbs., 15¢; Rolled Oats, 10 lbs., 33¢; Molasses, Black Strap (for grasshoppers) gal., 35¢.

Store: Sirloin steaks, per lb., 15¢; Round steaks, lb., 12.5¢; Hamburger, lb., 10¢; Pork chops, lb. 12.5¢; Pork steak, lb., 12.5¢; Pork roast, lb., 12.5¢; Beef roast, lb., 12.5¢; Bacon, lb., 19¢; Picnic hams, lb. 15¢. The Sanitary Beauty and Barber Shop advertised Haircuts, 30¢ on week days, 40¢ on Saturday, grade children, 25¢ and full price on Saturday, Shaves, 15¢ every day. The Soo Line Railroad ad was "See the Chicago World's Fair for 1¢ per mile in Coaches ($17.40 round trip). Return limit 10 days." *News*, 22 June 1933.

346. *News*, 29 June 1933.

347. The *Leader* was published as successor to the *North Dakota Progressive* with the *Leader* being Vol. 2, No. 12 of the *Progressive*. In a P. 1, 2 col. announcement the editors wrote: With the establishment of the *Leader*, the people of North Dakota and their state administration sign a new Declaration of Independence from the warped news columns of the antagonistic press. . . Not all newspapers have joined in this campaign of misrepresentation. To that valiant band of weekly papers in North Dakota that have always fought for and held sacred the interests of the common people, our state owes a lasting debt of gratitude. The *Leader* was founded to help them in that cause, and to join with them in fighting the malicious propaganda being continually spread against our state and its administration. *Leader*, Bismarck, N. D., 14 July 1933. (Hereafter *Leader*.)

348. *News*, 6 and 20 July 1933.

349. *News*, 20 July 1933.

350. Clell Gannon wrote the Underwood high school alumni song to the tune of *Auld Lang Syne:*

What though the days and years pass by and we drift far apart,
We are still classmates as of old, and still are one in heart.
Chorus
For Dear old U.H.S. we'll strive to live for each day
And not forget the years of old
Though we are far away we cherish sacred memories
Of Underwood High School, of teachers and of classmates
Who have lived the Golden Rule.
Chorus
For Dear old U.H.S we sing, for goals we have won.
For classmates and for teachers all
And Victories yet to come.
We seek the far Olympian heights began in U.H.S.

And rocky trails will not destroy our visions of success.

Chorus

For dear old U.H.S. we'll strive to evermore be true,
And bring you honor through the years as you would have us do. *News*, 31 Aug., 9 Sept. 1933 and 4 Jan. 1934.

351. Richard Earl Whipple – Certificate of Birth State of North Dakota. State File No. 6899. Registered No. 40. Certificate signed by F. E. Anderson, M.D. Born in McLean county, Township of Underwood, Village of Underwood. The original Certificate spelled the surname as Wipple. It was corrected 2 Sept. 1987, Correction No. 44,835. The correction was based on the 1933 baptismal record. North Dakota Dept. of Health, 600 E. Boulevard Ave. Dept. 301, Bismarck, ND 58505-0200.
352. *News*, 14 Sept. 1933.
353. *News*, 21 Sept. 1933.
354. Other officers: C. H. Potter, publisher of the *Max Enterprise*, President; F.F. Jefferis, *Washburn Leader,* Vice President; Lars Siljan, *Garrison Independent*, J.W. Fiegel, *Wilton News*, and Jefferis, members of the Executive Committee. *News* 12 Oct. 1933.
355. State relief and re-employment officials had allocated McLean county 321 jobs for needy citizens The number allocated for the state was 13,000. *News*, 23 Nov. 1933.
356. *News*, 12 and 19 Oct. 1933.
357. *News* 26 October 1933.
358. Preliminary work brought 600 workers to the Glasgow area. *News*, 2 Nov. and 7 Dec. 1933. An announcement from Washington, D. C. on 30 October stated the government had abandoned the Missouri River Diversion Project. The Project was eventually authorized and funds appropriated in the 1950s.
359. *News* 16 Nov. and 21 Dec. 1933.
360. *News*, 7 and 28 Dec. 1933.
361. To the President of the United States: The undersigned respectfully urge your favorable consideration and approval of the Missouri River Diversion Project, and in that connection we earnestly represent:

    1. That such a project is essential to the farmers of great areas in North and South Dakota to restore the lowering water levels which have resulted in loss of crops through drought, and great hardship in raising cattle through lack of adequate water.

    2. That such a project is essential to a great many cities in North and South Dakota and Minnesota to replenish the water supplies of such cities as have been served by the Cheyenne river, the James river, and the Red river; and which supplies are now almost extinguished by the drying up of such rivers.

    3. That such a project will create and restore hundreds of lakes throughout such areas, thereby restoring the natural beauties and re-storing such as a haven for game birds.

    4. That such a project would create a large amount of electrical energy which could be utilized in the electrification of many homes, the reduction of rates in the cities, and the development of power for many new industries throughout the areas affected.

    5. That such a project would control the flow of the water from the Missouri river and its tributaries – the Yellowstone, the Mussel-shell, and the Milk – holding back the flood waters, thus tending to prevent damage in the lower Mississippi river and at the same time providing adequate water for navigation on the Missouri river during dry periods. *News* 1 Feb. 1934.
362. Agate is a measure of advertising space, one column wide and 1/14th inch deep, used as a unit for rate purposes in newspapers, etc. *News*, 1 Feb. 1934. Nearly $220,000 was distrib-

uted to 3,200 McLean county wheat growers in mid March. Approximately $200,000 more would be distributed to 1,500 farmers at a later date. *News* 22 March 1934.

363. In cases where the litter average was less than four, the producer had to reduce by one litter even though this constituted more than a 25% reduction from the litter average. *News*, 15 Feb. 1934.
364. *News*, 26 July 1934.
365. *News*, 1 March 1934. Federal funds to gravel Main street were conditioned on the Village Board getting the street ready for gravel by getting rid of all its ruts. *News*, 11 Oct. 1934.
366. *News* 15 March 1934.
367. George Albright of McLean county, the only N. Dak. pilot to hold a license for night flying, gave an exhibition of night flying. His plane was covered with electric lights which showed the plane in bright relief against dark skies. He released colorful flares at several thousand feet which lit the heavens like a rainbow. *News*, 18 and 25 Oct. 1934.
368. The ad stressed that electric cookery is Clean as sunshine and leaves no sooty deposit on utensils; Modern with automatic controls to carry on the cooking with scientific results and free from watching; and Healthful because it seals in the nourishing juices and retains the food's delicious original flavor; Cool even in the hottest weather; Safe with children around; Economical with an average cost of less than one cent per meal per person. *News*, 15 March 1934.
369. *News*, 22 March 1934.
370. *News*, 1, 8, and 15 March 1934.
371. Each publisher signed the following statement of principles: "Believing in the principles of the Non Partisan League, we agree to support the platform of the League as endorsed at the Garrison County Convention. We agree to lend our support and the support of our newspapers to the furtherance of League principles and the election of candidates endorsed by the duly organized Conventions held at Garrison and Valley City. Further cooperation is pledged with the four newspaper agreeing to stand shoulder to shoulder in furthering any project that in our opinion will assist in building McLean county. We favor the Missouri River Diversion scheme and will do everything in our power to further this project. Concerted action will be taken in other directions as the occasion may require, including business matters of particular interest to group members. C.H. Potter, editor-publisher of *The Max Enterprise;* G. T. Anderson, editor-publisher of *The McLean County Journal* at Turtle Lake; Blaine Whipple, editor-publisher of *The Underwood News;* and Harold N. Dally, manager of *The McLean County Independent* at Garrison. News, 5 April 1934.
372. *News*, 24 May 1934.
373. Seven others were indicted with the Governor: Frank Vogel, State Highway Commission, Oscar E. Erickson, publisher of *The Leader,* Harold McDonald, a solicitor for *The Leader*, Paul J. Yeader and G.A. Hample of the State Highway Department, and J. A. Kinzer and his father R.A. Kinzer of the Federal Emergency Relief Committee. *News*, 19 April 1934.
374. *News*, 21 June 1934.
375. McLean county was a Langer stronghold in the primary. He received 4,231 out of 5,673 Republican votes cast. Statewide he received 27,713 more votes than the combined total of Thorsen and Cain. *News*, 10 Aug. 1934.
376. *News*, 28 June 1934.
377. *News*, 19 July and 2 Aug. 1934.
378. *News*, 12 April 1934.
379. Stutsman recommended plowing stubble to a depth of 4 to 6 inches and packing the

soil with a harrow. While the eggs would hatch in May and June the young hoppers would not be able to dig their way through four inches of firm soil. *News* 12 April 1934. Grasshopper infestations were a problem throughout most of the 1930s. In 1931 they ate the binder twine on the sheaves of grain, destroyed clothing, and gnawed the wooden handles of farm tools. *N. Dak, History,* 13.

380. *News*, 17 and 24 May 1934.
381. *News*, 10 May 1934.
382. No. 3 cans holding about 1 3/4 pounds of boned meat were used. The meat was packed in the can then boiled for about 15 minutes then sealed and placed in pressure cookers at 250 degrees for 70 minutes. They had five pressure cookers with a capacity of 10 cans each. Two shifts were operating; 7 a.m. to noon and noon to 5 p.m. *News*, 2, 9, and 23 Aug. 1934. The plant closed the first week of November as all government cattle had been shipped or butchered. *News*, 1 Nov. 1934.
383. *News*, 16 Aug. 1934.
384. *News*, 26 July and 16 Aug. 1934.
385. Other officers: Sylvester J. Vonder Heide, President; John Schilling, Vice President; Dr. F.E. Anderson, J.J. Speilman, I. Kreitinger, and P. J. Fuchs, Directors. The first meeting was held 7 Sept. with 31 in attendance. Perry Wahl, Manager of the Central Light and Power Co. was the speaker and suggested the Company might increase the number of street lights in the Village. *News*, 30 Aug. and 13 Sept. 1934.
386. Other members: Albert Peterson, John Thode, and R.R. Robinson, Washburn, and H. N. Dally, Garrison. *News*, 27 Sept. 1934.
387. *News*, 6 and 20 Sept. 1934. Miss Orluck divided the children into A and B classes with those who had advanced in reading in the A class. Pat was in this group. Games they played at recess: Pulling the Cat, The Cat and the Rat, Flying Dutchman, Winding the Tread from the Handkerchief, and The Muffin Man. They learned six new songs in one week: *The Muffin Man, How Does My Ladies' Garden Grow, Under the Old Appletree, Two Little Chipmunks, Ten Little Indians, Little Miss Muffet,* and *Jack-o-Lanterns Stare in my Face.* Robert Whipple visited the class for the Halloween party and everyone paraded through the whole school in ghost costumes. They made posters for hygiene in November, "Brushing Your Teeth," and decorated their room for Christmas and made Santa Clauses, Christmas trees, Christmas bells, poinsettias, and holly wreaths during art period. For language they told stories about Christmas and built the "Little Town of Bethlehem" on their sand table. Robert Blaine and Nancy Jane Whipple were among the 13 boys and girls to attend the class Valentine party in February. The class won the School Honor Room Banner three times in succession and the PTA Banner twice in succession. All but four first graders could write numbers to 100 and could add and subtract, count by 5s and 10s, and some could multiply by twos and threes. By May Pat was in the second grade spelling class and was getting 100 every day. She was one of 23 to enter the second grade in September 1935. There were 22 in the first grade. The first and second grades organized a rhythm band with rhythm sticks, tambourines, triangles, jingle clogs, bells, drums, and cymbals. They learned three pieces: *The Shoemaker Dance, Norwegian Mountain Mucic,* and *The Young Bugler.* In social studies they learned about Indians, pilgrims, and the origin of Thanksgiving. Pat was one of three second graders on the honor roll for the entire year and won the attendance gold star for several six-week periods. Pat enrolled in Mrs. Haskin's piano class in July 1935. *News*, 25 Oct.; 1, 8, and 22 Nov.; 13 Dec. 1934; 17 Jan.; 21 Feb.; 3 May; 25 July, 12 and 26 Sept.; 31 Oct.; 28 Nov.; 12 Dec. 1935; 30 Jan.; 19 March; 23 April; 21 May, 1936.
388. *News*, 6 Sept. 1934.

389. *News*, 11 Oct. and 1 Nov. 1934.
390. T. H. H. Thoresen, defeated in the Republican primary for governor, endorsed Thomas Moodie, the Democratic nominee. *News*, 25 Oct. 1934.
391. Arlo Beggs, a 21-year-old Republican, was elected to the State Legislature. He was the youngest legislator in the nation. *News*, 15 Nov. 1934.
392. *News*, 8 Nov. 1934.
393. *News*, 8 Nov. 1934.
394. *News*, 15 and 22 Nov. 1934. Between 12 Jan. To 1 April 1936, 1,785 persons used the room. The records showed 765 young people playing games, 360 boys practicing boxing, 60 amateur actors practicing, 100 play practices, 130 girls sewing, 65 Ladies Day visitors, 70 moving picture shows, 160 book borrowers, 45 story hour and play periods. It provided full time work for one man and part time for four young people. *News*, 9 April 1936.
395. Linotype machines represented a revolutionary advance in the technology of type composition and printing. Letters and characters were impressed on the edge of brass pieces, called matrices or mats, which were coded with notches that caused them to be distributed into the appropriate channels of a magazine. The linotype operator used a keyboard similar to that found on a typewriter. After depressing a particular key, a mat for that letter would fall into a holder. When enough mats were in place for a single line of type, the operator pressed a lever that lifted all the mats for ths line into a position where molten metal could be forced against them, thus creating a slug with letters embedded on its edge. The slugs then fell into a holder, which accumulated an entire column of type. If the operator made a mistake, he had to complete the current line in order to remove the faulty slug. The molten metal (a lead or antimony alloy with a low melting point) that formed the linotype slugs came from an electrically heated pot positioned in the linotype machine. One of the jobs of the printer's devil was to keep the machine supplied with metal chunks or "pigs," so that the operator could replenish the pot when it was low. At the end of the day the printer's devil gathered up the waste slugs, and after each press run he cleaned the ink from the used type and gathered the used slugs for remelting into fresh pigs. He also cleaned the ink from the press, a messy job. The ink was wiped off the inking plate with rags soaked in kerosene so there was always a demand for fresh rags and sometimes the publisher traded a subscription for clean rags or bought them by the pound from towns people. Printer's ink was black and viscuous and was stored in 5-gallon containers. Sometimes a scum formed on the surface of the ink and this had to be removed by stirring. The remelting of metal type was done in a large iron caldron heated by a coal fire. All used or waste linotype slugs and the used stereotype castings were melted, the surface skimmed with a tool to remove the dross and the molten metal was dipped out with a large ladle and poured into iron forms, like a muffin pan, each one making a dozen or so pigs of about two or three pounds each.
396. The mid-November 1935 freeze of the Missouri river at the Stanton Ferry was declared the safest freeze in quite a few years. *News*, 21 Nov. 1935.
397. Gress was the son of Rev. and Mrs. F.W. Gress of Underwood. Rev. Gress was pastor of the Methodist church. *News*, 13 Dec. 1934.
398. *News*, 30 Dec. 1934.
399. Temperatures: Sunday 16 and 26 below; Monday 1 and 33 below; Tuesday 18 and 22 below; Thursday 1 and 12 below; Friday 15 and 19 below; Saturday 20 and 25 below. These temperatures were before the wind chill factor was introuduced. *News*, 3 and 24 Jan. 1935.
400. Ben Scott was a long-time employee of the Soo Line Railroad. He was survived by his widow, Nellie, seven sons and five daughters. The daughters: Mrs. Blaine Whipple (Pearl), Underwood; Mrs. C.S. Bjorlie (Edwidge) Surrey, N. Dak.; Clara, Mar-

garet, and Alice living at home;; The sons: Leonard (Pete), Minneapolis, John (Jack), Butte Mont.; Arthur (Bud), Underwood; William (Bill) Bottineau, N. Dak.; and Gordon, Donald, and Robert living at home. *News*, 10 January 1935.

401. *News*, 10, 17, and 31 Jan. 1935.
402. *News*, 7 Feb. 1935.
403. *News*, 7 March 1935.
404. *News*, 14 and 21 March and 18 July 1935.
405. The FERA was set up under Harry Hopkins to distribute relief funds; Hopkins favored paid public work over a dole.
406. *News*, 4 and 11 April 1935.
407. The siren was sounded at 7 a.m., noon, and 9 p.m. curfew. In 1934 the county buried 40 indigents. *News*, 4, 11, and 25 April 1935.
408. *News*, 2 May and 13 June 1935.
409. *News*, 25 July 1935.
410. *News*, 11, 18, and 25 July and 8 Aug. 1935.
411. *News*, 8 Aug. and 26 Sept. 1935.
412. *News*, 3, 10, and 24 Oct. and 14 Nov. 1935.
413. *News*, 21 Nov. 1935
414. *News*, 5, 12, and 26 Dec. 1935
415. N. Dak's unseasonably cold weather resulted in the use of 53% more fuel in February 1936 than for the average February during the past 15 years. January fuel supplies exceeded the 15-year average by 27%. The average daily temperature in February 1936 was 13 below, the coldest month in the history of the U. of North Dakota's weather bureau which was established in 1891. *News*, 2 Jan., 20 and 27 Feb., and 9 April 1936.
416. *The Golden Valley American* merged with the *Beulah Independent* after Blaine moved the equipment to Marmarth.
417. Bob was known as Sonny at that time.
418. *News* 9 July 1936.
419. *Marmarth Messenger*, Marmarth, N. Dak., 30 July 1936. (Hereafter *Messenger*.)
420. *Messenger*, 23 July 1936.
421. Advertisers: Becks' Market; Olson Hardware, Emil Ahlness Drugs; Yellowstone Café; Olberg's Bakery; Yellowstone Hotel; Brown's Standard Service Station, W. C. Vandervort, Pioneer Oil and Gas Man; J. R. Griger; West Side Dairy; Roby's Standard Service; The Palm Tavern, H. Olberg, Manager; W. A. Moore, Physician and Surgeon; D. C. O. Richer, Dentist; A. I. Dale, Real Estate Agent; Mrs. W. A. Moore, Secretarial Training Courses; J. R. Criger, Alfalfa and Prairie Hay for sale. Olson's Food Buys advertised Raisins, 2 lb. pk, 15¢; Green String Beans, can, 19¢; Green Giant Corn (containing 4 whole roasting ears) 2 cans, 29¢; Brown Betty Coffee, 3 lb can, 73¢; Spanish Olives, 39¢; 1 qt. Miracle Whip, 39¢; Old Fashioned Beef Stew, 24 oz can, 21¢; No. 10 can plums, 35¢; 2 No. 303 Tomato Juice, 23¢; Balloon Soap Flakes, giant pkgs, 39¢; 5-stranded household brooms, 25¢. Baker, Mont. advertisers were Russell's Quality Clothing and Baker Furniture Exchange. The *Messenger* advertised Remington Typewriters priced from $37.50 with payments of 10¢ per day and job printing. *Messenger*, 23 July 1936.
422. *Messenger*, 13 Aug, 1936
423. Ibid., 20 Aug. 1936.
424. Ibid., 10 Sept. 1936.
425. Ibid., 27 Aug. 1936.
426. Ibid.
427. Ibid., 4 Sept. 1936.

428. Ibid., 24 Sept. 1936.
429. Ibid., 1 Oct. 1936.
430. Ibid., 24 Sept. 1936.
431. Ibid., 1 Oct. 1936.
432. Ibid., 15 Oct. 1936
433. Ibid., 29 Oct. 1936.
434. Ibid., 5 Nov. 1936. The statewide vote: Langer 98,750 (carried 32 counties); Welford 95,797 (carried 14 counties)' Moses 80,726 (carried 7 counties). *Leader*, 3 Dec. 1936.
435. Commission members: Ben Larkin, State Railroad Commission; Theodore Martell, Commissioner of Agriculture and Labor; and James D. Gronna, Secretary of State, Commission Chairman.
436. Ibid., 19 Nov. 1936.
437. *Leader*, 1 July 1937.
438. Ibid., 17 June and 30 Sept. 1937. The *Messenger* was absorbed by the *Slope County Post* in January 1941, becoming the *Slope Messenger.* Rundle bought the *Rhame Review* in 1953 and consolidated it with the *Messenger*. He also owned the *Hettinger County Herald* in New England where all his papers were published. Marmarth's population was approximately 400 in 1955. Letter dated in 1955 to Blaine Whipple from Earl C. Rundle, owner of Rundle Printing & Publishing Co., New England, N. Dak.
439. *Leader*, 27 Jan. 1938.
440. Ibid., 24 April 1941; 9 Jan. 1942.
441. Bismark's population, based on the school census, was estimated to be between 15,500 and 16,500. *Leader*, 15 July 1937.
442. Blaine replaced Hugh Black as State Printer. Black, who assumed the position 18 April 1935 returned to Werner, N. Dak. to resume publication of the *Dunn County Spotlight*. Black's predecessor was George Munger who held the position for many years. J. Bernard Smith of Selfridge, N. Dak. succeed Blaine as State Printer in July 1940.
443. Cost of state printing handled by Whipple's office in 1937 was $168,000.00. Of this amount, $94,000.00 was for fifth class jobs – 1,977 separate orders.
444. N. Dak. Supreme Court decision No. 6538.
445. *Leader*, 28 April 1938.
446. Wilkie only carried nine other states: S. Dak., Iowa, Colo., Kans., Maine, Neb., Vt., Ind., and Mich. Ibid., 7 Nov. 1940.
447. Bigelow Neal was a nationally known author whose articles appeared in magazines from 1928-49. He was also a contributor to *Custer and His Times*, book four, edited by John M. Carroll and published by Little Big Horn, Inc.
448. Leader, 16 April 1942.
449. Ibid., 4 June 1942.
450. Ibid., 17 Sept. 1942
451. A thundermug is a chamber pot used mostly during nightime and illnesses. It has to be emptied in the outhouse.
452. Rich in both military and early Native American history, Fort Abraham Lincoln was once an important infantry and cavalry post. It was from this fort that Lt. Col. George Armstrong Custer and the Seventh Cavalry rode out on their ill-fated expedition against the Sioux at the Little Big Horn. Portions of the military post, including the Custer House, have been reconstructed. Popular with visitors is On-A-Slant Indian Village. Reconstructed earthlodges depict the lifestyle of the Mandan Indians, who occupied this site from about 1575-1781
453. *Enemies* is available from the North Dakota Museum of Art, PO Box 7305, Grand Forks, ND 58202.

454. Howe Bros. Wild Animal Circus performed in Bismarck 14 June 1937. Performances at 2 and 8 p. m. were presented under the big tent. Featured were jungle bred lions, tigers, elephants, pumas, dancing horses, and aerial and gymnastic feats by 50 stars from six nations. *Leader*, 13 May 1937. The Polack Bros. Circus opened a week's engagement at the Memorial Building in late September 1937. Feature attraction was Capt. Proske and his Royal Bengal Tigers, touted as on of the best wild animal shows in the business. The 2-hour program included 31 acts. *Leader*, 23 Sept. 1937.
455. Dresden is in the northwest corner of the state and is 121 miles northeast of Memphis and 65 miles east of the Mississippi River. It is on land added by the Chickasaw Indians. The population exceeded 2000.
456. Since no family lived in Tracy any more, son Bob arranged for Blaine's body to be reburied in 1956 in the Evergreen Cemetery in Vinton, Iowa, his boyhood home. He is buried in the family plot along side his parents, James and Ellen Whipple.
457. Polymyalgia rheumatics (PMR) is a disorder that causes stiffness and aching that begins in the neck, shoulder, and hip areas. It is not known whether it is a disease of the joints, muscles, or arteries. However it is thought that inflammation in these areas leads to pain and stiffness. It is rare before age 50 and among people of African ancestry and affects females twice as often as males. It typically starts suddenly. A person may be perfectly well one day and feel the full effects the next day. Most people have symptoms in at least two of these areas: neck, shoulders, and hips. The shoulder region includes the muscles of the upper arm. The hip region, the muscles of the lower back and thighs. It is worse first thing in the morning and when severe, people have to roll themselves out of bed. Pain wakes them at night and turning over in bed may be difficult. Other symptoms: fatigue and a slight fever. Joints in other areas of the body may ache as well. People do not understand why they feel so terrible when they first get the disease. The symptoms make them feel different and can be quite overwhelming because of their effect on everyday life. http://www.orthop.washington.edu/arthritis/types/polymyalgia/01. University of Washington, "Orthopaedics & Sports Medicine," Seattle, Wash.
458. The sural nerve is a branch of the sciatic, easily dissected, and only carries sensory information with no muscle control component. A nerve biopsy involves removing a small length of a peripheral nerve for histologic examination under the miscroscope.
459. Sinusitis – a cavity within a bone or other tissue, especially one in the bones of the face or skull connecting with the nasal cavities.
460. Humerus – the bone in the upper arm between the shoulder and elbow.
461. In September 1987 she wrote a letter to her children outlining her wishes if her health deteriorated: It was addressed "To my Children" and each was named in order of birth. Should my health deteriorate to the point where I require hospitalization or nursing care, you are not to allow any artificial life support systems to be used to keep me alive. It is my desire to die a natural death, not to be kept alive. When I die, I want no services and I prefer that no flowers be sent. A death notice can be issued. My desire is to be cremated with no embalming. I want my ashes to be buried in the same grave with my husband in the Evergreen Cemetery, Vinton, Iowa. I do not want a new grave opened for me and understand the Evergreen Cemetery Association allows ashes to be buried in an existing grave. I would like a flat gravestone with my name, date of birth, and death. I have made a deposit with the Cremation Society of Minnesota in Minneapolis. If I am not living in Minnesota at the time of my death, a Society similar to the Minnesota Society is to handle my remains. */s/ Pearl J. Whipple.*
462. *McLeod County Chronicle,* Glencoe, Minn., 6 April 1988.
463. President Calvin Collidge and Blaine were eighth cousins once removed. Their com-

mon ancestors were Matthew Whipple and Anne Hawkins.

464. Walter P. Chrysler was a mechanic smart enough to see the future of the automobile. He was a master machinist and in 1912 became works manager at Buick Motor Corporation. He headed his own company 10 years later and in 1927 he began building a giant headquarters in the heart of New York City. He wanted a bold structure declaring the glories of the modern age. When the 66-story Bank of Manhattan Tower at 40 Wall St. topped out at 927 feet, Chrysler wanted to claim title to the world's tallest structure and he and his architect William Van Alen secretly assembled a 180 foot needle-like finial inside the tower which was hoisted into place when the building was nearing completion. This made the Chrysler Tower the tallest building in the world, exceeding Manhattan Bank Tower by 172 feet. It had to give up its title a few months later to the Empire State Building.
465. Wm Wrigley, Jr. (1861-1932) was founder and advertising genius of the world's largest chewing gum company. He developed Catalina Island off the coast of Los Angeles and owned the Chicago Cubs baseball team whose ballpark is named after him. He became one of the richest men in the U. S.
466. Harry Guggenheim – 1890-1971. Businessman, diplomat, publisher, philanthropist, horseman. Co-owner and co-publisher of *Newsday*, became editor in chief; Pulitzer Prize winner, Senior Partner, Guggenheim Brothers.
467. Ivar Kreuger – 1880-1932. Swedish financier and industrialist. Formed International Match Corp. which controlled two-thirds of the world production of matches. He fortune was estimated to be approximately $100 billion in U. S. funds in 2000. He was destroyed by the stock market crash of 1929.
468. Samuel Insull – 1857-1938. American public utilities financier. Managed Thomas Edison's industrial holdings. Formed an interlocking directorate that operated over 300 steam plants, almost 200 hydroelectric generating plants, and numerous other power plants throughout the U.S. His empire collapsed in 1938.
469. T. W. Lamont – Part of the J. P. Morgan & Co. leadership.
470. President Franklin D. Roosevelt and Blaine were seventh cousins. Their common ancestors were Matthew Whipple and Anne Hawkins.
471. The bank in Ryder, North Dakota had closed before the Whipples moved there in November 1931.
472. Two of Pearl's younger brothers who lived in Douglas, Gordon and Donald, served in the CCC.

CHAPTER SEVENTEEN

ROBERT BLAINE WHIPPLE AND INES MAE (PETERSON) STEELE

Robert[11] Blaine Whipple *(Lucien[10] Blaine, James[9], Lucien[8], Enoch[7], Nehemiah[6], Benjamin[5], Francis[4], Jonathan[3], Joseph[2], Matthew[1], Matthew[A]) was born 22 February 1930 at Martin, Bennett county, South Dakota and married Ines Mae Peterson 6 August 1966 at Portland, Washington Co., Oregon. She was born in Portland, Multnomah Co., Oregon 24 Septmeber 1929 and was educated in Portland public schools. He was a newspaper reporter, advertising salesman, real estate broker, and active in Oregon and national politics. As an adult he was known by his middle name. Ines married (1) Harold Steele 24 February 1951 in Portland, Multnomah Co., Oregon. He was born in Portland 10 April 1929 and died of cancer in Portland 2 September 1962.*

Child of Blaine and Ines Mae Whipple

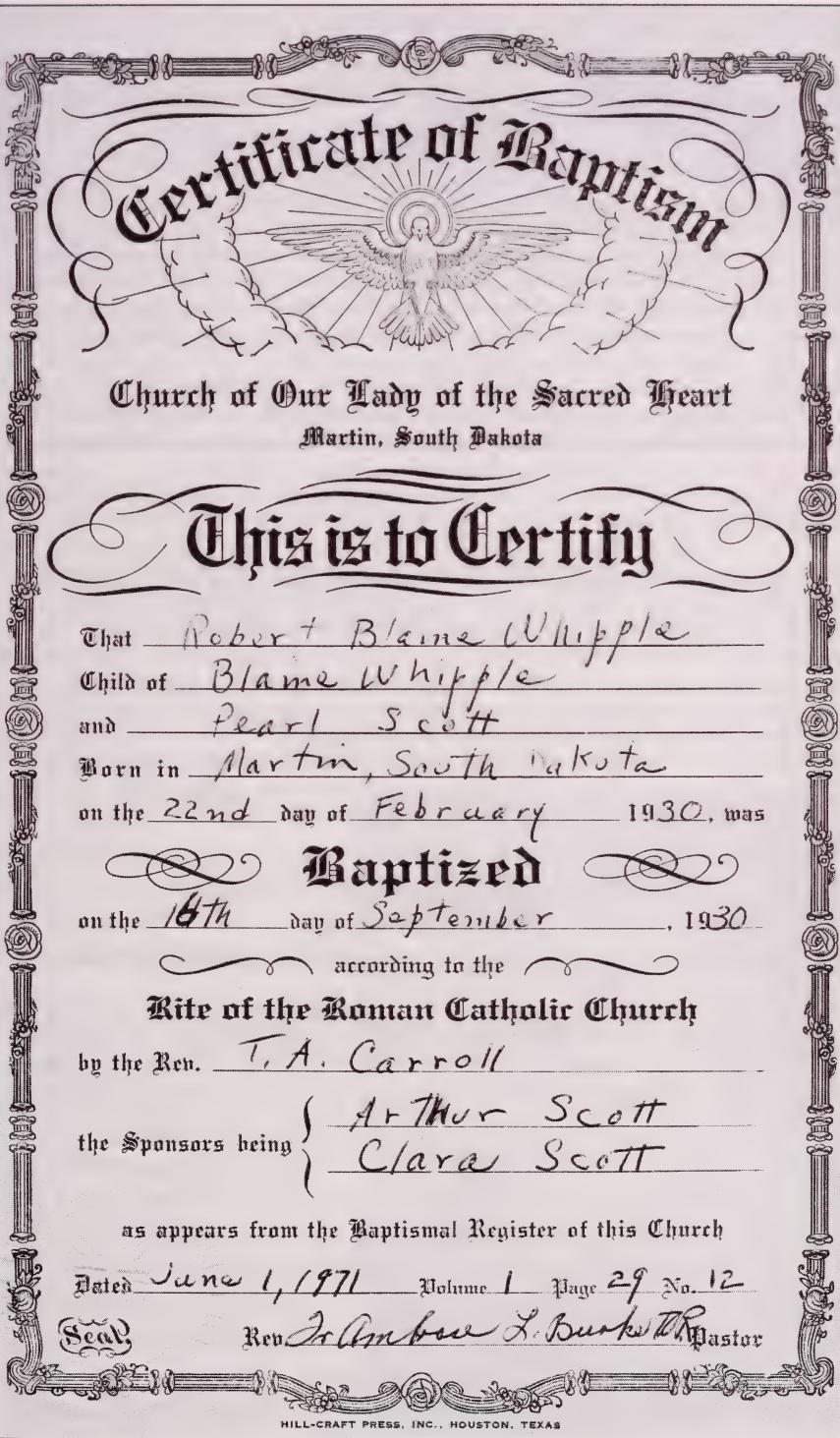
i. Blaine Scott born 27 December 1968. Married Lorna Jo Zoerink. Known by his middle name.

The second born of Blaine and Pearl, was born on Saturday in a log house and shares President George Washington's birth date, February 22. The year was 1930.[1] His birth certificate contained the name Blaine. However it was later altered with a caret[2] in front of Blaine and Robert written above. His father had named him originally but his mother preferred Robert or Bob causing the change.

Blaine founded the *Bennett County News* two months and two days after Bob's birth. The family had moved to Martin in January when Blaine became editor-manager of the *Martin Messenger.* He was motivated to found his own newspaper by support of some business and professional people in town.

Bob was baptized September 16 at the Catholic church with his mother's brother and sister Arthur E. and Clara Scott as godparents.[3] After starting the *News*, Blaine hired Arthur, 18, (known as Bud) as a printer's devil and Clara, 15, helped Pearl care for the two children who were only one year and three weeks apart in age. Both had come to Martin from their home in Douglas, Ward county, North Dakota.

Martin, then a part of the Pine Ridge Indian Reservation (Lakota Sioux),[4] was a frontier town of 720 population (1930 federal census) without a public water or sewer system. Homes and businesses had their own



Certificate of Baptism

Church of Our Lady of the Sacred Heart
Martin, South Dakota

This is to Certify

That Robert Blaine Whipple
Child of Blame Whipple
and Pearl Scott
Born in Martin, South Dakota
on the 22nd day of Februaary 1930, was

Baptized

on the 16th day of September, 1930
according to the
Rite of the Roman Catholic Church
by the Rev. T. A. Carroll
the Sponsors being { Arthur Scott / Clara Scott }
as appears from the Baptismal Register of this Church
Dated June 1, 1971 Volume 1 Page 29 No. 12
Seal
Rev Ambrose L. Burkett Pastor

HILL-CRAFT PRESS, INC., HOUSTON, TEXAS

Main Street, Martin, South Dakota, 1930. Left side of street, front to back. Kalispel Cafe and Filling Station, Gas, Water, Oil, single gas pump with glass top. Two adjacent buildings unidentified. Fourth building, U. S. Post Office. Adjacent to Post Office, Endicott - John Shoes Molumbys. Adjacent to Molumbys, R. D. Cook, Your Druggist, Your Store. Adjacent to Cook, L. E. Merc. Mens-Ladies Clothing, Dry Goods, Groceries, Shoes, Star Premium Shoes are Better, Single gas pump with glass top in front. Adjacent to L.E. Merc, Darby's Garage, single gas pump with glass top in front. Adjacent to Darby's, Law Office. Adjacent to Law Office, an unidentified tall building. Adjacent to tall building, a Grocery Store. Adjacent to grocery store, Kate's Cafe. Adjacent to Kate's Cafe, a Grocery Store. Adjacent to Grocery Store a sign that says EAT. There are three cars and two trucks parked along the street with an additional truck driving toward the photographer.

Right side of street, front to back. Unidentified first building. Next, F. O. Weaver Groceries. Next, Barbershop. Next, unidentified. Next, Groceries. Above the grocery sign is David F. Heffron, Lawyer. Below the grocery sign is No Fooling Folks BIG Sale. Next, Harding Cream Co., Cash for Cream. Next, H_rst Cleaners. Next, Hotel Martin and Dandy Cafe. Next. Service Station with single gas pump with glass top. Next, West Hotel. Four cars are parked on this side of the street. What is probably the windmill for the town pump is behind the buildings. There are five cars in the center of the street. Two men are leaning on the first car in the foreground. These two men plus the driver of the truck were the only people about when the photograph was taken. Photo, courtesy of Harvey J. Wieland, Kyle, S. Dak. Wieland is a professor at the Oglala Lakota College in Kyle.

wells with a public well on the Court House property. A windmill was erected at the Court House pump the month of Bob's birth. There was no telephone exchange, dentist, library, train or bus service. It was served by a private power company, an artificial ice plant, had cement sidewalks and a graveled main street without curbs. The county's only high school was in Martin and it had Catholic, Episcopal, Presbyterian, and Lutheran churches, the latter without a settled pastor. Following his annual inspection in 1930, Deputy State Fire Marshall W. J. Dawson said Martin was "the poorest equipped town for its size west of the Mississippi river."

Bennett, South Dakota's youngest county (created in 1911; organized in 1912), was served by U. S. Highway 18 which ran east to west, and state highway 63 north to south. Neither were graveled. About a third of its 750,720 acres were farmed with flax, wheat, corn, and oats the leading crops, and hogs, cattle, horses, and sheep, the main animals raised. It had rich soil, rolling prairies, small spring fed streams, and plenty of good soft water. The only thing it lacked was settlers.

Bob's first eight years were lived during the Great Depression and the Dust Bowl. The Stock Market crash October 29, 1929 launched the Great

Depression which lasted until 1938.[5] The drought began in the Eastern United States in 1930 and began moving westward in 1931 where it stalled over the Great Plains states. North Dakota's (where the family moved in 1931) first dust storm was in November 1933.[6] By 1934 the plains resembled a desert. Fortunately the family was able to survive these ordeals. The family was middle class and his father's profession was relatively depression proof.[7]

He was a year and seven months old when the family moved to Ryder, Ward county, North Dakota. Ryder was on the Soo Railroad Line and only 10 miles from Douglas, the home of Pearl's family where her father Ben Scott, was a foreman of a crew that repaired rails and cleaned up after wrecks. Blaine leased *The Ryder News* and founded *The Douglas News* and operated those papers until July 1933. By then it was apparent that business in the combined towns was not able to support the family. His sister Nancy Jane was born in Ryder January 5, 1932. She was born at home and her grandmother Nellie Scott was the midwife in attendance.[8]

Blaine's ability as a publisher-editor was recognized by business men in the surrounding countryside and a delegation of merchants from Underwood in McLean county approached him about launching a weekly newspaper in that community. That they were serious about wanting him to settle in their town was apparent when they purchased sufficient advertising in advance making it possible for him launch the *Underwood News* without debt. Bob was 3 years and four months old when the family moved to Underwood, population 488.

Pearl's parents had 41 grandchildren and of that number only Bob has any recollection of a personal interaction with Ben. He was four when the family visited his grandparents in their Douglas home. They had a root cellar and Ben took Bob to show him the fruit, vegetables, and jars of canned food stored for winter consumption. It impressed him and he retained a memory of sit-

Ben Scott 1882-1935

ting on his grandfather's lap listening to his story about the root cellar. Ben died January 8, 1935 of stomach cancer in a hospital in Minot, North Dakota. Nellie died in Underwood June 2, 1952 so Bob and his siblings knew her and have many fond memories of her. Both are buried in St. Anne Catholic Cemetery in Hamel, Hennepin county, Minnesota.

None of the kids knew their Whipple grandparents or anything about them as Blaine, an only child, never spoke of them. His father, Major James E., died of his third stroke May 14, 1914 in Vinton, Benton county, Iowa and his mother Ellen died September 3, 1918 in a hospital in Iowa City, Johnson county, Iowa. Both are buried in the Evergreen Cemetery in Vinton, Iowa.

The years in Underwood were good to the family as the *News* prospered and Blaine and Pearl became prominent members of the community. Both were involved in many civic activities and Blaine utilized his show business experience to promote Underwood as the No. 1 trading town in the county. He hired Bud Scott as foreman of the printing plant and grew that side of the business along with the newspaper. The family's fourth child, Richard E., was born there September 12, 1933.[9] Like Bob and Nancy before him, he was born at home. It was a difficult breach birth. Though only 5, Pat began the first grade in September 1934 and became an A student. They tried to enroll Bob in the first grade in the fall of 1935 but since his sixth birthday wasn't until the latter part of February 1936, he was not admitted.

Photo, courtesy of Zhi Zhan Yang.

L. to R. Dan Drotzman, Bud Scott, editor and publisher, Blaine Whipple, and Bob Steele in Underwood, N. Dak. in June 1971. Photo, courtesy of Blaine Whipple.

Oil was discovered in the Little Missouri river basin between Marmarth, Slope county, North Dakota and Baker, Fallon county, Montana in 1936 and preliminary newspaper and geological reports indicated Marmarth was a candidate to become a boom town. The town was without a newspaper and after investigating further and visiting the town and oil field,

Blaine sold the *News* to Bud Scott and launched the *Marmarth Messenger* in July 1936. The field, while producing some oil and natural gas, never became a major producer and when Governor William Langer named Blaine State Printer of North Dakota the family moved to Bismarck in late October 1936. Langer was elected on the Non Partisan League ticket, a faction of the Republican Party, and Blaine had played a major role in the Party and in Langer's campaigns for Governor. Pat began the third grade and Bob the first grade in Marmarth.

MOVE TO BISMARCK, NORTH DAKOTA

The family moved into a 2-story home with basement on the east side of Bismarck. It had public water and sewer and meant Bob no longer had to empty chamber pots, slop pails, and sit in an outhouse using catalog pages for toilet paper. Pat and Bob were enrolled in St. Pious parochial school. While Pat completed the school year there, Bob did not. His school work was deemed to be on the A and B level but the Sister in charge of the first grade was dissatisfied with his penmanship and changed all of his grades to D. After a conference with the Sister who insisted the grades not be changed, Pearl who disagreed with that type of motivation, transfered Bob to William Moore, a public school. Pat enrolled in the same school in the fall of 1937. In the second grade his parents noticed how close to his eyes he held reading material. An examination disclosed he was near sighted and had an astigmatism and as the only second grader with glasses, he was called four-eyes for the first few months.

The family didn't have a refrigerator in their first Bismarck home. A 50 pound block of ice was delivered twice weekly in an ice wagon pulled by a team of horses. Virtually every family in the neighborhood were customers. The ice man carried the block of ice to the back porch and placed it in the ice box where food that required cooling was kept. Pearl canned fruit and vegetables every fall and Blaine made root beer in the basement in the summer.

There were no supermarkets and the family shopped at a small corner store for most food products and at a nearby meat market. Shop-

North Dakota State Capitol, one of three skyscraper capitol buildings in the U.S. Photo, courtesy of Zhi Zhan Yang.

pers presented their orders to clerks who gathered the goods from the store shelves. Thus service was restricted by the number of clerks and customers frequently had to wait. It was not a cash and carry business. The grocer and butcher offered credit with payment due at the end of the month.

Bismarck's first supermarket was a Piggly Wiggly where customers entered the store through turnstiles and walked through aisles which contained 605 items. Bob used to shop with his mother pushing the shopping cart up and down the four aisles while she selected the products. The cashier tallied the cost and she paid cash.[10]

The family's kids were frequently sent to do the shopping and usually had two or three cents to buy penny candy. Candy bars and ice cream cones cost five cents. Pearl, who was an excellent cook and baker, made a fresh cake every day and usually the neighbor kids - especially the Agreys whose kids were the ages of Bob, Nancy, and Dick - were there to enjoy it. Jack Agrey was Bob's best friend. Pearl also made a delicious drink out of oranges and lemons and her famous wieners wrapped in a bun before being baked were a special treat.

When the family went for drives Blaine always sang. His favorites were *Billy Boy, Clementine, Susan Van Dusen, The Church in the Wildwood,* and *The Big Rock Candy Mountain.* Blaine was more affectionate than Pearl, always wanting a kiss. He was never called anything but daddy and didn't have the heart to punish the kids which upset Pearl because she had to do all the disciplining.

After about a year the family moved to a 2-story home at 815 4th street in the north central part of town. The home was within walking distance of the State Capitol Building and Blaine walked to work. His office was on the 13th floor and the kids would visit frequently to ride the elevators, look at the eastern prairie view out his office window, and have lunch with him in the cafeteria. Mary Ann, the last of the children, was born at St Alexius Hospital December 8, 1937 and was brought home to that house.[11] Pat, Bob, and Nancy enrolled at the Will school which was within walking distance of their home. Blaine's secretary was Babe Scott of Underwood, one of Pearl's younger sisters. She lived in an apartment in a nearby home and was a frequent visitor and participant in family activities.

Bob's usual winter school uniform was corduroy knickers with heavy socks, laced up boots with a knife pocket, heavy coat, and cap with flaps to cover the ears. The weather was usually cold with frequent snow storms and occasional blizzards. Yet the weather seldom caused school closings and the kids walked to school regardless of the weather or depth of the snow.

Blaine joined the Elks Club and the family participated in most of its

These earth huts, a part of a Mandan Indian Village, were located on the banks of the Missouri river. Members of the Lewis and Clark Expedition wintered at a Mandan Village enroute to the Pacific Ocean.

Officers of the 7th Cavalry and their ladies at Fort Abraham Lincoln shortly before the regiment departed for the Little Bighorn campaign in 1876.

family activities. He took the family to every carnival and circus that came to town and always seemed to know some one affiliated with the show. The family went on picnics most Sundays in the summer and frequently visited Fort Abraham Lincoln a few miles south of Mandan just across the Missouri river from Bismarck;[12] the earth mound homes built by the Mandan Indians; and the 12-foot high bronze statue of Sacajawea, and President Teddy Roosevelt's log home on the grounds of the Capitol. He was a friend of the Warden of the State Prison and took the family on a tour of that institution and to view the Germans, Italians, and Japanese interred at Fort Lincoln after World War II started. He produced his own fire works show on the Fourth of July and it became the must see event in the neighborhood. The whole family worked in their victory garden near the Missouri river and participated in the scrap and rubber drives to assist the war effort.

When Bob and Jack Agrey experimented with smoking at about age 9, rather than punish him, Blaine, a chain smoker, invited Bob to join him Sunday afternoon for a smoke. He lit his cigarette and offered Bob one, then a second, and when they finished the third, Bob turned green and got as sick as he had ever been. He was cured of experimenting with cigarettes and never became a smoker, not even during his 45 months in the U. S. Navy during the Korean War when all his buddies smoked.

Blaine taught Bob and Dick to fish in the Missouri river and every spring took the family to the river during the ice breakup to witness the

flooding of the river bottom. Bob formed the habit of reading the daily *Bismarck Tribune* at an early age. He started about the third grade when he had the mumps or measles and had to stay home from school. To keep him occupied, Pearl introduced him to the funnies (comics) page. As he matured his interests included all sections of the newspaper with a particular interest in political news.

His favorite funnies included Alley Oop (V.T. Hamlin, 1933), Prince Valiant (Hal Foster, 1937), Tarzan (Edgar Rice Burroughs, 1929), Dick Tracy (Chester Gould, 1931), and Little Orphan Annie (Harold Gray, 1924.) Others included Buck Rogers (Norman S. Hall, 1929), Flash Gordon and Jungle Jim (Alex Raymond, 1934), Mandrake the Magician (1934) and The Phantom (1936) both by Lee Falk. He also enjoyed Terry and the Pirates (Milton Caniff, 1934), Blondie (Chic Young, 1939), 'Li'l Abner (Al Capp, 1934), Popeye the Sailor (Max and Dave Flisher, 1933), Moon Mullins, (Frank Willard, 1923), and Gasoline Alley (Frank King, 1918).[13]

Bob Whipple, age 9, ready for his weekly magazine delivery route. The wording on the bag is The Saturday Evening Post and The Ladies Home Journal. Photo, courtesy of Blaine Whipple.

He soon migrated to comic books which came into their own in the late 1930s. Among his favorites were **Superman,** the first comic character to have powers beyond a normal human; **Batman** whose detective abilities made his stories more of a mystery series than a superhero; **Prince Namor Sub-Mariner; The Shield;** and **Archie Andrews** who was modeled roughly around Mickey Rooney's Andy Hardy character.[14]

When he asked for his first bicycle at around age 9, he was told to get a job and earn one. He began with a weekly magazine route delivering *The Saturday Evening Post, Collier's, Liberty, Outdoor Life, Harpers, Ladies Home Journal, Hunting and Fishing, Argosy, True Story, and Better Homes and Gardens.* He also entered subscription contests for the various magazines and usually won because he wasn't afraid to knock on doors and ask. He had a *Grit* route on Saturdays, selling that magazine door to door for

***Grit* February 20, 1938.**

five cents.[15] On Sundays after church he sold the *Minneapolis Star and Tribune* and the *Fargo Forum* on the corner of Fifth and Main across from the Northern Pacific train depot and site of the Patterson Hotel.[16] He sold the Non Partisan League newspaper, *The Leader*, edited by Blaine, at the Capitol Building when it carried a juicy story about Democratic Governor John Moses' administration. He positioned himself in the main floor lobby just before closing time and sold the papers to departing state workers for 10 cents. As soon as he saved $10 he bought his first bike which he painted red and his Dad helped him repair it and taught him how to fix flat tires.

The family's main entertainment was listening to the radio, mostly Bismarck's KFYR. They were not to interrupt their father during news broadcasts.[17] Sunday nights were devoted to radio with the entire family in the living room listening to *One Man's Family, Jack Benny, Fred Allen, and Edgar Bergen* and *Charlie McCarthy.* Other don't miss programs were *Amos and Andy, The Rudy Vallee Show, Believe It or Not, Andre Kostalenetz Orchestra, The Eddie Cantor Show, The Hedda Hopper Show, Lum and Abner, March of Time, Metropolitan Opera with Milton Cross, Burns and Allen, The Adventures of Charlie Chan, Kraft Music Hall, Lux Radio Theater, The Baby Snooks Show, Fibber McGee & Molly,* (Bob met Fibber and Molly at a California Guest Ranch in 1949) *Major Bowes' Original Amateur Hour, The Green Hornet, Mr. Keen, Tracer of Lost Persons, I love a Mystery,* and *Mr. District Attorney.*

Pearl's soaps included *Old Ma Perkins, The Guiding Light, The Right to Happiness, The Romance of Helen Trent,* and *The Road of Life.* The kids favorite shows included *Little Orphan Annie, Jack Armstrong the All American Boy, The Lone Ranger, The Green Hornet, Gene Autry's Melody Ranch, Red Ryder,* and *The Roy Rogers Show.* Popular morning shows included *The Breakfast Club* with Don O'Neil and *The Arthur Godfrey Show.*

It was also a time when programs offered premiums. Among them were *Buck Rogers,*[18] *Radio Orphan Annie,*[19] *Dick Tracy,*[20] *Captain Midnight,*[21] *Jack Armstrong,*[22] *The Lone Ranger,*[23] *Sgt. Preston of the Yukon,*[24] and *The Shadow.*[25]

Dick and Nancy were great friends and played games together as Dick and Jane. They were cowboy and cowgirl with ropes over the back of chairs for their horses and Superman and Supergirl. They wore doll blankets around their necks for capes and got springs for their shoes, a premium for sending in cereal boxtops.

Wendell Wilkie, Republican Presidential Nominee, 1940.

In the fall of 1940 Bob saw his first U. S. Presi-

dential candidate when the Republican nominee, Wendell Wilkie, stopped at Bismarck on his western whistle-stop campaign. All school kids - elementary and high school - were lined up on the north side of the Northern Pacific depot to greet the presidential campaign train. Thousands of adults also turned out. Bob's eighth cousin once removed, Franklin D. Roosevelt, was elected to his third term that election. North Dakota was one of eight states carried by Wilkie.

FIRST JOB AWAY FROM HOME, AGE 11

In the summer of 1941, Bob hitchhiked the 51 miles to Underwood to spend a couple of weeks with his grandmother Nellie Scott. He was 11, tall for his age, and skinny as a rail. His first ride on the return trip was with a farmer who lived south of Underwood. His three kids were all much younger and he had no hired hand to help with the farm chores. He asked Bob if he would like to work on a farm for the rest of the summer. The answer was yes if his parents approved. The job was the supper topic when he got home. They said yes and he was back on U.S. 83 hitchhiking north the next morning.[26] The farmer had given him directions on how to find the farm so when they got near Underwood he knew where to get off and hiked to the farm and began work that day. He got his first milking lesson that night and milking became his twice daily chore along with separating cream from the milk. He hoed the garden, carried water from the well into the house, emptied the slop pail from under the sink, cleaned the barn and chicken coop, collected eggs, and did whatever else was asked.

After the grain was cut and tied by a binder,[27] he joined the farmer in the fields shocking wheat and oats. It took him awhile to get the hang of positioning the bundles but he learned fast and spent the entire day in the fields. He had his first driving lesson one afternoon when the farmer asked him to bring the truck to where they were working. The farmer would drive them to the field each morning and leave the truck where they began work and when they had covered a long distance, he walked back and drove it to their present position. On this occasion he told Bob to get the truck. Bob had never driven but had watched his father shift when driving. He didn't tell the farmer he had never driven and eagerly walked to the truck. He had no trouble starting the vehicle but was confused by the shift and could only shift into reverse. He told the farmer he had never driven and was given his only driving lesson. From then on he moved the truck.

Saturday was market time and the family went to Underwood to shop while Bob visited his grandmother and other relatives. They were sur-

prised to see him that first Saturday. He spent about five weeks on the farm and returned home with a dark tan, stronger muscles, $5 in his pocket, and a mutt dog for a pet. He named the dog Spot for the large white area around his right eye.

Typical Soo Line caboose in the 1940s.

Though her birthday was December 8, the family celebrated Mary Ann's fourth birthday on Sunday December 7, 1941 with a party attended by her friends. That was the day of the Japanese sneak attack on Pearl Harbor, Hawaii. The family heard the news in a radio broadcast. Blaine sent Bob downtown to buy a copy of the Extra he expected the *Bismarck Tribune* to publish so he could read about the attack.

He spent part of the early summer of 1942 in Turtle Lake, McLean county, North Dakota at the home of his aunt Clara, his first baby sitter, her husband Gunder Gunderson, and Tom, first of their three sons, all born in Turtle Lake.[28] Gunder worked for the Soo Line Railroad and was responsible for the roundhouse. The passenger train overnighted in Turtle Lake and he maintained the steam engine and cleaned the single passenger car and caboose. He put Bob to work greasing a part of the engine and cleaning the passenger car, including the windows, inside and out. As a reward, Gunder let him drive the engine to the turnaround where they reversed its direction so it was ready to leave on its morning run.

The family moved to Watford City in the far western part of the state in late summer 1942. It was the seat of McKenzie county and like Bennett county in South Dakota was rural with both farming and ranching. It included part of the Badlands and was North Dakota's youngest and largest county. Watford City was about two-and-a-half times larger than Martin and had modern conveniences such as public water and sewer.

Before school started most students picked potatoes for area farmers. Because of the labor shortage caused by the war, the opening of school was postponed for two weeks so students could help farmers harvest their potato crop. The picker strapped 10 bushel gunny sacks around his waist, was given a half bushel basket, and spent the day on his hands and knees picking. When the basket was full it was emptied into the gunny sack, and the half-full sack carried forward approximately the distance it took to fill the basket so when the basket was refilled, the picker had reached the sack and filled it. Pay was 8 or 9 cents a bushel and a day's earning depended on how fast and efficient you were. Bob was usually among the top earners.

WORKS FOR HIS FATHER AS A PRINTER'S DEVIL

He began working for his father, editor and publisher of the *McKenzie County Farmer and Watford City Guide*, as a printer's devil that fall, continuing until the school year ended. He was the janitor, responsible for keeping the coal stove going, emptying ashes and clinkers,[29] cleaning the presses, melting the pigs and casting the advertising mats with the molten lead,[30] and operated a job press printing stationary, auction bills, business cards, etc. for various print customers (See Chapter 16 for a more complete description of the job of a printer's devil.) He also broke Shetland ponies for a local farmer who hired him because, he was light enough for the ponies and his legs were long enough to wrap around the pony's belly thus he was seldom bucked off.

In the fall of 1942, the first blizzard came without warning and caught the family unprepared. They hadn't ordered coal and their bin was almost empty. Fortunately Bob knew of an abandoned coal shed about three blocks from their home and made several trips forth and back hauling coal to their house in boxes loaded on a sled. The wind and snow never let up during the two hours he was at this task. He was bitterly cold but his family was warm.

A spring blizzard, the worst in 23 years, struck the second week in March 1943. The cold ranged from 10 to 20 below zero, the school was closed, snow drifted from four to 10 feet, all roads into town were blocked, the Great Northern Passenger train was stranded, state snow plows were unable to break drifts, business was at a standstill. When it ended, the Whipple house was completely enclosed by drifts of snow. The only exit was from an upper window because its drifts were that high. The town's wide main street was one continuous drift, high enough to walk the length and step onto the roofs of all the buildings.

He worked for Harold Balken on a grain and potato farm north of the village of Arnegard the summer of 1943 for $1 a day. He worked with horses as most of the farm equipment was horse drawn. He harnessed the team to plows, cultivators, and mowing machines and spent his days working at one of those tasks.

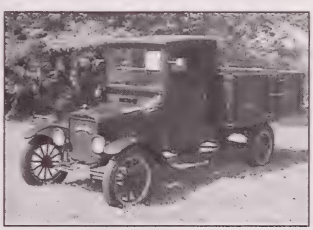
He operated the farmer's old iron-wheeled lug tractor and while plowing a field within sight of the home, a problem occurred and as he tried to fix it, a finger on his left hand was smashed between two metal parts. He was on his feet between the tractor and plow for about an hour shouting towards the house without anyone hearing him. Finally realizing no one would miss him until milking time, he stretched further than he believed possible, reached a large screwdriver in the tractor tool box, and pried his finger loose. Fortunately, it was not broken.

After morning chores he worked in the fields with a mid-day break for lunch brought to him. Chores included cleaning the horse stalls, milking two cows and cleaning their stalls, slopping the hogs, and hauling drinking and wash water from the well to the house. He helped birth piglets and calves. When the parents went to social events, he was the sitter for the family's younger children. He was bone tired by the end of most days and was in bed as early as possible.

The fall of 1943 Bob made a deal with the wife of a farmer who raised turkeys. He went door-to-door in Watford City selling orders for fresh turkeys to be delivered the day before Thanksgiving. He presold about 50 birds and the weekend before Thanksgiving the two of them killed the birds by hanging them from the clothes line by their feet and bled them by slitting their throats, dipped them in boiling water to make plucking feathers fast and easy, and cleaned them. On Wednesday he delivered the turkeys and collected the money which they split equally.

3-PART-TIME JOBS DURING 8TH GRADE SCHOOL YEAR

When he began the eighth grade, he tried out for band and was assigned the trombone. It only took a couple of weeks for the music teacher to determine he wasn't going to make it. He continued to work as a devil for his father after school and on Saturdays and took on two evening jobs. He was hired by the owner of the Shirk Hotel, the only hotel in town, to operate its automatic furnace. This involved filling an enclosed conveyer with enough coal early in the evening to burn throughout the night. In the morning before school he would empty the furnace of ashes and clinkers and refill the conveyer.



1926 Ford Model T closed cab flatbed truck similar to the one Bob Whipple drove. It had roll down door windows and heavy duty rear wheels.

On Friday, Saturday, and Sunday nights he was the projectionist at The Park Theatre, owned by Ralph Christensen, a friend of his parents. It was the county's only movie theater. Most movies were at least four reels and the most critical part of the job was to switch between reels. He loaded two projection machines to start the show. Toward the end of each reel, he had to watch for a signal to make the switch to the second machine and load the first machine with another reel. The reels of film were used over and over as they were mailed from theater to theater. The wear and tear caused the film to break so he had to master the art of splicing which included making sure the splice tied the film together in a manner that

Graduation Day, June 2, 1944. Photo, courtesy of Blaine Whipple.

made the film flow properly. Friday night was "Pal Night" when you could buy one adult ticket and get one free. The movie March 18, 19, and 20, 1943 was *Miss Annie Rooney* with Shirley Temple.

In the 1940s not many kids had a car but Bob had access to a Model T Ford truck for recreational use. It belonged to the farmer whose wife he partnered with in the turkey business. They had no children and treated him like a son and he had use of the truck - vintage middle 1920s - on special occasions. In those days there were no drag strips but Bob drove around with a truck full of friends. His best friend was Andy Hetland, a boy his age he met on his first day in Watford City. He got his first driver's licence at 13. No written or driver's test was required. All he had to do was go to the court house with his dad, pay a 50 cent fee, and the license was issued immediately.

Among his winter recreational pursuits was ice skating. There was a lighted town rink where he skated nights. On the Saturdays his dad didn't

Whipple kids with Scott cousins, Minneapolis, June 1944. L to R: Pat, 15, holding Mary Scott, 7 months (daughter of Leonard and Irene), Nancy, 12, Bob, 14, Mary Ann, 6, Dick, 10, Don Scott, 1 year, 9 months (Leonard and Irene), Laurel Kay Scott, 1 year, 9 months (Gordon and Kay). Photo, courtesy of Laurie Massey.

need him in the print shop, he joined, Dick, Nancy, and Pat and dozens of other town kids skating on a creek close to town. They would skate for miles in both directions. It was usually quite cold so they built fires on the creek bank to get warm. The major difference between town and creek skating was the ice. Town ice was smooth and easy to skate on and the rink was lighted. Creek ice was bumpy and hard to skate on. Its main benefit was the distance that could be covered.

In those days most North Dakota students didn't go beyond the eighth grade. Consquently, schools made a big deal out of eighth grade graduation. June 1944 was the first of four public school graduations for Bob.[31] The

Tom Dolan (1860-1944) with second daughter Maggie Frick and grandson Leonard Scott at his Minneapolis home in early 1940s. Photo, courtesy of Blaine Whipple.

whole town turned out for the ceremony, the band played, various awards were bestowed, the class valedictorian spoke, and the graduates received diplomas, signed by the superintendent, from the school board chairman.

Watford City was an excellent fit for the family. Blaine became one of the leading citizens in the county, the paper was successful, making money for its investors, Pearl had a host of friends, and the kids thrived. However, ever the entrepreneur, Blaine wanted to work for himself. When the *Vernon County Broadcaster* became available in Viroqua, county seat of Vernon county, Wisconsin, he decided to acquire it. Because of travel restrictions, he was unable to visit Viroqua to do his due diligence and made his decision based solely on the "information" – which proved to be flawed – provided by the publisher. The family motored to Williston June 22, Blaine's sixty-first birthday, to catch a train for the move east. They stopped in Minneapolis en route to visit the Leonard Scott family, Pearl's older brother, and her eighty-four-year-old grandfather Tom Dolan. It was the first and only time the Whipple children saw their great grandfather as he died three weeks later.

SPENDS SUMMER WORKING ON A WISCONSIN DAIRY-TOBACCO FARM

They arrived in Viroqua June 26 and lived in a tourist camp because of a housing shortage. They soon moved to Westby, a smaller nearby town, where they rented a large home near the center of town. Bob worked on a small dairy whose secondary cash crop was tobacco. His work day began at 5:30 a.m. The farmer milked 40 Holstein cows with Bob's quota being 20 morning and evening. Mechanical milking equipment was not in general use on small dairy farms and he developed strong hands. He was responsible for feeding the cows, keeping the barn clean, separating the cream from the milk using a hand crank separator, and hauling the full milk cans to the road for early morning pickup by the dairy who bought the raw milk.

After morning chores and breakfast, he hoed the tobacco in the hot sun to remove weeds. Lunch was brought to him in the field. Afternoon hoeing ended when it was time to head to the barn for the evening milking. When the milking was finished he was usually ready for bed.

After the tobacco had grown to a specified height he topped the plants and when they were mature cut them with a machete. When the cutting was finished he helped load the plants on carts and took them to the drying sheds where they were hung to dry. After drying, the leaves were stripped from the stalk, baled in a stripping box, and sent to a warehouse to await sale. The year 2005 was the last year for Wisconsin's tobacco

crop.[32] His farmer also raised bees and Bob's assignment was to remove the frames from the hives and the honey from the frames by placing them into an extractor and spinning them by hand. While working directly with the bees, he wore protective clothing including veils and used smoke.

This picture predates Bob Whipple's time as a pin boy but is a good representation of the job.

By fall, Blaine realizing his contract to acquire the *Vernon County Broadcaster* was based on unreliable information, severed the agreement. There was no newspaper work in the immediate area so he went to Chicago and joined the staff of a suburban weekly newspaper. His first mother-in-law, Margarite (Ruhl) Kloss, lived in Chicago and through her he re-established contact with his daughter Elaine and son Jim who lived in Mt. Vernon and Cedar Rapids, Iowa.

Pat started the eleventh grade in Westby, Bob the ninth, Nancy the eighth, Dick the sixth, and Mary Ann the first. All did well in school and liked the town. Westby had a 10-pin bowling alley which did not have automatic equipment to pick up and set the pins. The pin locations were painted on the alley floor[33] and the pin boy replaced the pins following each frame. Bob got a job as pin boy and was paid 5 cents a game. He usually maximized his earnings by setting two lanes simultaneously. To qualify for two lanes, the pin boy had to be fast. They also received tips from bowlers who tossed coins down the lane to the pit.

Photo, courtesy of Zhi Zhan Yang.

Wanting to get the family back as a unit, Blaine accepted a job as editor of the *Dickinson Press*, a 5-day a week daily in Dickinson, Stark county, North Dakota. Dickinson was between Bismarck and Watford City so the family was returning to familiar territory. However, when they arrived at the beginning of the second semester of school, they found the housing stock was the same as in Viroqua and the family had to live in a trailer court.

Bob met the toughest teacher he had in his high school career in Dickinson. She taught English. When called on, the student was to stand and answer her question(s). If he didn't know the answer she embarrassed and belittled him. In his first day in her class he was smiling to himself about her treatment of a student who couldn't answer. She made Bob stand and

demanded to know if students were allowed to smile in the Westby school. He answered "yes" and was told "not in Dickinson." After a couple of days in her class he decided she was not going to catch him unprepared. He spent more time preparing for her class than any other and as a result learned grammar and even came to enjoy diagraming sentences.

After school April 12, 1945 he heard of the death of his distance cousin President Franklin D. Roosevelt and the swearing-in of Harry S. Truman. This was one of those occasions, like the Japanese sneak attack on Pearl Harbor December 7, 1941, which is imprinted on the mind for the rest of the person's life. For the next several days the newspaper and radio reports were about Roosevelt, the cause of death, funeral arrangements, etc., and Truman's, background and political career and what to expect of his Presidency. Bob's next similar occasion was the assassination of President John F. Kennedy November 22, 1963, 18 years later. He also remembers VE Day (May 8, 1945), the day Germany surrendered ending the war in Europe.

Photo, courtesy of Zhi Zhan Yang.

WORKS AS A SUMMER RANCH HAND IN THE BADLANDS

At the end of the school year, he answered a newspaper ad for a job on a ranch in the Badlands[34] several miles south and east of Medora. He applied, was accepted, and hitch hiked to Medora where the rancher met him and drove him to the ranch. The large ranch was divided into north and south sections. They raised Hereford cattle. The main ranch house was in the south section where Bob worked. An older hand with a full beard was in charge of the north section. He lived alone in a small log house with a large corral and some sheds for shelter for the horses.

The main ranch house was small - two bedrooms - without modern conveniences. Light was by kerosene lamps,[35] cooking was with a wood-burning stove, the water supply was a well powered by a windmill which also served the farm animals, and the toilet was an outhouse.

The owners had ranched in that remote location for 20 to 25 years and the lack of close neighbors to socialize with had taken its toll on the wife. Her main companions were the farm animals, especially the cats, dogs, and chickens. She frequently picked up little chicks and talked and cooed to them. She was a terrible cook and seldom baked anything other than bread. For one two-week stretch she served eggs every day for all three

North Dakora Badlands.

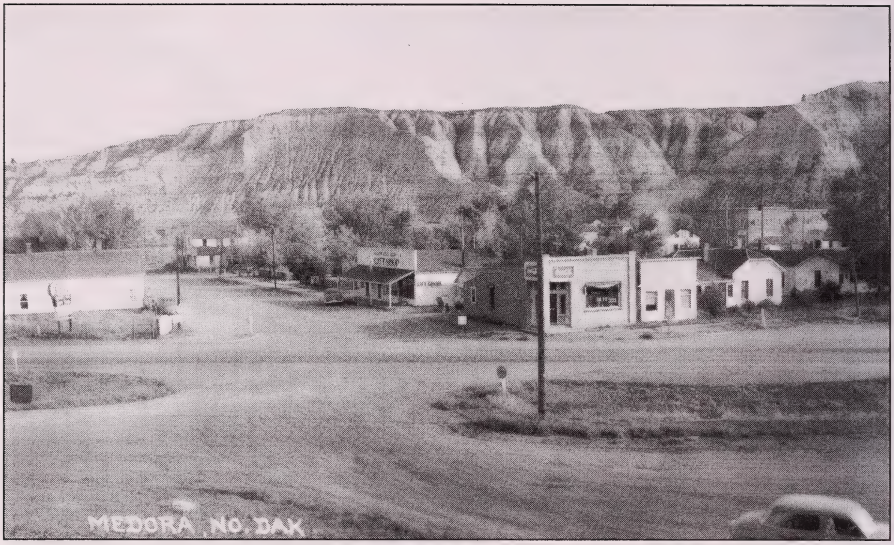
meals. By the end of the second week they went through Bob so fast he left the table for the outhouse.

Shortly after he arrived, the rancher bought a pig which Bob helped butcher. All the meat except the pork chops was salted as they had no refrigeration. Because the chops would spoil, they ate them three times a day until they were gone. The other meat was so heavily salted, he didn't eat much of it. He looked forward to the few occasions he was sent to work with the other hand in the north section because he was a great cook and baker.

There was no bunk house so his sleeping quarters were in a room in the granary near the barn and corrals. His room mates were mice, rats, snakes, and insects. He hardly slept a wink the first three nights as he lay awake imagining those varmints crawling on and biting him. He was so exhausted by the fourth night, he fell asleep as soon as his head touched the pillow. He awakened in the morning with no problems and from then on had no problem sleeping.

His first job was to break two horses for his use. He got the job done after being bucked off a couple of times and learned how to saddle, bridle, and care for them. A roan mare became his favorite.

Bob and the rancher's son who was about his age, were put to work building a new fence line. They loaded a horse-drawn wagon with rolls of barbed-wire, fence posts, post hole diggers, nails, special tools to stretch and tighten the strands of wire, leather gloves, lunch boxes and water, and drove to the job site. They were at the job all day for several days digging



The picture is not from the mid 1940s but from either the late 1950s or early 1960s and gives some idea of the town when Bob Whipple was there. Courtesy Doug Ellison, Western Edge Books, Medora.

post holes six feet apart and placing the poles in the holes the entire length of the fence line. By tapping-in each pole when the hole was dug they were strong enough to stay in place when the three strands of wire were strung, stretched, tightened, and nailed to each pole with fence nails (shaped like the letter U). It was hard, hot, sweaty work and led to a hearty appetite which was never properly fed. It was also a muscle builder.

Saturday was shopping day in Medora. With the rancher and his wife in the truck cab and Bob and their son in the back, they drove several miles to town over dirt roads. On his first Saturday in Medora Bob went to see the 26-room Chateau built by the Marquis de Mores, a French nobleman, who in 1883 and 1884 built the town and also operated a meat packing operation including a refrigeration plant.[36] The Chateau, built on the heights overlooking the town and a great rim of Badlands outcropping, still stands as a tourist attraction.

In 1945 Medora[37] had a general store, hardware store, a couple of restaurants, blacksmith, dray service, public stable, and two or three saloons. The streets were dirt, the sidewalks wooden, and there were no modern conveniences. Today it is on Interstate 94, 24 miles east of the Montana state line (Exits 24 and 27).

Bob learned on his first Saturday that he would be served in the saloons, no questions asked. He ignored hard liquor but usually had a beer. The saloons were full of older cowboys, some of whom were heavy drinkers, and by mid afternoon there was usually a fight over something. The contestants went into the street or the alley to fight and the saloon emptied because everyone wanted to see the fisticuffs. One Saturday

Chateau de Mores, built in Medora in 1883. Photo, courtesy of Zhi Zhan Yang.

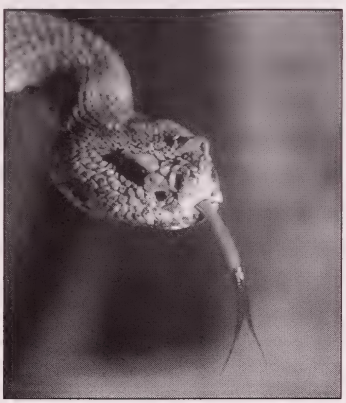
Marquis de Mores, about 1883. Citizen of France.

Cattalo.

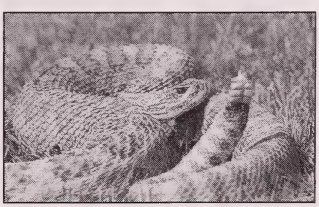
afternoon when two cowboys were fighting in the alley between a saloon and the stable, Bob and some other boys sat on the saloon roof to watch. When the town Marshall came to stop the fight one of the cowboys grabbed a 3-tine[38] pitchfork leaning against the stable wall and thrust it into the Marshall's stomach. Bob never learned if the Marshall recovered or if the cowboy was arrested and punished.

The family went to Medora for the Fourth of July celebration which featured a small rodeo which Bob entered. He rode a cattalo, a cross between a bison cow and a domestic bull, bigger than a cow and not as mean as a buffalo.[39]

About the beginning of August he was astride the roan every day checking to see where bunches of the herd were grazing. They had the run of the ranch and were scattered far and wide in various groups. Knowing their location was important for the roundup. During these searches he saw most of the wild animals that populated the Badlands: coyotes, bob cats, wild turkey, eagles, mule deer, porcupine, prong horn antelope, prairie dogs, snakes - mostly



Prarie Rattlesnake.



Prarie Rattlesnake.

Prairie Rattlesnakes, Bull, and King - and light brown and cream colored petrified wood[40] - some in the form of stumps two feet high.

A rattlesnake made its presence known by rattling when it sensed danger. On these occasions the roan would jump in another direction. Sometimes the jump was so quick and so violent Bob was almost thrown and could have fallen within striking distance of the Rattler. He still remembers the cold chill that ran through him when he came upon a Rattler when walking or astride his horse while alone on the range.[41]

Neighboring ranchers helped each other during round up and Bob's job was to round up the cattle he had found in early August and drive them to the collection area which was near a railroad spur where they were herded into corrals. There he threw the calves to the ground and restrained them while they were branded, vaccinated, and the males castrated. It was a tiring, hot and dusty job but the evenings were fun as they ate good food from a chuck wagon, talked and sang around the fires, and slept under the stars for as many days as it took to complete the roundup. The cattle, about 1,000 head, were shipped to the Chicago market. Meat rationing was still in effect and the meat was probably shipped overseas to feed the troops.

This was the end of the summer for Bob and after receiving his wages he walked several miles to the highway and hitchhiked home to Dickinson in time to join the family on its move to Redfield, the county seat of Spink county, South Dakota. Just before they left, the country celebrated VJ Day (September 2), the surrender of Japan ending World War II.

The Redfield move was prompted because the family was still living in the trailer court in un-acceptable accommodations. Blaine accepted the editorship of the *Redfield Press* knowing it was for a limited time. The editor-publisher was under doctor's care and had been advised to take several months off to regain his health. The family was guaranteed a nice house and moved into a spacious two-story house near downtown with a porch across the front with a swing.

Redfield marked a transition for Pearl as it is where she first worked outside the home after Pat was born. From then on, in addition to her homemaker obligations, she always had an outside job. She clerked in the Redfield Dime Store.

Redfield was known as the Pheasant Capitol of the country. Every fall hunters from eastern states came to hunt and stayed at a large hunting lodge close to town. Bob applied for and was hired as a combination bellboy-goffer for the season.

Bob Whipple sophomore, Redfield High School. 1946. Photo, courtesy of Blaine Whipple.

He enrolled in Redfield High School as a sophomore and after the hunting season ended got a job as night janitor at the Dime Store. He also shined shoes for 25 cents a pair at the hotel. He did well in school and made many friends. When the publisher returned the Whipple family moved again. Since Pat was a senior, it was decided she should remain and graduate from Redfield High. Arrangements were made for her to board with an elderly widow. Bob also wanted to finish the school year there and offered to pay his own room and board using the money saved from the ranching and Pheasant Lodge jobs plus the money he was earning at the Dime Store and hotel. Permission was granted.

He moved into a boarding house owned by two spinster sisters. It was close to downtown and the school. He was one of seven boarders and had a bedroom upstairs. He ate breakfast and supper there and had lunch at school. He had permission to use the washing machine and clothes line, was allowed to study at the dining room table after supper, and to listen to the radio in the living room. It was there he heard a radio commercial for Ford cars that he has remembered for 62 years: *There's a Ford in your future, there's a Ford in your past. But the Ford you have now is the Ford that has to last. So you better make it last.*[42] And there was a Ford in his future. He bought a 1986 Taurus which set the pace for the aerodynamic looks of cars of today. Within a few years, the design had been copied by most makers, both foreign and domestic. It was the best selling car in the U. S. between 1992 and 1996 with 7.5 million sold during its 20 years of production.

He worked at the Dime store and the hotel that summer and joined the family at Yankton, South Dakota that fall where Blaine was the editor of the *Yankton Public Opinion* and Pearl clerked at the J. C. Penny store. Yankton, like Viroqua and Dickinson, had a housing shortage and the only house available large enough for the family was on a hilltop on the north edge of town. Unfortunately, it lacked the modern conveniences the family had come to expect since their move to Bismarck. This meant it

was back to the past with a pump and cistern for the water supply and an outhouse. Pat moved to Yankton with the family and lived there until her death on October 3, 2006.[43]

Blaine left Yankton in October to manage the *Itasca Iron News* in Coleraine, Itasca county in the Mesabi Iron Range in northern Minnesota. Bob, Nancy, Dick, and Mary Ann entered school in Yankton where Bob became a member of the production staff of the Junior Class play, "Two Gentlemen and Verona" and was a reporter for *The Woksape,* the bi-weekly high school newspaper. Through the school he was cast in local programs on radio WNAX, a 50,000 watt station with a large audience throughout the middle part of the U.S. He also wrote a poem published in the annual *Anthology of High School Poetry*. It was selected from tens of thousands of submissions from students at high schools all over the nation.[44]

He got an after-school job at an old filling station on the east side of town. The pumps had glass globes on top filled with gas which was hand pumped into the car's tank through a black rubber hose and nozzle. There was no self-service.[45] The attendant cleaned the windshield and checked the oil - even the tire pressure if asked. In addition to pumping and collecting for the gas, he greased (todays term is lubricated) and did oil changes from a pit under the vehicle.

The family moved to Windom, Cottonwood county, Minnesota in February 1947 where Blaine became manager-editor of the *Cottonwood County Citizen*. Upon his departure from Coleraine, the publisher of the *Itasca Iron News* wrote, "we are very sorry he is leaving but after several months he has been unable to find a suitable place for his family to live. A business offer unexpectedly came to him that he could not well pass up. He goes to Windom, where he takes full charge of a newspaper whose proprietor, an old friend of the Whipples, could afford and who thought that after four strenuous war years he was entitled to a rest. They are heading for California."

Changing schools caused by the various moves was harder on Nancy than the other children and arrangements were made for her to stay with her best school friend, Doris Kollars, whose family lived on a Nebraska farm just across the Missouri river from Yankton. Pearl, Bob, Dick, and Mary Ann moved to Windom to join Blaine.

After a week at the Windom High School Bob decided Yankton was a better fit and was given permission to return with the understanding he was on his own. He rented a sleeping room from Mrs. Magness, a widow whose spinster daughter lived with her. He had laundry privileges and was allowed to use the refrigerator and eat breakfast there - cold cereal with

milk -, had lunch at school, and supper at the lunch counter at a drug store. The supper menu caused him to become more accepting of food. Because he was frequently hungry, he ate food he previously rejected.

In June of 1947 he got a job as a laborer with a street construction crew. It was a job where he got "all shook up" operating a jack hammer. He also did a lot of shovel work. By the end of the month a better paying laborer's job became available with a construction company building an addition to Mount Marty Junior College for Women. His job was to keep the brick layers supplied which meant piloting a wheelbarrow between the brick pile and the locations where the layers were working, unloading, and placing the bricks in a readily reachable position to expedite their work. In addition, he did whatever else was assigned by the foreman.

The Whipple family moved to Tracy, Lyon county, Minnesota in September 1947 where Blaine became the town's first Secretary of the Chamber of Commerce. Bob got a job his first week in town as the janitor, stock clerk, soda jerk, and sales person, at the town's only drug store[46] where he worked after school, Saturday and Sunday. He opened the store at 6:30 a.m. on Sundays so early risers could buy the *Minneapolis Star-Tribune* and enjoy an early cup of coffee. He also taught Sunday School to elementary age kids at the Presbyterian Church located across the street from their home at 360 Roland street.

He had read a newspaper article about Pages serving in the U. S. Senate and asked his father to get him an appointment through his friend Senator William Langer of North Dakota. For reasons never explained to him, his father chose not to seek the appointment.[47]

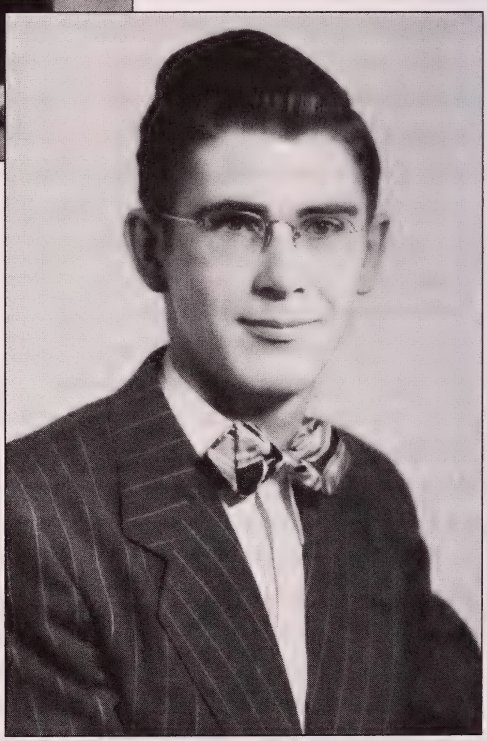
He became a feature writer and columnist on the *Tracer,* the school newspaper, joined the drama club and played a feature role in the three act play, *Our Hearts Were Young and Gay.* Tracy didn't have a youth club and Bob was appointed youth chairman and Rev. A. Phillip Tuttle adult chairman of the committee to organize a center. He recruited 57 kids, including Nancy and Dick, to work on the committee and bring the center to fruition. Located in the basement of the Masonic building, it was named the Hacienda and opened with a Mexican theme December 29. Membership, which was open to kids ages 13 to 20, cost 40 cents a month and 120 memberships were sold the opening week.

Bob was sworn in as a Private First Class in Tracy's new unit in Company B of the 204th Medical Battalion of the Minnesota National Guard on October 14 1947. Of the 38 members, 14 were high school students. They met Thursday evenings for training. He didn't know it at the time but he was following in the footsteps of his father and grandfather who both served in the Iowa National Guard.

Other than beer, Bob had not tasted alcohol until the Saturday night of

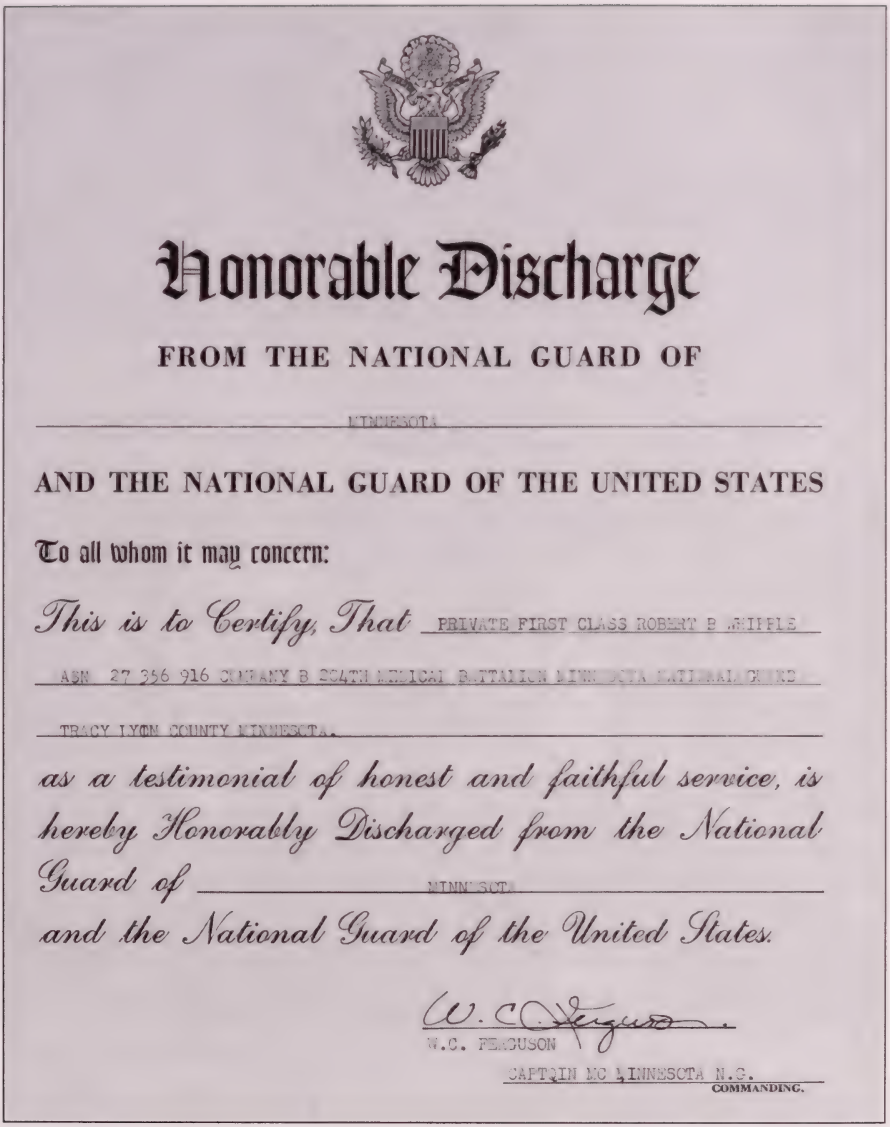
Nancy and Bob Whipple, opening of the Hacienda, December 29, 1947.

his Senior Prom. After the Prom he went out with half-a-dozen of his buddies who introduced him to the "joys" of drinking and like many first-timers, he drank to excess. His buddies deposited him on the front porch of his home, rang the bell, and left. Both parents were still up. They got him upstairs where he spent about 40 sick minutes in the bathroom before getting to bed. Wanting him to understand the consequences of his actions, his parents woke him at 6 a.m. and sent him to his Sunday morning job at the drug store. That was the most awful morning of his young life and he left for home without saying a word as soon as the owner arrived, and not fit to teach Sunday School, he spent the rest of the day in bed.



Bob Whipple High School graduation picture.

Photos, courtesy of Blaine Whipple.



Honorable Discharge

FROM THE NATIONAL GUARD OF

MINNESOTA

AND THE NATIONAL GUARD OF THE UNITED STATES

To all whom it may concern:

This is to Certify, That PRIVATE FIRST CLASS ROBERT B WHIPPLE

ASN 27 356 916 COMPANY B 204TH MEDICAL BATTALION MINNESOTA NATIONAL GUARD

TRACY LYON COUNTY MINNESOTA.

as a testimonial of honest and faithful service, is hereby Honorably Discharged from the National Guard of MINNESOTA *and the National Guard of the United States.*

W. C. Ferguson

W.C. FERGUSON

CAPTAIN MC MINNESOTA N.G.

COMMANDING.

WORKS AT YELLOWSTONE NATIONAL PARK PALM SPRINGS, CALIFORNIA YOSEMITE NATIONAL PARK

The *Tracer* of May 11 introduced the Senior Class in rhyme. Bob's rhyme: "As a studious, ambitious, likable soul, Bob Whipple hits high on our popularity poll." He was graduated at the end of May, one of a class of 61. He left Tracy the day after graduation for a job at Yellowstone National Park in Wyoming.

Bob had four tourist related jobs in a row after being graduated from

Canyon Lodge, Yellowstone, 1948.

high school. He spent the summer of 1948 at Yellowstone National Park in Wyoming, the winter of 1948-1949 at a Guest Ranch in Palm Springs, California, and the summers of 1949 and 1950 at Yosemite National Park in California.

He signed a Contract with the Yellowstone Park Company, Hotel Division, May 12 to work as a kitchen man. At 18, he considered himself fortunate to get the job as Company policy was to hire college students over 19. His wages were $100.00 a month plus meals and lodging for an eight-hour day six-day week. Employees were obliged to join a Mutual Benefit Association which provided funds to treat illness or injury while on the job. Seven cents a day withheld from the monthly check funded the Association. Meals were served in an employee dining room. The food was the same as served to guests. Valued at 35 cents, a Wyoming sales tax of 2 cents per meal was withheld monthly. The dormitory curfew was midnight.

He hitchhiked from Tracy to Minneapolis where he boarded a train to Gardiner, Montana, site of the North entrance to the Park. From there he was transported to the Canyon Hotel where he worked until September 15. He began working split shifts that corresponded to meal times at the dining room. His job was to feed dirty dishes and silverware into a large conveyor-type dishwasher that cleaned, rinsed, and carried them to the opposite side where they were collected and stacked in a place and manner convenient for the wait people. He fed the dishwasher so fast that the clean dishes and utensils piled up on the other end faster than the collectors could remove them.

Grand Canyon Hotel, Yellowtstone National Park, 800 rooms, 1948.

Dining Room of Grand Canyon Hotel.

His work ethic impressed his supervisor who made him the relief man for a garbage collector, a laundry worker, a truck driver, a salad maker, and two bus boys on their days off. When a bus boy quit he was assigned that job full time. This meant a uniform of white jacket, dark trousers, and dark shoes. The other bus boys were Filipinos about 5'5. He was 6'1. They carried their trays resting on a shoulder. His tray held half again as much as theirs and he lifted it the full length of his arm and carried it to the kitchen. The contrast became the talk of the dining room.

Evenings at the Lodge were informal social affairs of community singing, music, reading, amateur plays, and dancing from 9 to 10:30 p.m. except Sunday. Employees were welcome to join guests in these activities. He spent days off hitchhiking to all sections of the Park: Mammoth Hot

Springs, Old Faithful, Yellowstone Lake, and to Grand Teton National Park and Jackson Hole, Wyoming south of Yellowstone Park. Rides were easy as Park visitors had no qualms about picking up hikers. He came face to face with all the wild animals in the park: grizzly and brown bears, moose, elk, deer, mountain sheep, buffalo, skunks, etc. He fished in Yellowstone Lake, swam at Clear Lake, explored the Upper and Lower Falls, Crystal Falls, Tower Falls, Gibbon Falls, watched Old Faithful erupt, the hot springs bubble at Jupiter Terrace, attended night time employee parties, and took advantage of every opportunity offered. He thoroughly enjoyed his Yellowstone summer.

Bob Whipple as relief garbage man. Photo, courtesy of Blaine Whipple.

He was paid a bonus of 10 percent of his cash wages and reimbursed $25.00 for train fare at the end of the season for fulfilling all contract terms. D. C. McCormack, head chef of the Canyon Hotel Dining Room, and head chef at a Guest Ranch in Palm Springs, California during the winter season, offered him a job as dining room host at the Ranch. He had expected to return to Minnesota and enter college but decided to postpone college and accepted the job which began October 24. He hitchhiked home across Montana and North Dakota. When he left Tracy he weighed 147 pounds and had a 27 inch waist. When he returned he weighed 185 pounds and had a 30 inch waist. It was a summer of growth in more ways than one.

He left for Palm Springs Sunday October 17 traveling by thumb. He went south to Oklahoma where he joined Route 66 heading west. Rides were easy to get. Some rides were for long stretches, several were local of 50 to 75 miles. He rode in trucks, pickups, old and new cars, with solo drivers, couples, and families. He kept going day and night, sometimes waiting several hours at night, frequently sleeping in the vehicle as the miles went by. He crossed Oklahoma, the Texas Panhandle, New Mexico, and Arizona before crossing into California. He experienced the desert and its heat for the first time, saw large cactus, traveled through Oklahoma City, Amarillo, Albuquerque, Gallup, Flagstaff, and Barstow, three time zones, and arrived in Palm Springs October 22 and presented himself

Bob Whipple in downtown Palm Springs, January 1949.

at the Ranch ready for work. It opened for the season Sunday the 24th.

The winter season was from October to May when Palm Springs drew visitors from all over the world to enjoy the warm and sunny climate and delightful scenery. The nearby canyons, Palm,

Delivery truck used by Bob Whipple for room service.

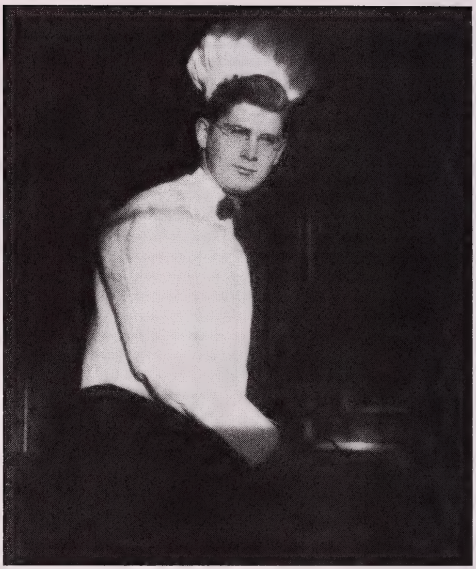
Andreas, and Tahquiyz, were home to thousands of palm trees; the desert vegetation included many varieties of cactus; and deer, big horn sheep, ringtail cat, coyote, racoon, fox, and rabbits were among the wildlife. The Ague Caliente Indian Reservation adjoined the town. Two mountains, San Gorgonio (11,485') and San Jacinto (10,805') sheltered the area from fog and cold.

The owners and operators of the Deep Well Guest Ranch were Frank and Melba Bennett and Philip and Dorothy Boyd. The Bennetts were responsible for reservations and care of the guests and the Boyds for the animals, riding trails, the out property, and supervising ranch hands. When they opened the Ranch in the late 1920s, it was an isolated oasis, surrounded by sand, tumbleweed, wild horses, and coyotes. By 1948, Palm Springs was approaching the Ranch boundaries. The distant view was snow covered mountains.

Guest amenities included well appointed cottages, The Long Room, a gathering place for various functions, dining room, large swimming pool, buckboard, horses, stables, corals, trail rides, cookouts, square dancing, etc. There was a ranch house and Dog House, the latter served as an office. The ranch was a great place for families with both young children and

Photos, courtesy of Blaine Whipple.

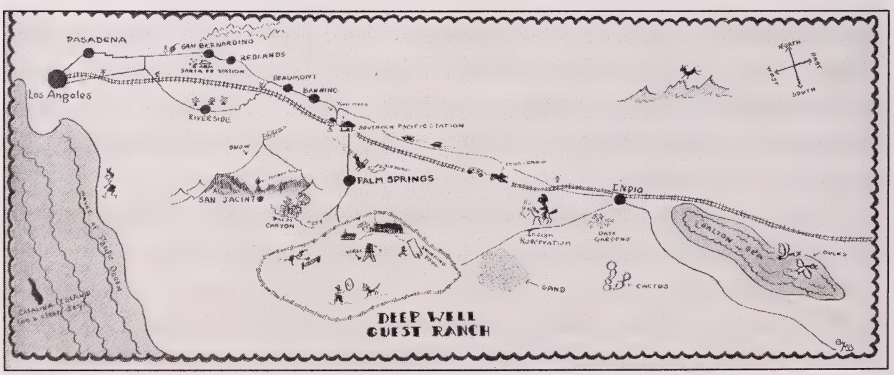
teenagers. Clothing was levis, gingham, denims, shorts, and slacks. Dress up was only for special occasions. There were many private (including the Bob Hope course) and public golf courses nearby.



Bob Whipple as Sunday French Toast Chef. Photo, courtesy of Blaine Whipple.

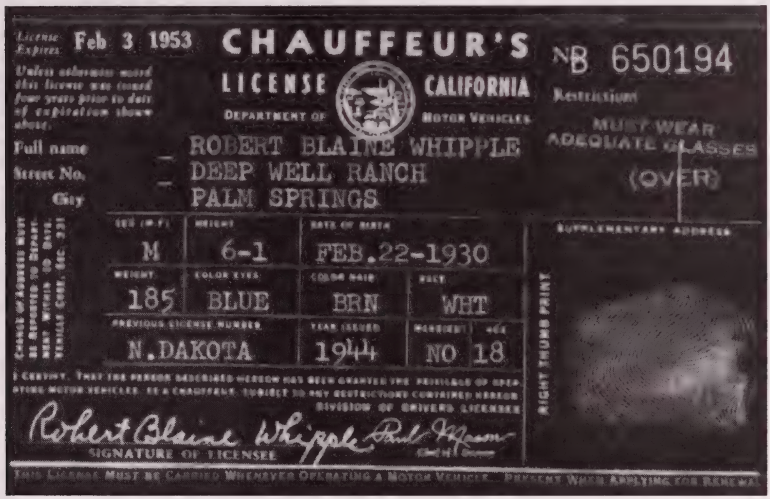
Many guests had been coming for years. They included families from the East, Midwest, and Northwest. Guests in the 1948-1949 season included the sister of King Farouk of Egypt, the Cheeseborough family of Cleveland and the Weyerhaeuser family of Tacoma. Celebrities included the movie star Robert Montgomery[48] and family, including teen-age daughter Elizabeth,[49] who became a star in her own right, Robert Taylor,[50] Dorothy Malone,[51] and Marion and Jim Jordan,[52] better known as Fibber McGee and Molly of radio fame. Deep Well was the first prize winner in the equestrian class of the Annual Desert Circus Parade that winter. Among the Deep Well riders was Robert Taylor who rode in a pair of Levis borrowed from Bob. Another highlight of the year was the annual play produced by Melba Bennett and performed at a local theater.

The staff lived in segregated dorms, couples in private housing, and ranch hands in a bunkhouse. The kitchen staff included the chef assisted by two cooks, a pantry man, a baker, and two dishwashers. Bob was in

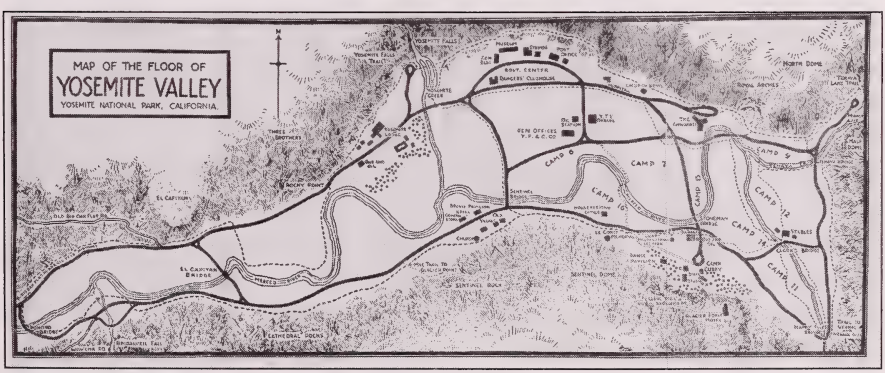


Map showing Deep Well Ranch relative to Los Angeles.

Bob Whipple at entrance to Deep Well Ranch.

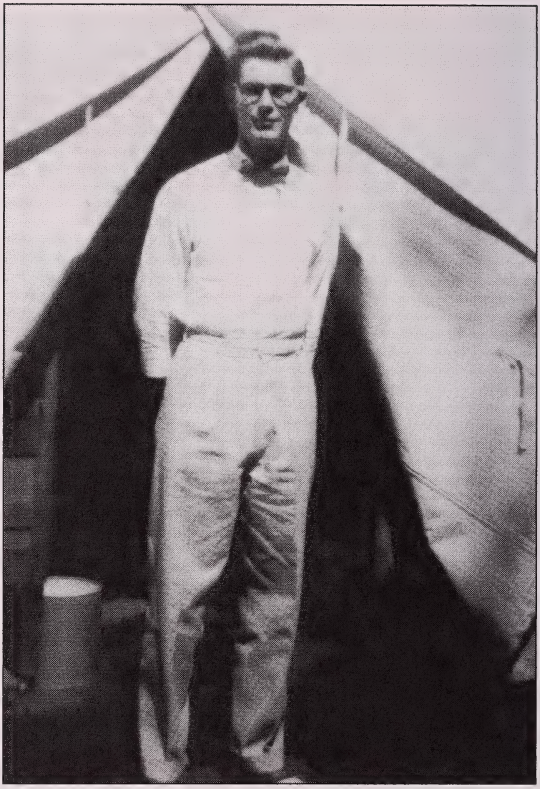


Bob Whipple's 1948 California Chauffeur's License.



Yosemite Valley, 1949.

charge of setting up the dining room for its three daily meals and functioning as maitre d which included seating the guests, taking orders for special meals and picnic lunches. When guests required room service he delivered it in a small motor vehicle. Waitresses Helen Smith and Marie Lamphere and bus boy Grant Peterson of Salt Lake City were the other dining room staff. Bob had extra duties as a driver on Ranch errands and taking guests to downtown destinations which required him to get a California Chauffeur's license.



Bob Whipple at his Yosemite summer home in Camp 6 along the Merced river, June 1949. Photo, courtesy of Blaine Whipple.

Memorable events that winter were snow January 11, 1949, the first time in Palm Springs in 17 years. Later that year, Bob's first earthquake, followed by a series of strong after shakes, struck Palm Springs and other areas of Southern California. It happened during daylight hours. Fortunately, the Ranch did not suffer serious damage but being in a building that shook more than once made an impression that he remembers to this day.

Days off were spent exploring Palm Springs, hiking in the canyons, and visiting Salton Sea and Indio, mostly in the company of Grant Peterson and Ken Avery, a dishwasher. He became a good friend of Ray Spradling, the second cook, who also worked at the Canyon Hotel. Ray had a car and took him to Los Angeles, San Bernardino, Riverside, and other tourist areas in Southern California.

The Ranch policy on tips was a 20 percent surcharge on the guest's bill at checkout. These monies were divided among all employees. Guests could also tip individuals and Bob was a frequent recipient of additional tips, the largest being $100.00.

As the season wound down, Bob applied for a job with the Yosemite

Bob Whipple and fellow General Store employee Harold Gilmore in Harold's car driving through the Wawona Tunnel Tree 35 miles from Yosemite Park. It is one of approximtely 600 "monarchs" of the Mariposa Grove of big trees. July 1949.

Bob Whipple and staff at the drug section of the Yosemite General Store: L to R: Frank Shields, Bob's tent mate, Lil Schafer, Virginia Neff, Rachel Booth, and Bob, August 1949.

Photos, courtesy of Blaine Whipple

Park and Curry Co. which ran the concessions at Yosemite National Park.[53] He was hired to work at the Company's general store located on the valley floor. His supervisors were Jack Ring and Wally Titus, manager and assistant manager. He worked May through August, sharing a two-man tent with Frank

Shields of San Francisco. Their tent town, known as Camp 6, was located on the banks of the fast flowing Merced river with water cold enough to function as their refrigerator.

While there were a number of hotel accommodations,[54] most park visitors were campers who patronized the general store which sold groceries and most other items needed by campers. It was one of the busiest places on the valley floor. His first job was stocking shelves and doing janitor work. By June, the store was so busy he was promoted to grocery checker. A fast learner, he was able to memorize many of the prices and his check-out line became the fastest in the store. The head of the department that sold non prescription drugs and other sundries quit in mid July and Ring gave the job to Bob. He scheduled the 4-person staff, did the inventory, and placed orders to keep the department well supplied. He remained in

Yosemite Falls, 2,425 feet, May 1949.

Vernal Falls, 317 feet, 1949. Lower: Nevada Falls, 594 feet, 1949.

El Capitan, rises 3,604 feet above the valley floor, 1949.

Half Dome, rises 4,892 feet above the Valley floor, 1949.

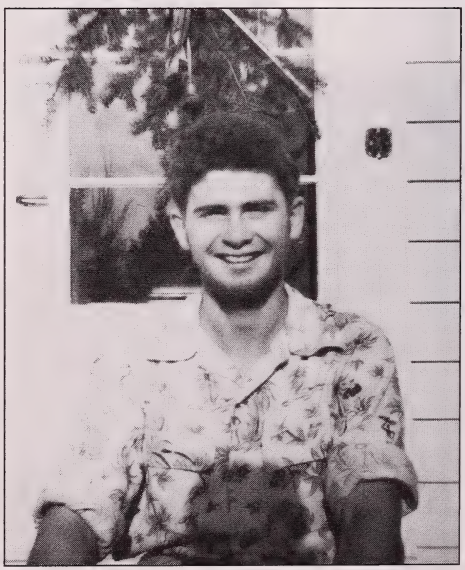
the job until returning home in September. At the end of the season Ring asked him to return to the same job for the 1950 season.

Bob took advantage of his days off to explore and hike through all sections of the Park and met long-time Yosemite resident and world famous photographer Ansel Adams.[55] Among the highlights were Yosemite Falls whose combined upper and lower falls were 2,425 feet in height, Vernal Falls crashes down the Merced river 317 feet as the river flows from a small canyon into the main valley. The falls send up clouds of spray that surround the hikers climbing the Mist Trail to the top. Nevada Falls, 594 feet, continues the plunge into the valley floor. Bridal Veil Falls drop 620 feet and Illilouate Falls 370 feet. Half Dome looks like a huge mound which has been split in two. It is a 15 and a-half mile hike to the top. Mirror Lake reflects the canyon walls above. El Capitan dominates the valley floor.

The Curry Company provided nightly camp fire entertainment on the valley floor which ended with a spectacular firefall. A huge bonfire was lit on Glacier Point 3,200 feet directly above the floor camp fire site and just after dark a company employee would shout, "Let the fire fall." Upon hearing this command, the employee above would push the burning embers of the bonfire over the cliff creating a cataract of fire and sparks that fell 2,000 feet before striking any obstacles. It was a sight to behold and never failed to bring forth gasps of delight from the onlookers.

ATTENDS MANKATO STATE TEACHERS COLLEGE

Before returning home, Bob visited San Francisco. To get a sense of the city, he took the San Francisco Bay Cruise and Deluxe City Tour. Cost, including federal transportation tax of 75 cents, was $5.90. The next day he explored Fisherman's Wharf, Nob Hill, Golden Gate Park, and attended a concert before hitchhiking to Minnesota. His route home included Reno where he visited the casinos, Salt Lake City, Cheyenne, and Nebraska before heading north to Tracy. The wait for a ride east of Salt Lake where the highway



Bob Whipple, January 1950, student at Mankato State. Photo, courtesy of Blaine Whipple.

forked to go to Cheyenne or Denver turned into an all night wait. About midnight he rejected a ride with a car full of intoxicated Indians who offered a ride in their trunk.

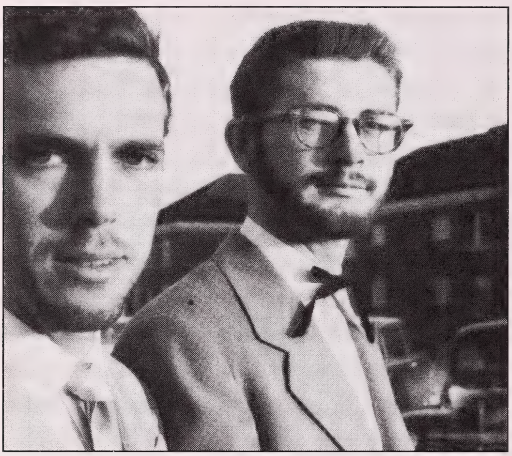
After a few days in Tracy he hitchhiked to Mankato, home of a state sponsored teachers college, (today Minnesota State University) where he enrolled as a freshman and rented a room in a private home near campus. He joined the staff of *The College Reporter* as a feature writer and wrote a weekly column, "Under the Whippletree."[56] He was promoted to feature editor in January 1950 and occasionally wrote editorials.[57]

He was a member of both the Dramatic Guild and The Workshop Players, an apprentice group of Mask and Dagger. In the latter he was a member of the stage crew for the one act comedy *Convocation* by Christopher Morley presented February 1, 1950. He played Eric in the Dramatic Guild's three-act play, *Death Takes A Holiday*, presented March 21 and 22 in the college auditorium. Written by Alberto Casella and adapted for the American stage by Walter Ferris, the play deals with a three day holiday which Death takes from his never-ending job of terminating lives. He wants to discover what terror, pity, and love are like for these are only words to him. Posing as Prince Sirki he is a guest in the home of a Duke and only his host knows who he really is. Alda, Rhoda, and Grazia, who lived in the Duke's house, became enamored of the deadly passionate guest with Grazia responding with true love without fear. Eric who cares for Alda and Corrao who cares for Grazia are especially worried by the presence of Death because the girls they love fell under Death's spell. A review in the *Mankato Free Press* March 21 said the production was "unblemished and impressive." The reviewer wrote that Robert Whipple of Tracy played the part of Eric with "sincerity and without flaw." Bob was chairman of the production staff of *You Can't Take It With You* presented in May.

He was initiated into Pi Delta Epsilon, the Honorary Collegiate Journalism Fraternity, May 18. In a May 19 "Under The Whippletree" column he shared information on how college students could get summer employment at the National Parks and resorts in northern Minnesota and encouraged them to apply. He announced that his summer would be spent at "the most beautiful of all our National Parks, Yosemite in Northern California." Carroll Mundale, a senior and editor-in-chief of *The College Reporter* and Bob became fast friends and worked on many projects together during the year. He recommended Bob for the editor-in-chief job for the 1950-51 school year and the appointment was made by Robert Wright, faculty advisor to publications.

It was back to Tracy for a few days at the end of the school year before leaving for Yosemite by his usual mode of transportation. The trip was

uneventful and he spent the summer managing the drug department at the general store and living in Camp 6. As a department head, he was required to wear a white shirt and tie. There were many new store employees that season and he spent most of his free time with three of them: John Wydell, Wade Strickland, and Guy Griffith. Being the senior member of the group and familiar with all areas of the Park, he organized their days off. Griffith and Strickland were students at the University of Mississippi at Oxford and as the summer progressed they began a sales job to convince him to enroll at their University in September. He found the suggestion interesting but was hesitant to give up the editorship of *The College Reporter*. Named editor as a sophomore was an honor. He was the only non senior in the history of the college given this assignment. However, with limited knowledge of the South, gained only from reading, he was curious about segregation and other elements of southern life, especially education. By the end of the summer he decided to transfer to "Ole Miss."



Bob Whipple with friend Bob Yeager at Ole Miss in December 1950 at a "Dixie Week" celebration. Photo, courtesy of Blaine Whipple.

He left for home at the end of August only this time instead of using his thumb he alternatively held up one of two signs he had made: MINNESOTA WITH GOD'S AND YOUR GOOD GRACE and STOP AND RIDE WITH A FUTURE SENATOR. They were two feet by two feet, readily visible, and always generated a conversation. It was a gimmick that worked and generated a speedy trip home. After about a week at home he was off to Oxford, Mississippi by Greyhound Bus. Students were welcomed at the bus station by a band and a large group of upper class men. The welcome included information that Ole Miss was a party school, the state was dry, and he was offered a ride to a bootlegger who operated just outside the town limits.

ENROLLS AT THE UNIVERSITY OF MISSISSIPPI

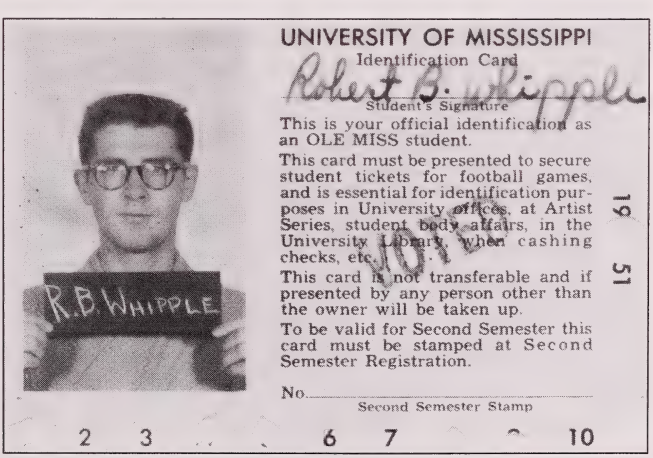
He had been assigned a 3-person dorm room in Lester Hall before arrival and as the first one to check in had his choice of beds. The room mates,

Eddie Brignac and C. J. Fayard of Bay St. Louis, Mississippi, arrived the next day. Best buddies since childhood, they were good guys and easy to live with. Eddie had a car and the three of them went to Memphis where Bob experienced his first automatic car wash and they did the town (from "Peabody's Lobby" to Whitey' saloon), Bay St. Louis, New Orleans, and "away" football games. The term party school fit and there was always a party in someone's dorm room. In addition to Eddie and C.J., Bob became close friends with Dickie Nolan, Jack Bell, Harry Chapman, Sonny Wolf, Vernon Tirey, Bob Yeager, and Alex Ball. He didn't see much of his Yosemite friends Guy and Wade as they were fraternity men and didn't mix with the dorm crowd.

Bob joined the staff of University newspaper, *The Mississippian,* and became an editorial assistant to Albin Krebs, a native of Pascagoula, Mississippi and its editor. He joined the University's Debate Club and Tau Kappa Alpha, sponsored by the Speech Department. Wade Strickland was also a member.

In those days the law of the land concerning educational opportunities was "separate but equal."[58] The policy assured segregated schools in the south. In the October 27, 1950 issue of *The Mississippian*, Krebs, in a signed editorial, advocated admittance of Negroes to the University's professional schools. He wrote that separate graduate level programs were not available to Negroes and that a man's color should not deny access to education at that level. Graduate schools in Louisiana and Texas admitted Negroes.

The courage it took for a white 21-year-old native Mississippian to advocate any opportunity for Negroes is impossible to comprehend in 2007. Segregation was the state law. When campaigning for a third term as United States senator from Mississippi in 1946, Theodore Bilbo, a member of the Ku Klux Klan, declared that individuals encouraging blacks to register to vote should be "atomically bombed and exterminated from the face of the earth." As election day



Photo, courtesy of Blaine Whipple.

approached he called "on every red-blooded white man to use any means to keep the niggers away from the polls."[59]

Congressman John Rankin of Tupelo, Mississippi, who was elected to his fifteenth term in November 1950, was known nationally as a racial demagogue who championed *States' Rights and white supremacy*. No state was more segregated than Mississippi.

Minneapolis Mayor Hubert Humphrey urged the Democratic Party to "get out of the shadow of States' Rights and walk forthrightly into the bright sunshine of human rights," at the 1948 Democratic National Convention. His speech prompted 35 delegates from Mississippi and Alabama to walk out of the convention and Southerners later held their own convention and nominated Governors Strom Thurman of South Carolina and Fielding L. Wright of Mississippi for president and vice president. This ticket carried Mississippi, Louisiana, Alabama, and South Carolina in the general election.

Kreb's editorial two years later was the most courageous act by any Southerner in 1950. No Mississippian on the newspaper staff supported him nor did many students. His support was limited to Bob, a Minnesotan who became personally acquainted with Humphrey when he was Vice President, and a fellow staffer, a transfer student from Rutgers, the state university of New Jersey.

Monday night October 30, about 400 demonstrators gathered on the lawn of Kreb's dormitory with some jamming the hall of the dorm. Bob and the New Jersey staffer were with him in his third floor room. They built a barricade by piling all the furniture in front of the door. As they looked at the crowd below it began to chant "We want Krebs." A cross was lighted under the dorm window, gasoline thrown on the fire, and the flame soared up three floors as the chanting increased with some calling for a rope. It was a scene never to be forgotten by the three students barricaded in that room. A petition demanding Kreb's resignation was circulating. The crowd dispersed about midnight at the request of Maurice Dantin, Student Body President, who suggested they present their petition through the Executive Council of the Associated Student Body.

On October 30, Congressman Rankin labeled the editorial "shocking" and said it was "influenced by the very Communist element with which we are now locked in a death struggle." He warned that Communists occupy important places all over the United States and are attempting to ruin the South through the medium of enforced "equality with Negroes." He said these forces are making their influences felt through "lesser lights."

Chancellor J. D. Williams refused take part in the criticism and the request for Kreb's resignation. He wrote: "It was unfortunate that this

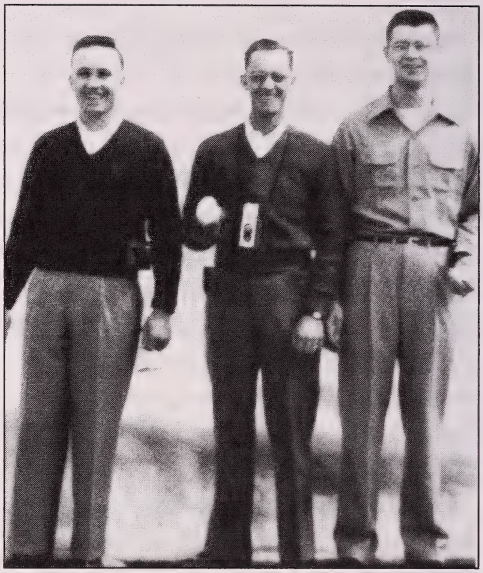
incident occurred, just as it was unfortunate that Mr. Krebs published the editorial which prompted the demonstration. However, the students were exercising the same prerogative in voicing their opinion as Mr. Krebs was in writing the editorial.

"*The Mississippian* is the student newspaper. Mr. Krebs was elected by the students. If they wish to replace him they can do so through proper methods. Such a dismissal is the province of the students, and not that of the University administration." University authorities noted that segregation is a state law and therefore University policy.

On November 9 a petition seeking Kreb's removal as editor was turned down by the Campus Senate 42-21. It adopted a resolution recognizing his right to express his own opinion in editorials and said action against him would interfere with freedom of the press.[60] It did not take a stand either for or against admitting Negroes as demanded by student Tom Roberts of Montrose, Mississippi.[61]

As the semester neared its end, Bob realized he did not have the finances to continue the school year. In reviewing his options, his low draft number played a decisive role in his decision. The Korean War, known today as the **Forgotten War** or the **Unknown War,** had started June 25, 1950 and the Army was drafting young men by the thousands.[62] He knew it was only a matter of time before his number was called and he opted to join the Navy. He enlisted for a four-year period at the Navy Recruiting Office in Jackson, the state capitol of Mississippi. From there he was sent to New Orleans for processing. He passed his physical, was sworn in, and entered active service January 26, 1951. His serial number was 420 11 14. Even though the semester had not ended, he was allowed to take his final examinations early and was awarded full credit for his work at the University.[63]

Picture taken after Dress Parade March 16. Bob Whipple, below arrow at right. Photo, courtesy of U.S. Navy.



L to R: Stan Patrilla, John Pearce and Bob Whipple on Mt. Rainier. Photo, courtesy of Blaine Whipple.

The new sailors were transported by train in sleeping cars to the U. S. Naval Training Center at San Diego, California for six weeks of recruit training. He was assigned to Company 170 trained by Chief Quartermaster A. Schefler. There were 81 in the company with the rank of seaman apprentice. They came from 21 states.[64] Training included close-order marching with wooden rifles, classes in rope tying, signaling ships at sea with flags, ship and airplane recognition, first aid, assembling and cleaning a rife and practice shooting on the rifle range, care of your uniform, the proper way to make your bunk, opportunities for advancement in rank, the Uniform Code of Military Justice etc. They had Kitchen Police (KP) duty, dorm clean-up duty, and were given a day off weekly. On these days he and friends went into the city to explore. He had turned 21 on February 22 and was the oldest recruit in the company and the only one who could legally go into the bars to see the strip shows. He also spent one day in Tijuana, just over the border in Mexico. Three weeks after training began he received his draft summons from Selective Service Local Board No. 66[65] of Lyon county, Minnesota. Company 170 was graduated April 6, 1951.

Following graduation some recruits were assigned to Navy schools to be trained for specific jobs, others to sea duty aboard a variety of ships, and several, including Bob, to the Tacoma (Washington)[66] Group of the Pacific Reserve Fleet.[67]

Following World War II the Navy moth-balled thousands of it ships on both the east and west coasts. The Tacoma fleet consisted of "baby" aircraft carriers (flat tops) designated CVE and CVL.[68]

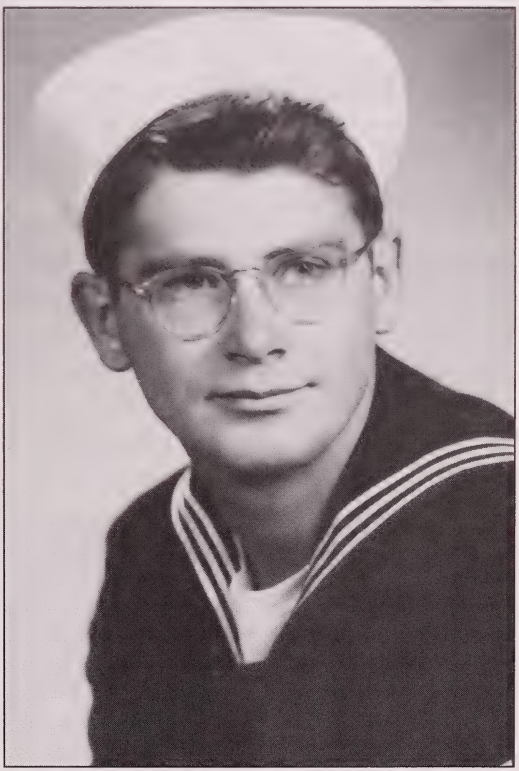
Large aircraft carriers (CV) and battleships were warehoused at the nearby Bremerton Naval base. Most of the apprentices who arrived with Bob were assigned guard duty as the ships were under watch 24 hours a day. They lived aboard a non-self-propelled barracks ship (APL) docked

John Pearce, editor, and Bob Whipple, associate editor, *Tacoma Seahawk*. Photo, courtesy of Blaine Whipple.

adjacent to a pier. Each sailor was assigned a bunk for sleeping and a locker for storage. The bunks, called "fart sacks" by the sailors, were in long rows three high separated by a narrow walkway. As you lay in your bunk you could almost reach the bunk across from you. Lights were out at 11 p.m. The snores and other noises made by a couple hundred men made it difficult for the light sleeper. They shared common heads (bathroom). Meals were served in a cafeteria on land and there was an enlisted club for recreation. The legal drinking age was 21. Days off were spent in Tacoma, Seattle, 32 miles away, and other parts of the metropolitan area.

Because of his college background, Bob was assigned to the personnel division working in the education office with Alvin Balkin, a yeoman and first class petty officer who had been recalled to active duty after service in WWII. Their job was to prepare high school drop-outs for the GED test. Students who passed were awarded high school diplomas. He also edited the *Tacoma Seahawk*, the base newspaper, and was not assigned guard or KP duties

Bob became close friends with two petty officers, John Pearce of Salt Lake City and Stan Patrillia of Auburn, Illinois.[69] They



Bob Whipple, 22, Tracy, home on leave.

arranged to get the same days off and traveled to places like Tacoma's Point Defiance Park which featured a zoo and aquarium, Mt. Rainier National Park's Paradise Inn, the Olympic National Park, and other areas of interest in the greater Seattle-Tacoma area.[70]

Stan had a car so it was easy to get around. The main military base in the Tacoma area was Fort Lewis and whenever nationally known acts came to entertain the events were held at Fort Lewis and the three of them seldom missed attending. It was the only time Bob heard Louis Armstrong,[71] then his favorite musician, in person.

Beds and other furniture were stored in parts of the education building and heat, water, and electricity service was available so Bob, John, and Stan decided to vacate the APL and begin housekeeping there. They didn't get permission and it was several months before they were discovered and directed to return to the APL. Instead, they rented a small apartment in town and commuted to the base. There was a hardware store near their apartment and it was there Bob got his first exposure to television. The proprietors placed a set in the window and kept it on at night and it became a gathering place for a circle of viewers who were mesmerized by the grainy black and white images flickering on the eight inch screen. It was on the air from 10:00 a.m. to midnight.[72]

Bob was advanced to the rate of seaman October 16, 1951 getting a raise in income and a third stripe to wear on the arm of his uniform.

The base had its own doctors and dentists and an excellent dentist did a root canal on a front tooth and a doctor circumcised him. The latter was more painful than the former.

While he enjoyed working with the high school drop-outs, he decided he would prefer duty as a journalist and studied to take the test for that speciality. He was advised there was limited need in the Navy for journalists and thus few opportunities for advancement. He took the test anyway, passed, and was advanced to Journalist third class (JO3) April 16, 1952.

President Harry Truman fired General Douglas MacArthur, commander of the UN forces in Korea, April 11, 1951 for insubordination.[73] The firing dominated the news and the pros and cons of Truman's action was the No. 1 topic of discussion throughout the country. This happened when, Bob, traveling in his Navy blues, was on a train headed for a two week leave in Tracy. Everyone on the train wanted to talk to him about the MacArthur firing.

Nancy married Don Jasperson July 30, 1950 so when he arrived in Tracy, Dick, 18, and Mary Ann, 13, were the only sibling at home. Blaine, no longer with the Chamber of Commerce, was news editor of the Tracy *Headlight Herald*, a weekly newspaper. It was then Bob learned of his father's photographic memory. When he arrived he went to the newspa-

Bob Whipple with movie stars Cyd Charise and Marie McDonald at the Aloha Tower docks in Honolulu. The MSTS ship in the background had just arrived and he had booked the two stars to greet the military personnel and their families as they debarked.
Photo, courtesy U.S. Navy.

Bob Whipple upon arrival at Pearl Harbor, Territory of Hawaii, in August 1952.
Photo courtesy of Blaine Whipple.

Bob Whipple's office beginning in July 1952 on Oahu. MSTS MidPac Sub Area Headquarters.
Photo, courtesy U.S. Navy.

MSTS MidPac hula troupe greeting an incoming transport at the Aloha Tower docks in Honolulu in 1952. Photo, courtesy U. S. Navy.

Bob Whipple's mobile office with MSTS, 1952-53. Photo, courtesy of Blaine Whipple.

per office where his father was leaving to cover a story for the next issue and Bob went with him. During the lengthy interview, Blaine didn't take a single note and when they returned to the office he wrote the story from memory.[74] He was a speedy two-finger typist.

In late July 1952 he was transferred to the Pearl Harbor Naval Base on

Governor and Mrs. C. Elmer Anderson of Minnesota being greeted on their November 1952 trip to Honolulu by Wayne D. Peterson (left) and Bob Whipple of the MSTS staff. Photo, courtesy U.S. Navy.

the Island of Oahu, Territory of Hawaii which was 2,300 miles from the U. S. mainland. It became the fiftieth state August 21, 1959.[75] He began duty with the public relations department of the Military Sea Transportation Service (MSTS)[76] whose office was located about a mile from the Naval Base where he lived in quarters with thousands of other sailors. His transportation to Hawaii was in a MSTS troopship from San Francisco. This five-day voyage was the only time he

Bob Whipple on fishing trip off Oahu, 1952. Photo, courtesy of Blaine Whipple.

Bob Whipple, middle, with 30 pound Mahi Mahi caught off Oahu in 1953. Photo, courtesy of Blaine Whipple.

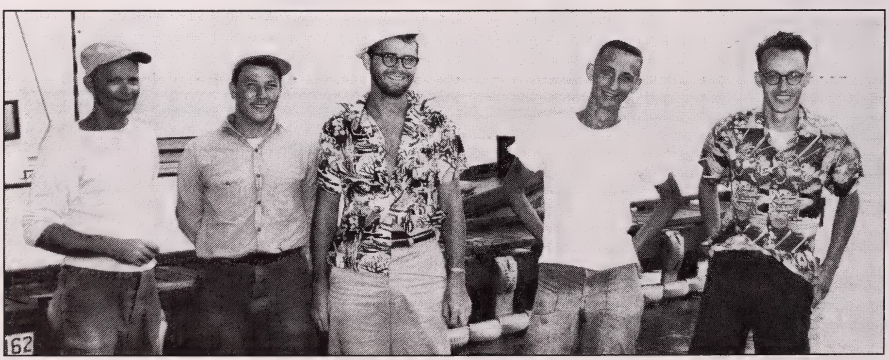
spent at sea during 45 months of service.

In addition to ferrying Army, Navy, Marine, and Air Force personnel and military supplies to the various military bases in the Pacific, MSTS also carried military dependents who joined their husbands and fathers at their new duty stations. One of Bob's job was to meet the arriving ships which docked near the Aloha Tower in Honolulu and welcome the passengers with a band and hula dancers. He arranged for the military band, hired the dancers, and made sure the sound system worked.

He was responsible for coordinating visits of celebrities and government officials such as governors, movie stars, and entertainers doing shows for military personnel. Among them were Governor C. Elmer Anderson of Minnesota,[77] Humphrey Bogart and Lauren Bacall,[78] both top box office stars, Cyd Charise, star of movie musicals,[79] Marie "the body" McDonald,[80] Eddie Peabody "The King of the Banjo,"[81] Lefty Frizzel, country western star.[82] He wrote press releases sent to newspapers about sailors who had been advanced to a higher rank or recognized for some other accomplishment that would be of interest to the home town readers.

Cocktail party, Ford Island, Hawaii, Officer'sClub, April 16, 1954. L to R: Navy Captain Cameron Briggs, Mrs. Burt C. Monesmith, wife of Burt Monesmith, Vice President, Lockheed Corp., Rear Admiral William T. Rassieur, Mrs. Cameron Briggs, Bob Whipple. Photo, courtesy U.S. Navy.

Bob voted by absentee in his first national election in November, casting his ballot for Dwight D. Eisenhower, Republican nominee for president, over the



Bob Whipple and deep sea fishing buddies.
L to R: Phi Greeley, Glen Helfrich, Bob, Don Goodwin, Don Shult, May 1954. Photo, courtesy of Blaine Whipple.

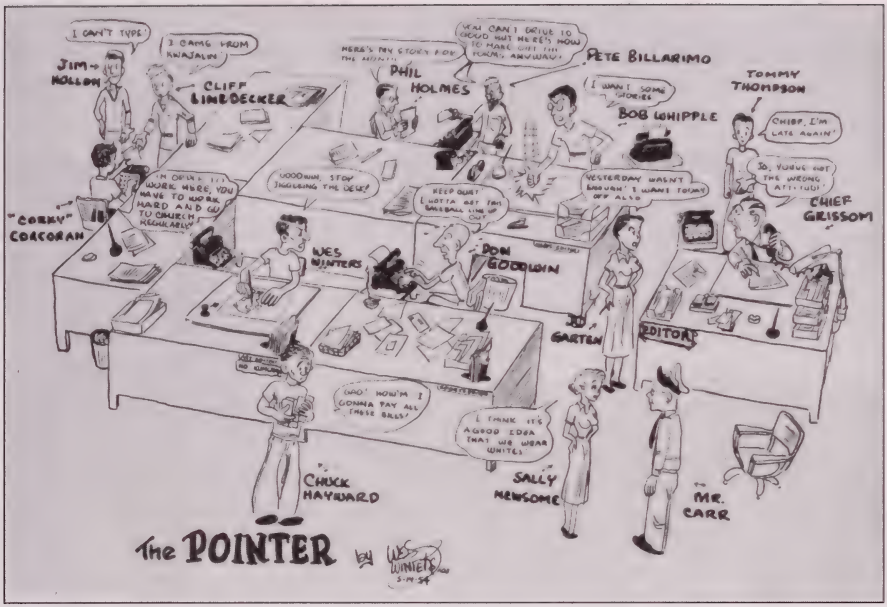
L to R. Bob Whipple with Chick Johnson holding his arm. Johnson was half of the comedy team of Olsen and Johnson of vaudeville (head liners for 25 years), night clubs, radio, TV, and movie (1930-1954) fame. They were a big part of the American entertainment scene for nearly half a century. Bob had booked them to perform at Barber's Point CPO Club. Their "Hellzapoppin," which opened in 1938 was a smash hit on Broadway. They starred in movies produced by Warner Bros., Republic, and Universal Pictures and replaced Milton Berle in the Texaco Star Theater on NBC-TV in 1949. Bob's father had worked with them during their vaudeville days. Adjacent to Johnson is Navy Captain W. I. Martin, Jimmy Jamerson, impersonator and master of ceremonies of the show, and Ed Downey, manager of the CPO Club. The man on the right is a Club employee.
Photo, courtesy U.S. Navy.

Bellow's Beach poker game April 1954. L to R: John Coleman, Bob Kelley, Don Shult, Bob Whipple, Jim Light. Photo, courtesy of Blaine Whipple.

Bob Whipple with ukelele and friends at the Officers Club, Barber's Point Naval Air Station. Photo, courtesy of Blaine Whipple.

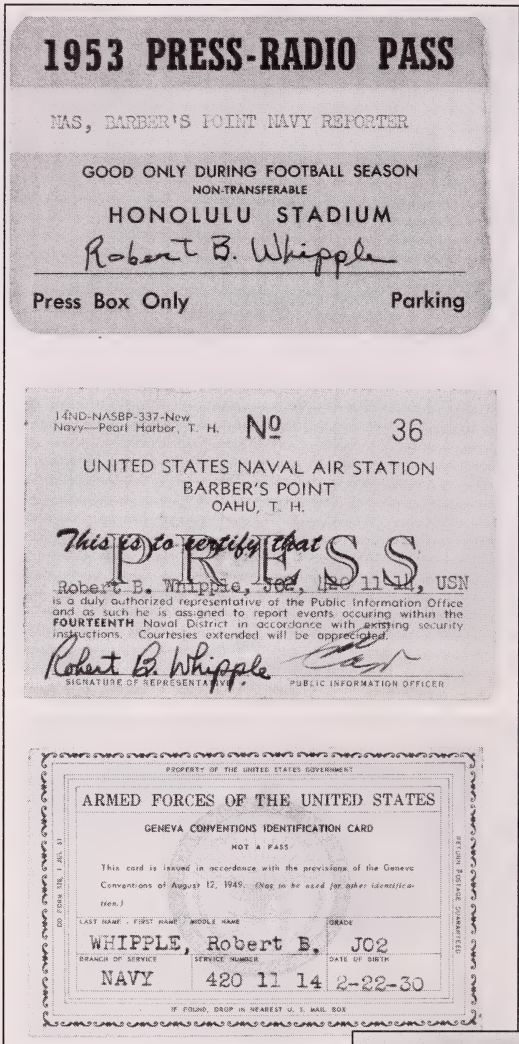
A Sunday off to visit the Island of Kaui. L to R: Dick Stark, Phil Holmes, Don Goodwin, Bob Whipple, Norman Victor, April 1954. Photo courtesy of Blaine Whipple.

A Sunday off to visit the Island of Maui. L to R: Bob Whipple, Corky Corcoran, Phil Holmes, February 1954. Photo, courtesy of Blaine Whipple.



Photo, courtesy of Blaine Whipple.

Pointer staff. L to R: Chief L. A. Grissom, editor, Warrant Officer F. P. Carr, public information officer, and Bob Whipple, news editor, planning the fourth anniversary of the paper, September 1953. Photo, courtesy U. S. Navy.



1953 PRESS-RADIO PASS

NAS, BARBER'S POINT NAVY REPORTER

GOOD ONLY DURING FOOTBALL SEASON
NON-TRANSFERABLE
HONOLULU STADIUM
Robert B. Whipple
Press Box Only Parking

14ND-NASBP-337-New
Navy—Pearl Harbor, T. H. № 36

UNITED STATES NAVAL AIR STATION
BARBER'S POINT
OAHU, T. H.

This is to certify that
PRESS
Robert B. Whipple, JO2, 420 11 14, USN
is a duly authorized representative of the Public Information Office and as such he is assigned to report events occuring within the FOURTEENTH Naval District in accordance with existing security instructions. Courtesies extended will be appreciated.

Robert B. Whipple
SIGNATURE OF REPRESENTATIVE PUBLIC INFORMATION OFFICER

PROPERTY OF THE UNITED STATES GOVERNMENT

ARMED FORCES OF THE UNITED STATES

GENEVA CONVENTIONS IDENTIFICATION CARD

NOT A PASS

This card is issued in accordance with the provisions of the Geneva Conventions of August 12, 1949. (Not to be used for other identification.)

LAST NAME - FIRST NAME - MIDDLE NAME		GRADE
WHIPPLE, Robert B.		JO2
BRANCH OF SERVICE	SERVICE NUMBER	DATE OF BIRTH
NAVY	420 11 14	2-22-30

IF FOUND, DROP IN NEAREST U. S. MAIL BOX

DD FORM 378, 1 JUL 51 RETURN POSTAGE GUARANTEED

Passes issued to Bob Whipple. Top, Admittance to the Press Box of the Honolulu Stadium. Middle, Press Pass identifying Bob as an authorized representative of the Public Information Office, Barber's Point Naval Air Station assigned to report events occurring in the 14th Naval District. Bottom, Geneva Convention Identification Card.
Photo courtesy of Blaine Whipple.

Bob Whipple enjoyed spear fishing. This picture was taken on Oahu's Sandy Beach in January 1954.
Photo, courtesy of Blaine Whipple.

A day off with photographer friends at Bellows Beach, Oahu. L. to R: John MacDougall, PH3, Bob Whipple, JO2, Bob Kelley, PHAN, and Don Shult, PH3. 1954
Photo, courtesy of Blaine Whipple.

Democratic nominee Adlai E. Stevenson. Eisenhower won by a large margin and Minnesota favored him 55.3% to 44.1%. In an October 24 speech at Detroit's Masonic Temple before a nationwide radio and TV audience on the subject of Korea, Eisenhower asked, "Where do we go from here?" Then he made the campaign's most dramatic pledge: if elected he would take a "simple, firm resolution" to forego the diversions of politics and to concentrate on the job of ending the Korean war . . . honorably. "That job requires a personal trip to Korea. I shall go to Korea." He left from New York City arriving in Korea Tuesday December 2, spent the third, fourth, and fifth there, then flew to Guam where he

A picnic at the Don Goodwin home at Sunset Beach in 1954. Goodwin, JO3, was sports editor of *The Pointer*. L. to R: Bob Smith, John MacDougall, Don Shult, Bob Whipple, Cynthia Goodwin, Corky Corcoran, Bob Kelley, Kathy Grissom, and Virginia Goodwin.
Photo, courtesy of Blaine Whipple.

Bob Whipple in white, directing TV coverage of a Coast Guard Search and Rescue Operation in late May 1954 which appeared on two Honolulu stations. U. S. Navy photo.

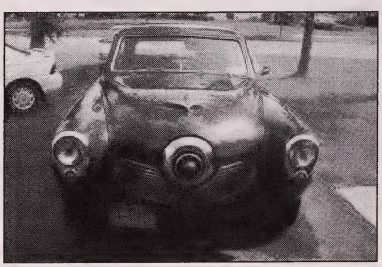
boarded the *USS Helena* for the trip to Pearl Harbor[83] where Bob was in the crowd that greeted him. Eisenhower was the first of six presidents he saw in person.[84]

After being advanced to journalist second class May 16, 1953, he was transferred to Barber's Point Naval Air Station on Oahu where he became news editor of *The Pointer*.[85] In addition to the news, he was responsible for the physical production of the weekly newspaper which was published at the downtown plant of the *Honolulu Advertiser*. He was issued a Jeep enabling him to cover stories throughout the 3,800-acre base and to get to and from Honolulu. He was also given special housing in former officer's quarters.

As news editor, he covered activities of both officer and enlisted personnel and developed a wide circle of friends and acquaintances in both groups. He socialized at the Officer's Club and frequently accompanied the base commander, Captain M. F. Leslie, to military and social functions throughout Oahu, including a meeting with Admiral Felix Stump, Commander of the Pacific Fleet and High Commissioner of Trust Territory of the Pacific Islands. He was a member of the Composite Recreation Committee, Secretary of the Naval Air Station Recreation Council, and a member of the Barber's Point Little Theater Group. He had two roles - Farmer Gates and the watchman -- in *The Drunkard* performed April 29, 30, and May 1 at the base Indoor Theater.

Chief Aircontrolman L. A. Grissom, *Pointer* editor, flew search and rescue missions before becoming editor. To retain his flight privileges after becoming editor, he had to fly a minimum number of hours monthly. Bob and other staff members frequently accompanied him on these flights visiting the Big Island, Maui, Kauai, Lanai, and Molokai.[86] Hawaii was not a major vacation destination in the early 1950s so Bob visited these Islands when they were still pristine.

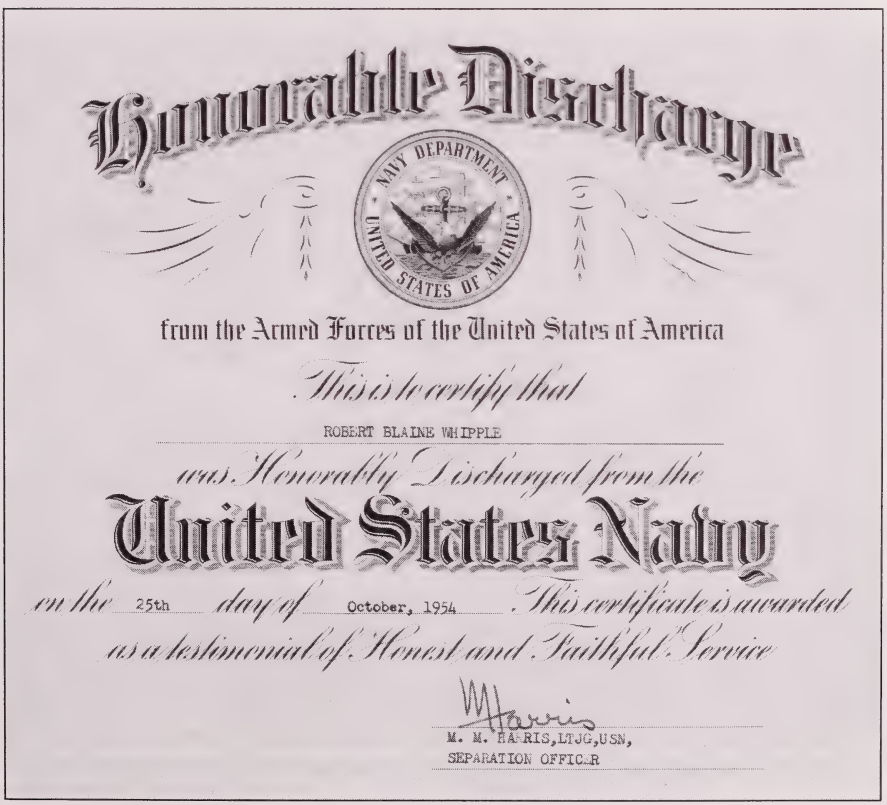
He accompanied Grissom on a flight several hundred miles west of Oahu to Tern Island, French Frigate Shoals, then a Coast Guard Loran Station and host to millions of nesting seabirds, Hawaiian monk seals, and Hawaiian green sea turtles. It was an air base in WWII and is now



1951 Studebaker Champion. Photos, courtesy of Blaine Whipple.

(2007) occupied by the U.S. Fish & Wildlife Service and seasonally by National Marine Fisheries Service marine mammal scientists. As a part of his news job he flew in helicopters and went on a short cruise in a submarine, which because of his size, he found very confining. He spent a week's leave on the Big Island where he visited Hawaii National Park with its volcano and Kileau crater, Black Sands Beach, the Parker cattle ranch, orchid gardens in Hilo, and coffee plantations in Kona.[87]

He purchased his first car, a 1951 Studebaker Champion (mileage 11,376) September 12, 1953 from a Honolulu used car dealer making it possible for him and close friends to spend their free time visiting all areas of the Island.[88] They went to the Iolani Palace and Grounds, China Town, Waimea Valley, Diamond Head, King Kamehameha Statute, Sunset Beach, The Pali, Kaneohe Bay, Kailua, Punchbowl Cemetery,[89] Diamond Head, surfing beaches, snorkeling beaches, the Blow Hole, visited sugar cane and pineapple fields where they ate fresh pineapple, took in polo games at the Honolulu auditorium, swam in the ocean, hung out at the bars at the Royal Hawaiian and Moana hotels and the International Airport. Bob almost drowned on one of the swimming outings when he was caught by an undertow. He was saved by buddies who threw him a rope


Honorable Discharge

NAVY DEPARTMENT · UNITED STATES OF AMERICA

from the Armed Forces of the United States of America

This is to certify that

ROBERT BLAINE WHIPPLE

was Honorably Discharged from the

United States Navy

on the 25th day of October, 1954. This certificate is awarded as a testimonial of Honest and Faithful Service

M. M. HARRIS

M. M. HARRIS, LTJG, USN,
SEPARATION OFFICER

and pulled him out.

In June 1954 Bob passed the exam for first class petty officer status and was named editor of the *Pointer* replacing Chief Grissom who was transferred to duty at the Naval Air Station at Corpus Christi, Texas. The reporter writing the *Pointer* news article announcing the appointment wrote "To our new editor an introduction is hardly necessary for there are but a few of the habitues of Barber's Point who aren't familiar with the bespectacled face of Bob Whipple. Not only will he assume the editorship but will also retain a portion of the news editor's tasks."

His editorship ended at the end of August when his father died of a heart attack the 27th in Dresden, Weakley county, Tennessee. He received the news in a telegram from the Red Cross. He was given a 30 day leave with orders to report to the Naval Base, Treasure Island in San Francisco for reassignment at the end of the leave. His brother Dick, a third class Hospital Corpsman, was stationed with the Navy Medical Unit at Tripler Army Hospital, Honolulu and they returned to the mainland together on a military plane leaving from Hickman Air Force Base. While waiting to be assigned a flight they discussed who might attend their father's funeral. It was then Bob learned that Dick was not aware of their father's first marriage and that he had a half brother and sister, Jim and Elaine.

They flew to the San Francisco area where they transferred to a military cargo plane carrying a load of iron rods to an Air Force Base close to Kansas City. The cargo was placed in the center of the fuselage. About a dozen military personnel were passengers. When flying over the Sierra Nevada Mountains, they encountered weather which caused the plane to list and the rods to roll from the center to the right side of the plane. With that rapid weight shift, the pilot was unable to right the plane and everyone aboard believed their end was near. Fortunately, they were close to a Nevada military airport and the pilot landed safely. After the rods were reloaded, the pilot announced the flight would continue with or without passengers. Dick and Bob were the only ones to continue; the others decided to stay put even though it might be several days before they could get another flight. The brothers met their mother and sister Mary Ann in Kansas City, Missouri and drove to Tracy where their father's funeral was held September 2 at the Presbyterian church.

After reporting to Treasure Island in early October he informed the Navy he would not re-enlist when his term ended January 25, 1955. Consequently, he wasn't reassigned and remained at Treasure Island doing nothing until discharged October 25. Had he remained in the Navy, his advance to first class journalist would have been effective November 16. The Navy shipped his car to Treasure Island and he drove it to Yankton, South Dakota where his mother and sister moved after his father's death.

Bob Whipple in 1955, Student at the University of Minnesota. Photo, courtesy Blaine Whipple.

He stopped at Crater Lake National Park in Oregon on the trip east. Christmas 1954 was his first Christmas at home since 1949.

ENROLLS AT THE UNIVERSITY OF MINNESOTA

He enrolled at the University of Minnesota School of Journalism, Minneapolis campus, in January 1955 using the benefits of the GI Bill of Rights.[90] He rented a room in a private home in Dinky Town,[91] walked to classes, and ate meals when and where it was convenient. While in line to enroll in a class, Noel Olsen, a friend from

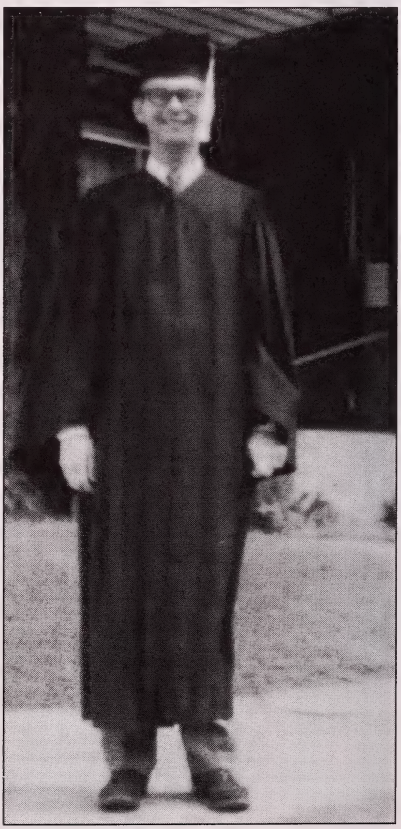
Lee Fremstad and Bob Whipple checking the sports page layout with the printers and publisher at the *New Prague Times*, March 22, 1955. Photo, courtesy of *New Prague Times*.

his Mankato State days and a veteran returning to school, saw him and they renewed their college friendship. He majored in journalism, with minors in political science and speech. His usual hangout was Murphy Hall and most of his friends were from the Journalism School. He was active in the University Toastmaster Club (served as President), the Student Liberal Party, was initiated into Sigma Delta Chi, a national journalism professional fraternity,[92] and was awarded a Certificate of Appreciation from the Student Union Board of Governors "in recognition of the active support and contribution to the student program."

He went to his mother's home in Yankton at the close of spring quarter and got a job as a laborer at the Gavin's Point Dam being constructed on the Missouri river by the U. S. Corps of Engineers. Wanting to hasten his college graduation, he enrolled in the second summer session at Mankato State. It was a particularly hot July so he wore Bermuda shorts to class which caught the attention of a reporter from the *Mankato Free Press*, the town's daily newspaper. In a front page article, including a picture of Bob in shorts, snapped as he exited his first morning class, the reporter referred to him as a "daring exponent of Bermuda shorts crashing the conservative clothes conscious atmosphere by actually wearing knee length pants" and quoted Dr. A. F. Kemp, the city health officer, who approved their wear around home but frowned on wearing them elsewhere "because it just isn't the custom."

Bob responded, saying "traditions are made to be broken" and predicted that as the novelty wore off more Mankato men would lose their self consciousness and accept them as the summer uniform. "People are beginning to awaken to the fact they don't have to dress according to custom," he said. He admits to receiving plenty of razzing and comments pro and con and noted he became accustomed to shorts while in the Navy in Hawaii.[93]

He returned to Minneapolis in

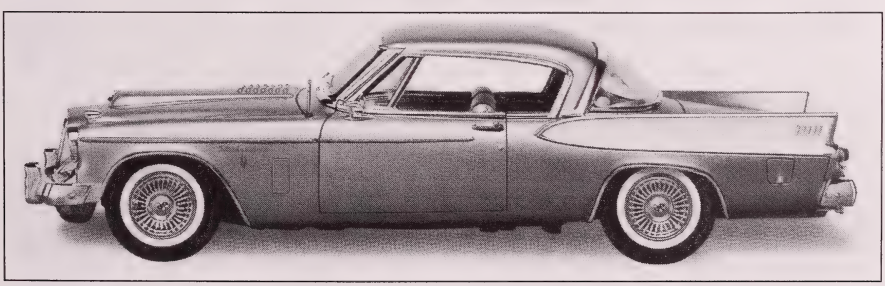


Bob Whipple graduation July 12, 1956 in front of Dinky Town home where he rented a room. Photo, courtesy of Blaine Whipple.

September for the 1955-56 school year living at the same Dinky town home and got a job with the U. S. Postal Service delivering mail six days a week during the Christmas season. It was a particularly cold two weeks and he looked forward to delivering at the few apartment houses on his route so he could get warm in the lobby. On February 18, 1956, he was awarded the first Barnhart Memorial Scholarship given by the University and the Minnesota Editorial Association (MEA). The $200.00 award was given to him at the MEA's 90th annual convention held at the Lowry Hotel in St. Paul. He was selected for the award by the MEA-Journalism Faculty Committee. His acceptance speech was described as "a masterpiece of eloquent logic which seemed to leave some doubt as to whether he should pursue a writing or a forensic course."[94]

He spent a week his senior year with Lee Fremstad, a junior, in New Prague, Minnesota putting their journalism education into practice by editing the March 22 weekly *New Prague Times*. They were responsible for gathering and writing all the news stories and editorials, proof reading, and laying out the pages.[95]

As the term neared its end, he began looking for a job and submitted a resume to the in-house advertising firm of the Vicks Corporation which developed the national advertising for Vicks medical products. It invited him to an interview at their New York City office, enclosing a round trip air ticket and hotel reservation. He was one of 15 interviewed and when he returned to Minneapolis a telegram awaited with a job offer. It was a tempting proposal and hard to turn down but as the first Barnhart scholarship winner, he felt an obligation to the School of Journalism to remain in the state and begin his career working for a weekly newspaper. He had numerous offers and after graduating July 19, (he attended the University's first summer session), he accepted an offer as advertising manager and news reporter on the *Forest Lake Times* in Forest Lake, a community 25 miles north of the Twin Cities. His graduation gift to himself was a new Studebaker Hawk purchased in Minneapolis in June 1956



1956 Studebaker Champion, the most radical design of new cars produced following the end of WWII. Bob's second car.

ACCEPTS JOB WITH WEEKLY NEWSPAPER AT FOREST LAKE

Bob moved to Forest Lake Saturday the 21st and began work on the 23rd. His bosses were Earl M. Lellman, Editor and Publisher, and Sidney K. Anderson, Production Manager, co-owners. In addition to the *Times*, they published a tabloid-size weekly shopper named the *St. Croix Valley Peach* printed on peach newsprint. It was distributed free in the near-by communities of Chisago Lakes and Stillwater, The content was primarily advertising with limited news content local to each community.

The bulk of Bob's time was devoted to advertising. He was responsible for selling space in the three publications which meant calling on business in the three towns. In addition to selling the space, he had to create many of the ads based on the information provided by the merchant. This was done at a layout table using his imagination to create copy to sell the product and fit it into the space purchased. Other merchants, especially those selling automobiles, appliances, and television sets, used advertising mats provided by the manufacturer that were cast with molten lead and placed in the newspapers. His news reporting was mostly on school, town and county government, service clubs, and business.

He rented a cabin on the shores of Forest Lake, a fishing lake on the edge of town. In addition to cabins, the owners operated a tavern and boat rental and Bob frequently filled-in for them when they were away evenings and weekends. He didn't have a TV so when Elvis Presley made his famous appearance on the *Ed Sullivan Show* September 9, he watched it at the bowling alley. Because of Elvis' controversial sexy gyrations when singing,[96] he was filmed from the waist up. The show reached 82.6 percent of the TV audience with no evidence that viewers were offended and changed channels. The bowling alley was jammed the night of the show.

After a year with the *Times* Bob decided to seek a Master's Degree and made applications to a number of Universities seeking a job as a graduate assistant while studying for the degree. He received offers from the University of Florida in Gainesville, the University of Illinois in Urbana, Indiana University at Bloomington, The University of Iowa in Iowa City, Ohio University in Athens, the University of Oklahoma in Norman, the University of Wisconsin in Madison, and the University of Oregon in Eugene.[97]

He left Forest Lake Saturday September 7, 1957 for Eugene where he taught typography courses and graded tests of advertising and business students. His stipend was $1,200.00 plus tuition. The other Universities offered stipends as high as $1,800.00 plus tuition but he chose Oregon having become enamored with the Pacific Northwest during his two years

naval service in Tacoma. In addition to journalism, he completed courses in history, political science, and sales management. His thesis was on the change in editorial attitude toward Oregon U. S. Senator Wayne L. Morse by five Oregon daily newspapers after he left the Republican Party, served as an Independent for two years, then joined the Democratic Party and was re-elected under its banner.[98] He was awarded a Master of Science degree June 14, 1959.

He and Lee Strezlechi, a graduate student from Saskatchewan province, Canada rented a duplex on Pearl Street within walking distance of the campus. Lee, a high school teacher, was studying school administration. He was a good roommate and during Christmas vacation, they went to Vancouver, B. C. where Bob was the best man at his wedding. Mary, his wife to-be, lived in Vancouver and her parents gave them a traditional Polish wedding which he remembers as great fun. His mother Pearl visited from Yankton the summer of 1957 and he took her to Crater Lake National Park, the ocean beaches, and to Portland to acquaint her with the state.

MANAGES CONGRESSIONAL CAMPAIGN

In August he signed on as manager of the campaign to reelect Democrat Charles O. Porter to the U.S. House of Representatives from Oregon's Fourth District. The District, one of the largest and most scenic in the United States, covered seven counties[99] in the southwest part of the state. It's main economic base was timber and lumber products. Both lumber and fishing supported it's coastal counties. Porter, elected in 1956, was the first Democrat since statehood to represent the District. Bob traveled the District representing Porter's platform to various interest groups and newspaper editors; organized Democratic activists; worked with the county Democratic organizations on get-out-the-vote; spoke at rallies and Union Halls, and to service groups; developed campaign brochures and distributed them throughout the District; was responsible for campaign publicity; helped raise campaign funds; coordinated appearances of the Congressman with other Democratic nominees; and frequently traveled with him. Porter won reelection.

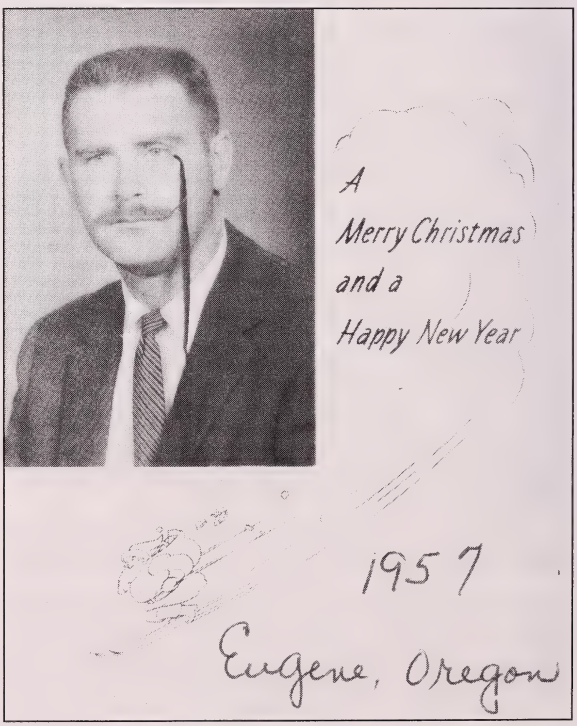
As he neared the end of his studies, he sent resumes to newspapers, advertising agencies, public relation firms, the CIA, the American University of Beirut, and Pacific Slope Newspapers.[100] Offers were received from the CIA, the American University, and Pacific Slope Newspapers. He passed the CIA admission standards and secrecy clearance, and was flown to a base in California for a final interview. Because its location was secret, he had to wear a hood from the airport to and from the base. The job was to monitor radio broadcasts from South America. The salary was

not competitive with other offers so he declined. The offer to join the American University to teach journalism classes came after he had already accepted an advertising job with Pacific Slope Newspapers in Seattle.

This organization represented 420 small daily and weekly newspapers in Washington, Oregon, Idaho, and Montana. He visited every community in Washington with a weekly newspaper and developed information about the economics of the communities, met with the publishers and editors to determine the effectiveness of the newspapers in communicating with their readers, and interviewed advertisers about the newspaper's ability to bring customers into their stores and businesses. After analyzing this information, he called on advertising agencies representing manufacturers of products sold in rural areas – farm equipment, fertilizers, trucks, metal buildings, irrigation equipment, dairy equipment – as well as automobiles, appliances, beer, cigarettes, etc. in Seattle, Spokane, Portland, Chicago, Milwaukee, Detroit, Minneapolis, Cleveland, and Cincinnati.

After a year, Bob was recruited by Oregon State Senator and State Democratic Chairman Robert W. Straub to become Executive Secretary of the Democratic Party of Oregon. Straub, of Eugene, met Bob during the Porter campaign and was impressed by the job he did for Porter. He was elected State Party Chairman in 1959 on a platform of revitalizing the Party organization and believed Bob was qualified to help accomplish that goal.

Prior to accepting the offer, Bob met with Straub and other Party leaders in Portland to discuss their expectations, his authority, staffing, public representation of the Party, fund raising, and his role in making policy. He was told the Party lacked statewide exposure, its county Central Committees were poorly organized, and its fund raising virtually non-existent. His job was to help the



Bob Whipples's 1957 greeting card to family and friends. Photo, courtesy of Blaine Whipple.

Central Committees build their organizations, develop fund raising skills, work with the State Party Executive Committee to develop issues the Party would promote, and generate newspaper, television, and radio publicity. The job paid $600 a month and he accepted with the understanding he would have to raise the funds to pay it. His staff was a secretary. Their office was in the Governor Building at southwest Second and Stark in downtown Portland.

He moved to Portland and shared a two-bedroom apartment in a 4-plex in eastern Washington county with Ron Walker, a former U. of Oregon friend.[101] His first priority was to establish a rapport with the political reporters of the *Oregon Journal, The Portland Oregonian,* and *Portland Reporter*, the Associated Press and United Press International staffs, the news staff of televisions stations KATU (channel 2), KOIN (6), KGW (8), KOAP (10) now KOPB, and KPTV (12) and the staffs of the news oriented radio stations. He became personally acquainted with all elected Democratic office-holders in the metropolitan area, communicated by letter and telephone with the Chairs of the 36 county Central Committees offering his services, and established a state-wide fund raising list to solicit.

ATTENDS 1960 NATIONAL CONVENTION

His first job was to organize the annual Jefferson-Jackson Day dinner, a major fund raising event. The speaker was Senator Stuart Symington of Missouri, a "dark horse" candidate for the 1960 presidential nomination. He attended the Democratic National Convention in Los Angeles in July where Oregon's 34 delegates voted for Senator John F. Kennedy of Massachusetts, winner of the Oregon May primary over Oregon's "favorite son" candidate Senator Wayne L. Morse. His arrival at the Los Angeles airport coincided with the arrival of a number of candidates seeking the nomination and he was surprised by a rally which included a small band, banners and posters, proclaiming his candidacy for president, and a convertible to take him to his hotel. The airport was full of reporters, some of whom interviewed him and wrote about the rally. It was promoted by Leonard Ross and Stephen Shields, Los Angeles natives, students at Portland's Reed College, and volunteers at the Democratic Party office in Portland. He reported on the delegation's activities through interviews with various Oregon radio stations and newspapers covering the convention. He met former first lady Eleanor Roosevelt and spent about an hour visiting with her and his friend Nan Wood Honneyman who was a fellow college student with Mrs. Roosevelt and who represented Portland in the U. S. House of Representative after being recruited to run by Mrs. Roosevelt in the 1936 election.

In August he conducted neighborhood discussion schools throughout the state training precinct workers to lead discussion groups on issues such as economic growth, educational opportunities, housing, civil rights, and problems of the family farmer in their communities. The goal was to replace speech making with a public discussion. He also helped organize the first platform convention every held in Washington county.

In September he organized a campaign bus tour that spent a week holding rallies in the smaller communities in central and eastern Oregon and a week in communities along the Oregon coast. The goal was to introduce rural and coastal Oregonians to the Democratic candidates for the U. S. senate, Maurine Neuberger; Secretary of State, Monroe Sweetland; State Treasurer, Ward Cook; and Attorney General, Robert Y. Thornton. Blaine represented and spoke for the Kennedy campaign at each stop. Candidates for the legislature and county offices joined the tour when the bus was in their area. Congressman Al Ullman toured with them in Eastern Oregon as did Marv Owens and Charles O. Porter, candidates for Congress from the first and fourth districts on the coast leg of the tour.[102]

He moved the Party's state office to the Capitol building in Salem in early January 1961 where his services were available to Democratic members of the legislature. He traveled extensively during the session speaking to service clubs, business clubs, farm organizations, college groups, county Central Committees, Jane Jefferson Clubs, and other party organizations on various legislative issues.

A major issue during the session involved the Republican controlled State Land Board - Gov. Mark Hatfield, Chairman, Secretary of State Howell Appling, Jr., and State Treasurer Howard Belton - meeting in closed sessions in September and November 1960 and leasing to the Shell Oil Co. 600,000 acres of state offshore land for development. Attorney General Robert Y. Thornton ruled the lease illegal in November.

The Democrats introduced Senate Bill 483 early in the 1961 session to prohibit indiscriminate commercial development of Oregon beaches. Blaine traveled the state advocating its passage. He labeled the Land Board action a Republican give-away of the state's natural resources and said SB 483 protected the public interest. He dramatized his presentations with blown-up photos of various beaches on which he pasted pictures of oil derricks and slowly splattered oil over a box of sand carried to each speech.[103] He read from the lease drafted by Shell which gave it the "right to construct and maintain all works, buildings, plants, waterways, roads, communication lines, pipe lines, reservoirs, tanks, pumping stations, or other structures right on the beaches proper." He said the Republican approved lease took from Oregonians their recreational uses of the public

beaches and the substantial boost the tourist industry brings to the Oregon economy.[104]

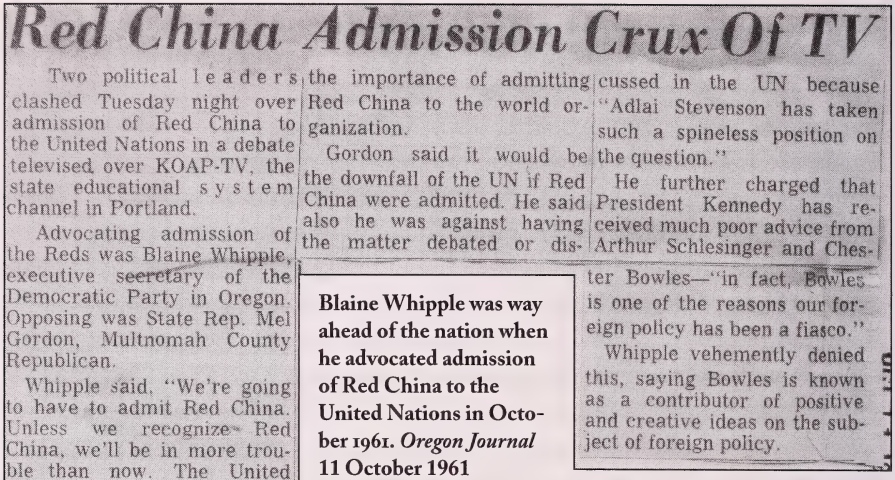
When SB 483 passed, he called it "one of the most important and far reaching accomplishments of the session" and credited the Democratic legislature with protecting the public's interest by guaranteeing the preservation of the coast's beauties, preventing the raiding of potential natural resources, and promoting the greatest financial return to the state while leaving room for new industry to grow in Oregon.[105] Following adjournment of the legislature in late April he relocated to party headquarters in Portland.

In July Blaine organized a two-day issues conference in Newport. It was an educational effort to implement President Kennedy's legislative program, especially in housing, health care, jobs growth, education, and foreign aid. By July both of Oregon's political parties were in serious financial trouble. The Democrats were destitute and the Republicans were down to one employee, Wally Hunter, its Executive Secretary. The Democrat's bank balance was $75, Blaine was owed salary for the previous five weeks, and his secretary, Flavia Skinner, was owed for two months.

SUPPORTS MEDICAL CARE FOR THE AGED

Many of his speeches the summer of 1961 advocated passage of the King-Anderson bill then before Congress. It would provide medical care to the aged. His message was that the right to decent medical care is as basic as the right to food, clothing and shelter and he deplored the fact that millions of Americans over age 65 were denied that right. The bill would add medical care for the elderly through the existing Social Security program. It would be funded by adding one-fourth of one percent to social security payments by individuals and employers. Recipients would be entitled to up to 90 days of hospital care, 180 days of home-nursing care in one period of illness, and hospital outpatient diagnostic service. They would pay part of the hospital and diagnosis cost.

When Dr. Max H. Parrott, President of the Oregon State Medical Society, and Dr. Edward E. Rosenbaum, both of Portland, testified before the House Ways and Means Committee that the bill was unnecessary, dangerous, and would lower the quality of medical service, Blaine publicly called their efforts to scuttle the bill a disservice to the medical profession and wondered how they could deny the need for a self-financing program of medical aid through Social Security."[106] Parrott responded in a letter to the editor of *The Portland Oregonian* August 20 saying he and Rosenbaum had been "Whippleized," that the bill would create "socialized medicine" and lead to the deterioration of quality medical care and service.



Red China Admission Crux Of TV

Two political leaders clashed Tuesday night over admission of Red China to the United Nations in a debate televised over KOAP-TV, the state educational system channel in Portland.

Advocating admission of the Reds was Blaine Whipple, executive secretary of the Democratic Party in Oregon. Opposing was State Rep. Mel Gordon, Multnomah County Republican.

Whipple said, "We're going to have to admit Red China. Unless we recognize Red China, we'll be in more trouble than now. The United States has to communicate with everyone in the world if we are going to advance the cause of Peace."

He implied some criticism of both the present administration and the Eisenhower administration, saying there had been no leadership in getting the people to recognize the importance of admitting Red China to the world organization.

Gordon said it would be the downfall of the UN if Red China were admitted. He said also he was against having the matter debated or discussed in the UN because "Adlai Stevenson has taken such a spineless position on the question."

He further charged that President Kennedy has received much poor advice from Arthur Schlesinger and Chester Bowles—"in fact, Bowles is one of the reasons our foreign policy has been a fiasco."

Whipple vehemently denied this, saying Bowles is known as a contributor of positive and creative ideas on the subject of foreign policy.

Blaine Whipple was way ahead of the nation when he advocated admission of Red China to the United Nations in October 1961. *Oregon Journal* 11 October 1961

In a letter published by the *Oregonian* August 26, Blaine called the "socialized medicine" charge nonsense, noting that socialized medicine would require doctors to work for the government. He said King-Anderson did not authorize any federal officer or employee to exercise any supervision or control over the practice of medicine or the manner in which medical services are provided." He wondered if doctors had become so callous to the needs of the elderly that they would treat them less because provision had been made for their care under Social Security. He said a doctor's method and degree of treatment should not be determined by the way the patient pays for it.

Blaine was elected Alternate Chairman of the Washington county Democratic Party in the fall of 1960 and in August 1961 was appointed its Chairman of the Oregon Economic Growth Conference to be held in Eugene September 16. The purpose of the conference was to explore the economic growth potential of Oregon and recommend ways of realizing that potential. The conference placed special emphasis on the contribution higher education, ports, power, and timber could make to the state's industrial growth.

In a television debate on KOAP-TV, Oregon's public television channel, with Republican State Representative Mel Gordon October 10, Blaine, speaking as an individual, not for the Party, advocated admission of Red China to the United Nations saying "it would be easier to keep an eye on China inside the U. N. and that the U. S. should communicate with everyone in the world if we are going to advance the cause of peace." He said admittance would depend on China agreeing to abide by the U.

N. Charter and the rules of international law and noted that a majority of nations in the U. N. supported its admission and that Australia had introduced a resolution calling for a full study of the issue. Gordon said admitting Red China would be the downfall of the U. N. and "the issue shouldn't even be debated or discussed." He accused the U. S. Ambassador to the U. N., Adlai Stevenson, of taking a "spineless position" when he proposed the idea.

The following week Robert Davis, State Chairman of the Republican Party said that so long as he was Chairman the Party would oppose debating the issue of admission and membership and demanded that the Democratic State Party Chairman clarify his Party's official position. Chairman E. D. Spencer of Salem responded that the Party's 1960 platform stated it favored trade with mainland China in non-strategic materials to expand the markets for our products and services. "Any other statement," he said, "is the personal opinion of the person making it, regardless of who he is, and unlike the 'Republicans', we Democrats think it healthy for individuals to express opinions whether we share them or not."[107]

CALLS RONALD REAGAN SPEECHES PARTISAN

Blaine described movie star Ronald Reagan Portland speeches under the auspices of the General Electric Company in early October as disguised attacks on the Kennedy Administration. He said that newspaper interviews and radio broadcasts clearly showed that Reagan's political philosophy embraced the most conservative elements of the Republican Party. He was granted equal time to respond on radio station KPAM. Oregon senior senator Wayne Morse called Blaine's response " the finest accounting of the first eight months of the Kennedy administration he has ever heard" and said it was "a devastating answer" to Reagan's criticisms.[108]

As the the year progressed, there was speculation by political reporters and Republicans leaders that Blaine would seek the nomination for Congress from the First District. J. W. Forester, editor of the Pendleton *East Oregonian* wrote that Blaine was "so devoted to the party" he will volunteer to "take a licking" from Walter Norblad, the Republican incumbent serving his seventh term.[109] He had been making speeches in the First and Fourth districts calling attention to the voting records of Norblad and Congressman Edwin Durno who had narrowly defeated Charles O. Porter in 1960.

Democrat Willis A. West, 54, Chief Civil Deputy in the Multnomah County District Attorney's office, announced his candidacy for the First District seat December 11, 1961. A nephew of the late Democratic Governor Oswald West,[110] he was elected District Attorney of Clatsop County

following his graduation from the University of Oregon Law School in 1932. He was an attorney for the State Public Utilites Commission in 1937 and was active in the Young Democrats organization in the late 1930s serving as President of the Marion County Chapter and Treasurer of the State organization. He served as a Judge Advocate in the U.S. Army during WWII as Chief Prosecutor and Head of the War Crimes Office in the China Theater of Operations. He also served with the United Nations War Crimes Commission in China and was awarded the Legion of Merit. He was Chief Assistant U.S. District Attorney in 1953 and joined the Multnomah County District Attorney's office in 1954. He had seven children and operated a small livestock and filbert farm in the Tigard area. He said he would "conduct a hard and lively campaign and that a Democratic congressman will receive recognition from the Kennedy Administration that will help the State and the District, particularly in the agricultural and lumbering field."[111]

On Sunday January 7, 1962, Blaine announced his candidacy for Congress and said he would resign his Party post January 19 to conduct an "aggressive issue-oriented campaign based on the needs of the District and the legislative goals of President Kennedy." He said he would discuss Representative Norblad's "inability to produce for the District despite seniority and a favorable administration during the eight Eisenhower years."[112] He would be 32 on February 22, and will become a public relations consultant following his resignation. The 10-county First District has a Republican registration advantage and has never elected a Democrat to Congress.[113]

In a March article analyzing the race in the First District, the Salem *Capital Press* wrote Democrats will have a choice between "name" candidates for the first time within recollection. Blaine Whipple has been prominent in recent years as Executive Secretary of the state Democratic Party and Willis West carried the name of the uncle, former Gov. Oswald West, as well as being known on the north coast as a one-time District Attorney for Clatsop County. Whipple can expect broader worker support because of his Party activities, and has been more active to date as a campaigner. West is the Deputy District Attorney for Multnomah County which could be an advantage because of its respectability or a disadvantage because it takes him out of of the District. Either man will have an uphill race against long-time incumbent Norblad, both because he is so widely known and because his Republican Party has a registration advantage (5,500 in 1960), although this would be a small factor if the trend of recent years toward Democratic registration, continued. The Democrat will probably suffer the lack of a big issue against an entrenched incumbent, and will most likely find it difficult to attract cam-

paign funds for what many will consider a hopeless battle. Organized labor, which opposes Norblad, has little strength in the District to offer to Norblad's opponent.[114]

West launched an attack against Blaine in a speech before the Willamette Democratic Society April 17 calling him "a drifter who came here from Seattle two years ago looking for a job. Charley Straub (sic) [he meant State Sen. Robert W. Straub] gave him a job at $900 a month and he came in an drained your party treasury." In an emotion-charged speech, West said his opponent changed his name from Robert Whipple to Blaine Whipple and announced for congress "after living in the district for less than 12 months." He also charged that the Democratic Party of Oregon was "being torn asunder" in part by what he said was "the Whipple crowd."

Blaine replied when interviewed by the reporter who wrote the attack article that "distortion and carelessness with facts seem to be Mr. West's stock in trade." West first made charges against him Blaine said, at a January 14 meeting of the Democratic State Executive committee. Following West's charges the Committee unanimously adopted a resolution praising his "invaluable aid to the Party in carrying forward its program consistent with the highest idea of political service to the state and the people of Oregon."[115]

Straub responded in a letter to the editor that West's charges were "so gross as to fact" he had to set the record straight. He said Blaine did not seek the office of Party Executive Secretary, that he recruited him based on their association when he (Blaine) was on the staff of the U. of Oregon School of Journalism, on the work he did for Democrats in the 1958 campaign, and because of his background, training, and knowledge of Oregon politics. He said Blaine's party work is well-known and the energy and hours he expended in the Party's behalf was beyond the call of duty. Regarding West's false statements concerning salary, Straub said Blaine took the party job at a much lower salary than he was receiving and lower than he was capable of earn-

Campaign picture of Blaine Whipple used in his 1962 campaign for Congress. Photo, courtesy of Blaine Whipple.

ing. He noted that the Party was frequently as many as two months in arrears in paying the salary because Blaine felt other creditors should be given priority.[116]

Most First District newspapers endorsed West. *The Portland Oregonian* called it an interesting race but preferred West because of his legal background. The Salem *Statesman* described Blaine as a dedicated "liberal, probably more advanced in his thinking than a great many in his Party." Here the choice is clear: Democrats who want a young aggressive liberal should vote for Whipple. Those who favor a less radical approach to public problems should support West. On this division the *Statesman* would recommend West who is on the more conservative side. The Salem *Capital Journal* said both are mentally quick physically energetic men who are not newcomers to politics. West's campaign has centered on getting more military installations for Oregon and on support of key Kennedy Administration programs such as civil rights and federal aid to education. Whipple talks on a wider variety of subjects, trying to be a thinking man's candidate by relying more on a display of facts. We see West the better of the two because of his broad background of experience and because he works smoothly with people. The *Corvallis Gazette Times* said West's program is rather all encompassing and he goes down the line all the way with Mr. Kennedy. Whipple's political philosophy is similar, only much more so. We predict a victory for Whipple because he not only is better known but is campaigning much more energetically. We do believe, however, West's maturity and better judgment would make him the better legislator.

The *Portland Reporter* called Blaine "young, vigorous, and informed" and said he is our choice in the Democratic primary. He has left no stone unturned in his serious effort to be his Party's standard bearer in the November election. He talks issues and solutions and burns the midnight oil to keep constantly abreast of problems of the day. West has devoted much of his campaign effort to speeches before the Willamette Democratic Society and less contact with the people. Salem's *Capital Press* wrote Democrats in the First District have never had a congressman of their party and are now pondering which nominee to present to the voters in the November election. On one side is Blaine Whipple, a young man whose beliefs are controversial and liberal and whose preference for Senator Morse and his type of Democrat has been clearly demonstrated. On the other side is Willis West, a contemporary of Mr. Norblad whose campaign much resembles the old, unsuccessful campaigns of the past against the entrenched Norblad. West's preference seems to be for "me to" conservatism that an older breed of Oregon Democrats professed but which is now obsolete. To us, the choice of Mr. Whipple is clearly the right one. He has what it will take to make the First District a truly two-party dis-

Blaine Whipple conferred with Sen. Maurine B. Neuberger in her Washington office. Photo, courtesy of Blaine Whipple.

trict, and we suspect he has the staying power not only to run for this job until he wins it, but also to do the job well enough to keep the seat. The *Enterprise-Courier* of Oregon City predicted Blaine's win. The *Sandy Post* endorsed West.[117]

WINS PRIMARY; LOSES GENERAL ELECTION

Blaine won the May 18 primary carrying all 10 counties defeating West 34,764 (61%) to 22,050 (39%). Ken Johnson, editor of the Salem *Capital Press,* wrote in his analysis of the election May 25 that Norblad is favored for re-election because he has never been seriously threatened since his election in 1946 and his name is so familiar (his father, Albin Walter Norblad, was Oregon's governor 1929-31) among voters that he almost automatically has many of their votes. Whipple, who put life into the primary campaign with a heavy schedule of personal appearances and a great deal of hand-shaking, won handier than might have been expected over Willis West.[118]

In a June 5 editorial, "Stirring in the First District," The *Portland Reporter* wrote that Norblad has a formidable opponent in Blaine Whipple and will have to demonstrate knowledge of the economic and social issues of the day and a willingness to be recorded "Aye" or "Nay" on them

to win against Whipple who will smoke him out. We may be treated to the spectacle of Walter Norblad actually taking a position during the campaign. This will be tough on the congressman because he won't be able to please everybody. Norblad refused to engage in any debates despite a resolution by the Republican National Committee supporting debates.[119]

Blaine spent three days in Washington, D. C. in July attending a briefing conference conducted by high government officials and Democratic Party leaders. He also met with President John F. Kennedy and Vice President Lyndon B. Johnson. Among the officials conducting the briefings were Attorney General Robert F. Kennedy, Secretary of the Treasury C. Douglas Dillon, Secretary of Defense Robert S. McNamara, Secretary of State Dean Rusk, Secretary of Commerce Luther Hodges, Secretary of the Interior Stuart Udall, and Secretary of Agriculture Orville Freeman. James E. Webb, head of NASA, and Sargent Shriver, Director of the Peace Corps, reviewed elements of their programs.

The housing program was described by Administrator Robert Weaver of the Housing and Home Finance Agency; progress in economic recovery and growth was outlined by Walter W. Heller, Chairman of the Council of Economic Advisors, Undersecretary of Labor W. Willard Wirtz, and Administrator William Batt of the Area Redevelopment Administration; and medical care for the aged under Social Security was presented by Ivan A. Nestingen, Undersecretary of the Department of Health, Education and Welfare and Assistant Secretary Wilbur Cohen.[120]

Reporter Philip Hager wrote in the September 13 *Portland Reporter* that no candidate in the state is running harder than Blaine Whipple. He said Blaine shook 17,000 hands and made 150 speeches in the primary and that his goal for the general election is 25,000 hands shaken and speeches numbering "as many as I can make." He said Blaine kept a "people-counter" in his left pocket and rang up a new number whenever he shakes a hand. He said Blaine's campaign was winning praise from Party leaders from Oregon to Washington, D.C. Attorney General Robert Y. Thornton, the Democratic nominee for governor, calls Whipple the "best organized candidate I've ever seen." On a recent trip to Washington, Whipple amazed party leaders who admitted they'd never seen a congressional candidate – particularly at 32 years of age – so well prepared to wage a campaign.

"His opponent, Rep. Walter Norblad, has been wiping out Democratic challengers since 1946 and is solidly entrenched in a District that has never elected a Democrat to congress and who, except for responding to Whipple's attacks in letters to the editors of District newspapers, refuses to debate him.

Blaine Whipple on the steps of the U. S. Capitol Building in Washington, D. C. in July 1962.
Photo, courtesy of Blaine Whipple.

"Whipple is hitting hard on health care for the aged under social security, backing aid to the lumber industry, steps to ease unemployment, water and air pollution programs, a youth employment plan, and increased appropriations for the U. S. arms control and disarmament agency.

"His opponent, Whipple is telling the voters, has voted against King-Anderson, the minimum wage increase, and crippling amendments on area redevelopment and housing. 'Norblad is telling his constituents they have an investment in him. I'm asking if it's businesslike to continue to invest where there's been no return for 17 years.'

"Whipple, whose confidence zoomed after he defeated well-known Willis West in the primary, has one more unusual and often-appealing factor in his favor as he faces the formidable Norblad. He shares George Washington's birthdate, February 22, and was born in log cabin no less."

In a report on the Norblad-Whipple race, *The New York Times* called it a close contest and predicted Norblad would "come out ahead but only by the barest margin. Mr. Whipple, 32 years old, is not considered to have quite enough support to win this year. An upset is not considered impossible but it is believed his best hopes lies in running again in 1964." He is waging an intensive personal campaign with practically no money. His supporters are giving out thousands of home-baked cookies, dubbed "Whipple-snaps" as part of his campaign.[121]

"Mr. Whipple is playing up his support of the President's medical care plan for the aged which is opposed by Representative Norblad. Four of the 10 counties the district are classed as chronic unemployment areas and are under the Area Redevelopment program and Mr. Whipple is pushing for aid to the depressed lumber market and for the jobless. He is advocating international disarmament and cessation of nuclear testing and is one of 10 candidates for the House of Representative to be endorsed by the

Council to Abolish War, a national organization that supported peace candidates.

"Representative Norblad, a member of the House Armed Services Committee, considers bringing military operations to his district a favorable part of his record and has refused public debates with Mr. Whipple, a point well publicized by backers of the youthful candidate. The Congressman charges that Mr. Whipple is primarily supported by the ultra-liberal wing of the Democratic party. Mr. Whipple calls Representative Norblad "Rip Van Winkle," charging that the Congressman has been "sleeping" in Congress for 17 years. Endorsements of Mr. Whipple have come from the American Federation of Labor and Congress of Industrial Organization, farm, public power, senior citizens, and conservation groups.[122]

CUBAN MISSILE CRISIS IMPACTS ELECTION

An international incident in October changed the dynamics of the election and assured Norblad's reelection. Known as the Cuban Missile Crisis, it was a Cold War confrontation between the Soviet Union and the United States regarding Soviet deployment of nuclear missiles in Cuba. There was high tension in the country and many Americans, believing nuclear war was imminent, concluded it was not the time to make changes in their elected officials. The missiles were ostensibly to protect Cuba from future planned attacks by the United States after the 1961 failed Bay Pigs invasion[123] and were rationalized by the Soviets as equivalent to the U. S. placing nuclear weapons in the United Kingdom, Italy, and most significantly, Turkey. The crisis began October 16 when U. S. reconnaissance data revealed Soviet nuclear missile installations in Cuba. It ended October 28 when Soviet leader Nikita Khrushchev announced the installations would be dismantled. The Cuban Missile Crisis is often regarded as the moment when the Cold War came closest into escalating into a nuclear war. U. S. armed forces were at their highest state of readiness and Soviet field commanders in Cuba were prepared to use battlefield nuclear weapons to defend the island if it was invaded.

In 1962, the Soviet Union was far behind the United States in the arms race. Their missiles could be launched against Europe while U. S. missiles could strike the entire Soviet Union. Seeking equality, Khrushchev decided to double the Soviet strategic arsenal by placing intermediate range missiles in Cuba, thus providing a real deterrent to a potential U. S. attack against the Soviet Union. Fidel Castro, believing the U. S would launch a second attack – the first being the failed Bay of Pigs invasion – agreed to the plan. The Soviets secretly began building its missile installations that summer.[124]

When Kennedy saw the reconnaissance photographs of the missile sites he convened his 12 most important advisers to deal with the crisis. They met secretly at the White House and the public wasn't informed of the missiles until October 22. By October 19 four Soviet sites were operational. The President spoke to the American public and to the Soviet government in a televised address October 22. He confirmed the presence of the missiles and announced a naval blockade covering a quarantine zone of 500 nautical miles around the Cuban coast. He warned that the U. S. military was "prepared for any eventualities," and condemned the Soviet Union for "secrecy and deception."

Khrushchev sent letters to Kennedy on October 23 and 24 claiming the missiles were only for deterrent purposes and that the Soviet Union had peaceful intentions. On October 25 at an emergency session of the United Nation Security Council, U. S. Ambassador Adlai Stevenson produced photographs showing the missile installations. On October 26, the Soviets offered to withdraw the missiles in return for a U. S. guarantee not to invade Cuba or support any invasion. On the 27th they made a second demand that the U. S. withdraw its missiles from Turkey. The crisis peaked on the 27th when a U. S. Air Force U-2 was shot down over Cuba, one flying over Russia was almost intercepted when it strayed over Siberia, and Soviet merchant ships were nearing the quarantine zone. Kennedy publicly agreed not to invade or support an invasion of Cuba and sent his brother Robert, the Attorney General, to the Soviet Embassy to privately agree to remove 15 Jupiter missiles near Izmir, Turkey within six months. The Soviet ships turned back and on October 28 Khrushchev ordered removal of the Soviet missiles. Kennedy ordered an end to the quarantine November 20.

The Cuban Missile Crisis spurred the creation of the Hot Line, a direct communication link between Moscow and Washington D. C. The purpose of this undersea line was to give leaders of the two Cold War countries a way to communicate directly to solve a crisis like the one in October 1962.

In Oregon, Senator Wayne Morse, considered an expert on Central and South America, was summoned to Washington, D. C. (the President sent a special plane to pick him up) to confer with State Department officials and help formulate a proposal to enlist the Organization of American States to support the U. S.[125] The President cancelled his Portland campaign appearance scheduled for the 25th. Morse said the buildup of offensive weapons was a clear indication of aggressive action. Senator Maurine Neuberger said that Monday October 22 was "a crucial day in U. S. history." Blaine, speaking at the Veterans of Foreign Wars (VFW) Hall in Tualatin Monday night, supported the President, saying "The Ameri-

Blaine Whipple renews acquaintanceship with President John F. Kennedy during a White House visit in July 1962. Photo, courtesy of The White House.

can people have every reason to have complete confidence in the way the President is handling the crisis" and that the issue "is too delicate to be used as a political issue." He said he hoped that "now that the fight-if-we must line has been drawn that all Americans regardless of politics would support the President." He continued: "In this nuclear age, the American people must keep both their nerve and their head and not permit emotions to overcome sound judgments." Norblad, who emphasized his membership on the House Armed Force Committee, said he "absolutely agreed with the President's decision," On Wednesday, speaking to a noon meeting of the Estacada Kiwanis Club, Blaine said war and peace are in a delicate balance and asked his audience to support the President.[126]

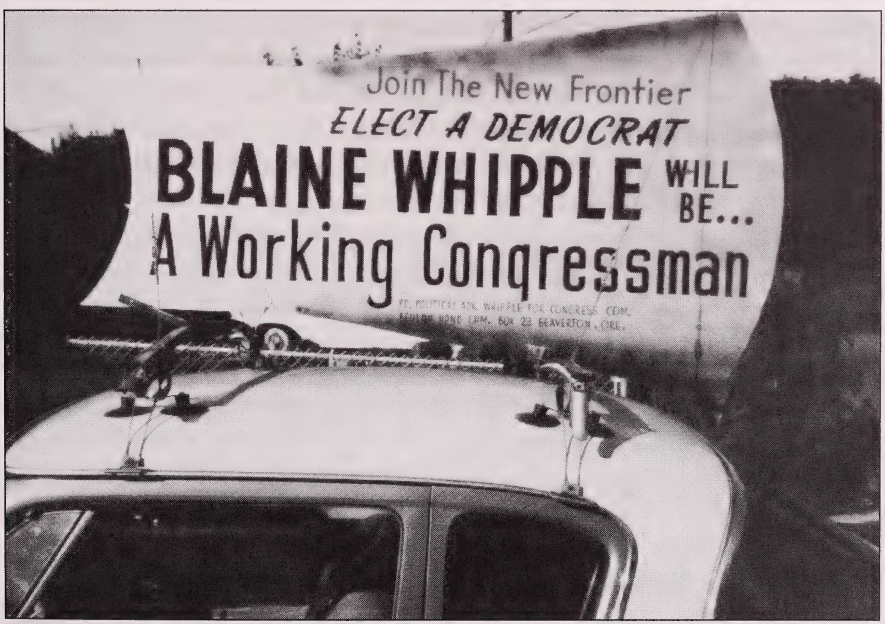
The Salem *Capital Journal* printed a full page article in its issue six days before the election featuring several photographs of Blaine on the campaign trail. The story described a typical campaign day:

"Democrat Blaine Whipple is campaigning for Congress with an energy and determination seldom seen in the First District. It means long days and little sleep but the Beaverton man is tenacious in his efforts to meet as many people as possible before election. On an average day of

campaigning Whipple shakes at least 500 hands – one day he met 1,800 people. With Republicans holding a registration edge and with incumbent Rep. Walter Norblad well entrenched, Whipple realizes he has to work hard if he is to get the congressional seat. He is giving it the old college try with the aid of volunteer workers

"The Executive Secretary of the state Democratic organization before he became a candidate early this year, Whipple is wise to campaigning ways and tries to make the best of them. He stresses issues in his political talks. He has tried to arrange debates with Norblad but the congressman refuses. The two have yet to share a platform. A disciple of President Kennedy's New Frontier, Whipple doesn't dodge any question on issues. 'There are many important issues facing the nation and the voters have every right to know where I stand.' He says Norblad's views aren't known on many issues.

"Whipple is a strong backer of providing medical care for the aged though Social Security and thinks the American Medical Association has been 'dishonest' in its cry of 'socialized medicine.' He calls the administration's medicare plan 'a sound logical approach.' He points out that four of the District's 10 counties are classified as areas of chronic unemployment and that a congressman has an obligation to aid the District in its economic growth. He is critical of Norblad for opposing area redevelopment legislation which would help these counties. He calls attention to the con-



Blaine Whipple campaign throughout the congressional district in his 1956 Studebaker Hawk. Photo, courtesy of Blaine Whipple.

gressman's vote against this legislation during the Eisenhower administration and his reluctant support this year after voting for 'crippling amendments.' He points to Norblad's vote against legislation to provide manpower retraining and against a $1.25 minimum wage. The latter vote he says supports southern sweat shops when the measure would make Oregon more competitive.

"Whipple supports federal aid to schools, especially for higher learning and prefers a program that provides loans over scholarships. He argues that the U. S. can't compete with Russia and Red China in manpower so it shouldn't allow itself to fall behind the Communists in education. He supports a job program for young people similar to the Civilian Conservation Corps of the 1930s with 20 percent of the individual's time spent in a class setting learning a job skill.

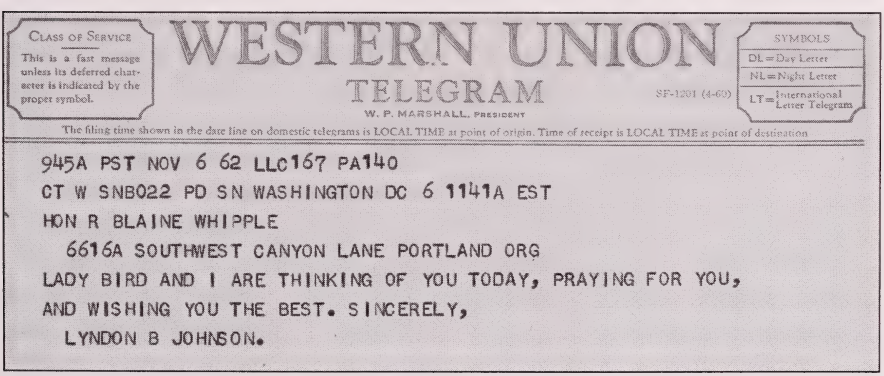
"He starts his day early. On a typical day last week he began a Marion County swing at 6:30 a.m. after having only 3 hours sleep the night before. Dressed in a three-button dark suit with a Whipple ribbon pinned to his lapel, he met employees of American Can Co. here as they arrived for work introducing himself and giving them campaign literature. Then he moved to the State Farm Insurance parking lot and repeated the routine. Then on to downtown Salem were he made a radio tape and then to a private home where he talked for more than an hour to a score of women asking about his position on various issues as they enjoyed his "Whipple-snap" cookies with their coffee. He travels by himself in a car which carries a huge sign identifying him.

"He invaded Stayton, Norblad's home town where he spoke to the Lions Club in a non political vein explaining that the vast majority of federal spending goes to the military and only a small portion to social and welfare programs. He illustrated his speech using a flip chart. When he arrived one of the Club member was distributing tickets for a dinner the Club is giving for Norblad and his wife. After the meeting Whipple toured the downtown introducing himself. Then he went to Turner and Aumsville repeating the process. The long day ended at Woodburn at a candidate's meeting."[127]

The newspaper editors began their endorsements in late October. To no one's surprise, they overwhelmingly supported Norblad's reelection. The Salem *Statesman* began the parade stating "his voting record is pretty satisfactory (and) he's conservative (as is) the District." The *Stayton Mail* noted that he honored the town by selecting it as the family's "home away from Washington . . . which has spread the city's name nationwide" and he was a long-time member of the House Military Affairs Committee. *The Portland Oregonian* endorsed Norblad because he was "durable, outranking 80 percent of his colleagues in seniority and is the third ranking

member on the powerful Armed Services Committee." *The Oregon Voter*, a conservative monthly magazine, used the same reasons in its endorsement. The *Milwaukie Review* based its endorsement on Norblad's seniority. The Salem *Capital Journal* favored Norblad because "he has represented the District well, has established a sensible voting record on most national issues, usually votes against bigger and more centralized government, opposed Kennedy's Social Security medicare program and manpower retraining act." The Hillsboro *Argus* applauded his seniority and his service "on the very important Military Affairs Committee." The *Daily Astorian* said he served the District "satisfactorily and diligently," that his seniority is second only to Sen. Wayne Morse in the Oregon delegation, that he is a native of Astoria, and as a life-long resident of the District knows its people and its problems. The Corvallis *Gazette Times* said he "votes right on almost every issue, he is helpful to Oregon in his position as a high ranking member of the Armed Services Committee, and only 84 members have more seniority."[128]

Blaine was endorsed by three newspapers. The *Oregon Teamster* wrote that he was "eminently sound in his approach to labor and management" and has taken forthright positions in education, world peace, medicare, water and air pollution control problems, economic growth, and job programs for young people. His fairness on all questions recommends him to all voters. The Salem *Capital Press* said there is a need in government for men of vision, of scope, of energy, and of daring and the First District candidate who embodies these characteristics is Blaine Whipple. They said the voters "will better themselves and their nation by electing Blaine Whipple to Congress." The *Portland Reporter* said he is "intelligent, articulate, and does his homework on the issues confronting the nation, the state, and the First District." He knows the King-Anderson medicare bill



CLASS OF SERVICE
This is a fast message unless its deferred character is indicated by the proper symbol.

WESTERN UNION
TELEGRAM
W. P. MARSHALL, PRESIDENT

SF-1201 (4-60)

SYMBOLS
DL = Day Letter
NL = Night Letter
LT = International Letter Telegram

The filing time shown in the date line on domestic telegrams is LOCAL TIME at point of origin. Time of receipt is LOCAL TIME at point of destination

945A PST NOV 6 62 LLC167 PA140
CT W SNB022 PD SN WASHINGTON DC 6 1141A EST
HON R BLAINE WHIPPLE
6616A SOUTHWEST CANYON LANE PORTLAND ORG
LADY BIRD AND I ARE THINKING OF YOU TODAY, PRAYING FOR YOU,
AND WISHING YOU THE BEST. SINCERELY,
LYNDON B JOHNSON.

Vice President Lyndon B. and Lady Bird Johnson wish Blaine well in the 1962 campaign. Photo, courtesy of Blaine Whipple.

and understands why he's for it. He had the fortitude to include a "peace" plank in his platform – he wants a larger Disarmament and Arms Control Agency. He wants something concrete done about air and water pollution, and is working hard to improve the economy of his District. Illustrative of his political fearlessness is a recent talk he made to a group of businessmen in which he not only declared the federal deficit isn't really as high as they all think, but backed his statement with statistics. The *Canby Herald* did not endorse candidates but its editor Tom W. Gerber in his weekly column wrote this year's nominees include some very capable people and went on to say, "There is something studious, efficient, and impressive about the way Blaine Whipple campaigns. His attitude is quiet and modest." The *Clackamas County News* also did not endorse candidates but its editor wrote in his weekly column, "I will vote for Blaine Whipple for Congress from this District."[129]

When the votes were counted, Norblad's winning margin, 118,328 (61%) to 73,641, was the same as Blaine's winning margin in the primary. As was the case in the rest of the nation, concern over the Cuban crisis made Oregonians reluctant to "change horses." The Norblad campaign raised $14,415, Blaine's campaign $5,857.12.[130]

FOUR MONTH EUROPEAN TOUR

In December, Blaine took four months off to tour Europe sailing from Boston on the Italian liner, *Saturina*, to Naples, Italy. Once in Europe his mode of travel was hitchhiking and he visited nations on both sides of the "Iron Curtain."[131] His travel guide was Arthur Frommer's *Europe on $5 a Day.*[132] He achieved this budget by staying at youth hostels, with people who gave him rides, and buying food at markets. It was Europe's most severe winter in 100 years and more than once he was thumbing for rides when a snow storm began. His first and only experience in going from a sauna to a plunge in icy water was in Helsinki, Finland in a snow storm. His activities included studying higher education problems in Greece, an hour's interview with the Speaker of the Finnish Parliament, participation in a discussion on world peace at the University of Stockholm, meeting Prime Minister Pompideau of France, being a guest of the Irish Parliament, and attending a meeting of the British House of Commons.

He returned in April, sailing on the *Queen Mary* to New York City from Southampton, a city and major port on the south coast of England where most luxury liners sailed to and from. He attended the National Farmer Union convention in New York and visited Independence Hall in Philadelphia on his way back to Oregon.[133] The stop in Philadelphia took on added interest because his distant cousin, General William Whipple

who represented New Hampshire in the Continental Congress, signed the Declaration of Independence in Independence Hall.

He was in demand as a speaker upon his return speaking to a variety of service clubs, women's clubs, business, labor, farm church, and student groups, Democratic Clubs and Central Committee meetings. Most wanted to hear about his European tour. He had visited East and West Berlin and told his audiences that Communism's failure was dramatically highlighted by the 6-foot high wall topped by barbed wire separating East and West Berlin. He said "the wall represents failure because it restricted the movement of a people who would not have chosen Communism if given the freedom of choice." He said the people in East Berlin were sullen, unenthusiastic, colorless; the ruble of war was everywhere; armed soldiers were on every street; consumer goods were scarce; the few tourists kept looking over their shoulders; the feeling of relief and safety as you returned to West Berlin where life was open, the people happy, and opportunity everywhere. With the exception of East Germany, he found a warmth toward Americans and the United States and language was not a barrier.[134]

As luncheon speaker April 17 at the Status of Women Conference in Salem, he told the 150 delegates honoring the 50th anniversary of women's suffrage that job discrimination based on sex must be abolished. He said the wise man's pronouncement "that the laborer is worthy of his hire" today means that "merit should be the sole basis of job competition." He told the women delegates that America's "vast female brain resource is untapped because of out-of-date customs and habits."[135]

In May in a speech to the State Convention of Young Democrats in Salem, Blaine encouraged them "to think for themselves" and not be afraid of non conformity. "Without the person of outspoken opinion, without the critic, without the visionary, without the non conformist, society will fall into decay" he said.[136] In November he was elected a delegate to the 54th annual Oregon-Washington Farmers Union Convention by the Laurel Scholls chapter and was featured speaker at the Sherwood High School Honor Society's annual meeting.

He joined the sales staff of Bill Snyder Realty in June 1963 and on November 22 while at work in its Raleigh Hills office heard the radio reports of the assassination of President John F. Kennedy by Lee Harvey Oswald in Dallas, Texas. He had a brief personal relationship with the President meeting him at the Democratic National Convention in Los Angeles and was in the convention hall when he was nominated the night of July 13. He campaigned for him in all sections of the state that fall and in September and October witnessed the Nixon-Kennedy debates, the first presidential television debates in the U. S.[137] Elected in one of the

closest elections in American history, Kennedy is still the only Roman Catholic to be elected President.[138] Blaine was invited to the President's 1961 Inauguration Ball but was unable to attend.[139] He also met the President in 1962 at the White House and campaigned for Congress on the President's "New Frontier" program.

He supported Kennedy's efforts to end to racial discrimination. James Meredith tried to enroll at the University of Mississippi in 1962, 12 years after Blaine's experience with discrimination at the school, but was prevented from doing so by white students. Kennedy sent 400 federal marshals and 3,000 troops to insure that Meredith could enroll. He also assigned federal marshals to protect Freedom Riders.[140] On June 11, 1963, he intervened when Alabama Governor George Wallace blocked the doorway to the University of Alabama to stop Vivian Malone and James Hood, African American students, from enrolling. That evening he gave his famous civil rights speech on national television and radio proposing what would become the Civil Rights Act of 1964. Blaine and President Kennedy shared another common undertaking – a visit to West Berlin – Blaine in January 1963 and Kennedy on June 26. Both saw the construction of the Berlin Wall as an example of the failures of Communism. In his speech to 120,000 listeners in West Berlin Kennedy said "Freedom has many difficulties and democracy is not perfect, but we have never had to put up a wall to keep our people in."[141] In his speech, he said "2000 years ago the proudest boast in the world was "*Civis Romanus sum*" (I am a citizen of Rome.) Today in the world of freedom, the proudest boast is "*Ich bin ein Berliner*," ("I am a citizen of Berlin").[142]

Blaine Whipple in his Beaverton Real Estate office. Photo, courtesy of Blaine Whipple.

As Chairman of the 1964 Washington County March of Dimes, he urged county citizens to support the drive to eradicate two of the nation's greatest cripplers – birth defects and arthritis. He reported that 50 percent of the funds raised supported Washington County programs, 25 percent went to a medical scientific research fund, and 25 percent to the National MOD headquarters to support medical care, professional education, and public education. The Chapter raised money at an auction sponsored by the Beaverton Lions Club, had fund drives in bowling alleys, sponsored a teen dance, a golf tournament, a polo game, a parachute jump and sky diving show, a dinner and fashion show, and a county-wide Mothers' March the night of January 30. Supervising the Mothers' March was Mrs. Ines Steele who later became Mrs. Blaine Whipple. In March, Blaine and Ines attended a regional MOD conference in San Francisco where they met Basil O'Connor, Chairman of the National Foundation and former law partner of Blaine's distant cousin, President Franklin D. Roosevelt. The drive raised $17,000, $1,500 more than the 1963 drive and won the national scrapbook contest for counties of its size. In announcing the award, Ernest Frost, a director of the National Foundation, congratulated Blaine for the "program of good promotion and ample publicity which supports a solid campaign organization." In turn Blaine thanked the county media for its excellent coverage of the Drive.[143]

SECOND CAMPAIGN FOR CONGRESS

On March 6, 1964, the final filing date, he entered the race for Congress becoming the first opponent to challenge Rep. Walter Norblad a second time. He said his campaign would focus on the District's economic potential, flood control, irrigation and recreation projects, passage of a housing program to benefit Oregon's housing industry, and a more vigorous and creative search by the U. S. into the economical and political means for the prevention of war.[144]

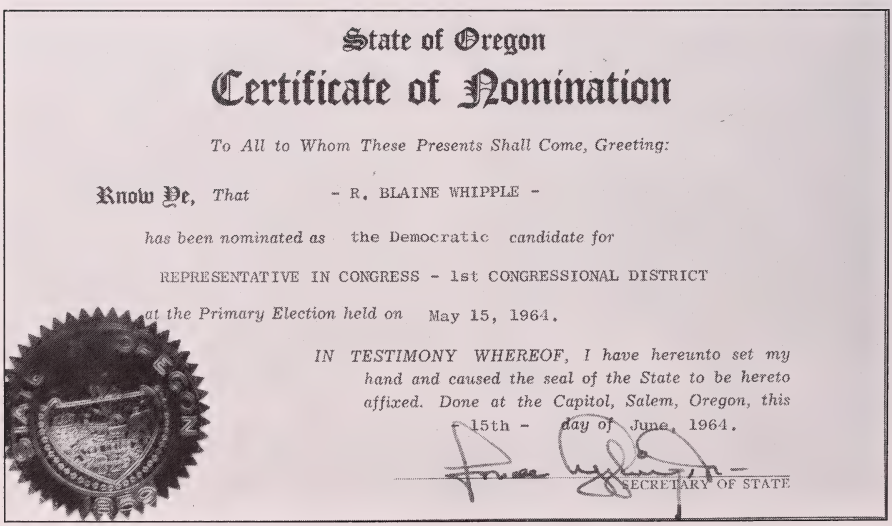
On March 9 in a speech to a regional meeting of the International Longshoremen's Union at Astoria he warned delegates that Senators from Alaska and Nevada were working to get the Tongue Point Indian School moved to their states and that many Oregon newspapers are supporting the move. He ask the delegates to communicate their support of the school to Senator Wayne Morse who was working to retain the school. He also quoted from a column by A. Robert Smith who covered Washington D.C. for many Oregon newspapers that Rep. Norblad has "forfeited any prospect of converting his seniority into a position of real power" in Congress.[145]

He spoke to a meeting of Salute to America, a Washington County

patriotic organization in Banks, Oregon Sunday March 22. The audience came from all sections of the state as well as Washington State. He told the audience that the blessings that come with American citizenship are not free and that Americanism is not a word. "It is a cause, a way of life, a challenge and a hope in a world of turmoil." He commended the Salute to America program for reminding us of our great historical heritage and said we should maintain and build on it.[146]

Blaine decried "the highly organized, lavishly financed propaganda campaign" by the American Medical Association against including medicare under Social Security. In a speech at Tillamook he said if the AMA propaganda succeeds, it would "destroy the economic independence in old age that the American people have achieved for themselves through the Social Security system." He pointed out that the average cost for a day in the hospital has increased from $9.50 in 1946 to more than $35 today – almost a 375 percent increase. He said this daily cost represents almost half of what the average older person receives for Social Security for the entire month. "The AMA's only solution for older people who can't pay $35 a day for hospital care is to go on on relief," he said.[147]

Blaine was endorsed by the AFL-CIO committee on public education[148] and the Executive Board of the International Woodworkers Association, Western States Regional Council No. 8.[149] He urged passage of a Youth Conservation Corps in a speech to the Mens Club of the Immaculate Conception Church in Stayton noting the unemployment rate for youths under 21 not in school was greater than 16 percent and predicted delinquency rates will skyrocket if the jobs program isn't passed.[150] He expressed opposition to a multi-lateral nuclear force within the North Atlantic Treaty Organization in a speech sponsored by Portland Women



State of Oregon

Certificate of Nomination

To All to Whom These Presents Shall Come, Greeting:

Know Ye, *That* - R. BLAINE WHIPPLE -

has been nominated as the Democratic *candidate for*

REPRESENTATIVE IN CONGRESS - 1st CONGRESSIONAL DISTRICT

at the Primary Election held on May 15, 1964.

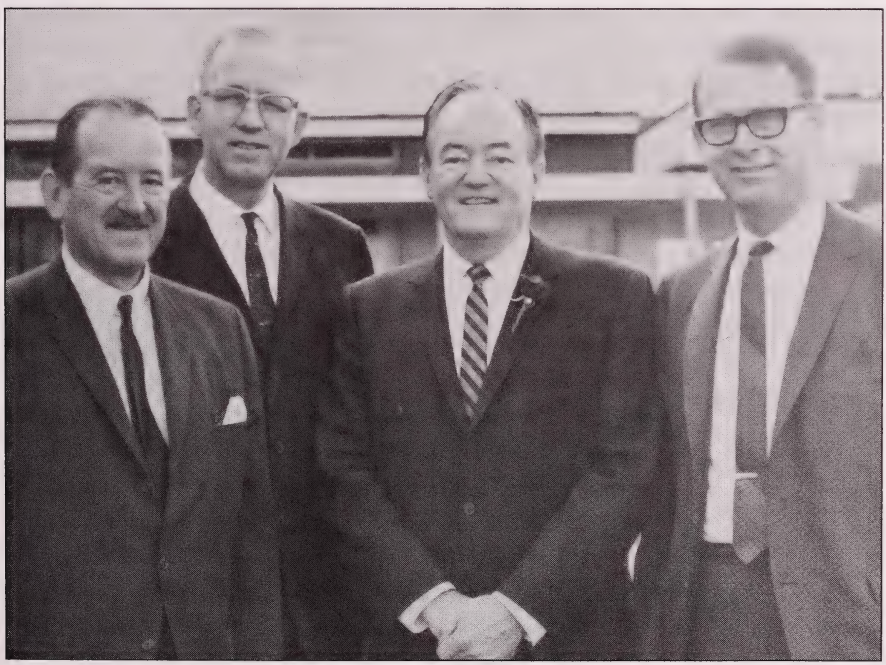
IN TESTIMONY WHEREOF, I have hereunto set my hand and caused the seal of the State to be hereto affixed. Done at the Capitol, Salem, Oregon, this 15th - *day of* June, 1964.

SECRETARY OF STATE

for Peace at Portland State College. He said a major specter facing the world is the spread of nuclear weapons to nations without them. He said the Johnson administration and Congress should refuse to give nuclear weapons to allies and should encourage Great Britain to join in inviting the Soviet Union to do the same.[151]

Following the May primary Blaine, in an air mail, registered return-receipt letter to Norblad's Washington office, challenged the incumbent to debate in all 10 counties during the fall campaign.[152] He issued the challenge early to deny Norblad his 1962 excuse that his campaign schedule is full. Norblad signed the return-receipt May 20 but did not accept the challenge.[153] In a lengthy letter to the editor of the Hillsboro *Argus* who editorially criticized the medicare proposal sponsored by Democrats, Blaine argued that the *Argus*' readers should be given the opportunity to read the other side. The editor agreed and published his letter.[154]

On Sunday July 6, he was elected an alternate delegate to the 1964 Democratic National Convention to be held in Atlantic City.[155] On Sunday July 27 he spoke to a crowd of 200 at the annual meeting of the Sandy Pioneer's Association. He recounted the history of the Barlow Road, Sandy's early history, and compared the suffering and will to live and be free of the early pioneers with present day minority groups in their quest



L to R: Former Oregon Governor Robert D. Holmes, Oregon State Treasurer Robert W. Straub, U. S. Senator Hubert H. Humphrey and Blaine Whipple in Portland in April 1964. Senator Humphrey was in Oregon campaigning for Blaine and Bob Staub. Photo, courtesy of Blaine Whipple.

for freedom.[156] He spent three days in Washington, D. C. in early August attending a candidate's conference sponsored by the Democratic National Committee. Discussions with cabinet members and agency chiefs focused on accomplishments of the Administration while workshops by the National Committee schooled the candidates on press relations, advertising, and organization of precinct workers. He met privately with President Lyndon B. Johnson the morning of August 7 in his White House executive office and told him about the need for Scoggins Valley dam in Washington county and proposed Astoria's deactivated Tongue Point Naval facility as a training center for the Jobs Corps program. He met Speaker of the House John W. McCormack and Senate Majority Leader Michael J. Mansfield and conferred with the Oregon congressional delegation on problems of mutual interest. He said the meetings "offered unrivaled opportunities to discuss the economic needs of the First District with the top leadership of the country."[157]

Blaine was in the U. S. Senate Gallery the afternoon of August 7 for the historic debate on the Gulf of Tonkin Resolution which authorized the President to engage in aggressive military action without a declaration of war by Congress. The resolution had unanimously passed the House of Representatives and Wayne Morse and Ernest Gruening of Alaska were the only dissenting Senators. The President, in a TV report the night of August 4, informed the country that "the North Vietnamese regime had conducted further deliberate attacks against U.S. naval vessels operating in international waters" and that he had responded by directing air action against gun boats and supporting facilities of North Vietnam. He asked Congress to support his action by passing Joint Resoultion of Congress JH.J. Res. 1145.[158]

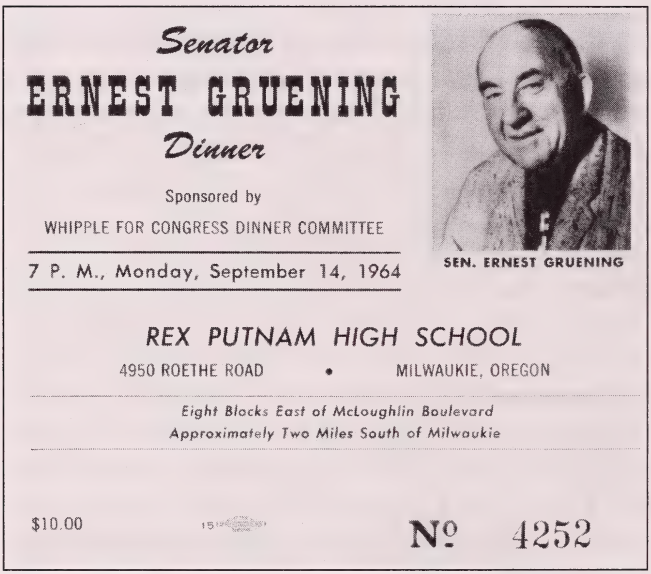
Senator Wayne Morse and Blaine Whipple in Washington D.C., August 7, 1964 following Morse's historic vote against the Gulf of Tonkin Resolution. Photo, courtesy of Senator Wayne L. Morse.

In casting his vote

Morse said "... I believe history will record that we have made a great mistake in subverting and circumventing the Constitution of the United States . . . I believe that this resolution to be a historic mistake. I believe that withn the next century, future generations will look with dismay and great disappointment upon a Congress which is about to make such an historic mistake."[159] Following the vote, Blaine walked with Morse to his Senate office which was a beehive of activity with print, radio, and TV reporters seeking interviews and reporters from across the nation calling for interviews. They left the office about 6:30 to pick up Midge, the Senator's wife, to take her to dinner. When they reached the Senate garage, they were were met by two farm ladies from Illinois who had been waiting for three hourse in 90 degree heat and humidity to thank Morse for his vote and to express the wish that their Senator Everett Dirksen would have had the courage to cast a similar vote. When they arrived at the restaurant it was almost impossible for Morse to eat. He was recognized by many of the diners who formed a line to thank him and shake his hand. Listening to the Senate debate and witnessing the response by ordinary citizens strengthened Blaine's opposition to the war.[160]

In September Democratic National Chairman John Bailey appointed Blaine to the committee to run President Johnson's Oregon campaign. Senators Wayne Morse and Maurine Neuberger were committee co-chairmen.[161] Alaska's Senator Ernest Gruening and former Territorial Governor was featured speaker for Blaine at a $25-a-plate fund raising dinner in Milwaukie September 13.[162] He told the 300 attendees to send Blaine to Congress to replace "A man who has lost interest in the job and has not been effective." He said the Democratic Party has been and is the party of imagination, action, vision, and hope and predicted a big win for its candidates in November. President Johnson sent a message calling Blaine "my kind of man" and called for his election. Other messages of support from Senator Hubert Humphrey, Vice Presidential nominee, Senators Wayne Morse and Maurine Neuberger, and Edith Green, Al Ullman, and Robert Duncan, all members of the Oregon congressional delegation were read. Blaine was introduced by former Governor Robert Holmes who joined Gruening in calling for Blaine's election. Blaine called the Republican presidential nominee Senator Barry Goldwater and Norblad the "gold dust twins." He said a majority of senators and representatives voted for the tax cut, expanded medical education aid, the housing act of 1961, the accelerated public works and area redevelopment act and the minimum wage act but Goldwater and Norblad voted against all of them. "They simply are not in the mainstream, even of their own Party," he said.[163]

Representative Norblad died of a heart attack September 20 at Bethesda Naval Hospital in Washington, D. C. He celebrated his 56th birthday eight days earlier. He suffered from a heart ailment in June but was thought to be on the road to recovery. He spent five weeks in the hospital and was released in early August. He was survived by his wife Elizabeth, son Albin, a senior at Willamette University in Salem, his mother of Astoria, and sister Mrs. Eleanor Sorrels of Portland.[164] Blaine attended Norblad's funeral in Astoria September 23 which followed a Memorial Service in Alexandria, Virginia September 22.



Ticket to Whipple for Congress Committee fund raising dinner featuring Senator Ernest Gruening of Alaska.
Photo, courtesy of Blaine Whipple.

Both parties held nominating conventions to select a candidate to fill Norblad's term ending January 20, 1965 and the Republicans also nominated a candidate for the general election. The Republicans met in Salem Saturday September 26 and after hearing from 14 hopefuls nominated Astoria attorney Wendell Wyatt, 47, on the fifth ballot. A partner in the law firm founded by Norblad's father, Wyatt had managed the last four Norblad campaigns, served as Republican State Party Chairman (1955-1957), was Chairman of Nixon's Oregon 1960 presidential campaign, and served on the platform committee at the 1960 Republican National Convention. Wyatt stressed his political experience and his ability to conduct a campaign in the short time before the election. He said he had an advertising agency and public relations man hired, $15,000 in campaign pledges, and would conduct a full time hard hitting campaign. In his acceptance speech he voiced support for the Goldwater-Miller presidential ticket "enthusiastically and with no equivocation."

Vern Stephens, a member of Goldwater's Washington staff, was hired to run his campaign.[165] Democrats unanimously nominated Blaine to seek the remainder of Norblad's term in a convention in McMinnville the 27th.

In welcoming Wyatt to the race, Blaine said he hoped it would be an issues-oriented campaign, noting that as Republican Party State Chairman in the 1956 campaign, Wyatt was the author of a discredited smear book used unsuccessfully against Senator Wayne Morse. Marguerite Wright, President of the Marion County Democratic Club, cited Wyatt's "shameful political conduct" in the 1956 election.[166]

Norman A. Stoll, Oregon Democratic National Committeeman, urged Wyatt to disclose the sources of his $15,000 campaign fund. "Because ultra right-wing money is pouring into Oregon like water this election and because you enthusiastically and without equivocation endorsed the candidacy of Sen. Goldwater, First District voters demand you disclose the source of your funds." Wyatt said the funds were pledged by friends and neighbors in Clatsop and other counties in the District and that Whipple's contributors in the 1962 race included Unions in New York, Pennsylvania, Illinois, and the International Communication Workers.[167] Purnell Sisk, President of the Washington Country Central Labor Council in a letter to the Hillsboro *Argus* described Wyatt as "the Goldwater Congressional candidate" and asked if Wyatt didn't know that thousands of Oregon workers are members of International Unions, contribute funds for political action, and that these funds are distributed to candidates endorsed by the Locals. He said Blaine's support by Union members throughout the District is broad and earned because of his knowledge of the District.[168]

In a speech to the Beaverton Chamber of Commerce the day after his short term nomination, Blaine said he would give priority attention to the Tualatin Dam project when elected. He noted it was the largest Willamette Basin irrigation project in a decade and was needed to expand the valley's economy. "The cost-benefit ratio of the project is 1 to 2.3," he said "which means that for every dollar of original cost, it will return 2.3 dollars over the life of the project." He said the project's multiple use benefits included irrigation water for approximately 17,000 acres of farm land, development of much needed municipal and industrial water supplies, river regulation, water quality control, flood control, recreational facilities, and development of fish and wild life resources. He said he would "work to the utmost to see it become a reality."[169]

Wyatt began his election drive with a speech to the Washington County Republican Central Committee September 29, linking himself to Norblad personally, politically, and philosophically. "I will continue the

Blaine Whipple conferring with President Lyndon B. Johnson in the President's Executive Office August 7, 1964. Photo, courtesy of The White House.

goals of Walter Norblad; I am familiar with the projects he worked on; I advocate them and promise to pursue them." He pledged to work for the Scoggins Dam, conservation and recreation projects in Polk and Yamhill counties, harbor developments in Lincoln and Tillamook counties, a 40-foot channel in the Columbia river, and methods to combat stream pollution. He pledged to campaign in all 10 counties with special emphasis in Washington, Clackamas, and Marion counties.[170] In his first press conference held in Beaverton October 1, Wyatt pledged support to the Goldwater ticket but said he disagreed with Goldwater's planned deficits, opposed Goldwater's proposal for a large manned bomber force, his proposal to turn over control of the "trigger" in nuclear weapons to military field commanders, and his proposed annual income tax cut of five percent for five years. He said he supports the lumber industry, reclamation projects, and tariffs for strawberry growers. He called Tongue Point a political football and said medicare is a difficult issue.[171]

In a Beaverton press conference October 12, Blaine outlined his platform. He said chronic unemployment exists in four of the District's 10 counties and that he would seek assignment to the Public Works Committee if elected to work for the development of work-creating, multipurpose projects. He supported trading nonstrategic materials with China; said the U. S. should not withdraw from the United Nations if China is

PUBLISHED SEMIWEEKLY

Hillsboro Argus

OFFICIAL NEWSPAPER OF WASHINGTON COUNTY

Hillsboro Argus, 1894, Independent, 1873, Consolidated
An Independent Newspaper—Published Mondays and Thursdays by Hillsboro Argus, Inc.
150 S. Third Ave., Hillsboro, Oregon — MI 8-1131
Second-Class Postage Paid at Hillsboro, Oregon

Monday, August 3, 1964 Volume 71, No. 37

Whipple Called By President

Blaine Whipple, Beaverton businessman and Democratic nominee for Congress, has been invited to a White House conference with President Johnson to discuss goals of the president's recently announced Great Society program.

Whipple will meet with the president Friday afternoon.

While in the nation's capital, Whipple also will meet with members of the president's cabinet and members of both houses of Congress to discuss achievements of the Democratic administration and preview tomorrow's goals.

Appointments have been made for Whipple to meet with Secretary of State Dean Rusk, Secretary of Defense Robert S. McNamara, NASA Administrator James E. Webb, Walter Heller of the president's Council of Economic Advisers, Secretary of Commerce Luther H. Hodges, Secretary of Labor W. Willard Wirtz;

Attorney General Robert F. Kennedy, Secretary of Health, Education and Welfare Anthony J. Celebrezze, Peace Corps Director Sargent Shriver, Secretary of Interior Stewart L. Udall, Secretary of Agriculture Orville L. Freeman and Housing and Home Finance Agency Administrator Robert C. Weaver.

Whipple also will confer with Speaker of the House John W. McCormack and Senate majority leader Michael J. Mansfield.

admitted and must maintain our solemn commitment to it and work to strengthen it. On world peace he said a lasting and honorable peace requires the U. S. to control the use of nuclear weapons; launch an all-out effort through fully enforceable measures to halt and reverse the arms race and end this era of nuclear terror. On economic development and employment he said he would provide energetic prodding in the Congress for reclamation projects; on education and youth opportunities he pledged to work for programs to retain victims of automation, for vocational training for high school drop outs, and to make college or university training affordable for all qualified students. On agriculture he said he would work for maximum safeguards for Oregon farmers in tariff negotiations, for non discriminatory freight rates, for recruitment of adequate farm laborers to replace foreign labor (braceros) from Mexico. On human and natural resources he said the challenges of water and air pollution must be met with technological research, law enforcement, and financial aid; we must attract industries which will preserve and improve our communities as healthful, safe, and comfortable places to live and work. He said he supported President Johnson's War on Poverty, would work to build a more secure life for senior citizens, and do all in his power to see that no individual is deprived of his civil rights. Replying to Wyatt's charge that he is "a Johnny come-lately to the District" does not disqualify him for office and like many Oregonians, he chose to live in Oregon.[172]

Blaine Whipple speaking at July 4, 1964 picnic in a Corvallis city park. Photo, courtesy of Blaine Whipple.

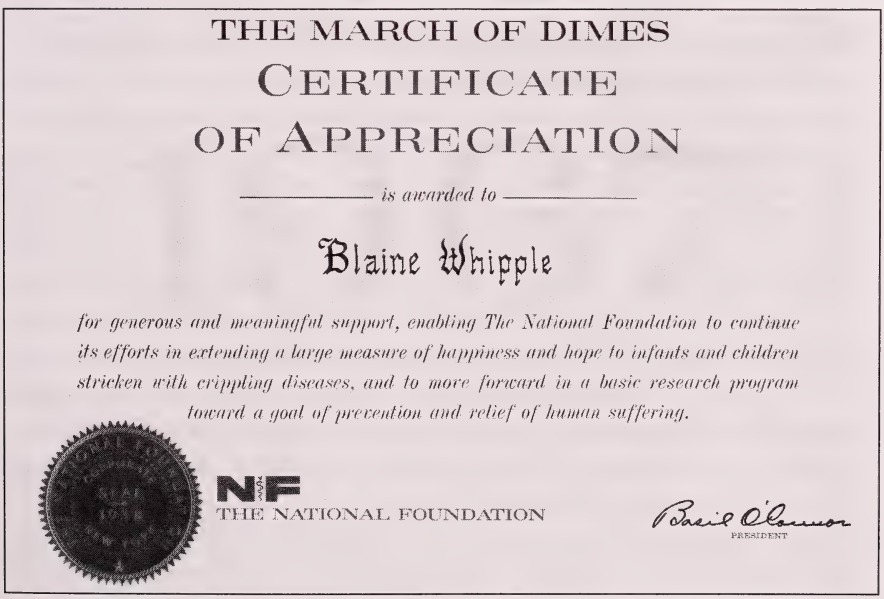
Franklin D. Roosevelt, Jr., Undersecretary of Commerce and son of President Franklin D. Roosevelt, was featured speaker at a fund raising luncheon for Blaine in Salem October 15. In urging his election he called Blaine "an outstanding candidate."[173] Senator Wayne Morse endorsed Blaine in a speech to 200 in Beaverton October 16 saying "I'm here campaigning for Blaine Whipple. We need him on our team in Washington to provide economic benefits for the state of Oregon."[174] Wyatt promised the Yamhill County Republican committee that if elected he would "Work vigorously for jobs, industry, projects, and the people."[175] On October 20 he told Republican precinct workers in Hillsboro that he favored a balanced budget and would "strive to cut out waste, reduce expenditures, and oppose new spending programs but not attempt to roll anything back." He stressed he was a native Oregonian while Blaine is a newcomer.[176]

Floyd McKay, a reporter for the Salem *Statesman*, spent all day October 22 traveling with Blaine as he campaigned in Marion and Polk counties visiting Dallas, Salem, Monmouth, Rickreall, Willamina, and Sheridan. He spoke at Western Oregon College, high schools, coffees, blitzed

downtown business districts, met workers at lumber mills, a manufacturing plant, U. S. Plywood Co., and met with newspaper editors.[177]

Blaine and Wyatt shared the platform at the Washington County Public Affairs Forum in Beaverton October 26 before a record attendance. Wyatt said he was better qualified because he has lived in the District longer, that Blaine speaks in general terms, and he will spend full time working on specific problems facing the District. When asked where he would cut the budget and expenditures he replied that details will be worked out as he goes and he has the "will and desire" to resist massive spending programs. Blaine emphasized the value of the Tualatin Reclamation Project to the District and pledged to bring it to fruition working closely with Senators Wayne Morse and Maurine Neuberger.

The candidates differed on federal aid to education with Wyatt supporting appropriations to fund buildings but not to pay salaries. Blaine drew the only spontaneous applause of the meeting when he endorsed general aid saying the education of our youth is among the most important things the nation should support. On foreign aid Blaine said he opposed military aid and supported technical and economic aid. Wyatt said he would give aid to countries "which absolutely needed it." Blaine said he would work for passage of multi purpose projects such as the Red Prairie project in Polk and Yamhill counties, the Molalla River project in Clackamas County, jetty and stream clearance projects in Tillamook County, port development in Lincoln County, and the Columbia River Channel project that will return dividends many times their cost. Wyatt concluded saying your congressman needs to know about your lawn


THE MARCH OF DIMES

CERTIFICATE OF APPRECIATION

is awarded to

Blaine Whipple

for generous and meaningful support, enabling The National Foundation to continue its efforts in extending a large measure of happiness and hope to infants and children stricken with crippling diseases, and to move forward in a basic research program toward a goal of prevention and relief of human suffering.

NF THE NATIONAL FOUNDATION

PRESIDENT

watering problem, your recreational losses, your communication and transportation problems to be able to represent the District.[178]

Secretary of the Interior Stuart Udall campaigned in Portland October 26 and outlined President Johnson's natural resources program. "We are in the final phase of development with three large dams underway to complete river control of the Columbia" and called for the election of Blaine to help the President initiate his program.[179] Wyatt was endorsed by James Schill, District Manager of the United States Chamber of Commerce in a luncheon speech to the McMinnville Chamber of Commerce.[180]

Blaine and Wyatt responded to the League of Womens Voters request to state their position on the need for further congressional action on civil rights and what national or international problem interests you most. On civil rights Blaine responded that since sections of the country are not as enlightened as Oregon it is necessary to legislate the equal opportunities called for in the civil rights legislation and Oregon citizens must voluntarily endorse civil rights for the legislation to be meaningful. Wyatt's response was "no, that proper enforcement of existing law and a better understanding of our fellow man are the answers to civil rights problems." On question two Blaine said a more vigorous and creative search by the U. S. into the economic and political means for the prevention of war is needed. Wyatt said his interest is regional but preservation of free enterprise and control of creeping socialism would be of most interest nationally.[181]

WINS STRAW BALLOT; LOSES ELECTION

First District high school students voting in a straw ballot sponsored by the Salem *Capital Journal* favored Blaine by 3,970 to 3,213 for Wyatt.[182] Blaine spoke to students at Oregon State University in Corvallis October 29 and in responding to a question on the Vietnam crisis said "to try and settle it with additional warfare would result in fantastic losses on both sides." He said the United Nations should be involved and resolve the crisis at the conference table. He also called for more assistance from the SEATO nations.[183] He was on the platform with Vice President Hubert Humphrey who campaigned in Portland October 30. Some 2,600 listeners gave Humphrey a roaring welcome and heard him say that the choice on November 3 is "between the politics of responsibility and the politics of radicalism." He delivered strong endorsements for Blaine, Alf Corbett, candidate for Secretary of State, Bob Straub for State Treasurer, and Robert Y. Thornton for Attorney General.[184]

The final week of the campaign Wyatt flooded the airwaves with radio and television commercials, the newspapers with print advertising, and

the post office with direct mail. Lack of funds made it impossible for Blaine to respond. He was outspent by more than two to one – Wyatt spent $47,642,[185] the most expensive campaign ever for an Oregon House seat;[186] Blaine spent $22,140, $25,502 less.[187] Among the Wyatt contributors was the Oregon Medical Political Action Committee which gave him $4,500.[188]

The Wyatt newspaper endorsements began October 15 when the *Oregon Journal* chose him because he thinks much like the man he wishes to succeed, whom the *Journal* always supported. They wrote that Whipple's roots, are not deep in Oregon. He came to the state from Minnesota in 1957 and has never held public office.[189] There was no mention that Wyatt had never held public office. The Salem *Capital Journal* expected a close race. Both candidates are young enough to look forward hopefully to an extended career in Congress. Both are physically vigorous. Both are intelligent, reasonably well informed about national issues, and effective spokesmen for their points of view. We don't agree completely with the views of either candidate. Wyatt is more conservative than we would prefer. But we more frequently agree with him on the major domestic issues. We also consider him better qualified in terms of personal background. Whipple is intelligent and articulate, but he hasn't done much in private life which would suggest congressional stature.[190] The Salem *Statesman's* endorsement was based on liking Wyatt's political orientation; his feet are planted firmly in the soil of Oregon; his activity in professional, civic, and political affairs over his mature life. Blaine Whipple is of the New Deal stamp. We do not belittle him or discredit him. We just don't want him as First District representative.[191]

The Salem *Capital Press* called Blaine "exceptionally well qualified" credited him with a superior mind, backed by high motives, which have evolved a progressive philosophy of government emphasizing service to people rather than institutions. He has the tools for effective work in Congress – practical experience in and a "feel" for the art of politics. He offers the First District the prospect of growth. As his superior qualities are recognized by fellow congressmen and administrations over the years, and as his seniority piles up, Whipple can attain a leading position in American government.[192]

The money and the endorsements carried the day for Wyatt, 122,010 to 107,920.[193]

After becoming Vice President, whenever Humphrey visited Portland he stayed in the Presidential Suite at the Benson Hotel and included Blaine on his "to see" schedule. One visit in particular stands out. His knock on the door was answered by a member of the secret service, who after Blaine identified himself, notified the Vice President. This was fol-

lowed by Humphrey's booming voice, "Blaine, come in here and visit with me." In here was the bathroom where he was soaking in the tub. So Blaine put the toilet seat down, sat on the stool, and they talked.

Blaine continued his work with the Washington County March of Dimes serving as Chairman for the 1965 and 1966 drives, was active in state and county Democratic Party activities, the Metropolitan Area Perspective, World Affairs Council of Oregon, Great Decisions, Washington County and State Board of Realtors, Winona Grange, and Laurel Scholls Farmers Union. He served as Chairman of the 1965 annual Birthday fund raising Dinner for Senator Morse, held office in the Washington County Public Affairs Forum, spoke to student groups, service clubs, and led an effort to organize a committee of Washington, Clackamas, and Multnomah County Democratic precinct committee members to "End the Vietnam War." Wm. "Bill" Snyder Realtors, the Beaverton firm he worked for, reached its first million-dollar month in April 1965 when it sold 62 homes. It is one of the largest realty firms in Washington County with 30 full-time sales people working out of offices in Beaverton, Raleigh Hills, Tigard, and Hillsboro.[194]

Senator Maurine Neuberger chose not to seek reelection in 1966 and Congressman Robert Duncan of Medford and Portland businessman Howard Morgan competed for the Democratic nomination. Blaine became manager of the Morgan campaign and opened state-wide headquarters in the downtown Portland.[195] Morgan was a former Chairman of the Democratic Party of Oregon, had served a term in the Oregon House of Representatives, a term as, Oregon Public Utilities Commissioner, and as a Member of the Federal Power Commission appointed by President John F. Kennedy.

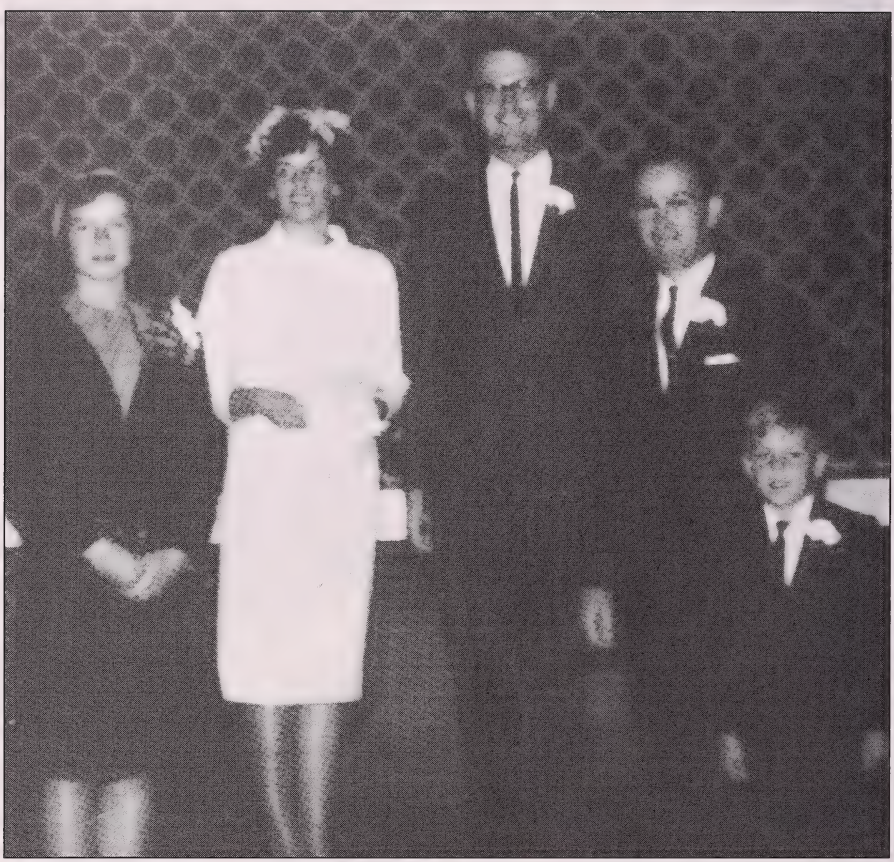
Duncan and Morgan represented opposite views on the Viet Nam war. Duncan supported President Johnson's position and Morgan opposed the war from the beginning. Morgan's sole campaign issue was opposition to the war. Just prior to the election Morgan and Duncan participated in a television debate in Medford following which the President labeled Morgan "a nervous Nellie."

Senator Morse, the first to raise the Viet Nam War issue in the Senate, was the country's major critic against the Johnson's Administration war policy, and Blaine scheduled him to campaign for Morgan in Washington County all day April 15. The day ended at an old fashioned political rally in North Plains where a large crowd turned out to hear both Morgan and Morse.

Blaine also booked Robert Vaughn, star of TV's popular "The Man From U.N.C.L.E. series to campaign for Morgan.[196] Vaughn and Whipple were classmates at the University of Minnesota and Vaughn opposed

Robert Vaughn and Blaine Whipple. Vaughn paid all his expenses to campaign Morgan. Photo, courtesy of Blaine Whipple.

the Vietnam war. In a letter to the editor of the Beaverton *Valley Times*, Blaine wrote that "thinking Americans are looking for honorable alternatives to bring us safely out of the war with world respect while Bob Duncan seeks our seat in the U. S. Senate as another blind follower of the President's advisers." He said no man should hold the people's senate seat who has already surrendered his independence of judgment to another authority. He wrote that the seat does not belong to the White House yet Duncan has put it on the public record that he is a spokesman for the White House and even described himself as "the President's counsel for the defense." Duncan has given up his freedom to follow facts when casting the people's votes. He has forgotten the senate's obligation under the advise and consent clause of the Constitution, that it is the senate's obligation to exercise a check on the Executive power in behalf of the people. He said Democratic voters cannot forget these basic premises and should nominate Howard Morgan as their thinking candidate for United States



Ines (Peterson) and Blaine Whipple wedding August 6, 1966. L. to R. Judith (her mother's attendant) and Ines Steele, Blaine Whipple, Robert Cottrell, best man, and Bob Steele.

Mr. and Mrs. Wayne A. Peterson
request the pleasure of your company
at a marriage reception honoring their sister
Mrs. Ines Steele
and
Mr. Blaine Whipple
on Saturday, August twenty-seventh
from two until five o'clock
6120 Southwest Forty-first Avenue
Portland, Oregon

R.S.V.P.

1966

Wedding Reception at Hill Villa. L. to R. Ruth Walter, Ines' aunt, Norm Peterson, Ines' brother, Jackie Peterson, Ines' sister-in-law, Lena Steele, Ines' first mother-in-law, and Judith and Bob Steele.

senator.[197]

Duncan won the nomination. Governor Mark Hatfield won the Republican senate nomination, Hatfield also opposed the Viet Nam war and won the general election. Democrats nominated State Treasurer Robert W. Straub for governor; Republicans nominated Secretary of State Tom McCall. Straub named Blaine Chairman of his Washington County committee for the general election.

Blaine transferred from the residential division of Wm. "Bill" Snyder Realtors to the commercial, industrial, and business opportunities division June 1, 1966, joining Snyder and Nick Long in broadening the firm's service to commercial clients.

On August 6, he married Ines M. (Peterson) Steele at the Cedar Hills Community Church in a ceremony presided over by Rev. Walter McGettigan. In its report of the wedding, the *Valley Times* noted that another wedding of a well-known Democrat occurred on the same day: "While

the eyes of the nation were focused Saturday on Luci Baines Johnson as she became Mrs. Patrick John Nugent in the enormous National Shrine of the Immaculate Conception in Washington, D. C., it was not the only wedding in which there was Democratic Party interest. While the morning ceremony in the national capital was being heralded on the front page, friends of a local Democrat attended the marriage of Robert Blaine Whipple and Mrs. Ines Peterson Steele at 4 p.m. Robert Cottrell of Cedar Mill, former Chairman of the Washington County Democratic Central Committee, was best man. Ines' daughter Judith was her attendant and her son Bobbie stood with the minister. A family dinner followed at Hill Villa restaurant. The bride and groom met through their common interest and participation in the March of Dimes campaigns. They will make their home at 8455 S.W. Brookridge, Portland, 97225 after a honeymoon at Lake Louise in Alberta, Canada.[198]

In early 1967 Blaine became a discussion leader for Great Decisions, an annual nationwide program of citizens who meet informally in small groups to discuss foreign policy topics of major importance to the United States.[199] He chaired the County 1967 March of Dimes campaign for the fourth and last year. It raised $16,500. Ines was appointed National Foundation Adviser.[200]

In April he was one of three candidates for a county at large seat on the Intermediate Education District Board of Directors. Two were elected with Blaine winning the most votes.[201] He represented the Board in a state-wide school board and school administrator seminar in Salem May 15. The all-day workshop discussed ramifications of both state and federal educational policies.[202] In an April 26 Letter to the Editor of *The Portland Oregonian*, he took issue with the newspaper editorial of April 20 that peace demonstrations give aid and comfort to the North Vietnamese and should not take place. Blaine argued that demonstrations are an important duty we all owe America.[203] As Civic Affairs Chairman of the Beaverton area Chamber of Commerce, he coordinated a community work program April 22 involving Boy Scouts from Troop 592. Their work included painting fire hydrants, trash pickup around railroad racks, and maintenance work for the Tualatin Hills Park and recreation District.[204]

Blaine was appointed to a 2-year term on the Oregon Small Business Advisory Council in May by Bernard L. Boutin, SBA Administrator in Washington, D. C. Members are appointed in recognition of their knowledge of and interest in small business. Board members conveyed suggestions and criticisms to the SBA area administrators and regional directors who in term maintain contact with national and State Advisory Council members.[205] In July he reported on the various projects carried out by Beaverton area Chamber of Commerce Civic Affairs Committee of

which he was Chairman.[206]

In 1967, opposition to the war in Vietnam was spreading throughout the Democratic Party. Frustrated by their inability to curtail the war even though they controlled the federal government, dissident Democrats began looking for someone to challenge President Johnson. Allard K. Lowenstein, a young New York attorney, began organizing "Democrats in Dissent." The Dump-Johnson movement, amateur though it was, began to acquire a certain national cohesion. The appeal was simple and direct. *We must end the war in Vietnam. Johnson can't do it. We have to find a candidate who can.* Lowenstein contacted Blaine in October and asked him to join. In early December, Lowenstein, joined by Gerry Hill, organized a meeting in Chicago attended by about 500 Democrats from 42 states. Blaine was invited but was unable to attend. Howard Morgan attended.[207]

Most dissenters wanted to support Robert F. Kennedy whose credentials were wealth, fame, and a surname that denoted victory. But Kennedy was unwilling to take a stand. The only high ranking Democrat willing to make the challenge was Senator Eugene McCarthy, senior Senator from Minnesota, who announced on November 30, he would challenge the President.[208]

LEADS MCCARTHY FOR PRESIDENT COMMITTEE

His first political activity of 1968 was to campaign with McCarthy in the Willamette Valley January 30. It launched the "Dump Johnson" campaign in Oregon, the first West Coast installment of the Democratic Party fight. It began with a morning press conference at a downtown Portland hotel where McCarthy said the Viet Cong attacks on the cities of South Vietnam show that the U. S. doesn't have the country under any kind of control. He said he wanted to change the course of an America that he saw on the edge of despair. He said the dropping of napalm on primitive peoples was not in the tradition of the nation or the Democratic Party. He spoke scornfully of the "Johnson personal Presidency," warning that it stifles dissent and erodes America's institutions. He told the press that the President violated the tradition of keeping the military out of politics by bringing Gen. William C. Westmoreland, the American commander in Vietnam, before a joint meeting of the House and Senate. He announced that the statewide Oregonians for McCarthy Committee would be headed by Blaine and Joe Allman, Assistant Professor of Political Science at the U. of Oregon, with Howard Morgan Finance Chairman.

The full day of campaigning started with a speech at Portland State College where he told his audience that the U. S. can't build a nation in Viet-

nam and that there was no substance to the Administrations "domino theory." He said he agreed with former Secretary of State Dean Acheson that there should be no military adventurism by the West in Southeast Asia.

He spoke at noon in Beaverton to the Washington County Public Affairs Forum where, following his speech, several listeners told him they were going to change their party registration "just to vote for you." A woman at the Portland State meeting gave Blaine a $100 check, a man in Beaverton a $200 check, and another man $100 in cash for the campaign.

They flew to Eugene where he held a press conference and spoke at the University's Erb Memorial Ballroom and talked about the draft and Vietnam. It was apparent he was not striving for applause lines and their applause and cheers indicated they liked what he said. He got his biggest applause, mixed with laughter, when he said, "I don't really see Richard Nixon lifting the spirit of America." He said he favored a coalition government in South Vietnam and that America would not lose prestige if it withdrew its military forces. Rather, he said, it would rise. Europe, South America, Africa, and most of Asia would rejoice. Regarding the draft, he said there should be more opportunities for conscientious objection. He said that "the nation's future is principally at stake in Vietnam and that the young people have a greater claim against that future and their judg-

Senators Wayne Morse , Eugene McCarthy , and Blaine Whipple in Portland in April 1968. Photo, courtesy of Blaine Whipple.

ment should bear more strongly on policies." A fund raising dinner at the Eugene Hotel concluded the long day of campaigning.[209] Traveling with McCarthy was Seymour Hersh, his press secretary. During the course of the campaign Blaine became well acquainted with Hersh.[210]

McCarthy received 42 percent of the vote in the March 12 New Hampshire primary, the nation's first, against Johnson. He trailed the President by 320 votes and won 20 of the 24 delegates.[211] Blaine's telephone rang all morning March 13 from people seeking to volunteer. He told the press he expected McCarthy to conduct an intensive campaign in Oregon in early May and predicted a win. He said the Committee was building an organization to rival any in the state's history and that he had called McCarthy pledging to "double and redouble efforts."[212]

McCarthy's New Hampshire vote demonstrated a growing discontent with the President's policies and suggested he could be defeated. Four days later Robert F. Kennedy announced his candidacy and Blaine called him "another run of the mill politician who gave up the fight when the going got tough and that political expedience, not principle or conviction, guided him."

He said the Oregon McCarthy organization would not switch allegiance and that he had sent McCarthy a telegram pledging continued support. With the race narrowed, Blaine said McCarthy's "stability, experience, vision and competence far exceed those of Kennedy," his 19 years of congressional service with committee assignments on foreign relations and finances which encompass the pre-eminent issues of the campaign, and his lack of political enemies compared to the legions of Kennedy enemies would lead to his victory.[213] When New York Governor Nelson Rockefeller withdrew from the Republican presidential nomination race Blaine issued an invitation to his Oregon supporters to join the McCarthy effort. Noting McCarthy ran third among New Hampshire voters, he said the Minnesota Senator's appeal crosses party lines.[214]

Blaine was traveling throughout the state in April organizing local McCarthy organizations. He was in Salem April 4 organizing a Marion County group and advancing a McCarthy appearance at Mt. Angel College scheduled for April 8. He told 75 persons at the Salem meeting that 25 students from out of state were working out of the Portland campaign office, that more than 1,000 Oregon students have signed up to assist the campaign, and that at least 8,000 students from throughout the nation would be canvassing Oregon Democrats the final two weeks of the campaign. He said he had worked in Oregon campaigns for the previous decade and had never seen anything like the snowballing effect of volunteer support for the Minnesota Senator. He also noted that separate McCarthy committees had been formed by doctors, attorneys, teachers,

artists, and engineers and that the state organization was having success in getting anti Vietnam Republicans to change their registration to vote for McCarthy since both Republican candidates on the ballot - Richard M. Nixon and Ronald Reagan - were Vietnam hawks.[215]

He was in La Grande April 11 where approximately 100 people joined the Union County Oregonians for McCarthy organization. He told them that McCarthy's foreign policy declared that even though we are the strongest nation in the world there are limits on what we can do and the country should achieve its objectives working within its limits. He said McCarthy's domestic program included an expansion of educational opportunities and achievement of a parity in income for farmers. He later accompanied Senator McCarthy to La Grande where he spoke at the annual Chamber of Commerce banquet May 10.[216]

McCarthy won the April 2 Wisconsin primary with 57 percent of the vote (406,098) to 35 percent (245,518) for Johnson. Kennedy received 43,207 (6 percent) write-in votes. Blaine told the press that McCarthy's Wisconsin's vote confirms he has broad-based appeal in the East and the Midwest.[217] After he won the April Pennsylvania primary, Blaine told the press that the Pennsylvania vote "proves once again that talking sense to the country wins enthusiastic response from Americans from all walks of life and from all sections of the country.[218] Massachusetts Democrats gave McCarthy a solid majority in their May primary - his fourth primary victory - and Republican write-in voters gave him a fourth-place finish. Blaine told the press that the Massachusetts vote proves McCarthy is the one national leader who can unify the nation. He has presented himself in each primary in a way that wins a strong reaction from multitudes of voters tired and suspicious of the gimmicks and demagoguery of tired politicians. "The American voter believes that Senator McCarthy would be a distinguished president who would offer the country a leadership of strength, idealism, intelligence, and serenity," he said.[219]

Oregon elected its members of the Party's National Committee and its delegates to the national conventions by popular vote in the primary. Blaine ran for the office a National Committeeman and organized a McCarthy slate of 19 delegates to run for at-large positions (25 to be elected out of 46 running), two candidates each from the first, second, and third congressional districts, and one from the fourth district. A list of these candidates was included in the literature distributed door-to-door through the state by McCarthy canvassers.

Blaine took charge of scheduling McCarthy's Oregon visits and had great success with media coverage. He had the Senator canoeing the Willamette River near Eugene with a group of environmentalists which resulted in a full color page in *Look Magazine*. His Sunday May 26 visit to

the Portland Zoo surrounded by hundreds of people was featured in *Life Magazine.* Oregon newspapers gave the campaign excellent coverage.

Kennedy refused to debate. Had the debate occurred the McCarthy handlers believed the contrast in size and speaking style viewed by the television audience and the newspaper photos would benefit their candidate. They made certain the public was aware of Kennedy's refusal.

Kennedy, unintentionally, provided a great photo opportunity for McCarthy. Both campaigned in Oregon the Sunday before the Tuesday primary. Blaine scheduled McCarthy to speak to Beth Israel, a liberal Jewish congregation to be followed by a tour of Portland's famous Rose Gardens with Mayor and Mrs. Terry Schrunk and end the day by taking the train from the Rose Garden to the Zoo for a tour of that popular venue. On Friday the out-of-state scheduler for Kennedy called Blaine for ideas on appropriate Sunday campaigning in Oregon.

Blaine shared his McCarthy schedule which Kennedy copied. He began the day by speaking at Neveh Shalom, a conservative Jewish congregation,[220] followed by a visit to the Zoo, and then a tour of the Rose Garden. While in the Rose Garden with McCarthy and the Schrunks, Blaine noted a commotion near the train station. It was the Kennedy entourage with its large contingent of local and national press. After paying respects to the Schrunks for their courtesies, McCarthy and Blaine headed toward the Kennedy group and when Kennedy was made aware of the possible confrontation he ran to his campaign bus which drove away. State and national TV coverage featured Kennedy running away while McCarthy was striding toward him.

ARCHITECT OF FIRST KENNEDY FAMILY DEFEAT

The McCarthy organization had thousands of volunteers and conducted a state-wide canvass that reached most Democratic voters. When the votes were counted the night of May 28 McCarthy defeated Kennedy 45 percent to 39 percent and Blaine was elected Democratic National Committeeman. This was the first electoral defeat ever suffered by a member of the Kennedy clan, a record that covered 27 primary and general elections in 22 years beginning with John F. Kennedy's first congressional race in 1946. Credit for McCarthy's win was given to the state organization. Newsweek said "it sparked the traditional volunteer energy with a higher-octane professionalism than in previous primaries. This was in large measure the work of Oregon state chairman Blaine Whipple, 38 (and) Thomas Finney, 43, a partner in Defense Secretary Clark Clifford's former law firm."[221]

The California primary was the following Tuesday and Blaine was

asked by the national staff to go to San Francisco and campaign in northern California. His election as National Committeeman on the McCarthy ticket created political capital and there was demand for him as a speaker and to conduct press conferences. From there he flew with the national campaign to Albuquerque, New Mexico, McCarthy's next major campaign stop. En route word was received of a tornado destroying part of Tracy, Minnesota and the campaign revised its schedule to fly to Tracy the next morning, June 16. When McCarthy was informed of Blaine's connection with Tracy, he was assigned to tour the devastation with the Senator. The Tracy unit of the Minnesota National Guard was in charge of clean-up and as a former member, Blaine was able to introduce McCarthy to many of its members and to Vic Keul, editor-publisher of the *Tracy Headlight Herald.*[222]

Blaine was in Minneapolis June 17 where, in an interview by a reporter from the *Minneapolis Star*, he said there is no evidence that Vice President Hubert Humphrey "can - or will - dissociate himself from the negative aspects of Johnson's war policies" and that the lesson for Democrats across the nation is to stay off the Humphrey bandwagon. He said the "drag" that a Humphrey-led ticket on Democratic candidates would be serious and ensure the election of Richard M. Nixon.

The reporter wrote: This was the message brought to Minnesota Monday by Blaine Whipple, 38, Democratic National Committeeman from Oregon whose first taste of partisan politics came as a volunteer worker in Humphrey's Senate campaign 20 years ago. Whipple was a Tracy (Minn) High School senior then. I see no evidence in the minds of the American people that Humphrey is anything less than 125 percent for Lyndon Johnson. He's trying to have it both ways. Before it's over he's going to suggest he was against the Vietnam war but because he was a part of the administration he has to endorse the war.

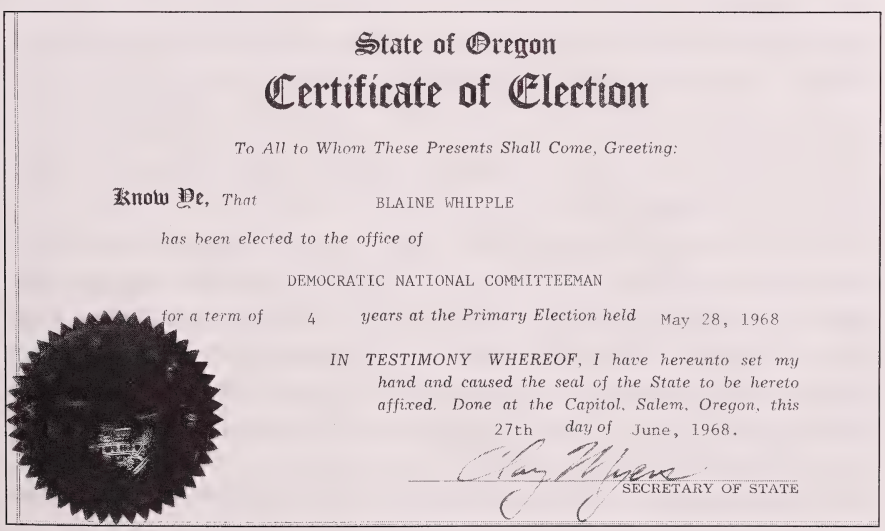
Whipple, the only pro McCarthy member of the Democratic National Committee, has been lobbying for McCarthy at state conventions and other party meetings in various states since McCarthy defeated the late Sen. Robert F. Kennedy in the May 28 Oregon primary. He organized Oregonians for McCarthy last October more than a month before the Minnesotan challenged President Johnson. A native of Martin, SD and a 1956 graduate of the University of Minnesota, he made a side trip to his old home town of Tracy where the tornado passed within a half-block of his childhood home. 'The town reminded me of the pictures you see of villages in Vietnam after we get through with them,' he said.[223]

Humphrey entered the race in late April, by-passed the primary states, and concentrated on the convention states which selected the majority of convention delegates. After Kennedy's death, the McCarthy campaign

focused entirely on the Vice President. McCarthy called him "a stand-in for Johnson."

The convention was held in Chicago August 26-29 with the Oregon delegation headquartered at the Knickerbocker Hotel. Blaine was elected to the convention's permanent organization committee, was a floor leader and spokesman for the national McCarthy organization, and featured in a number of television interviews and press conferences. As Humphrey solidified support among traditional Democrats in the non-primary states, support for McCarthy faded and Humphrey won the nomination at the Chicago convention the evening of August 28 on the first ballot.[224] He chose Senator Edmund Muskie of Maine as his running mate. The McCarthy Vietnam peace plank was rejected.

Chicago was the scene of disorders involving peace marchers, hippies, and police brutality on a scale never before witnessed in an American city. It seemed that all the hatreds, frustrations, racial disturbances and repressed brutality exploded there and affected the convention in a way not felt since the fires of a brewing Civil War stirred the 1860 Chicago convention that nominated Abraham Lincoln. This fearful violence was seen on the convention floor as hundreds of TV sets showed demonstrators being beaten and police being attacked by mobs. Chicago Mayor Richard J. Daley was charged with orchestrating a closed convention. There was evidence that prior to Humphrey's nomination, by packing the galleries with several hundred persons carrying Humphrey signs and given access to the convention floor without credentials. The on-off switch and volume control of each delegation's mike to the podium was controlled by a Daley lieutenant. When the Oregon delegation waved its banner to get the chair's attention, the mike was not turned on. When a



State of Oregon

Certificate of Election

To All to Whom These Presents Shall Come, Greeting:

Know Ye, *That* BLAINE WHIPPLE

has been elected to the office of

DEMOCRATIC NATIONAL COMMITTEEMAN

for a term of 4 *years at the Primary Election held* May 28, 1968

IN TESTIMONY WHEREOF, I have hereunto set my hand and caused the seal of the State to be hereto affixed. Done at the Capitol, Salem, Oregon, this 27th *day of* June, 1968.

SECRETARY OF STATE

Humphrey speaker was recognized, the volume was turned up. When a McCarthy speaker was recognized, it was turned down.

Blaine said John Bailey, Democratic National Chairman, had manipulated the convention to be a coronation, initially for Johnson then for Humphrey. He charged on national television that "Bailey and Daley" were to blame for a closed convention. The morning following Humphrey's nomination, McCarthy met with his key campaigners to thank them and to encourage them to support candidates such as Senator Wayne Morse who shared his ideas. He acknowledged three key supporters for special thanks, two of whom were from Oregon: Blaine and Howard Morgan.[225]

ENDORSED THE HUMPHREY-MUSKIE TICKET

When Blaine returned to Oregon, he endorsed Humphrey and discouraged efforts to place McCarthy on the November ballot under a new Party designation. McCarthy supporters in 25 states encouraged him to stay on the ballot. Jerry Eller, McCarthy's senate administrative assistant, said the Oregon decision would be made by Blaine and Senator Morse.[226] Blaine offered his services to Robert Duncan, a hawk on the Vietnam war, Chairman of the Oregon Humphrey Committee, and unsuccessful candidate against Morse in the May primary for the senatorial nomination. He told a Klamath Falls audience that demonstrators and police shared equal blame for violence at convention. "Mayor Daley had an obligation to insure law and order," he said. "But he also had a responsibility to give permits to demonstrators to march and to speak. Had this been done, the demonstrations would have been peaceful. He said that despite the incidences in Chicago, there were no deaths while there were six deaths at the Republican convention in Miami Beach (August 5-8) as a result of rioting. He said the Democratic convention was "a more vital political exercise than the Republican convention." Democrats, he asserted, recognized "serious differences in the party but met them head-on and defeated them. As a result the party is stronger." Republicans, he charged, "just postponed their fights."[227]

In an opinion piece in the Forum Section of the Sunday *Oregonian* of September 8, staff writer Harry Bodine wrote that "No two men in Oregon personify the ideological Vietnam gulf that has separated the state (and the nation's) Democrats more than (Blaine Whipple and Robert Duncan), both outspoken advocates of their respective views and both acknowledged leaders with a considerable following in the party 57 per cent of Oregonians claim as their own.

"In the aftermath of the anything but quiet Democratic convention

Blaine Whipple on the floor of the Convention Center in Chicago in August 1968. Gene Conklin of Pendleton in glasses. Photo, courtesy of Blaine Whipple.

which saw the nomination of Hubert Humphrey, rioting in the streets which millions of Americans viewed via television, and the 1968 death blow to the unique McCarthy drive, both men feel the Democrats are far stronger than outward appearances might indicate.

"Whipple began softening his opposition to Humphrey during his acceptance speech, a talk both Whipple and Duncan felt made a major advance in closing party ranks.[228] Humphrey "lifted McCarthy's language" in some respects, Whipple observed. He stressed his campaign was not wedded to the programs of the past. "I've known Humphrey for 20 years," Whipple added. "He's a good leader, an innovator, a man whose concern is to carry the nation forward. Whipple does not look with favor on a fourth party effort to block Humphrey. "Consider the alternative," he said - referring to the likely beneficiary, Republican Richard Nixon.

"Both Whipple and Duncan were pleased the Democrats aired their views on Vietnam in a full-blown debate. This is the first time this as happened in the United States on this issue, Whipple noted. It's one aspect all Democrats can take pride in, he added. Duncan concurs with this thought. "If we hadn't had a debate," he observed, "the press would have said the convention was stacked or dull. I think the McCarthy people who fought the good fight . . . and the convention was a real exercise in democracy . . . will look at Humphrey and see that he stands for many if not all of the things they stand for. They can come to Humphrey without doing violence to their ideology." Duncan said the convention battles between Humphrey and McCarthy backers caused "wounds that were

sharp and clean." Politics, he reflected, are a microcosm of life - you have to choose between the alternatives available. Lurking in the background is a real problem - the George Wallace movement.

"Whipple, who talked to the youthful demonstrators in Chicago's Grant Park, noted they were similar to other demonstrators who have made known their opinions at past national conventions. We have had periods in the past like the present when rioters filled the streets and he hoped the American political system will be responsive "so we don't become an armed state" What happened in the streets outside the Democratic convention will put the two parties on the alert, he feels. They will try to see that "we don't have a repeat."

"Both supported a national primary to nominate a presidential candidate. Duncan said, "This is the direction in which we should move . . . with all candidates in it as in Oregon's primary." Whipple agreed. "The national primary has great appeal and its time is going to arrive," he said, adding one postscript: government financing to help on the cost which he placed at $100 million for both a primary and general election campaign.

"Grazing into the crystal ball for Oregon's decision between Humphrey and Nixon in November, both Duncan and Whipple recognize the job cut out for the Democratic nominee is an uphill struggle. Humphrey was Duncan's choice prior to the convention and he is willing to give the Humphrey-Muskie ticket everything he has to see it succeed. For Whipple, the road to November looks like a tough battle "but I think we can weather it." The party leadership is aware of the need, he added. And in the background lies the alternative - Nixon - which neither Duncan nor Whipple feel Oregon Democrats will consider acceptable come November 5."[229]

Vice President Humphrey campaigned in Oregon September 27 and 28 drawing large crowds and applause as he sought to needle Richard Nixon into a national debate to be held in Portland. More than 500 people cheered his arrival at the Portland airport. Blaine was in the reception line sporting a Humphrey for President button. He was also on the packed Civic Auditorium stage with Humphrey and told the audience that the Vice President would become "one of the truly great presidents." He also asked the approximately 400 young demonstrators in attendance to open their minds and give the candidate a respectful hearing. However, they disrupted the rally with their "stop the war" chant as they slowly poured onto the streets with Humphrey partisans drowning out their chants with their own "We want Humphrey." Humphrey responded with tolerance and patience and told the audience that nearly identical events occur in every city and at every rally. He called the action a self-imposed censorship by the young militants, who neither want to hear for themselves, nor want to permit others to hear.[230]

Blaine told the State Democratic Central Committee meeting in Salem October 12, that "The nation needs Humphrey more for president than he needs the presidency to cap his political career. He said Humphrey's recent speech on Vietnam marked the turning point in the presidential campaign.[231] He called him an honest, intelligent candidate who doesn't promise easy answers to problems facing the nation.[232]

While national politics claimed a great deal of Blaine's time in 1968, he was also active in Washington county politics and in the real estate brokerage business. He was a member of the Western Investment Council, International Traders Club, a school board member, director of the Beaverton area Chamber of Commerce, and program chairman of the Washington County Public Affairs Forum. He was in demand as a speaker by many organizations.

BUSINESS ACTIVITES

In April 1968, in a speech to the Washington County Board of Realtors, he described the changes taking place in the Beaverton area. He called it a combination of bedroom, suburb, and satellite city that had grown from a crossroads hamlet in WWII to a population of over 13,000 in seven years. Six arterials funnel 90,000 cars a day into the downtown area. As home of the Oregon Primate Center, Electro Scientific Industries, Mikros, Inc., Georgia Pacific Corp., Tektronix, Electro Glass Laboratory, Aloha Trailer, and General Film and Aniline, it had become the research and development area of the Northwest. Other major businesses drawn to the area included Xerox, General Electric, Western Kraft Corrugated, Structural Laminates, General Motors, Mears Electric Controls, Blaesing Granite, Volkswagen, Deluxe Check Printers, Heater Music, and Overmeyer Warehousing. The county's population had increased by 38 percent since the 1960 federal census compared to 19 percent in Clackamas County and 8 percent in Multnomah County. Personal income was 16 percent greater in 1966 than in 1965. New residents were affluent and educated - 22 percent had an income of $10,000 and up, 15.2 percent earned between $8,000 and 9,999 annually. Building permits issued in Beaverton in 1967 totaled $10,123,377, an all-time high. He said Washington County was a particularly good place for a Realtor to live and work.[233]

That same month he brokered land transactions to be developed into a $575,000 48 unit apartment complex on a 2F1 acre site in Portland and a commercial building to be built on a half-acre site in Beaverton. In May he represented Kaiser Industries in the sale of a 1.66 acre site to be developed into a $420,000 34 unit apartment complex and an old Beaverton landmark, the 52-year-old Liebrick home, whose acre site was developed

into a $275,000 22 unit deluxe apartment complex. He represented all parties in these transactions and handled the re-zoning. In June he brokered the sale of a 1.87 acre tract adjacent to the Meadow Park Intermediate School to be developed into a $475,000 40-unit apartment complex with central swimming pool and children's play area.[234] In September, he was elected President of the Parent-Teachers Group of the West Tualatin View Elementary School for the 1968-69 school year. Son Bob was in its third grade.

He was a member of a task force formed in 1969 to advocate building a new Washington county court house on the Tualatin Valley Highway near the eastern border of Hillsboro.[235] A $3.8 bond courthouse improvement measure was approved in a special election May 20 but the county commissioners rejected the task force's proposed site, choosing instead to improve the existing building.

He brokered several million dollars real estate transactions early in the year, including tax free exchanges under Section 1031 of the Internal Revenue Code. He became Vice President of Randall Construction Company of Portland in February, a firm that specialized in building apartment complexes. He was responsible for buying sites, estimating building costs, negotiating financing, hiring subcontractors, representing the company with construction Unions, and selling the finished project. In April he announced construction of a $1.6 million 130 unit complex adjacent to the Tektronix Industrial Park in Beaverton. The complex included 11 two-story buildings, a two-story recreation building, day care center and indoor pool. Unit sizes included 1, 2, and 3 bedrooms, all carpeted, draped and furnished with range, refrigerator, dishwasher, and garbage disposals and each with patio or deck and individual storage area. Rents ranged from $130 to $205 per month.[236]

Blaine was in Washington, D. C. in January 1969 for a Democratic National Committee meeting. President Johnson invited the members to a dinner at the White House January 13 where he thanked them for their efforts on behalf of the Party and commented that he believed it was the last fun party the White House would see for the next four years.[237] The evening's entertainment was provided by the Marine Corps Band. Blaine's seat mate was Congresswoman Shirley Chisholm of New York who sought the Democratic nomination for President in 1972.

The next night the President gave his sixth and last State of the Union Address to Congress. Blaine was in the gallery as the guest of his friend Congressman Allard K. Lowenstein who represented the Fifth District (Dutchess county) of New York. Among the accomplishments cited by the President were passage of Medicare, Voting Rights, Federal Aid to Education, Head Start, a Federal Jobs Program, and Full Employment.

He called for an increase in social security benefits - increasing the minimum from $55 to $80 a month - and medical care for expectant mothers and their children during the first year of life. He expressed disappointment that Congress had not passed gun control legislation and predicted a $2.4 billion surplus when the fiscal year ended June 30 instead of the estimated $8 billion deficit. He briefly reminisced about his 38 years in the Capitol Building as an employee and as a Congressman and Senator and his five "demanding" years as President.

He was back in Washington, in April for a meeting of the National Committee which elected Senator Fred Harris of Oklahoma as the new National Party Chairman. In June he participated in the National Party's Commission on Party Structure and Reform. The Commission, authorized by the 1968 National Convention, was chaired by South Dakota Senator George McGovern. The task force took testimony throughout the country. Adlai Stevenson III, State Treasurer of Illinois, was chairman of the Oregon hearing. Stevenson asked Blaine to explain why Oregon's law which binds convention delegates for two ballots to the winner of the Oregon presidential primary did not violate the unit rule banned by the 1968 convention. Blaine explained the difference by pointing out the unit rule is a device used by machine states to bind the entire delegation to the choice of the political bosses. In Oregon the voters choose and "instruct the delegates to use their best efforts for the primary winner." He told the Task Force it should recommend the Oregon system as the best alternative to the unit rule.[238]

He joined The New Democratic Coalition early in 1969. The organization was organized to respond to the issues generated at the 1968 National Convention and to influence the future of the Party. He served on the May 24, Dinner Committee to raise funds for the organization. Speakers were Senators Harold Hughes of Iowa, George McGovern, and Edward M. Kennedy. Other committee members included Cesar Chavez, Blair Clark, Theodore C. Sorenson, Lauren Bacall, Harry Belafonte, Theodore Bikel, Jules Fiffer, Norman Mailer, Joanne and Paul Newman, George Plimpton, Tony Randall, Anne and Eli Wallach, U. S. Representatives Jonathan B. Bingham, George E. Brown, Jr., Shirley Chisholm, Don Edwards, Donald M. Fraser, Robert W. Kastenmeier, Abner J. Mikva, and Senators Wayne Morse, Abraham Ribicoff, and Paul Simon.

In December, Blaine announced he was sponsoring a Town Meeting to generate support for changing priorities of federal spending to lessen the growing unemployment in the country. Joining him as sponsors were Lloyd Knudsen, Oregon AFL-CIO director of legislation and political education, and Dr. Victor G. Rosenblum, President of Reed College. Blaine said the share of national wealth spent on the military budget is to

large and that it is important to convince Congress of the urgency of domestic needs. He said the session, would be held at Portland State College and was open to the public. The keynote speaker was Thomas Bradley, member of the Los Angeles City Council and future Mayor.

The agenda: education and youth, public health and drugs, labor and jobs, environment and urban planning, transportation, social problems and poverty. Knudsen said labor is concerned about the downturn in housing and lumbering that makes their jobs insecure and because inflation keeps them from getting ahead financially. Rosenblum said inflation causes a deflation of education by making higher education less available to middle and low income groups. Other sponsors were Monford A. Orloff, President, Evans Products, Corp.; Douglas Strain, President Electro Scientific Industries; The Rev. John Jackson, Greater Council of Churches; Sen. Betty Roberts, Rep. Keith Skelton, and Rep. Frank Roberts, all Democrats of Portland; Howard Morgan, former Federal Power Commissioner, and Mrs. Simeon Reed Winch.[239]

In January 1970 Blaine was elected a Director of the newly formed Multi-Family Housing Council of the Home Builders Association of Metropolitan Portland. Its purpose was to support the interests of developers, owners, and managers of apartment complexes and other multi-family housing. He also announced construction had started on three projects totaling $1,350,000 by the Randall Company. In February he announced the company had obtained financing for 106 new dwelling units and had plans for an additional 300 on the drawing board. While most builders were crying "the tight money blues." The Randall Co. flourished because of its reputation for building well designed complexes on desirable sites. It's high occupancy rate was generated by a parking ratio of 2 to 1, superior sound control between units, and amenities including recreational facilities and enclosed storage space for each unit.

Randall Company business and the Democratic National Committee occupied most of Blaine's time in 1970 and 1971.[240]

Since only 14 states held presidential primaries, no practical way existed to challenge a President of the U. S. who would like to be re-nominated. Some 600 of the 1968 delegates were selected by state machines and another 600 were elected two years previously, long before the American people had turned against the Vietnam war. If these hand-picked delegates represented anything, it was the America of two years past and the decision of the Party leaders to perpetuate the organization. The pressures and wire pulling exerted with enormous force at the convention meant nothing to them because of their willingness to let others do their thinking and voting.

In a time with more communication, more education, and more pri-

Blaine and Sen. George McGovern at the Portland International Airport in July 1971. McGovern was in town to recruit Blaine to chair his Oregon campaign for President in 1972.
Photo, courtesy of Blaine Whipple.

maries, the Chicago convention was anachronistic, old fashioned, and did not deal in the contemporary world. Of the 7.5 million Democrats who voted in the primaries, 80 percent preferred McCarthy's and Kennedy's Vietnam positions but they had little representation on the floor and on the platform committee. The politicians at the podium controlled the outcome of the Party's most serious ritual by not recognizing the will of those voters. The McCarthy and Kennedy supporters learned that being issue oriented was not enough in a presidential campaign. They had to get into the grubby, detailed, hard-working business of politics if they expected to win. Blaine's work on the National Committee was concentrated on modernizing the Party.[241]

Blaine and Sen. Edmund Muskie, Democratic Vice Presidential nominee in 1968, at the Portland International Airport in May 1971. Muskie was in Portland to recruit Blaine to chair his Oregon campaign for President in 1972.
Photo, courtesy of Blaine Whipple.

His resolution to oppose the transfer of nerve gas from Okinawa to the continental United States was adopted unanimously at the National Committee meeting in April 1970 in Washington, D. C. The gas was to be shipped to Washington and moved by train to the Umatilla Ordnance Depot in northeastern Oregon. A May 8 rally in Eugene to protest the shipment was addressed by Jack Doughty of Medford, a former civilian safety officer on Okinawa, who said there was "no safe way to transport the war chemicals." A federal suit to stop the shipment was filed by six residents of Washington and Oregon.[242]

He was re-elected to a second term on the Washington County Intermediate Education District Board May 4, 1970.[243] In December he announced that Randall Construction Co. would construct a 160-unit apartment complex in Southwest Portland. It was to be family oriented with 3-bedroom units, two play yards, picnic tables, a barbeque pit, putting green, swimming pool, and large recreation building. Building cost was estimated at $2.3 million and construction was expected to take 10 months.[244] In August 1971 he announced a $3 million 135-unit housing project to be built in Gresham.

In a speech June 18, 1970 to the Eugene Demo Forum, he faulted President Nixon for a "leadership focused on external fears instead of internal neglect." He decried the fact that the country is focused on war. He said "most of our national energy, most of our federal taxes, most of our national debt, most of the inflation, and most of the dissension are handmaidens of the goddess of war while the nation's internal weaknesses have been allowed to fester" He said the Nixon administration appeals to "our basest instincts and fears, instead of rallying the nation to a commitment to peace and justice."

He questioned Nixon's veto of the Health-Education Welfare bill on the grounds it was inflationary. "If education is inflationary, why isn't the Anti-Ballistic Missile (ABM) inflationary? If health care is inflationary, why isn't a $75 billion arms budget inflationary?" he asked. He said that under "Nixonomics" all the things that should go up - the stock market, corporate profits, real spendable income, productivity - go down while the things that should go down - unemployment, inflation, prices, interest rates - go up and Nixon justifies this as a price we must pay for a stable dollar.

He called Nixon's Vietnamization process "a clear design to keep the war going by ending criticism at home . . . a program that will lead to more senseless slaughter, more wartime inflation, and more dissipation of our national strength." He said that instead of widening the war in Cambodia, Nixon should consolidate American forces in "well-defended enclaves along the coast in preparation for efficient and safe withdrawal."[245]

HEADS OREGON MCGOVERN FOR PRESIDENT CAMPAIGN

By the mid 1971, Senators George McGovern, Edmund Muskie, Fred Harris, and Henry "Scoop" Jackson, all of whom were considered contenders for 1972 Democratic presidential nomination, spoke in Oregon and all made personal pitches to Blaine to chair their Oregon primary campaigns. Muskie, vice presidential nominee in 1968, was then the

favorite. Harris made his pitch when they were flying in a private plane to a campaign meeting in southern Oregon. Blaine was acquainted with all four. He had worked with Harris when he was chair of the National Party and with McGovern on the Party Reform committee. Jackson was the Party chair in 1960 when Blaine campaigned throughout Oregon for John F. Kennedy. He had met Muskie but never worked with him. Muskie made a strong pitch and his position as front runner was an important consideration. However, he opted for McGovern based on his commitment to make ending the Vietnam War a major issue in his campaign and to prioritize the Oregon primary.[246]

In a press conference in Portland June 28, 1971 McGovern announced that Blaine would lead his Oregon campaign.[247] His speech at the Unitarian Church in Eugene later that day drew about 300 and he filled every one of the 750 seats in an auditorium at Oregon State University. He talked about the need to reorder America's priorities by cutting the country's $80 billion military budget to $45 billion and spending the money on new housing, new schools, health care, feeding the hungry, and improving the transportation system. He favored bringing American troops home from Europe as well as Vietnam.

Eleven Democrats were placed on the May 23 primary ballot by Oregon Secretary of State Clay Meyers. State law required him to monitor national publications to determine who was considered a potential candidate. They were: Senators George McGovern, Hubert Humphrey, Edmund Muskie, Henry Jackson, Ted Kennedy, former Senator Eugene McCarthy, U. S. Representatives Shirley Chisholm, New York, Wilbur Mills, Arkansas, Patsy Mink, Hawaii, Governor George Wallace, Alabama, and Mayor John Lindsay, New York.[248]

In January 1972, Blaine served on the Democratic Policy Council's subcommittee on health care. It was one of four subcommittee holding hearings in Portland, Detroit, Atlanta, and Philadelphia to make recommendations for the platform to be presented to the National Convention in July. Leonard Woodcock, President of the United Auto Workers International Union, was Chairman of the Portland subcommittee.[249] Blaine and Woodcock were to meet again, in Red China in 1978 before the two countries had formally recognized each other.

In late January, Ward Just, a writer for *The Atlantic*, and R. W. Apple, political reporter for the *New York Times*, were in Oregon to interview Blaine and to check on the state's political scene. They attended his speech at Lewis and Clark College in Portland where he told his audience that two priorities of a McGovern administration would be "an immediate end to the Indochina war and the establishment of a continuum of health care for the elderly. He said the other Democratic aspirants would

continue to direct the country in much the same manner as Nixon.[250]

Just's article appeared in the April *Atlantic*. He wrote: "Blaine Whipple thought he would try out a new speech at Lewis and Clark. It was a war speech, and his steering committee wanted him to stay away from the war, but Whipple was determined to go through with it. He is George McGovern's Chairman in Oregon.

"Whipple had an idea that he could link the war in Vietnam with the plight of the aged in the United States. He said both were essentially environmental, issues, 'the destruction of Indochina and the destruction of much of our elderly population.' He spoke of defoliation and ecological damage in the war zone, and the innocent civilians caught in cross fire, pregnant and lactating women, the United States military destroying the culture of South Vietnam. The totality of it was a monstrous legacy, Whipple said, and the way to end it was immediate and permanent cessation of warfare as proposed by George McGovern.

"Thirty-five students in the auditorium sat quietly through this. Whipple is very low key, almost genteel in his approach. 'As students you spend little or no time thinking of the fears faced by the nation's elderly. He then cataloged the problems of the elderly poor, his argument lacerating the indifferent wealthy society that permits it. He ended his speech with the suggestion that Americans were pilgrims, wayfarers. 'George McGovern sees us traveling together, passengers on a little spacecraft.'

"All over America in the next nine months the Blaine Whipples of politics will be speaking those words or words like them in college auditoriums, American Legion Halls, civic centers, street corners, the front parlors of homes, high school gymnasiums to forty people or fifty, looking into rows of faces from behind lecterns. They will hope to connect, to rouse a citizen to commit himself. To *work*. Whipple will repeat his litany a hundred times before the Oregon primary, trying to find the issue, or the combination of issues, that will ignite and inspire.

"After the speech, there were a few delusory questions, and then Whipple left, pleased with the meeting. A good meeting he said, "I signed up eight people. Of course it's a lot different from 1968. In 1968, we had turn away crowds. In that year there would have been a thousand kids in the audience."[251]

In February he was campaigning in Boise, Idaho where he represented McGovern at the annual Jefferson-Jackson Day Banquet.[252] On March 9, he announced he was running for a second term as National Committeeman.[253] Opposing him were Senator Vernon Cook, a Humphrey backer, John Callahan, a McCarthy backer, William McCoy, and John H. Sweeny, all of Portland and Hughel Wilkins of Corvallis. In endorsing Blaine, the Eugene *Register Guard* wrote: "Mr. Whipple, the incumbent

GEORGE McGOVERN
SOUTH DAKOTA

United States Senate
WASHINGTON, D.C. 20510

November 1, 1971

Dear Blaine:

Among the many helpful contributions you made on my recent Oregon visit was your $10 loan! Enclosed is my check in repayment.

With continued appreciation for your friendship and strong hand of support, I am

Sincerely,

George McGovern

Honorable Blaine Whipple
8455 S. W. Brookridge
Portland, Oregon 97225

GEORGE McGOVERN
ELEANOR McGOVERN

No. 3010

November 1, 1971

15-3
511

Pay to the order of Blaine Whipple $ 10.00

----------Ten and----------no/100 Dollars

The RIGGS NATIONAL BANK
of WASHINGTON, D. C.
CHEVY CHASE OFFICE
CONNECTICUT AVE. & MORRISON ST., N. W.

committeeman, has done a fine job - both in representing Oregon Democrats at national meetings and in traveling around Oregon to bind up the party's wounds. None of his opponents can match Mr. Whipple."[254]

McGovern won the March Massachusetts and April Wisconsin primaries and Humphrey won the April Pennsylvania race. Muskie and Jackson did poorly causing Blaine to tell the press it was now a national contest between McGovern and Humphrey. He said Oregon voters, like

Wisconsin voters, are committed to nothing less than the reversal of the nation's priorities and predicted a McGovern's victory. John Lindsay dropped out of the race following the Wisconsin vote and his Oregon organization accepted Blaine's invitation to join the McGovern forces.[255] Jackson discontinued his campaign following the Ohio primary May 4. In early May, Blaine was campaigning in Beaverton, Coos Bay, Klamath Falls, La Grande, Medford, and Pendleton. He was joined by Stewart Udall, former Secretary of the Interior, in his Pendleton stop.

Both Oregon and Rhode Island held primaries May 23 and both were won by McGovern. He won an outright majority in Oregon polling over 50 percent. He did not campaign in Rhode Island and still won 41 percent, more than the combined vote for Muskie and Humphrey who finished second and third respectively.

Blaine was re-elected Democratic National Committeeman and the McGovern delegate slate won 30 of the 32 seats. Wayne Morse, uncommitted, and Congresswoman Edith Green of Portland, a Jackson supporter, won the other two. Blaine and Alice Corbett, National Committeewoman, were automatic delegates. The Party's reform rules required fuller participation for women, minorities, and young people. Most states succeeded so well that about 83 percent of the delegates were people attending their first convention. Oregon's delegate slate, was recognized nationally as the most balanced at the convention. Half were women and the group as a whole closely reflected the age groups and minorities in Oregon's population. He was elected delegation Chairman.[256]

While other states fought legal battles with women and minority groups, Oregon's delegation was unchallenged. It didn't just happen. Blaine planned it that way. When 345 would-be delegates filed for election, he knew only the well-known would be elected. So he developed a slate based on the Party's new rules for balanced representation. The McGovern organization campaigned statewide for the slate and defeated, among others, state legislators, Congressman Al Ullman, and State Treasurer Robert Straub who had been elected by the highest vote ever cast for a candidate in

Sen. Wayne Morse and Blaine Whipple, delegation chairman, 1972 Democratic National Convention, Maimi Beach, Fla. in July.
Photo, courtesy of Blaine Whipple.

a contested election in Oregon.

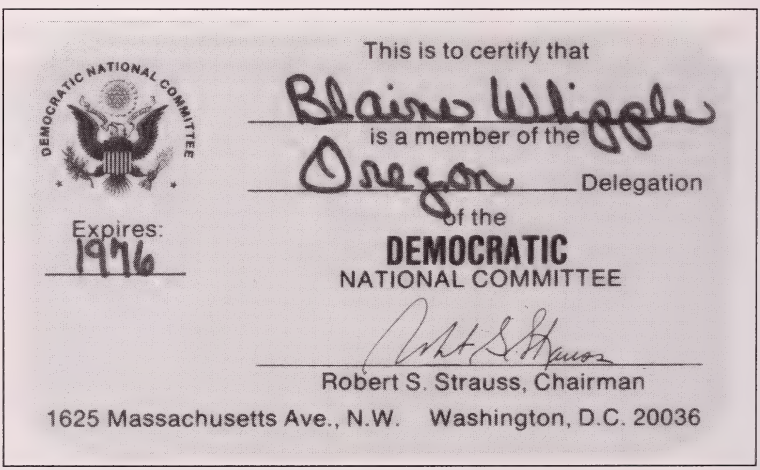
OREGON'S NEARLY PERFECT DELEGATION

The Convention was held in Miami Beach August 10-14. Oregon delegates joined Idaho and Utah delegations and chartered a plane to transport the 186 delegates, alternates, and reporters. The Oregonians were housed in the Delano Hotel only about two blocks from the Convention Center. McGovern was nominated on the first ballot July 13 and his choice for vice president, Senator Thomas Eagleton of Missouri, was nominated the following night. A National Committee meeting following the convention prevented Blaine from returning to Portland with the Oregon delegation. He hitched a ride with the Washington delegation the next day.

The Washington delegation supported Jackson as the McGovern boosters failed to get the credentials committee to seat any of them. The fight between the two groups caused problems in the state Party. While Jackson joined Humphrey, Muskie, and the other hopefuls on the podium following McGovern's acceptance speech, he was against the Party reforms and relied on the "old guard" to select his delegates.

Sen. McGovern and Blaine Whipple on primary night May 23. This picture appeared on the front page of the *Oregonian* May 24 and the *International Herald Tribune* in Paris, France May 25.

A Seattle political writer flying on the plane wrote an opinion piece speculating that because Jackson's national and state support came from the Party's "old guard" and because he resented the efforts made by McGovern reformists to capture the Washington delegation, he and his Washington state followers might not campaign for McGovern. Supporters of each were on the plane. He reported that "a remarkable message from Blaine Whipple of Oregon" came over the plane's public address system. He identified himself as Gene McCarthy's Oregon Chairman in 1968 and said the first thing he did when he returned to Portland following the Chicago convention was to urge the McCarthy people to support Senator Humphrey. "And I was criticized by McCarthyites." But, he said, "I reminded them that had McCarthy been the nominee, they would have expected me to seek the help of Humphrey supporters. I can do no less for Humphrey." There was applause for that reasoning from the mixed crowd. Whipple ended by saluting the granite-solid Washington delegation which repeatedly cast all 52 votes for the Jackson position and said they showed "tremendous political intelligence'" when they cast all 52 votes for Eagleton as vice-president. Then as the Washingtonians basked in such praise, he urged them all to work for the McGovern-Eagleton ticket. "It was probably the slickest, come-together political speech of the



week."[257]

After Eagleton disclosed that he voluntarily committed himself three times between 1960 and 1966 for what he called "nervous exhaustion," had received electroshock therapy, and had been arrested for drunken or reckless driving on several occasions, a political fire storm broke out. McGovern initially vowed to keep him but political leaders nationwide opposed him and donors withheld support. The mounting opposition forced Eagleton to withdraw on July 31, 18 days after he was selected. Blaine told

Tolovana Inn, Cannon Beach, Ore. fall, 1972. Photo, courtesy of Tolovana Inn.

the press on July 27 that 80 percent of his calls and mail were from people urging withdrawal. He was ambivalent: disappointed that Eagleton failed to disclose the circumstances prior to his nomination while noting that the voters of Missouri had elected him to positions of high public trust despite these disclosures.[258]

The Democratic National Committee, with 303 voting members, was convened August 8, in Washington, D. C. to select a replacement nominee. Oregon's four members: Blaine, Alice Corbett, National Committeewoman, Caroline Wilkins, State Party Chair, and John Meyer, Vice Chair were allocated 34 votes of which they cast 30 for R. Sargent Shriver, McGovern's choice. Wayne Morse, the Party's nominee for U. S. Senator, received four votes in a symbolic gesture. Blaine said he told Shriver after the balloting that "it was not meant as a lack of support for him but a show of support from the leadership of the state party for the candidate who leads our ticket."[259]

Business obligations made it impossible for Blaine to take an active role in the general election. The Randall Co. was building a $2.5 million furnished ocean-front condominium on 3 acres at Cannon Beach, Oregon. Blaine was responsible for the sale of the 96 units which went on sale July 29. They ranged in size from 525 square feet for a studio unit to 1,095 for a two-bedroom two-bath unit. All had kitchens, wood burning fireplaces and decks. Prices ranged from $17,400 to $32,900. Sales were restricted to Oregon residents and the units were to be rented on a daily basis when the owners were not using them. Amenities included a heated pool with therapy unit, sauna, billiard and ping pong room, and children's play area. An ocean front restaurant was also on the site.

In October 1973, he became regional editor of the *Real Estate News Observer*, a monthly magazine devoted to commercial real estate broker-

Oregon Democratic delegation, 1972 National Convention. From *Life Magazine* July 1972.

age. In December he was elected president of the Multifamily Housing Council of the Home Builders' Association of Metropolitan Portland. The organization represented more than 10,000 rental and condominium units in the tri-county area.[260] He was elected to a third term on the Intermediate Education Service District in May 1974.

He served on the national Party's Charter Commission which dealt with the operation and organization of the national convention, composition of the national committee, and general rules and procedures for operation of the Party. Chairman of the Commission was former Governor Terry Sanford of North Carolina. The Commission held hearings in 25 states in 1973.

In early summer of 1973, Oregon Republican Governor Tom McCall was giving consideration to running for the U. S. Senate against incumbent Republican Senator Robert Packwood. However, he questioned his ability to win the Party nomination and began hinting he would run as an Independent or a Democrat. Blaine was of the opinion that McCall had to work his way into the Party before he could become the Party's nominee. He drafted a letter to the Governor which Alice Corbett, the National Committeewoman, co-signed. They told McCall the Party would welcome him if his intention is to give the Party aid and assistance in building future election victories and not as press reports indicate "simply to find a new vehicle to for run for the U. S. Senate in 1974."

They told McCall he should follow the example of former Senator Wayne Morse, a Republican who was re-elected to the Senate as a Democrat in 1956 after "aggressively campaigning" for the national Democratic ticket in 1952 and the state ticket in 1954. "We feel your aggressive support for the Republican Party and its candidates – especially President Nixon – should be matched by an equally aggressive record of support of the Democratic Party and its candidates in 1974 and beyond. This kind of effort could eventually result in our Party rewarding you with nomination for high office." They said McCall was welcome if he believed in the Party's philosophy, platform, and programs. Visibly upset by the letter, McCall decided to remain a Republican and retired from politics at the end of his second term as Governor.[261]

In March 1974 in a speech to the Coos County Pre-Primary Democratic Convention, Blaine lashed out at the Nixon administration for Water-

gate and Watergate related offenses[262] and for complicity for what he called a contrived energy shortage. "Indifference to laws and acceptable moral and political standards has got to stop," he said. "Yet we have a President who seem incapable of even expressing regret over these wrong doings, who seems incapable of asking for understanding of the mistakes of the past." He said the only healthy effect of the Watergate tragedy is an increased citizen interest in politics and government.

He said the era of cheap resources had ended and the country needed a crash program to develop new energy sources without retreating from our commitment to clean water and air. He said 20 oil companies were a "cartel who controlled 86 percent of the country's refinery capacity, 93 percent of its pipelines, and 75 percent of its retail gas outlets."

Based on the oil companies $5 million contribution to Nixon's re-election campaign, he predicted there would be little help from the White House in solving the problem. He called for the end of oil depletion allowances, "the overlapping tax break known as expensing intangibles," and advocated creation of a government owned energy exploring corporation to add competition to the energy market. He also called for full disclosure of critical energy-related information.[263]

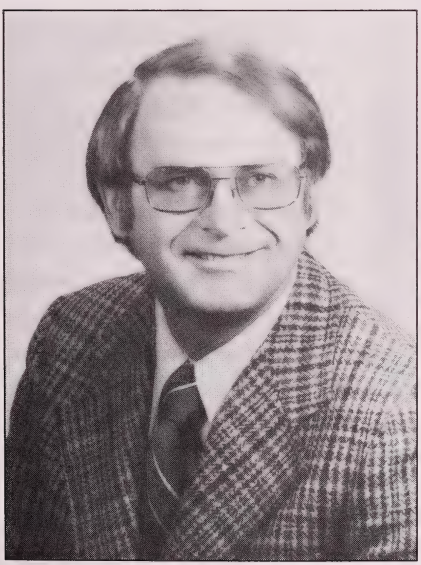
WINS STATE SENATE SEAT

Blaine filed for the office of State Senator from Washington county's District 3 in March. The District included parts of Beaverton and Aloha, all of Hillsboro, Cornelius, Forest Grove, Cedar Hills, Cedar Mill, Oak Hills, Vista Hills, and parts of West Slope. His primary opponent was Roman Catholic Priest Bill Hamilton of Beaverton.[264] Republican incumbent Tom Hartung was unopposed.[265] He named Jerry Pratt, newspaper columnist and TV commentator, Chairman of this campaign committee. He said Pratt's vast background in Oregon business, financial, and public affairs, would be a great asset in developing his campaign. Pratt said he accepted the assignment because he believes Whipple's experience in dealing with all levels of government – local, state, and federal – will give District 3 voters a strong voice in Salem. "I want someone in office who will listen to the people, who has demonstrated an ability to lead and who will bring a mature judgment to the business of government," he said.[266] Blaine finally won an Oregonian endorsement and easily won the nomination.[267]

Former Senator Wayne Morse, 73, died in a Portland hospital Monday July 22. Blaine who was a close personal friend praised Morse's "willingness to follow a course of action despite the eventual consequences to himself."[268] His body lie in state in the rotunda of the Oregon Capitol

Thursday and Friday where Blaine was one of the pall bearers. A memorial service was held Friday morning with eulogies by Senators Eugene McCarthy and Mark Hatfield, Governor Tom McCall, Oregon House Speaker Richard Eymann, and Senate President Jason Boe. Funeral services were held in Eugene's First Congregational Church Friday afternoon with the eulogy delivered by Supreme Court Justice William O. Douglas. He was buried in Rest Haven Cemetery.[269]

The Whipple-Hartung race was hard fought. Hartung personalized the race calling Blaine "a full-time political hack who supported pork barreling tactics." Blaine scored Hartung for his support of a sales tax, for voting against equal rights for women, for opposing the 18-year-old vote, and a woman's right to choose to have an abortion. Hartung complained that many people on Blaine's campaign committee lived outside the district and were from the building industry. Blaine countered that Hartung was on the Board of Directors of a major Savings and Loan Association and voted against legislation requiring banks and S&Ls to pay interest on the monthly property taxes and insurance reserves they required homeowners to pay and that much of his campaign cash came from those special interests.



Official Oregon state photo of Sen. Blaine Whipple, 1975.

Hartung was endorsed by Governor McCall, the *Argus, Valley Times, Forest Grove News-Times, The Oregonian*, the *Oregon Journal* and the *Teamsters Union*. Blaine was endorsed by the Beaverton and Hillsboro Education Associations, the State Education Association, the Oregon AFL-CIO, the Homebuilders of Metropolitan Portland, and the *Labor Press*. For the first time, his campaign funding equaled his Republican opponent. He campaigned door-to-door throughout the District and had effective tele-

phone and letter-writing committees. Despite running in the District with the highest Republican voter registration in the state and being the National Committeeman of the Democratic Party, he won and became the first Democrat to be elected to the State Senate from Washington County since Senator Ross in 1936. It was a close race. His margin was 447 votes.[270]

Blaine was one of seven freshmen Senators in the 1975 session. He served on the taxation, education, transportation, executive appointments, and local government committees. He authored Senate Bill 269, the Mortgage Reserve Account Law, which was passed. It required interest be paid on tax and insurance reserves. A similar bill had been defeated in at least five previous sessions.

His bill to prevent the state from taxing the 1974 federal income tax rebate passed and he supported bills placing a yield tax on timber and requiring the wealthy to pay at least a minimum tax. He was co-sponsor with Representative Hardy Myers of Measure 7, referred to the voters, to provide public financing of campaigns. He was Chairman of the state government operations subcommittee which developed a plan to streamline the legislative review process. He led the fight to repeal a controversial criminal records law which restricted the public's right to know about criminal activities.

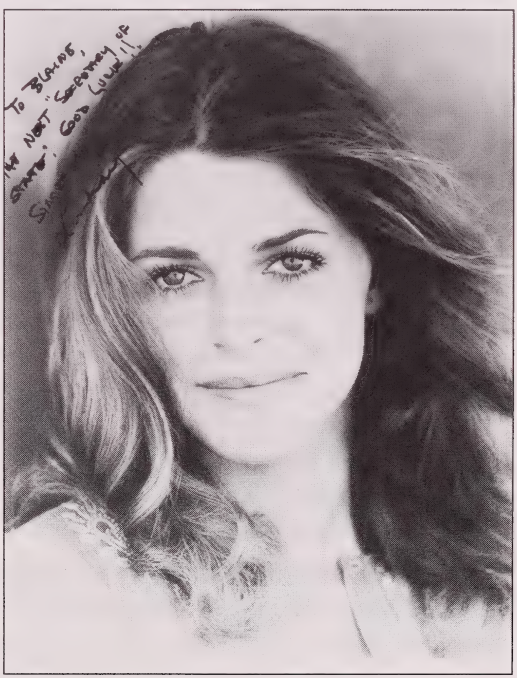
Following adjournment, much of the press editorially applauded his service. The *Oregon Journal* said "he was effective in his first session." In analyzing the "Class of '75," Floyd McKay writing in the *Willamette Week* said Blaine showed good promise and could be one of the newcomers to bloom in the Senate. Doug Baker, columnist for the *Oregon Journal*, wrote that "Whipple, according to observers (was) a capable first term senator who showed above-average clout." The *Argus* said that Oregon journalists are highly appreciative of the role Whipple played in repealing the criminal records law.

Harry Bodine, who covered the legislature for *The Oregonian*, called Measure 7 "a uniquely Oregon answer to the thorny issue of public financing of political campaigns." Common Cause, the citizen lobby group, called it the most sweeping public finance proposal before the legislature. Funds generated by the measure would be voluntary. Taxpayers could direct a $1.50 contribution from their state tax bill to the Fair Election Fund. The election committees of candidates nominated in the primary would receive money to "communicate" – media advertising, brochures, bumper stickers – with the public. The maximum grant for a statewide race was $90,000, $4,900 for state senate and $2,450 for state house races.[271] The Measure was defeated in the November general election.[272]

Blaine took a leading role in advocating a timber yield tax. The larger timber companies, Weyerhaeuser and Boise Cascade, wanted a yield or harvest tax in principle because the property taxes on their large stand of mature timber were substantial. Companies with more depleted holdings – Georgia Pacific, Louisiana Pacific, Crown Zellerbach – preferred the status quo. But when the House Revenue committee proposed a rate of 9.5 percent the timber companies – big and little — joined in opposition.

Blaine made a major political mistake in 1976. Clay Myers' second term as Oregon's Secretary of State was ending and the law prohibited a third term. A Democrat had never held the office and Blaine was led to believe the large Democratic registration majority and his statewide name familiarity would help him win the office. He entered the Democratic primary February 2, joining State Senator Betty Browne of Oakridge and State Representative Al Densmore of Medford, to compete for the nomination. State Senator Dick Groener of Milwaukie filed the following week. Caroline Wilkins of Corvallis and Phil McAlmond of Portland filed later. Senator Browne eventually withdrew.

He made his announcement in a one-day swing through five cities – Tigard, Salem, Eugene-Springfield, Medford, and Klamath Falls – pledging a strong campaign oriented to issues and meeting with voters in all sections of the state. He stressed the need for maturity and judgment and administrative ability to handle the duties of Chief Election Officer, Chief Auditor, head of the State Archives, and member of the state's 3-person Land Board. He said conservation and preservation would be his guide in managing the state's resources. As publisher of Oregon's *Administrative Rule Bulletin*, he pledged to work with the Legislative Counsel Committee and the Governor to make Orego-



Lindsay Wagner, a Movie and Television Star campaigned for Blaine Whipple in his race for Oregon Secretrey of State. Her 1976-1977 TV series, the Bionic Woman, was one of the top rated shows during its 59 series run. She was a family friend. Photo, courtesy of Lindsay Wagner.

nians aware of and to have an opportunity to be heard before new rules are adopted.

In May television's wildly popular *Bionic Woman* star came to Portland to help him in his quest for votes. Lindsay Wagner, a graduate of David Douglas High School, was a personal family friend and supported Blaine on a personal level. "It's nice to know there are honest people in politics," she said.[273]

The major newspapers endorsed Densmore but Blaine won the May primary election. Runner up was Groener who spent $80,275, the highest amount spent in the three statewide races. Blaine spent $28,157. State Representative Norma Paulus of Salem, who won the Republican nomination, spent $43,367.[274]

In July, the Whipple family took a Bicentennial trip to the East Coast where Blaine attended his fourth Democratic Nominating Convention. En route they stopped at Tracy, Minnesota for the high school's All-Alumni Class Reunion attended by approximately 900 graduates.[275] From Tracy they went to Appleton, Minnesota where son Scott spent two weeks with his grandmother Pearl Whipple and aunt and uncle Nancy and Don Jasperson while Blaine, Ines, and Bob drove on to New England where they visited Whipple family sites in Massachusetts, New Hampshire, and Vermont. They visited General William Whipple's home and tomb in Portsmouth, N. H.(their common ancestor is Matthew Whipple of Bocking, England), Bennington and Whipple Hollow, Vermont where his great (4) grandparents, Benjamin and Hepzibah Whipple settled in 1760, Ipswich, Massachusetts where his great (9) grandparents, Matthew and Anne Whipple settled in 1638.[276]

Accompanied by his sister and brother-in-law, Mary Ann and Bill McPherson of Littleton, Massachusetts, they drove to New York City where the Convention was held in Madison Square Garden. He helped nominate Jimmy Carter of Georgia for President and Senator Walter Mondale of Minnesota Vice President and refused election to a third term as Oregon Democratic Committeeman.[277] As a candidate for Secretary State, the state's chief election officer, he didn't fell it appropriate to hold a partisan political office.

Blaine began his general election campaign after returning to Oregon. He proposed a joint performance and financial audit to replace the existing financial audit. He told a Hermiston audience that the performance audit would require agencies to show how they performed their stated goals during each biennium.[278] He told an Albany audience he would revise the procedures under which state administrative rules are made public. He decried the fact that 1,300 new administrative rules had been created in the previous two years with many never being made public. He

Jimmy Carter and Blaine Whipple at a Portland campaign rally in downtown Portland, Oregon in September 1976. Photo, courtesy of *The Oregonian*.

said proposed new rules should be circulated to persons and groups to be affected for comments and reaction. He said this would both reduce the number of rules and result in more effective rule making.[279] He participated in a Portland campaign rally with future President Jimmy Carter in late September.

Despite a 97 percent voting record on labor issues in the 1975 session to Norma Paulus' 43 percent pro labor record, the AFL-CIO COPE convention did not endorse Blaine in the general election. Groener, Chairman of the Senate Labor committee who consistently scored 100 percent on the AFL-CIO voting index, used his labor clout to deny Blaine the endorsement. After Groener received the AFL-CIO endorsement in the primary, Blaine exposed the part Groener played in the Great Western Mortgage scandal which cost the unions $1 million. Groener's labor sup-

porters called it a "shoddy campaign tactic against a labor-supported candidate." Lloyd Knudsen, secretary-treasurer of the Portland Metal Trades Council, told the convention "Dick's heart would be broken if we support Blaine Whipple." The steel workers and the United Auto Workers supported him. Labor also did not endorse Jewell Lansing, the Democratic nominee for State Treasurer.[280] Groener spent the fall campaigning for Paulus.

Daily newspapers making endorsements favored Paulus 17 to 0. Jewell Lansing received three. Ralph Friedman, a columnist for the *Community Press* of Portland, expressed his opinion as follows:

> I am supporting Blaine Whipple for secretary of state because he is the better candidate. At a time when it is fashionable to ride the ruts of the echo chamber, Blaine Whipple carves his own road. For that he makes some people uneasy. At a time when it is prudent to be conventional, Blaine Whipple seeks out the truth and fights for it – and it is this style of unconventionality which some people describe as eccentric.
>
> At a time when the smog of platitudes and shibboleths chokes the air, Blaine Whipple speaks a clear, crisp language. At a time when independent thought is regarded as rocking the boat, Blaine Whipple has the courage to think independently.
>
> Are we kith and kin of those who would handsomely profit from us? Are their interests our interests? Should we shutter because they tremble at a voice arising from the likes of you and me? Let us rejoice that we have such friends, though few may be their number, and let us stand with them through taunt and deceit, through all alarms and honeyed talk.
>
> I have long memories of doers and pretenders. I know well those who raced to the battleground after the victory was posted and those who joined the fray when the odds were heavy against us. I tell you that Blaine Whipple has been in the forefront of unpopular causes that public pressure later made popular – such as the anti Vietnam War protest – and if he is – as he is – in the forefront of causes that seem unpopular today, history will vindicate him and those with whom he is linked in struggle.
>
> Norma Paulus' friends know her as a cordial, genial soul – the kind that makes a good neighbor. Blaine Whipple has the same fine attributes. The difference between them as I see it, is that Whipple is molded in the spirit of the fighting populist, whose only cause is that of the common people, and that the philosophy of Paulus is in the other direction.
>
> On that basis, and because I know him as one who has always placed the

needs and aspirations of us folks above everything else, including his own individual future, my vote goes to Whipple.[281]

Money played a major issue in the campaign. A Paulus win was the number one goal of the state Republican Party. It did not want the Party's 102-year-hold on the office broken and it was still smarting over Blaine ending the Party's 40-year state senate streak in Washington county. A statewide poll conducted by GMA Research Corp. for the *Oregon Journal* the third week of October showed Blaine leading Paulus.[282] That's when the cash began to flow to the Paulus campaign beginning with the State Central Committee's contribution of $33,941.[283]

While Blaine supported 9.5 percent as the yield tax rate, Paulus became the champion of the timber companies by authoring a minority report recommending a much lower rate. Late in the race, Paulus received her reward. Her campaign contribution report "reads like a Who's Who of the woods product industry," according to the *Oregon Times Magazine*. "The ultimate defeat of the yield tax is being rewarded by substantial handouts from Weyerhaeuser, Crown Zellerbach, Willamette Industries, Boise Cascade, and the Oregon Logger Education Committee, among many others. While Ms. Paulus cruises toward GOP stardom in an executive jet provided by Louisiana Pacific Corp, Whipple is virtually broke. A direct mail campaign may net quite a few bucks, but the $100,000 or so available to Paulus is way beyond his grasp. What's really at issue in the hottest statewide race is whether a candidate who overtly opposes Big Timber's wishes can win a major office in Oregon in 1976."[284] This money allowed her to saturate television and radio in all sections of the state, flood the post offices with direct mail and fund telephone banks.

Blaine ended the campaign questioning how a candidate who accepted major donations from the giant timber interests could remain independent when it came time to audit the sales of timber off public lands? He said he saw himself as a candidate with goals and a sense of independence for himself and the people of Oregon.[285] When the campaign ended, Paulus spent $117, 387, the most spent in any statewide race. Blaine spent $32,638.[286] When the votes were counted Paulus' margin was 200,000. Ford beat Carter and Myers beat Lansing. The only Democrat to win was Jim Redden who was elected Attorney General.[287]

SECOND SENATE SESSION

As Chairman of the Local Government and Elections Committee in the 1977 session, Blaine was successful in getting SB 439 passed and signed by the Governor. It required the directors of the state's two mass transit enti-

ties – Tri Met in the metropolitan area and Lane Rapid Transit in Lane county, to represent districts of equal population and that new proposed taxes be referred to a vote of the people. Rural Washington, Clackamas, and Multnomah counties had no representation. A similar situation existed in Lane county. Gerry Pratt in his column in[288] the *Community Press* wrote this about the bill:

> It has been Senator Blaine Whipple's session. Whipple is the original laborer from the vineyards of the Democratic Party in Oregon. He took on Wendell Wyatt for a congressional seat when Wendell was tougher to beat than the seat of a small boy's pants.
>
> He ran for and became the National Committeeman when the office meant something, and did something with it for years. Whipple is the only guy who fired off the "Party" reply when the state's long hierarchy of Republican governors and attorney generals and senators seem destined to run Oregon their way forever.
>
> He won a tough race a few years back in Washington county and took his particularly iconoclast politics, a mixture of zeal, integrity, and good sense to Salem and the State Senate. It was the measure of his impact that one Republican newspaper, in a self-appointed popularity poll of politicians, named him the most unpopular elected member of the legislature.
>
> But one thing that has even the cool and battle wise Whipple dancing in the legislative isles this session is his fight to get some elected equity in the multi-million dollar Tri-Met board. Up until this session that Board was an autocratic group appointed by the Governor (with some help from City Hall) with no review by the Legislature on who was appointed or for what reason. All but one of the current Board, came from Portland's west-side elite (sometimes referred to as Limousine Liberals). Washington county, Clackamas county, Gresham, bruised and sometimes forgotten in such things as downtown malls and exclusive bus lanes, were allowed to participate but only in pungling up the money for the plans of the Tri-Met Board.
>
> Now Whipple has passed a bill going before the Governor which changes that, and in a small measure, spikes the taxing guns of the Board. Up until this session that Board had the power to arbitrarily lay on a sales tax, an income tax, a payroll tax, or you name it. It was the only taxing authority in the entire state with the ability to decide what you are going to pay, without asking anyone.
>
> But the new law provides that the Tri-Met Board members will be appointed from representative sub-district areas, giving a voice to East

Blaine Whipple chairing The Senate Local Government and Elections Committee in a hearing in Klarnath Falls, Oregon. Photo, courtesy Oregon State Legislature.

Multnomah county, to Clackamas county, and to Washington county, as well as Portland's West side. Even more important, these appointments, like most other important government roles of power, will, for the first time, be reviewed and confirmed by the Senate.

And the taxing gun has been removed from the temples of homeowners, job holders, and businessmen who pay the bills. Now Tri-Met taxing power must have in-put and approval of the people who will pay. Someone once offered a line about "taxation without representation." It may be stretching a little to credit that to the Senator from Washington county and his fight to bring Tri-Met back to the people. But it seems like a battle cry for Blaine Whipple.[289]

He was a sponsor of and leading Senate advocate of the Sunset bill. It provided that 44 state agencies or programs would automatically expire over the next eight years unless re-authorized by the Legislature. In advocating passage he said "the loss of public trust is based on the waste and duplication of efforts, conflicting purposes, inequities, red tape, and people's attitudes towards bureaucrats." He said he hoped the law would help restore public confidence in government.[290]

A bill passed in June provided a check-off for political parties similar to Blaine's Ballot Measure 7 rejected by 71.4 percent of voters in the November election. It provided public funding – not of candidates but of political parties – through a $1 check-off system diverting taxes from the general fund. He voted no, believing it would foster "the serious alienation between the people and their elected representatives and buttress their belief that voting doesn't make a difference because the Legislature will do what it wants."

During the Senate debate, he pointed out that voters in all 30 state Senate Districts voted no. He argued that only a minority of taxpayers

would use the check-off but the majority of taxpayers would be affected because the estimated $450,000 to be generated would not be available for other state programs. He questioned the bill's fairness because it excluded members of Oregon's minor parties such as the Liberty Party, the Socialist-Labor Party, The American Independent Party, and others who should have the same right as Democrats and Republicans. It passed and became law.[291]

Blaine voted against bills in both the 1975 and 1977 sessions to lower the drinking age to 19. In 1977, he and Senator Lenn Hannon of Ashland sponsored the "Kegger Bill" which became law. It made kegs of beer supplied to teen-agers traceable to their adult purchasers through serial numbers. Purchasers of kegs containing seven and a half gallons or more have to show their driver's and automobile license numbers and sign an affidavit that they will not serve the beer to minors. The penalty was a Class A Misdemeanor. Purchasers caught supplying kegs to minors were subject to a year in jail and/or a $1,000 fine plus an equal penalty for falsely swearing. Destroying the identifying number was also a misdemeanor. Blaine hoped the law would eliminate keg parties, some of which attract up to 700 youngsters under the age of 21, and resulted in traffic deaths.[292]

As Chairman of the Local Government Committee he guided the passage of the law to create a Metropolitan Service District to replace five existing legislative bodies with different boundaries, different governing boards, and different taxing authorities. Referred to the voters in the May 1978 primary, the bill received a majority vote in each of the three counties it affected – Washington, Clackamas, and Multnomah. He was instrumental in developing legislation to share state revenue with cities and counties to help control property taxes. His bills to require revenue impact statements on new legislation that required local government to implement new programs and to allow local governments to self insure passed.

His bill to allow handicapped persons to operate small golf-cart type vehicles on certain public streets passed. *The Oregonian* editorialized that the bill "puts Oregon's handicapped citizens on the same basis as service men and women who are away from the state during elections."[293] He was applauded for this bill by Richard Mitchell of the United Cerebral Palsy Association of Northwest Oregon because it made another element of "full independent living" available to the handicapped.[294] He sponsored the law allowing deduction of adoption expenses from Oregon state income tax.[295]

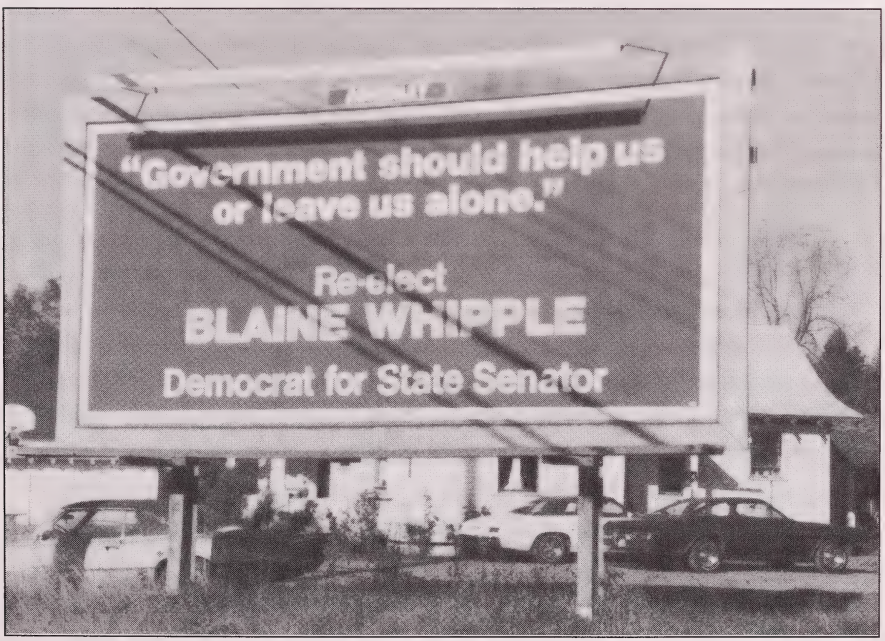
Blaine was named Co-Chairman of the Committee to advocate passage of Measure 2, a proposed Constitutional amendment on the 1978 general election ballot to provide low interest loans for non nuclear energy facilities. It would fund facilities to produce energy from the sun, wind,

tides, geothermal heat and garbage, sewage, wood wastes, and other solid wastes which could be converted to fuel. Entities supporting passage included the Association of Oregon Industries, the Oregon AFL-CIO, the Oregon Environmental Council, Governor Robert Straub and former Governor Tom McCall.[296]

He chose not to seek re-election to a fourth term on the Intermediate Education District Board and was presented a school bell as a token for his 10 years service.[297] He was appointed to the Education Commission of the States, a nonprofit corporation formed by interstate compact in 1966, to foster working relationships among state legislators, governors, and educators.[298] He served on four Committes during the interim: Chairman, Boundary Commission Task Force, Vice Chairman, Urban Renewal Task Force, the Joint Committee on Trade and Economic Development, and the Senate Committee on Executive Appointments.[299]

In November he was the luncheon speaker at the annual convention of the League of Oregon Cities in Portland. His topic was "Observations on Spending State Revenue Sharing."[300] He was also elected to a three-year term on the Washington Council on Aging in November.[301]

Both Blaine and Tom Hartung filed for election in District 3 – early in 1978. Political reporters predicted the re-run would be "a rock em-sock em" campaign. They said Hartung, President of the Oregon Agri-Business Council, "has been under strong pressure from the Oregon Republican Party to launch an early campaign." They expected it to be "the most expensive Senate contest of 1978."



Blaine was in Washington, D. C. In mid May representing the Oregon State Senate in Congressional hearings on public land legislation. He was part of a Western States Coalition of 30 legislators, 30 county officials, and other state and local government officials from 15 states. They were seeking new public land legislation to give state and local governments a larger role in public land use and management decisions. The Coalition was sponsored by the Western Conference of the Council of State Governments and the National Association of Counties. They made formal presentations to Congressional Committees, held round table discussions with the Forest Service and the Bureau of Land Management, and lobbied members of the Senate Energy and Natural Resources Committee and the House Interior Committee.[302]

In July Blaine was selected by the National Conference of State Legislators to be one of a 19-person delegation to visit the People's Republic of China. The invitation came from China's central government and was part of a continuing program by both countries to improve relations by people-to people visits. Each delegation member paid his own cost. Their 14-day visit included Canton, Peking, Shanghai, and Kwelin, rural communes, schools, factories, mills, day care facilities, housing developments, hospitals, museums, tourist attractions, Buddhist Temples, the Shanghai Industrial Exhibit, and the Canton International Trade Fair. They met with Representatives of the National People's Congress at the Great Hall of the People in Peking and the Municipal Revolutionary Committee of Shanghai.[303]

Upon his return from China, which had turned into a round the world trip, including six days on the Trans- Siberian Express across northern China, Mongolia, Siberia, European Russia, and ending at Moscow, he was in demand as a speaker before various groups and as a writer for various newspapers sharing his insights on that part of the world, virtually unknown to most Americans. Following is his written report:

> As a boy during World War II, when China was featured on the movie newsreels and in *Life Magazine*, I became fascinated with that nation and yearned to visit. Following the war, the Communist takeover and our country's withdrawing recognition, I lost all hope of visiting there. But this August, I flew to the other side of the world and made that long-desired visit to what is alternatively known as "Real," "Red," "Mainland," or "The People's Republic of China."
>
> Our time in China spanned two weeks and we crisscrossed the country by plane, train, and automobile during the hottest month of the year. For the first time, even the tips of my fingers sweat. Our odyssey began in San Francisco with a day of orientation before the 13-hour nonstop flight to

Hong Hong Kong where we were housed at the Mandarin Hotel, one of the finer hotels in the world. It was on that flight we lost Monday. It vanished at the International Date line, a space-time fudge factor I have never fully understood. Another orientation session came with the American Counsel General and his staff in Hong Kong.

We saw the best and the worst of capitalism in Hong Kong. Extreme poverty and great wealth exist side by side. Watching the night lights of the Star Ferry glimmering in the fog from my hotel room as it left Kowloon Harbor while simultaneously seeing the roof tops below me littered with construction workers sleeping on rubber mats brought the contrast into focus.

The station where we entrained to Canton was jammed and the Hong Kong hawkers were out in force for one last chance at the dollar. My eyes were drawn to an important sign. "Attention. No Toilet on the Train." The humidity was overbearing and the overhead pinwheel fans weren't working. I'm glad I brought a sweatband.

The train left at 8:08 a.m. The ride north to the border where the Union Jack flew over Lo Wu Station took an hour. Hong Kong custom officials stamp "departed" on our passports. A green arrow pointed to Canton and we trudged, bags in hand, over the narrow wooden bridge into China. It was my first time to cross an international border on foot. I am behind the "Bamboo Curtain" and saw the first of many signs: "Long Live the Unity of the Workers of the World." These signs, in Chinese and English, are placed in train and plane stations throughout China.

The wait at the border was about two hours. Several hundred foreigners – from France, Germany, Japan, Hong Kong – were traveling at the same time. Our group was moved to the head of the line and quickly cleared customs. No one looked at our luggage but we were told not to take pictures at the border. It was the only time in China we felt the presence of the military. Before leaving we had our first Chinese meal. The food throughout the country was excellent. By the end of our journey we were all proficient with chopsticks.

The Chinese train was vastly different from the Kowloon train. It had an air of Victorian elegance and was spotlessly clean. Shortly after leaving a woman attendant served us refreshing tea and then wet-mopped the aisle. Iowa Senators Bob Rush and John Scott and Rep. Dave Lausten of South Dakota and I reversed seats so we could travel as a foursome. The colors of China glided by as peasants in conical hats, stooped knee-deep in lime-green rice paddies, added interest to the scene. Terraced hillsides were furrowed in the distance and water buffalo and ducks were everywhere. Towns

slipped by. Friendly people waved. Virtually no farm mechanization was observed.

The thrill of seeing what's behind the Bamboo Curtain gave us a Marco Polo complex. We felt like explorers and had to fight hard to remind ourselves that we didn't discover China. We arrived at Canton station only to be whisked to the airport for a 3-hour plane ride (1,100 air miles) to Peking where our visit began in earnest. Fortunately we return to Canton for our final three days in China.

We learned in the four days there and in the surrounding countryside visiting a farming commune, the Great Wall, and the Ming Tombs that Peking is the political, economic, and cultural center of China. In the city we visited the Imperial Palace, the Zoo, the Summer Palace, Mao's Tomb, and the Chinese History Museum. We had discussions with educational administrators, had a banquet with Chinese officials, attended an opera, and had a meeting with my old friend and colleague from Democratic National Committee days, Ambassador Leonard Woodcock.

It was in Peking that I sensed the enormity of the population, conservatively estimated as 700 million. Some experts believe it may be a billion. Masses of people are everywhere at all hours of the day and night. You are moved along as you walk the streets. Personal safety was of no concern. Never once did I feel in jeopardy. And I was on the streets, in stores, and outside markets on poorly lighted back streets as late as 1 a.m.

The people, at least in the summer, get around by bicycle. Busses and subways provide mass transportation. Automobile traffic is restricted to trucks, taxis, government cars, and tourist cars. There are few private cars. Some cars are made in Shanghai but most are Japanese models with a few American, Russian, and various European models. They are kept spotless. Taxi drivers wash their engines daily so they look as new as the day they came off the assembly line. Exteriors are feather-dusted .

Among the things that impressed me the most was the apparent contentment of the people. Everyone seemed to be adequately housed and fed. Educational opportunities were abundant and most adults had jobs. There were no signs of great wealth and the standard of living was extremely low compared to U. S. standards but considering the enormity of the population, that only 15 percent of the land area is usable, an acceptable standard of living, and the relative freedom of the people suggests that the central government is doing a good job.

The reader must consider that these impressions are based on two weeks in the country. Visiting China raises more questions than it answers. Our del-

egation was tightly scheduled and carefully guided. While we had input, our lack of knowledge made this moot. We were given reasonable amounts of free time without restrictions on how we used the time. For example, I spent two days in Peking away from the delegation while touring with a Mexican national. We rented a car with an English speaking driver and visited all sections of the city and countryside.

Our hosts showered us with luxuries unavailable to the average citizen. We were chauffeured in motorcades of 10 cars – no more than two VIPS per car –, pampered in luxury hotels for "foreigners only," ushered to special waiting rooms in train and plane stations, given choice seats at opera, acrobatic, and other events, and repeatedly escorted to the front of long lines. While I saw nothing sinister about such treatment, it did cause nagging doubts. Was I seeing the real China or a polished substitute? Was our tour rigged? Are those real monks in that Buddha Temple or bit players from the Chinese equivalent of Actor's Equity?

China presents another frustration for the visitor who wants to learn. Without interpreters, I might as well have been deaf. My Mandarin ended with "ni hau" (hello) so my impressions are nothing more than that – impressions. But as I speak to various groups and share my color slides, Oregonian view me as an expert because so few Americans have visited China – 7,000 last year, 12,000 this year. I heard that foreign visitors only meet about 70 of the 700 million Chinese and most of those are interpreters. Most of us are probably taken to the same silk factory, model commune, workers' housing complex, day care center, steel mill, pottery factory. We ride showcase trains, visit the same homes for "candid" interviews with model families who have told the same story to scores of previous visitors.

My day usually began about 5:30 a.m. Breakfast was ready by 7:30 so I had two hours to watch the stirrings of a new day. In Peking the early morning place to visit is Tiananmen Square. Thousands were there doing a variety of exercises and playing competitive games. The Museum of Chinese History was nearby. This massive structure is dedicated to the many accomplishments of the Chinese people through the ages with well-documented exhibits. Interestingly, Confucius is not mentioned and the answer to my question of why suggested the central government found his teachings unacceptable.

Also near the Square are the Great Hall of the People and the People's Congress where important diplomatic meetings and conferences are held. I learned that political diversity was allowed and that not all members of Congress are Communists. However, our guide did not provide details when pressed for more specific information on the political life of the Con-

gress.

The Chinese are proud of their past, even though what the various emperors represented is contrary to Communist belief and practices. Since the Communist history is limited, we visit ancient places like the Imperial Palace (formerly called the Forbidden City, as only emperors were allowed to reside there.) The grounds encompass 250 acres surrounded by a wall and moat. Five beautiful white bridges built about 1420 and the Golden Water River make an impressive picture as one approaches the major palaces after the Gate of Great Harmony. It is not possible to spend time to view everything but the Halls of Supreme Harmony, Complete Harmony and Preserving Harmony are "must see" as are the palaces of Heavenly Purity, Earthly Tranquility, and Propitious Harmony.

A visit to the Great Wall near Peking is mandatory. Built to keep out the barbarians, it helps farming by breaking up the strong winds coming from the Mongolian Plains. Built of granite blocks and stone brick, it averages 22 feet in height, 18 feet wide, and 22 feet thick at the base. The width was necessary to allow the granite blocks to be moved along its top over the steep mountains and rough terrain of its 3,333 mile length. Walking on the wall is challenging and appropriate shoes are a must. After walking it on a very hot day, I learned China has a "bottle bill." After drinking a bottle of lemon pop, I returned it to the vendor who gave me a deposit I didn't know I had paid.

We visited a farming commune with a population of about 20,000. Grain was the main crop with duck and vegetables secondary. Workers lived in long attached single-story structures, most with private garden plots. Schools, hospitals, movies, and other shopping needs were available. The doctors, known as "barefoot doctors," worked in the fields with the peasants. Their training was probably equal to a paramedic in the U. S. The hospital bordered on the primitive. Nothing about it remotely approached our standards. But it had few patients. Medical care is free and preventive medicine is practiced.

There seemed to be adequate supplies of consumer goods throughout the country. I visited the Tungfeng Commercial Center in Peking which housed dozens of small shops offering a wide variety of handicrafts, watches, transistor radios, cameras, food, clothes, etc. The only things rationed were cotton goods and stamps. We met with Ambassador Woodcock and I spent time at the Soviet and Mongolian embassies making arrangements to travel to those countries before returning home.

Chinese men may not marry before age 28, women 25. Population growth is

controlled by limiting couples to two children. Young people seem almost asexual. There was no suggestion of romance between them and premarital sex was a crime.

We visited Shanghai, the country's largest city whose population was estimated to be 10 million. We flew the 833 air miles in about two hours. During three days there, we visited the Shanghan Arts and Crafts Research Institute, met with judicial and city planning officials, visited the Children's Palace, a worker's residential area, a Buddhist Temple, the Industrial Exhibition, and met with the Vice Chairman of the Shanghai Revolutionary Committee. It's main waterway, the Whangpoo river, makes its China's major trading port – half of the country's exports originate here. The harbor is inefficient. During our meeting with the Vice Chairman I briefed him on Portland's Port and suggested we might have the consultants they need to modernize. I conveyed my conservation to the Port of Portland officials upon my return.

I learned first hand about the ancient Chinese art of acupuncture in Shanghai. I was having trouble walking with violent muscle cramps and spasms in my right leg. I was taken to a hospital where the three doctors who consulted with me through an interpreter recommended acupuncture. The acupuncture specialist seemed nervous and was obviously worried about treating an American. I asked how long he had been practicing and when he answered 45 years, I assured him I felt I was in safe hands. I had five treatments – two in Shanghai and three in Kewelin. The traditional method was used in Shanghai, seven needles placed on the outside of the leg from the buttock to the ankle. The Kewelin doctor used electrical acupuncture which required four needles. The treatment worked with no recurrence. The cost per treatment was approximately $4 U. S.

The Shanghai Children's Palace is a beautiful converted mansion on palatial grounds with children playing, singing, dancing, studying, listening to lectures, and doing homework. Their ages were kindergarten through teen age. We were told that gifted children from the various schools study there. We visited a steel mill designed and built by the Russians in the 1950s. Many of its operators were women. The Chinese female workers are called "former housewives" because they work alongside men in all jobs. A large day-care center was across the street from the factory. Some of the children only spent weekends with their family.

We visited a workers' housing center. It was a 3-story concrete buildings with one and two rooms plus a tiny kitchen and toilet with shower. Each had a patio used for storage. Few Americans would find the accommodations acceptable but this was considered choice housing. The center

included schools, shops, and play areas. We met with planning officials who said all housing is built near new factories, manufacturing plants, and mills and includes transportation considerations.

Kewelin, just north of the North Vietnamese border, is advertised as the beauty spot of the country. Its scenery is spectacular and we did mostly tourist things including a 3-hour ride down the Li river, visiting Butterfly Mountain, Seven Star Cave, and the Reed Flute Cave. We saw the movie *East is Red*, a government propaganda film of how modern China emerged from the ravages of capitalism.

From Kewelin it was back to Canton where the Canton Export Commodities Trade Fair is held twice a year and attracts merchants from 100 nations who come to sell and buy. Some 1,500 Yankee traders have attended and business between the U. S. and China was expected to reach $700 million in 1978. During our three days, we visited a silk textile factory, a pottery factory, and a heavy machinery factory. We were treated to a driving tour of the city and visits to museums and restaurants.

One of my surprises in China was to be mobbed like a rock star. As I strolled down main and side streets, entered shops and workers' cafes, paused to watch checker and card games being played on the sidewalks., I was mobbed. Americans were an oddity. Virtually no one had ever seen one of us and it was impossible for a 6 foot plus American to blend in with a Chinese crowd. Those with cameras wanted me to pose for pictures with them. I brought several thousand red rose lapel stick-ons provided by the Portland Chamber of Commerce. Everyone wanted one as a memento from "the American."

China is a fascinating country. I have been privileged to travel through most of Europe – east and west – and parts of Asia. If given an opportunity to repeat any of my travels, China would be first on my list.

I concluded my Chinese tour by flying back to Peking where I boarded the Trans-Siberian Express and began a six-day journey across Northern China, Outer Mongolia, Siberia, into European Russia and finally into Moscow only four minutes behind schedule. That I was able to make arrangements for the second half of my tour in a day and a half in Peking gives an idea of the freedom of movement in the country.

After time in Moscow, I entrained to Leningrad (St. Petersburg) for a visit, then on to Helsinki and London, where I flew home, completing an around the world trip in four weeks. The memories will be with me always. It was an opportunity few Americans have experienced.

In early September, Blaine received a letter from the Chairman of the State Democratic Party offering a campaign contribution of $221 if he committed in writing "to lead all efforts against repeal" the dollar check-off law in the next two sessions of the Legislature. Chairman Jim Klonoski said the letter was authorized by the State Central Committee's Executive Committee. Blaine, concerned the letter could be termed a bribe, turned it over to the Legislative legal counsel for advice.

Klonoski told the press he didn't consider it a bribe, only an effort to bring Blaine back into the Party on this issue. He said "Senator Whipple had strayed off the reservation on legislation the Party considered absolutely essential to its well being" and that "dissatisfaction runs deep in the Party because no one knows better than Blaine how badly the Party was in need of funds." He noted that Blaine was the Chairman and "lone Democrat on the Elections Committee" to oppose the check-off. Disregarding Blaine's support for public financing and the public's vote against it in 1976, he said the State Central Committee felt it was "unethical and improper" to give Blaine money raised by a law he opposed and his vote "to thwart the Party enraged its members."[304]

Greg McMurdo, Assistant Secretary of State, said his office would investigate whether the offer violated state law which prohibits potential campaign contributors from exerting undue influence on candidates by using promises of money, benefits, or anything else of value. The State Ethics Commission also launched an investigation.[305] McMurdo ruled after consultations with the Attorney General that Klonoski did not violate election law by putting conditions on the contribution but said his dismissal of the investigation "should not imply that the Secretary of State's office condoned Klonoski's actions.[306] The Oregon Ethics Commission determined that Klonoski did not meet the legal definition of a lobbyist and therefore did not fall under its jurisdiction. State law defined a lobbyist as a person who spends 16 hours per calendar quarter lobbying members of the Legislature or a person who spends $50 per calendar quarter on lobbying efforts.[307]

The Oregonian editorialized that it was "clear that the new law has been abused. The check-off was not intended to give party bosses clubs, donated by taxpayers, to use over candidates. . . the law needs an amendment forbidding use of the funds as a club to force candidates to become lobbyists or deliver up their votes on demand."[308] The *Herald-News* of Klamath Falls wrote that the Democratic Party made a mistake offering a campaign contribution for a future vote, especially to a politician "who's on the outs with the state organization anyway." The offer of money to a politician to take a particular position on an issue comes uncomfortably close to meeting a dictionary definition of a bribe. The thing that proba-

bly keeps it from being an illegal act is the small amount involved.[309] The *Bend Bulletin's* editorial noted that the theory behind the contribution plan was that candidates for elective office financed from the public treasury would be less beholden to special interests, than if they were required to beat the bushes for funds. Public money is not as bad, the theory holds, as corporate or labor union money. Few of those who voted for the plan expected party officials would use the carrot of taxpayer provided funds to order elected officials to vote a certain way.[310]

As the rematch headed toward election day, Hartung told the press his 1974 defeat was a surprising upset based on his misplaced "sense of security in his standing with the voters." He thought he would be reelected based on his record. He said he considered "Blaine politically smart" but would not repeat his mistakes in 1978. He said he hired a campaign coordinator, organized a strong network of workers in every voting precinct, planned to walk door-to-door, distribute 600 lawn signs, buy billboard space, and mail campaign literature. He said he would go after "Whipple's stands on controversial issues" which he "couldn't name off the top of my head" but was sure he could show "Whipple's voting record did not always serve the district well."[311]

In the last days of the campaign, the Hartung committee distributed a tabloid newspaper which included a full page devoted to its perception of Blaine's legislative record. Blaine's committee called it a "false, irresponsible, and distorted presentation." It said three of the Hartung statements were outright false with other statements full of innuendo that grossly distorted his record. Oregon law expressly prohibited false statements of material fact relating to any candidate but it was too late to file a court action. Blaine's committee published advertisements in all District newspapers correcting the Hartung distortions the final week but it was too late.

The *Argus* made its endorsements early. It seldom endorsed a Democrat so Hartung's endorsement was no surprise. It wrote that it "could not quarrel" with Blaine's accomplishments but because "of his support of Super-MSD his interests lie more with metropolitan Portland than with metropolitan Third District." However, Representatives Mark Gardner and Mike Ragsdale, who both voted for "Super-MSD" were endorsed.[312]

The Oregon Journal endorsed Blaine citing his long involvement in social and political causes and his success as a legislator.[313] *The Community Press'* endorsment said Blaine was "a maverick Democrat who played a leadership role in state government. Voters would be wise to stick with him."[314]

Blaine's campaign raised $17,555; Hartung raised $19,298[315] and won the election.[316]

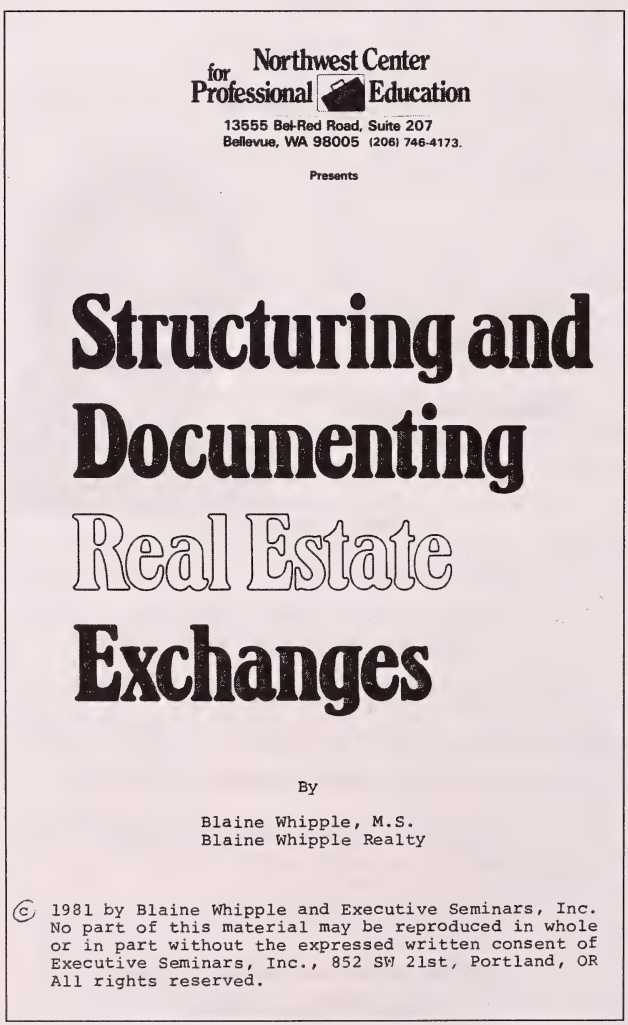
Losing led Blaine to conclude that electoral politics was not his forte. He was ahead of the voters on most issues, direct in communication, did

not hesitate to take stands on controversial issues, and made no effort to avoid political battles. His wife and key supporters cautioned him to soften his public image but that wasn't who he was so he decided to retire from politics. In December, he deeded his public papers to the citizens of Washington county as an outright and unrestricted donation to be used in the best interests of the county and its residents. The 17 cartons of his senate records were turned over to the Washington County Museum. Included was constituent correspondence, printed records, research materials, photographs, maps, campaign material, and other historical source material. Museum Director Dick Matthews said "Senator Whipple is the first public official to share all his records with the public of Washington county. We hope his donation will establish a precedence. Receipt of this kind of material will assure future citizens a more complete picture of the history of these times."[317]

CONCENTRATES ON REAL ESTATE CAREER

Beginning in 1979 he devoted full time to his real estate brokerage business and successfully completed all the professional seminars offered by the Commercial-Investment Real Estate Council of the Realtors National Institute, including Advanced Tax Planning for Commercial Real Estate. He became a real estate counselor and limited his brokerage service to professional investors. He was an active member of the Oregon and Portland Board of Realtors, the Realtors Exchange club

of Portland and the Meaningful Arrangement of Real Estate Transactions (MART) Club of Vancouver, Washington. He served on the Board of Directors as Vice President and President of both organizations. He won service awards from both and was named "Exchangor of the Year" by both on several occasions. He was a member of the Commercial Investment Marketing Exchange of Oregon, The Million Dollar Property Exchange, The Puget Sound Exchange Club, and the National Council of Exchangors, California and Oregon Chapters, and represented his clients at real estate marketing sessions in Oregon, Washington, Montana, California, and Nevada, serving as a transaction moderator. With changes in real estate law, real estate exchanging became an economic necessity for real estate investors. When done in compliance with Section 1031 of the Internal Revenue Code, a relatively unknown and unused code section, it allowed investors to defer payment of capital gains tax and invest their entire equity in new property.


Northwest Center for Professional Education
13555 Bel-Red Road, Suite 207
Bellevue, WA 98005 (206) 746-4173.

Presents

Structuring and Documenting Real Estate Exchanges

By

Blaine Whipple, M.S.
Blaine Whipple Realty

© 1981 by Blaine Whipple and Executive Seminars, Inc. No part of this material may be reproduced in whole or in part without the expressed written consent of Executive Seminars, Inc., 852 SW 21st, Portland, OR All rights reserved.

Photo courtesy, Blaine Whipple

Blaine educated himself on the Code and became an authority for this type of transaction which, properly used, was a powerful wealth building tool. He was dubbed the "Section 1031 guru" and conducted a one day seminar, "Structuring and Documenting Real Estate Exchanges," in Oregon, Washington, Montana,

Idaho, Utah, Colorado, and Hawaii. His students were tax attorneys, public and certified public accountants, Realtors, and investors. The seminar focused on Revenue Rulings and landmark court decisions and included a comprehensive 115-page workbook, authored by Blaine, which served as a guide on how to structure and document legal exchange transactions.

He also taught a "Real Estate Acquisition Techniques for the 1980s" seminar designed for Realtors and investors. The one day course included a comprehensive workbook with over 60 field tested and proven formulas to buy and sell real estate. He taught that "a cash purchase is only one of a hundred ways" to acquire real estate and presented a wide range of formulas to be used in negotiating and structuring real estate financing. The goal was to help the student achieve financial independence.

Over the years Blaine was listed in *Who's Who in the West, Who's Who in American Politics, Who's Who in Finance and Industry, Who's Who in Creative Real Estate, Personalities of the West and Midwest, Dictionary of International Biography*, *Contemporary Notables*, and *The Political Graveyard.*

PUBLISHED GENEALOGIES

Blaine began working on his mother's genealogy (the Scott family) in the early 1970s. Her ancestors were from Ireland and France. The French settled in Quebec Province Canada in the mid and late 1600s and the first Scotts left Sligo, Ireland for Quebec in the early 1700s. About 150 members of the Scott family attended a reunion in Underwood, North Dakota July 4 and 5 1981. Blaine self-published a 206 page Scott history-genealogy, *Scott, A Name Worth Looking Into*, for that event. The genealogy encompassed 13 generations and included 138 photographs. Genealogical Appendix 5 includes information on these families.

He published *History and Genealogy of "Elder" John Whipple of Ipswich, Massachusetts His English Ancestors and American Descendants* in cooperation with Trafford on-demand publishing service of Victoria, British Columbia, Canada in 2003. The 671 page book, divided into historical and genealogical sections, includes illustrations and an every name index. In addition to six historical chapters, it includes 6,910 individuals, 1,570 surnames, and 2,544 marriages in 15 generations. Sources are cited in end notes.

John, along with his elder brother Matthew, subject of this book, arrived in Ipswich, Essex County Massachusetts in 1638 from Bocking, Essex County England and today their descendants are found in every state in the nation. Among John's descendants is General William Whipple, a Signer of the Declaration of Independence who represented New

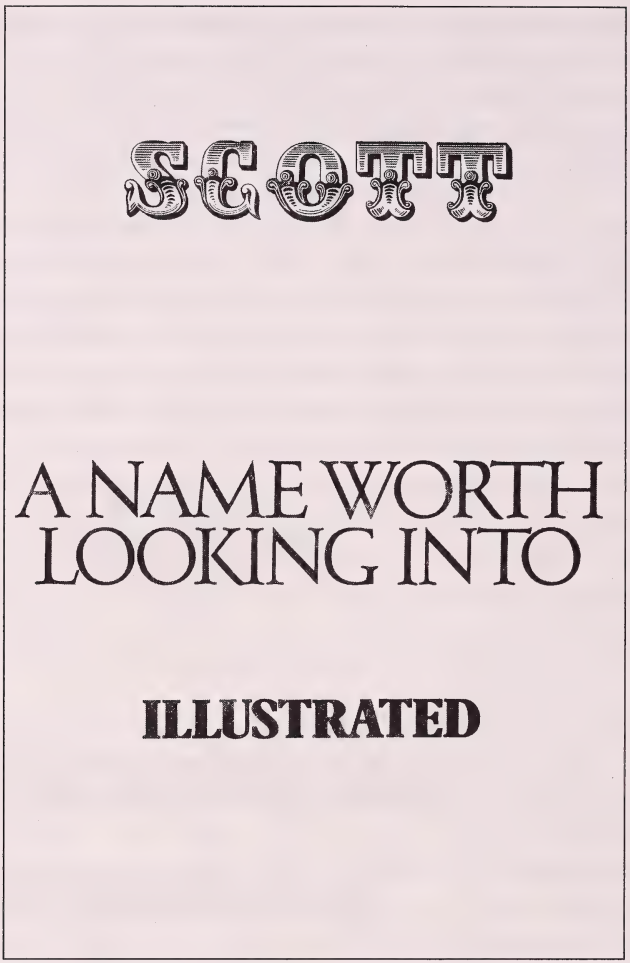


Photo courtesy, Blaine Whipple

Hampshire in the Continental Congress. His biography appears in Historical Appendix 5, "Whipple Soldiers And Sailors In The Revolutionary War." Elder John's biography is in Historical Appendix 10.

Diane Ptak, Certified Lineage Specialist with over 25 years of family historical research, reviewed the book and wrote: "Rarely does one come across a family history text of this depth. Ambitious and rich in detail, it is a genealogical compilation and also an historical accounting that will appeal to students of colonial American history. Extensive historical backdrop has been intertwined with Whipple family story, expanding its time span and subject. This book is unsurpassed in detail, a captivating read, and a massive fait accompli."[318]

It may be purchased from the author or Trafford Publishing Co. The ISBN number is 15539576-1. Copies of both books are in the Library of

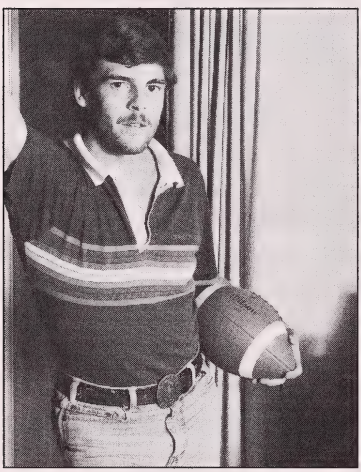
Congress, several state Historical Societies, and genealogical libraries.

In August 1981, a reporter from the *Valley Times* was assigned to find out what happened to the former Senator. The story line focused on his name:

> Shortly after Blaine Whipple was born, his mother had an afterthought. She decided she wanted a Bob. So, pen in hand, she inserted the name Robert on her infant son's birth certificate. But Whipple was never destined to be a Bob. Although the name stuck for awhile, it gradually gave way to Blaine – a name with some distinction, some flair. "There are just "so damn many Bobs," Whipple says.
>
> There's only one Blaine Whipple, however, and his name is as close to being a household word in Oregon as any ex-state senator's, ex-party leader's, ex-candidate's name could be. Five years ago he scored 85 percent on a statewide name recognition poll. Two years ago, his named placed second on another name familiarity test.
>
> When Whipple, who lives in West Tualatin View near Beaverton, won the Washington county District 3 state Senate seat in 1974, he was the first Democrat to take it in 40 years. Republican Tom Hartung took it away from him at the next election. Since then, Whipple has slipped into private life. "Out of sight out of mind," he says, expressing serious doubt that the Democratic Party will recruit him for candidacy soon, if ever.
>
> It's natural that the name Blaine Whipple should be well known in Oregon. He became active in state politics in 1958 and didn't drop out of sight until 1979. Besides, his is an uncommon name. "People remember it," says former state legislator Tom Marsh. If there's one reason Whipple lost his races, it's probably because of his plain-spoken style. "I've never been a blushing violet," Whipple says. "My wife says I'm too outspoken, that I should hold my tongue." But Blaine Whipple can no more hold his tongue than he could be a Bob.
>
> Sometimes the bluntness rubs people the wrong way, says Marsh, who now teaches political science at Sunset High School. Whipple says it's a matter of convictions. "I can generate controversy by being willing to take a stand," he explains. "I've always felt we should run on issues. That means taking a stand."
>
> The Vietnam War was one issue Whipple stood on firmly. "It was just tearing the country apart," he says. He supported a string of anti-war candidates from Morse to McCarthy, and McGovern. He remembers being with the late Oregon Sen. Wayne Morse in 1964 when Morse

Blaine and Ines Whipple at Christmas time.

Bob and Blaine on a 2-day raft trip to the mouth of the Deschutes River.

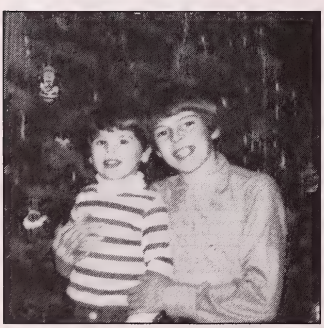


Bob, Sunset High School student. First string on the varsity football and record holder in track.

Blaine teaching Bob to ride a bike.

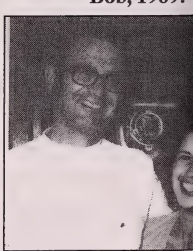
Judith and Bob Steele at the Se Needle.

Bob, 1969.



Bob and Scott, December 1971.

Bob with Molly and Nancy Jasperson and Pearl Whipple at the Oregon coast.



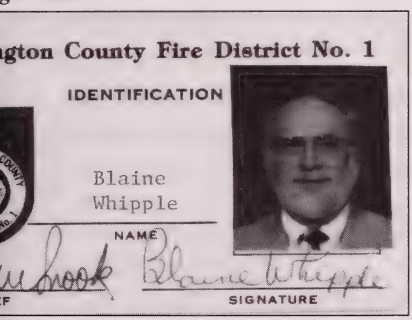
Blaine and Ines, July

Photos courtesy, Blaine Whipple

pple with his uncle Dick Whipple
gon beach.

Scott, Blaine, Judith, Ines.

Scott and Ines with Grandma Jo Peterson at the IOOF Cemetery in Independence, Oregon visiting the grave of Ines' grandparents Peter T. and Agnes Frye Peterson.



entification for the Fire District Board of

0th grade,
ligh School.

Scott and Ines.

Blaine and Scott,
January 1972.

Blaine and Ines Whipple Portland home.

gave his first anti Vietnam War speech. He chaired the Oregon "McCarthy for President" Committee in 1968 and the Oregon "McGovern for President" Committee in 1972. He's been prominent in the Democratic Party of Oregon, serving two years as Executive Secretary beginning in 1960 and two terms as Oregon's Democratic National Committeeman (1968-1976). He was Chairman of Oregon's Democratic delegation at the 1972 Miami Beach Convention. He served on the Washington County Intermediate Education District for 10 years, three years as Chairman of the Board.

Now on the sideline, Whipple casts a skeptical eye on the Party. "The Democratic Party has no presence in Oregon," he says. "I've been waiting for the Party to say we stand for something. It's like there's nothing out there." On the political spectrum, Whipple rates himself a progressive – "Somewhere between a far-out liberal and a conservative. We can't stand still, but maybe we shouldn't make the changes too sharp," he says, summing up his political philosophy.

On his desk sits a hand-carved, two-foot-long wooden nameplate, announcing the desk's owner like no engraved plastic nameplate could. Only someone who likes his name a lot would advertise it so boldly.

Although retiring from public life isn't a Whipplesque thing to do, Blaine Whipple has concluded that it's time to take care of his personal needs. His obligations to Oregon have been fulfilled. "There are two million other people out there," he says. "It's somebody else's turn now." He's in real estate these days. His firm? Blaine Whipple Realty.[319]

RETURNS TO PUBLIC SERVICE

Blaine reentered public service in July 1985 when he defeated an incumbent board member of the Wolf Creek Water District in the March election. He sought the office to further his goal of consolidating local governmental entities into fewer and more efficient entities. It was a continuation of his successful efforts while Chairman of the Senate Local Government and Elections Committee to merge 47 governments in the four-county metropolitan area into one – The Metropolitan Service District.

Wolf Creek was the largest single provider of drinking water in the county. Three smaller districts – West Slope, Raleigh Hills, and Metzger – were adjacent and the city of Beaverton received water service from Wolf Creek by contract for some areas in the city. New rules by the Environmental Protection Agency (EPA) requiring additional testing, labora-

tory work, and modifications created a major financial impact on all public water suppliers.

Blaine led the effort to form an eastern Washington County water authority to improve the service and mitigate the cost of water which was estimated to increase by $170 per hookup per year. In advocating an area wide water authority, he said it would allow more efficient expansion of water systems as the county's population increased. His ultimate goal was to form a county-wide authority responsible for drinking water, surface runoff water, and sewage treatment.

He was not successful in selling the area wide authority but his motion to merge the Wolf Creek and Metzger Water District into the Tualatin Valley Water District was passed unanimously. The result was significant savings for its patrons and development of long range plans to assure future water supplies. He was elected to two four terms by District patrons. He served as Treasurer the first three years and Chairman for two years. He did not serve a full second term, leaving the Board after the merger was accomplished.

In March 1987 he was elected to a four year term on the Board of Directors of Fire District No. 1 in Eastern Washington, defeating incumbent Elwyn Kinney 49.2 percent to 26.9 percent. A third candidate, Jeff Freedman, received 23.9 percent.[320] It was the largest fire district in the state outside of the major cities. Blaine's goal was the same as with the Metropolitan Service District and the merger of Wolf Creek and Metzger water districts – merge the district with the Sherwood District which bordered District No. 1 on the south and included the cities of Sherwood, Tualatin, and Tigard. He also campaigned for more resources and energy to address hazardous materials accidents and advocated creation of a labor/management committee. He decried the fact that firefighters had worked for seven months without a contract. Blaine's motion to merge the districts into The Tualatin Valley Fire District was passed unanimously. He served as the Board's Secretary-Treasurer.

He was appointed to the Washington County Emergency Medical Services Policy Board in July 1987. The organization established the protocols to be followed by fire departments and the private ambulance companies responding to accidents and other emergencies. Blaine left both Board to fulfill obligations he had assumed on the Board of the Tolovana Inn Condominium Homeowners Association in Cannon Beach.

As was the case when he left the Senate, he donated all his records from the three Boards to the Washington County Museum. His donation included agendas, minutes, resolutions, budgets, personnel information, Board policies, labor negotiations, merger negotiations, long range

planning, etc. His goal was to add to the public's knowledge of special district government in the late 1980s just as his donation of senate files did for state government in the late 1970s.

The Whipples purchased a condominium unit in the Tolovana Inn when they went on sale in 1972 and in 1986 he joined the Board of Directors where he has served continuously since and is scheduled to retire as Board Chairman following the Association's 35th annual meeting in February 2008. During his years of service he has served on most committees, as Secretary, Treasurer, and Chairman and earned the title of "Mr. Tolovana."

INES MAE PETERSON

Ines (Peterson) Steele, a widow and the mother of Judith Lynn (Judy), 14, and Robert Bruce (Bob), 6, married Blaine August 6, 1966 at the Cedar Hills Community Church. They met when both were volunteers for the Washington County March of Dimes. Born at Portland's Sanitarium Hospital September 24, 1929,[321] Ines was the only daughter and third of four children born to Owen Diamon Peterson (Pete) and Josephine (Jo) Berniece Bartruff. Her brothers: Wayne Allen, Owen Norman (Norm) and Robert Charles (Bob). The family lived at 6123 S. E. 20th Street in the Westmoreland neighborhood of Portland and were members of the Moreland Presbyterian Church where she attended Sunday School.

The kids attended Llewellyn Elementary School, 6301 S.E. 14th, walking the 12 blocks four times a day – morning, back and forth at lunch, and after school. She was a good student, enjoyed school, and had many friends. She was a member of the Safety Patrol, 4-H Club, Brownies, Girl Scouts, and earned spending money as a baby sitter. She attended Washington High School (1943-47), no longer in existence, where she was graduated in June 1947. While there was public bus service, she rode to school with one of her best friends whose father served as taxi driver. In her freshman year every student pledged to buy a war savings bond and when her father died in late October 1943, she had to give up school activities to work after school and Saturdays to meet the pledge obligation. She worked as a file clerk and collected documents and delivered abstracts to law and real estate offices for Abstract Title Company and Title and Trust Company.

Ines worked in the berry fields beginning in June, picking strawberries, black berries, black caps, and raspberries. She had to be up by 4:30 a.m. to catch the 5 o'clock buses carrying the pickers to the fields and orchards. During summer vacations the family rented a house in Long Beach, Washington and they all became expert clammers. One summer they motored to Yellowstone National Park. Her father was an avid salmon

fisherman and spent many of his days off fishing in the Clackamas, Willamette, and Columbia rivers. Sometimes Ines went along.

Following graduation she worked for Abstract Title Co. doing general office tasks including working on the switchboard, filing, bookkeeping, etc. She married Harold Steele February 24, 1951. Harold was born in Portland, Multnomah county April 10, 1929 and died of carcinoma cancer at the Portland Veterans Hospital September 3, 1962, age 33.[322] He served in the U. S. Air Force and they lived at the Moses Lake, Washington Air Force Base in 1952. After his discharge he worked in the parts department of Bunge Motors in Hillsboro before becoming manager of the Skyline Drive-in Restaurant on Skyline Boulevard in northwest Portland. The restaurant was owned by his parents, Bruce C. and Lena (Matzke) Steele. During this time Ines spent at least two fall harvest seasons working in filbert orchards.

As a member of two leagues, she bowled twice a week and maintained a high average. After Judith entered Sunset Valley elementary school she became a a room mother and continued to serve in that capacity when Bob and Scott attended West Tualatin View elementary. She also assisted Blaine who was an Indian Guides and Cub Scout leader. After Harold's death, she volunteered with the Washington County March of Dimes organization, was Mother's March Chair in 1964, and was a paid secretary in the Portland office. She was elected a National Foundation Advisor in June 1967 and Director of the Tri-County Chapter in June 1968 when the Washington, Multnomah, and Clackamas county chapters merged. After marrying Blaine she worked part time doing payroll for Mar-Don, a chain of hair styling salons, and in the accounting department for Inn Service Guide, an advertising company that provided advertising service to the tourist industry in Oregon, Washington, and Idaho.

Ines and her brothers are third generation Danes and fourth generation Germans. Her grandfather Peter T. Peterson was born April 2, 1869 in Oster Ulslev Parish, Maribo County, Denmark. He and his older brother Chris immigrated to the United States in 1887 and settled in Panama, Lancaster County, Nebraska. Peter married Agnes Faye Frye in Panama September 29, 1892. She was born February 20, 1876 on a farm in Peoria County, Illinois. Both died in Portland, Peter July 6, 1940 and Agnes December 11, 1962.[323]

Ines' great grandparents, Friederich Ludwig Bartruff and Katharine Frederika Spangler, emigrated from Germany in 1852. They lived in New York City, Portsmouth, Ohio, and finally settled on a farm near Anna, Union County, Illinois. Friederich was born June 6, 1826 in Winzerhausen, Oberamt, Marbach and died January 16, 1902. Katharina was born September 28, 1832, birth place unknown, and died June 29, 1899.

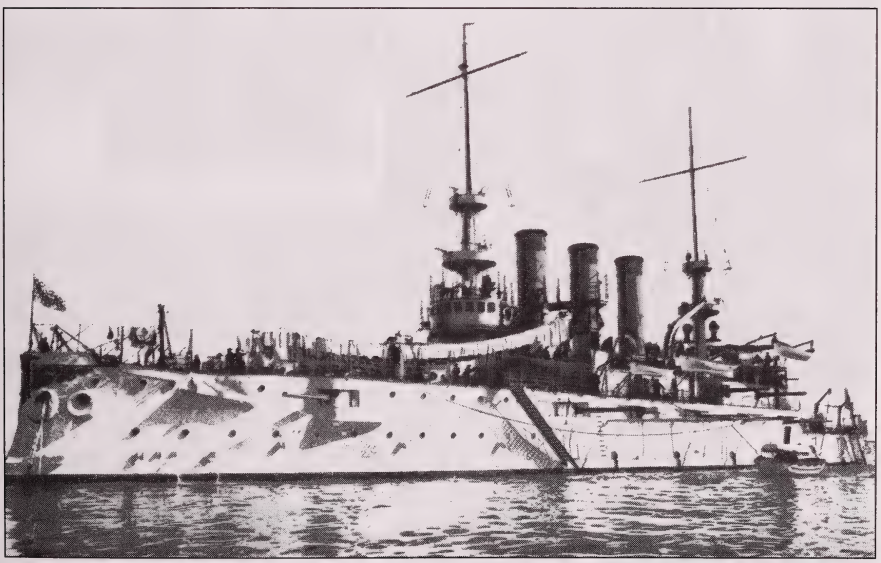
Both died in Union County. Bartruff is not a German name and family tradition suggests they were French Huguenots before moving to Germany.

Owen and his twin Oscar were born December 1, 1894 in Panama. He died October 28, 1943 of peritonitis in Portland, a month and three days shy of his 50th birthday. After three years of neutrality while battles raged in Europe, the United States declared war on Germany April 6, 1917 and Owen enlisted in the U. S. Navy December 14, and served at Mare Island near San Francisco briefly before being assigned Engineman duty on the battleship *USS Ohio* in Norfolk, Virginia from April through September 1918.[324] He was transferred to the *USS El Sol* in January 1919. It was a freighter used by the Naval Overseas Transportation Service carrying Army cargo to France.[325] It was converted to a troop transport after the War ended November 11, 1918. Owen's service included two trips to bring troops home from France.[326] He was discharged September 26, 1919 and worked in the Portland shipyard as an iron worker until September 30, 1921 when he joined the Portland Fire Department as a fireman. He had risen to the rank of Junior Captain at the time of death.

Owen and Jo were married February 14, 1924 in Corvallis. Jo was the ninth of 10 children born to Charles Jacob Bartruff and Anna Mary Loeb. Two of the 10 were sons. She was born March 21, 1901 on a 140 acre farm between Salem and Silverton. She attended East Middle Grove elementary school and two and a half years at Salem High School. Family financial considerations made it necessary for her to quit high school to work on her brother Elmer's farm in LaComb for a year and a half followed by six months working in the cook house of a logging camp in Yacolt, Washington. When the camp closed for the season, she moved to Portland and became a live-in domestic until 1920 when she enrolled in a nurses training course at Sellwood Hospital, graduating as a registered nurse three years later. Following Wayne's birth, she remained at home to raise the children. Two years after Owen died she began a 12 year career as a cook at Cleveland High School followed by 10 years as a clerk at the Portland State College Book Store. She retired in 1968 and died at 94 on their wedding anniversary February 14, 1995. She had been a widow for 52 years.

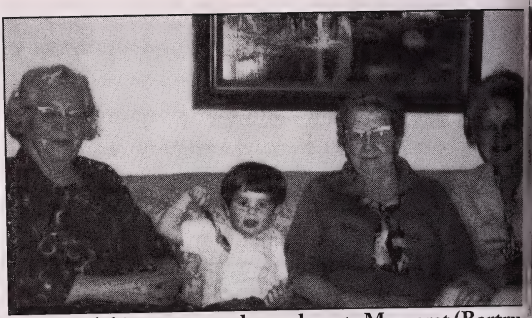
See Genealogy Appendix 7 for further information on the Peterson, Bartruff, Steele, and Matzke families.

The USS El Sol, a merchant vessel acquired by the Navy during WWI,was converted to a troop transport and Owen Peterson made two trips to France on her following war's end to bring troops back home. Photo, courtesy U.S. Navy.



Engineman Owen D. Peterson served on the Battleship *USS Ohio* during WWI from April through September 1918. Commissioned in San Francisco in 1904, it cost $2,899,000, weighed 12,500 tons, was 388 feet long, 72 feet wide, had a crew of 699 men and officers, and was armed with 20 guns. It was one of 16 battleships known as the *Great White Fleet* sent by President Theodore Roosevelt on the first 'round the world cruise' by a fleet of steam-powered steel battleships. The ships, all painted white except for gilded bows, left Hampton Roads, Virginia December 17, 1907 with 14,000 sailors and marines and sailed 43,377 miles during its 14-month circumnavigation, stopping at 20 ports on six continents. It sailed through the Straits of Magellan on the southern tip of South America into the Pacific, through the Suez Canal and from Gibralter accross the Atlantic arriving at Hampton Roads February 22, 1909. This cruise marked the emergence of the United States as a world power.

L to R: Cousins Ruth and Jo Bartruff and Gladys Bewley in Salem, Oregon, probably 1912.



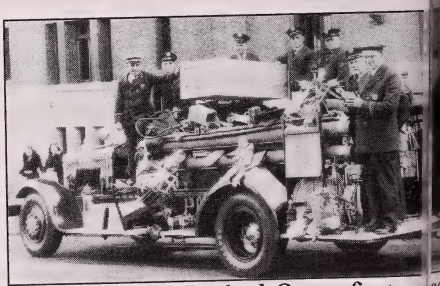
Scott with his great grand grand aunts Margaret (Bartru Bunch and Rose Bartruff and his grandmother Jo (Bartr Peterson.

Bob, Judith, Ines, and Scott sending Grandma Jo off on a trip to the Middle East in 1970.

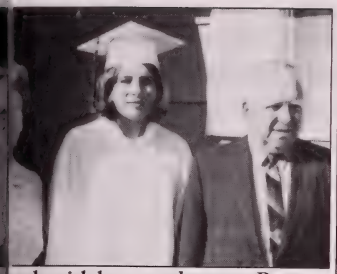
The Whipple Family: Ines, Judith, Bob, Scott &

Ines with her mother Jo, mothers-in-law Pearl and Lena Steele.

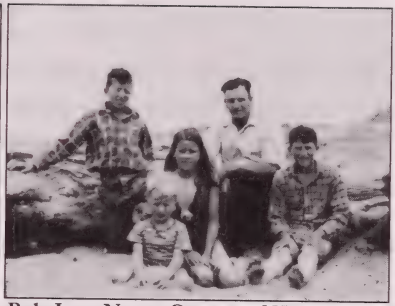
Scott, Ines, and aunt Ruth (Bartruff)Walter.



Owen Peterson on Portland, Oregon fire truc ond from left.



eele with her grandparents Bruce
ı Steele, at her Sunset High School
ɔn.

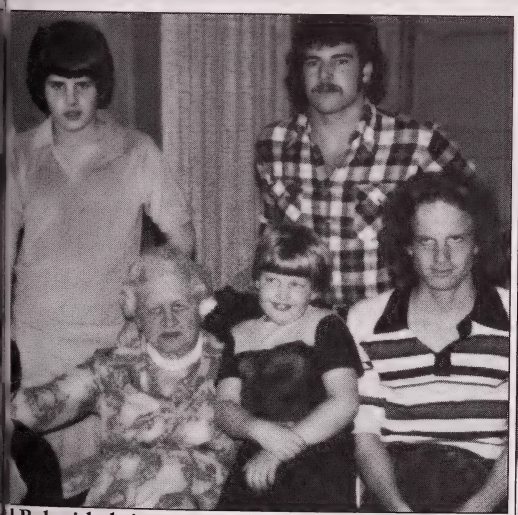


Bob, Ines, Norm, Owen, and Wayne Peterson at the coast in the late 1930s.

Ines Peterson, 1947.

ıd Bob with Grandpa Bruce Steele in Bend,
, Memorial Day 1972.

Ines Whipple, March of Dimes Director of the Tri-county chapter, awarding Certificates of Appreciation to March of Dimes volunteers Mrs. Harry Alex, Mrs. Ray Brunkow, and Mrs. Robert Calef of Portland.



l Bob with their cousins, John, James, and Mark Peter-
randmother Jo Peterson.

Four Generations. L to R: Josephine Berniece (Bartruff) Peterson, Sydney Lynn Steele-Long, Ines Mae (Peterson) Whipple, and Judith Lynn Steele.

Photos courtesy, Blaine Whipple

As this is being written Blaine is in his 78th year. His life span has included 13 presidents: Herbert Hoover (the 31st), Franklin D. Roosevelt (FDR), Harry S Truman, Dwight D.(Ike) Eisenhower, John F. Kennedy (JFK), Lyndon B. Johnson (JBJ), Richard M. Nixon, Gerald R. Ford, James E. (Jimmy) Carter, Ronald Reagan, George Herbert Walker Bush, William J. (Bill) Clinton, and George W. Bush (the 43rd). The country has been through seven wars: WWII (1941-1945), The Cold War (1945-1991) when rivalry between the U. S. and the Soviet Union fed the space race and a high-stakes nuclear arms buildup, climaxing with the 1962 Cuban missile crisis, and ending with the USSR's collapse. Korean War (1950-1953) U. N.-backed U. S. and South Korean forces fought to repel the Soviet and Chinese-sponsored North Korean invaders; some 103,000 Americans were wounded and 37,000 killed. Vietnam War (1955-1975). The U. S. supporting South Vietnam against the Communist North, approximately 58,00 killed, 300,000 wounded.

Persian Gulf War (1991) Iraq's annexing of Kuwait prompted a U. N.-backed U. S.-led bombardment and ground offensive that liberated the sheikdom. Four hundred U. S. troops were killed. War in Afghanistan (2001-2002). In the wake of the September 11, 2001 terrorist attacks and Afghanistan's refusal to turn over to the U. S. Osbama bin Laden, U. S.-led forces toppled the ruling Taliban. U.S. troops remain in Afghanistan today under U. N. auspices. War in Iraq (2003-) U. S.-led forces intent on regime change invaded in March; Baghdad fell in April. Hussein was captured in December. More than, 3,800 U. S. troops have died and 24,900 wounded; 160,000 are still deployed there..

He was born in a frontier town with no modern facilities, no telephone exchange, dentist, library, bus or train facilities. The family cooked and baked on a wood and coal burning stove which had a cistern providing a limited supply of hot water. Family baths were taken once a week – usually on Saturdays. Water heated on the kitchen stove was poured into a wash tub on the kitchen floor with the kids bathed in the same water, girls first when the water was clean and hot. Clothes were soaked in tubs of hot water then rubbed on wash boards, rinsed, and hung on outside clothes lines to dry. There was no central heating system so rooms upstairs received no heat in the winter. The family's water came from a well and there was a path to the outhouse. He was almost seven before the family moved to a town with public water and sewer and where toilet paper replaced pages from a *Sears* or *Ward's* catalogue, upstairs rooms were heated, and the streets were paved. The Martin fire department was declared the most primitive west of the Mississippi river. The

state and U. S. highways that traversed the town were dirt roads.

Blaine's first decade coincided with the greatest economic crisis in American history, the Great Depression, and the Dust Bowl. Male life expectancy was 58.1; female 61.6. There were 21 lynchings. The average salary was $1,368 and unemployment rose to 25 percent. Milk cost 14 cents a quart, bread 9 cents a loaf, and round steak 42 cents a pound. Parlor and board games were popular. Young people danced to the big bands. People escaped into books by popular writers like Agatha Christie, Dashiell Hammett, and Raymond Chandler. President Roosevelt influenced Americans with his fireside chats.

When he held his first press conference March 8, 1933, the country's banking system, the beating heart of a modern economy, was completely closed down. Many people thought revolution was in the offing. The early thirties saw the growing strength of dictators Adolph Hitler in Germany and Benito Mussolini in Italy and Spain's Civil War but the U. S. and its constitution survived. By 1939 Nazi Germany and Mussolini controlled most of Europe.

The Dust Bowl exodus was the largest migration in American history. By 1940 2.5 million people had moved out of the Plains states; of those 200,000 moved to California where they faced a life almost as difficult as the one they left.[327]

Roosevelt was elected on the promise of a New Deal for the American people. He stabilized the banking system, created the Civilian Conservation Corps (CCC) which employed 3 million single men from age 17 to 23, the Works Progress Administration (WPA) which employed more than 8.5 million, regulated the number of working hour per week, banned child labor, subsidized farmers, helped people save their homes from foreclosure, created Social Security, and gave workers the legal right to unionize. The Great Depression and the New Deal changed forever the relationship between American and their government.

Congress approved a proposal to merge countless state roads into a true national artery in 1926 and route 66 was completed six years later. In today's age of major four-and-six-lane thoroughfares to and from just about everywhere, it's not easy to conceive how one stretch of a two-lane highway could grip America's collective imagination. It was made famous by Bobby Troup who wrote just after WWII on his own trip west on that legendary highway, *Get Your Kicks on Route 66.* It was the escape route for farm families driven off their land by the Great Depression and the Dust Bowl.

Wanamaker's, the Philadelphia Department Store, offered the first modern revolving credit terms in the late 1930s. Customers holding its charge-a-plate were given the choice of paying their balances partly or in

full at the end of each month. The more they paid off, the more they could subsequently charge. The idea was to help consumers re-establish purchasing power lost in the depression and buy a little more than they could with cash.

Items that made life easier included the shopping bag with handle in 1933 and by late in the decade it was sufficiently inexpensive to produce so that a store could offer it as a giveaway. Today they signal a testimony of a consumer's preference of stores and products. Teflon, "the greatest accidental invention of the century," was discovered in 1938. It has been incorporated into bomb fuses, clothing, space capsules, heart valves, etc.[328] The Yellow fever vaccine was developed in April 1932 and became widely available in 1937. Over 300 million had been inoculated by the 1990s but lapses since have led to a resurgence in West Africa. The decade saw the introduction of the blood bank, latex condoms, the jet engine, miniature golf, and the super market.

It was also the decade of the second International Polar Year (1932-33) when 44 nations, including the United States, sent expeditions to study the Arctic and Antarctic. The data they collected led to the creation of the International Meteorological Organization. Twelve nations, including the U. S., participated in the first International Polar Year (1882-83) which established 14 meteorological stations around the North Pole.

Woody Guthrie (1912-1967), Oklahoma singer and guitar player, became the country's best known balladeer and wrote *So Long, It's Been Good to Know You, Hard Travelin, Roll On, Columbia,* and *This Land Is Your Land.* Huddie Ledbetter "Leadbelly" (1885-1949) wrote songs about the experiences of African Americans and was known as the "King of the 12-string blues guitar." His songs included *Cotton Fields, The Midnight Special, Rock Island Line, Take This Hammer*, and *Goodnight Irene.* Important popular composers included Harold Arlen, *Over the Rainbow*, Irving Berlin, *Easter Parade*, Hoagy Carmichael, *Heart and Soul*, Duke Ellington, *Mood Indigo*, George Gershwin, *Summertime*, and Johnny Mercer, *Jeepers Creepers.* Popular singers and/or dancers included the Andrews Sisters, Fred Astaire, Ginger Rodgers, Gene Autry, Bing Crosby, Billie Holiday, Roy Rogers, Shirley Temple, and Ethel Waters.

Big bands – 15 to 20 players – performed at dances, on the radio, and in the movies and played "swing dancing including the jitterbug. Legendary bandleaders included Count Basie, Tommy Dorsey, Duke Ellington, Benny Goodman, Woody Herman, Harry James, Glen Miller, and Artie Shaw. Country and Western Music got its start in this decade and included country gospel, the beginnings of bluegrass, cowboy musicals, brothers' and sisters' duets, and western swing.

The best selling novel of the Thirties was Margaret Mitchell's *Gone*

With the Wind, which in 1939 became one the most successful films ever. That same year King George VI and Lady Elizabeth Bowes-Lyon became the first reigning English monarchs to visit the U. S. A. – enjoying hot dogs with President and Eleanor Roosevelt and visiting the New York World's Fair. By British law, Elizabeth was a commoner and their marriage was considered a modernizing gesture by the Royal Family. She was styled Her Royal Highness The Duchess of York.

THE DECADE OF THE 1940S

World War II dominated the decade of 1940. It ended the Great Depression which in late 1939 still found 9.4 million unemployed. By 1943-44 the country had full employment making one ship a day and one aircraft every five minutes for the 15 million men and women who would end the war in the armed forces. Between 1940 and 1943 Germany and Russia more than doubled their output, Britain more than trebled and Japan quadrupled while the U. S. produced 25 times as much. Manufacturing productivity rose 25 percent after averaging an increase of 1.9 percent a year from 1889 to 1939. It is a record of incredible achievement by government planning, business enterprise, and labor flexibility – 20 million Americans moved to take jobs. Thanks to a clever mix of taxes, bond drives, and price and wage controls, inflation was contained.

Population growth during the decade was 19 million. Life expectancy at birth increased nearly 15 years over 1900-1940 and life expectancy of industrial workers equaled that of professional and businessmen although their sickness rates were noticeably higher. Urban living ended the extended household sheltering grandparents and married children. The population moved westward with California's population exceeding Pennsylvania and Illinois. By 1949, women owned 70 percent of the nation's wealth and by 1950 32.8 percent of women over 14 worked outside the home and 27.5 million families counted on both parents as bread winners.

Medicine made notable progress. The number of antibiotics was increased with the discovery of streptomycin, Aureomycin, tyrothricin, Chloromycetin, and neomycin. The organized group research that came from the war led to the belief that given time and sufficient money most physical problems could be solved by rational cooperative efforts and caused scientists to work on polio, cancer, diseases of the heart, arthritis, etc.

War needs stimulated wider use of new materials like synthetic rubber and more extensive use of older materials such as plywood and plastics. Synthetic resins and plastics were a billion dollar industry by 1949. Wartime technology ranged from mass production methods to build ships

and airplanes to the growth of powder method metallurgy which saved time and machinery by molding intricately shaped parts out of powdered metal instead of cutting and polishing them from bars or sheets. Radar was added to the application of electronics. The wartime limitation on the use of tin cans caused expansion of the frozen food industry and by 1950 food preparation for the working housewife was simplified. The heat pump, developed just after the war, revolutionized heating and cooling. The first commercial heat pump was installed in the Equitable Building in Portland, Oregon in 1948 and later in motels across America.

It was the decade when 45 rpm records and long playing records were introduced. Atomic power was developed and the first atomic bomb dropped on Hiroshima, Japan August 6, 1945. The aqua lung, transistor, guided missile, kidney dialysis, mobile phone, napalm, and velcro were developed and Chuck Yeager flew faster than sound in the first supersonic jet. In 1942 the average new house cost $4,600 and a new car $1,020. The average annual wage was $2,400, a home rented for $60 a month and a gallon of gas cost 15 cents. The world's first general purpose electronic computer was assembled in 1945. Its name: The Electronic Numerical Integrator Analyzer and Computer (ENIAC). It required 1,800 feet of floor space.

Popular songs included *If I Knew You Were Commin' I'd A Baked a Cake, Rag Mop, My Foolish Heart, Bonaparte's Retreat, The Third Man Theme, Daddy's Little Girl, Count Every Star, Music! Music! Music!, Mona Lisa, A Bushel And A Peck, No Other Love, Dear Hearts And Gentle People, Bewitched, Thinking Of You,* and *Tennessee Waltz.* The No. 1 hit of 1956: *Don't Be Cruel and Hound Dog* by Elvis Presley. 1957: *Love Letters In The Sand* by Pat Boone. 1958: *It's All in the Game* by Tommy Edwards. 1959: *Mack the Knife* by Bobby Darin.

Novelists like James A. Michener, Ernest Hemingway, and William Faulkner were best sellers and paperback editions of their work were highly profitable. The microwave oven came to us from this decade.[329] With removal of war restrictions on commercial transportation and on the use of gasoline, Americans set out on wheel and wing. By 1949, nearly 45 million automobiles were registered and air travel became commonplace. By the 1950s, the airplane which had not been believed real when first reported, was so much a part of ordinary life that newspapers printed daily schedules for flights to all large cities and most foreign countries. Despite national prosperity, personal debt was increasing faster than personal income; net saving as a proportion of disposable income diminished from 18.5 to 4.6 percent between 1945 and 1949. Ancestral notions of thrift vanished as people began buying what they wanted on the installment plan instead of saving for what they needed.

The T-shirt hit the national consciousness during WWII and became the Big Mac of the international clothing industry. Billions of T's with words and images are worn by rich and poor men, women, and children in every part of the world. It replaced the sleeveless singlet with over-the-shoulder straps, a deep neck, and exposed armpits worn by the American male for underwear. Hanes and Sears started marketing cotton undershirts with short sleeves and a high neck for 24 cents. Sears introduced theirs in 1938 and proclaimed it both an outer garment and an undershirt.

THE DECADE OF THE 1950S

Life in the 1950s was idealized in advertisements as fresh and bright and charmed with possibilities. It was a can-do decade with big finned autos packed in chrome and the government promise of "expressways" allowing you to get to your destination fast with the kids in the back. The streetcar era ended and it was full throttle ahead in the family car. It was a time of Elvis, Castro, sputnik, Kerouac, the H-Bomb, weekly air-raid siren tests, and saddle shoes. Homeowners built bomb shelters to store water, rations, eating utensils, personal hygiene items, toys, and bunks. Those subterranean chambers came to symbolize the Sputnik-centered fears of the times. Schooltime duck and cover drills were weekly events.

Television became the selling machine for everything from cigarettes to presidents. It cut into movie box office receipts causing film producers to give greater weight to the tastes of urban audiences since they provided the largest receipts. Here was Elvis on the Ed Sullivan Show which led to what we have today, whole channels built around musical entertainment. The first videotape machine, demonstrated in Chicago in 1956, ushered television from infancy toward adulthood. Networks could now tape shows. So Elvis could be viewed at 8 p.m. in the east and west instead of 5 p.m. in the west if live. Television, not the movies, the town square, the Post Office, or the general store, became the major conveyance of culture.

The first TV dinner arrived in 1954. It was turkey with corn-bread dressing and gravy, peas and sweet potatoes (both topped with a pat of butter) and sold for 98 cents and was packaged in a segmented foil tray in a container that looked like a television screen. Swanson sold 10 million the first year. From then on frozen dinners of a wide variety cooked in the home kitchen became a major industry. A year later Ray Kroc began franchising McDonald's using equipment and methods that made it possible for untrained labor to serve the public. The result: more and more meals would be eaten outside the home as other franchises began serving meals to the public.

Despite the soothing TV images of *Father Knows Best*, the '50's culture

of conformity provided fertile fields of paranoia with Congress holding communist-hunting hearing by Senator Joseph McCarthy and the House Un-American Committee.[330] Even after McCarthy's misguided hunt for subversives ended in 1954, American still considered communism a genuine threat to their way of life. By testing a hydrogen bomb over Bikini Atoll in the South Pacific in May 1956, the U. S. government was warning the Soviets, while assuring Americans, that democracy would prevail. Six months later Nikita Khrushchev famously extolled the Soviet Union's power, telling Western ambassadors visiting the Kremlin, "History is on our side. We will bury you." Such grand posture was terrifying. When the Soviets invaded Hungary that year, there was real fear. To establish the distinction between the American way of life and "godless" communism President Eisenhower, on July 30, 1956, signed the law officially establishing "In God We Trust" as the nation's motto. Congress inserted the words "under God" in the Pledge of Allegiance in 1954.

It was a time when discrimination and segregation was a fact of life. African Americans in the South were almost completely disenfranchised because of poll taxes, literacy tests, and outright intimidation. The glory of the ballot box was a cruel mirage for a black man and woman in the South. Schools were segregated, Negroes were not served in restaurants, allowed to stay in hotels, restricted to black neighborhoods, and forced to be out of town by dusk enforced by "Sundown" laws enacted by many communities. The Supreme Court's declaration in 1953 that segregation in public education was unconstitutional was earthshaking. Rosa Parks' refusal to give up her seat to a white bus rider in December 1955 led to the nearly 400 day Montgomery, Alabama boycott led by Rev. Martin Luther King, Jr. whose home was bombed January 30, 1956. Later that year the U. S. Supreme Court struck down segregation on public buses. While the laws changes, attitudes, especially in the South, did not. Singer Nat King Cole was beaten during a 1956 concert by a white supremacist group known as the White Citizens Council of Birmingham, Alabama.

In 1957 the Little Rock, Arkansas school board voted unanimously to desegregate the high schools followed by junior high schools in 1958 and the elementary schools in 1959. Seven of its eight state universities had already been desegregated and blacks had been appointed to state boards and elected to local offices. On September 2, the night before school was to start, Arkansas Governor Orval Faubus directed the state's National Guard to surround Little Rock Central High and prevent black students from entering. The Guard was withdrawn September 20 when a federal judge granted an injunction. When school opened Monday September 23 it was surrounded by police and a mob of approximately 1,000. The police took the nine black students into the school through a side door

and the mob surged toward the school with shouts and threats, causing the school administration to remove the students. President Eisenhower federalized the Guard September 24 and sent 1,000 troops of the 101st Airborne Division of the U. S. Army to Little Rock and the students reentered the school the next day. When the school year ended May 27, 1958 with commencement, Ernest Green was the school's first black graduate.

One-hundred-nine Native American tribes were terminated by congressional legislation, causing the Indians to lose land, money, and culture. In Oregon The Dalles Dam flooded the historic tribal fishing grounds of Celilo Falls. It was the decade that elevated women above their long-held second class status. By 1956, increasing numbers – especially working mothers – poured into the work force and like the civil rights movement, the changing role of women proved difficult for some to accept. *Life Magazine* published a story in 1956 saying that female ambition caused mental illness in women and homosexuality in boys.

Freeways were built,[331] urban renewal projects bulldozed blighted neighborhoods, landmark buildings in the central cities were replaced with parking garages, large shopping centers built in the suburbs, hundreds of new schools constructed to meet the education needs of the ever-increasing population.[332] The jet engine took civil aviation to new heights and speeds. Boeing introduced a prototype of the 707 passenger jet in 1954 that could fly more than 600 mph – three times faster than the DC-3. Four years later Pan American began regular 707 service from New York to Paris, ushering in the jet age. Almost all the domestic cars on the road were American made by the Big Three, General Motors, Ford, and Chrysler, plus American Motors. Charles E. Wilson, the chief executive of General Motors before becoming Secretary of Defense in 1953, was paid $625,000 a year, plus stock options. He took a $580,000 pay cut in his new job.

American exports in 1954 totaled less than $14 billion, 3.7 percent of Gross Domestic Product (GDP). The country's economy was effectively an island. We were the great power whose industrial base had not been diminished by the war and were still self-sufficient in all but a few commodities (such as tin). More than a third of all American workers belonged to unions, mostly of the old-fashioned blue-collar variety. The decline of the labor movement was caused by the shift from manufacturing to services as the major source of jobs. Farm production steadily increased while the percentage of the population living on farms steadily declined.

The modern copy machine came to America in 1950. Manufactured by the 3M Company, it was the ThermoFax and made a copy by shining

infrared light through an original document and a sheet of paper that had been coated with heat sensitive chemicals. Competing manufacturers introduced other copying technologies and marketed their machines which were welcomed by secretaries who had no other means of reproducing documents. But they all had serious drawbacks: they required expensive chemically treated papers; the copies smelled bad, were hard to read, didn't last, and tended to curl into tubes. They were made obsolete by a radically different machine developed by an obscure photographic supply company founded in 1906 as the Haloid Company, known today as the Xerox Corporation. It introduced the Haloid Xerox 914 in 1959. a machine that made sharp, permanent copies on ordinary paper. Haloid called the process xerography (based on the Greek words meaning "dry" and "writing."

Gasoline and store cards were common by the 1950s but cash was the standard for every kind of personal purchase those didn't cover. In the spring of 1950, Frank X. McNamara, an embarrassed businessman who had no cash to pay for a meal in a fine New York restaurant, launched the credit card. His predicament led to his founding of the Diners Club. By the end of 1951 more than a million dollars had been charged on the pressed-paper Diners Club cards and by 1958 the plastic passport to luxury was here to stay with American Express mailing its card to more than eight million customers of various banks.

The computer, the most profound technological development since the steam engine ignited the Industrial Revolution, was responsible for the biggest changes in business. In 1954 about one-tenth of one percent of American workers used computers on a daily basis. They worked primarily in data processing for banks and insurance companies. They were huge and hugely expensive, as much as $1 million, and kept in special air-conditioned rooms and tended by men in white coats. Few Americans had actually seen one. About a million overseas phone calls originated in the U. S. in 1950. In 1954 you needed a reservation to make an overseas call and it cost a significant percent of your weekly wage. All telephones were rotary dial.

A vaccine to prevent Infantile Paralysis (Polio) was developed in 1955 by a team led by Dr. Jonas Salk and the following year polio cases in the U. S. numbered 15,140, nearly half the number in 1955. Cases were reduced by another two-thirds, just 5,485, in 1957 and the number stabilized in 1958. Salk's vaccine was made of a virus that had been killed. In 1961 Dr. Albert Sabin perfected a vaccine made from a live weakened virus that was easier to administer and became the preferred method for immunization. The last case of polio in the U.S. was reported in 1979. South America declared polio eradicated in 1994; Europe in 2002. The world's remaining

wild cases numbering just over 1,200 in 2004 occurred in six countries: Afghanistan, Egypt, India, Pakistan, Niger, and Nigeria. The World Health Organization has made Sabin's vaccine available worldwide hoping polio will soon be eradicated everywhere.

Iowa's James A. Van Allen played a key role in launching the International Geophysical Year (IGY), an international comprehensive study of Earth from July 1957 through December 1958. The first integrated study of Earth as a planet, it ushered in the space age by providing the model for large-scale government-funded science. His instruments were aboard the first successful U. S. Satellites, Explorers 1 and 3, launched in 1958, and provided data for the first space-age scientific discovery: the existence of a doughnut-shaped region of charged particle radiation trapped by Earth's magnetic field, now known as the Van Allen radiation belts. *Time*, in its cover story on him May 4, 1959, credits him as the man most responsible for giving the U. S. "a big lead in scientific achievement."

It was the decade Mickey Mantle joined the New York Yankees, General Douglas MacArthur made his farewell speech to a joint session of Congress, J. D. Salinger published *The Catcher in the Rye*, Dave Garroway hosted the opening episode of *The Today Show*, the first issues of *Mad Magazine* and *Playboy* with a nude photo of Marilyn Monroe were published, and Christine Jorgenson had the first-known sex change operation and Instant coffee was developed.

THE DECADE OF THE 1960S

The decade of 1960 saw the election of Senator John F. Kennedy, the country's first Catholic president. At age 43, he was the youngest since Theodore Roosevelt. Russian Cosmonaut Yuri Gagarin went spinning around the world in Sputnik in April and U. S. Astronaut Alan B. Shepard, Jr. was lifted 115 miles into space off Cape Canaveral, Florida in May 1961. John Glenn, Jr. orbited the earth three times in February 1962 and in July 1969 Neil A. Armstrong and Edwin E. Aldrin landed on the moon and the world watched on their TV sets as they explored its surface.

James Meredith of Kosciusko, Mississippi became the first black African American to gain admission to the U. of Mississippi. Twice rejected in 1961, he filed a complaint with the District Court May 31, 1961 alleging he was denied admission because of color. The Court rejected his claim which was appealed to the Fifth Judicial Circuit court and reversed by a 2 to 1 ruling which found Mississippi was maintaining a policy of educational segregation. His admission, opposed by state officials and students, caused Attorney General Robert F. Kennedy to send federal Marshals to protect him from threat of being lynched. During the riots

that followed, 160 Marshals were wounded (28 by gunfire) and two bystanders were killed. Meredith was graduated in 1964 and published *Three Years in Mississippi* in 1966.

The country suffered a series of devastating shocks including the assassination of President Kennedy November 22, 1963 in Dallas in full view of TV cameras. Peaceful anti-segregation demonstrations in the South met with mob violence and the martyrdom of Rev. Martin Luther King, Jr., in Memphis, Tennessee April 14, 1968. In 1965 President Lyndon B. Johnson demanded and Congress passed a voting rights bill that brought an end to the days of whites-only voting in the South. There were nationwide demonstrations against the war in Vietnam causing President Johnson to decide against seeking re-election, and Senator Robert F. Kennedy was assassinated the night he won the California Democratic presidential primary in June 1968. The Federal Drug Administration approved prescription use of a contraceptive pill May 9 1963.

The Cuban missile crisis raised the specter of global nuclear catastrophe in 1962 and the U. S., Great Britain and the U. S. S. R. signed the Nuclear Test Ban Treaty in 1963. Congress established the National Wilderness Preservation System in 1964 and initiated a policy of preserving free-flowing streams in 1968. It authorized the Environmental Defense Fund and enlarged the National Park System in 1967 and passed the National Environmental Policy Act in 1969. States began passing laws to combat air and water pollution in 1967.

Blaine moved back to Oregon in 1960, the year its population reached 1,768,687, 97.9 percent white. Home owners represented 69.3 percent of the population, city dwellers 62.2 percent. The minimum wage was $1.25 an hour for adults, $1 for minors. Ten passenger and freight air carriers served the state. Heart disease was the leading cause of death followed by cancer.

The 1960s were changing times and Oregon was shedding its pioneer past. Downtown Portland had become a bit dingy and looked more like it had in 1932 and nothing like today's office and condominium towers interspersed with public plazas. Interstate 5 was finished; new bridges spanned the Willamette; Georgia-Pacific Corp. opened its 28-story headquarters. Community colleges sprouted around the state bringing affordable higher education to baby boomers, Phil Knight (founder of Nike), a young entrepreneur, was selling running shoes out of his parent's garage in Southeast Portland. John Day Dam, the last megadam on the Columbia, was dedicated by Vice President Hubert Humphrey in 1968. Maurine Neuberger was elected Oregon's first and the nation's third woman U. S. Senator in 1960. She sponsored the 1964 bill to require cigarette packs to carry a health warning label. Only eight women served in the 1961 state

legislature.

Oregon's Senator Wayne Morse was one of two senators to vote against the Gulf of Tonkin resolution in 1964 which gave President Johnson the power to attack North Vietnam without a formal declaration of war. This was followed by sending American troops to Vietnam in 1965 and eventually led to peace marches and organized opposition. Baby boomers were coming of age – especially draft age – and 57,000 Oregonians served in Vietnam, 799 of whom died or were missing in action. The war caused Americans to rethink everything including the issues of race, war, religion, poverty, and pollution; all subjects not widely debated in the 1950s. Suddenly life got complicated.

The old order was challenged by a counterculture that encouraged young people to question authority and to experiment with mind-altering drugs. A psychedelic scene led to a mix of weird music, light shows, drugs, and kids in funny clothes that irked city leaders. The Portland City Council passed ordinances that cracked down on runaways, littering, and "excessive public displays of affection by hippies." The Crystal Ballroom on West Burnside, which had become the main hangout for members of the counterculture was cited for a host of building code violations and closed 18 months after opening. Some described it as a time when "sex, drugs, and rock 'n roll were the answer to everything."

Activists began to shape an alternative society, forming food co-ops as substitutes for grocery stores. Alternative media competed with the mainstream news organizations. In 1968, many firsts occurred in Portland: KBOO, a listener-supported FM station went on the air with a 10-watt transmitter and the *Willamette Bridge*, an underground weekly, was founded. It connected political factions that were not communicating with each other. It also became must reading for parents trying to figure out what their kids were up to. Outside Inn, one of the nation's first free community health clinics, began serving hippies and people with drug problems. The Black Panther Party opened free medical and dental clinics in Albina and organized a free breakfast program for school children.

Oregon's economy, powered by timber and agriculture, began to transition. *Pollution in Paradise,* a documentary produced by Tom McCall for KGW-TV, chronicled the lethal effects of sewage and toxic waste that had been dumped into the Willamette river for decades. Oregonians were advised not to drink, swim, or fish in the Willamette. The program ignited public outrage and sparked the state's environmental movement. The Legislature passed laws to shut down corporate polluters. Pollution and poisons were receiving national scrutiny. Biologist Rachel Carson's book *Silent Spring*, an account of the lethal impact of man-made chemical and pesticides such as DDT, had just been published. Automobile

exhaust and the burning of agricultural and timber mill waste polluted the air.

The Oregon Graduate Center opened in Beaverton in 1966; the Legislature passed a Beach Bill in 1967 guaranteeing public use of the state's dry sand beaches,[333] and in 1969 created a Court of Appeals, a Department of Environmental Quality, an Executive Department, and a Department of Transportation.[334]

THE DECADE OF THE 1970S

The census counted 204,879,000 of us in 1970 of whom 4,088,000 were unemployed. Those of us who worked earned an average salary of $7,564 and our national debt was $382 billion. Milk costs 33 cents a quart, bread 24 cents a loaf, and round steak $1.30 a pound. If we were male our life expectancy was 67.2, if female 74.8. Mood rings, lava lamps, Rubik's cube, smiley face stickers, and pet rocks captured our fancy. Men wore shoulder length hair and leisure suits. Women were fashionable in everything from ankle-length grandmother dresses to hot pants and micro-miniskirts. The movie *Annie Hall* (1977) inspired them to wear men's derby hats, tweed jackets, and neckties with baggy pants or skirts.

Television came of age. Subjects considered taboo — abortion, race, and homosexuality — were aired by *All in the Family*. *Saturday Night Live* satirized sex and religion, topics considered off limits. Satellite news broadcasts brought the horrors of the Vietnam war into millions of homes and helped build anti-war sentiment. *The Brady Bunch* comically portrayed the supposed contemporary family. Alex Haley's immensely popular mini-series *Roots* was watched by 85 percent of families with TVs and sparked interest in genealogy and African-American history. It was the first mini-series seen on consecutive nights. The relatively new publicly funded Corporation for Public Broadcasting gained viewers and status with *Sesame Street* for children and live broadcasts of the Senate Watergate Hearings.

It was the comeback decade for movies after years of box office erosion caused by television. New technologies such as Panavision, Dolby sound, and spectacular special effects sold tickets. Memorable movies included *Star Wars, The Godfather, Towering Inferno, Poseidon Adventure, Rocky, American Graffiti*, and *Exorcist*. The Vietnam War and its aftermath spawned *Coming Home, The Deer Hunter*, and *Apocalypse Now*.

Pop and rock music transitioned into disco by the end of the decade and the breakup of the Beatles and the death of Elvis Presley robbed rock of two major influences. Pop splintered into soft-rock, hard-rock, country-rock, folk rock, punk rock, shock rock, and finally into the dance craze

– disco. John Travolta and *Saturday Night Fever* made dancing the "in" thing for many, especially men. Bands and singers benefitted from the production of 8-tracts which became a new source of revenue for them. Top name in popular music included Aerosmith, the Bee Gees, David Bowie, Jackson Browne, Alice Cooper, Eagles, Electric Light Orchestra, Fleetwood Mac, Billy Joel, Elton John, Led Zepplin, Bob Seger, Bruce Springsteen, Rod Stewart, and Three Dog Night.

According to the *New York Times*, we gave "Best Seller" status to The French Lieutenant's Woman, Love Story, The Exorcist, The Day of the Jackal, The Winds of War, Jonathan Livingston Seagull, The Odessa File, Tinker, Tailor, Soldier, Centennial, The Moneychangers, Ragtime, 1876, The Thorn Birds, Scruples, War and Remembrance, Sophie's Choice, and The Dead Zone

The country underwent profound changes. A President (Richard Nixon) and Vice President (Spiro Agnew) resigned under threat of impeachment. People from Third World countries migrated here for economic and political repression reasons. Women, minorities, and gays increasingly demanded full legal equality and privileges. The proportion of women elected to state legislatures tripled and more women than men enrolled in college in 1979. However, the rising divorce rate resulted in larger numbers of women as sole breadwinners and forced more of them into poverty. More blacks were elected to Congress and in 1973 Maynard Jackson (Atlanta), Coleman Young (Detroit), and Tom Bradley (Los Angeles) were the first African-Americans elected mayor of these major cities. Blaine and Coleman Young worked together after they were elected to the Democratic National Committee in 1968. Tom Bradley, then a member of the City Council, was the keynote speaker at a Portland Town Meeting sponsored by Blaine in December 1969 to generate support to change the countries priorities. The Indian Self-Determination Act of 1975 encouraged Native Americans to take control of their own education and promote their tribal customs.

Three Presidents served during the decade: Richard M. Nixon (1969-1974), Gerald Ford (1974-1977), and Jimmy Carter (1977-1981. The country embraced the environmental movement with the launching of the first Earth Day and New York City held its first Gay Pride march. Daniel Ellsberg leaked the *Pentagon Papers*, a massive collection of top-secret government documents, which discredited Nixon's Vietnam war policies and there was a huge anti-war march in Washington D. C. April 24, 1971. The Supreme Court decision on *Roe v. Wade* legalizing abortion and the Arab oil embargo which caused severe shortages and prices to skyrocket, occurred in 1973. The United Nations declared 1975 the International Year of the Woman and the country commemorated the 200th anniversary of

the Declaration of Independence in 1976. The decade ended with a radioactive leak at Three Mile Island nuclear power plant and the kidnaping of 66 U. S. Embassy staff members in Tehran, Iran and its resultant 444-day intense standoff.

Other highlights of the decade included Shirley Chisholm, first African-American woman elected to the U. S. House of Representatives, competing for the Democratic Presidential nomination (1972). Blaine and Shirley were colleagues on the Democratic National Committee and were seat mates at a Presidential dinner at the White House January 13, 1969. They were both in attendance in the House of Representatives the next night when President Johnson gave his sixth and last State of the Union Address.

It was the decade when computer floppy disks, VCRs, pocket calculators, and the Sony Walkman were introduced. The U. S. pulled out of Vietnam, Arthur Ashe was the first black man to win at Wimbledon, the first test-tube baby was born, Mother Theresa won the Nobel Peace Prize, Microsoft was founded, and Great Britain changed its currency to the decimal system and elected Margaret Thatcher its first woman Prime Minister.

The decade brought nuclear power to Oregon with construction of Portland General Electric Co.'s Trojan Plant, the nation's largest pressurized water reactor. Commercial operations began May 20, 1976 with a license to generate power for 35 years but by 1978 had been closed for nine months to repair construction flaws and respond to discovery of a nearby earthquake fault. It was closed in 1992 following a steam tube rupture that released radioactive water. A month later, the U. S. Nuclear Regulatory Commission reported the plant might not be safe to operate and in January 1993, PGE announced the reactor would not be restarted. The plant's nuclear reactor was barged up the Columbia River to the Hanford Nuclear Reservation in Benton county, Washington where it was buried in a 45-foot pit under gravel. Its 800 spent fuel rods were packed into 34 concrete casks in 2003 and are stored at the site awaiting completion of the controversial Yucca Mountain Repository in Nevada. In May 2006, the 499-foot cooling tower, the largest hyperbolic tower ever, imploded in less than eight seconds.[335]

THE DECADE OF THE 1980S

Our population increased by 11.4 percent to 226,504,825. Of those, 212.5 million (93.8%) were born in the country and 14.1 million (6.2%) were foreign born. The population of the Earth was 4.45 billion. It was the decade of the computer. *Time* named the personal computer the

"machine of the year," the first non-human ever named (1983). IBM hired Paul Allen and Bill Gates to create DOS, an operating system for a new PC, and allowed them to keep the marketing rights. The Tandy color computer was introduced and the programming language FORTRAN was created (1980). Hayes introduced the Smart modem 300 with an operating speed of 300 bits per second, Adam Osborne introduced the Osborne 1, the first successful portable computer (it weighed 25 pounds), and Hewlett Packard produced the first 32-bit chip (1981).

Peter Norton founded Norton Utilities, Sony released its first Trinitron monitor, WordPerfect Corporation introduced WordPerfect 1.0 which became the most popular word processing program, Lotus Development created Lotus 1-2-3, the first spreadsheet program, The Commodore 64 with 64 kilobytes of random-access memory and loaded with Microsoft BASIC sold for $200 and became the best-selling computer of all time. Compaq Computer Corp. was founded and became the first IBM clone, Apple Computer was the first company to achieve $1 billion in annual sales, Intel produced the 80286 processor, and the first luggable computer was introduced (1982).

By 1983 more than 10 million computers were in use in the United States. IBM introduced XT, Tandy, Epson, and NEC sold notebook computers, Microsoft Windows arrived, and True BASIC, which made structured programming possible, was created. In 1984 the Computer Museum opened in downtown Boston, IBM introduced its AT computer and the enhanced Graphics Adapter (EGA) video card, the 3.5-inch floppy diskette was introduced and became an industry standard, Dell Computer was founded, and Sierra introduced *Kings Quest*, the first computer adventure gaming series.

In 1985 Intel introduced the 80386, a 16 MHZ processor capable of accessing up to four gigabytes of memory, Aldus Corporation introduced *Pagemaker*, a program that allowed the mixing of type and graphics on the same page and in conjunction with the new Apple LaserWriter printer helped create desktop publishing, the Nintendo Entertainment System debuted, and Microsoft Windows 1.0 was introduced.

Apple introduced the Mac Plus with its new keyboard containing cursors and numeric keypad and IBM introduced it's AT or 101 keyboard in 1986. That same year Microsoft was listed on the New York Stock Exchange for $21 a share ($100 in 1987), making Bill Gates one of the world's youngest billionaires, and more than 30 million computers (more than 45 million in 1988) were in use in the United States. Creative Labs introduced *SoundBlaster*, with an 11-voice FM synthesizer with text-to-speech, digitized voice input/output, a MIDO port, a joystick, and bundled software in 1988 and Intel released the 486DX processor with more

than 1 million transistors and multitasking capabilities in 1989.

Technology in the 1980s included launching *Columbia*, America's first reusable spacecraft (1981) which was followed by the tragedy in January 1986 when shuttle *Challenger* exploded 74 seconds after liftoff at Cape Canaveral, Florida killing all seven astronauts, including school teacher Christa McAuliffe. Research money was spent on seeking cures for heart, cancer, and other diseases and the Human Genome Project was launched (1988) which eventually located the estimated 20 to 25 thousand genes contained in the human DNA.

The U.S. Constitution had it's 200th birthday. Video games, aerobics, minivans, camcorders, and talk shows became a part of our lives. Hospital costs rose. Forbes' list of 400 richest people became more important than it 500 largest companies. The Berlin Wall was removed. Michael Jackson (the glove) and Madonna (fishnet stockings, leather, and chains) dominated the music scene: Jackson with nine No. 1 singles and 31 weeks at the top spot; Madonna charted seven, topping the chart for 15 weeks. Rap, started in prison 20 years earlier by black inmates who turned poetic meter into musical rhythm, became popular.

Cable was hooked up to 60 percent of American households with television. Mothers ran car pools for kids who had after school and week end baseball, football, soccer, cheerleading, dance, etc. The first President Bush announced he didn't like broccoli, and for the first time DNA was used to convict criminals.

Sandra Day O'Conner became the first woman Supreme Court Justice, Geraldine Ferraro the first vice presidential nominee of a major political party (Democratic), and the Vietnam Veterans Memorial inscribed with 57,939 names of American military personnel killed or missing was dedicated. The XII Winter Olympic Games were held in Lake Placid, NY and the all-college student U.S. hockey team shocked the world by beating the U.S.S.R. Israel and Egypt exchanged ambassadors for the first time in history. Washington State's Mt. St. Helens erupted with the power of 500 Hiroshima bombs and the Whipple family had a front row seat watching from a high hill in southwest Portland.

CNN inaugurated the first 24 hour news network, Ronald Reagan was elected President, and General Motors announced its first annual loss since 1921. Japan manufacturers captured 22.6 percent of U.S. car sales in 1982. Lead-based paints were banned and the AIDS virus was first identified in the U.S.

The Surgeon General issued a report which called smoking "the chief preventable cause of death." Actress Ingrid Bergman died of cancer, Princess Grace of Monaco of a brain hemorrhage following an automobile accident, and Barney B. Clark received the first permanent artificial

heart, the Jarvik. *USA Today* was launched with a nationwide circulation and the Boeing 757 airliner made its first flight.

Guion Bluford became the first African American in space and Vanessa Williams the first African American Miss America (1983). Crystallized cocaine with its short but extreme high became a drug of choice and a New York subway ride costs 75 cents. Astronauts from the space shuttle *Columbia* made the first un-tethered space walk, the PG-13 film rating was established, *Trivial Pursuit* became so popular it revived the board game industry.

First-class postage was raised to 22 cents (1985), a hole in the ozone layer was detected over the Antarctic, a Live-Aid Concert raised over $70 million to help relieve famine in Africa, country singer Willie Nelson organized the first Farm Aid Concert to help America's farmers, The Safe Water Drinking Act was passed, and Nobel Prizes were awarded to Americans Michael S. Brown and Joseph Goldstein for Medicine for their work on cholesterol metabolism and to Herbert Hauptman and Jerome Karle for Chemistry for discovering methods to determine crystal structures.

Martin Luther King Day was observed for the first time January 20, 1986, U.S. cyclist Greg LeMond became the first American to win the Tour de France bicycle race, and a nuclear disaster at Chernobyl in the Soviet Union sent the world into a panic. The U.S. trade deficit was a record $16.5 billion in July and the stock market crashed in October with the Dow Jones Industrial Index dropping 508 points, both in 1987.

Televangelist Jimmy Swaggart confessed to sinning, nearly 90,000 acres of Yellowstone National Park burned in a massive forest fire, British surgeons perform the first brain cell transplants, and George H. W. Bush defeated Governor Michael Dukakis with 53 percent of the vote and became the first sitting Vice President to win a presidential election since 1836. U.S. golfer Curtis Strange became the first golfer to earn $1 million in prize money in a year (1988).

Former White House aide Oliver North was found guilty in the Iran Contra Affair, fined $150,000, and given a suspended sentence. Evangelist Jim Bakker was convicted of 24 counts of fraud and conspiracy, and the tanker *Exxon Valdez* rans aground in Alaska releasing 240,000 barrels of oil into Prince William Sound. *Voyager II* reached Neptune and a 7.1 earthquake killed about 90 people and caused about $6 billion in property damage in San Francisco. Millions of Americans saw the quake live as they watched game three of the World Series.

During the decade Hungary declared itself a Democratic Republic, Poland ended 40 years of strict Communist rule, and Armenians, Azerbaijanis, Georgians, Ukrainians, Lithuanians, Latvians, and Estonian

demanded independence from the U.S.S.R. Students in Beijing demonstrated and demanded democracy and hundreds were killed by Chinese troops in what became known as the Tiananmen Square Massacre. In his farewell speech, President Reagan claimed the country achieved an economic "miracle" during his terms of office.

THE DECADE OF THE 1990S

The 21st United States Census, known as Census 1990, determined the resident population of the 50 states to be 248,709,873. In addition there were 3,522,037 in Puerto Rico, 922,819 living abroad, and 910,611 in the Armed Forces. Oregon ranked 29 with 2,842,000. Between 1980 and 1990, the Latino population increased by 53 percent, one half by natural birth, one half by immigration. The most popular names given babies were Michael, Christopher, Joshua, Matthew, David, Jessica, Ashley, Brittany, Amanda, and Stephanie. Smith was the most numerous surname followed by Johnson, Williams, Jones, and Brown. Scott was No. 34, Peterson 68, West 109, Steele 312, and Whipple 2,363.

During the decade corporate profits rose 108 percent and the S&P 500 Index rose by 224 percent. Worker's pay rose 28 percent (before adjusting for inflation). Chief Executive Officer (CEO) pay rose 443 percent. If average production worker pay had risen at the rate of CEO pay, worker pay would have been $110,390 and the minimum wage would have risen from $5.15 per hour to $22.08.[336] By the end of the 1990s, economic inequality was well ahead of the 1980s. In 2000, 49.6 percent of the aggregate income went to the richest 20 percent of households (income $81,690 and up).

According to researchers at the University of Massachusetts, the 1990s were the warmest years of the millennium with 1998 being the warmest year of the decade. It was also a decade of improving technologies including the World Wide Web and HTML, improved modems, DSL, E-commerce, and E-mail. The Java programming language was developed, the free Linux kernel was started, Microsoft introduced Windows 95 and later Windows 98. The Pentium processor, CD burners, and the DVD media format were developed, and the cost of computers decreased.

Iraqi invaded Kuwait causing the Gulf War, the Soviet Union broke-up, the Cold War was officially ended, Germany was reunified, apartheid ended in South Africa, Rwandan genocide killed 1 million people, Israel and Jordan signed a peace treaty, the European Union was declared, war began in Kosovo (former Yugoslavia), the second Congo war started, and Great Britain returned Hong Kong to the People's Republic of China.

The end of the millennium was celebrated a year early (New Years Eve

1999), a sheep named Dolly was cloned, the Human Genome Project was started, the Hubble Space Telescope launched, *Pathfinder* landed on Mars and deployed a small roving vehicle, *Sojourner,* to analyze the planet's geology and atmosphere, Congressman Newt Gingrich led the Republican Party to a majority in the House of Representatives with his "Contract with America," the European Union issued a single currency, the North American Free Trade Agreement (NAFTA) between the U.S., Canada, and Mexico was signed by President Bill Clinton, and conservative political commentators Rush Limbaugh and G. Gordon Liddy made it big on radio and satellite dishes led to more television channels.

The 500th anniversary of Columbus' discovery of America was observed, the Alfred P. Murrah Federal Building in Oklahoma City was bombed by a U.S. Army veteran, Timothy McVeigh, terrorism was brought to the country with the bombing of the World Trade Center in New York City, the summer Olympics were held in Atlanta, Ritalin became the drug of choice for schools and parents for children with Attention Deficit Disorder, and 82 percent of the school population completed four years of high school in 1997 (41 percent in 1960).

Ninety-nine percent of U.S. households had television and 74 percent had cable. The *Seinfield* TV program became enormously popular, cartoons aimed at an adult audience such as *The Simpsons, King of the Hill, Family Guy*, etc. thrived, and Johnny Carson retired as host of the *Tonight Show* after 30 years and was succeeded by Jay Leno. Blood and gore on television and video games rose dramatically. Language and sexual contact led to a parental rating system. Body art – piercing and tattoos – became popular and music more profane.

Congress passed the Brady Handgun Prevention Act, the Federal Clean Air Act, the Americans with Disabilities Act, the Crime Control Act to establish drug free school zones, and the Line Item Veto which the Supreme Court declared unconstitutional.

Oregon was the nation's leading lumber producer and a major exporter of agricultural products. It boasted a burgeoning electronics industry and by 1994, unemployment was at a 25-year low of 5 percent but increased to 5.7 percent by 1999, well above the national average (the third highest jobless rate in the nation). Poverty increased from 9.2 percent in 1990 to 15 percent in 1998. By 1990, the struggle between environmentalists and the timber industry over logging in Oregon became a major public policy debate and in 1993 federal legislation set limits on commercial exploitation of older forests, home to the spotted owl. Logging declined by 70 percent during the decade causing severe economic downturns in rural areas and a loss of school funding, causing a crisis in the state's educational system.

1. Feb. 22 is the 53rd day of the year in the Gregorian calendar. There are 312 days remaining; 313 in leap years. On this day in 1889, President Grover Cleveland signed a bill admitting South Dakota, North Dakota, Montana, and Washington as U. S. States. On this day in 1923 the U. S. began its first transcontinental air mail route. On this day in 1924, President Calvin Coolidge, Robert's ninth cousin, became the first U.S. President to deliver a radio broadcast from the White House.

   Robert Whipple entry, 1930 US Census Population Schedule, Bennett County, South Dakota, Martin City, Enumerator District 4-2, Supervisor's District 2, Sheet 6B, dwelling 115, family 124, date taken 18 April. Bob was one of 24 million babies born in 1930s, the number was 32 million in the 1940s. By 1953 the U.S. population had added more people in the previous 7 years than in the 15 years before the baby boom began in 1946. Annual births passed 4 million for the first time in 1954 and didn't drop below that mark until 1965. By then, four of every 10 Americans were under the age of 20. An aging nation had become young with the 76 million baby boomers born between 1946 and 1964 equaling a new nation within the old. In just a few years America shifted to a suburban landscape, a TV dominated family room, and a rock 'n' roll soundtrack. Landon Y. Jones, "Presence of Mind Swinging 60s?" *Smithsonian*, Jan. 2006, 102-107.
2. Caret - a writer's and proofreader's mark used to communicate that a new word is to be placed in front of the existing word.
3. Church of Our Lady of the Sacred Heart, Martin, South Dakota, Baptismal Register, Vol. 1, p. 29, No. 12.
4. The Reservation was in Bennett, Shannon, Washington, and Washabaugh counties on almost 3 million acres divided into seven districts with a population of approximately 8,000 adults and 2,300 school children. Martin was the only community on the Reservation listed as a town. Trading villages were Oglala, Manderson, Porcupine, and Brennar.

   "The Sioux include 3 related but linguistically distinct tribes: Dakota Sioux (Santee), Nakota Sioux (Yankton) and Lakota Sioux (Teton). The Lakota are divided into 7 tribes, one of the largest being the Oglala, located on the Pine Ridge Reservation. *Hecetu Yelo: The Way It Is*, Student Manual, Oglala Lakota College, Kyle, S. D., 1989, 1-5.

   The word Sioux as used today is a corruption of the Winnebago word *Nadowe-is-iw-ug* which described tribes living west of them with Sioux meaning snake or enemy. In his mid teens, Bob also lived near the Nakota or Yankton Sioux in eastern South Dakota. Readers interested in identifying early Pine Ridge families should consult Indian population schedules in the National Archives microfilm publication T623. Many Indians adopted Whipple as a surname in honor of Henry Benjamin Whipple (1822-1901), first Bishop of the Protestant Episcopal Church of Minnesota. He worked to obtain justice for the Indians and his writings exposed the government's indifference to them. The Indians called him "Straight Tongue." He is a descendant of Capt. John Whipple (see Historical Appendix 10 for his biography).
5. By November 1929, the Dow dropped from 400 to 145. The New York Stock Exchange lost $5 billion in three days.; $16 billion was lost by the end of the crash. Mass poverty occurred with one-third of Americans living below the poverty line. Many people were forced to live in shanty towns The six worst depressions in American history since detailed records of economic data started to be kept around 1867 were: 1873-79; 1893-97; 1907-08; 1920-21; 1929-33; and 1937-38. During 1929-33, credit

availability tightened for both business and consumers and as employers closed their companies the ranks of the unemployed grew. Foreclosures on home mortgages increased, the forced sale of personal property drew neighbors who attempted to disrupt the auctions, and angry crowds scared off potential bidders. A massive series of bank runs in 1933 caused 4,004 to close permanently. It took 26 years before the Dow Jones finally passed its 1929 high of 400.

6. A study for the period 1918-45 showed western N. Dak.'s annual rainfall was 15.3 inches with the seasonal amount – April 1 through Sept. 30 – 11.83 inches. In 1936, it was 6.43 and 2.96 inches. This was a year of many dust storms.The hottest temperature in the state's history was 121 degrees in July 1936. "A Twenty-Five Year Comparison of Continuous and Rotation Grazing in the Northern Plains," George A. Rogler, Agronomist, Bureau of Plant Industry, U.S. Northern Great Plains Field Station, Mandan, N. Dak. Agricultural Experimental Bulletin No. 34.
7. Other depression proof jobs included government positions, teachers in well-funded districts, doctors, lawyers, dentists, pharmacists, and owners of movie theaters. The movie industry flourished by providing films that featured rich sets and carefree characters, allowing an increasingly depression-weary nation to leave its cares behind - if only for the duration of a movie.
8. Nancy died Dec. 26, 1987 in Glencoe, Minn. just 10 days before her 56th birthday. She and Don Jasperson were married for 37 years and she was survived by him three daughters and a son: Terri Lynn, Donna Marie, Molly Jane, and David Blaine. She died at the Glencoe Area Health Center following a lengthy battle with breast cancer. She is buried in the Glencoe Cemetery.
9. Dick, a bachelor, died May 18, 2005 in a Minneapolis hospital less than a year after he retired working as a pharmacist in the Twin Cities area for 36 years. He was a decorated Navy veteran of the Korean War, a graduate of the Tracy, Lyon Co., Minn. High School, and the U. of Minn. School of Pharmacy. He lived in Eagan, Dakota Co., Minn. at the time of death. He was cremated and his ashes are buried next to his parents in the Evergreen Cemetery in Vinton, Iowa.
10. Piggly Wiggly, the first true self-service grocery store, featured checkout stands, every item marked with a price, and refrigerated cases to keep produce fresher longer. It featured a full line of nationally advertised brands, required employees to wear uniforms, and franchised independent grocers to operate under the self-service method. Its success was phenomenal, operating 2,600 stores and posting $180 million in sales annually. Today there are over 600 independently owned and operated stores using the Piggly Wiggly name in 17 states. Http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Piggly_Wiggly.
11. St Alexius, the first hospital in the Dakota Territory, was started in 1885. Today it is a complete medical center serving central and western North Dakota, northern South Dakota, and eastern Montana. Mary Ann lives in Littleton, Middlesex Co., Mass. with Bill her husband of 52 years (2007). She retired from the U.S. Postal Service and now does part-time work. She and Bill raised daughters Billie June who lives in Littleton with her husband Bobbie Mauro, daughter Jayme Lee and son Gregory Robert and second daughter Melissa Ann who lives in Cherry Hill, N.J. with her husband George Giambanis, and son Nicholas and daughter Amy.
12. In August 1872, Ft. Lincoln, a cavalry base, absorbed a stockaded infantry post called Fort McKeen and grew into a major Army post. Lt. Col. Geo. A. Custer commanded the Fort 1873-1876 and his 7th Cavalry set out from there on its ill-fated expedition to the Little Bighorn Battlefield in Montana. The Army evacuated Ft. Lincoln in 1891 and today it is a North Dakota State Park which includes the site of Ft. McKeen and several restored Mandan Indian earth lodges. Three blockhouses at Ft. McKeen have

been reconstructed, the original flag pole of Ft. Lincoln stands in front of the Custer House marker, and a museum interprets the Fort's history.

13. Ally Oop was a cave man who lived in the jungles of Moo surrounded by hungry dinosaurs, including Dinny who became his pet and means of transportation. Other characters were King Guz, Foozy, girlfriend Ooola, and the King's advisor, the Grand Wizer. Prince Valiant portrayed life in the days of King Arthur and described the exploits of one of the knights of the Round Table. Dick Tracy was a detective. Little Orphan Annie was about a young girl with a dog adopted by a millionaire, Daddy Warbucks. Buck Rogers was a science-fiction story about a military man and his adventures in the 25th century. Flash Gordon was a space traveler who battled evil doers like Ming the Merciless, emperor of the planet Mongo, with help from his female companion Dale Orden and scientist Dr. Hans Zarkov. Jungle Jim wore clothes instead of loincloth and hung out in the jungles of southeast Asia. Lilli deVrille, a female femme fatale, was in the strip. Mandrake the Magician used his power of hypnopism and illusion to combat crime. Helping him fight evil doers were Lothar and his girlfriend Princess Narda. The Phantom, a 1-man police force and champion of justice, lived in Skull Cave deep in the heart of the jungle and devoted his life to the destruction of piracy, greed, cruelty, and injustice. Blondie portrayed the life of an American suburban family and featured her husband Dagwood and children Alexander and Cookie. 'Li'l Abner featured small-town life and included his wife Daisy Mae, his parents Mammy and Pappy Yokum, the detective Fearless Fosdick, and Sadie Hawkins who was always trying to catch a husband. Popeye was famous for his reliance on spinach to make him strong. Other characters were Olive, his girlfriend, Wimpy, Sweet'pea, Jeep, and Bluto. Moon Mullins was a drinking man and a would-be prize fighter with an appetite for high living. He lived at Emmy Schmadtz's boarding house. Strip regulars were Emmy, Mamie the cook and her lazy husband Willie, Moon's kid brother Kayko, and Lord Plushbottom, a well-bred Englishman. Gasoline Alley mixed humor, domesticity, and small-town nostalgia as it described the doings of a group of friends and neighbors.
14. Superman, June 1938, *Action Comics*; Batman, May 1939, *Detective Comics* #27; Prince Namor, *Marvel Comics* No. 1; Archie Andrews, 1941, *Pep Comics* #22.
15. *Grit*, first published in Dec. 1882 is published today by Ogden Publications, Topeka, Kans. Its mission statement, created in the early years, is still intact: "Always keep *Grit* from being pessimistic. Avoid printing those things which distort the minds of readers or make them feel at odds with the world. Avoid showing the wrong side of things, or making people feel discontented. Do nothing that will encourage fear, worry, or temptation. Wherever possible, suggest peace and good will toward men. Give readers courage and strength for their daily tasks. Put happy thoughts, cheer, and contentment into their hearts." Readers can visit the *Grit* web page at www.grit.com.
16. Magazines and newspapers were the great communications conduits at that time.
17. National news commentators included H. V.Kaltenvborn, Lowell Thomas, Walter Winchell, Drew Pearson, and Paul Harvey.
18. Buck Rogers was sponsored by Popsicle, Fudgsicle, and Dreamsicle Ice Cream Bars. Listeners saved the paper bags the ice cream came in for gifts such as a wrist watch, doll, table tennis set, and hundreds of other prizes.
19. Orphan Annie, sponsored by Ovaltine, offered a 24k gold plate birthstone ring for 10 cents and the seal from under the lid of a Ovaltine jar. The month of birth was shown on one side of the stone and the meaning of the month on the other. Another promotion was an identification oval tag and chain. The tag similar to one worn by sol-

diers and aviators, was made of victory metal, and had an engraving of an American flag and your initials on one side of the tag and your personal identification number on the other. You were listed with the Orphan Annie Identification Bureau. If you were found after being lost whoever found you called the Orphan Annie Identification Bureau in Chicago. This ID bracelet cost 10 cents and the inner seal from a can of Ovaltine.

20. Dick Tracy offered membership in the Dick Tracy Service Patrol which included a code book, pledge, and badge for two Quaker Puffed Wheat and/or Rice box tops. Listeners who formed a local Dick Tracy Secret Service Patrol unit in their neighborhood and received a Patrol Leader badge. Ranks included in the code book: Sergeant, Lieutenant, Captain, and Inspector-General, and each level included a fancier and gaudier badge. Sergeant required 5 more box tops, Lieutenant 7, Captian 10, and Inspector-General 15. To form his own patrol and apply for the Patrol Leader badge, the member had to recruit 5 new members at 2 box tops each plus another 2 for himself for a total of 12. That's 41 box tops to achieve all the ranks and honors plus 10 additional box tops friends would have contributed to join the local patrol.
21. Captain Midnight premiums sponsored by Ovaltine, included a Mystery Dial Code-o-graph and manual with cipher alphabet (scrambled letters). The secret messages to decode were given at the end of each program as a "Secret Squadron" Signal Session. Other premiums included A Whirl-wind Whistling ring made of brass to fit any finger with a miniature siren on its crown, and brass Aviation Wings that looked similar to those worn by pilots. The inner seal(s) from a can of Ovaltine was required, sometimes with a small amount of money.
22. Jack Armstrong, one of the longest running children's series (July 1933-June 1950), was sponsored by Wheaties the whole time. Premiums included a luminous Dragon's Eye ring that looked like old ivory with a green stone on top. After being exposed to light for a short time it would glow in the dark with a "green fire." Made of plastic, it was adjustable to fit any finger. It is considered one of radio's classic premiums. Jack's Blue Pedometer was all metal with a blue outer rim and a silver inner area where the dials and numbers were. These were available for box tops and small amounts of money.
23. The Lone Ranger was the longest running children's series (1933-1956) and offered many premiums including wood-resin statues of the Lone Ranger, Tonto, and 10 other people. Sponsored by Pillsbury Mills, they cost 25 cents and an Enriched Farina box top. Cheerios offered a flashlight ring, decoder, pedometer, movie film, deputy badge with secret compartment for box tops and sometimes a small amount of cash.
24. Quaker Oats, sponsor of Sgt. Preston, purchased 19.11 acres near Dawson in the Yukon for $1,000 and divided it into 21 million separate 1-inch square parcels, printed 21 million deeds, and packaged them in 21 million of boxes of Quaker Puffed Wheat and Puffed Rice. All were sold within a couple of weeks. Quaker organized the Klondike Big Inch Land Co., an Illinois corporation, as the registered owner. When the company went out of business in 1965 the Canadian government seized the land for $37.20 in back taxes. Quaker Oats still gets calls and letters from people asking what happened to their little piece of the Yukon.
25. The Shadow's Magic Shadow Ring was available for 5 cents and proof of purchase of any Carey product. The sponsor was Carey Salt. The ring glowed in the dark.
26. In those years molesting and kidnapping youngsters was not a family concern. Kids had far more freedom than today.
27. The binder, a farm implement invented in 1872 by Charles Withington, cut the small-grain crop and tied the stems into small bundles or sheaves. The sheaves were

'shocked' into conical stooks, resembling small tipi, to allow the grain to dry for several days before being threshed. Early binders, like the one used by Bob's farmer, were horse-drawn and powered by a bull wheel. Later models were tractor-drawn. It had a reel and a sickle bar that cut stems of grain which fell onto a canvas and conveyed to the binding mechanism which bundled and tied it with a piece of twine. The tied bundle fell to the ground from the back of the binder. When the combine replaced the threshing machine, the binder became obsolete. Conical, shaped like a cone. Stooks, a small collection of sheaves set up in the field; in England, twelve sheaves. Tipi, tepee.

28. Tom was born 27 Dec. 1940, Mike 17 April 1943, and Robert 13 Aug. 1946.
29. Clinker – the incombustible residue, fused into an irregular lump that remains after the combustion of coal. N. Dak. has large deposits of lignite coal, a soft coal, that does not burn as efficiently as hard coal. It is the lowest rank of coal in heat content.
30. Pigs - A crude block of lead before being melted. After it is melted the lead is cast in a mold creating an advertisement to be published in the newspaper.
31. Eighth grade, Tracy, Minn. high school 1948, BA, U. of Minn. 1956, MS, U of Oregon 1959.
32. Vernon Co. raised the largest tobacco crop in northern Wisconsin. It's ridges and valleys made excellent tobacco land because of its 7 to 8 feet of black dirt. The variety grown was "cigar tobacco" used for cigars, chewing tobacco, and snuff. Raising tobacco was an intense family project. The tobacco was planted in early June using a planting machine pulled by a tractor. It matured in 60-65 days. After harvesting and during the drying period, the leaves turned from green to brown and the humid early fall weather softened the leaves and prepared them for stripping. The United States Dept. of Agriculture's Tobacco Buyout Program, funded by money from the tobacco companies, provides farmers with 10 years of income to wean them from tobacco farming. *Ibid.* "The Year Without Tobacco," *Vernon County Broadcaster,* Viroqua, Wis., 5 April 2006.
33. The pins were set into four rows forming an equilateral triangle with 4 pins on a side. It was 1952 before an automatic pin setting machine made pin boys obselete.
34. The Badlands received its name from French explorers of the 1840s who called it *mauvaises terres* - not because they were evil or haunted but because they were difficult; hard to cross and to farm. They were different from the bleached arid badlands of South Dakota because rainfall is enough for cattle to graze the rich grasslands and to support all manner of wildlife for sportsmen to hunt. Even in dry years there was growth in the brush and scrub because of their deep roots formed by the Little Missouri river even when its flow was a barely visible milky mud. "Hell with the fires out," is how General Alfred Sully described the Badlands in 1864. He noted the weird, carved layers, spindles, columns, and crevices, a product of 60 million years of geology, erosion, and volcanic uplift. He compared it with "the ruins of an ancient city," an apt comparison given the rusty layers produced by the continued burning of soft coal deposits - lignite - and the buff and ocher stone and clay cliffs rising as high as 3,000 feet, shaped and reshaped by the occasional pounding rain made them resemble something ancient, purposeful, and built. "Frontier State," by the editors *American Heritage*, May-June 1993. 26-30. In the late 1800s it was also known as "The Land God forgot." Others called it one of the most mysterious and beautiful places on earth. Others likened its rugged terrain and awe-inspiring rock formations to a lunar landscape. Future President Theodore Roosevelt called it "a broken country."
35. A kerosene lamp is known as a wick lamp and works in a similar way to a candle. It is also known as an "Oil lamp." A small fuel tank at the bottom of the lamp holds a

wick, usually made of cotton, whose lower half absorbs the kerosene. The top part extends out of the top of the fuel tank and when lit, the kerosene absorbed in the wick burns and produces a yellowy flame. Capillary action inside the wick draws kerosene producing a continuous flame. The size of the flame is controlled by adjusting the wick by turning a small knob. The flame is enclosed by a glass screen, shade, or glove.

36. Medora was named for the Marquis' wife. His meat packing business lasted about 3 years before consumers' preference for corn-fed beef and competition from the Chicago meat packers caused its closure. By 1886, it had 3 hotels, 13 saloons, a weekly newspaper, a brick yard, several stores, and St. Mary's Catholic Church. Among the Marquis' neighbors was Teddy Roosevelt, later President of the U. S. The collapse of the meat packing plant was devastating but equally hard on Medora was the severe winter of 1887-88 which virtually wiped out the cattle herds. Today, Medora is one of N. Dak.'s major tourist attractions. Roosevelt ranched there in the 1880s and people come to visit his cabin, the Marquis' Chateau, a couple of small museums, and a summer variety show that celebrates its past. The show is held in an outdoor amphitheater high in the hills with the Badlands as a back-drop. A dozen or so souvenir shops have replaced the rowdy saloons.
37. Today Medora is the headquarters of the Theodore Roosevelt National Park which consists of three units along the Little Missouri river between Watford City on the north and Medora on the south. Roosevelt made his first trip to the Badlands in the fall of 1883 to hunt buffalo and other game. By the time his hunt ended he decided to invest in ranching and bought the Maltese Cross Ranch about 7 miles south of Medora and stocked it with about 400 head of cattle. He returned in 1884 during a ranching boom and acquired Elkhorn Ranch north of town and stocked it with about 1,000 head. He ultimately failed as a rancher but felt that his association with the West immeasurably enriched his life. He wrote, "I have always said I never would have been President if it had not been for my experience in North Dakota." He admired the rough virtues and the rugged integrity of the men with whom he rode in Dakota and they inspired him to help organize the Rough Riders which brought him fame during the Spanish-American War and furthered his political aspirations.
38. Tine – the slender projecting part; pointed at the end; the tines of a fork.
39. Cattalo - the word was coined in 1888 by C. J. "Buffalo" Jones, one of the first ranchers to cross the domestic cattle with the American buffalo.
40. Petrified - wood whose normal cells have been replaced with silica or other mineral deposits; to reform as a stony substance.
41. Prairie Rattlesnakes, the only poisonous snakes in North Dakota, are known for the rattles on their tails and their large front fangs that deliver a poisonous bite. They are 35 to 45 inches long and while having a heavy or bulky-appearing body, only weigh about 1 pound. Their gray-green bodies with greenish blotches are camouflaged to blend in with the prairie landscape. They have wide triangular-shaped heads, skinny necks, and blunt tails. When threatened they vibrate their tails creating a loud rattling sound. Their two long, curved fangs fold back inside the mouth and when intending to bite are extended forward and their large jaw muscles squeeze their venom from glands on each side of the head into the hollow fangs. The venom comes out of the slits on the front side of the fangs. They hibernate to escape the freezing cold of winter and feed, hunting mostly at night, from April through October. Their staple prey are rodents but they also eat birds. lizards, frogs, and toads.
42. When WWII started, all automobile manufacturing plants switched from cars to making military equipment. The last civilian car rolled off the assembly line in Feb.

1942. Willys designed and built what the Army called "vehicle, 1/4 ton, GP (General Purpose)" which was quickly Americanized to Jeep. Chrysler mass-produced tanks and trucks; General Motors concentrated on building shells, bombs, fuses, navigation equipment, machine guns, artillery, anti-aircraft guns, and engines; Ford built the huge Willow Run plant which mass-produced bombers. The auto makers more than doubled their productive capacity during the war and when passenger car production resumed with 1946 models they were able to meet the pent up demand.

43. Pat married Edwin (Eddie) Leroy Drotzman in Yankton June 18, 1951. A native of Yankton, he was a Marine veteran of WWII severely wounded in the last great battle of the Pacific War, The Battle of Okinawa. He died of cancer in a Sioux Falls, S. Dak. hospital 7 June 1964. Pat and Eddie had four sons who Pat raised alone after Eddie's death. Two of the sons and their families, Mike and wife Ruth and Brian and wife Theresa, live in Yankton; Dan lives in North Plymouth, a suburb of Minneapolis. Their second son, Larry died 23 Jan 1955 at Yankton's Sacred Heart Hospital of cancer and is buried in the Catholic section of the Yankton Cemetery. His widow Martha, son Jason, and daughter Laura, live in Trabuco Canyon, Calif. near her parents.

44. An Ode
Dozens each morning I behold
Along the highway stalking;
Some are walking to reduce -
Others, reduced to walking!

The world is hard for heavyweights,
It's getting worse and worse -
When I begin to write them up in verse.

And yet for those who would reduce
It might increase their woes -
If I should start to write them up in prose!

But cheer up fat ones, do not mourn
Nor even feel too solemn -
It's quite an honor, prose or verse
To be mentioned in my poem!

45. Gasoline sold for 15 cents a gallon in 1947. Frank Ulrich opened the first modern self-serve gas station at the corner of Jilson and Atlantic in Los Angeles that year with the slogan "Save 5 cents, serve yourself. Why pay more?" He sold more than 500,000 gallons the first month. A number of other independent stations began to offer self serve, primarily in California, the Southwest and the Southeast, but the total number of stations offering self serve remained less than 3,000 until the early 1970s. By 1973, self-serve was permitted in 42 states. Only Oregon and New Jersey still require full-service operations (2007). The Association for Convenience & Petroleum Retailing, 1600 Duke St., Alexandria, VA 22314.

46. Bob's grandfather Jim began clerking in a drug store in Bethel, Illinois at age 15 (1872. It was a time when only drugs, patent medicines, and toilet articles were sold. Behind the prescription counter were rows of white medicine jars with their mystical inscriptions. Cosmetics were not an important product. Rice powder and maybe rouge was the limit for most self-respecting ladies. The tall glass bottles filled with red and green liquids in the window were as orthodox a sign for drug stores as the

striped pole for a barbershop. The soda fountain was at the front of the store.

47. He later learned that prospective candidates must be a high school junior (male or female, 16 or 17 years of age). Appointments are for one of four terms: of 5-months (fall semester, September-January; spring semester, January-June; or one of the two several-week summer sessions, June and July). They are provided and required to wear uniforms – a Navy blue pantsuit, a white, long sleeve, traditional dress shirt, a name badge, and a plain Navy tie (males only) during school and while at work in the Capitol complex. They receive a Page insignia lapel pin and a standard issue US Capitol identification card which allows them access to secure areas of the Capitol complex, including the floor of the Senate Chamber. They live in the Senate Page Residence and receive 2 meals per day 7 days a week. They must attend school and take 4 classes a day in 4 subject areas: social studies, English, Math, and science. Foreign language tutoring is available on Sunday afternoons. Classes start at 6:15 a. m. and run from 30 to 50 minutes. Curfew is 10:00 p.m. on school nights and 11:00 p.m. on weekends. They serve the political party of the appointing Senator and play an important role in the daily operation of the Senate. They deliver correspondence and legislative material within the Congressional Complex, prepare the Chamber for Senate sessions, take messages for Senators or call them to the phone, carry bills and amendments to the Presiding Officer's desk, and retrieve lecterns, easels, and water for Senators and clerks. Today they are paid at the rate of $20,500.00 per annum from which federal and state income taxes and a $600.00 per month residence fee are deducted.

48. Robert Montgomery made his first movie in 1929, *So This is College* and became a star in 1931 playing opposite Norma Shearer in *Private Lives*. He was nominated for the Academy Award in 1937 for Best Actor as a psychopath in the chiller *Night Must Fall* and again in 1942 for *Here Comes Mr. Jordan.* He served in the Navy during WWII rising to the rank of Lt. Commander. He returned to Hollywood and was elected President of the Screen Actors Guild in 1946. He hosted a popular television series in the 1950s, *Robert Montgomery Presents.* He has two stars on the Hollywood Walk of Fame: one for movies on Hollywood Blvd and one for television on Vine street.

49. Elizabeth Montgomery was 3 years younger than Bob and the two of them went riding a couple of times on the ranch trails. She made her television debuts on her father's series *Robert Montgomery Presents* and her film debut in 1955 in *The Court Martial of Billy Mitchell.* She played Samantha Stephens for eight years (1964-1972) on ABC's hugely popular situation comedy *Bewitched* and received five Emmy Awards and four Golden Globe nominations. She made 15 movies and was nominated for an Emmy for her portrayal of a rape victim in *A Case of Rape* (1974), the notorious Lizzy Borden in *The Legend of Lizzie Borden* (1975), and for her role as a strong woman facing hardship in 1820s Ohio in the mini-series *The Awakening Land* (1978).

50. Robert Taylor, a Nebraska native, won oratory awards in high school, studied medicine – his father was a doctor – at Pomona College in California where he participated in student theatricals. He was noticed by an Metro Golden Mayer (MGM) talent scout and was signed to a contract in 1934. Good looks were somewhat of a curse for him because in his early career he was considered too "pretty" to be taken seriously by the critics. He was nick named "The Man with the Perfect Profile." He was actually a capable actor, giving good performances in most of his films. His first film was in 1934. Among his notable films: *Magnificent Obsession* (1935) which propelled him to matinee-idol status, *Camille* (1936), *A Yank at Oxford* (1938), *Billie the Kid* (1941), *Bataan* (1942), *Conspirator* (1949), *Quo Vadis* (1951), *Ivanhoe* (1952), *Knights*

of the Round Table (1953). He starred in *The Detectives*, a popular TV series (1959-1962) and when Ronald Reagan left acting for a political career in 1965, Taylor succeeded him as host/narrator of the Western anthology *Death Valley Days*. He was a flight instructor for the Naval Air Transport division, narrated the 1944 documentary "The Fighting Lady," and directed 17 U.S. Navy training films during WWII.

51. Dorothy Malone, five years older than Bob, began her movie career in 1943 in a mystery, *The Falcon And The Co-eds*, and then appeared in supporting roles in Grade-B Westerns. However, in 1946 she played a memorable role in the mystery/drama *The Big Sleep* with Humphrey Bogart and Lauren Bacall. She was in the musical *Two Guys From Texas* in 1948 with Dennis Morgan and Jack Carson and *South of St. Louis* in 1948 with Joel McCray, Zachary Scott, and Alexis Smith. She won the Oscar for Best Supporting Actress in the drama *Written On The Wind* in 1956. Co-starring were Rock Hudson, Lauren Bacall, and Robert Stack who was nominated for Best Supporting Actor. Among her other films were the comedy *Scared Stiff* (1953) with Dean Martin, Jerry Lewis, Bing Crosby, and Bob Hope; the musical *Young At Heart* (1954) with Doris Day and Frank Sinatra; *Warlock* (1959) with Richard Widmark, Henry Fonda, and Anthony Quinn; the drama *Murder in Peyton Place* (1977) with Mia Farrow; and her last notable role was a mother convicted of murdering her family in *Basic Instinct* (1992) with Michael Douglas and Sharon Stone. She became a household name when she accepted the lead role of Constance MacKenzie on the ABC prime time serial *Peyton Place* on which she starred from 1964 through 1968.

52. Jim played the foible-prone Fibber and Marian his patient, honey-natured wife. The show premiered on NBC 16 April 1935 as a half hour program and continued through 1953. It was one of the earliest radio comedies to use regular characters: Throckmorton P. Gildersleeve, the Old Timer, Teeny, aka "Little Girl," Mayor LaTrivia, Dr. Gamble, Swedish born Ole, Abigail Uppington, Mr. Wallace Wimple, Myrt, and Beulah. Much of the show's humor relied on recurring gags and punch lines reused over the years. Each episode featured an appearance by announcer/pitchman Harlow Wilcox who wove the second ad for the sponsor into the plot without having to break for a real commercial. The Jordans portrayed their characters in four movies: supporting characters in the 1937 Paramount film *This Way, Please* starring Charles "Buddy" Rogers and Betty Grable and leading roles in the RKO film *Look Whose Laughing* (1941), *Here We Go Again* (1942) and *Heavenly Days* (1944). Marian died of cancer in 1961 and Jim in 1988, a year before Fibber McGee and Molly were inducted into the Radio Hall of Fame. It also had a star on the Hollywood Walk of Fame. More than 700 recordings of the show exist and are widely circulated today.

53. Yosemite National Park, about 200 miles east of San Francisco and 300 miles north of Los Angeles, is in the heart of the Sierra Nevada Mountains. It was discovered in 1851 and named after the Indians who lived there. It became a spectacular scenic attraction that eventually became a 1,176 sq. mi. National Park.

54. **The Ahwahnee Hotel,** open year around, offered rooms with private baths and private cottages. It was in a meadow on the north side of the valley with major views of the valley. It featured tennis courts and riding facilities. Daily rates in 1948 on the American plan which included meals: 1 person in room $19, 2 persons $14, 3 persons $12. Transient meal rates: breakfast $2, lunch $2.50, dinner $4. The hotel offers magnificent views out of every window. Its decorations are done in Indian motifs.

Yosemite Lodge, redwood and canvas cabins near the foot of Yosemite Falls. Central buildings included a lounge, cafeteria, soda fountain, grill, writing room, and curio shop. Daily rates per person: Redwood cabins, 1 person in room with connecting bath $4.25, private bath $4.50; 2 persons per room $3.25 and $3.50. With bath,

enclosed sleeping porch, electric heat, per person 3 persons in room $3, 4 persons $2.50; without bath, oil stoves per person $2.75 for 1 person, two persons $1.75, each additional person $1. Tents without bath, summer season only. Each person in tent $2, two persons $1.50, each additional person $1. Mighty Yosemite Falls is directly behind the Lodge.

Big Trees Lodge. Open 2 May to 26 Sept. located in the heart of the Mariposa Grove of Big Trees on the Wawona Road, 36 miles from Yosemite Valley. Rates per person per day: Room with bath one person $6, two or more $3.50. Room without a bath, one person in a room $4.50, two or more $2.50.

Glacier Point Hotel, open 3 June 10 12 Sept. Located 3,214 feet above and overlooking Yosemite Valley. Cafeteria. Room with private bath per person per day. One person in room $6, two or more $3.50. Room without bath with running water. Per person per day. One person in room $4.50, two or more persons $3.50. Room without bath, mountain house. Per person per day. One person per room $3, two $2. Nestled by a dense forest, the hotel features massive timber walls, verandas and glassed in cafeteria. The nightly firefall in the summer is pushed over the cliff from this location.

Wawona Hotel. Open 18 June to 6 Sept. Located on the Wawona Road 27 miles from the valley floor and 8 miles from the Mariposa Grove of Big Trees. 9-hole golf course, tennis courts, swimming pool, stables. Rates per person per day including meals. One person in room with connecting bath $12.25 to $13, private bath $12.50 to $13, two or more persons $8.75 to $9.25 and $9 to $9.50, three or more $8.25 to $8.75 and $8.50 to $9. Rooms without bath. One person $10.50 to $11, two persons $7.50 to $8, three or more $7 to $7.50. Transient meal rates: breakfast $1.50, lunch $1.50, dinner $3.

Tuolumne Meadows Lodge. Open 1 July to 12 Sept. Located on the Tioga Road 55 miles from the valley in the heart of the High Sierra. elevation 8,600 feet. Accommodations in canvas cabins heated by wood stoves. A large, central tent contains a lounge and dining room. Hot and cold shower baths available Pack and fishing trips available. Canvass cabin without bath per person per day, one person in cabin $2.75, two persons $2.35, three or four persons $2. Mal rates: breakfast $1.50, lunch $1.50, dinner $1.50, box lunch $1.

Housekeeping Accommodations. Available in cabins all year and in tents in summer on the Valley floor. Weekly rates for two persons per person $10 to $17. Supplies may be purchased at the General Store.

High Sierra Camps. Plain but comfortable accommodations at trail and fishing centers in the mountain country above the Valley. The camps are an easy day ride or hike apart. Rates are $2 a meal and $2 a night in dormitory tents.

Children's Rates. No charge under 3 years; half rate from 3 to 6 years, full rate 7 years and over. Full rate for High Sierra Camps an housekeeping.

55. Ansel Adams (1902-1984) was born in San Francisco four years before the great earthquake of 1906. He became a photographer and used his skills to advance the environmental movement in the United States. He joined the Sierra Club at age 17, was elected to its Board of Directors in 1934 serving in that capacity for 37 years. His first writings and photographs were published in the Sierra Club *Bulletin*.

Early in his career he became known for his black and white photographs of Yosemite National Park. His images were first used for enviornmental purposes when he lobbied Congress to create Kings Canyon National Park in the Sierra Nevada mountains. His limited-edition book, *Sierra Nevada: The John Muir Trail,* influenced both Interior Secretary Harold Ickes and President Frandlin D. Roosevelt to support creation of the Park which occurred in 1940. He was the recipient of three Guggenheim Fellowships, was elected a Fellow of the American Academy of Arts and Sci-

ence in 1966, awarded the Conservation Service Award, the Interior Department's highest civilian honor, in 1968 in recognitgion of his years of distinguished work as photographer, artist, interpreter, and conservationist "of our great natural resources." When President Jimmy Carter awarded him the Presidential Medal of Freedom, the nation's highest civilian honor, in 1980 he said Adams was "regarded by environmentalists as a national institution."

56. Whippletree - A pivoted or swinging bar to which the traces or tugs of a harness are fastened, and by which a carriage, a plow, or the like, is drawn.

57. As the following editorial written by Bob in 1949 shows, he was a bit ahead of his time.

About Tobacco Advertisements . . .

Whether you smoke cigarettes or not, it is mark of distinction to have a package of Phillip Morris in your home. These are the words of Horace Heidt in the advertising portion of his talent show, the Youth Opportunity program presented Sundays at 8:30 p.m. by Phillip Morris, Ltd.,Inc.

Mr. Heidt stresses that Phillip Morris does much for the youth of America by giving them an opportunity to get into show business. He even infers that it is our duty as patriotic citizens to buy Phillip Morris so the Company can continue its splendid efforts in behalf of the youth of the country.

We don't argue with the good things the program accomplishes but are against the way it is being advertised. Following World War I the tobacco industry set out to educate American women to smoke and spent millions on that campaign. The result: Women now smoke everywhere. The industry campaign following World War II is to induce teen-agers and adults who don't smoke to join the crowd. Whether it is detrimental to the public's health doesn't matter. The only thing that matters is selling more cigarettes.

Why is this type of advertising permitted? Because the tobacco industry is big business and thus a big advertiser. Spending millions of dollars to advertise cigarettes gives the industry leverage over radio, networks, newspapers, and magazines, mediums dependent on advertising for a livelihood. Trying to obligate the people into buying a product, whether it be cigarettes or milk, is baloney. If the Phillip Morris people want to sell their nicotine they should be made to keep the record straight and not hide the profit motive behind a flowered bush of deceitful philanthropy.

It was a long time in coming but on 17 Aug. 2006, a federal judge agreed with Bob's editorial position. U. S. District Judge Gladys Kessler ruled that the nation's top cigarette makers violated racketeering laws by deceiving the public for years about the health hazards of smoking. She ordered tobacco companies to stop labeling cigarettes as "low tar," "light," "ultra light," or "mild," since such cigarettes are no safer than others because of how people smoke them. She said, "Over the course of more than 50 years, defendants lied, misrepresented, and deceived the American public, including smokers and the young people they avidly sought as 'replacement smokers,' about the devastating health effects of smoking and environmental tobacco smoke (secondhand smoke)." The defendants: Philip Morris USA Inc. and its parent, Altria Group Inc.; R.J. Reynolds Tobacco Co.; Brown & Williamson Tobacco Co.; British American Tobacco Ltd.; Lorillard Tobacco Co.; Liggett Group Inc.; Counsel for Tobacco Research-U.S.A.; and the now defunct Tobacco Institute. *The Oregonian*, Portland, Oregon, 17 Aug. 2006. p. 2.

58. For much of the 90 years preceding 1954, race relations was dominated by segregation which fostered a racial separation of black and white Americans. Segregation in education varied wildly from the 17 states which required it to the 16 which prohibited it.

In 1951, a class action suit was filed against the Board of Education of the City of Topeka, Kansas in the U.S. District Court for the District of Kansas. Thirteen Topeka parents sued on behalf of their 20 children calling on the school district to reverse it policy of racial segregation. Separate elementary schools were operated by the Topeka Board of Education under an 1879 Kansas law which permitted (but did not require) districts to maintain elementary school facilities for black and white students in 12 communities with populations over 15,000. The District Court ruled in favor of the Board of Education, citing the U. S. Supreme Court precedent set in *Plessy v. Ferguson,* 163 U.S. 537 (1896) which had upheld a state law requiring "separate but equal" segregated facilities for blacks and whites in rail cars. The 3-judge court found that segregation in public education has a detrimental effect upon Negro children, but denied relief on the ground that the Negro and white schools in Topeka were substantially equal with respect to buildings, transportation, curricula, and educational qualifications of teachers.

On 17 May 1954, the U.S. Supreme Court in its review of *Brown v. Board of Education of Topeka* decided by a vote of 9-0 in a landmark decision that "separate educational facilities are inherently unequal" and explicitly outlawed racial segregation of public education facilities (legal establishment of separate government-run schools for blacks and whites). The Court determined that the doctrine of "separate but equal" public education could never truly provide black Americans with facilities of the same standards available to white Americans. The decision reversed the precedent set by the Court's previous decision in *Cumming v. Richmond County Board of Education* (1899) which had specifically validated the segregation of public schools.

Brown did not result in the immediate desegregation of America's public schools, nor did it mandate desegregation of public accommodations, such as restaurants or bathrooms owned by private parties. That was not accomplished until passage of Title II of the Civil Rights Act of 1964. Also, it was about 1970 before compliance with *Brown* desegrated most public schools in the South.

In the *Brown* decision Chief Justice Earl Warren wrote: Today, education is perhaps the most important function of state and local governments. Compulsory school attendance laws and the great expenditures for education both demonstrate our recognition of the importance of education to our democratic society. It is required in the performance of our most basic public responsibilities, even service in the armed forces. It is the very foundation of good citizenship. Today it is a principal instrument in awakening the child to cultural values, in preparing him for later professional training, and in helping him to adjust normally to his environment. In these days, it is doubtful that any child may reasonably be expected to succeed in life if he is denied the opportunity of an education. Such an opportunity, where the state has undertaken to provide it, is a right which must be made available to all on equal terms.

59. William E. Leuchtenburg, "New Faces of 1946," *Smithsonian Magazine*, November 2006, 52.

60. Krebs entered Ole Miss in 1947 as a journalism student and was graduated 27 May 1951. He ran unopposed for managing editor in 1949 and for editor, also unopposed, in 1950. Despite being one of the most controversial students in recent history, he was elected to the University's 1951 Hall of Fame. After graduating, he entered the U.S. Air Force. After Air Force service, Krebs enrolled at Columbia University in New York City then joined *The New York Times* and specialized in writing obituaries of well-known national figures. He retired in 1989 to Key West, Fla where he died in May 2002. His will included a bequest of $180,000 to the U. of Miss. School of Journalism.

61. *Commercial Appeal*, Memphis, Tenn., 30 and 31 Oct. 1950. *Jackson Daily News*, Jackson, Miss., 31 Oct. 1950. *Clarion-Ledger*, Jackson, Miss., 1 Nov. 1950. *Times-Picayune*, New Orleans, 1 Nov. 1951.

62. The Korean War was the first armed confrontation of the Cold War and set a model for many later conflicts. It was a limited war where the two superpowers - the United States and the Soviet Union - avoided an all out war that could involve nuclear weapons. It also expanded the Cold War, which up to then, was mostly concerned with Europe. The war is not officially ended. A cease-fire took effect 27 July 1953 and the U.S. still maintains a heavy military presence in South Korea in 2007 to monitor the armistice between North and South Korea. A special service decoration known as the Korea Defense Service Medal was authorized for service members who serve a tour of duty in Korea. The Korean War started as a civil war between the provisional governments of North and South Korea, each seeking control over the Korean Peninsula. The conflict became a proxy war between the United States and its allies and the Communist powers of the People's Republic of China (PRC) and the Soviet Union. The principal combatants were North Korea, supported by the People's Volunteer Army of the PRC and later Soviet combat advisors, aircraft pilots, and weapons; and South Korea supported principally by the U.S., the United Kingdom, Canada, and, the Philippines. Many other nations sent troops under the aegis (sponsorship) of the United Nations. It was called a Police Action by the U.S. and known officially as the Korean Conflict rather than a war. Since it was under the aegis of the United Nations there was no necessity for Congress to declare war. Deaths, including civilians and military from UN nations and China, exceeded two million. More than a million South Koreans, 85 percent of them civilians, were killed. The estimate of deaths in North Korea is 2.5 million and 80 percent of the industrial and public facilities and transportation works, 75 percent of government offices, and half of the houses destroyed. In 1993 the U.S. Department of Defense reported Korea was responsible for 33,686 battle deaths, 2,830 non-battle deaths, and 17,730 deaths of Defense Department personnel outside the Korean theatre. There were also 8,142 U.S. personnel listed as Missing In Action (MIA). U.S. casualties in the Korean Conflict are far fewer than in the Vietnam War but they occurred over three years as opposed to 13 years (1960-1973) in Vietnam. The Korean Service Medal was issued to those who served during the conflict. The Korean War Veterans Memorial in Washington, D.C. was dedicated 27 July 1995. Korean War, Wikipedia, the free encyclopedia. <http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Korean_War.>

    After the Korean War North Korea's President Kim Il-sung introduced the personal policy of Juche, or self-reliance, which inhibited development of the country. Decades of this rigid state-controlled system resulted in stagnation and a leadership dependent on the cult of personality. Aid agencies have estimated that up to 2 million people have died since the mid 1990s because of acute food shortages caused by natural disasters and economic mismanagement. The government is accused of systematic human rights abuses and a U. S. based rights group estimates there are 200,000 political prisoners. In 2002 President George W. Bush named the country as part of an "axis of evil." after the country reactivated a nuclear reactor and expelled international inspectors. In Oct. 2006, North Korea announced it had successfully tested a nuclear weapon. This resulted in diplomatic efforts, with the U. S. playing a major role, to end North Korea's nuclear ambitions and in Feb. 2007 it agreed to shut down its main nuclear reactor in exchange for fuel and aid. The current head of state is Kim Jong-il, son of the "Great Leader."

63. University of Mississippi, Interdepartmental Communication dated 6 Jan. 1951 from

Robert B. Ellis, acting registrar, to instructors of Mr. Robert Blaine Whipple: The above named student is volunteering for military service before the end of the current semester. In compliance with the regulations of the University in regard to such situations, this student has permission to take his examinations at once on the work which has been completed for the semester. The final semester grade in the course should be reported to this office on the special examination form as soon as possible after the final examination.

64. Alabama, Arizona, Arkansas, California, Colorado, Florida, Illinois, Indiana, Iowa, Kentucky, Louisiana, Maryland, Minnesota, Mississippi, Nebraska, North Carolina, Ohio, South Dakota, Texas, Virginia, and West Virginia.

65. Bob's Selective Service No. was 21 66 30 32 and Uncle Sam, unaware of his Navy enlistment, wanted him to report for duty. The Selective Draft Act passed by Congress 18 May 1917 gave the President power to draft soldiers. In 1918, the U.S. Supreme Court ruled that conscription was not considered involuntary servitude under the 13th Amendment and was part of Congress' right to raise and support armies. It also ruled that government censoring individuals urging resistance to the draft was not a violation of the Constitutional guarantee to free speech found in the 1st Amendment. The Selective Training and Service Act of 1940 passed 6 September authorized the first peacetime conscription in U.S. history. Men between ages 21-30 had to register with local draft boards. The age range was later changed to 18-45. A lottery system selected the men who served for 12 months. No more than 900,000 men were to be in training at any time and they were to remain in the Western Hemisphere or in the U.S. possessions or territories. The Act provided for conscientious objection. After the U.S. entered WWII, a new Selective Service Act made men between 18 and 45 liable for military service and required all men between 18 and 65 to register. The term of service was extended to six months after the war. By the time the Selective Service Act expired in 1947, over 10 million men were inducted. A new Selective Service Act was passed in 1948 requiring men between 18 and 21 to register with men from 19-26 liable for induction for 21 months' service to be followed by 5 years of reserve duty. This was the Act under which Bob had to register. The country halted conscription in 1973 in favor of an all-volunteer Army but Selective Service remained and males reaching age 18 had to register as a contingency should the measure be reintroduced. The registration requirement was suspended in April 1975 but reinstituted in 1980 for men 18 to 25. If a military crisis arose, registered men would be inducted based on age and a random lottery. Failure to register is a felony with the offender subject to serious penalties and the loss of significant benefits such as: federal and many state and local jobs, student financial aid, federal job training programs, eligibility for U.S. citizenship, etc. Registration can be accomplished at any U.S. post office. Selective Service Act, <http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Selective_Se>

66. Tacoma is on a peninsula on the southern end of Washington's Puget Sound and was a major shipping port.

67. Groups of the Pacific Reserve Fleet included Alameda, CA, Bremerton, WA, Columbia River (Astoria, OR), Long Beach, Mare Island, San Diego, and San Francisco, all in California. The Atlantic fleet locations: Boston, Charleston, Florida, New London, New York, Norfolk, Philadelphia, and Texas.

68. CVE designated a light aircraft carrier; CVL an escort carrier. One of the ships in the Tacoma fleet was the *USS Lunga Point* (CVE 94). It was built by the Kaiser Shipbuilding Co. of Vancouver, Wash., was 512.5 feet long, the width of its flight deck was 108 feet, it displaced approximately 10,400 tons fully loaded, and had a top speed of 19 knots. It was commissioned 14 May 1944 and ferried Army bombers to New Guinea

and brought back war-worn P-47s. It provided air cover for transport and surface units engaged in the Leyte Gulf operations from 13 to 22 November. She participated in the Luzon campaign (Philippines) in Jan. 1945, providing air support for 6th Army landing operations at Lingayen Gulf. She survived 14 enemy attacks before arriving at the Gulf and provided 11 days of intensive air support with her aircraft flying an average of 41 sorties a day. She later participated in the Iwo Jima and Okinawa campaigns. In August of 1945 she aided in evacuating 760 Allied prisoners of various nationalities from Japan to Okinawa. She was decommissioned 24 Oct. 1946, became a part of the Tacoma Group, struck from the Navy list 1 April 1960, and sold at San Diego to Hyman Michaels Co. 3 August. <http://www.navysite.de/cve/cve94.htm.>

69. Stan was a yeoman first class and John a yeoman third class. A yeoman rating designated office type work.

70. Mt. Rainier was 58 miles from Tacoma and the Olympic National Park was reached by crossing Puget Sound by Washington State Ferry and driving U.S. Highway 101 to Port Angeles, the Park headquarters.

71. Louis Armstrong (1901-1971), nicknamed Satchmo, was a charismatic, innovative performer whose musical skills and bright personality transformed jazz from a rough regional dance music into a popular art form. He was probably the most famous jazz musician of the 20th century. He started as a trumpeter but toward the end of his career was best known as a vocalist and one of the most influential jazz singers. He played and sang with the most important instrumentalists and vocalists of his time including Jimmie Rodgers, Bing Crosby, Duke Ellington, Fletcher Henderson, Bessie Smith, Frank Sinatra, and Ella Fitzgerald. His many hit records included *Stardust, What a Wonderful World, When The Saints Go Marching In, Dream a Little Dream of Me, Ain't Misbehavin',* and *Stompin' at the Savoy.* In 1946 he knocked the Beattles off the top of the Billboard Top 100 chart with *Hello, Dolly,*" making him the oldest artist (63) to have a No. 1 song. He had a distinctive gravelly voice and was skilled at scat singing – wordless vocalizing. Two of his scat hits were *Heebie Jeebies* and *I'm A Ding Dong Daddy From Dumas.* In the middle of recording this song, he sang out "I done forgot the words." He appeared in more than a dozen Hollywood films, made a number of television appearances, and was the first African American to host a nationally broadcast radio show in the 1930s. His *Melancholy Blues* was included on the Voyager Golden Record sent into outer space. He has a record star on the Hollywood Walk of Fame and his songs are still broadcast daily throughout the world.

72. There were only a few thousand TV sets in the KING signal area. It went on the air in 1949 and was the first TV station west of Minneapolis and north of Los Angeles and presented the first live news program within that same area 10 Sept. 1951. Electronic television was first successfully demonstrated in San Francisco 7 Sept. 1927. The first scheduled television broadcasts were launched from station WRNY, New Jersey, in 1928 and RCA televised the opening of the New York World's Fair in 1939 and included a speech by President Franklin D. Roosevelt, the first president to appear on television. The Brooklyn Dodgers were the first major league baseball team to be televised, also in 1939. The first television commerical, a 10-second advertisement for Bulova watches, was aired in 1941. By 1945 there were 9 commercial TV stations on the air in the U.S. The first coast to coast TV broadcast was 13 Sept. 1951 when President Harry S. Truman, in a speech at a conference in San Francisco, accepted the treaty that officially ended the U.S. occupation of Japan. It was aired by 87 stations in 47 cities. It's formal name is The Multilateral Treaty of Peace with Japan, and it was ratified by the U.S. Congress 20 March 1952. The number of television sets in use rose from 6,000 in 1946 to approximately 13 million in 1951. Cable TV

began in 1950 and the Federal Commuinication Commission (FCC) approved the first color TV standard that same year. Ultra High frequency (UHF) channels began in 1952. The first political advertisement was aired during the 1952 presidential campaign when when the Democratic Party bought a half hour to promote the candidacy of Adlai Stevenson. The Party was bombarded with hate mail for interrupting *I Love Lucy*. The Eisenhower campaign bought 20-second spots. In 1951 advertising income reached almost $191 million. The sale of color sets began in 1951 but not many were sold. Programs debuting that year were *Dragnet, What's My Line, Search for Tomorrow, Love of Life, I Love Lucy, Amos & Andy, The Roy Rogers Show* and *Hallmark Hall of Fame.*

73. Enlisted men had pay grades from E-1 to E-7. Today they go to E-9. Bob was advanced to pay grade E-3.

74. His Navy dentist advised him that the root canal procedure would eventually cause the tooth to turn black and probably cause the tooth to break off in 20 years. The tooth never turned black and it was 50 years before it broke in half when he bit into an apple.

75. The Pearl Harbor Naval Shipyard was established in 1917 and Ford Island, in the middle of the harbor, was later purchased for joint Army and Navy use in the development of military aviation in the Pacific. As Japanese influence increased in the Pacific, the U.S. increased the Navy's presence and began training operations there in 1940. The Japanese sneak attack on Pearl Harbor Sunday 7 Dec. 1941 brought the U.S. into WW II. The attack force of 6 aircraft carries with 423 planes commanded by Admiral Nagumo, launched the first wave of its attack with 183 planes at 6 a.m. from 230 miles north of Oahu. At 7:02 two Army operators at Oahu's northern shore radar station detected the approaching planes and contacted a junior officer who disregarded their report thinking they were American B-17 planes expected in from the U.S. west coast. At 7:15 a second wave of 167 planes took off. Pearl Harbor was not on a state of high alert. It's aircraft were parked wingtip to wingtip on airfields, anti-aircraft guns were unmanned, and many ammunition boxes were locked in accordance with peacetime regulations. There were no torpedo nets protecting the fleet anchorage. Since it was Sunday, many officers and crewmen were ashore. At 7:53 the first assault began with flight commander, Mnitsuo Fucida sounding the battle cry" "Tora! Tora! Tora! (Tiger! Tiger! Tiger!) The assault, led by torpedo bombers, attacking the battleships and dive bombers the air bases at Hickam Field and Wheeler Air Field, was a complete surprise.

The second wave attacked Bellows Field and Ford Island, a Marine and Naval Air Base in the middle of Pearl Harbor and other ships and ship yard facilities. The air raid lasted until 9:45. Eight battleships were damaged, five sunk, three light cruisers, three destroyers, three smaller vessels, and 188 aircraft were lost. The Japanese lost 27 planes and five midget submarines which attempted to penetrate the inner harbor and launch torpedoes. Three prime targets, the aircraft carriers *Lexington, Enterprise*, and *Saratoga*, were not in port and fuel tanks were not bombed. Casualties included 2,335 servicemen and 68 civilians killed and 1,178 wounded. Among the servicemen were 1,104 aboard the battleship *Arizona* when a 1,760 pound bomb penetrated the forward magazine causing catastrophic explosions. Japanese diplomats in Washington, D. C. presented their war message to Secretary of State Cordell Hull at 2:30 p.m. just as he was reading the first reports of the air raid. News of the sneak attack was broadcast to the American public via radio bulletins interrupting many popular Sunday afternoon entertainment programs. The news sent a shockwave across the nation and resulted in a tremendous influx of young volunteers in the U.S.

armed forces. The attack united the nation behind President Franklin D. Roosevelt and effectively ended isolationist sentiment in the country. The Whipple family, living in Bismarck at the time, was celebrating Mary Ann's 4th birthday with a party when they heard the first radio broadcasts.

76. Pay grade E-4 resulted in Petty Officer status (non commissioned officer) and being rated to an occupational speciality such as journalist. Specialists ratings are earned through "A" school attended before deployment after completing basic training. Those like Bob who did not attend an "A" school learned on the job and could strike for a rating. Rating badges and stripes on the left arm of the uniform conveyed status.

77. Bob's parents attended the annual meeting of the Minnesota Editorial Assn. in Minneapolis 13 and 14 Feb. 1953. Among the dignitaries attending were Governor and Mrs. C. Elmer Anderson and the state's two U.S. Senators. After the Friday night banquet the Senators mixed with the editors and publishers; Governor Anderson did not. His father Blaine, editor of the weekly *Star-Farmer* in Renville, wrote a weekly column. In his column of 19 February he wrote: " I saw Governor and Mrs. C. Elmer Anderson leave the banquet hall and instead of mixing with the editors and publishers, they avoided them. I have known a number of governors from a number of different states and until then had found them to be pretty nice people and friendly as all get out. But not the present governor of Minnesota as I soon found out. I have a son in the Navy stationed at Pearl Harbor in the public relations office. When the Andersons visited Hawaii recently he was detailed to meet them when their plane landed. Their pictures were taken and later appeared in this and other Minnesota newspapers. Thinking this established a little personal relationship with the Andersons, I stepped forward with my hand extended, introduced my self, and mentioned the above circumstance. Mrs. Anderson smiled and started to stop. C. Elmer continued straight ahead. As he passed my extended hand, he said "It's a great country." Well, I managed to get my extended hand back to its normal position. After a moment I moved it to a position high above my head and made a solemn vow that never again would I vote for C. Elmer Anderson. I hope you won't either. "Birdies, Eagles and Aces" *Star-Farmer*, Renville, Minnesota, 19 Feb. 1953

78. Humphry Bogart was an American actor of legendary fame and was named by the American film Institute as the Greatest Male Star of all time. He appeared in 75 feature motion pictures, the most notable being: *Angels With Dirty Faces* (1938), *The Maltese Falcon* (1941), *Casablanca* (1942), *To Have and Have Not* (1944), *The Big Sleep* (1946), *The Treasure of the Sierra Madre* (1948), *Key Largo* (1948), *In a Lonely Place* (1950), *The African Queen* (1951 for which he won an Academy Award for Best Actor in a Leading Role), *The Caine Mutiny* (1954), and *We're No Angels* (1955). Lauren Bacall met Bogart when they filmed *To Have and Have Not* in 1944 which catapulted her to instant stardom. They were married 21 May 1945. when she was 20, he was 45. She and Bogart also appeared in *The Big Sleep* (1946), the thriller *Dark Passage* (1947), and *Key Largo* (1948). She co-starred with Kirk Douglas and Doris Day in *Young Man With a Horn* (1950), *How to Marry a Millionaire* in 1953 with Marilyn Monroe and Betty Grable, *Written on the Wind* in 1956 with Rock Hudson, Dorothy Malone, and Robert Stack. In 1999 she was voted one of the 25 most significant female movie stars in history by the American Film institute. They had two children, both of whom Bob met when the five of them spent time on the beach in front of the Royal Hawaiian Hotel. Bob had previously met Dorothy Malone when he worked at the Deep Well Guest Ranch in Palm Springs.

79. Cyd Charisse's movie career began in 1941 with *Rumba Serenade* and ended in 1994 with *That's Entertainment.* Among her co-stars were Fred Astaire and Gene Kelly.

She danced in two of the most acclaimed dance sequences in musical cinema, the "Broadway Melody Ballet" sequence in *Singin' in the Rain* (1952, the year Bob met her) and "The Girl Hunt Ballet" in *The Band Wagon* (1953). Among her other starring movies were *The Harvey Girls* and *Ziegfeld Follies* (both in 1946), *East Side, West Side* (1949), *Brigadoon* (1954) and *Silk Stockings* (1956). She married singer Tony Martin in 1948.

80. Marie McDonald was a singer and actress and daughter of a Ziegfeld Follies girl. She became a model in New York City in her early teens and was nicknamed "The Body" because of her shapely physique. At 17 she landed a role on Broadway in the 1940 production *Earl Carroll's Vanities.* Her singing voice put her to work with Tommy Dorsey & His Orchestra on his radio show. She signed a contract with Universal Studios in 1942. She was pin-up girl for the U.S. military magazine *YANK.* Her last film was the slapstick comedy opposite Jerry Lewis, *The Geisha Boy.* Tony Martin and Harry Karl, husband of Marie, were with them in Honolulu.

81. Eddie Peabody, a star of vaudeville, was in early talkie movies, radio, toured with his own band, and was a guest on the Lawrence Welk TV show. He joined the U.S. Navy in 1916 at age 14, lying about his age, and began playing the banjo while serving in WWI on a submarine. He was discharged in 1921 and began his career in vaudeville. He was named "King of the Banjo" by a critic in the 1920s because of his frenetic playing style. He became a morale/entertainment officer for the Navy in 1941 and played shows in conflict areas to bring servicemen a "touch of home." He recorded for both Columbia and Decca. President Eisenhower gave him a distinguished "People to People" Award for meritorious service in both the military and show business.

82. Lefty Frizzell began playing the guitar at an early age and was a regular on a children's show in El Dorado, Arkansas by age 12. In his late teens he performed at fairgrounds and other venues and developed a unique soulful voice and he found regular work on the Honky Tonk nightclub circuit. He signed a contract with Columbia Records at 19 and immediately had a string of hits that made country music's top ten, several of them No. 1. In 1959, he began touring with Hank Williams, country music's biggest star of that era. He became a prolific songwriter and had four songs in the country top ten at the same time, a feat not repeated on any chart until the Beattles had five songs in 1964. He was the first country singer to perform at the Hollywood Bowl. He was inducted into the Nashville Songwriters Hall of Fame in 1972 and to the Country Music Hall of Fame in 1982. He has a star on the Hollywood Walk of Fame. His song "If You've Got the Money, I've Got the Time" earned him a Grammy Hall of Fame Award and his singing style influenced many singers, particularly Merle Haggard, Willie Nelson, and Dwight Yaokam. Willie Nelson's 1977 album *To Lefty From Willie* was a tribute to Frizzell and consisted entirely of cover versions of Frizzell songs.

83. In the starlit stillness of 5:30 a.m., a lonely New York policeman stamped his feet and tried to beat off the chill as he stood watch outside Ike Eisenhower's upper Manhattan residence at 60 Morningside Drive. A black Cadillac limousine rolled through the empty streets and pulled up at the curb. Two U.S. Secret Service men got out. One walked up to the cop, chatted with him and drew him away from the door. The other slipped inside. A moment later, with the cop's back turned, a quick striding man, with his felt hat drawn low and the collar of his camel's-hair coat turned up, hurried out of the house and into the limousine. Then the two agents hopped in, and the Cadillac pulled away into the night.

Ike Eisenhower was on his way to Korea, muffled in the most elaborate cloak of security the U.S. Secret Service could stitch together. As his car rolled toward

Mitchel Air Force Base, the rest of his party materialized from their quiet "fade-aways" from everyday life. The three reporters assigned to the trip met at Manhattan's Pennsylvania Station, then headed out for Long Island with the Secret Service in charge. Ike's Defense Secretary Charles E. Wilson strolled slowly out of the Waldorf-Astoria without any luggage, took a cab to the southeast corner of 58th Street and Fifth Avenue. He waited only a moment before a sedan picked him up and whisked him toward Mitchel Field. There crewmen worked rapidly around two Constellations.

One by one, Ike's guests and staff tramped aboard his plane. There was his old friend and West Point classmate, General Omar Bradley, chairman of the Joint Chiefs of Staff; Ike's Defense Secretary Wilson, Attorney General Herbert Brownell, Major General Wilton B. Persons (ret.); and James Rowley, chief of the White House Secret Service detail. Ike swung up the ladder with a greeting to all hands, and at 5:55 a.m. his Constellation took off. Ten minutes later the press plane followed. Both planes carried double crews.

From New York, the two Constellations hopped nonstop to San Francisco, then to Honolulu, then to Midway Island. They traveled under false identification and flight numbers; over water, they were never more than 100 miles from a ship or another plane. During the fuel stops, nobody was allowed to get off. Beyond Midway, the press plane developed engine trouble. When it messaged its plight to Ike's plane, security permitted only a cold response of "message received." The press plane limped into Wake Island for repairs. Ike went on to Iwo Jima where he landed in time for an evening pilgrimage to the Marine Corps' famed battle monument on Mount Suribachi.

When the press contingent caught up with Ike in the morning, photographers begged him to repeat his trip to Sukribachi. He agreed. On the way out, the official party transferred from a Chevrolet sedan to a jeep for the last steep part of the climb. Said Charlie Wilson, soon to resign as president of General Motors: "Why are we changing to the jeep?" Replied the driver: "That hill's too steep for the Chevrolet to make it." "Are you sure?" pressed Wilson. "I'm damned sure, sir," said the driver. When Wilson was gone, the G.I. snorted: "Who's that guy?" "Why," said Herb Brownell with delight, "he's the man who makes Chevrolets." The driver swallowed. "Oh, lordy, I put my foot in my mouth, didn't I?"

Just after 8 p.m. on Tuesday, the two Constellations put down on an icy runway at a little used field outside Seoul. Only a bird colonel was on hand for the reception: G-2 had learned that 135 Communist agents had recently slipped into Seoul, feared that a reception by high brass might be a tipoff to Ike's arrival. Ike, bundled in an overcoat, climbed into a sedan and the convoy rolled quietly into Seoul through the windy sub freezing (18 degrees) night. When his car pulled up at Eighth Army headquarters, U.S. Commander Mark Clark and the Eighth Army's James Van Fleet stepped out of the shadows for a handshake and an old friends' greeting. They hustled Ike inside for a turkey sandwich, a cup of hot chocolate and a bull session. That night Omar Bradley slept in Van Fleet's room, which faced on the street. Ike - on the insistence of the Secret Service - slept in a room off the street and facing the compound. And four-starred Jim Van Fleet, moved to an Army cot in the laundry.

They awoke to a clear, bitter-cold Wednesday. Ike put on his old battle jacket - with no rank insigne, but still sporting the flaming-sword shoulder patch of SHAPE - and wool Army trousers, then added a fur-lined Army field parka and a pile hat. First, he flew off in a little L 19 Cessna for a look at the 4th Fighter Interceptor Wing (where he asked about the capabilities of MIGs), then on to a briefing at the 1st

Marine Division' command post, six miles from the front and well within ground-shaking distance of Marine artillery and aerial rocket fire. In the afternoon, he arrived at I Corps headquarters, put on his gold braid NATO overseas cap to take a salute from the shivering troops of 15 UN nations. Finally that night Ike got a little time alone with his son, Major John Eisenhower of the 3rd Infantry Division, who was detached from his unit to serve as Ike's aide during the Korean trip. Grandfather Eisenhower passed along the latest reports on John's three youngsters, and confided that he had bought John's wife a fur coat for Christmas.

The next two days - Thursday and Friday - were packed tight with briefings and conferences. Ike the strategist got up for an 8 a.m. talk with Major General William Chase, the U. S. military adviser to the Chinese Nationalists on Formosa. Said Chase later: "I frankly think he learned more about the situation in Formosa than he'd heard before." Ike the world-soldier stopped by to see an old friend, Britain's Major General M.M. Alston-Roberts-West (said West later: "He knew as much about my division and what it has on the line as I did myself"). Ike the President-elect told South Korea's General Chung II Kwon: "As far as I'm concerned, your ROKs are going to be a lot bigger & better." Ike the general visited an Army mobile hospital and chatted briefly with the patients.

It was Ike the old soldier who hunted up his old outfit, the 15th Infantry, in which he served as a lieutenant colonel at Fort Lewis, Wash., more than twelve years ago. He stood in a chow line of B Company, 1st Battalion, then sat down on an old ammunition box with G.I.s to eat pork chops ands sauerkraut off a plastic plate. They chatted about the news - Ike freely, the enlisted men with awe at their guest - made a surprising confession: "I don't read the papers," he said. "I wait until they come out and tell me. If it is bad enough, I'll hear of it." When a messenger came down to invite Ike to join the other generals in a tent, he said: "You mean all the brass is in there? O.K., but is it all right if I bring my friends along?" It was and he did.

Ike the diplomat caught one last hot potato. During his visit, he met three times with South Korea's President Syngman Rhee (and publicly said that Rhee "shows every qualification of a great leader"). But on Ike's last crowded afternoon, Rhee's agents buzzed around headquarters insisting that Rhee would lose face if Ike did not pay a return call on the presidential mansion. The Secret Service was against going about in Seoul, but finally Ike gave in, and changed his schedule. Back in his rooms within an hour, he packed up, left a $20 tip for Suzy, Van Fleet's Korean maid (who later said that she still thinks Carinal Spellman the nicest American), and said goodby. At 8:01 p.m., just three days after his arrival, Ike's plane took off for Guam.

An hour later, the Army released the story of his trip.

What did Ike get out of his trip to Korea? He tried to give an off-the-cuff summary to 125 correspondents who crowded into the Eighth Army's war room for a press conference on his last day. Said he: "We have no panaceas, no trick ways of settling any problems. How difficult it seems to be a war of this kind to work out a plan that would bring a positive and definite victory without possibly running the grave risk of enlarging the war. There are many limitations in a war of this kind, but this much is certain: here we are realizing that freedom is an indivisible thing . . . We are all here to see it through. Much can be done, in my opinion, to improve our position. Much will be done."

Some correspondents were miffed because Eisenhower allowed no questions; many tried hard to read hard promises and plants into his statement (e.g., Ike will not extend the war to China), but the readings were premature because Ike himself had not had time to digest the enormous mass of facts accumulated on his trip. The only

substantial gleaning was the news that in Korea the commanders had urged him to 1) Reinforce the ROKs and send more American troops. 2) Attack the Communists by land and sea. 3) Keep U.S. forces in the front line until the Reds have been pushed farther back. 4) Only then consider U.S. troop withdrawals.

Ike kept his feelings to himself as he flew toward Guam. At Guam, he, Wilson, Brownell and the correspondents left the planes and boarded the Navy's *U.S.S. Helena,* a heavy cruiser, for the trip to Pearl Harbor. The *Helena's* wireless crackled, and when the cruiser hove to off Wake Island, a helicopter brought aboard Ike's Secretary of State John Foster Dulles, Treasury Secretary George Humphrey, Interior Secretary Douglas McKay, General Lucius Clay, Budget Man Joe Dodge, Emmet Hughes, campaign speech writer who is to be on Eisenhower's White House staff, and C. D. Jackson, boss of the Ike speech writing team during the campaign. Meanwhile, Wilson flew off to join Bradley at the military conference at Pearl Harbor.

Ike expected to stop over briefly at Pacific Fleet headquarters at Pearl Harbor, then fly on home to close the circle of a 22,000-mile journey without precedent in the U.S. History. *Time* Magazine, Dec. 15, 1952.

Note. A Korean cease fire was signed 27 July 1953. No peace treaty has yet been signed.

84. Eisenhower, John F. Kennedy, Lyndon B. Johnson, Richard Nixon, Jimmy Carter, Ronald Reagan.

85. The Barber's Point Naval Air Station, 15 miles west of Honolulu, included approximately 3,800 acres. Construction of the airfield began in November 1941 but was temporarily suspended after the Japanese attack on 7 Dec. It was still not complete when commissioned as a naval air station 15 April 1942 commanded by Commander H. F. MacComsey with a staff of 14 officers and 242 enlisted men. It quickly became a hub of aviation activity as the Navy amassed forces in Hawaii to carry the war across the Pacific. Base operations centered on working up Carrier Air Groups (CAGs) and squadrons for deployment to combat theaters farther west. By the end of WWII it was home to almost 13,000 personnel. After the Japanese surrender it became a demobilization center for more than 6,000 personnel leaving for civilian life. After the Korean Conflict began in 1950 it became a critical staging area for supplies, equipment, and forward deploying squadrons. Eight-hundred additional sailors were assigned to the station and new construction included weapons and jet engine test sites, a survival equipment shop, and more than 1,000 housing units. It became a main base for patrol plane operations and airborne carrier patrols. P-2 and P-3 maritime patrol aircraft (Helicopter Antisubmarine Squadron) which reinforced the antisubmarine and anti-ship missile defense of the naval surface forces and provided vertical replenishment, medical evacuation, and personnel transfer to ships throughout the Pacific. It also housed a U.S. Coast Guard Air Station, a Hawaii Air National Guard Air Traffic Control Squadron, and Commander, Patrol Wings, U.S. Pacific Fleet. With its state of the art equipment and facilities it was one of the most modern VP home ports in the world and made a name for itself by fully meeting the support challenges it faced. In 1993 the Base Closure and Realignment Commission recommended to Congress that Barber's Point be closed which it was in 1995 after 57 years of service. The Coast Guard Air Station remains there and serves general aviation on Oahu and hosts units of the Hawaii National Guard. The Navy retained 1,100 acres for military housing and family support facilities and a 2,150-acre section was ceded to Hawaii and is now officially designated the Kalaeloa Community Development District.

86. The Hawaiian Island chain includes 132 islands and atolls extending approximately

1,500 miles from the Big Island of Hawaii to the northernmost Kure atoll. Molikau was home of the Leper Colony at Kalaupapa established by the Hawaiian government in 1866.

87. The Army, Navy, and Air Force operated a facility for the benefit of their personnel. It was on the edge of Kilauea volcano whose last eruption was in 1952 and close to Mauna Loa, one of the world's largest land masses and an intermittently active volcano. The base of Mauno Loa was the ocean floor and extended 18,000 feet to the surface and from there another 13,680 feet above sea level. The lava flow was still hot in some places from its 1950 eruption. We saw lava flows dating from 1790 and saw a steeple, the only remains of a Catholic church, which was wiped out along with the fishing village of Hoopuloa during the 1926 eruption. We took the "World's Weirdest Walk" from the rim of Kilauea crater down the Sandalwood trail and across the floor of the crater to Halamaumau and were presented a certificate proclaiming us as Pele's Pooped Pedestrians.

88. The 1947 Studebaker, designed by Raymond Loewy, was the first truly streamlined auto produced in the U.S. Bob remembers seeing one in a showroom in Yankton. People made jokes about not being able to tell the front from the rear but it influenced all subsequent automobile design. Among the fourth biggest sellers of low-priced cars in 1951 was the Studebaker Champion which featured unique styling cues and innovative engineering advances. Its bullet-nose design made it one of the most unique vehicles of the 20th century. Studebaker's highest production years were in 1950 and 1951. Bob's Champion was a Regal 4-door sedan, Body No W5 with.a 3-speed transmission, and 85 horsepower. It's price new was $1,728 - probably higher on Oahu because of transportation costs - and 35,201 were produced that year. He does not remember what he paid for his.

89. Punchbowl is the 112-acre National Memorial Cemetery of the Pacific. It is in Puowaina Crater, an extinct volcano, which overlooks Honolulu. Opened in 1949, it is the final resting place for more than 44,200 U.S. veterans and their family members from WWII, the Korean Conflict, and the Vietnam War.

90. The G.I Bill of Rights, also known as the Servicemen's Readjustment Act of 1944 funded college or vocational education for returning WWII veterans, one year of unemployment compensation at the rate of $20.00 per month, and loans for returning veterans to buy homes and start businesses. Less than 20 percent of the funds set aside for unemployment was distributed as most veterans found jobs or pursued higher education. President Franklin D. Roosevelt signed the bill 22 June 1944 and by July 1957 2.4 million veterans had home loans backed by the Veterans Administration

The educational portion of the Act subsidized the veteran's tuition, fees, books and other educational materials and contributed to his/her living expenses while enrolled in college or other approved institutions. Veterans were free to attend the educational institution of their choice and colleges were free to admit those who met their admission requirements. Seven years following WWII, approximately 9 million veterans received educational benefits with approximately 2.3 million attending college, 3.5 million school training, and 3.4 million on-the-job training. The cost to the government by 1951 was estimated at $14 billion.

This educational program opened enrollment to a varied socioeconomic group. Engineers and technicians needed for the technological economy came from the ranks of returning veterans. It transformed colleges and universities. In almost all institutions, classes were overcrowded. More classrooms, laboratories, faculty and staff members, and other resources were required. Housing was inadequate and new building programs established. New vocational courses were added. This new student

population called for differential courses in advanced training in education, commerce, agriculture, mining, fisheries, and other vocational fields previously taught informally. Summer and extension courses thrived. The student population was no longer limited to those between 18-23, The veterans were eager to learn and had a greater sense of maturity compared to the former student stereotype. The idea that higher education was the privilege of a well-born elite was finally shattered.

Bob earned a Bachelor of Arts degree from the U. of Minn. in July 1956 and a Master of Science degree from the U. of Oreg. in June 1959. under the provisions of the G.I. His Veterans Administration Claim No. was 18-563-096. His brother Dick earned a degree in Pharmacy from the U. of Minn. in 1968 courtesy of the G.I. Bill.

91. Dinky Town, an area close to campus.
92. Invitations to join Sigma Delta Chi , which was not a secret organization, or an honorary society, or a social society, but a professional journalistic fraternity, offered membership to men dedicated to the highest ideals of journalism. It has professional chapters throughout the country. Letter to Mr. Robert Whipple from Norman W. Larson, president Sigma Delta Chi, Minnesota chapter, May 1956
93. *Mankato Free Press*, Mankato, Minn. July 22. 1955, p. 1. *The College Reporter,* Mankato State Teachers College, Mankato, Minn., July 28, 1955.
94. Thomas Barnhart, a 25-year Professor of Journalism at the University of Minnesota, was known nationwide as a specialist in country newspapers and typography and as "Mr. Weekly Newspaper." The fund, administered by the U. Of Minn., receives contributions from members of the MEA, journalism alumni, the graphic industry, and friends of Barmhart. It was established in 1955 after Barnhart's death. *The Minnesota Press*, March 1956.
95. Robert Whipple, Tracy, third generation newspaperman, who started as a printer's devil at 13, and Lee Fremstad, Minneapolis, journalism junior, are adding practice to classroom theory by spending a week here.

Whipple is winner this year of the journalism award in memory of Thomas Barnhart, longtime university specialist in Minnesota's rural press. He got into the spirit of his New Prague assignment two weeks ago by starting a beard, which by the time he hit town, was a luxuriant companion to some of the bushiest tributes to New Prague's centennial celebration coming up in July.

Whipple and Fremstad went straight to work in the back shop and through the town. They've done everything in their week's reporting tour but talk to old-timers in Czech. Whipple wrote the editorial page over the weekend so linotype operators would have some early copy to set while he and Fremstad hit the streets Monday for news.

They attended the Business and Professional Association Monday noon, covered two spelling bees, interviewed school chums of the town's current heroes, its basketball players. They wrote advance details of the homecoming celebration Sunday for the team - win or lose -the state championship.

Whipple was the speaker Tuesday at th Rotary Club while Fremstad took in the American Legion meeting. They both worked late on election returns from Scott and LeSueur counties; New Prague lies in both counties, and have voting booths at opposite ends of the fire station.

The news team covered plans for a $160,000 local road improvement, the markmanship win Co. K of the 103rd infantry reserve unit, and activities at Minnesota Valley Breeders Association plant on the edge of town. *Minneapolis Star*, 22 March 1956.

96. The New York *Journal-American* described his "primitive physical movements diffi-

cult to describe in terms suitable to a family newspaper. The New York *Daily News* reported that Elvis "gave an exhibition that was suggestive and vulgar, tinged with the kind of animalism that should be confined to dives and bordellos," while the San Francisco *Chronicle* deemed it "in appalling taste." These comments were prompted after Elvis appeared on the *Milton Berle Show* June 5. Sullivan had previously refused to hire Elvis but after he appeared on *The Steve Allen Show* and buried Sullivan in the ratings, Sullivan hired him to open his 1956 season. Historians say that Elvis helped bridge the gap between the first rock 'n roll generation and their parents.

97. Bob believes he received the offers based on the recommendation received from Earl Lellman who sent the following letter on the letterhead of the *Forest Lake Times* to the Deans of the various Schools of Journalism where Bob had applied.

It is without the slightest reservation that I recommend Robert B. Whipple as a candidate for the graduate assistantship in which I understand he is interested.

He has been employed as advertising manager of our weekly newspaper and twin shoppers since July 1956 and has performed in an exceptionally outstanding manner. Selling has constituted about one-half of his work here, and in his many contacts with our advertising customers, his sincere, professional approach and his full understanding of his subject have impressed us greatly.

He speaks and writes exceedingly well but is, at the same time, one of the best listeners and quiet observers I have known. In addition to his natural intellectual ability and emotional maturity, he is an unusually hard and serious worker. He has put in scores of extra hours for us, far in excess of anything we have demanded of him. The result, of course, has been the production of much additional lineage over that of his predecessors.

Without hesitation, I can state that Mr. Whipple is the most outstanding employee we have ever had in our busy editorial office, dwarfing by a long way in almost every respect every other man we have ever employed in a similar capacity. He will rank at or near the top in whatever profession he eventually chooses - teaching, ownership or employment in journalism.

We are going to miss sorely the services of a No. 1 ad man, but we are warmly pleased to help further his success with the most unqualified recommendation we can write. If we can furnish any further information, we should be pleased to do so.

98. Robert Blaine Whipple, *The Change and Development of Editorial Attitudes of Selected Oregon Daily Newspapers Toward Senator Wayne Morse*. Thesis (M.S), University of Oregon,. 1959. ivm 270 leavesl 29 cm, Typescript, Call Number PN4897.W5 1959. Location Knight. SCA Archive Storage, Theses W5773. Available for library use only.

99. Linn, Lane, Douglas, Josephine, Jackson, Curry, and Coos. The latter two bordered the Pacific Ocean and the first five were in the U.S. Highway 99 corridor, now Interstate 5.

100. The American University of Beirut, originally known as the Syrian Protestant College, opened its doors 3 Dec. 1866 in a rented stone house with a student body of 16 and was the first American institution of higher learning in the Arab world. By 1958 it occupied 50 buildings on a 70-acre campus on the western outskirts of the city. Its student body of over 3,000 represented 51 nationalities and 20 religious groups. The faculty of 359 were natives of the Near East, America, and Europe. Beirut's population of about 400,000 included large American and European colonies. Arabic was the first language, French second with English generally spoken. The salary would be paid in dollars but the University reserved the right to pay up to 50 percent in Lebanese pounds. The entire amount was subject to Lebanese tax of 3-4 percent. No U.S. tax was due if you remained outside the U.S. for at least 18 months. The appoint-

ment was for 3 years which included 9 months of work annually. The University furnished travel to and from Oregon and basic furniture. Free medical care was provided through th University Health Service. The climate was described as being rainy (30-40 inches annually) and often cold in the winter and hot but not humid in summer.

101. The location was a mistake. Washington county was the most Republican voting county in the state. Considering he had political ambitions, he should have established residency in Portland, which had a heavy Democratic registration edge.

102. "Coastal communities from Astoria to Coos Bay are going to be treated this week to a gratis rendition of *Happy Days Are Here Again*. The recorded brass band version of the old Democratic campaign song will blare from public address speakers on a big Trailways bus. Plastered on the outside of the bus will be political posters advertising Democrats running for statewide office.

"As the bus reaches the outskirt of each town, it will be met by local Democratic leaders waiting in cars. Then, led by a police car with flashing red lights, the bus and the private cars will parade through the business district and part of the residential district, to the local Democratic headquarters or a busy street corner. Upon leaving the bus the candidates will introduce themselves and shake hands with everyone in sight and distribute personal campaign literature and buttons. In many of the communities they will speak at scheduled luncheon and evening banquets.

"Robert Straub, chairman of the Oregon Democrats and Blaine Whipple, executive secretary, devised the two tours, a first for the state party. Days and days of planning, much correspondence, and hundreds of phone calls were required to organize the tours. Whipple drove every mile of the route in advance to confirm the timing and help local committees with arrangements. As the bus rolled over the miles after the last evening meeting (sometimes there were two evening meetings), the candidates conferred with Whipple seated about tables which had been installed on the bus reviewing the day and planning the next.

"Whipple, 30, a former advertising man, is the quietly capable director of the tours. At meetings at which he was called on to speak, he variously described himself, amid chuckles from the audience, as "tour chaperone" and "keeper of the menagerie." Once as the candidates hesitated to leave so they could answer one last question, Whipple, responsible for keeping the tour on a strict time schedule, said: "Ask the question, but please do it while walking Sen. Sweetland toward the bus. I'm the wagon master of this expedition and I have to crack the whip." Wearing a red, white, and blue Kennedy for President hat, he mingled with the crowd at every stop, shaking the hands of school children and asking 'Who are you going to vote for?' The students had no idea who this man was, but their eyes grew big as the personable stranger with the fancy hat – obviously somebody important – took time to shake their hand and ask their political views" Jim Running, "Democrats Prepare To Invade Oregon Coastal Communities By Bus This Week," *Oregon Journal*, Portland, Sept. 25. 1960.

103. "The chief administrative officers of the Republican and Democratic parties in Oregon have exchanged broadsides over a charge that Gov. Mark Hatfield negotiated in secret to lease the state's 600,000 acres of offshore lands to Shell Oil. Co. The exchange between the two political leaders may be a tipoff that the state land board's early negotiations with Shell will be a major issue in the 1962 gubernatorial, particularly if Atty. Gen Robert Y. Thornton is the Democratic candidate. Hatfield is chairman of the land board whose members are all Republicans.

"Blaine Whipple, executive secretary of the Democratic party, has made a number of speeches during the last three months accusing Hatfield and the land board of

secret negotiations with Shell. Only Thornton's November opinion that any leasing of submerged lands would be illegal without new legislation saved the state from handing its property over to Shell on a an exclusive basis, Whipple alleges. The state land board requested the attorney general's opinion.

"Hatfield and the Republican party had simply ignored Whipple's charges until this week, although it was rumored that the governor considered the Shell affair the most serious mistake of his political career. Wally Hunter, executive secretary of the Republican party, last Tuesday fired out a statement contradicting Whipple's allegations, after the Democrat had again repeated them in a talk to the Willamette Business and Professional Men's Club of Portland. "Whipple strays from the facts when he suggests that any secrecy surrounded any phase of the oil lease activity," Hunter declared. "It has been made clear on several occasions that the press either attended or was welcome at meetings of the land board when the leasing was discussed. Whipple evidently ignores truth because his wing of the party is supporting Thornton for governor, and Whipple feels a phony issue will help.

"Thornton has been mentioned as the strongest Democratic candidate against Hatfield and the one who would suffer the least from a defeat He would receive a 'free ride' in the 1962 campaign, because his term as attorney general does not expire until 1964.

"In a speech in Salem Whipple renewed his attack on Hatfield and the land board with what he said was 'documentation' that his charges of secret negotiations are true. 'Records show that Shell first contacted the land board Sept. 7, 1960, by letter applying for exclusive lease over the whole Oregon coast,' he told the Marion county Democratic central committee. 'Until Dec. 6, 1960 – three months later – there wasn't even a hint of this in public print. On Dec. 5, when newspapermen were present at a land board meeting where this matter was discussed, they were asked by the land board secretary not to print anything about it because Shell Oil wanted to keep it quiet. The governor's administrative assistant was asked for further details . . . but told the reporters, 'We're keeping it quiet.' Whipple told Marion county Democrats that Hatfield remarked of the request for a Thornton opinion, 'Believe me, if we weren't required by law, we wouldn't bother asking the attorney general." Robert McBride, "Demo, GOP Big Guns Duel Over Offshore Oil, *Portland Reporter*, June 12, 1961.

104. "Democrat Criticizes Hatfield On Oil Lease," *Coos Bay World*, Coos Bay, OR, June 19, 1961.

105. In late July the State Land Board postponed a decision on setting a fixed rate or sliding rate for royalties on gas and oil leases awarded to private firms. State Geology Director Hollis M. Dole had recommended a fixed rate of 12 FI percent – a minimum royalty. Thornton and Whipple advocated a sliding scale based on the relative richness of each oil find which would maximize royalty benefits to the states's common school fund which gets proceeds from state lands. Whipple told the Land Board it would be fair and proper for the state to get proceeds from its land in proportion to the value of that land and that it was fair and proper that an oil company hitting a high-profit gusher pay royalties in proportion to its ability to pay. He said the Land Board is supposed to be the foremost guardian of state lands and of the common school fund and offering a fixed rate royalty does not meet this test. "Democrats Call For Oil Royalty Change," *Lincoln Co. Newscaster*, Newport, OR. July 27, 1961. "Oil Royalty Schedule Set Aside By Board Until Study Finished," *The Capital Press*, Salem, OR, July 28, 1961.

106. "Demo Raps Sick Care Opposition," *Oregon Journal*, Portland, Aug. 9, 1961.

107. "Red China Admission Crux of TV Debate," *Oregon Journal*, Portland, Oct. 11, 1961; "State Party Leaders Trade Shots On Issue of Red China U.N. Seat," *Oregon Journal*, Oct. 19, 1961; "Red China Trade Policy, Parties at Odds in Oregon," *Capital Journal*, Salem, OR, Oct. 19, "Red China Issue," *Portland Reporter*, Oct. 19, 1962l; "Mr. Whipple Replies," *Portland Reporter*, Oct. 26, 1961.
108. "Star's Talk Called JFK Attack," *The Oregonian*, Portland, Oct. 16, 1961
109. "Of Cabbages and Kings...by J.W.F," *East Oregonian*, Pendeton OR, 14 July 1961. "Whipple Ponders Congressional Race," *Medford Mail Tribune*, Nov. 10, 1961. "Whipple Favored as Norblad Foe," *Portland Reporter*, Nov. 11, 1961, Mervin Shoemaker, Political Writer, "Demo May Seek Seat." Blaine Whipple, Democratic party state secretary, confirmed Republican suspicions Friday by letting it be known he may seek the 1st District congressional seat held by GOP Rep. Walter Norblad, Stayton. Whipple said his becoming a candidate was urged by a resolution passed by the Jane Jefferson Club of "Eastern 'Washington County . Whipple said he had not made up his mind whether to become a candidate against Norblad who has held his seat for 15 years. 'Many individuals from all over the district have urged me to make this race but it is a major decision which I have not as yet resolved.' Beginning last spring Whipple began showing up as principal speaker at party functions, and lashed out freely at Republicans as Democratic party spokesman. Robert G. Davis, Grants Pass, Republican state chairman, predicted that Whipple would emerge as a candidate, and probably for the 1st District seat. There is no announced candidate for the Democratic nomination to oppose Norblad." *The Oregonian*," Nov. 11, 1961 "Opposition for Norblad." The Democrats in Oregon are getting ready to open fire on Rep. Walter Norblad, who has clung to his House seat for 16 years through all kinds of Democratic political successes in Oregon. This time the Democrats are hoping to provide strong opposition to the hard-to-beat first district congressman. Our own Rep. William Holmstrom is a possible candidate. He has for some time had an urge to try his strength against Norblad but now he has some formidable opposition within his own party for the right to make the battle. Willis West, former Clatsop County district attorney and now in the Multnomah County district attorney's office, has the advantage of family relationship to ex-Gov. Oswald West, one of the most respected names in Oregon politics. Blaine Whipple, state Democratic secretary, has the advantage of publicity for himself gained through the party job. Letters are being circulated urging Whipple as candidate. *Daily Astorian*, Astoria, OR, Dec. 9, 1961. 70
110. Oswald West (1873-1960) was Oregon's 14th governor, elected as a Democrat in 1910 and served from 1911-1914. He chose not to seek reelection. He is revered by Oregonians for his legislation that made Oregon's beaches bordering the Pacific Ocean a public highway owned by the state. He is also known for establishing the office of State Forester and the Bureau of Forestry and creating the State Game Commission. Oswald West State Park just south of Cannon Beach is named in his honor.
111. "Nephew of Gov. West Eyes Race for Seat in Congress," *The Statesman*, Salem, OR. Dec. 6, 1961. "West Seeks Norblad Job," *The Oregonian*, Dec. 12, 1961. "Willis West Decides: He'll Run for Congress," *Potland Reporter*, Dec. 12, 1961.
112. "Whipple To Be Candidate In Race Against Norblad,: *Portland Reporter*, Jan. 8, 1962. "Whipple Joins First District Congress Rate," *The Statesman*, Jan. 8, 1962. "Whipple Gives Up Demo Job to Enter Race for Congress," *Capital Journal*, Salem, OR Jan. 8, 1962. "Whipple Enters First District Congress Race," *Tri-City News*, Sherwood, OR Jan. 11, 1962. "Blaine Whipple," *Oregon Voter*, Jan. 13, 1962.
113. First District counties: Benton, Clackamas, Clatsop, Columbia, Lincoln, Marion, Polk, Tillamook, Washington, Yamhill.

114. "1st District Congress," *The Capital Press,* Salem, OR, March 16, 1962.
115. "'Secret' Candidate Feud Stirs 1st District Race.," *Portland Reporter*, April 18, 1962.
116. "STRAUB ANSWERS WEST," *Portland Reporter*, April 30, 1962.
117. "Congressional Races," *The Oregonian*, Portland, May 6, 1962. "Congressional Races," *The Statesman*, Salem, OR. "West Over Whipple," *Capital Journal*, Salem, OR, May 7, 1962. "Democratic Candidates for Congress," *Gazette-Times*, Corvallis, OR, May 10, 1962. "The Congressional Campaign," *Portland Reporter*, May 4, 1962. "Whipple for Congress," *The Capital Press*, Salem, OR, April 27, 1962. "Bobbin Around," *Enterprise-Courier,* Oregon City, OR, May 15, 1962. "Democrats We Like," *Sandy Post,* Sandy, OR May 17, 1962.
118. "Incumbents Start With Leads Going Into Election Campaigns," *The Capital Press,* Salem, OR, May 25, 1962
119. "Whipple Asserts Norblad Vetoed Debate Proposal," *The Statesman*, Salem, OR, July 29, 1962.
120. "Whipple 'Briefed" By Administration," *The Capital Press*, Salem, OR, July 20, 1962.
121. Another political recipe floating around the state and handed out by Blaine Whipple is for "Whipple-Snaps." We have been asked pass it along to the readers: 2 cups flour; 1 tble ground ginger; 2 tsp baking soda; 1 tsp cinnamon; FI tsp salt; FL cup shortening; 1 cup sugar; 1 egg; FI cup molasses; granulated sugar. Cream sugar and shortening. Add egg and molasses. Add sifted dry ingredients. Beat smooth. Form small ball from dough by rolling between palms. Then roll in granulated sugar. Bake in a moderate oven (350 degrees) for 20 minutes (15 minutes for softer cookies.) For Oregon goodness, add FI cup ground 1st District filberts. Marguerite Wright, columnist, *Capital Press*, Salem, OR Aug 3, 1962.
122. "G.O.P. HOUSE SEAT IN OREGON IN PERIL. Norblad Is Pressed Hard by Whipple in 1st District," *The New York Times*, Oct. 28, 1962. Edith Evans Asbury, "Peace Issue Livens Campaigns; Draws Aid for Many Candidates." The Council to Abolish War sent letters to its members suggesting that they contribute to the campaigns of the following candidates for the House of Representatives: Democratic Representatives Robert W. Kastenmeier of Wisconsin and William Fitts Ryan of Manhattan, Republican Representatives Fred Schwengel of Iowa and Stanley R. Tupper of Maine, Democratic nominees George Brown, Jr., John O"Connell, and Edward Roybal of California; Blaine Whipple of Oregon and Robert Wilson of Illinois; and Republican nominee Caroline Ramsay of Maryland. *The New York Times*, Oct. 3, 1962.
123. The 1961 **Bay of Pigs Invasion** was an unsuccessful United States-planned and funded attempted invasion of Cuba by armed Cuban exiles. The goal was to overthrow the government of Fidel Castro. Tensions between Washington and Havana, Cuba's capitol city, had increased steadily since the Cuban Revolution of 1959. The Eisenhower and Kennedy administrations had determined that Cuba's expropriation of U.S. assets on the island and its increasing ties with the Soviet Union could not be tolerated. In March of 1960 the Eisenhower administration agreed to a recommendation from the CIA to equip and drill Cuba exiles for action against the Castro government and Eisenhower stated that it was U.S. policy to aid anti-Castro guerilla forces "to the utmost." The CIA was confident it could overthrow Castro with experience gained from assisting in the overthrow of Iranian prime minister Mohammed Mossadegh in 1953 and Guatemalan President Jacobo Arbenz Guzmán in 1954. The invasion began April 17 when four chartered ships, accompanied by two CIA-owned infantry landing crafts containing supplies, ordnance, and equipment, transported 1,511 Cuban exiles to the Bay of Pigs on the southern coast of Cuba. They hoped to be

supported by the local population and that the invasion would spark a popular uprising against Castro. This did not happen and President Kennedy did not authorize U.S. air support and U.S. Marines in support ships off the coast, were not sent in because of Kennedy's opposition to overt intervention. The failed invasion made Castro even more popular, generated support for his economic policies, made him wary of future U.S. intervention, resulted in closer relations with the Soviet Union, and led to the Cuban Missile Crisis a year and a half later. http://wikipedia.org/wik/Bay_of_Pigs_Invasion.

124. Surface-to-air missiles(SAM) were being constructed in August. The first consignment of SS-MRBMs was unloaded in Havana the night 8 September and a second shipload 16 September. The Soviets were building nine sites – six for SS-4s and three for SS-5s with a range of 2,400 miles. The Soviet plan was to build 40 launchers, an increase in Soviet first strike capacity of 70%. http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Cuban_Missle_Crisis
125. Philip Hager, "Morse Called Back to Washington; Candidates React Swiftly to Crisis," *Portland Reporter*, Oct. 23, 1962.
126. "Whipple Supports Cuba Stand In Talk," *Enterprise Courier*, Oregon City, OR, Oct. 24, 1962.
127. Douglas Seymour, "Campaigning With Whipple," *Capital Journal*, Salem, OR Oct. 31, 1962.
128. "Norblad For Congress, *Statesman*, Salem, OR, Oct. 23. "Hometown People," *Stayton Mail*, Stayton, OR, Oct. 25. "Norblad Durable, *The Oregonian*, Portland, OR, Oct. 25. "1st Congressional District," *Oregon Voter*, Portland, OR, Oct. 27. "We Cast Our Ballot," *The Review*, Milwaukie, OR, Nov. 1. "Return Norblad to Congress," *Capital Journal*, Salem, OR, Nov. 1. "Keep Walter Norblad Serving In Washington," *Argus*, Hillsboro, OR, Nov. 1. "Retain Walter Norblad," *Gazette Times*, Corvallis, OR Nov. 2. "Norblad For Congress," *Daily Astorian*, Nov. 2.
129. "First District Needs Whipple," *Oregon Teamster*, Oct. 25. "Whipple For Congress," *Capital Press*, Salem, OR, Oct. 26. "District One, Two, and Four," *Portland Reporter*, Oct. 27. "Whachma Collum," *Canby Herald*, Nov. 1. "off the record," *Clackamas County News*, Estacada, OR, Nov. 1.
130. "Oregon Contributions to Candidates Listed," *Portland Reporter*, Nov. 15, 1962. "Morse, Unander Report Election Campaign Costs," *The Oregonian*, Portland, Nov. 17, 1962.
131. He visited: The Azores, Portugal, Spain, Italy, Greece, Yugoslavia, Denmark, Finland,, Austria, Germany, East Germany, The Netherlands, France, England, Scotland, Wales, Ireland, and Northern Ireland.
132. *Europe On $5 a Day* was first published in 1957. In 2007 Frommers offers over 300 guidebooks. See: Frommers.com.
133. Independence Hall, a red-brick structure, near the center of Philadelphia, where the Declaration of Independence, Articles of Confederation, and Constitution were signed. Built between 1732 and 1757 for speaker Andrew Hamilton to serve as provincial Pennsylvania's state house, it became the meeting place of the Continental Congress during the American Revolution and retains many relics from that era. Adjoining Congress Hall, where the House and Senate met during the 1790s, and Old City Hall, where the Supreme Court deliberated, Independence Hall completes the grouping of historically important buildings on Independence Square. Independence National Historical Park, established by the Eightieth Congress (1948) to preserve historical properties associated with the American Revolution, is a landscaped area of four city blocks and outlying sites that encompass Independence Square, Carpenters'

Hall (meeting place of the First Continental Congress), the site of Benjamin Franklin's home, the reconstructed Graff House (where Thomas Jefferson wrote the Declaration of Independence), City Tavern (center of revolutionary-war activities), restored period residences, and early banks. The park also holds the Liberty Bell, Franklin's desk, a portrait gallery, gardens, and libraries.

134. During the month of August, while pastor Elmer E. and Mrs. Erickson were on vacation in the Midwest, senior trustee and member of the state church board Thomas R. Role, arranged for various speakers to occupy the pulpit of the Gaston Congregational Church. On Aug. 23, Blaine Whipple, the fourth speaker, Beaverton Realtor and Democratic nominee for Congress from District 1, spoke on his "$35-a-week tour of Europe taken from December through March of this year. Theme for the series has been the "Brotherhood of Man."

"Hospitality from Lisbon to East Germany, from Yugoslavia to Wales, was found everywhere by Whipple, "Tramping," as the Germans called his mode of transportation, is done all over Europe, by grandparents, as well as teen-aggers. Even a brief exchange of vital statistics with the driver invariably led to an invitation to the motorist's home and a meal. The speaker cited being picked up by a young Irish architect who took him home "without a word of warning to his wife", not only for the evening meal but for an entire week. The architect took him on a tour through a Roman Catholic monastery, a rare thing for a tourist to see. The whole family then accompanied him as far as Belfast, whence he was bound for Edinburgh, Scotland. He arrived there armed with the names of friends of the architect, whom he found quite as cordial as the Irish has been, and so it went throughout Europe, he discovered.

"Traveling in the barren north part of Greece, where farmers and their families eke out a bare existence, Whipple was shocked to discover that the two beasts of burden are the mule and the farmer's wife. Moreover, if there is any choice, the woman is the one who carried the greatest weight. Whipple found Greece a land of contrasts – most people were very poor and a few fabulously wealthy. Manpower is the greatest export with over 400,000 young Greek men working in Scandinavia and the Common Market countries of Europe who left their homeland because of the limited job opportunities. Many would prefer to come to the U.S. but the quota is so low that a 20-year wait is average. The average daily wage for an able-bodied man in Greece is $2.50. A charwoman who scrubs streets, stairwells, and lobbies of public buildings considers herself well paid at $1 a day. The cost of a good three-course meal in Athens was 75 cents but few could afford it.

"Entry to the countries two Universities – one in Athens, the other in Salonika – was difficult, living facilities inadequate, over-crowded classes, few books and professors – caused the students to strike in the past year. A rather moving spectacle Whipple said, was watching elementary and high school students joining in peaceful demonstrations for better educational opportunities. Only the wealthy and those with political influence were granted admission.

"To illustrate frugal meals of most of the populace, Whipple told of being a guest at a "feast" to welcome home a boy who had been at sea for two years. The meal was macaroni and cheese, radishes, tomatoes, black bread, and red wine, the Greek national drink. The meal was prepared over a Bunsen burner in the one room that served as a kitchen, bedroom, and dining room. Water was piped into a lavatory in the lean-to attached to the kitchen. Refrigeration is practically unknown and the Greek housewife stands in market lines daily to buy the family food.

"He arrived in "the white city" of Helsinki, Finland during what was, according

to the old timers, the worst blizzard in the past 100 years and luckily he was taken-in by a young couple who fed him a meal of soup, dark coarse bread, and cheese. He had traveled steerage class from Stockholm, Sweden on the Baltic Sea. He remembered the first night as being very cold and that their home had no central heating, hence no hot water for a badly needed bath. While in Helsinki he met Finland's "No. 2 man" and watched the unicameral legislature in session. The Agrarian or Free Enterprise Party controlled the legislature with the Communist Party holding the second largest number of representatives. Representatives were elected based on proportional population, similar to the practice in Ireland, France, and Sweden.

"He met a graduate student at the University of Stockholm who was headed for a week's holiday in Amsterdam a few days later and gave him the key to his apartment and told him to stay there. He attended his first ballet in Stockholm and luckily picked the same night the King and Queen attended.

"Because he has seen many walled cities in Europe the impact of the Wall separating East and West Berlin didn't register until he passed through "Checkpoint Charlie." Then he realized how easy it was to enter and how difficult it was for the East German to leave. He said it was his opinion that 18 and 19-year old men were used as guards instead of older men because they would be quicker to shoot and/or provoke a border incident.

"He told of spending a Sunday in London's Hyde Park listening to about 40 speakers, each with their own topic. One orator, head of the English-Irish Workers labor union, used showmanship to attract a large crowd. A master of the scathing phrase and the telling epithet, he held his crowd until finished. He also visited the House of Commons in session. Of all of the countries visited, Whipple said the one he would return to first was Greece where folks asked to buy him a cup of coffee just to chat about "that wonderful country, America." They have not forgotten about the help America provided under President Harry Truman when they were fighting the Communists to retain their freedom. Throughout Europe the most asked question was 'Why, in the United States, land of so-called freedom and opportunity, does the Negro have to fight for recognition?'" M. Laru Derr, "Tramping Tour of Europe Subject of Whipple Talk," *Argus*, Sept. 17, 1965.

135. "Women Hear Whipple at Convention," *Statesman*, Salem, OR April 18, 1962
136. "Governmental Changes Foreseen When Negroes Fully Franchised," Philip Hager, *Portland Reporter*, May 13. 1963.
137. The debates are considered a political landmark. From then on, television played a more important role in politics. Nixon, who didn't use make-up, looked tense and uncomfortable, Kennedy who did appeared more composed leading the television audience to consider him the winner. Radio listeners thought Nixon won.
138. To allay fears that his Catholicism would impact his decision-making, Kennedy, in a famous speech to the Houston (Texas) Ministerial Association on Sept. 12, said "I am not the Catholic candidate for president. I am the Democratic Party's candidate for president who also happens to be a Catholic. I do not speak for my Church on public matters – and the Church does not speak for me." He also asked if one-quarter of Americans were relegated to second-class citizenship just because they were Catholic?
139. Kennedy was sworn in as the 35rd president Jan. 20 and spoke of the need for all Americans to be active citizens in his inaugural address. "Ask not what your country can do for you, ask what you can do for your country," he said. He also asked the nations of the world to join in a fight against what he called the "common enemies of man: tyranny, poverty, disease, and war itself."

140. Freedom Rides were a series of nonviolent, direct action protests performed in 1961 as part of the U.S. civil rights movement. Volunteers, African Americans and White, many of whom were college students, called Freedom Riders, rode in interstate buses in segregated southern U. S. to test the 1960 Supreme Court decision *Boynton v. Virginia*, (1960) 364 U. S. 454, which outlawed racial segregation in interstate transportation facilities, including bus stations and railroad terminals. 436 Freedom Riders were arrested for trespassing, unlawful assembly, violating state and local "Jim Crow" laws, etc. The worst violence was in Birmingham, Alabama when police chief Eugene "Bull" Connor openly conspired with Klu Klux Klan members to beat and harass the Freedom Riders. Freedom Rides followed on the heels of dramatic "sit-ins" against segregated lunch counters conducted by students and youth throughout the south beginning in 1960.
141. In 1993 the U. S. began construction of a border fence to keep people out. It is located between San Diego, Calif., and Tijuana, Mexico. Supporters say it bolsters homeland security and curbs illegal immigration. Opponents decry it as a new "Berlin Wall," antithetical to the American ideal of an open society, In addition to this fence, urban areas on the border in Arizona (Yuma, Nogales, Naco and Douglas) have constructed fences. Outside of urban areas and along much of the rest of the border, barbed-wire fencing has been installed. In December 2005 the U. S. House of Representatives passed a bill to build a barrier along 700 miles of the 2,000-mile U. S. border with Mexico. That's the distance from Atlanta to Chicago. It would run across parts of California, Arizona, New Mexico and Texas. It has not passed the Senate (2007).
142. Newspapers reporting on Kennedy's assassination were kept as souvenirs rather than sources of update information. U.S. networks switched to 24-hour news coverage for the first time ever. His state funeral and the murder of Lee Harvey Oswald were broadcast live around the world. People remember where they were when first learning the news. His death was the beginning of the American people losing faith in the political establishment. The murders of Rev. Martin Luther King, Jr. and Sen. Robert F. Kennedy furthered that disillusionment, and the Watergate scandal of President Richard Nixon cemented the lack of trust in government.
143. "Scrapbook By MOD Wins First," *Argus*, Hillsboro, OR, June 18, 1964.
144. "Whipple to Seek 1st District Post," *Valley Times*, Beaverton, OR, Feb. 27, 1964. "Seat Sought By Whipple," *Portland Oregonian*, March 1, 1964.
145. "Whipple Urges Letter Campaign On Tongue Point," *Daily Astorian*, Astoria, OR, March 9, 1964.
146. "Salute to America Ceremony Streses Nation's Heritage," Mrs. O. J. Alder, *The Argus*, Hillsboro, OR, March 23, 1964.
147. "Elderly Forced Onto Relief, Whipple Charges," Les Cour, *Portland Reporter*, April 11, 1964.
148. "Unions Shun Candidates," *The Oregonian*, April 3, 1964.
149. "Region 3 Board Endorses Whipple, Straub, Willner" *Woodworker*, Porland, OR, May 1, 1964
150. "Whipple Asks Youth Corps," *Statesman*, Salem OR, April 21, 1964.
151. "Whipple Hits Arms Spread," *The Oregonian*, April 24, 1964.
152. Neither Blaine nor Norblad were opposed in the primary. Norblad received 70,858 votes, Blaine 63,453. "May 15 Vote Now Official," *Portland Oregonian*, June 16, 1964. Republican voter turnout was 75% to 59% for the Democrats.
153. "Challenge Extended By Whipple," *Argus*, Hillsboro, OR May 21, 1964. "Norblad Refuses Whipple Debate," *Portland Reporter*, June 22, 1964.
154. "Medicare Supported." Under medicare, all persons 65 and older (even those not eli-

gible for Social Security benefits) would be eligible for 90 days of hospital care so long as they paid $10 per day for the first 9 days; eligible for skilled nursing home care for 180 days after leaving the hospital; eligible for home health services from visiting nurses and therapists for up to 240 visits per year.

You editorially suggest the program is bad because even the well fixed older person can benefit. And why shouldn't he? If he has paid into the social security trust fund, he has an earned right to its benefits. Many who receive social security benefits today are not in dire need but we do not abandon the program. You quote Robert Cubbedge's studies of Congressional polls which indicate the people oppose medicare and in the same editorial suggest President Johnson will make it a major issue of his campaign for reelection. I'm sure most of your readers are wondering why LBJ would advocate legislation the people oppose, thereby inviting votes to be cast against him. Every Gallup poll taken on medicare shows a substantial majority of Americans in every age bracket in favor of the program. The congressional polls quoted by Cubbedge were conducted by congressmen who oppose medicare and who ask loaded questions in their polls. Gallup has no axe to grind and is noted for his objectiveness and accuracy. Your further quote Cubbedge concerning 'colossal costs' which will only meet a quarter of the older person's medical expenses.

"Medicare is not designed to meet all the costs of the aged. It is an extremely moderate measure, not a comprehensive health insurance program, for the aged. It would, however, pay the bulk of the hospital and hospital related bills of the aged, which is all it purports to do. Social security actuaries use the same statistical projects used by private insurance plans. If costs do exceed the estimate, it only proves the need for the program. It proves that thousands of senior citizens are doing without medical care because of financial consideration. Social security financing is more 'fiscally responsible' than the present Kerr-Mills program. The latter depends on the chance availability of both federal and state funds on a year-to-year basis. Medicare raises taxes and earmarks them to insure an actuarially sound system. In all logic, fiscal conservatives should applaud medicare and deplore Kerr-Mills.

"Mr. Cubbedge says medicare involves regressive taxation. He should also explain the regressive features of Kerr-Mills. The states' share of the costs of Kerr-Mills depends heavily on sales and property taxes – highly regressive forms of taxation. If medicare were financed from general tax revenues, it would convert from a social insurance to a welfare-type program. Contributory financing in the social security program, is essential to the concept of an 'earned' benefit instead of a charity payment.

"You would have your readers believe Kerr-Mills already meets the need of the aged medically indigent. But you didn't tell them that in the 39 states with Kerr-Mills programs, fewer than one elderly person in a hundred is receiving any help. In many of these states, eligibility requirements are excessive and benefits are meager – particularly in the poorer states where poverty among the aged is more desperate. A number of states limit hospitalization payments to periods of less than 15 days; some limit to those with life-or-sight endangering illnesses. Each state has its own Kerr-Mills program and thus far four states – California, Massachusetts, New York, and Michigan – have consumed nearly 90 percent of the federal funds authorized by Kerr-Mills. Payments in Massachusetts in May averaged over $5 compared to 44 cents in Oregon. Yet Oregon citizens are taxed by the federal government at the same rate as Massachusetts taxpayers.

"Kerr-Mills requires aged persons to exhaust their savings before they become eligible for aid. Yet the modest savings of the elderly are extremely important to

them. These savings represent the last reserve for an emergency; they retain self-respect and personal dignity and in the end help pay burial expenses. Medicare will stretch out these savings as long as possible, instead of prematurely subjecting the aged to the humiliation of a private or public charity. Medicare will relieve the aged of anxieties and apprehensions associated with actual or possible hospital bills which can wipe out their limited savings. For anyone with some degree of compassion, this is the most compelling reason for the passage of this legislation. Medicare is a humane measure, a measure imperatively required of an enlightened people. I believe the American people are enlightened and this is why the polls show a majority of us supporting the program. This is why President Johnson will advocate passage of medicare in the 1964 campaign. *Argus*, Hillsboro, OR, July 23, 1964.

155. "Democrats Stand By Executive Committee Decision On Choice of Alternate Delegates," Mervin Shoemaker, Political Writer, *Portland Oregonian*, July 6, 1964.

156. "Whipple Recounts Early Sandy Lore," *Sandy Post*, Sandy, OR, July 30, 1964

157. "L.B.J Invitation Summons Whipple to Wash. D.C.," *Oregon Teamster*, Aug. 13, 1964.

158. **Resolved** by the Senate and House of Representatives of the United States of America in Congress assembled, That the Congress approves and supports the determination of the President, as Commander in Chief, to take all necessary measures to repel any armed attack against the forces of the United States and to prevent further aggression.

Section 2. The United States regards as vital to its national interest and to world peace the maintenance of international peace and security in southeast Asia. Consonant with the **Constitution of the United States** and the **Charter of the United Nations** and in accordance with its obligations under the **Southeast Asia Collective Defense Treaty**, the United States is therefore, prepared, as the President determines, to take all necessary steps, including the use of armed force, to assist any member or protocol state of the **Southeast Asia Collective Defense Treaty** requesting assistance in defense of its freedom.

Section 3. This resolution shall expire when the President shall determine that the peace and security of the area is reasonably assured by international conditions created by action of the United Nations or otherwise, except that it may be terminated earlier by concurrent resolution of Congress. *Department of State Bulletin*, August 24, 1964. As public resistance to the war heightened, the resolution was repealed by Congress in January 1971.

159. *Congressional Record*, August 6-7, 1964. 18132-33. 18406-7. 18458-59. 18470-71.

160. Over the next four years Morse was remarkable because he challenged the morality -- not just the "winability" -- of the war. He passionately asserted that the United States had no right to impose its will on the world. In the process, he made enemies of many fellow Democrats, including President Lyndon Johnson.

161. "Demos Pick Committee," *Portland Oregonian*, Sept. 6, 1964.

162. In introducing Senator Gruening, Blaine shared his long and varied intellectual career. He was graduated from Harvard University in 1907 and its medical school in 1912 but never practiced medicine. Between graduation and medical school he was a reporter on the *Boston American* and *Boston Herald*. After medical school be became editor of the *Boston Traveler* and was the first editor in the nation to ban the use of the word "Negro" in news stories unless it was pertinent. He then became a writer for *Colliers* and *Nation* magazines and wrote a book on Mexico, where he covered political developments for magazine articles. His next job was publicity for Wisconsin Senator Robert LaFollette's campaign for president on the Progressive ticket in 1924 after which he founded the *Evening News* in Portland, Maine. President Franklin D.

Roosevelt appointed him Administrator of the Alaska Territory in 1939 and he became Territorial Governor in 1953, it's first U.S. Senator in 1959 after it became a state and was elected to a 6-year term in 1960. Les Cour, "Gruening Says LBJ May Beat FDR's 1936 Margin," *Portland Reporter*, Sept,. 14, 1964.

163. "Alaska Solon Plugs Whipple," Doug McKean, Journal Political Editor, *Oregon Journal,* Portland, OR, Sept. 14, 1964. "President Lauds Whipple. 'MY KIND OF MAN'," *Capital Journal*, Salem, OR, Sept. 14, 1964.
164. "Heart Attack Claims Veteran Representative," *The Oregonian*, Sept. 21, 1964.
165. "1st District Committee Eyes 14 House Hopefuls," Les Cour, *Portland Reporter*, Sept. 26, 1964. "GOP Picks Wendell Wyatt For Solon Race," *Statesman*, Salem. OR. Sept. 27, 1964. "GOP Nominates Wyatt To Seek Norblad Post," *Portland Oregonian*, Sept. 27, 1964.
166. "Whipple Welcomes Opponent, *Statesman*, Salem, OR. Sept. 27, 1964.
167. "US Demo Official Demands Wyatt Tell Source of Funds," *Daily Astorian*, Astoria, OR Oct. 1, 1964.
168. "Broad Support," *Argus*, Hillsboro, OR. Oct. 15, 1964.
169. "Tualatin Project Boosted By Demo House Hopeful," *Argus*, Hillsboro, OR, Sept. 28, 1964.
170. "Wyatt Vows To Fight For Norblad's Goals," *The Oregon Journal*, Sept. 30, 1964.
171. "Some Goldwater Proposals Not Backed by Candidate," *Valley Times*, Beaverton, OR, Oct. 18, 1964.
172. "Democrat Defines Stand On Red China-U.N. Issue," *Portland Oregonian*, Oct. 13, 1964. "Whipple Places Stress On Economic Growth," *Argus*, Oct. 15, 1964. "Whipple takes Stand on Red China Issue, United Nations," *Valley Times*, Beaverton, OR, Oct. 15, 1964.
173. "FDR's Son Raps Barry Goldwater," Douglas Seymour, *Capital Journal*, Salem, OR Oct. 16, 1964. FDR, Jr. was the undersecretary 1962-1965 and previously served in the 81st, 82nd, and 83rd congresses in the House of Representatives. They were ninth cousins, their common ancestors being Matthew Whipple and Ann Hawkins.
174. "Morse Hopes Rise For Astoria Base," Tom Stimmel, Staff Writer. *Oregon Journal*, Portland, OR, Oct. 19, 1964. "Morse Sees Hope For Tongue Point," *Argus*, Hillsboro, OR, Oct. 19, 1964.
175. "Wyatt Promises 'Full Time' Role." *Portland Oregonian*, Oct. 23, 1964. Blaine had lived in two congressional districts: Eugene, the fourth when a student at the U. Of Oregon, and Beaverton, the first where he settled when moving from Seattlle.
176. "Wyatt Opposes Spending," *Argus*, Hillsboro, OR, Oct. 22, 1964.
177. "The rolling hills and farmland of Oregon's First Congressional District are cross-patched with roads – political as well as geographical. For many years the surest way down the road to obscurity was to stand firmly atop the Democratic party platform, and make a lot of noise about it. But Democrats have been doing some road-work, and with 1964 bringing the first Democratic registration majority in the district's history, that old road to obscurity may now lead to Congress. Blaine Whipple hopes it will, and he's steering that Democratic platform down the back roads to P:edee, Rickreall, Wauna, and Gaston in an all out effort to become Congressman Whipple.

"'The issue is clear-cut in this campaign,' Whipple stated to four separate groups Wednesday. "If you support the views of Senator Goldwater – and most Americans know where he stands on the issues – you should vote for my opponent. If you do not, I ask for your support.' Things have moved rapidly and unpredictably for the 34-year-old Whipple in this campaign. He started campaigning well before the primary and by summer had picked up the tempo. But his opponent, Rep. Walter Norblad,

had beaten him decisively two years ago, was considered well nigh untouchable, and Whipple was a decided underdog. Last month a heart attack claimed Norblad's life. Immediately, it was Whipple with the name familiarity, the head start on researching the issues, and within a few weeks he also had a registration majority.

"Prior to Norblad's death Whipple's campaign was two-pronged: 1) strong support of the Democratic platform and the Johnson administration; and 2) comparison of voting records of Norblad and Goldwater, in an attempt to link the candidates in the minds of district voters. When Norblad died, Whipple lost the second prong. But Republican Wendell Wyatt, after nomination by a congressional district committee in Salem, endorsed Goldwater. All Whipple had to do was pick some old speeches out of the wastebasket, change the name from Norblad to Wyatt and he could resume work. Despite indications he has moved into the favorite's role in the race, Whipple is still moving as fast as his long legs and youthful stamina can carry him..

"Wednesday they took him into Dallas, Salem, Monmouth, Rickreall, Willamina, and Sheridan. He talked with students, mill-workers, and grocery shoppers spending Social security checks. He told an 8 a.m. class at North Salem High that politics should be considered an honorable pursuit worthy of consideration, and warned students that the future of a dropout was "an extremely bleak life." Students wanted to know about the War on Poverty – he stressed retraining for job skills and a state's right to reject the program within its boundaries. If he was still a bit cobwebby so early, Whipple caught a waker-upper from a youthful questioner. 'How do you feel about a President who has as one of his closest associates a sexual deviant?' came the query. There was a titter punctuated pause. 'I get the impression that might be a loaded question,' answer Whipple. He went on to say he was sure the President didn't condone perversion, hadn't known about a previous morals arrest of Walter Jenkins, and said the FBI should have done a better job in checking Jenkin's background when granting a security clearance.

"Whipple used most of his platform time answering questions. He likes to do this and is well backgrounded on issues. He has picked up a 'ministerial tone' in his delivery of a prepared text and it hampers his effectiveness, but he comes across much better in answering questions. He was asked about Red China – this has become a campaign issue since his opponent charged him advocating admission of Red China to the United Nations. Whipple admits that he agreed in a 1961 television appearance that admission was inevitable and that we ought to take a good look at our China policy. But he says he doesn't advocate admittance – only our realization of its inevitability and our determination to remain in the U.S. even if Red China is admitted.

"Whipple drove from Salem to Dallas, where he sandwiched a coffee hour between Willamette Valley lumber mill and Gerlinger Carrier Co., and a sweep of downtown stores. Running into a table piled with Wyatt literature in front of GOP headquarters, Whipple confided to a Wyatt backer that she could support both men. 'Vote for Wyatt for the short term and me for the full term.' At the coffee hour he told about 15 listeners that the Manpower Redevelopment Act has been successful in retraining Oregonians for new jobs, and termed it 'an investment for the future.' Noting that he had been tagged a 'Spender' for advocating federal programs, he replied 'it's a matter of semantics – some call it spending. I call it investment.' Turning to agriculture, Whipple told the group he feels the acreage allotment for wheat should be changed to a bushel allotment. He noted that replacements must be found for Mexican bracero laborers whose importation into the country was banned by the last Congress. Asked about foreign beef competition, Whipple said he would be willing to support a limited quota system, but he feels that tariffs generally should be lowered

to encourage foreign trade. The U.S. has a favorable balance of trade, he added, and its gold drain is not due to trade but to spending for military commitments abroad.

"En route from Dallas to Monmouth, Whipple turned the wheel over to his county chairman, Arthur Bone of West Salem, and worked on remarks for delivery to OCE (Oregon College of Education) students at a public meeting. He could have taken a nap. Only about a dozen persons showed up, the lunch for mid-term exams and a fine Indian summer day providing too rough of competition. Everyone was embarrassed about the turnout, and after a brief discussion, the group adjourned to the OCE cafeteria. The trip wasn't a loss, however, – he met two old acquaintances, both Republicans, and won a couple of cross-over votes. And he had a chance to down a bowl of soup while chatting with a group of faculty members.

"Whipple credits a careful diet with allowing him to maintain the fast pace that has him on the campaign trail 14-15 hours a day. Slender and long-legged, he moves quickly, and says he's already developed some king-sized callouses on his feet. He exercised them Wednesday afternoon as he met workers at the U.S. Plywood Co. at Willamina, and blitzed the downtown Willamina and Sheridan areas. A company policy of no politicking on the premises kept him outside the plywood mill, but it was a warm day and shaking hands with shift-changing workers had Whipple in shirt sleeves.

"At Willamina he detoured to type out a news story at the local weekly newspaper, which was being prepared for printing. He is his own press agent, and with a master's degree in journalism from the University of Oregon, he knows the ropes. Whipple's family – he was born in South Dakota and raised in North Dakota and Minnesota – includes a long line of weekly paper publishers. Whipple got his first real taste of Oregon when he left a job on a weekly newspaper in Minnesota in 1956 and like many Midwesterners he decided to stay. A bachelor, he leases a house in Beaverton. He's held positions as national advertising director for a chain of newspapers, and for the past two years as real estate salesman for a large Beaverton realty firm. But his first love and devotion is politics, and service as assistant to former Rep. Charles O. Porter, and as executive director of the Democratic Party of Oregon convinced him to run for Congress.

"Whipple's campaigns have been somewhat of shoestring operations, and although he has picked up some additional financing after Norblad's death enhanced his chances of election, he says he is running out of money. His Beaverton headquarters looks a little like the repossession company just left. But Whipple isn't running out of energy, and the time he shared a Rickreall platform with Sen. Wayne Morse Wednesday night, he had been on the campaign trail over 12 hours and still faced a drive to Oceanlake where he would stay overnight before campaigning in Lincoln County. It was a day that started at 8 a.m. with the old Democratic theme song *Happy Days Are Here Again* sounding a little like it was being poured through one of those LBJ tengallon hats at North Salem High and closed with a Central High pep band playing the same song, loud and clear, Perhaps the day symbolized the Whipple campaign. It may be the same song, but after long, hard months on the campaign trail, its coming in much louder and clearer in the First Congressional District. "Whipple Using Democratic Platform in His Campaign to Win Seat in Congress," Floyd McKay, *Statesman*, Salem, OR, Section II, page 12, Oct. 23, 1964.

178. "Whipple, Wyatt Trade Views On Local Issues," Portland Oregonian, Oct. 27, 1964. "Two Foes In Accord On Issues," Jerry Tippens, *Oregon Journal*, Oct. 27, 1964. "Congressional Candidates Exchange Views at Forum," *Valley Times*, Beaverton, OR, Oct. 29, 1964.

179. "Udall Confident Region Going Strongly for LBJ," *Portland Oregonian*, Oct. 27, 1964.
180. "Importance Of Voting Stressed By Speaker," *News-Register*, McMinnville, OR Oct. 28, 1964.
181. "Representative To Congress, *Gazette Times*, Corvallis, OR, Oct. 29, 1964.
182. "All But One GOP Trails in Poll," *Capital Journal*, Nov. 2 1964.
183. "Whipple Advises Peaceful Viet Nam Crisis Settlement," *Barometer*, Oregon State University newspaper, Corvallis, OR, Oct. 30, 1964.
184. "Humphrey Receives Roaring Welcome," Doug McKean, Political Editor, *Oregon Journal*, Oct. 31, 1964.
185. "Congress Race Costs $47,641," *Portland Oregonian*, Nov. 14, 1964.
186. "Oregon Labor Wins a Few But aLoses Some Big Ones," *The Dispatcher*, ILWU, Nov. 13, 1964.
187. "Costs Listed By Whipple," *Portland Oregonian*, Nov. 14, 1964.
188. "Green Group Files Costs," *Portland Oregonian*, Nov. 13, 1964.
189. "Wendell Wyatt For Congress," *Oregon Journal*, Oct. 15, 1964.
190. "A Vote for Wendell Wyatt," *Capital Journal*, Oct. 20, 1964.
191. "For Congress: Wendell Wyatt," *Statesman*, Salem, OR. Oct. 23, 1964.
192. "Whipple for Congress," *Capital Press*, Salem, OR. Oct. 16. 1964.
193. "Appling Lists Vote results. Count Official," *Portland Oregonian*, Dec. 1, 1964.
194. "Snyder Hits Million Mark Monthly Sales," *Valley Times*, Beaverton, OR, May 13, 1964.
195. "Morgan Picks Aide," *Oregon Journal*, Portland, OR, April 4, 1966.
196. **The Man From U.N.C.L.E.** was premiered on Sept. 1, 1964 and ended in January 1968. The series follows the adventures of two-guys namely Napoleon Solo (Vaughn) and Illya Kuryakin who work for U.N.C.L.E. (the United Network Command for Law and Enforcement). They fight the evil organization THRUSH (the Technological Hierarchy for the Removal of Undesirables and the Subjugation of Humanity). They use their charm, wit and different cool gadgets to fight crimes that will jeopardize humanity. Vaughn also had a successful movie career.
197. "Voice of the Valley," *Valley Times*, Beaverton, OR May 5, 1966.
198. "Another Wedding Interests Demos," *Valley Times*, Beaverton, OR, Aug. 11, 1966.
199. "Groups Talk On Foreign Policy," *Valley Times*, Beaverton, OR, Feb. 16, 1967.
200. Jr. Women Hear Whipple," *News Times,* Forest Grove, OR, Feb. 2, 1967. "March Of Dimes Elects," *Valley Times*, Beaverton, OR., July 6, 1967.
201. "Whipple, Bateman Gain Board Seats," *The Clarke Press*, Portland, OR, April 4, 1967. The 7-person Board: James Lewis, Forest Grove, Zone I; Bert Tousey, Tigard, Zone II; George Wentland, Newberg, Zone III; Ralph Bolliger, Portland, Zone IV; Henry Vanderzanden, Forest Grove, at-large; Blaine Whipple, Portland, at-large; Ralph Bateman, Gales Creek, at-large. 1967-68 School Directory, Washington County, Oregon.
202. "Whipple Attends School Seminar," *Argus*, Hillsboro, OR, May 18, 1967.
203. "A Tizzy" *The Oregonian*, Portland, OR, April 26, 1967.
204. "Boy Scouts Clean-Up," *Valley Times*, Beaverton, OR, April 20, 1967.
205. "Whipple New SBA Advisor," *Valley Times*, Beaverton, OR, May 4, 1967. "Beaverton Man Gets U. S. Job," *Oregon Journal*, Portland, OR, May 11, 1967.
206. "The most far reaching program was the preliminary planning for a Beaverton Diamond Jubilee scheduled for 1968. We communicated our concern about the loss of Blue Bus Line service to our area and began planning an annual Senior Citizen Award recognition banquet. We shared our viewpoints with the city council about the need to re-route the railroad tracks and encouraged Beaverton High School offi-

cials to begin clean up activities around the school. Our members played a significant role in the core area study and were successful in our campaign to remove the ladder sign at the three highway entrances to the community. We co-hosted a session with the taxation and legislation committee for Burt Wilson, the new county commissioner; attended meetings for a tri-county stadium, and organized a successful spring clean-up drive," "Civic Affairs," *Valley Times*, Beaverton, OR, July 20, 1967.

207. "Morgan Says LBJ Split Party By Departing From Promises," Harold Hughes, Political Writer, *The Oregonian*, Portland. Dec. 8, 1967. "Reagan's Backers in Oregon Seek to Enlist Rockefeller's '64 Supporters," Lawrence E. Davies, *The New York Times*, Dec. 24, 1967.

208. McCarthy served in the Army during WWII and was elected to the U. S. House of Representatives from St. Paul (the 4th district) in 1948 serving until 1959. He led other Democrats in forming the Democratic Study Group which advocated its own legislative alternatives to Republican policies. Blaine first met McCarthy in 1956 when he organized the annual meeting of the Minnesota Dairy Association and booked McCarthy to be its keynote speaker. McCarthy was elected to the U. S. Senate in 1958, one of 13 liberal Democrats who defeated Republicans that year. He became an involved member of the Foreign Relations Committee, attracted public attention with his passionate and memorable nominating speech for Gov. Adali E. Stevenson at the 1960 Democratic National Convention - attended by Blaine - and was a vigorous campaigner for John F, Kennedy after he won the nomination. He supported the Gulf of Tonkin Resolution in August of 1964 - Blaine was in the Senate gallery when that vote was cast - which led to the expansion of the Vietnam war. However, he became disillusioned with Johnson's policies as of January 1966, and by early 1967 was a vocal opponent. By then he felt the war was "unmorally unjustified" and in October published his book, *Limits of Powers*," which criticized American foreign policy.

Lyndon Johnson, elected to the White House by the largest popular margin in history, just 40 months ago, has since become the least popular incumbent President since Hubert Hoover. On November 30, 1967, in the Senate's vaulted Caucus Room he told reporters he intended to "enter the Democratic primaries of Wisconsin, Oregon, California, and Nebraska. My decision to challenge has been strengthened by recent announcements out of the Administration, the evident intention to escalate the war and the absence of any indication of a compromise." He itemized the costs of the war: . . . the physical destruction of a small nation . . . 100,000 civilian casualties . . . the fracturing the society of South Vietnam . . . for the United States over 15,000 combat dead and nearly 95,000 wounded . . . a monthly expenditure of between two and three billion dollars . . . the failure to appropriate adequate funds for the poverty program here . . . the drastic reduction of our foreign aid elsewhere . . . a dangerous inflation . . . a deepening moral crisis; discontent, frustration . . . alienation from politics, particularly on college campuses . . . a tendency to withdraw in frustration or cynicism." He said he was not for peace at any price but "for an honorable rational, and political settlement to the war." His office phone rang all that afternoon and wires of support began arriving, but no senator announced support and of the 248 Democratic Congressmen only Don Edwards of California announced that he was in favor of the dissent. The pros were not getting involved and a Gallup poll would presently show that 58 percent of a sample tested had never heard of the new candidate. He appointed Blair Clark, a former associate publisher of the News York *Post*, as campaign manager. Roger Kahn, "The revolt against LBJ." *The Saturday Evening Post* Feb. 10, 1968. 17-21.

The Democrats meeting in Chicago unanimously passed a resolution to support him. Also in December, Blaine became Secretary-Treasurer of Oregon Concerned Democrats. Who affiliated with the national group opposing Johnson's nomination.

209. "McCarthy Due Here Friday," *The Oregon Journal,* Portland, OR Jan. 30, 1968. "McCarthy Plans Extensive Oregon Campaign," *The Oregonian*, Portland, Feb. 3, 1968.

210. Hersh was a former Pentagon correspondent for the Associated Press. Later that year, he was hired as a reporter for the Washington Bureau where he served from 1972 to 1975 and again in 1979. His 1983 book *The Price of Power: Kissinger in the Nixon White House* won him the National Book Critics Circle Award and the *Los Angeles Times* book prize in biography. In 1985, Hersh contributed to the PBS television documentary "Buying the Bomb." On November 12, 1969, he broke the story of the My Lai Massacre, in a report originally released by Dispatch News Service, prompting widespread condemnation around the world and reducing public support for the Vietnam War in the United States. The explosive news of the massacre fueled the outrage of the American peace movement which demanded the withdrawal of American troops from Vietnam. It also led more potential draftees to file for conscientious objector status. Hersh wrote about the massacre and its coverup in *My Lai 4: A Report on the Massacre and Its Aftermath and Coverup: The Army's Secret Investigation of the Massacre at My Lai 4.* In his 1986 book *The Target is Destroyed* (Random House), Hersh alleged that the Soviet attack on Korean Air Flight 007 was due to a combination of Soviet incompetence and United State intelligence operations intended to confuse Soviet responses and to test the penetration of Soviet sea and air space. A CIA history of this period not only confirmed many of Hersh's allegations, but cited his book as historical reference. Hersh has written a series of articles for *The New Yorker* magazine detailing military and security matters surrounding the US led invasion and subsequent occupation of Iraq. In a 2004 article, he alleged that Vice President Dick Cheney and Secretary of Defense Donald Rumsfeld circumvented the normal intelligence analysis function of the CIA in their quest to make the case for the 2003 invasion of Iraq. In May 2004, Hersh published a series of articles describing the treatment of detainees by US military police at Abu Ghraib prison near Baghdad.

211. In the New Hampshire campaign, McCarthy said his decision to run was neither unpatriotic nor un-American. "Those of us who have raised some questions against the administration and have suggested a challenge are variously labeled as dissident Democrats. It is my general thesis that we're not only the most loyal and sound Democrats, but also are carrying out a most significant patriotic duty in the United States in 1968." His anti-war message resonated with the New Hampshire electorate and he won a large Republican write-in vote.

212. "New Hampshire Vote Cheers Oregon Bakers of Nixon, McCarthy," Harold Hughes. Political Writer, *The Oregonian*, Portland, March 13, 1968. "Oregon Campaigns Bolstered," *The Oregon Journal*, Portland, OR, March 23, 1968.

213. "Kennedy Candidacy Stirs Interest in State Politics," *The Oregonian*, Portland, March 17, 1968. On Sunday March 31, President Johnson in a televised address on the Vietnam War concluded by announcing he "would neither seek nor accept the Democratic nomination for a second term as President." He said there was division in the country concerning the war and he could not permit the presidency to be involved in partisan divisions. "LBJ's Surprise Move Cheers McCarthyites," *The Argus*, Hillsboro, OR, April 1, 1968. "Oregon Campaign Leaders 'Unplug' Machines To Assess Withdrawal," Wayne Thompson, *The Oregonian*, Portland, April 1, 1968.

214. "Demo Offered As Alternative," *The Oregon Journal*, Portland, OR, March 21, 1968.
215. "Gene to Visit Mt. Angel College," Douglas Seymour, *Capital Journal*, April 8, 1968. Clement Babb, a Salem planner, was named chairman of the Marion County McCarthy committee and Dale Chan, a Willamette student from Honolulu, temporary chairman of the student committee. Headquarters were to be opened at 135 High St. NE. Veteran politicians were surprised by the thousands of college students from many states who traveled to the primary states to do the hard, grinding unglamourous work of a political campaign for McCarthy. Known as "Gene's clean kids," they cut their hair and beards and left their hippie uniforms at home. The McCarthy state headquarters in Portland were in the former Elks Temple at SW 11th Ave. and Alder Street. It was a multi-story building that opened April 29 and housed hundreds of the student volunteers who bedded down in sleeping bags. Hundreds of others lived with local families. The students provided their own transportation and meals.
216. "In La Grande . . . McCarthy views told," Mike Haalsey, Staff Writer, *La Grande Observer*, La Grande, OR, April 12, 1968. Officers of the Union County campaign: Mary Davison, chairman, Mike Troyer, vice-chairman, Mrs. Winston (Betty) Saunders, treasurer, Walter Osterloh, secretary`
217. "Demo Senses Victory," *Argus*, Hillsboro, OR, April 4, 1968. McCarthy carried 71 of Wisconsin's 72 counties.
218. "McCarthy Vote Cheers Backers," *The Oregonian*, Portland, April 25, 1968. He polled 400,000 votes, 200,000 more than the political pundits predicted.
219. "Campaign Leader Airs Confidence," *Argus*, Hillsboro, OR. May 6, 1968. McCarthy's vote total exceeded John F. Kennedy's 1960 primary vote by 25,000. "McCarthy Headquarters Opens in Beaverton, *Valley Times*, Beaverton, OR, May 9, 1968.
220. Kennedy was assassinated early in the morning of June 5 in Los Angeles which raised the question of whether his speech in support of U.S. arms to Israel in Portland was connected to the assassination. The speech attracted national attention and Sirhan Sirhan, the assassin, had a clipping of the speech including Kennedy's photo, in his pocket. "RFK Speech In Portland Strong For Israeli Aid," Mack H. Meads, Religion Editor, *The Oregonian*, June 6, 1968.
221. "PERILS OF THE PRIMARIES," *Newsweek*, June 10, 1968.
222. "McCarthy Tours," *The Messenger*, Marshall, Minn., June 19, 1968.
223. "Democrat Sees Disaster for Party If Humphrey Chosen to Head Ticket," *The Star*, Minneapolis, Minn., June 18, 1968.
224. Votes need for nomination 1,312. Humphrey, 1,761 FL; McCarthy, 601; Sen. George McGovern, 164FI; Rev. Chaning E. Phillips, 67FI; Sen. Edward M. Kennecy, 12FI. Oregon's 35 votes were cast for McCarthy. *The Oregonian*, Aug. 26, 1968.
225. "McCARTHY 'IN EXILE' HHH Sets Sights On Unity," Doug McKean, Journal Political Editor, *The Oregon Journal*, Aug. 30, 1968. "McCarthy Workers Differ on Future," Don Olson, *Marshall Messenger*, Marshall, Minn., Aug. 31, 1968.
226. "McCarthy Shuns Chance At Oregon Ballot Spot," *The Oregonian*, Sept. 7, 1968.
227. "Oregon Demo Chief Praises Chicago Convention," *Herald and News*, Klamath Falls, OR, Oct. 25, 1968.
228. "As a citizen, a candidate, and Vice President, I pledge to you and to my fellow Americans, that I shall do everything within my power to aid the negotiations and to bring a prompt end to this war." Vice President Hubert Humphrey, Acceptance Speech, Democratic National Convention, August 29, 1968.
229. "The Democrats have always been a collection of warring factions' Oregon party knits wounds, lines up for Humphrey," Harry Bodine, staff writer, *The Oregonian*, Sept. 8, 1968.

230. "Demos Needles Nixon, Offers Oregon Debate," Harold Hughes, Political Writer, *The Oregonian*, Sept. 28, 1968. "Sickness Of Closed Minds," *The Oregon Journal*, Oct. 1, 1968.
231. "As President, I would stop the bombing of the North as an acceptable risk for peace because I believe it could lead to success in the negotiations and thereby shorten the war." Hubert Humphrey, September 30, 1968.
232. "Four Demo Solons Will Stump State," *Capital Journal*, Salem, OR., Oct. 14, 1968.
233. "The Power of Washington County For Realtors," *Title Tips*, Pioneer National Title Insurance Company, Portland, OR. June 1968.
234. "Apartment Projects Announced," *Valley Times*, Beaverton, OR, May 2, 1968. "Apartment Plans Set," *Ibid*, May 16, 1968. "Apartment Job Started," *The Oregonian*, Portland, OR, July 26, 1968.
235. "Courthouse Choice Sought; Downtown Hillsboro Site Opposed," Jim Kadera, staff writer, *The Oregonian*, March 25, 1969.
236. "Apartment Plans Aired," *The Oregonian*, April 26, 1969. "Construction starts on $1.6 million unit," *Valley Times*, Beaverton, OR. May 1. 1969.
237. President Richard M. Nixon was inaugurated Jan. 20.
238. "Democrats Hear Attack On Campaign Financing," Doug McKean, Political Reporter, *The Oregon Journal*, June 11, 1969. "Demo Task Force Hears Criticism Of Oregon Delegates Voting As Unit," *The Oregonian*, June 12, 1969. "The Problem Of Participation," *The Oregon Journa*l, June 13, 1969.
239. "Town Meeting Scheduled for Sunday On National Life Priorities," Doug McKean, Political Editor, *The Oregon Journal*, Dec. 8, 1969. "At 'town hall meeting' Priorities under scrutiny," *The Labor Press*, Portland, OR, Dec. 12, 1968. "Meeting Set On Priorities," *The Oregonian*, Dec. 13, 1969.
240. "Single-family dwellings lead construction trend," *The Outlook*, Gresham, OR, Aug. 5, 1971.
241. "In four years, we forced a comprehensive overhaul of the national Party's internal procedures and structure with the end goal to rebuild a Party that can command the broad coalition of support essential to regaining the White House. We barred discrimination based on race, creed, national origin, age or sex. We eliminated restrictive delegate filing costs and assessments. We called for clearly written Party rules, accessible to any interested Democrat. We called for fair representation of minority views and apportionment of delegates strength based on the concept of "one Democrat, one vote." Our new reform rules included 10 regional platform hearings across America prior to final platform hearings. We held 23 state primaries and 32 delegate conventions." From a speech by Blaine Whipple July 23, 1972 at the National Newspaper Publishers Association and the Oregon Newspaper Publishers Association.
242. "Gas Shipment Riles Demos," *The Oregonian*, May 6, 1970.
243. "School budgets rejected by eight of 13 districts. *Argus*, Hillsboro, OR, May 7, 1970. The Intermediate Education District was created by the legislature to equalize educational opportunity for all students in the county. Among its major services were an Instructional Media Center, an Outdoor Education program, a vocational education program, and a migrant education program. The Media Center had a film library with 3,000 titles that were available to all schools and distributed and picked up daily by the District. The Outdoor education program is provided to all sixth graders who spend a week at Camp Yamhill and Sports Acres to study soils, water, air, and animal and plant life. The vocation program is designed for non college bound students, and the Migrant program assists schools with migrant students. "County IED provides variety of services," *Valley Times,* Beaverton, OR. Feb. 25, 1971.

244. "160-Apartment Complex Planned For Southwest," *The Oregonian,* Dec. 27, 1970.
245. "Whipple blasts wrong priorities as source of U. S. ills," Henny Willis, *Register Guard*, Eugene, June 19, 1970.
246. Harold Hughes, who was elected to the U. S. Senate in 1968 after serving three terms as Governor of Iowa, and a potential dark horse nominee for President, spent two days in Oregon in October 1970. Blaine was his "tour guide" introducing him to Oregon's political landscape. "Visiting Democrat Solon Needles Administration, *The Oregonian*, Portland, OR, Oct. 27, 1970. Sen. Eugene McCarthy was also toying with running in 1972. "In his own fashion, which predictably is not the fashion of other potential candidates, Eugene J. McCarthy is putting together another presidential campaign. To test the process, as he invariably puts it, Mr. McCarthy has put together a small campaign organization in offices in Washington and has traveled to more than a dozen states since mid-August. In many respects, Mr. McCarthy is starting from scratch just as he was four years ago. Legions of his former campaigners found him too vague about his plans and switched early to other candidates, principally to Sen. George McGovern, S.D.

"A typical example is Blaine Whipple, who helped Mr. McCarthy pull off an upset in the 1968 Oregon primary and who is now state chairman there for Sen. McGovern. 'I talked to him [Mr. McCarthy] in the fall of 1969,' Mr. Whipple says. 'He was his usual puzzling self and I wasn't sure what he was saying, but it alluded to a third or fourth party. He said that if the Democratic party isn't going the way I think the country is going, it looks like we'll have to give serious consideration to another party. I don't think the time is here for a fourth party. There are still a few of the old people still hanging on, waiting for McCarthy to come in, and even they don't think he will work very hard for it. I went for McGovern early because I felt he had the commitment to carry it through.'" William Chapman, "Testing Democratic Process. McCarthy Campaigns in Own Way," *The International Harold Tribune*, Paris France, Oct. 20, 1971. "Badly underestimated in 1968, Eugene McCarthy has come on again, a presidential presence more than a hungry contender, a mystery to his followers and to the other candidates. He is still the same McCarthy, who won in the snows of New Hampshire and soared to his greatest victory in the rains of Oregon. But the flower children have aged more than the senator. They started falling away at Chicago and now most of his true believers have gone to other oracles In Oregon, Blaine Whipple, perhaps the one most responsible for the senator's victory over the late Robert F. Kennedy, is now carrying the banner of Sen. George McGovern." "Return of a poet," *The Oregonian*, Nov. 3, 1971.
247. "Myers Presidential List Draws Fire," Dean Smith, *Oregon Journal*, March 10, 1972.
248. McGovern was at 4 percent in the national polls when Blaine signed on to head his Oregon campaign. What follows was written by Gerald Astor, a free lance writer. "It is June 1971. I am in Portland, Oregon, and Senator George McGovern's plane is late. I have been assigned by a magazine to do a piece on the only declared candidate for the 1972 presidential race, and McGovern is due for a swing through Oregon and California. He finally arrives. En route, through Columbus, Ohio, he had discovered the skies not so friendly. The airline oversold the flight and bumped the full McGovern campaign party of three. The passenger agent in Columbus exhibited no remorse on shutting out a U. S. senator, to say nothing of a man running for President.

"No TV interviewers, no thicket of microphones, no probing newspapermen delay the Senator at the airport or keep him from a quick nap at the local Sheraton. Then he settles down for some politicking. The newly formed Oregon organization, paper thin, is headed by the 1968 Eugene McCarthy state chairman, Blaine Whipple,

a tireless businessman who believes strongly enough in what he and McGovern are saying to take time away from building apartment houses to build a campaign structure. Whipple remarks to me: 'I've got an 11-year-old son born after our involvement in Vietnam began. I have nightmares he'll wind up serving in the army there.'

"McGovern handles the phone, Whipple feeds the information. The Oregonian supplies a telephone number and a name. 'What's his wife's name? Asks the candidate. Whipple answers and adds, 'She's the one with a brother in South Dakota.' McGovern makes contact and after small talk about the wife and the South Dakota brother says, 'I'm out here to do myself some good, Fred. I'd like your support.' Fred agrees to drop by. There is a cocktail party for Oregon Democrats that evening. McGovern delivers some stolid words and his staff takes names and addresses from anyone who shows any interest in his candidacy. At a coffee in the morning, hands clasped behind him as if he were still lecturing in history at Dakota Wesleyan, McGovern drones out his standard party reform recitations for two-and-a-half dozen people. As he will at every session, whether before a cluster of 10 or a crowd of 600, McGovern calls for questions.

"McGovern's caravan, two cars, sets out for Eugene, home of the University. Where are the back rooms? This is a Sunday-school-picnic world - $1 box lunch, sunny white faces, hotpants, jeans, neckties, beards, and gray hairs. McGovern talks about the huge amounts of money soaked up the Vietnam adventure, and how decaying cities in the U.S. might have been rebuilt with these funds. An ovation erupts. Question time. Response to a question about cutting the defense budget, the Senator's stump monotone gives way to passion, the emotion puts a vibration in his voice. 'We already have the capacity to blow up the world eight or ten times, but we don't have enough housing.' Burst of hand clapping. 'We have to look at national defense as something broader than missiles in silos. There are fundamental changes necessary.' Heavy applause. What about help for small farmers? 'An urban coalition needs to join hands with a rural coalition. I'm very interested in halting the migration from small farms and rural areas to the cities. If we can spend that much to bail out Lockheed, I think we could invest the money in small farms and businesses.' A standing ovation causes an Oregon newspaperman to remark. 'People around here are not very emotional. This demonstration is impressive.'

"At Corvallis, McGovern speaks to students and faculty at Oregon State. He zeroes in on the old credibility theme. 'No man should advocate a policy in private he would be ashamed to present in public. It's ironic that people whose eyes mist over when the flag goes by see nothing when the river is polluted, the air smogged.' The big session condenses into a small one in a classroom, where McGovern responds to questions.

"That's how the McGovern campaign was then. The scale was microscopic, but it was all there. The young aides who knew the way to go; the stress on building from the bottom up; person by person, precinct by precinct, town by town, county by county, state by state; and McGovern, steadily pounding point by point, at the issues of war, the need for change, the need for tax reform that might for once make the rich a little less fat and the non-rich a little less skinny, the need to find a new center in the political spectrum, the need above all else for a national restoration, a return to America the good.

"When I fly back to New York, I learn that the magazine will be unable to use the piece. I approach a number of other publications, but they all say the earliest they could use it would be January and they doubt he will survive until then. If he is 4 percent in the polls, to the pols and the press, McGovern is zero." This article was

printed after McGovern won the nomination. "Present At The Creation. 1971. McGovern At Zero. A Journey to the West with a man few knew, and less wanted." *Intellectual Digest*, Oct., 1972. 27-30.

249. "Cure To Oregon's Health Care Illness Debated," *Oregon Journal*, Jan. 12, 1972.
250. "McGovern aims for reality of idealism," *Pioneer Log*, Lewis and Clark College newspaper, Portland, Jan. 27, 1972.
251. "CAMPAIGNING. AT LEWIS AND CLARK COLLEGE. A GOOD NIGHT FOR McGOVERN," *Atlantic Monthly*, April 1972.
252. "Democrats Woo Voters Attending Jefferson-Jackson Day Banquet," *Idaho Statesman*, Boise, ID, Feb. 20, 1972.
253. "Whipple seeks national office," *Argus*, March 9, 1972.
254. "Democratic committee," *Register Guard*, Eugene, April 30, 1972.
255. "Lindsay Unit Here Switches," Doug McKean, *Oregon Journal*, April 6, 1972. "2 Demo Candidates Plan Oregon Visits," Doug McKean, *Oregon Journal*," April 26, 1972.
256. "There has been time to reflect on what happened at Miami Beach last week and in the aftermath of what was supposed to be one of the most divisive convention in the history of a major political party, one impression stands out above all. The Democratic National Convention did not look at all like a divided convention when it ended in the early morning Friday. At the start, it is true, they were Wallace delegates, Jackson delegates, Humphrey delegates, Muskie delegates, Chisholm delegates, Sanford delegates, all outnumbered by McGovern delegates. But from the vantage point of the press gallery, one could see very few on the convention floor who did not join in the shouting, stomping, arm-waving enthusiasm as the nominee came before them to accept their challenge.

"Those who had started in front, only to be overtaken by Sen. George McGovern, and those who had engaged in the last-ditch stop-McGovern effort, stood with the victor on center stage to acknowledge his candidacy, to call their artisans into the ranks behind him, and to display their support. After a bitter campaign that had strained years of close friendship. Hubert Humphrey was instantly at the side of his onetime protege. Forward came Edmund Muskie to receive the largest ovation of all the runners-up, a mark perhaps of his supporters' claim that he was everybody's second choice. Henry Jackson, whose differences with McGovern had been more pronounced than those of the other two, put them aside to raise the hand of the nominee.

"The uniting of the party had begun in full force. Not the least of the elements in the healing balm was the presence of the one man who stood in favor in most of the rival camps. Ted Kennedy, who flew in from Massachusetts to introduce "the next president of the United States. Even many supporters of George Wallace could be seen joining in the fun. A newsman who was assigned to cover the Wallace delegation said they were not particularly displeased with the convention. They knew they were in the minority, he said, and were appreciative of the way they had been treated by the majority.

"Even as the 'new politics' was having its day, it looked for all the world like a pleasant spring morning of the best of the 'old politics.' Many in the McGovern forces had known the magnificent misery of going down to lonely defeat in lost causes. Now they had enjoyed a taste of team victory, requiring a bit of give and take on individual preference for the sake of collective success. 'Compromise' may still be a dirty word but they were learning one simple truth - in order to govern in this diverse land, the base of support must be sufficiently broad.

"'They're learning awfully fast, these kids,' commented a conservative columnist in the press gallery, 'and that's what scares you.' It is a myth, of course, that they are all 'kids.' While young people had provided much of the manpower for the campaign, McGovern supporters were to be found in all categories, and some of the team captains were well versed in the art of advancing toward their goals through a political process that necessarily finds differing philosophies in competition for acceptance. In Oregon those people were Blaine Whipple, National Committeeman and Chairman of the delegation, and State Sen. Betty Roberts, who headed the Oregon McGovern caucus.

"Delegates also found that a good politician appreciates political integrity, even while in opposition on the issue in question. Rep. Edith Green, not a McGovern supporter, taught that lesson to a few McGovern delegates on the verge of rebellion. In doing so, Mrs. Green probably built a bridge between old and new elements of her party that had been somewhat alienated from each other. And so the uniting a party went beyond the bid for harmony on the convention floor. In a caucus room in Miami Beach, it reached across the continent to Portland, Oregon as well." "Delegates Glue It All Together In End," Jerry Tippens, Associate Editor, Journal Editorial Page, *Oregon Journal*, July 19, 1972.

257. "Out but not down: Loyal opposition regroups," Richard W. Larsen, *The Seattle Times*, July 16, 1972.

258. Eagleton, a Harvard educated lawyer, was elected circuit attorney in St. Louis in 1956, three years out of law school, Missouri Attorney General in 1960, Lieutenant Governor in 1964, and to the U. S, Senate in 1968 on a platform opposing the Vietnam War while Nixon won the state's presidential vote. Missouri voters re-elected him to the Senate in 1974 and 1980, he did not seek re-election in 1980. He died March 4, 2007, age 77.

259. "Oregon's Demos Optimistic," *Oregon Journal*, Aug. 9, 1972.

260. "Business Notable," *Oregon Journal*, Dec. 3, 1973.

261. In his autobiography, *Tom McCall: Maverick,* published by Binford & Mort, Portland, in 1997, McCall wrote that he was seriously considering switching from the Republican to the Democratic Party in 1973 but changed his mind upon receipt of an "insulting" letter drafted by Oregon Democratic National Committeeman Blaine Whipple. "That letter cost the Democratic Party a new Senate seat." "In salty autobiography McCall shines as maverick," Malcolm Bauer, Senior associate editor, *The Oregonian,* Dec. 18, 1977.

262. "Watergate" is a general term used to describe political scandals between 1972 and 1974 and is a term synonymous with corruption. The word specifically refers to the Watergate Hotel in Washington, D.C. where the Democratic National Committee had offices in 1972. The "Watergate" burglars broke into those offices the night of June 17, 1972. By 1973, Richard Nixon had been reelected President and in February, a Senate committee began holding public hearings which uncovered the existence of secret White House tape recordings. When Nixon refused to provide them to the committee, a major legal battle arose between the Congress and the President which was resolved in favor of Congress by the U. S. Supreme Court. One of the tapes, known as the "smoking gun" tape revealed that Nixon has participated in the cover-up as far back as June 23, 1972. In 1974 the House of Representatives authorized the Judiciary committee to consider impeachment proceedings which voted to accept three of four proposed Articles of Impeachment. The "smoking gun" tape caused a nationwide demand that Nixon resign and his last days as President were in late July and early August 1974. He delivered a televised resignation speech to the nation at 9

p.m. August 8 and sent his resignation letter to Sec. of State Henry Kissinger the next morning. Nixon's running mate Spiro T. Agnew resigned Oct. 10, 1973. He had been charged with accepting bribes and falsifying federal tax returns and pleaded nolo contendere to the latter. Gerald Ford was appointed to replace him and when he became the 39th President Aug. 9, he was the first person to ascend to both offices without being elected. When he took the oath of office, Ford declared, "I assume the Presidency under extraordinary circumstances . . . This is an hour of history that troubles our minds and hurts our hearts." On Sept. 8, he gave Nixon "a full and unconditional pardon for any crimes he may have committed against the United States while President."

263. "Oil Companies Make Energy Issue Confusing Charges Demo Whipple," *The World*, Coos Bay, OR, March 11, 1974.
264. Hamilton, 33, had no previous public service. He had BA and two master degrees and was Executive Director of St. Mary's Boys Home. He said his profession as a priest and occupation as a social worker, dealing with human services, has enabled him to be in close contact with the problems and issues that effect us all.
265. "Committeeman runs for senate." Long prominent in Oregon political circles, Whipple said he filed for the Legislature because he hopes "to establish reasonable and responsible regulations of the oil and gas industry, provide opportunities for small business and small farmers to prosper, pass a land consumer protection act that is fair to everyone, close tax loopholes that benefit only the wealthy, work for an educational system that prepares students to get and hold jobs, devise medical and convalescent care programs, and support conservation of natural resources. He is in his third term on the nonpartisan Intermediate Education District representing the county at large. He has been elected Board Chairman three times and Vice Chairman twice. He has twice been elected Oregon's Democratic National Committeeman in contested statewide elections. He is President of his own real estate consulting firm. The *Argus,* Hillsboro, OR March 21, 1974. "Whipple seeks senate seat," *Valley Times*, Beaverton, OR March 24, 1974.
266. "Journalist to head campaign workers," *The Argus*, March 26, 1974. "Pratt heads Whipple senatorial campaign," *Valley Times*, Beaverton, OR, March 31, 1974.
267. "Washington County," *The Oregonian*, May 14, 1974.
268. "Morse eulogized as honest, brilliant man," John Guernsey, *The Oregonian*, July 23, 1974.
269. "Mourners View Morse In Capitol Rotunda," Don Jepsen, *Oregon Journal*, July 25, 1974. "Family, officials pay respect to Morse," Todd Engdahl, *The Oregonian*, July 26, 1974.
270. Blaine Whipple, 13,403. Tom Hartung, 12,956. "Washington County vote totals," *The Oregonian,* Nov. 6, 1974.
271. "Oregon has a chance to pass unique campaign finance bill,"Harry Bodine, *The Oregonian*, Aug. 19, 1975.
272. Public funding was used in Presidential campaigns beginning in 1976. Sources and amounts of campaign contributions dates back to the late 1800s when voters became concerned that elected officials might be controlled by donors. The first bill to include a public funding provision was introduced in Dec. 1904 by Rep. Wm. Bourke Cocran of NY. In 1907, President Theodore Roosevelt advocated "an appropriation for the proper and legitimate expenses of each of the great national parties." Similar proposals were introduced during much of the first half of the 20th century. The first public funding law passed in 1966 was followed by the Federal Election Campaign Act (FECA) of 1971 and the Revenue Act of 1971. Reacting to the events of Watergate, Congress amended FECA in 1974 and provided for public financing of Presidential primaries, nominating conventions, and the general election. It was designed

to eliminate problems in the Presidential electoral process believed to include: The disproportionate influence (of the appearance of influence) of wealthy contributors; The Demands of fund raising that prevented some candidates from adequately presenting their views to the public; and the increasing cost of Presidential campaigns that effectively disqualified candidates who did not have access to large sums of money. This funding has been available in every Presidential election since 1976 and consists of 3 parts: Matching funds in the primaries to candidates who meet certain eligibility requirements; grants to sponsor political parties' Presidential nominating conventions; and entitlements for the general election campaigns of major party nominees and partial funding for qualified minor and new Party candidates. The program is run by the Federal Election Commission (FEC) which determines which candidates and committees are eligible and in what amounts. It also audits the committees receiving the funds to ensure authorized use of the funds. <http://www.fee.gov/info/execsum and info/intro.htm>

273. Lindsay Wagner whose genres were Action, Scifi, Adventure, and Drama productions began her Hollywood career in 1971 with *Adam 12*. Her first big movie was 20th Century Fox's *The Paper Chase* in 1973. She acted in the top ranked TV series including *Marcus Welby, The Rockford Files, Night Gallery The FBI, Kate & Alle*, and *Alfred Hitchcock Presents*. Her most famous series was *The Bionic Woman* where she starred in 59 episodes between 1976-78 and won an Emmy for the role in 1977. She was given a Star on The Hollywood Walk of Fame in 1984. Her last TV staring vehicles were *The Surfer King* and *Four Extraordinary Women* in 2006.
274. "Sen. Groener Big Spender," Don Jepsen, Oregon Journal, June 25, 1976.
275. "Who is coming to the reunion. . .?" *Headlight Herald*, Tracy, MN, June 24, 1976
276. "Travelers visit home of Declaration signer," *The Argus*, Hillsboro, Aug. 3, 1976.
277. In addition to Carter, eight Democrats were nominated and received votes at the Convention: Rep. Morris "Mo" Udall of AZ, Gov. Jerry Brown of CA, Gov. George Wallace of AL, Sen. Frank Church of ID, Hubert H. Humphrey, Sen. Henry Jackson, WA, and Gov. Milton Shapp of PA. The Carter-Mondale ticket was elected in a close race - 40,831,881 to 39,148,634 for President Gerald Ford. The electoral college vote was 297 to 240, with 270 needed to win.
278. "Whipple Wants State Auditing Plan Improved," *East Oregonian*, Pendleton, Aug. 10, 1976.
279. "Whipple lists three top goals for state office," *Democrat-Herald*, Albany, Oct. 16. 1976.
280. "Lang endorsed, but Boe loses in AFL-CIO political session," Rosemary Maynard, *The Oregonian*, July 16, 1976.
281. "No Whipple chauvinism," *Community Press*, Portland, Oct. 20, 1976.
282. "Whipple Edges Paulus," *Oregon Journal*, Oct. 20, 1976.
283. "GOP opens coffers to aid Norma Paulus," *Capital Journal*, Salem, Oct. 27.
284. "The State Races. Can the Republicans Buy Back the Statehouse," By David Kelly and Chris Hanson, *Oregon Times Magazine*, October 1976.
285. "Whipple says he shuns cash so he can stay independent," Michael Bradley, *Gazette-Times*, Corvallis, Oct. 29. 1976
286. "Candidates file reporta," *Valley Times*, Oct. 30, 1976.
287. "Voters Decide 3 State Races," *Oregon Journal,* Nov. 3, 1976.
288. "Bill would require vote on Tri-Met tax boosts," *Argus*, June 2, 1967
289. "Whipple's best," Gerry Pratt, *Community Press*," July 6, 1977.
290. "Senators vote to curb growth of bureaucracy," *The Oregonian*, June 23, 1977.
291. "Senate passes measure similar to one buried in general election," *Argus*, June 30, 1977.
292. "ID tags approved, Solons close tap on keggers for teens," Rod Patterson, *The Ore-*

gonian. July 21, 1977. "Inside looking out. . . Senate kills bill on drinking age," Don Roberts, Argus, July 12, 1977.

293. "One small step," *The Oregonian*, Jan. 28, 1978.
294. "Golf-type vehicles," *The Oregonian*, Feb. 11, 1978.
295. "Parents helped," *Argus*, May 18, 1978.
296. "Legislators promote measure 2 passage," *Argus*, Oct. 27, 1977.
297. "IED seats members, declares Eischen property transfer 'void,'" *Argus*, July 21, 1977.
298. "Whipple tapped," *Valley Times*, Sept. 7, 1977.
299. "Whipple selected on urban renewal task force group," *News Times*, Sept. 21, 1977.
300. "Local official share program with national keynote speakers," *News Times*, Nov. 9, 1977.
301. "County Council on Aging reviews senior progress," *News Times*, Nov. 16, 1977.
302. "Whipple selected for public land hearings session," *News Times*, May 17, 1978.
303. "State senator to visit two weeks in China," *Argus*, July 11, 1978.
304. "For possible election law violation State Democratic chief under probe," *Statesman*, Sept. 7, 1978.
305. "Demo demand on Whipple questioned," *The Oregonian*, Sept. 7, 1978. "Ethics panel looking at faux pas by Klonoski," *The Oregonian*, Sept. 30, 1978.
306. "Klonoski's letter ruled permissible," *The Oregonian*, Oct. 17, 1978.
307. "Ethics panel dismisses contribution dispute," Sandra McDonough, *The Oregonian*, Dec. 1, 1978.
308. "An act sullied," *The Oregonian*, Sept. 12, 1978.
309. "State Democrat Party Makes A Mistake," *Herald-News*, Klamath Falls, Sept. 11, 1978.
310. "Subdued reaction," *Bend Bulletin*, Sept. 12, 1978.
311. "Whipple-Hartung contest promises to be hot rerun," Sandra McDonough, *The Sunday Oregonian*. Oct. 15, 1978.
312. "Argus makes ballot endorsements," *Argus*, Oct. 31, 1978.
313. "Washington County Choices," *Oregon Journal*, Nov. 1, 1978.
314. "The candidates," *The Community Press,* Nov. 1, 1978.
315. "GOP outspending Demos in Oregon legislative races," Don Jepsen, *Oregon Journal*, Nov. 1, 1978.
316. "Washington County election results, Tuesday, Nov. 7," *News Times*, Nov. 8, 1978.
317. "Whipple presents his Senate papers to county museum," *News Times*, Dec. 20, 1978
318. The full review is in Vol. 93, No. 1, March 2005 of the *National Genealogical Society Quarterly.* 66-67.
319. "What's in a name?" Lee Sherman-Stadius, *Valley Times*, Aug. 13. 1981
320. "Ex-officials return to public service." *Valley Times,* week of April 2-8, 1987.
321. Birth certificate. State file No. 3187, Multnomah County Registrar's No. 3219, State Bureau of Vital Statistics, Salem, Oregon.
322. Death Certificate. Register of Vital Statistics, State of Oregon, County of Multnomah. Filed in the vital statistics section in the city of Portland, Bureau of Health, Sept. 11, 1962.
323. Agnes was born in Peoria Co., Illinois 23 Sept. 1835 to Henry Abraham Frye and Helen M. Diamon. Her son Owen's middle name is her mother's maiden name. Her father was a private in Co. L. 11th regiment, Illinois Cavalry in the Civil War. See Frederick Dyer's *A Compendium of the War of the Rebellion* for a history of the regiment. Ines' cousin, Carol Lawson of Portland, has a photograph of J. Diamon who may be a brother of Agnes. A James Diamon of Illinois served in the 6th U. S. Cavalry , regular Army and additional research needs to be conducted on the Diamon family.
324. More than 2 million Americans served in the military and 116,000 died before the

war ended in November 1918. The *USS Ohio* was launched in San Francisco in 1901 and commissioned 4 Oct. 1904. It was the flagship of the Asiatic Fleet in 1905 and in 1908 was part of "The Great White Fleet," 16 battleships painted white, President Theodore Roosevelt sent around the world to show that the U.S. had become a major world power. During WWI the *Ohio* operated out of Norfolk training crews for the expanding fleet and took part in battleship maneuvers. She was sent to Philadelphia and placed on reserve, decommissioned 31 May 1922, and sold for scrap 24 March 1923.

325. The *USS El Sol* was one of 13 freighters to enter U. S. Navy service in 1917 and 1918. They operated as cargo ships or animal transports. After the Armistice was signed 11 November, 1918 10 were modified for troop transport duties. Their original design had flush deck hulls, low superstructures, and a single small smokestack. The modifications included portholes in hull sides and temporary houses installed on the weather deck.

326. When the U.S. entered the war in 1917, the U.S. Navy was inadequate to transport the troops that went to France so the Emergency Fleet Corporation was established to mass produce ships. New shipyards were built in various parts of the country and 188 new ships were launched that year and another 103 by April 1918. Convoys of 8 to 12 ships were formed to move the troops to France. Because of submarine attacks, each convoy was accompanied by a cruiser, destroyers, chasers, submarine, and aircraft through the danger zone. The average voyage took 12 days and 88 convoys traveled, constantly zigzaging, from New York and Virginia between June and December 1918. The maximum capacity of the average troop transport was 3,400 and it took 8 ships to move an entire division. By the signing of the Armistice, about 2 million soldiers had made the trip. The reverse trip only took a little more than six months. Since the Navy escort was no longer needed, cruisers and battleships helped transport them on the return and an average of 15,000 men arrived home every day.

327. John Steinbeck's *The Grapes of Wrath* published in 1939 was awarded the Pulitzer Prize for the novel and the Nobel Prize for literature. It was about poor families of sharecroppers forced from their homes as drought, economic hardship, and changes in the agriculture industry occurred during the Great Depression. It was later made into a movie.

328. Dr. Roy Plunkett, a 27-year-old chemist, was working with technician Jack Rebok at Dupont's Jackson Laboratory in Deepwater Point, N.J. trying to create a new kind of refrigerant by mixing a gas called tetrafluororaethylene (TFE) with hydrochloric acid. He stored several canisters of TFE on dry ice to prevent the gas from exploding. When they oppened the valve on one of the canisters, nothing came out. They then removed the valve, turned the cylinder on its head, and shook it and a white waxy powder came out. The TFE frozen gas coated the insides of the canisters and its molecules combined into long, elorbate chains, forming the giant molecules of a new substance with bizarre, almost unimaginable traits. They named it teflon. Ken Chowder, "Eureka!", *Smithsonian*, Sept. 2003. 94.

329. One day shortly after the end of WWII, Percy Lebaron Spencer, who obtained more than 120 patents in his lifetime including some on radar, was walking through his lab at the Raytheon Co. in Cambridge, MA, when he stopped briefly by a magneton – the tube that produces the high frequency microwaves that power radar. He was working on things like missile defense systems but just that second he got a strange feeling. He realized that a candy bar in his jacket pocket had melted. Thinking it odd, he performed a makeshift experiment, putting some popcorn kernels in front of the magneton. It was soon popping all over the place giving Spencer the idea for a

microwave oven. Chowder, "Eureka!" 92.

330. The House Un-American Activities Committee (HUAC) was created in 1938 to investigate alleged disloyalty and subversive activities on the part of private citizens, public employees, and organizations suspected of having Communist ties. In the postwar atmosphere of fear and contempt for the Soviet Union, HUAC's activities commanded broad popular support and consistently attracted major headlines. Committee members often branded witnesses if they refused to comply or hesitated in answering committee questions. Its questioning style and examination techniques served as the model for Sen. Joseph McCarthy's investigative hearings in the early 1950s. Following McCarthy's censure by the Senate, the public grew wary of the "red baiting" technique and HUAC declined in importance, was renamed the House Internal Security Committee in 1969, and abolished in 1975.

331. America's physical landscape began to be reshaped June 29, 1956 when President Eisenhower signed the Federal Aid Highway Act, authorizing the Interstate Highway system. It authorized 41,000 miles of roads estimated to cost about $100 billion and is still thought to be the largest public-works project in the history of the planet. The Interstate system increased commerce and knitted together the country in new ways, linking cities with smooth corridors of concrete and asphalt. Suburban growth exploded, Off ramp communities sprouted. Malls sprang up including Southdale Center, the first fully enclosed shopping center outside Minneapolis in October 1956. (Blaine attended its opening day.) Mass transit was a casualty as highway mediums were narrowed so light-rail lines couldn't be included, thousands of houses had to be demolished to make way for roads and parking lots, and suburban sprawl initiated the abandonment of down towns. Alfred Lubrano, McClatchy-Tribune News Service, "1956: Prelude to a new USA," *The Oregonian*, Aug. 16, 2006.

332. "An Oregon Century Growing Up In The 1950s," Spencer Heinz, *The Oregonian*, Dec. 27, 1999.

333. Letter dated 7 June 1967 from Oregon State Treasurer Robert W. Straub to Blaine Whipple: "Dear Blaine: With the passage today of HB 1601, better known as the "beach bill," which preserves and protects Oregon's beaches for public use and enjoyment, I want to acknowledge the vital role you played in the passage of this far-reaching legislation. HB 1601 was dying a quiet death in committee because, with its rather vague title, no one on the committee understood its significance. No one, that is, except you. Your telephone call alerted me to the fact that this measure could determine whether Oregon's beaches remained public playgrounds or became private preserves. As you and I know, this triggered the whole battle for the beaches because I was able to call for a public hearing on HB 1601 and this resulted in the passage of the bill. All of this simply goes to show how important one man can be if he is constantly conscious of the public interest and in taking action to protect that interest. You were the man. Not only I, but the people of Oregon owe you a tremendous vote of thanks."

334. "An Oregon Century, Rebelling in the 1960s," Steve Mayes, *The Oregonian*, Dec 28, 1999.

335. "Trojan Course The short life and slow death of Oregon's only nuclear power plant, Todd Schwartz, *Oregon Quarterly* Autumn 2006. 26-29.

336. Sarah Anderson, John Cavanagh, and Ralph Estes of the Institute for Policy Studies and Chuck Collins and Chris Hartman of United for a Fair Economy, "A Decade of Executive Excess: The 1990s." *6th Annual Executive Compensation Survey.* Sept. 1, 1999.

BLAINE SCOTT WHIPPLE AND LORNA JO ZOERINK

Blaine*[12] *Scott Whipple *(Robert*[11] *Blaine, Lucien*[10] *Blaine, James*[9]*, Lucien*[8]*, Enoch*[7]*, Nehemiah*[6]*, Benjamin*[5]*, Francis*[4]*, Jonathan*[3]*, Joseph*[2]*, Matthew*[1]*, Mathew*[A]*) was born 27 December 1968 at Portland, Multnomah County, Oregon and married Lorna Jo Zoerink 14 August 1999 at Turner, Marion County, Oregon. She was born December 1, 1966 at Lakewood General Hospital in Downey, California. He was a bank trust officer, insurance company underwriter, and attorney. He was known by his middle name which was his grandmother Whipple's maiden name.*

Children of Scott and Lorna Jo Whipple

i. Spencer Blaine born 15 October 2001
ii. Turner Collins born 8 May 2004.

Scott was born at 12:24 p.m. Saturday at the Kaiser Permanente Hospital on North Interstate Avenue in Portland. He weighed eight pounds two ounces and was twenty and a half inches long. While his birth was without complication, getting mother and child home from the hospital was very complicated. Saturday's weather was somewhat stormy and by early Sunday an arctic weather front brought sharp bitter cold that iced highways and set new low temperature records. It was the worst storm of the winter with steady, swirling snow falling all day. Travelers' warnings were issued and the sudden call for chains and winter tires soon wiped out supplies.

The furnace went out at the Whipple house and the only available heat from the family room fireplace couldn't keep the freezing pipes from breaking and flooding the kitchen, family, and living rooms. The snow made it impossible to drive up the steep driveway. Judith stayed with the Bob Cottrell family and Bob stayed with his paternal grandparents, Bruce and Lena Steele. Blaine was able to get to the hospital Sunday and took Ines and Scott to Scott's maternal grandmother's (Josephine Peterson, a.k.a. "Grandma Pete") home which survived the storm without problems. They were able to return home three days later after the damage had been repaired and the roads were passable.

He was named Blaine Scott. Blaine was his father's and grandfather's middle name though both were known as Blaine. Scott was his paternal

grandmother's maiden name. He was slow to talk causing Grandma Pearl Whipple to worry, but once he started there was no shutting him up. He had an agile mind and kept filling it with answers to an unending stream of questions. He learned the alphabet at an early age, loved to be read to, and spent hours looking at the pictures in his books. By four, he was three feet two and one-half inches, weighed 50 pounds, and had begun reading. His interest in learning was keen and he was growing at a faster pace than same-age friends which led his parents to enroll him in the first grade at West Tualatin View (West TV) elementary school (grades 1-6) at age 5 where he had no problem mastering the school work.

He grew up in a 3-bedroom home at 8455 S.W. Brookridge in unincorporated eastern Washington county with a Portland mailing address. The home was on a cul-de-sac so he and the many neighborhood kids played basketball, kickball, tennis baseball, hide and seek in the nearby undeveloped field, and searched for aquatic and wildlife along Golf creek.

He and his father joined Indian Guides.[1] During one Indian outing, Scott fell off his horse and to this day does not enjoy horses. He played soccer with the Cedar Mill "Milltown" soccer club in grades 1-6. While playing mostly defense, he played some midfield and became the team's best goalie. He started playing organized basketball in the fourth grade with a team sponsored by the Cedar Mill Bible church. The team was undefeated and beat the parents the last game of the season. After the Saturday games, his Dad took him to Bale's Thriftway for a Hostess Fruit Pie. Basketball was his favorite school activity in the fifth and sixth grades and today (2007) at 38, he plays weekly on league teams.

He spent part of the summers of 1976 and 1977 with his grandma Pearl and aunt and uncle Nancy and Don and cousins Terri, Donna, David, and Molly Jasperson in Appleton, Minnesota. It was a small farming community and he enjoyed riding his bike around town and visiting the Jasperson Department Store where he was allowed to play with the large old cash register in the storeroom. Fishing with his uncles Don Jasperson and Richard ("Dick") Whipple were memorable for the Walleyes he caught. While modest in size, they seemed to get larger as he retold his fishing stories. Uncle Dick took him to a Minnesota Twins game where he saw Rod Carew[2] at bat and his uncle taught him how to keep score. Helping the Jaspersons move across town became a memorable event. He helped load a truck at the old house and unload it at the new house in 100 degree heat and humidity. The result: heat poisoning which kept him up most of the night vomiting.

He remembers these two summers as being special as was the Oakland Raiders Super Bowl win in January 1977 when they defeated the Minnesota Vikings. His father was a Viking fan but Scott favored the Raiders

because they were the premiere team at that time, his neighbor, Lowell Yost was a fan, and their games were shown most often on Portland TV. Good sports, his parents took him to GI Joe's, a sports oriented store, in Salem and bought him a Raiders' jacket to wear when he started the fifth grade that September.

Another special memory was the 1977 NBA Championship won by the Portland Trailblazers against the Philadelphia 76ers. They played two games in the regular season, each winning at home. The 76ers won the first two championship games and the Blazers the next four in an unheard-of-series comeback rarely seen in professional sports.[3] Scott only attended a game or two each season but he and his mother listened to the radio broadcast of every other game. The team's broadcaster, Bill Schonley, known as "the Schonz," created colloquialisms to describe the games – "Rip City!, Bingo, Bango, Bongo!, Blazermania is Red Hot and Rollin'!" — and other descriptive characteristics of the team.

Scott showed an interest in music so in the summer of 1978, his parents gave him an alto saxophone and he joined the West TV band in the fifth grade. He was good at reading music and playing the correct notes but not musically gifted. He was "Zoot," the saxophone playing Muppet (a popular show at the time[4]), at a school concert and his picture playing the instrument was featured in a campaign brochure for his father's run for Oregon Secretary of State. Spring Break 1979, the family vacationed in Puerto Vallarta and Guadalajara Mexico where Scott was introduced to the art of bargaining for goods, rode a donkey through the Puerto Vallarta slums, and experienced the Guadalajara market which lacked the sanitary conditions (think pig's heads covered with flies) of his home supermarkets.

Scott had more than his fair share of stitches ranging from several in his head from an accident when he was two to 25 in his right leg in sixth grade as a result of serious bicycle accident and all sorts of injuries in between. It was his mother who usually accompanied him to the emergency room and nursed him back to health.

He was introduced to recycling at the West TV school where he learned the importance of limiting human impact on the environment. His first converts were his parents and he eventually convinced his then 75-year-old maternal grandma Pete to join the cause. He looked forward to trips to the Tolovana Inn at Cannon Beach where the family acquired an ocean front condominium when it opened in 1972. He spent time exploring Haystack Rock, making sand sculptures, eating ice cream and bakery delicacies downtown, entertaining school friends, and playing cards and marbles with Grandmas Pearl and Pete.

He entered Cedar Park Intermediate School (grades 7, 8, 9) where he

participated in band and basketball. The eighth grade team, *The Centurions*, ended the regular basketball season with a 9 win 1 loss record, including a 103 point margin in one game. The loss, the last game of the regular season, was won by one point in overtime. They won games one and two in the championship series by comfortable margins and eked out a one point victory in the championship game, over the team that beat them in the regular season. Scott scored the winning basket in the final five seconds and was named MVP.

He did well in eighth grade: a 3.5 GPA, beat all challengers for first chair in the saxophone section of the band; was the basketball's team's fourth highest scorer and leading rebounder – 10.4 average – had lots of blocked shots and assists, and was effective on defense around the basket.

The family attended a reunion in Underwood, North Dakota the summer of 1981 where he met approximately 150 members of the Scott family. His grandma Pearl returned to Oregon with them and they stopped for a brief visit at Watford City, North Dakota where his grandfather Blaine had published the paper in the 1940s. Scott's most vivid memory of that visit was watching the bank's outside temperature gauge rise several degrees over a span of half an hour to a high of 114° and an employee of the newspaper frying an egg on the sidewalk. En route home they visited the Black Hills, Mt. Rushmore, and the Crazy Horse Memorial under construction, Yellowstone and Grand Teton National Parks, and the Craters of the Moon National Monument in central Idaho.

In the ninth grade, he played both football and basketball. The basketball team's record was 17-1 They played in a six-team league and outscored their opponents by an average of 16 points per game. Their lone loss was to Whitford Junior High in the third of their four games. The season ended with a 79-44 blowout over Meadow Park Junior High. At the team awards event March 3, Scott was named MVP. He was also a sports reporter on the *Cedar Press*, the student newspaper.

Scott entered Sunset High School in 1984 as a 14-year-old sophomore and was already taller than his 6'1" father and wore size 14 shoes. He was a starter on the offensive line of the junior varsity football team and named offensive lineman of their fourth game. When the football season ended, he was selected for the sophomore basketball team and broke his left arm above the elbow with 4 minutes remaining in the last game of the season. After the cast was removed he attended therapy sessions and was advised not to participate in spring basketball so he helped the team by working as a statistician. He attended a week-long basketball camp at Pacific University in Forest Grove, Oregon in July, earning the camp fee at a garage sale. He did well academically as a freshman and sophomore ranking in the upper 6.5% of the class — 37 out of a class of 556. He was

taking college preparatory tests as a sophomore.

He earned his first varsity high school letter as a 15 year old junior on the football team which survived to the semi-final round of the state championship playoffs. He failed the cut for varsity basketball but made it on the wrestling team. At 213 pounds, he was in the heavyweight class.

He continued to do well academically, earning a 3.8 GPA while taking advance classes in history, English, and math. He played on a weekend basketball team and baby sat for a couple of neighborhood families. He attended a college fair in the fall which greatly increased his share of the family mail.

During the summer of 1985, he did yard work, painting, and general cleanup for $5 an hour. He enrolled in a month-long driver training class which met six days a week two hours a day for both driving lessons and studying rules of the road. He took an American History advance placement exam – which was recognized for college credit – and received the highest possible score. He took the English advanced placement exam his senior year.

Sunset lost its opening football game in 1985 and the following week beat Lakeridge, the number two ranked team in the state and the team that beat them in the playoffs the previous year. It was Lakeridge's first regular season loss in 30 games. Scott played the entire game on offense with a sprained right thumb and was in for the successful goal line defense.[5]

The game received major coverage in the sport pages around the state. Kerry Eggers, West Metro Sports reporter for *The Oregonian*, featured the team, including pictures of Scott and the other members of the offensive line, in the paper of September 22:

> The Purple People Eaters have let the word get out: They're out to feast on the rest of the the Metro League this season. The original PP&E gang, the Carl Ellers and Alan Pages of the Minnesota Vikings, pulled the plug on National Football League offenses during the late 1970s. Washington County's version, the Sunset High School offensive line, turns out people's lights on the other side of the ball.
>
> After Sunset's electrifying 26-19 upset of second-ranked Lakeridge a week ago, in which a well-protected Brad Preble threw for 276 yards, Coach Ron Linehan called the Apollos' front line "the heart and soul of this football team. This offensive line could become the best that's played for us," said Linehan, a former middle linebacker at the University of Idaho who knows a little about facing blockers.
>
> Linehan's statement says a lot: In his eight years as Sunset's head coach, six of his teams have advanced to the playoffs. Before that, he was an

assistant on Sunset's state champion-ship squads of 1976 and '77. Some good football players have worn Apollo purple, many of them manning the trenches.

The '85 offensive line is experienced – from tackle to tight end, the starters are all seniors – and big, with 6-foot 4, 270 pound tackle Gary Needham pushing the average to about 225 pounds. Four of them also start on defense. "Timm Miller (5-9, 190) is the small-fry of the group," noted Linehan. "I kid him about it, but actually, that's pretty good-sized for a high school guard."

The coach is putting more pressure on the line than he ever has before. He wants holes you can drive a truck through. Linehan provided thumbnail sketches on the big six:

David Pollin – 6-4, 225, center, also starts on defensive line. "David and Gary Needham are probably the only kids I've asked to go both ways on the line as juniors. David never accepts anything less than his best. He rates up there with the top linemen I've had."

Mark Matthews – 6-1, 215, guard, also starts at middle linebacker, son of ex-Sunset Coach Don Matthews, now head coach of British Columbia Lions of Canadian Football League. "As physical a player as you'll find in the state of Oregon. A very intelligent player. Football probably means more to him than anybody I've ever been around. He's been around Sunset football for 12 years. He has our tradition ingrained in him."

Timm Miller – guard. "Timm is a very good football player. He's real strong and quick in getting off the ball. He's off to a great start this season."

Gary Needham – "He's a three-year varsity player, and I don't know if I've ever had a lineman do that. He's big, strong, and mobile with probably as much quickness as anybody on our team. That's not too bad for a guy who weights 270."

Scott Whipple – 6-3, 230, tackle. "He entered school a year early, so he is a 16-year-old senior. If he were only a junior, look out. He really did a job in the weight room over the last year. His improvement since his junior year is phenomenal."

Mark Kilpack – 6-5, 210. "Mark's the best tight end I've ever been around. He's a physical kid who is probably a better receiver than blocker. As he grows into a bigger body, he'll be a tremendous blocker too."

Scott played every offensive down of the season (including punt team, PAT, field goal team and kickoff return team) as well as a third of the

defensive plays at tackle. The team won the Metro Championship but was eliminated in the first round of the state tourney. At the awards banquet, he was recognized as a scholar athlete with a 3.74 GPA and as the most improved offensive player of the season. He won his first wrestling match of his senior year with a pin 32 seconds into the second round. As a result of his pin, Sunset won the meet and he was the team hero of the match. Heavyweights on most other teams outweighed him by at least 20 pounds but he was quicker and used his grey matter to overcome size.

Scott and his father flew to Omaha, Nebraska Thanksgiving Day 1985, rented a car, drove to Des Moines, Iowa for a turkey dinner, then on to Grinnell, Iowa, home of Grinnell College, a Division Three liberal arts college, for a campus visitation. *U. S. News and World Report* annual college edition ranked Grinnell ninth in the nation among small liberal arts colleges. It had an impressive faculty and physical plant and a $191 million endowment. The faculty-student ratio was 10 to 1 and every student had access to computers. Scott's SAT score, 1170 met the school's minimum requirements for admission and its football coach, John Martinek, aggressively recruited Scott. Coaches at Linfield College at McMinnville, Oregon, Willamette University in Salem, and Whittier College in Whittier, California were also recruiting him and he was considering some smaller colleges in Washington State and walking-on at the University of Oregon.

Despite believing Grinnell was in the middle of nowhere – a four-hour drive from the Twin Cities – both the coach and the college impressed him. After visiting with three Portland area students who attended Grinnell and highly recommended it, he applied and was accepted. After committing to Grinnell, Pokey Allen, football coach at Portland State University, asked him to become a member of the Viking team but as an early Grinnell admittee, he had to decline.

He spent the summer working at various odd jobs for neighbors (yard work, house painting, etc.) and evenings playing basketball, running, and lifting weights at the gym. He left Portland for Grinnell by Greyhound bus Monday August 18, 1986 and arrived Wednesday around 1:30 p.m. in time to begin football practice the next day. By the time Grinnell played its fourth game of the season against Coe College in Cedar Rapids, Iowa, he had become a starter as left tackle on the offensive line, replacing a junior who was a two-year starter on the line. His number was 73. The coach told him it was a major accomplishment for a 17-year-old freshman to start.

His first semester freshman schedule: Introduction to Economics, Logic, Pre-Calculus, and a freshman tutorial on Plants, People, and Survival. In addition to these 16 semester hours of classes, his days were filled

working in the North Campus cafeteria and varsity football. He was assigned a room on the third floor of S. Yonkers Hall — a coed dorm with males and females on alternating floors. His room mate was Mike Spurbeck of Waverly, Iowa. The telephone was in the hall just outside his room.

Grinnell was a diverse school attracting students from all sections of the United States, Europe, Asia, and Africa. He made many friends, easily adjusted to the social side of college, enjoyed playing Hearts, and attended parties. Grinnell was a small town surrounded by corn fields so most of the social activities with friends was "hanging out."

He spent his first Thanksgiving away from home with his grandma Pearl and the Don and Nancy Jasperson family in Glencoe, Minnesota, the Christmas holidays at home beginning December 20 and attended a Peterson family reunion at his grand uncle Elden Peterson's home in Gresham on his eighteenth birthday.

Stormy weather caused a problem on the return trip. His plane left Portland two hours late because of a snow storm at Denver, the first stop. His destination was Kansas City where his grand uncle Bill Scott met him and put him up overnight. A school friend from Chillicothe, Missouri, who was to transport him and another student flying in from New York City to Grinnell, had car trouble so they spent the night in Chillicothe and arrived at Grinnell about 5 the next night – too late to register. Classes started the next day and his economic professor had posted a syllabus that required students to read the first six chapters of the text by the first day of class.

He came home for spring break in March 1987 and flew out of Portland the 28th, a beautiful warm and sunny day, to Chicago where he was to catch a connecting flight to Des Moines. A blizzard had Des Moines socked in so he spent the night in the airport – a hotel room cost $80. Des Moines was still socked in Sunday so he and three other Grinnell students got a flight to Cedar Rapids and shared a cab to Grinnell at $15 each. Five inches of snow greeted them in Grinnell.

School ended May 15 and he flew home where he spent the summer working at the various campuses of Portland Community College on the grounds crew mowing, watering, spreading bark dust, planting, etc. His assignments were primarily at Sylvania, the main campus in southwest Portland. His work ethic was rewarded with more responsibilities than other new staff and he was allowed to drive college vehicles and worked some projects solo. Its main benefits were good pay and lots of exercise. He worked from 7:00 a.m. to 3:30 and after dinner at home played basketball and did football conditioning by running and weight lifting.

In August 1987, his dad drove him back to the Grinnell campus in a

station wagon full of his belongings. They arrived August 21, a day before football practice began. It was a two-day drive and en route, they visited Jackson Hole, Wyoming and Martin, South Dakota, his father's birthplace.

He began the season as he ended it the previous season as a starter on the offensive line. He was known for his hard hits and his teammates dubbed him "Cool Whip." The Pioneer's season was so-so. He moved into a larger suite in Smith Hall on North Campus with roommates Adam Kaplan of Highland Park, Illinois and Mick Kulokowski from the Bronx, New York City.

Grinnell's new basketball coach recruited Scott, who had been a regular participant in pickup games with team members, who encouraged the coach to add him to the team roster. Since basketball was and is his favorite participant sport, he welcomed the opportunity. He didn't play much the first year but contributed to the team's success. The football coach, concerned about injury to one of his key linemen, vetoed basketball practice during football season.

His class schedule included macro economics and environmental economics which led him to choose economics as his major. He had developed an interest in numbers and business in high school and economics seemed to be a natural fit.

Grinnell's winter break was five weeks except for the basketball team which had to settle for just under two weeks. The college closed the dorms so team members had to live in the Recreation Center, sleeping on mattresses on the floor. What they lacked in comfort was made up by increased team unity.

Having participated in two varsity sports practicing and playing from August 1987 to February 1988, he was ready for some relaxation by spring break which he spent at home. His weight ballooned to 248 pounds which his football coach welcomed and his basketball coach decried and made it clear that playing time the next season would depend on losing the extra pounds.

He returned to his Community College job the summer of 1988 and began an after-work regime which included sprints on the Catlin Gable School track, basketball games, and weight lifting at Tito's gym in Beaverton. His weight was 217 pounds when he returned for his junior year. The basketball coach was thrilled, a feeling not shared by the football coach who refused to list him in the team program under 230 pounds. Much to the coach's relief he excelled at the lower weight. While every defensive lineman outweighed him, he was able to use his quickness and positioning to his advantage. He was named to the First Team All Midwest Conference and earned the Rosenbloom Trophy, awarded to the

team's outstanding lineman. His basketball floor time increased and he was a regular bench contributor. When playing a Division I opponent at Valparaiso, Indiana, he quickly adjusted to the more physical play at that level and with limited playing time snared seven rebounds without committing a foul.

Scott applied for and was appointed intramural coordinator for the 1988-89 school year. He was responsible for scheduling all games for dorm teams, insuring that the appropriate equipment was available, and hired, trained, and scheduled officials for all games. All this had to be done within a strict budget. As coordinator, he hired himself to officiate games and made enough spending money to quit the cafeteria job. He especially enjoyed officiating the basketball games despite the heckling from his friends.

Scott and several friends motored to Las Vegas for 1989 Spring break. Limited finances curtailed his gambling but he enjoyed the late nights soaking up the atmosphere. They returned via Arizona and visited Grand Canyon National Park. Car trouble was a problem all the way back to Grinnell. He returned to Portland following his junior year where his community college job awaited.

Back in Grinnell in August 1989, he was voted a co-captain of the Pioneer football team and named pre-season Honorable Mention All American. The team played nine games between September 9 and November 4 – four home games; Concordia (St. Paul), Coe, Knox (attended by his father, mother, and brother-in-law William Long), and Illinois and five away (St. Paul Bible, Iowa Wesleyan, Lawrence. Cornell, and Monmouth). Their first game was played on the 100th anniversary of the first football game played west of the Mississippi river. Grinnell defeated the University of Iowa in that 1889 game and defeated Concordia in 1989. He earned his second All Conference honors playing both tackle and tight end.

He maintained a B average while participating in two varsity sports, a variety of extracurricular activities, and volunteering in a preschool program. He was voted co-captain of the basketball team for the 1989-90 season and played power forward, No. 50. They played Bethel, a Division 1 team in the St. Paul, Minnesota area, November 22. His father, who was in Minnesota to attend the funeral of Donna (Jasperson) Barney, his niece and Scott's cousin, was able to attend. It was the only college basketball game he saw Scott play

By his senior year, Scott was a starter on the basketball team averaging more than 30 minutes a game. His assignment was defense and rebounding while averaging eight points and eight rebounds a game. His rebounding placed him fourth on the conference leader board. They

played Haverford (victory) and Swarthmore (loss) colleges in Philadelphia the second week of January. While in Philadelphia, he visited the Liberty Bell, attended a 76ers game, and took a horse and carriage ride through the historical section of town. Grinnell was approximately five hours from Chicago and he and friends went there occasionally for fun times. He attended the game February 23, 1990 when Clyde Drexler led the Portland Trail Blazers to victory over Michael Jordan and the Chicago Bulls. In March 1990, he and several buddies spent Spring Break in Panama City Beach, Florida where he unequivocally confirmed he was unable to tan.

Scotts' parents attended Grinnell graduation May 21, 1990 as did his aunts and uncles Steve and Elaine West of Mt. Vernon, Iowa and Don and Barb Jasperson from Glencoe. It was the college's 144th year and 330 students were graduated: 128 from the Division of Social Studies, 120 from the Division of Science, 77 from the Division of Humanities, and 5 independent majors. Scott was awarded a degree in economics and won the award for outstanding senior in more than one sport.

He returned to Portland to explore the job market but was unable to find a permanent job that fit with his major. He spent the summer working five days a week at the community college and weekends at a park in southwest Washington that hosted corporate picnics. His college girlfriend from Minneapolis visited in August and he took a week off to show her the wonders and beauty of Oregon. Many of his close college friends were working in Chicago so he moved there in October, driving what had been his mother's 1978 Dodge Diplomat and pulling a U-Haul trailer with his belongings.

Eric Dahlin, a Grinnell buddy, was visiting in Portland and joined him on the trip to visit his grandmother in Illinois. They were famous on campus for their constant arguing. Their first stop was Salt Lake City to stay with another Grinnell student and they argued the entire time about which highway to take and which gas station to patronize. By the end of the second day they were unable to agree on sleeping accommodations – Scott opted for a cheap hotel; Eric for camping – so they drove all night to Des Moines, Iowa where they stayed with another Grinnell graduate who attending law school at Drake University. When they finally reached Chicago, Scott had trouble finding a parking spot that would accommodate the car and trailer. During his two years in Chicago he honed his ability to parallel park. Among his early introductions to Chicago driving habits was watching two vehicles leave the scene after jointly clipping a city bus, and getting used to impatient Chicago drivers constantly honking their horns.

In November 1990, American National Bank hired Scott to work in

the Trust Department. He and two fellow Grinnell grads, Adam Kaplan and James Guest, shared an apartment on Chicago's North side at 1115 W. Lill, Apt. 3W in Lincoln Park. When the complex was converted to a condominium in May 1991, they moved to 3538 N. Reta, Apt. 3, approximately three blocks from Wrigley Field.

His work performance was rewarded with two raises and a transfer to the stock and bond analysis department in July. In this position he traded up to five-hundred million dollars daily in stock transactions. He assisted his father in the family genealogical project by researching at the Chicago branch of the National Archives searching for information on the family of his great grandmother, Ellen (Ella) Thompson of Vermillion county, Illinois. He played on three basketball teams in separate leagues and volunteered in a Chicago homeless shelter one day a week. He enjoyed life in Chicago and he and his roommates and other friends from college and the bank often spent weekends listening to music, attending sporting events, playing High Ball, staying at Adam's parents "cabin" in Door County, Wisconsin, and attending parties.

A week's vacation over labor Day 1991 included three days at Cannon Beach during the best weather of the summer. Upon his return to Chicago he noticed a Volkswagen Minibus with Oregon plates that frequently parked on the street near his apartment. After a few weeks he spotted the owner, Alan Rogoway, a friend from Sunset High School. Alan and another Sunset High grad, Brian Hough, had found work in Chicago and rented an apartment a half block from Scott's place. The three of them watched nearly every Trail Blazer game during the 1991-92 season and were interviewed on a Chicago TV station when the Bulls played the Blazers in the NBA championship series. It was a crushing disappointment to them when the Bulls won the championship in six games in June 1992. The three Portlanders won a Chicago 3 on 3 basketball tournament called "Shoot the Bull."

Scott enjoyed his job and continued to get excellent work reviews but the brutal Chicago weather – hot and humid in the summer and extremely cold and windy in the winter – and the turmoil of big city life turned his thoughts to the Pacific Northwest. He considered the Master of Business Administration program at Portland State University and took the master's level SAT in January 1993 and received a high score.

He resigned his banking job in May and drove across country to Portland with his friend Brian Hough. They delivered a "drive-away" car to a company in Eugene and had quite an adventure starting with the negotiations with Al, the owner of the drive-away business, on how many miles they were permitted to drive and still retain their fee. Their first stop was Sterling, Kansas to visit Scott's sister Judith and family, then Ft. Collins,

Colorado to visit Brian's cousins attending Colorado State University, and to Wendover and Winnemucka, Nevada, where they experienced both the highs and lows of gambling. Three weeks after returning home, Scott and his friend Eric Dahlin drove to Camp Nebagamon in Northern Wisconsin near Duluth, Minnesota where Scott was hired as a counselor and head of athletics and Eric as a counselor.

Several of Scott's friends, including Chicago roommate Adam Kaplan, had both attended and served as counselors at the camp. (Adam now owns the camp.) It was a six-day a week job and enrolled kids from third grade through ninth grade As athletic director he was responsible for teaching and coordinating all of the athletic activities, including soccer, lacrosse, basketball, softball, and ultimate frisbee. He was counselor for a cabin full of fifth grade boys. It was an enjoyable summer, especially taking the campers on overnight backpacking and canoe trips. He returned to Portland in September and worked for a trust company, coached an eighth grade basketball team, refereed basketball for the Tualatin Hills Park and Recreation District, and played basketball on a church sponsored team. He and Dave Lambert, a friend and childhood neighbor, shared an apartment in Southwest Portland.

In January 1994, he was hired as an underwriter by Standard Insurance, a stock life insurance company founded in Portland in 1906. He worked in the group department developing rates based on occupation, age, geographic, and other data and issued policies for group life, short-term disability, long-term disability, and dental policies. He also renewed (or terminated) existing policies. He had to fend off upset sales employees seeking lower rate to close the sale and earn the commission. The job provided good training for the work-a-day world, especially for negotiating and prioritizing information.

In June 1994, Scott, Dave, and his sister Anne spent a weekend camping at Oswald West State Park on the northern Oregon coast. To thwart the chipmunks who were stealing their food, Scott offered to barter firewood for rope with neighboring campers. He wanted to hang a "Bear Bag" (a trick he learned at Camp Nebagamon) to protect his food from the ravenous chipmunks. The neighboring campers were L. J. Zoerink, Courtney Towne, and Melissa Masserant, three Oregon transplants who moved to Portland in February, 1994 after graduating from Colorado State University. By the end of the day Scott convinced Dave to get L. J.'s phone number. Dave agreed after Scott promised he would tell his grandchildren that Dave was responsible for getting their grandmother's phone number for their grandfather. Dave delivered the firewood and convinced the girls to join Scott and Dave's campfire (Anne had gone home). They agreed, and the five of them stayed up late talking around

the campfire.

Scott called L. J. a few days later for a date and their first date was a game of one-on-one basketball (L. J. had attended college on a basketball scholarship). Romantic that he is, Scott defeated her 11-0 and made up for his lack of chivalry by taking her for her first visit to Portland's International Rose Garden. They have been together ever since.

They dated exclusively the following year and Scott introduced L. J. to many Portland area highlights including the Oregon Brewer's Festival, the Oregon Zoo concerts, the Oregon Coast, and strawberry, raspberry, and blueberry picking, a Whipple family tradition. In 1995, he went to her ten year high school reunion in Windsor, Colorado and L. J. entertained him with trips to Colorado Springs, the Air Force Academy, Rocky Mountain National Park, and hikes up Ft. Collins' Horsetooth Mountain. During a trip to Denver, L.J. was reluctant to use a restroom in a place of business she had not patronized. Scott finally convinced her it was no big deal. All she had to do was "blend in" and no one would notice. L. J. reluctantly agreed and after using the restroom they wandered into a meeting hall that welcomed the "The Little People Convention." Since it was impossible for Scott (6'4") and L. J. (6'0") to "blend in" they simultaneously burst into laughter.

Many of Scott's friends had attended law school and they encouraged him to follow their lead. He determined if he became a lawyer he would practice in Portland and that the University of Oregon School of Law in Eugene would be his school of choice. L. J. encouraged this career move and agreed to move to Eugene with Scott. Uncertainty set in and if it hadn't been for L. J.'s insistence that he make up his mind so she could give two weeks notice to her employer, he might not have attended.

They lived in an affordable "dumpy" apartment on W. Eleventh Street in Eugene that was close enough to campus for Scott to bike to school. L. J. worked to support them and Scott borrowed enough money to cover tuition and books. Unlike many other students, they lived frugally, attended varsity football and basketball games, and a Friday night potluck for law students and their significant others.

First semester courses of contracts, civil procedure, torts, criminal law and legal research, and writing were difficult and Scott struggled and wondered if it was worth the effort to stay in school. After learning to separate the wheat from the chaff and realizing it was not necessary to absorb all of the information being presented, he decided it was and did well in all classes including an A+ in contracts. He honed his study skills and he and L. J. developed into a comfortable routine.

He was hired as in intern in the Trial Department of the Oregon Attorney General's office, a job coveted by first year law students, because

jobs were scarce for first year students and because of the practical experience it offered. He car pooled with other law students who worked in the same office and they commuted daily from Eugene to Salem — a two hour round trip. His work was mostly research and writing. At the end of the summer, Scott and L. J. took a week's vacation and visited San Francisco, camped in Redwood National Park, and visited Yosemite National Park with Adam Kaplan and his wife, Stephanie Hansen.

Based on the quality of his work, he was hired to work in the Eugene branch of the AG's office during his second year. Despite the increased work load, he excelled during his second year, earning one A+, three As, and one A- the first semester. By the end of the second year his 2-year cumulative GPA was 3.75, placing him in the upper 10% of the class.

He was hired as a 1997 summer associate in the Portland office of Schwabe Williamson & Wyatt, Oregon's second largest law firm, for $950 a week, a princely sum in Scott's mind. Because of the social activities provided by the firm (softball games, raft trips, parties, etc.), Scott enjoyed the summer despite only being able to spend weekends with L. J. who remained in Eugene working two jobs: lab work for LensCrafters and as a Behavior Specialist for The Child Center assisting at risk youth at school and in the community. He lived with his parents to save money.

In August 1997, he began his third and final year of law school. His favorite class was a prosecution clinic which involved prosecuting cases for the Lane County District Attorney. His first trial, a misdemeanor for unlawful use of a stun gun, lasted two days. A new statute, it was thought Scott was the first person in Oregon to prosecute someone for this violation. He won the case which surprised the District Attorney's staff who didn't believe it was winnable. This result brought him four more misdemeanor trials, winning two (for harassment and statutory rape) and losing two (DUI and Domestic Violence). The latter lasted four days and featured an uncooperative victim.

In December 1997 Scott suggested to L. J. they hike to the top of Eugene's Spencer's Butte, one of their favorite hiking spots. She resisted because it was a cold and wet day. Scott persisted and she eventually agreed, complaining most of the way to the top where Scott got down on one knee and proposed, offering her one of the nine "Betty Boop" plastic rings he had purchased at a Fred Meyer store, and giving her the option of choosing from among the other eight if she didn't like the first ring. Her acceptance led to a busy eight months of finishing law school, studying for and passing the bar exam, planning a wedding and honeymoon, a move to Portland, and finding a more suitable wedding ring.

The Law School Commencement was held at Eugene's Hult Center for the Performing Arts. Scott was one of 181 graduates. He was inducted

into the Order of the Coif, an honor limited to students in the top 10 percent of the class. His 3-year average was 3.75. He also earned a "Criminal Practice Statement of Completion." Following graduation, he accepted a job with Schwabe Williamson & Wyatt at a starting salary of $59,000 plus benefits.

Scott enrolled in a course to prepare for the state bar exam the day after graduation. The curriculum, more intensive than law school classes, lasted most of the summer. It was a two-day exam and his father drove him to the second day where he found a quiet place in a nearby hotel for last minute studying. He arrived at the examination several minutes before the exam and learned he had an "urgent" message and should call his mother immediately. Because of the urgency attached to the message, he made the call only to get a busy signal. The exam started late giving him time to think about all the horrible things that might have happened and after about 10 minutes he called again and learned the "urgent" call was about someone answering an ad about his for sale car. For the one and only time, he hung up on his mother and ran back to the exam room arriving just before the doors closed and took the exam.

Scott and L. J. were married Friday August 14 1998 at a Willamette Valley Vineyards in Turner, Oregon. His sister Judith, a Presbyterian minister, performed the service. Among the approximately 90 guests for this casual, but very beautiful event were L. J.'s parents, Wayne and Alex, sister Connie, brother David from Ft. Collins, aunt Merna Zoerink from Bellflower, California, and Scott's aunts Pat Drotzman of Yankton, South Dakota and Mary Ann McPherson of Littleton, Massachusetts. Spurning traditional wedding customs, the bride and groom greeted their guests, who had been encouraged to dress casually, and invited them to enjoy wine and cheese prior to the ceremony. The sun set in dramatic fashion over the Willamette Valley as they enjoyed the food, music, and company until late into the evening.

As a wedding gift, Scott's parents gave the newlyweds a week's use of a time share at a resort near Barcelona, Spain. Their five-week honeymoon began in London and included backpacking on Euro Rail to Paris, Versailles, and Chamonix, France, Brugge Belgium, Amsterdam and Haarlem Netherlands, Hall and Venice, Austria, Siena, Cinque Terra, and Florence Italy, Gimmewald and, Zermatt Switzerland, and Madrid and Barcelona, Spain. While their favorites were Cinque Terra, Gimmewald, and Barcelona, they have fond memories of every place visited on their honeymoon.

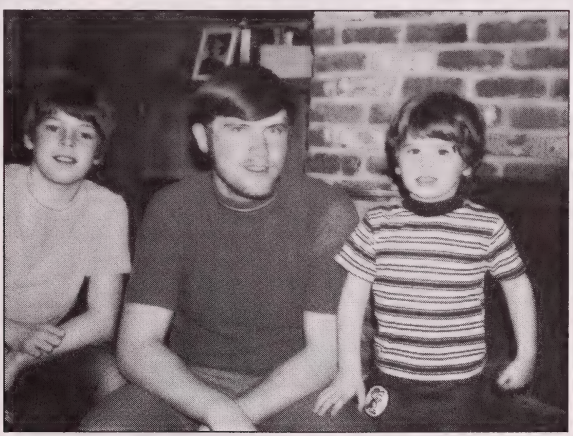
Scott started work at Schwabe Williamson & Wyatt October 1, 1998 and was sworn in to practice in Oregon courts October 3, 1998. Shortly thereafter he was admitted to practice before the U.S. District Court of

Scott at four months.

Grandma Jo Peterson with Scott and Ines

Scott, his grandma Pearl Whipple, and Bob, New Years Day, 1971.

Scott and his mother Ines.



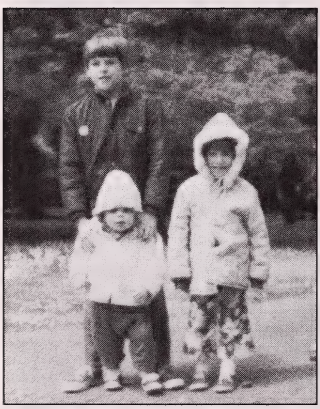
Bob, cousin Mike Drotzman of Yankton, S. Dak, and Scott.

Photos courtesy,
Blaine Whipple

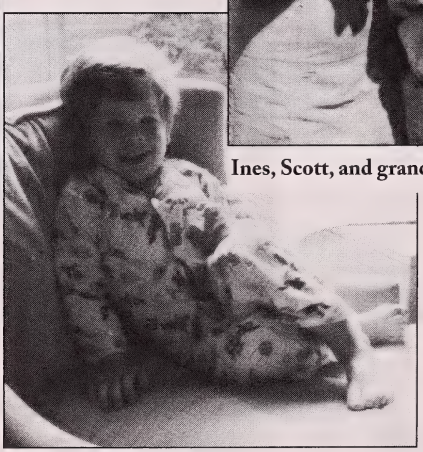
Scott with his parents, Blaine and Ines, at Tolovana Inn on the 4th of July.

Scott, Ines, Grandma Pearl, Aunt Mary Ann and Uncle Bill McPherson of Littleton Mass.

Ines, Scott, and grandma Pearl Whipple.



Bob, Scott, and cousin Molly Jasperson of Appleton, Minn. at Newport, Ore.



Scott on Fathers Day 1971.

Scott's Grinnell College graduation, Grinnell, Iowa, May 1990. L to R: His mother Ines, Scott, his aunt Elaine and cousin Susan West of Mt. Vernon, Iowa.

BreAnna Steele with aunt L. J. Whipple.

Scott's Sunset High School Graduation Picture, 1986.

Photos courtesy, Blaine Whipple

Bob and Scott, May 1970 at Deschusetts River Ranch, Bend, Ore.

L. J. and Scott at their wedding Aug. 14, 1998.

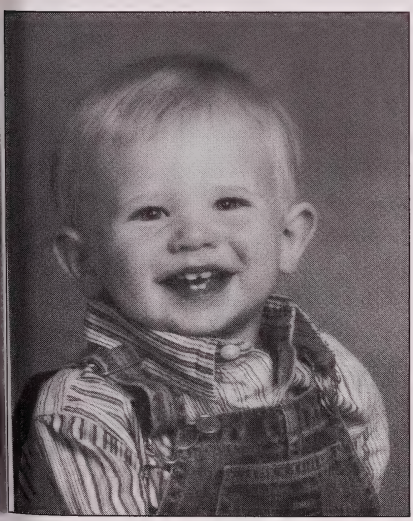
L. J., Ines, and Scott at their wedding.

L to R: parents Wayne and Alex, siblings Connie and David, and aunt Merna Zoerink.

Spencer with grandpa Blaine Whipple on the Fourth of July.

Spencer Whipple shortly after his birth is already a fan of the U. of Oregon sports teams.

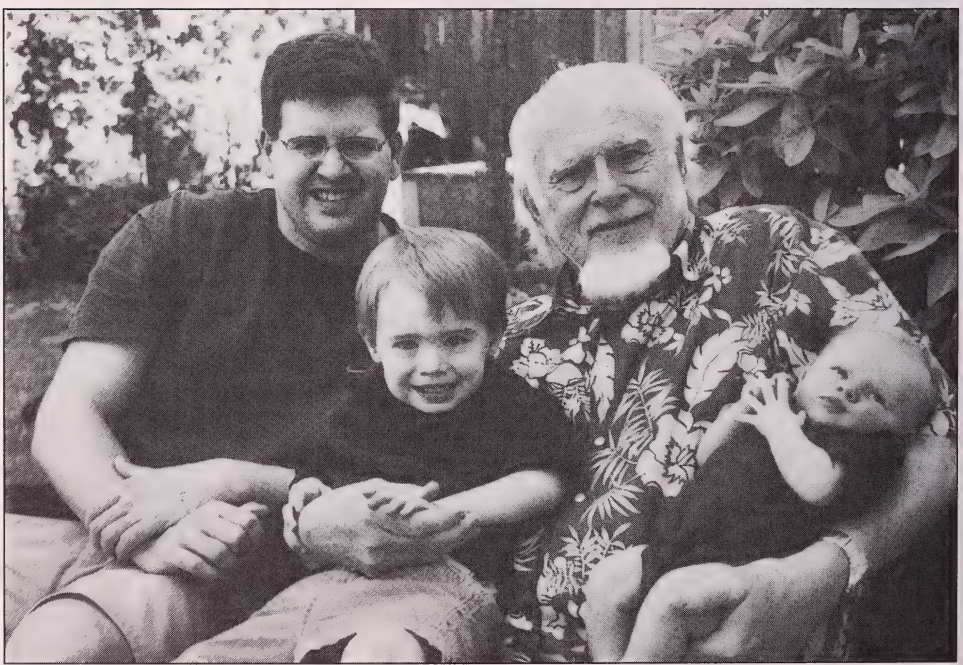
Photos courtesy,
Blaine Whipple



Turner Whipple, January 2006.

Turner and Spencer Whipple on Turner's third birthday.

Grandma Ines Whipple with Spencer and Turner on the Janzen Beach Merry-go-round in Portland.



Three generations of Whipple men: Scott, Spencer, grandpa Blaine, and Turner.

Photos courtesy, Blaine Whipple

Oregon and the U.S. Ninth Circuit Court of Appeals. He worked in the Complex Litigation group, a collection of experienced attorneys whose areas of expertise did not fit the firm's established groups. He was assigned to work on business, securities, and tort litigation. One of his first assignments was a class action lawsuit filed against a national drug company. This assignment took him on research trips to Houston, Texas and Washington, D.C. When the "Complex Litigation" group was eliminated, he was assigned to the Employment group. He passed the Washington State bar exam in February 1999 and was admitted to practice law in Washington in the Spring.

Scott and L. J. shared a home near the campus of Lewis & Clark College with Eric Dahlin who had recently purchased it. Eventually the time came to purchase their own home and they bought a 1972 white colonial two-story house at 12155 NW McDaniel Road in the Bluffs neighborhood in Cedar Mill, an unincorporated area of Washington county with a Portland address. The purchase – it cost $194,950 — was made possible by a generous gift from Scott's mother used to increase the down payment and reduce the mortgage payments. The four-bedroom house with approximately 1,908 square feet of living space needed a cosmetic upgrade and they spent many weekends stripping wallpaper and painting, redoing the yard, and hired contractors to replace flooring, molding, and to remove a wall to expand the kitchen area. During this time they also spent two-week visiting Grand Teton and Yellowstone National Parks and L. J.'s parents in Ft. Collins.

Scott's working responsibilities steadily increased and he was given more court cases than his contemporaries. He was a "second chair" on a major elections law case in 1999 and in the summer of 2000, his second year of practice, he mediated a major class action securities litigation lawsuit which was settled for $9.5 million dollars. The mediation was in Maui and he and L. J. spent several days following the mediation snorkeling, hiking, driving to the top of Mt. Kahalawai, driving the Hana highway, and attending a luau.

When they learned in the summer of 2001 that L. J. was pregnant, they invited Scott's parents for dinner, supposedly to celebrate Libby's 3rd birthday (their dog purchased from the Oregon Humane Society in December 1999, for L. J.'s 33rd birthday). At desert time, L. J. produced a cake decorated with rattles and other baby items and the word "Congratulations" which prompted his parents to ask if Libby was pregnant. After a few laughs, they reminded his parents Libby had been spayed and this was their way of informing them to expect grandchild number five.

With a child on the way, Scott and L. J., recognizing that future travels would be limited, and with the doctor's approval, went a three-week trip

through Denmark, Sweden, and Norway, countries they had missed on their honeymoon. Copenhagen, their first stop, was a delightful introduction to Denmark, home of Scott's great grandfather, Peter T. Peterson. From Copenhagen they took a ferry to Aeroskubing on the island of Aero where they met Peter and Bridgette Nielsen who entertained them and introduced them to the local culture. Because of her pregnancy, L. J. missed sampling the local brews and had to watch as Scott and Peter tried to outdo the other in enjoying each beverage being served at a concert to benefit the island's high school athletic teams.

They entrained to Kalmar, Sweden where they visited Kalmar Castle, then on to Stockholm where, among other things, they explored the nooks and crannies of the city's old section known as Gamla Stan. In Norway they visited fjords, Bergen where they learned about the Hanseatic[6] period, and Oslo where L. J. became enamored with Vigeland Sculpture Park which features 212 bronze and granite sculptures by Gustav Vigelund. She hopes to return someday to explore it more thoroughly.

A couple of days after their return in early August, L. J. learned that her cervix was dilated, creating a significant risk of pre-term delivery. It was the only prenatal doctor visit Scott did not attend and late that afternoon he received her call advising him to immediately come to St. Vincent's Hospital where she was hooked up to a number of monitors that were tracking their unborn son's heart rate and other vital signs. They were informed of the risks of pre-term delivery including undeveloped lungs and a host of health problems. The doctor ordered bed rest for L. J., limiting her time out of bed to showers, eating, and the toilet.

It was a trying time and neither slept well. Scott busied himself keeping the house orderly and preparing it for the newborn's arrival, a job she had looked forward to after returning from Scandinavia. It was October 13, before she could resume normal activities and she started by walking around a school track. By then they were seriously considering names with Spencer at the head of the list. It came from Spencer's Butte where they were engaged.

On Sunday evening October 14, L. J. started to feel uncomfortable. Scott offered to stay home Monday but she insisted there was nothing to worry about. He took her to the hospital late Monday afternoon where she told the nurse she didn't feel well. The nurse determined, confirmed by the doctor, that she was in labor and she was immediately transferred to the maternity ward where they discussed names in earnest. They settled on Spencer because it sounded right and had a special meaning in their life. L. J. agreed to Autzen, after the University of Oregon's football stadium, as a middle name, but after some serious consideration, Scott decided he didn't want his first born son named after a football stadium.

They settled on Blaine, in honor of his father and grandfather.

Later that evening after one of her periodic checks, the nurse noted the baby's heart rate was dipping and determined it was time to start pushing. However, the doctor was busy delivering another baby so the nurse instructed Scott to help during labor. Squeamish Scott told the nurse his role was to provide comfort to L. J. while remaining firmly planted at the head of the bed. The nurse insisted so he pushed against her leg as she was pushing out and strapped an oxygen mask on her between pushes. The doctor and a team of nurses arrived before the birth and relieved him of helping to bring Spencer into the world.

Spencer was born at approximately 10:15 p.m. Monday, October 15, 2001. L. J. went from an intense physical condition to a peaceful state and Scott didn't know whether he should remain with her or go to Spencer, who was being cleansed and weighed. He said he felt like he was part of a movie scene waiting for the director to yell "Cut!" L. J. told him to go to Spencer and when he held him for the first time, the emotion of holding a healthy baby boy after the months of worrying caused him to cry. The doctor and nurses were concerned he would drop Spencer but he convinced them otherwise and he delivered Spencer to his mother.

Spencer was colicky and had difficulty eating and on December 26 the frenulum on his tongue was clipped to solve the problem.[7] L. J. was primarily responsible for Spencer's care. Scott took the 5:00 a.m. feeding and read Spencer the *Oregonian* sport's page, indoctrinating him with the love of Duck (U. of Oregon) football and basketball. He grew into an easy going child who loved to play with cars, trucks and trains. He also loved going to grandpa and grandma Whipple's "beach house" (the Tolovana Inn) at Cannon Beach and took a special liking to the Wiggles, an Australian band known worldwide for its children's albums, videos, television series and concert appearances. Spencer was a late talker and at 2 1/2 started seeing a speech therapist. However, once he started, like his father at the same age, it was difficult to shut him up.

L. J. decided to remain at home and become a full time mom. Schwabe continued to assign Scott high profile cases including a securities class action lawsuit that required to him to spend research time in Rochester, New York on several occasions. They continued to work on house projects, attended all Duck football home games, and activities that Spencer enjoyed, such as the Oregon Zoo, Oregon Museum of Science and Industry (OMSI),[8] a train ride with Thomas the Train, and attending a Wiggles concert.

They celebrated their five year anniversary at the Grand Lodge in Forest Grove, L. J.'s first night away from Spencer. It was an enjoyable evening listening to music, chatting with other guests, and relaxing. It

also resulted in the conception of their second son, a welcome anniversary gift.

In October 2003, they visited Maine and New Hampshire to see the fall colors. Their four-day itinerary included Portland, Bar Harbor, and Acadia National Park, Maine and Mt. Washington and Portsmouth New Hampshire. They visited the Moffatt-Ladd House in Portsmouth. It was the home of General William Whipple, and his wife Catharine Moffatt. General Whipple and Scott were distant cousins. He was a New Hampshire signer of the Declaration of Independence. Spencer stayed with L. J.'s parents in Ft. Collins and on their return to Denver, they watched L. J.'s alma mater, the Colorado State University Rams football team, defeat the Fresno State Bulldogs.

On one of his trips to Houston to work on a class action case, he met Jeffrey Patterson, an attorney from Columbia, South Carolina. Both football fans, they argued about the strength of the Pacific 10 Conference compared to the Southeastern Conference football programs. In October 2003, Patterson invited Scott to South Carolina for a long football weekend watching the LSU Tigers defeat the South Carolina Gamecocks. That began a tradition of annually attending a college football game. Jeff attended the 2004 Oregon-Arizona State game in Eugene. The Ducks lost. In 2005, they met in Lincoln, Nebraska and watched the Oklahoma Sooners defeat the Nebraska Cornhuskers. In 2006, they were in Tallahassee, Florida when the Boston College Eagles beat the Florida State Seminoles. It was the fourth consecutive game lost by the home team, causing them to conclude they were a curse to the home team.

The doctor ordered bed rest for L. J.'s second pregnancy but this time it was closer to the due date. Bed rest with a 2-year-old was a challenge and Scott's working hours were revised to early in the morning and late in the evening making it possible for him to care for Spencer during his waking hours and insuring L. J. remained off of her feet. Alex, L. J.'s mother, came from Ft. Collins to help with Spencer and the household chores.

The Willamette Valley Vineyards where Scott and L.J. were married was in Turner, Oregon and Scott thought it would be a good name if they had another boy. L. J. prepared a list of other possible names but by the time of the birth, they had settled on Turner. Autzen was again considered as the middle name but the initials T. (and) A. ended that possibility. They settled on Collins in honor of Ft. Collins, where L. J.'s family lived and where she attended Colorado State University.

Turner Collins Whipple was born about 1:30 a. m. May 8, 2004. There were no complications and he was relatively easy to care for. Spencer, for the most part, was a loving big brother (sharing some toys was difficult)

and as Turner grew older, he wanted to do what Spencer did. Turner was an early walker and often pushed Spencer on a tricycle while learning to walk. The family routine included hikes, home improvement projects, zoo and OMSI visits, Duck home football games, berry picking, and holiday family get-togethers.

The year 2005 turned into a travel year for the Whipple family. L. J. took the boys to Windsor, Colorado for her 20th year high school reunion. In August Scott took Spencer to Minnesota for his uncle Dick Whipple's Memorial service. It was his first return to Minnesota since November 1989. The family spent a long weekend in Seattle, traveling by Amtrak and in November vacationed a week with Scott's parents at their Escondido time share near San Diego. They visited the San Diego Zoo, the Wild Animal Park, Sea World, Legoland, and took a duck boat tour of the harbor. Spencer fell in love with all things Lego and with help from his Dad has built emergency vehicles, construction vehicles, cranes, trains, and airplanes. Turner soon got the Lego craze and the two of them have a large collection.

At the end of 2005, Scott and ten other associates applied for partnership at Schwabe Williamson & Wyatt. He was one of two selected and was made a non-equity partner in February 2006. That year the family started thinking about a larger house with more yard space for the boys and dog to play. In May, while walking the neighborhood, L. J. noticed a house for sale three blocks from their home. They made an appointment to tour it. It was ranch style with daylight basement, 3,204 square feet, four bedrooms, three baths, large party room, two fireplaces, and a backyard large enough for two boys and a dog. While Scott was talking to the Realtor, Spencer ran up the stairs and exclaimed: "I love this house. Can we buy it?" The asking price was $538,000. They offered $515,000 which was accepted and they closed in June.

Built in 1976, it needed some upgrading so they repainted the main level and replaced doors and molding before moving into 12395 NW Big Fir Circle, Portland, Oregon 97229. After moving, they sold their original house for $368,000, an appreciation of $173,050.

While enjoying his work, Scott wanted to learn the business side of the law practice but his employer was only interested in his legal abilities. The long hours took precedence over family and he was skeptical about promotion to a full equity partner because the number of billable hours he had to work for clients of the partners restricted his ability to develop his own book of business and the hourly rate ($285) priced him out of the market of most individuals and small businesses he was likely to represent. So in late December 2006, Scott and L. J. met with Dan Duyck (another attorney at Schwabe) and his wife Kara, also a full time mother of two

young boys, to discuss the prospects of forming their own firm. While it was difficult to leave the stability offered by Schwabe, they decided it was the best decision for their families and gave Schwabe notice. They opened the law firm of Whipple & Duyck, P.C. February 19, 2007 with offices at 1500 SW First Avenue, Suite 883, in downtown Portland. They specialize in business, commercial, tort and construction litigation. The amount of business generated by July 2007 indicates the new firm will be successful.

On New Year's eve of 2006, the Whipples went to OMSI to see an exhibit on "Star Wars." Spencer was entranced and his parents added several Star Wars ships to his Lego collection. His dad read all six Star Wars episodes to him. Turner soon joined the Star Wars cult and the two of them often engage in light sabre fights and pretend to be Luke Skywalker, Yoda, R2-D2 and other Star Wars characters.

Both boys are active in the Tualatin Hills Park and Recreation District programs, including swimming and other classes. Spencer plays on T-Ball and soccer teams and Turner attends classes for his age level. Spencer attended Little Apollos pre-school and will attend kindergarten at Cedar Mill Elementary School in the fall of 2007. The Beaverton School District will open a new school a few blocks from the Whipple home in the fall of 2008 where Spencer will attend grades 1-5. Turner enters Little Apollos in the fall of 2007.

LORNA JO ZOERINK

Lorna Jo weighed 8 pounds and was 21" long at birth. The family lived in Downey, California until December 1971 when they moved to Greeley, Colorado and lived in a house adjacent to a big hilly park which was great for sledding and kite flying. She attended Madison Elementary school, walking the nine blocks each way. Her first day of kindergarten was notable for winning a first place ribbon in the 50 yard dash wearing a long skirt. Ear infections in 1973-74 which antibiotics were unable to control caused her to miss a lot of school until tubes to facilitate draining were inserted in her ears in 1974. The family joined the Christian Reformed Church where she attended Sunday school and catechism classes.

Her father went to work for the Eastman Kodak Company in Windsor, a small town about 20 miles east of Greeley, where she entered 6th grade. She was taller than most of the students in middle and high school and played basketball and ran the mile in track at Middle school. Her best time in the mile was 6 minutes and 20 seconds.

She continued playing basketball in high school and added volleyball and summer softball to her sports activities. During her junior and senior

years, she earned $5 an hour as a painter. Her boss, Don Billings, was flexible and scheduled her working hours to conform to school and sports obligations. She was 5'11" by her senior year, captain of the basketball team, led the team in points and rebounds, and was named to the All-conference team. She grew an inch+ taller after high school.

She received a partial basketball scholarship at Colorado Northwestern Community College in Rangely which made it possible for her to attend college since she was responsible for all college costs. She was team captain for both years and the coach used her as a liaison with team members when there were problems. Beginning in college she was called L. J. which team mates turned into Little J to compliment point guard, Kaye Madden, who they called Big K. Following an intramural volleyball game, the coach asked her to try out for team which resulted in a full scholarship her second year. She lead the league in blocks the year she played.

Following her freshman year she got a summer job at Eastman Kodak working in the dark room packing x-ray film. She worked a different shift each week, one in the middle of the night. But the money was good and helped make college possible. She was awarded an Associate of Arts degree from CNCC in 1987 and spent the summer in Ft. Collins where her parents had moved in 1986. She entered Rocky Mountain College in Billings Montana that fall on a basketball scholarship and left after one semester as the scholarship wasn't large enough to cover expenses. She was in the best shape of her life caused by the two a day work outs.

She returned to Ft. Collins and worked for the T. J. Maxx clothing store where she quickly learned the retail business and was promoted to lead position of housewares. She was often employee of the month and received several monthly awards for her end cap design[9] to stimulate housewares sales. She wanted to return to college and since Colorado State University was in Fort Collins, she decided to enroll. In order to afford the cost, she had to earn more than T. J. Maxx paid so she quit and became a waitress at the Black-Eyed Pea. Its policy was to work with student schedules and its greater earning potential made it possible to meet school and living expenses. She started at $2.35 an hour plus tips and was soon advanced to head trainer and bartender at $5.25 and hour plus tips. She lived in an apartment a block from the campus and became a mountain bike enthusiast, riding to work, around town with friends, and off road riding in the foothills when possible.

Through her studies at Colorado State, she did an internship with the Ft. Collins Family Services, facilitating supervised visits for family members, leading social skills classes for at risk children, and working with a single mother to ensure she was getting the available public services she

needed. She also volunteered at a crisis hotline several times a year. She was graduated from Colorado State in 1993 with a Bachelor of Science degree in Human Development and Family studies.

After graduation she hoped to move to Seattle and along with close friends Melissa Masserant and Courtney Towne, who she worked with during her internship, went on a graduate school visitation trip to the Pacific Northwest. Melissa and Courtney fell in love with Portland and L. J., disappointed they didn't choose Seattle, decided Portland would do. They arrived in the Rose City in February 1994 where she worked for TeleCheck,[10] setting up check reading machines and training new customers. Their customers were statewide so she quickly learned her way around Portland and the state.

Four months after moving to Portland, the three of them were camping at Oswald State Park where they met Scott. After about a year of dating, Scott enrolled in law school after L. J. offered to support him. TeleCheck gave her a promotion and the opportunity to work from their Eugene home.

After a year, L. J. decided she wanted to work in her field and became a Behavioral Specialist with The Child Center, a day treatment center. She mentored children in many families, a single mom struggling with behavior issues in her young children, and taught social skill classes at Willagillespie Elementary School, working with children from kindergarten to fifth grade. She loved working with the kids, watching them grow, even excelling despite their difficult lives. To make ends meet, she got a second job at LensCrafters as a retail associate, later as a lab technician making glasses. Despite two jobs, she found time to attend most of the Duck basketball and football games with Scott.

Upon their return to Portland, she was hired as a teacher's assistant in the special education classes in elementary schools in Portland Public Schools. She worked as a substitute until offered a full time position at Jason Lee Elementary school. She worked in the classroom for three years and to further her goal of becoming a licensed teacher, enrolled in advanced educational classes at Portland State University. She quit her job and the classes after becoming pregnant with Spencer.

1. Indian Guides, a YMCA sponsored program, was developed for parents and a child (kindergarten to third grade) to share activities together – games, crafts, hikes, and campouts. The tribe is the basic organizational unit with tribal meetings usually held monthly in different homes. One parent is selected chief and various tribal offices delegated to the parents and kids. Tribes hold induction ceremonies that emphasize the importance of the parent/child relationship.
2. Carew played for the Twins 1967-1978, California Angels 1979-1985. He was American League Rookie of the Year in 1978, Most Valuable Player in 1977, and an All-Star for 18 years. He had 3,053 career hits and his 7 batting titles are surpassed only by Ty Cobb, Tony Gwynn, and Honus Wagner. He hit over .300 in 15 consecutive seasons and earned a .328 lifetime average. He was elected to the Baseball Hall of Fame in 1991 receiving 90.52% of the ballots. Reggie Jackson was a Hall of Fame Teammate.
3. The 1976-77 NBA season started with the merging of the ABA into the NBA. Portland acquired Maurice Lucas in the dispersal draft and Philadelphia signed ABA All-Star and 3-time MVP Julius "Dr. J" Erving who had taken the New York Nets to the ABA title the previous year. Philadelphia's record (50-32) was the best in the East. Portland, ranked third in the West, had its first winning season (49-33), first appearance in the finals, and won the Western Conference by sweeping the mighty Los Angeles Lakers and league legend Kareem Abdul-Jabbar 4-0. The finals match up featured Substance vs. Style. The 76ers were a team of flashy individuals such as Dr. J and George McGinnis and the Blazers were the traditional "team first" lesser known players led by center Bill Walton.
4. *The Muppet Show* and *Sesame Street*. The Muppets are a group of puppets and costume characters created by Jim Henson. The terms is both an informal name and legal trademark. Muppets are distinguished from ventriloquist "dummies" which are typically animated only in the head and face. Muppets are typically made of softer materials and are presented as being independent of the puppeteer who was usually hidden behind a set or outside the camera frame.
5. "Sunset breaks Lakeridge win streak," Joe Petshow, *Valley Times*, Beaverton, Oregon. Sunset lit up its home field against Lakeridge and broke the Pacer's 29-game regular-season win streak and avenged a 25-3 playoff loss at the hands of Lakeridge in last season's state semifinals. "Our defensive front played well," Sunset coach Ron Linehan said. Needham had two sacks in the second half and along with Dave Pollin and Scott Whipple pressured the opposing quarter-back Jason Palumbis, most of the night. "We'd just go all out for the passer," Whipple said of the defensive line instructions. Whipple followed an 11-yard Needham sack of Palumbis late in the third quarter with a hit on the Pacer quarterback that caused him to throw the ball straight down.
6. Hanseatic is of the hanse of the towns that formed it. Hance is a medieval guild of merchants formed to promote and protect the economic interests of the town.
7. The frenulum is a piece of tissue that attaches the tongue to the floor of the mouth. It is usually a small attachment but Spencer's attachment extended all the way to the front of his tongue making it impossible for him to stick out his tongue and impeded his ability to eat.
8. OMSI is a two-story museum with hands-on exhibits that operates the largest science museum outreach program in the U. S. Its Science Playground, the early education hall, is designed for families with newborn to six-year old children. The area is

fully enclosed and designed to keep children visible and secure while giving them freedom to explore at will. A variety of experimental stations encourage the natural curiosity of young visitors and builds their developmental skills, promotes endless investigation, surprise, and enlightment. It includes a stimulating infant area with a gigantic sandbox; a water area, a reading area, and physical science exhibits. The *Animal Secrets* exhibit allows children and parents to explore the hidden habitats and secret lives of forest animals as they crawl through the roots of the giant Discovery Tree, find creatures that live in caves, burrow into a chipmunk den, play in a woodland stream, and be a naturalist for a day. The Discovery Lab offers ever-changing experiments and activities such as exploring Flubber or ice cube painting and its Discovery Drawers encourage parents to take the lead as their child's "first teacher" when they explore and learn about the contents together.

9. An end cap design was an arrangement at the beginning of a row to highlight the various products in that row and to stimulate sales of same.
10. TeleCheck was a company that sold a software program to businesses who accepted payment by check. The software verified the risk of accepting the check.

HISTORY APPENDIX

APPENDIX 1

Whipple English Records 1397-1663 958

APPENDIX 2

Will of Matthew Whipple of Ipswich, Mass. 1016
Inventory of Matthew Whipple Estate 1017
Sale of Matthew Whipple's Home to John Annibal 1019
Will of Jonathan Whipple of Westborough, Mass. 1020
Will of Francis Whipple of Westborough, Mass. 1022

APPENDIX 3

The Whipple Flag 1025
The Whipple Museum of the History of Science 1027

APPENDIX 4

Whipple Soldiers and Sailors in the Revolutionary War 1032
Massachusetts 1032
New Hampshire 1049
Vermont 1057
Rhode Island 1061
Connecticut 1064
Virginia 1065
Biography of General William Whipple of N.H. 1067
Biography of Commodore Abraham Whipple of R.I. 1075

APPENDIX 5

Ancestors of Spencer B. and Turner C. Whipple 1096

APPENDIX 6

Historical Origin of the Coats of Arms 1128

APPENDIX 7

Dates, Names, and Relationships 1133
Common or Cannon Law Relationship Chart 1137

APPENDIX 8

Which John Whipple Is Your Ancestor? 1140
Biography of "Elder" John Whipple of Ipswich, Mass. 1141
Biography of Captain John Whipple of Providence, R.I. 1166

APPENDIX 9

Some Whipples Who Have Been Published 1189

APPENDIX 10

Proposed Ancestors of Matthew Whipple of Bocking, England 1208

APPENDIX ONE

WHIPPLE ENGLISH RECORDS

This appendix includes English records searched in an effort to discover the parentage of Matthew Whipple, the elder, a Clothier, of Bocking, County Essex England, and of Capt. John Whipple of Dorchester, Massachusetts and Providence, Rhode Island. The first part of the appendix deals with Matthew, the second with John. The information is included to induce future researchers of the Whipple families to concentrate on new sources of information rather than duplicate what is already known.

Hardy & Page, record researchers of London, were employed in 1914 by Charles Deering of Chicago to find the antecedents of his wife, Marion Denison Whipple, a descendant of Matthew Whipple. The Matthew Whipple information is excerpted from *Abstracts of English Records, Gathered Principally in Devonshire and Essex,* a book privately published (150 copies) in 1929 in Boston. It was edited by Mary Lovering Holman and George R. Marvin, M.A.

The book was not copyrighted because the editors "desired that the material... be freely used..." The Oregon State Library at Salem has copy No. 72. Call numbers: GS 929.2 D34.

English records for this period contain the following spelling variations of the name Whipple: Whiple, Whipp, Whippe, Whippill, Whipples, Whippul, Whippull, Whippyll, Whitell, Whittell, Whittle, Why__, Whyple, Whyppell, Whyppill, Whypple, Whyppull, Whyppyl, Whyppyle, Whyppyll, Whyppylle, Whypull, Whypyll, Whytell, Whytle, Wibell, Wippell, Wippill, Wipple, Wipples, Wivell, Wyphyll, Wypple, Wyppull, Wyppyll, Wyppull, Wyppyll, Wyppylle, Wytill, Whappill, Whelple, Whelppeley, Whepoelle, Whepells, Whepill, Whepille, Whepilles, Wheple, Wheples, Wheppell, Whepple, Wheppyl, Whepull, Whepyl, Whepyll, Wepell, Weppull, Wepull, Wepyll, Whatell, Whapells, Whaple, Whaples, Whaplet, Whaplett, Whapole, Whappell, Whappells, Warpell, Warple, Waupoull, Wauppoull, Waypole, Waypoole, Waapulls, Walbe, Walepell, Walple, Walpole, Walpoole, Wapell, Waple, Waples, Wapolle, Wapoole, Wappell, Wapple, Wapples, Wappoll, Wappoull, Wappull, Wapull, Wapulls.

LONDON

LONDON, ST. MARGARET'S WESTMINSTER. p. 548,

1540	Sept 21.	Margaret Wapull, buried.
1588/9	Jan. 7.	Elizabeth Waple, buried.

LONDON, ST. PETER'S CORNHILL. p. 549.

1557	June 27.	Hilary Wapolle married Joan Garret.

LONDON, ST. MICHAEL, CORNHILL. p. 548.

1563.	Sept 8.	William Wapell, buried.

LONDON, ST. OLAVE, HART STREET. p. 549.

1578	Oct. 10.	Thomas, a boy servant with Edward Wapple, died of the plague.
1579	Aug. 26.	Fulgentious, son of Edward Whaple, baseborn.
1579	May 17.	Edward Wappull and Judith Jane, married.
1580/1	Feb. 8.	Jone, daughter of Edward Wappull, cook, baptized.
1581/2	Feb. 27.	Jone, daughter of Edward Wappull, buried.

LONDON, ALLHALLOWS IN THE WALL. pp. 547-8.

1585/6	Jan. 8.	Judith Walple of St. Ethelburgh's, witness to the baptism of Mathew Stevenson, son of James Stevenson.
1588	Apr. 25.	Judith Warple married Thomas Patterson.
1596/7	Feb. 11.	Mary Whippell, widow, aged 43, died of consumption, buried.
1596/7	Feb. 14.	Elizabeth Whippell, daughter of Mary Whipell, deceased widow, buried. Elizabeth, 6, died of consumption.
1608	June 12.	John Whapell married Margaret Ravenscroft.
1615	Oct. 15.	Joyce, daughter of Thomas Whapells, baptized.
1617	Apr. 17.	Thomas, son of Thomas and Blanche Whapells baptized.
1617	Apr. 20.	Thomas, son of Thomas Whapells, buried.

LONDON, ST. MARTINS-IN-THE-FIELDS. p. 548.

1592	June 4.	Joan Waple married John Fletcher.
1603	Nov. 9.	Ellin Waples, buried.

LONDON. ST. BENET PAULS WHARF. p. 548

1622 Nov. 19. George Waple married Phillip Atkinson.

LONDON, ST. BOTOLPH'S BISHOPSGATE. p. 548

1630 July 11. Sara, daughter of Thomas and Susan Wapples, buried.

LONDON, ST. JAMES, CLERKENWELL. [Several Waples and Waapulls mentioned.] p. 548.

COURT OF HUSTINGS, London. 20 Feb, 1385. Will of William Whelple, cordwainer. To be buried in the church of S. Alban, in Wodstrete, near Isabella, his wife. Proved 2 Feb. 1397/8. p. 455.

EARLY CHANCERY PROCEEDINGS. circa 1502-4. Bill addressed to William, Bishop of London. Complaint of John Wyppyll, parson of Rotherfeld. p. 470.

SOMERSET HOUSE. CONSISTORY COURT OF THE BISHOP OF LONDON. 5 Jan. 1503-4 Richard Whipple constitutes Masters Reed, Coplond, Goldsmith, Hardon and Falke to be his proctors in all causes. p. 508.

SOMERSET HOUSE. CONSISTORY COURT OF THE BISHOP OF LONDON. 18 Feb. 1503/4. Whipple v. Bennet. Case of libel [no details]. p. 508.

PREROGATIVE COURT OF CANTERBURY. 4 Aug. 1504. Will of John Wippill, clerk. Desires to be buried in St. Saviour's Monastery, Bermondsey. His sister Alice was mentioned. His estate included books. Bequeaths were made to the Church of Hornsey, in the Diocese of London, to St. Botulph's Billingsgate, to the Church of Rotherfylde. Proved 15 Oct. 1504 p. 455.

ECCLESIASTICAL COMMISSIONERS DOCUMENTS. Court Books of Divers Manors. June 1507. Court General of Richard Fitzjames, Bishop of London, held there Saturday before the translation of St. Edward the King. Thomas Whippyll comes and does fealty to the Lord. p. 508.

ECCLESIASTICAL COMMISSIONERS DOCUMENTS. Court Book of Divers Manors. May 1508. Court held there Saturday before Hockday. Thomas Whippyll elected constable. Also mentioned April 1509, June 1509. April 1510, April 1511, October 1512. [Also spelled Whepyll, Wepyll and Whipill in these various documents]. p. 509.

COMMISSARY OF LONDON. Henry VIII. 26 July 1541. Will of Thomas Whipple, citizen and vintner. Mentioned are his brother William, his wife Anne, brother-in-law William Harvye, and the parish church of St. John, in Walbrook, London. Proved 26 Jan. 1541/2. p. 456.

BISHOP OF LONDON'S VISITATION DEANERY OF BARKING. 1544. Berking. Nicholas Whaplett, juror. p. 513.

CHANCERY PROCEEDINGS. Undated, 1558-79. Complaint of William Whypple and Katherine, his wife, only daughter and sole heir of Richard Lloyd, late citizen of London, deceased. The complaint was over lands in the manor of Wem in the county of Shropshire, in Estaston. The Whipples lived "nere 100 miles" from the manor and complained Richard Higginson of Estaston, Thomas Reys, Griffith Healing, and Richard Edwards wrongfully entered into possession of Katherine's property keeping the rents and profits for the past 20 years since her father died. p. 476-7.

CLOSE ROLL. Elizabeth. 5 June 1577. William Whipple, citizen and skinner (Pellipar) of London, acknowledged a debt of £250 to Henry Alward, citizen and painter stainer, and William Browinck, export merchant, both of London. p. 495.

CORAM REGE ROLLS. Elizabeth. 1580-1. John Whipple, skinner and citizen of London, was ordered to pay William Liver of London, gentleman, £16. The obligation dated from 22 November 1579. p. 516.

SOMERSET HOUSE. ARCHDEACONRY OF LONDON. 8 Feb. 1594/5. Administration of the goods of William Whipple of St. Alphage in the city of London granted to Mary Whipple, relict. p. 517.

COMMISSARY OF LONDON. Nuncupative Will. 25 Feb. 1614/15. Joan Whiple. Mentions her uncle John Wilson, draper. p. 463.

COMMISSARY OF LONDON. 24 April 1615. Administration to Margaret Wilcocks, alias Whipple, mother of the said testator. p. 463.

CITY OF LONDON GUILDHALL RECORD OFFICE. 5 July 1627. Orphan's Recognizance. John, Margaret, and Faith, orphans of John Whaples, merchant tailor [?], deceased. Recognizance of Ann Hutworth, Widow, and John Pilkington. William Smith, Fleet Street £140. p. 501.

TOWN DEPOSITIONS. 1650 and 1651. Sibell Waple, haberdasher, aged 60 years, and John Waple, aged 65 or thereabouts, carryer, of St. Brides, alias Bridgetts, London, gave depositions in two suits between Samuel Ebrall and others, complainants, against John Howell, esquire, defendant, of Packwood, Co. of Warwick. pp. 488-9.

MIDDLESEX

TOWN DEPOSITIONS. Elizabeth. Michaelmas 38-39, 1596-7. Alexander Whipple of Lyons Inn, co. of Middlesex, gentleman, aged 20 or thereabouts, gave a deposition in the case between Thomas Gawin, plaintiff, and Francis Roberts, James Scoles, and other, defendants. p. 480.

CAMBRIDGE

DOCUMENTS AT EMMANUEL COLLEGE. CAMBRIDGE. Henry IV. 20 July 1408. John Tynge of Navestoke and John Ferror of Passefeldewode granted 12 acres with houses thereon to Alice, the widow of Richard Smyth of Stondon. The property was on the highway leading from Drewystres to Stondon church on the north. After Alice's death, the property was to go to John Whepyl and Alice his wife, and after their death to their sons and daughters and after the death of all the children of John and Alice to Isabel, the sister of Alice Whepyl, and to her children. p. 587. Edward IV. 18 Aug. 1466; Henry VII, 17 Oct. 1486; 20 Oct. 1486; 30 Dec. 1486; 1 Dec. 1504; and 26 May 1506. All of these documents reference lands of Alice Whepil and John Whepyll. [Also spelled Whepill and Whepyll in the records]. These grants relate to the grant to Alice Smyth, widow, noted on page 4. pp. 587-90.

ESSEX

RAYNE, CO. ESSEX. p. 549.

1602/3 Feb. 1. Margaret Whaples of Much Walton, married William Nevell of Felstead, with licence from Mr. Whitell.

FELSTED, CO. ESSEX. p. 546.

1583	Apr. 7.	John Whaples, son of John Whaples, baptized.
1609	Mar. 27.	William Whaples and Ann Lilson, married.

DOCUMENTS AT EMMANUEL COLLEGE. CAMBRIDGE. 11 Nov. 1446. John Whepyll was a witness to a grant of property from John Smyth of Stondon, co. Essex. to William Edwyn of the same. p. 587.

PATENT ROLLS. Henry VI. 7 July 1450. John Wheypll, smith, and several others, all of Stondon, co. Essex, were pardoned for contempt of the King's estate. Letters of pardon from the chancellor will be issued if requested. p. 501

COURT ROLL. Henry VIII. 1509-46. Rental of the Honour of Clare. Thomas Whippell, for a tenement formerly of Sir Giles Capell, knight. p. 492.

LAY SUBSIDIES. Henry VIII. 22 April 1523. Chelmsford Hundred. Gnyg Hospital [now Ingatestone?]. John Wyppylle, in lands. p. 471.

COURT ROLLS November 1532. Braintree. Court General held on Thursday next before the feast of St. Katherine Henry VIII. Inquisition taken by the oath of Thomas Whepyll, Richard Jerdevyle and others. p. 466.

DUCHY OF LANCASTER. COURT ROLLS. September 1540. Honor of Clare in Essex. Court of the Honor at Stamborn held on Tuesday after the Feast of the Nativity of Mary, the Virgin 32 Henry VIII. Thomas Whyppyll gave to the Lord a fine for having ingress of and in a free tenement with appurtenances, in Brayntry, within the fee of the Lord, the King, which he lately acquired of Sir Giles Capell, knight. pp. 489-90.

DUCHY OF LANCASTER. COURT ROLLS. September 1541. Sandpyttes, Brayntre. Court Leet of the Honor of Clare held on Thursday after the Feast of St. Mathew, the Apostle 33 Henry VIII. To this court came Thomas Whyppyll and others and attorn themselves to the Lady Katherine for all lands and free tenements which they hold. Jury: Thomas Whyppyll and others. The jury elect Thomas Whyppyll to the office of Constable of this vill. p. 490.

DUCHY OF LANCASTER. COURT OF ROLLS. September 1542. Sandpyttes, in Brayntre. Court Leet held there on Wednesday after the Feast of St. Mathew, the Apostle. 34 Henry VIII. Jury: Thomas Whyppyll and others. The jury elect Thomas Whyppyll to the office of Constable of this vill. [Similar entry for Court held 35 Henry VIII.]. Court held 2 Dec. 1545. Thomas Whyppyll, juror. [Does not appear in 36 Henry VIII. p. 490.

LAY SUBSIDIES. Henry VIII. 14 Nov. 1543. Chelmsford Hundred. Broomfield. Joane Whippill, for lands. p. 472.

LAY SUBSIDIES. ESSEX. 1543-45. Hinckford Hundred. Braintree. Thomas Why. p. 472.

LAY SUBSIDIES. Henry VIII. 1544-5. Banghton[?]. Edward Whaplet, lands. p. 472.

LAY SUBSIDIES. ESSEX. Henry VIII. 12 Feb. 1545-6. Branktre. Thomas Whipple, goods. p. 472.

LAY SUBSIDIES. Henry VIII. 1545-6. Chelmsford Hundred. Bromefelde. Joane Whepill, goods. p. 473.

LAY SUBSIDIES. ESSEX. Henry VIII. 16 June 1546. Great Ilford. Nicholas Warpell, goods. p. 473.

LAY SUBSIDIES. ESSEX. Edward VI. 20 April 1547. Chelmsford Hundred. Bromefelde. Joane Whippull, goods. p. 473.

PREROGATIVE COURT OF CANTERBURY. Edward VI. 12 Aug. 1547. Will of Richard Newman of Bocking, co. Essex. States he purchased his property from Thomas Whippull, Thomas Burges, and Thomas Lowe. p. 456.

ARCHDEACONRY OF ESSEX. Edward VI. 14 Mar. 1548/9. Will of Joan Whippull of Broomfilde, in the co. of Essex, widow. Desires to be buried there. Mentioned: her son John; Joan and Roose Laurence. Proved 1549 (day and month not stated) in the parish church of Great Baddowe. p. 457.

DUCHY OF LANCASTER. COURT ROLLS. Mary. 2 April 1554. Court of the Honor of Clare of the Lady Katherine, Queen of England, held at Stamborn, in Le Motehall. To this Court came Richard Newman

and gave to the Lady the Queen, for a fine for having ingress of and in one tenement and one garden, called Thournes, with appurtenances, in Brantrey, within the tithing of the said Lady, the Queen, which he late purchased of Thomas Whyppyl. p. 492.

CLOSE ROLL. 11 Oct. 1554. Thomas Whyppill of Newporte Ponde, co. of Essex, Bladesmythe, son of Thomas Whypyll of Stortford, co. of Hertford, Bladesmyth, deceased, appeared in chancery and acknowledged that he owed John Craythorne, citizen and cutlellar, of London £200 to be paid at All Saints next to come. p. 492.

CHANCERY INQUISITIONS POST MORTEM. SERIES II. Vol. 109. No. 23. 28 Aug. 1556. Inquisition at Chelmsford after the death of Sir Giles Capell, knight. The jurors say that Henry VIII by letters patent 12 March 1538/9 granted to Sir Giles Capell, knight a park, called Bocking Park in the parish of Bocking, co. Essex, and 400 acres of wood and underwood, called Bocking Park, to hold to him and his heirs for ever in his demesne as of fee and of such estate he afterwards died seized.

Further by letters patent dated 37 Henry VIII [1545-6] the King granted him the manor of Stebbing with a park and other premises in Stebbing, to hold for life, with remainder to Sir Henry Capell, knight, son and heir of the same Sir Giles, and his lawful heirs, and for default to Edward Capell, second son of the same Giles and brother of Sir Henry Capell, knight, and his lawful heirs and of such estate the same Sir Giles died seised.

And long before his death a certain Sir William Capell, father of the same Giles, was seised of the manor of Barwick Barnes and other premises in Barwick Barnes, Rothing Abbisse and High Easter and by Charter 1 August 2 Henry VIII [1510] enfeoffed thereof the Archbishop of Canterbury and others to hold to the use of the said Sir William Capell, and his heirs for ever and for the fulfillment of his will, and the said Sir William by his will 1 Sept. 7 Henry VIII [1515] ordained that Margaret Capell, then his wife, should have the said manor for life, with remainder to his son, Sir Giles Capell, knight. After the death of Sir William and Margaret Capell the use of the manor and premises remained to Sir Giles Capell and his heirs male. After the Statute of Uses, the said Sir Giles became seised of the said manor and premises in his demesne as of fee tart, and died seised thereof. Sir Giles was also seised of the manor of Portershall in Stebbing, and other premises there and in Dunmow Priory, Great and Little Saling and of the manor of Little Rayne and of six messuages and other premises in Little Rayne, Bocking, Braintree and Felsted, and of the advowson of Little Rayne and a messuage and lands in

Great Saling. After the death of the said Giles, the said premises descended to Sir Henry Capell as son and heir of the said Giles.

Bocking Park is held of the King and Queen in chief by the tenth part of a knight's fee and is worth by the year clear £1. The manor of Stebbing is held of the same. The manor of Barwick Barnes is held of the same, as of their manor of Pleshy, parcel of the honor of Mandevyle. The manor of Portershall and the premises in Stebbing, Dunmow Prykoryk, Great and Little Saling are in held of the same King and Queen as of the same.

The manor of Little Rayne and the premises there and Bocking, Braintree, and Felsted are held of the same King and Queen as of their manor of Dover. Sir Giles Capell, knight, died 29 May last past and Sir Henry Capell, knight, aged 49, is his son and next heir. pp. 527-9.

CHANCERY INQUISITIONS. POST MORTEM. SERIES II. Vol. 177. No. 72. 29 July 1577. Inquisition at Little Rayne, co. Essex, after the death of Sir Edward Capell, knight. Long before he was seised in his demesne as of fee of the manor of Little Rayne with Rayne Park, now in the occupation of Henry Capell, esquire,, the advowson of Little Rayne, a messuage in Great Saling, Bocking park in the same tenure, the manor of Barwick Barnes with appurtenances there, and in Rothing Abbesse and High Easter, and for the advancement of his then son and heir, the said Henry Capell, as for the jointure of Katherine, wife of the said Honor [?], by his deed 3 Nov. 1561 he enfeoffed John Wentworth, of Bocking, esquire, Giles Capell, gentleman, his second son, John Hammond, and John Churchill, gentlemen, all of the said premises (*inter alia)* to hold to the use of the said Henry Capell for life and then to the use of the said Katherine for life, and after his own death to hold the manor of Little Rayne, etc. and Bocking park, to the use of his own right heirs and to hold other premises to the same use. By virtue of the Statute of Uses the said Henry entered the said premises.

In like manner he held the manor of Porters Hall and other premises. Bocking Park is held of the Queen-in-Chief by the tenth part of one knight's fee. He died 19 March 1576/7. The said Henry Capell, aged 40 years, is his son and next heir. p. 529.

ANCIENT DEEDS. Elizabeth. 18 April 1575. land of John Whipple was mentioned as a reference in a deed to land in Moreton, co. of Essex. pp. 514-15.

COMMISSARY LONDON, ESSEX AND HERTS. 4 Oct. 1576. Will of John Pryor of Brancktrye, co. Essex, yeoman. Mentions Osee Whaples, William Whaples, the younger, Elizabeth Whaples, Pleasance Whaples,

Robert Whaples. William Whaples, the elder, of Little Leighes, co. Essex, yeoman, was named a supervisor of one of his bequeaths. Proved 17 Dec. 1576. p. 522.

ASSIZES. Elizabeth. 3 July 1578. General Sessions at Chelmsford. Thomas Wappell of Stanford le Hope, co. Essex, tailor, to appear before the next Gaol Delivery to answer such matters as shall be objected against him. p. 523.

FEET OF FINES. HERTS. Elizabeth. Easter 1580. Final agreement between Stephen Waypoole, alias Nobbes, purchaser, and Antony Maxey, esquire, and his wife Dorothy, sellers, of land in Little Salyng alias Bardfield Salyng, co. of Essex. Consideration, £100. p. 477.

FEET OF FINES. ESSEX. Final agreement between Robert Whaples, buyer, and Robert and Barbara Myerris, sellers of property in Braintree, co. of Essex. Consideration, f41. p. 482.

DOCUMENT AT EMMANUEL COLLEGE. CAMBRIDGE. Elizabeth. 7 June 1588 and 1 July 1588. Peter Eve of Machinge, co. Essex, and Margaret, his wife, and Laurence Glascock of Southchurch, co. Essex, and Joan, his wife, sold their land and tenements called and known by the name of Whipples Peaches and Edwyns with appurtenances in the parish of Stondon to Sir Walter Myldmaye, knight, one of Her Majesty's Honorable Privie Council. p. 591

ASSIZES. 18 May 1589. Essex. William Whappell was a juror in the inquest at Tollesbury on Joan Knight, aged 11 years, daughter of Isaac Knight, of Tollesbury, fisherman. p. 536.

ASSIZES. 1 March 1595/6. Indictment of Robert Walepell of Lyston, co Essex, labourer and Thomas Luffe of the same, labourer, for stealing at Lyston six yards of cloth, value six shillings, the property of Barnaby Gage. Both confessed and can read. p. 537.

ESSEX GOAL DELIVERY. 15 July 1596. Robert Walpoole found guilty, but has benefit of clergy, is branded on the hands and liberated. Prisoners in Colchester Castle: Robert Waple, Thomas Luffe, Robert Lufe. Committed by Sir Thomas Lucas. p. 537.

CONSISTORY COURT OF LONDON. VICAR GENERAL. 2 April 1596. Administration of goods, etc of Robert Whappells of Margaretting, co. of Essex, intestate, granted to William Whappil [sic], his brother. p. 460.

ARCHDEACONRY OF ESSEX. Elizabeth. 20 May 1597. Will of William Whaples of Margaretting, co. of Essex, yeoman. 20s left to the poor of Much Waltham; mentions his wife Margery and son William. Proved 18 July 1597. p. 460.

ARCHDEACONRY OF ESSEX. Elizabeth. 12 April 1601. Will of William Whaples of Much Waltham, co. of Essex, yeoman. Mentions his wife Margaret, sons William, Robert, who received copyhold lands in Felstead with his mother as guardian until he is 21, and John to receive £100 at age 21; daughter Awdrie. His property in Margetinges, called Ponders, to Margaret after the decease of his mother-in-law, the same to remain to Robert. Also mentioned was cousins Richard Everard of Much Waltham, gentleman, and Anthonie Everard of Waltham, gentleman, and Thomas Everard, the elder, of Much Waltham. Proved 14 Dec. 1602. p. 461.

ASSIZES. February 1607/8. Essex. John Whaples was a bailiff of the Hundreds of Rocheford. p. 538.

ARCHDEACONRY OF ESSEX AND HERTS. AT CHEMSFORD. 20 May 1620. Braintree. Jeremiah Whaples, for that he hath not been at church upon any Sunday at Divine Service or Sermon for the space of a quarter of a year last past and for that he hath not received the Communion this Easter last past. p. 517.

ARCHDEACON'S VISITATION. Braintree. 3 June 1623. Robert Whaples appeared. 14 Oct. 1622. Robert Wheples was churchwarden. Ditto in 1623. 18 Nov. 1632. Elizabeth Whaples of Braintree cited to appear. Dismissed. [The offense is not mentioned.] p. 517.

LAY SUBSIDIES. ESSEX. James I. 20 Oct. 1624. Chemsford Hundred. Margrating. William Whaples, lands. p. 483.

COURT ROLLS OF DUCHY OF LANCASTER. 12 Oct. 1626. Honour of Clare in the County of Essex. Court general held at Stamborne on Thursday after the Feast of St. Dionisius. Mathew Whaples of Braintree makes default. p. 501.

COURT ROLLS OF DUCHY OF LANCASTER. Court held 25 Jan. 1626. Robert Waples of Braintree makes default. p. 501.

PREROGATIVE COURT OF CANTERBURY. 2 July 1627. Will of William Barnard of Branktre, co. of Essex. Robert Whaples of Braintree, clothier, was a witness to the will as well as joint executor. Proved 24 May 1628. p. 464.

ARCHDEACONRY OF ESSEX. Margettinge. Agnes Whaples, deceased. Goods valued at £29. p. 467.

ARCHDEACONRY OF ESSEX. Probate and Administration Act. c. 1627. William Whaples, deceased. Mentions his relict, Anne. p. 467.

COMMISSARY COURT OF THE BISHOP OF LONDON. 17 February 1640-41. William Whaples of the parish of St. Giles Colchester, co. of Essex, where he has dwelt for four years and before in the parish of St. Bottolphs Colchester for eight years, aged 40, being born at Tolshurst Beckingham, deposed in the will of Richard Halstone that he, William, went to the house of Halstone and while there Ann Whaples, daughter of the testator, asked him whether he would alter his former will and he answered that he wished to. By this will he made Peter Whaples sole executor. p. 518

EXCHEQUER DEPOSITIONS. JAMES II. 15 April 1686. Deposition taken at the "Bell" in Chelmesford, co. of Essex. Thomas Whaples of Much Waltham, co. of Essex, yeoman, aged 63 years and upwards, deposes that he had lived in Much Waltham the "greatest part of his time" and has owned a field of plough there for 40 years. p. 468.

* * *

Thomas Whepill of Stortford, Hertford County, was involved in land transactions with Sir William Capell, knight, as early as 1515.[1] Many Whipple families lived in Suffolk and Norfolk counties but apparently none of these ancient families migrated to the American colonies. Consequently, minimal research has been done on these other Whipple-Whaples families and a dedicated researcher might find a link to young John and Matthew, Sr.

Research in Norfolk could be fruitful as the family was prominent in Dickleborough. Henry Whipple, gentleman, birth date unknown but probably circa 1510, buried March 31, 1585, is the progenitor. He married at

least twice, first to Margaret, daughter of William Aldeham of Brame in Suffolk. Their known children are Margaret, Anne, William, born ca 1534, Thomas born ca 1536, and John baptized August 18, 1540. His second wife was Elizabeth, daughter of Edward Rowse (Rowze) of Crasford in Suffolk.[2] They had daughters Elizabeth and Julyan (Julian, Jewlyan). Elizabeth was the widow of Thomas Asheley when she married Henry. Her will, dated August 16, 1558, directs that she be buried in Dickleborough and that all lands, etc, held in her right in Westerfilde, Suffolk and a messuage, etc. in the parish of St. Mary Tower in Yppswyche (Ipswich) were to go to her husband, Henry.

Henry was a man of means, acquiring land in Dickleborough in 1534 from Thomas and Margaret Browne for 40 marks of silver, 66 acres in Pyrlyston (Byllyngforth) from Robert Frense and John and Joan Munforth in 1537 for 100 marks of silver, and 356 acres in the Manor of Baconys and in Dickleborough, Tyvetsale, Shymplyng, Rusale, and Pulham St. Magdalene in 1538 from Sir John Shelton, knight, The consideration was 40 marks of silver. In May 1539, he and John Fellaw of Norwich, gentleman, jointly purchased lands in Sterston from John Pykarell of Dickleburgh. The size and value is unknown. This land was for the use of Pykarell and Anne, his wife. Anne is presumed to be Henry's daughter.

Ann(e)[2] Whipple (Henry[1]) married 13 May 1549 in Dickleborough William Herynge of Eye, Co. Suffolk. Anne may have married first John Pykarell of Dickleborough.

Margaret[2] Whipple (Henry[1]) married Isaack Preston of Thelveton, son of Thomas Preston. Children:

i. Thomas, baptized 9 September 1558.
ii. Thomas, baptized 8 May 1559.
iii. Thomas, baptized 12 May 1650, twin.
iv. Isaac, baptized 12 May 1650, twin.

William[2] Whipple (Henry[1]) born ca 1534 in Dickleborough, buried 15 October 1608 in Dickleborough; married (1) Ann, daughter of Nicholas Thurston (Thurstan) of Hoxston, widow of John Derowe; (2) Katherine, daughter of _____ Lloyde of London. He was called gentleman.

Children of William and Katherine:

+ i. Ann, baptized 8 December 1575.
ii. Elizabeth, baptized 21 January 1577-8.
iii. Mary, baptized 17 February 1587-8.

In July 1563, William and others lent £850 on lands in Chickering Hamlet in the parish of Hoxne, Suffolk. He and Thomas Chittocke, husband of his sister Julyan, acquired property in October 1572 from Edward Grymston esq. of Rys-Angles, Suffolk. The property was in Crauley, Suffolk. William may have married a third time. On September 14, 1590, he and John Thurston, esq., probably a brother-in-law, were defendants in a case filed by Margery Bradlaughe, alias, Jacobb, at Laxfeild, Suffolk. The complaint concerned the sale of premises in Badingham, Suffolk called Menhaugh Wood. Agnes Derehaugh, afterwards, Agnes Whipple, wife of William Whipple, was mentioned. Thomas Whipple, age 54, of Dickleborough, testified on behalf of William.

Thomas[2] Whipple (Henry[1]) born ca 1536 in Dickleborough, buried 9 September 1612 in Dickleborough; married Elizabeth, born ca. 1552, daughter of Thomas Jernegar of Belton in Lovingland [Lothingland]. She died 4 September 1617, age 65. Thomas was called gentleman. Their children:

i. Henry, baptized 8 April 1576, buried 9 July 1576.

\+ ii. Margaret, baptized 14 September 1578.

iii. Henry, baptized 21 July 1580.

In 1580-1 Thomas won a suit against Nicholas Everade, gentleman, and John Thrower, yeoman, both of Eye, Suffolk and was awarded £80 for an obligation entered into a decade earlier. In April 1588, Thomas contributed £25 toward the defense of the country at the time of the Spanish Armada. He was steward of the Manor of Brookes Hall near Ipswich, and kept the court there in 1595-6. In 1601, he was steward to Sir Thomas Cornwall, knight, lord of the Manor of Thorpe Abbotts. Thomas and Elizabeth sold one messuage, one garden, one orchard, three acres of meadow, and 10 acres of pasture with appurtenances in Dickleborough and Langmore to John Dallyson for £80, date unknown.

Thomas' will, dated October 20, 1610, mentions his son Henry, wife Elizabeth, granddaughter Frances LeGrys; Thomas Whiple the younger and Thomas Brampton, nephews; daughter Margaret LeGrys, a widow; godchildren Ann Grey, Elizabeth Brampton, Anne Dene, now wife of Osborne, John Cotton, Edward Aldham, and Robert Morse; John Reve and Thomas Dixie, gentlemen, He died at Dickleborough September 8, 1612, owning one messuage, etc. in Thelton or Thelveton, lands, etc. called Stone Close and Le Sike, lands in Scole, and freehold lands in Dickleborough and Parleston (Billingford), all in Norfolk. His son, Henry, was his heir. Thomas' will suggests he was concerned about Henry's sense of responsibility: "To only son Henry, in the hope that God will reclaim him in his going astray and make him to know himself better, an annuity of £20... and all lands in Dickleborough that were my father's... but in the

event of his falling out with his mother, all the lands are to go to the first son of his body."

Elizabeth was the granddaughter of Sir John Jernegar, knight. She was buried in Dickleborough and a stone commerating her life was placed in the nave of the Dickleborough church.

Thomas Whiple the younger, identified as a nephew of Thomas Whipple, may be the Thomas Whiple who died April 3, 1613. At the time of death, he held the advowson[4] of the church of Dickleborough and certain lands in Tivetshall (Tittishall) Rynghall, Langermeere, Lyncrofte, Simplinge, Pulham St. Marie and Pulham St. Magdalene, all in Norfolk. The administration of his will was May 8, 1613 and his property and goods were conveyed to his two sisters, Anne, 30, wife of Robert Bogus of Denham, Suffolk, and Mary Whipple, 22, of Dickleborough.

Either William or John must have had another son who would have been the father of Thomas the younger. Or perhaps Henry had another son, yet to be identified, who was his father.

John[2] Whipple (Henry[1]) married (1) 28 June 1559 by license to Ann Keryson, widow. Both were from the parish of Pulham, St. Mary; (2) Agnes ___. Children:

i. William, baptized 24 February 1564-5.

John and Agnes are the parents of:

i. Katherine and Julian, twins, baptized 27 June 1568.
ii. Margaret, baptized 3 July 1572. These three daughters were baptized at Pulham St. Magdalen.

In 1583 Thomas Flatman of Sterson, Norfolk sought a subpoena against John Whiple, mercer, of Broke, Norfolk, and John Wilbie, husbandman, of Pulham, for making false statements. Whipple and Wilbie filed an answer April 25, 1583. Sir Thomas Cornewalleis (Cornwall), knight, William Whipple, John Gouldingham, and Robert Cowell, gentlemen, were named to hear and examine witnesses. On April 29, 1583 Whipple deposed that the lands in question lie in the parish of Pulham Market and he has "known them for 21 years or more. He signed his name John Whypple. The case was heard in Buckenham on September 1.

Elizabeth[2] Whipple (Henry[1]) married 30 June 1561 William Herne, widower.

Julyan[2] Whipple (Henry[1]) married 26 April 1568 Thomas Chittocke (Chyttocke). They had a son, Henry, baptized 19 November 1570.

Ann[3] Whipple (William[2] Henry[1]) baptized 8 December 1575. Married 25 August 1596 Robert Boggas of Brantham, Co. Suffolk, gentleman. Children: Anne, baptized 1597, buried 1 January 1601-2; William, baptized

13 December 1601, buried 7 March 1601-2.

Margaret[3] Whipple(Thomas[2] Henry[1]) baptized 14 September 1578. Married 15 February 1591-2 Christopher Le Grise (Grys), gentleman, of Perleston alias Billingford, Norfolk. Their daughter Frances was baptized 20 February 1597-8. His will, dated October 16, 1601, mentions wife Margaret, father-in-law Thomas Whipple, gentleman, and Thomas' mansion house in Dickleborough. It was proved November 27, 1601.

NORFOLK

BROOKE. Co. NORFOLK. p. 544.

1588	Dec. 14.	Gilliam Whipple, buried.
1591/2	Feb. 6.	Margaret Whipple, buried.
1596	Sept 22.	John Whipple, buried.
1599	Oct. 14.	Katherine Whipple married Robert Fredd.

BROOMFIELD. Co. NORFOLK. p. 544.

1550	Dec. 20.	Joane Whippell, buried.
1554	June 4.	Richard Wytill, buried.

CHELMSFORD. Co. NORFOLK. P. 544.

1585	Oct. 31.	Ollyff, daughter of John Waple [index Whaptle], baptized.
1585	Dec. 24.	Ollyff, Maple, a child, buried.
1598	Dec. 27.	Joan, wife of John Whaple, buried.
1604	Sept 24.	Thomas, son of John Whapell, baptized.
1606	Sept 21.	Johane, daughter of John Whaple, baptized.
1610	Apr. 15.	Richard, son of John Whapell, labourer, baptized.
1611	July 1.	Richard, son of John Whaple, labourer, buried.
1615	Dec. 30.	John Whaple, labourer, buried.

COGGESHALL. Co. NORFOLK. p. 544

1574 July 4. Agnes Whaples married Robert Smith.

DICKLEBOROUGH. Co. NORFOLK. 1540-1627. pp. 545-6.

1540	Aug. 19.	John Whiple, the son of Henry Whiple, baptized.
1541/2	Jan. 4.	Margaret Whiple, wife of Henry Whiple, buried.
1549	May 13.	Anne Whipple, daughter of Henry Whiple, gentleman, married William Herynge of Eye, co. Suffolk.

1550	May 3.	Margaret Whiple married Isaacke Preston of Thelveton. Son of Thomas Preston.
1558	Sept. 9.	Thomas, son of Isack Preston, baptized.
1559	June 28.	John Whiple was married by license to Ann Keryson, widow, both of the parish of Pulham St. Mary.
1559	May 8.	Thomas, son of Isaack Preston, baptized.
1560	May 12.	Issack Preston, son of Isaak Preston, baptized.
1560	May 12.	Thomas, son of Isaak Preston baptized.
1561	June 30.	Elizabeth Whiple married William Herne, widower.
1562	June 14.	William Whiple married Agnes Deroo, widow.
1565	Apr. 16.	Elizabeth Whiple, wife of Henry Whiple, buried.
1568	Apr. 26.	Julyan Whiple married Thomas Chyttocke.
1570	Nov. 19.	Henry Chittocke, son of Thomas and Julyan Chittocke baptized.
1575	Dec. 8.	Ann Whiple, daughter of William and Katherine, baptized.
1576	Apr. 8.	Henry Whiple, son of Thomas Whipple, gentleman, and his wife Elizabeth, baptized.
1576	July 9.	Henry Whiple, son of Thomas Whiple, gentleman, buried.
1577/8	Jan. 21.	Elizabeth Whiple, daughter of William Whipple, gentleman, and his wife Katheryn, baptized.
1578	Sept 14.	Margaret Whiple, daughter of Thomas Whiple, gentleman and wife Elizabeth, baptized.
1580	July 21.	Henry Whiple, son of Thomas Whiple, gentleman, and his wife Elizabeth, baptized.
1585	Mar. 31.	Henry Whiple, the elder, gentleman, buried.
1587/8	Feb. 17.	Mary Whiple, daughter of William Whiple, gentleman, and his wife Katheryn, baptized.
1591/2	Feb. 15.	Margaret, daughter of Thomas Whiple, gentleman, married Christopher Le Grys, gentleman.
1596	Aug. 25.	Anne Whiple, daughter of William Whiple, gentleman, married Robert Boggas of Brantham, co. Suffolk, gentleman.
1597	Nov. 15.	Anne Boggas, daughter of Robert and Ann Boggas, baptized.
1597/8	Feb. 20.	Frances LeGrys, daughter of Christopher and Margaret LeGrys, baptized.

1601	Dec. 13.	William Bogas, son of Robert and Ann Bogas, baptized.
1601/2	Mar. 7.	William Bogas, buried.
1601/2	Jan. 1.	Ann Bogas buried.
1608	Oct. 15.	William Whiple, gentleman, buried.
1612	Sept. 9.	Thomas Whiple, gentleman, buried.
1613/4	Feb. 28.	Mrs. Mary Whiple married George Gavdye, esquire.
1617	Aug. 30.	Mrs. Elizabeth Whiple, widow of Thomas Whiple, gentleman, buried.

HARLESTON with REDENHALL. Co. NORFOLK. p. 547.

1585	June 6.[?]	Robert Whipple and Lucretia Thompson, married.
1586	May 1	Edward Whipple, son of Robert Whipple, baptized.
1586	Oct. 7	Edward Whipple, son of Robert Whipple, buried.
1587	Dec. 17	Lucrece Whipple, daughter of Robert Whipple, baptized.
1589	Dec. 21	Alice Whipple, daughter of Robert Whipple, baptized.
1590	June 4	Lucrece Whipple, daughter of Robert Whipple, buried.
1591/2	Mar. 19.	Frances Whipple, daughter of Robert Whipple, baptized.
1593	Dec. 23.	Sara Whipple, daughter of Robert Whipple, baptized.
1594	Sept 13.	Frances Whipple, daughter of Robert Whipple, buried.
1595/6	Jan. 18.	Robert Whipple, son of Robert Whipple, baptized.
1596	Apr. 25.	Robert Whipple, son of Robert Whipple, buried.
1596/7	Feb. 1. Mary	Whipple, daughter of Robert Whipple, baptized.

PULHAM ST. MAGDALEN or PULHAM MARKET. Co. NORFOLK p. 549.

1564/5	Feb. 24.	William Whypple, son of John Whypple, baptized.
1568	June 27.	Katherine and Julian Whipple, daughters of John and Agnes Whipple, baptized.
1572	July 3.	Margaret Whypple, daughter of John and Agnes, baptized.

Above from Register I. Register II defective. Many pages are stuck

together and some quite illegible.

RUSHALL. Co. NORFOLK. p. 550.

1622	June 13.	Sara Whiple married John Lord.

STARSTON. Co. NORFOLK. p. 550.

1595/6	Jan. 18.	Robert Whipple, son of Robert Whipple of Harleston, baptized.

SISTED. Co. NORFOLK. Much of register illegible. p. 550.

1582	Apr. 29.	John Whapole married Jane Sparrowe.

THORLEY. Co. NORFOLK. 1539-1628. p. 550.

1561	Feb. 18.	Stephen Nobbes married Maud Eyve, widow.
1565	July 15.	Maud, wife of Stephen Nobbes, buried.
1566	June 3.	Stephen Nobbes married Agnes Woodan.
1576	Apr. 30.	Katherine Nobbes married John Stiche.
1588	Nov. 29.	Agnes Nobbes, buried.
1590	May 17.	Ann, daughter of Stephen Nobbes, baptized.
1592	Aug. 7.	Stephen Nobbes, son of Stephen, baptized.
1596	Sept 28.	Richard Nobbes, son of Stephen, baptized.

WILL AT NORWICH. 12 April 1504. Will of Richard Whipp of Woodrysing. To be buried at Woodrysyng. Mentions wife Margaret. Has children but not named. Proved 29 April 1504. p. 465.

EARLY CHANCERY PROCEEDINGS. Undated. Circa 1515-18. Bill address to Thomas, Archbishop of York and Chancellor of England. Complaint of Edward Wapull of Howghton, co. of Norfolk against Harry Wapull of the same "towne". pp. 470-1.

FEET OF FINES. NORFOLK. HENRY VIII. One month after Easter 1534. Agreement by Henry Whyppell and others to purchase land in Dykelburgh from Thomas and Margaret Browne for 40 marks of silver. p. 466.

FEET OF FINES. NORFOLK. HENRY VIII. Morrow of St. Martin. Henry VII. 1537. Henry Whippell purchased 66 acres of land, meadow, pasture, and wood in Pyrlyston, alias Byllyngforth, from Robert Frense and John and Joan Munforth for 100 marks of silver. p. 466.

FEET OF FINE. NORFOLK. 30 Henry VIII. 1538. Henry Whyppell purchased 356 acres from Sir John Shelton, knight in the Manor of

Baconys and in Dykelburghe, Tyvetsale, Shymplyng, Rusale, and Pulham St. Magdalene for 40 marks of silver. p. 489.

ANCIENT DEEDS. Henry VIII. 10 May 1539. Henry Whipple of Dikelburgh, co. of Norfolk, and John Fellaw, of Norwich, gentleman, purchased lands lying in Sterston or elsewhere in co. Norfolk from John Pykarell of Dikilburgh. The land was for the sole use of John Pykarell and Anne, his wife. [Anne was probably a daughter of Henry Whipple]. pp. 511-12.

WILL AT NORWICH. Edward VI. 2 March 1546/7. Will of Robert Wyppull of West Winche. To be buried in the churchyard of West Wynche. All goods to Jone, his wife. Proved 11 March 1546/7. p. 491.

WILL AT NORWICH. Tuesday after the feast of the Nativity of the Blessed Virgin Mary. 1453. Will of Richard Whippe of Hengham. To be buried at Hengham. His property known as Moorowe. Mentions wife Margaret and son William. Proved 24 Dec. 1460. p. 465.

WILL AT NORWICH. 16 Aug. 1558. Will of Elizabeth, wife of Henry Whiple of Dycleburgh, gentleman. Mentions Jewlyan Whipple and Elizabeth Whipple. She was to buried at Dyckleburgh. All lands, etc., held in her right, to her husband by virtue of last will and testament of Thomas Asheley, her late husband, in Westerfilde, Co. of Suffolk, also a messuage, etc. in the parish of St. Mary Tower in Yppswyche. Mentioned brothers John Rowse and George Rowsse, sister Dorothy Raynolds, and godson Edward Raynolde. pp. 492-3.

HERING DEEDS RELATING TO CHICKERING AND HOXNE. 10 July 1563 William Whipple of Dickleburgh, co. of Norfolk, gentleman, and others, were the mortgagees of lands in Chickering Hamlet, in the parish of Hoxne, co. of Suffolk. Mortgage of £850. pp. 513-14.

TOWN DEPOSITIONS. Elizabeth. 1571-2. William Whipple of Dickleborough, co. of Norfolk, gentleman, aged 37, testified in favor of the complainants against Richard, Bishop of Ely. p. 475.

CLOSE ROLL. Elizabeth. 5 Oct. 1572. William Whiple of Dickelburghe, co. of Norfolk, gentleman, and Thomas Chitocke, acquired property from Edward Grymston of Rys-Angles, co. of Suffolk, esquire. The property was in Crauley, co. of Suffolk. pp. 494-5.

CHANCERY PROCEEDINGS. ELIZABETH. 22 Jan. 1574/5. Complaint filed by John Frense of Dykylborowe co. Norfolk against Henry Wyppylle (sic) of Dykylborowe. Whiple (sic) answered the bill is untrue. pp. 458-9.

PREROGATIVE COURT OF CANTERBURY. 15 May 1576. Will of Thomas Roberts of Dickleborough, co. of Norfolk, clerk. Witnesses included William and Thomas Whypple. Proved 28 Nov. 1577. p. 459.

CORAM REGE ROLLS. Elizabeth. 1580-1. Thomas Whiple of Dickleburghe, co. of Norfolk, gentleman, complains against Nicholas Everade of Eye, co. of Suffolk, gentleman, otherwise called Nicholas Everarde of Eye, and John Thrower of Eye, yeoman, should render to him £80 under an obligation entered into on 28 Sept. 1571 at Thurton, co. of Norfolk. The Court ordered that Thomas recover. p. 516.

STAR CHAMBER PROCEEDINGS. Elizabeth. Circa 1585. Thomas Flatman of Sterson, co. of Norfolk asked for a subpoena against John Whiple of Broke, co. of Norfolk, mercer, and John Wilbie of Pulham, husbandman, for making false statements. Whipple and Wilbie filed an answer 25 April 1583 On 11 July 1584 Sir Thomas Cornewalleis, knight, and William Whiple, John Gouldingham, and Robert Cowell, gentlemen, were named to hear and examine witnesses for both parties at Buckenham on 1 Sept. next. Interrogatories were taken 29 April 1583 and John Whiple deposed that the lands in question lie in the parish of Pulham Market and he has "known them for 21 years or more." John Whiple signed his name John Whyppyle [good signature]. pp. 497-8.

"THE ANCESTOR" Vol. II, pp. 86-87. 1586. William Preston of Preston, co. Suffolk, and Rose, daughter of _____ Whipple of Dickleburgh, Norfolk. p. 466.

LIST OF SUBSCRIBERS towards the defense of this country at the time of the "Spanish Armada." 25 April 1588. Thomas Whipple of Norfolk. £25. p. 459.

CHANCERY DEPOSITIONS. Elizabeth-Charles I. 10 Oct. 1588. Thomas Whiple of Deckleborough, co. of Norfolk, gentleman, aged 50 years or thereabouts. made a deposition in a case between Robert Borrett and Augustine Stubberd. The deposition was taken at Hoxne, co. of Suffolk. p. 478.

FEET OF FINES. NORFOLK. Thomas and Elizabeth Whiple sold one messauage, one garden, one orchard, three acres of meadow and 10 acres of pasture with appurtenances in Dickleborowe and Langmore to John Dallyson for £80. p. 524.

CHANCERY DEPOSITIONS. ELIZABETH - CHARLES I. Elizabeth. 14 Sept. 1590. William Whipple and John Thurston, esquire, were defendants in a case filed by Margery Bradlaughe, alias Jacobb, filed at Laxfeild, co. of Suffolk. The complaint concerned the sale of premises in Badingham, co. of Suffolk, called Menhaugh Wood. Mentions Agnes Derehaugh, afterwards Agnes Whipple, wife of Wiliiam Whipple. Thomas Whipple, age 54, of Dickleburgh, co. of Norfolk, testified on behalf of William Whipple. pp. 478-9.

NORFOLK ARCHDEACONRY. Elizabeth. 29 Nov. 1590. Will of Richard Whytell of Ringsted Peter, co. of Norfolk. Names his wife Elizabeth, sons Thomas, Reynold, Robert, Eustace daughter Alice, and Clemence Whytell, daughter of Robert Whytell. Proved 9 April 1591. The name was spelled Whytell, Whittell, and Whitell in this one document. p. 498.

TOWN DEPOSITIONS. Elizabeth. Michaelmas 37-38, 1595-6. Thomas Whipple of Dickleborough, co. of Norfolk, gentleman, aged 60, gave a deposition in the suit between William Dyer, plaintiff, and John Hamer, Edmund Bacon and others, defendants. Whipple deposes that for one or two courts he was steward of the manor of Brookes Hall, near Ipswich, and kept the said Courts there in his own person. p. 480.

PREROGATIVE COURT OF CANTERBURY. 16 Oct. 1601. Will of Christopher Le Gris of Pyrleston, alias Billingford, co. of Norfolk, gentleman. Mentions wife Margaret and his father-in-law Maister Thomas Whipple, gentleman and Thomas's mansion house in Dickleborough. Proved 27 Nov. 1601. p. 461.

CHANCERY PROCEEDINGS. ELIZABETH. 27 Nov. 1601. Complaint of Francis Richards of Pulham St. Magdalen, co. Norfolk, labourer, mentions Thomas Whipple, then Steward to Sir Thomas Cornwall, knight, then and yet Lord of the said Manor of Thorpe Abbotts. p. 462.

CHANCERY DEPOSITIONS. Elizabeth-Charles I. 19 May 1608. William Whipple of Framingham, co. of Norfolk, husbandman, aged about 50 years, deposed that he knew about the lands (in Framingham

Earle and other places in Norfolk) in dispute between Thomas Paynett and Edmund Cotton against Bridget Harvey for about 12 years. p. 482.

PATENT ROLLS. James I. 1608/9. Grant by the King to William Whiple, gentleman, and Thomas Whiple, the elder, gentleman, that they may alienate the advowson of the church of Dyckleburgh, co. of Norfork, late belonging to the Monastery or Bury St. Edmunds, to Thomas Whiple, the younger, son of the aforesaid William Whiple. p. 499.

WILL AT NORWICH. 20 Oct. 1610. Will of Thomas Whiple, the elder, of Dickleborough, co. Norfolk, gentleman. To be buried at Dickleborough. To only "son, Henry (in the hope that God will reclayme him in his goeinge astraye and make him to knowe him selfe better) an annuity of £20 issuing out of freehold lands in Dickleborough and Parleston alias Billingford, that were my father's." To wife, Elizabeth, all lands and wardship of Frances LeGrys, "my grandchild and interest in term of years obtained by grant from the late Queen, of lands whatsoever which belonge to the said Frances during her minority." Lands in Thelveton and Skole and an annuity "payable to me by Henry le Gris, gentleman." Nephew, Thomas Whiple, the younger, Thomas Brampton, John Reve, and Thomas Dixie, gentlemen, to control lands of the said Frances. Lands late of Christopher Aldham in Billingford, now in the hands of his nephews towards maintenance of Margaret Le Gris, his daughter, a widow. To son Henry all lands in Dickleborough "that were my father's and free close, called Redding, etc., but in event of his falling out with his mother all the lands are to go to the first son of his body. To Ann Grey, Elizabeth Brampton, Anne Dene, now wife of Osborne, John Cotton, Edward Aldham, Robert Morse, godchildren, 5s 8d. Bequeaths silver to daughter Margaret and granddaughter Frances. To Margaret all the linen which he bought for her from the two weavers of Pulham. Supervisor: Thomas Brampton, nephew. Witnesses: John Waryn and William Dawsynges. pp. 499-500.

CHANCERY INQUISITIONS POST MORTEM. SERIES II. Vol. 336. No. 38. 14 Oct. 1612. Inquisition taken at Thetford, co. of Norfolk, on the death of Thomas Whiple, the elder, of Dickleborrowghe. The jurors say that Thomas Whiple at the time of his death was seized of and in one messuage, etc. in Thelton or Thelveton, in the county of Norfolk, in the occupation of William Dowsinge. All which lands were purchased by Thomas Whiple from John Aldham, the elder, and John Aldham, the younger. The Jury say that the said Thomas Whiple also held divers lands, etc. called Stone Close and Le Sike, which were purchased from Henry

Aldham, gentleman, and certain lands in Scole, in the county of Norfolk. On 6 Sept. 1610 he enfoeffed _____dey, gentleman, and Henry Chittoke, gentleman, of all the aforesaid lands, etc. to the uses of them and their heirs. On 20 Oct. 1610 he also made over lands in Dickeborrowghe and Billingforth to his wife Elizabeth Whiple, for the term of her life, and after he death to Henry Whiple, his son, for the term of his life, and in default to Margarete Le Gris, his daughter, and her heirs, in default to Francis Le Gris, husband of the said Margarete, and his heirs. Thomas Whiple died at Dickleborrowghe 8 Sept. 1612. Heir. Son, Henry Whiple, aged 24 years. p. 530-1.

CHANCERY INQUISITIONS POST MORTEM. SERIES II. Vol. 339. No. 153. 13 Aug. 1613. Inquisition taken at Watton, co. of Norfolk, on the death of Thomas Whipple, gentleman. The jurors say that Thomas Whipple when he died held the advowson of the church of Dickleboroughe and certain lands, etc. in Tivetshall, alias Tittishall, Rynghall, Langermeere, Lyncrofte, Simplinge, Pulham St. Marie, and Pulham St. Maire Magdalene, in the county of Norfolk. He died on 3 April 1613. Anne, wife of Robert Bogus of Denham in the county of Suffolk, and Mary Whipple of Dickleborroughe, are sisters and heiresses of the said Thomas Whipple and at the time of his death Anne was aged 30 years and Mary was aged 22 years. p. 532.

PREROGATIVE COURT OF CANTERBURY. Administration. 8 May 1613. The administration of the goods of Thomas Whiple, late of Dickleburgh, co. Norfolk, deceased, granted to Ann Bogas, alias Whiple, and Mary Whiple of Dickleburgh, his sister. p. 463.

MUSGRAVE'S OBITUARY. 4 Sept. 1617. Mrs. Elizabeth Whiple of Dickleburgh, co. of Norfolk, daughter of John, son of Sir John Jernegan. p. 464.

STONE IN NAVE OF DICKLEBOROUGH CHURCH.
Here Resteth In Ye Lord Mrs. Elizabeth Whipple
Wife Unto Thomas Whipple, Gentleman, And
Daughter Of Mr. John Jernegar Of Belton In
Somerlie, Esquire, Sone Unto Sir John Jernegar,
Knight, Which Said Elizabeth Departed This
Life Ye 4th Day of Sept. 1617, Aged 65.
What worth in woman or a wife culd be
What goodnes vaild in Fraile Mortalitie
A godly maid, a goodly shape in youth,

A bounteous hand, wise heart, unspotted truth
These jewells ceas-d toth High Kings use by death
Lo here laid up their owner.
Veni Cito Jesu. p. 500.

PREROGATIVE COURT OF CANTERBURY. 25 June 1655. Will of William Cougham of Wells-next-the-Sea, co. of Norfolk, merchant. Refers to the manor of Dickleburgh called Bacons and the advowson of Dickleburgh, and lands in Dickleburgh, Tittshall, "all which were sometimes William Whipple's deceased." Proved 27 Jan. 1657/8. p. 468.

PREROGATIVE COURT OF CANTERBURY. 27 Nov. 1657. Will of Robert Cougham of Dekleburghe, co. of Norfolk, clerk. Refers to lands in Tittshall, etc., "all which were sometimes William Whipple's deceased." Proved 8 Jan. 1657/8. p. 468.

HERTFORD

BISHOP'S STORTFORD. After 1496. Thomas Wheple was a churchwarden. He was also fined for the waste of torches at his wife's bureing and was paid for mending the clapper of the great bell. John Dane was also listed in these accounts for mending the bells. Other mentioned in churchwardens accounts were John and Elizabeth Whepill, Isabell Whepill, John Whyppyll
pp. 502-07.

ECCLESIASTICAL COMMISSIONERS DOCUMENTS. April 1513. Thomas Whepyll was fined 20d by the Stortford Court for smoting Roger Walshe on the fingers of his right hand with a wooden sword so that blood flowed. p. 510.

ESCHEATORS. INQUISITION POST MORTEM. SERIES II. Vol. 301. No. 1. M. 2. 1 March 1515/16. Inquisition taken at Hertford after the death of Sir William Capell, knight. The jurors find that by his indenture dated 1 Aug. 1510 he enfeoffed the Archbishop of Canterbury and others of the Manor of Little Hadham, and of divers messuages and lands in Cheshunt, to the use of Sir William Capell, knight, and his heirs for ever, and for the fulfillment of his will. And of such estate being seised, the said Sir William by his will declared that his wife, Margaret, should *(inter alia)* have all the premises aforesaid for life with remainder successively to Sir Giles Capell, knight, his son, Henry, son and heir of Sir Giles, and for default to Edward, the second son of Sir Giles, with ultimate remainder

to the right heirs of the said Sir William Capell. Further, Richard Harres and others, were seised of a tenement and a meadow of three acres belonging in the borough of Stortford, to the use of the said Sir William Capell, at the time of this inquisition. The Manor of Little Hadham is held of the Bishop of London. The premises in Stortford are held of the said Bishop. The said Sir William died 6 Sept. last past. Sir Giles Capell, knight, aged 30 years, is his son and next heir. p. 534

ECCLESIASTICAL COMMISSIONERS DOCUMENTS. Court Held at Stortford on Saturday next after the Feast of St. Faith the Virgin. October 1512. At this Court the Lord granted and let to Thomas Whepill three crofts of land lying in the parish of Strotford, whereof one croft containing about 2 acres lies between the lands in the tenure of John John (sic), on the west and the highway from Stortford to Dunmow on the south, and abutts upon the land of the said John John, on the south, another croft of three acres called Frostes Lesse, lies between the land in the tenure of Thomas Sturdy, on the east and the land late of Thomas Clerk on the west, and abutts upon the highway leading from Dunmow to Stortford, the other croft called "Busshe Lesse" lies between the land late of the said Thomas Clerke, on one side and the land of William Sheppard on the other side, and abutts upon the highway leading from Dunmow to Stortford, towards the south. To have and to hold all the said lands to the said Thomas Whepill, his executors and assigns from Michaelmas, last past, for a term of 20 years paying therefor yearly 7s 8d at the usual terms. p. 510.

ECCLESIASTICAL COMMISSIONERS DOCUMENTS. 7 April 1520. The wife of Thomas Whepill is a baker of bread and a brewer of ale. The Stortford Court also determined that the tenants of the lands of Thomas Wheypll and Giles Capell have not yet scoured a watercourse leading from the highway there to the river of the lord which is very ruinous as they were ordered at the last Court, therefore they shall forfeit the penalty imposed on them, namely 10s each. p. 511.

FEET OF FINES. HERTS. Henry VIII, 1525-6. John Whippull, John Neuman, and William Sybthorp acquire land in Stortford, in the county of Hertford, of George Brett and Joan, his wife. p. 456.

BRITISH MUSEUM. ADDITION CHARTERS. Henry VIII. 10 July 1532. Thomas Whepill was a witness to a grant of land by Richard Jardefeld of Stortford, co. of Hertford, tanner, to several parties. The land was

between property owned by John Hawkyn on the north and the late William Jenyn on the south. pp. 465-6.

LAY SUBSIDIES. HERTFORD AND BRAUGHIN. Henry VIII. 7 Nov. 1541. Stortford. John Wheples and Elizabeth Wheple, for goods. p. 472.

LAY SUBSIDIES. HERTFORD AND BRAUGHIN. Stortford. Isabell and John Whippul. p. 472.

COMMISSARY OF LONDON, ESSEX AND HERTS. 26 April 1543. Will of John Pylleston of Stortford, co. Herts. Mentions his daughter Wenefrede Whyppell. Mr. John Whepill was a witness. "I John Whep-pell, knoulege these well to be trewe in all thinges." p. 519.

LAY SUBSIDY. HERTS. Stortford. 1543. John and Isabell Whippull. p. 456.

RENTALS AND SURVEYS. 22 Feb. 1545/6. A rental for the half year of Stortford to Mother Whepill for a tenement on the est side of South-streat, 6d, and for two pastures lyeing between Wards and the highway, 7s; to John Wheypyll for a tenement in Bashorne Lane that he dwelleth on and the west side called Fokynghams, 2s 5d per year, for certain lands called Masshis, 11s 4d per year, for a garden plot, late Flemings, in Bayshorne Lane, 6d per year, and for 3 acres of land with the grain plot in Wyndell Fyld, 10s per year. Total, 24s 3d. p. 491.

COMMON PLEAS. Henry VIII. June-July 1546. Elizabeth Whyppylle (also spelled Whypple in the same document) of Stortford, co. Hertford, widow, sold all her lands and tenements, meadows, moors, pastures, leasures, feedings, commons, woods and underwoods with their appurtenances commonly called Coteys lying and between the parish of Maundell alias Manewden, co. Essex to John Crathorn, citizen and cutler of London, and Margaret, his wife, for 40s. sterling per annum to be paid Elizabeth at her house in Stortford. p. 590.

LAY SUBSIDIES. HERTFORD AND BRAUGHIN. Henry VIII. 18 June 1546. Stortford. Elizabeth Wepul for lands, and John Weppull in goods. p. 473.

LAY SUBSIDIES. HERTFORD AND BRAUGHIN. Edward VI. 1549-51. Stortford. John Whipple for goods. p. 473.

ECCLESIASTICAL COMMISSIONERS. COURT ROLL. 13 April 1557. Stortford. View of Francpledge, etc. of John, Bishop of London, held on Saturday 13 April 19 Elizabeth. It is found by the homage that William Pylston, one of the customary tenants, surrendered out of court the reversion of and in six acres of meadow, called Checker alias Palmers Meade, with appurtenances to the use of John Whiple, his heirs and assigns forever. p. 495.

PARISH REGISTERS. Bishops Stortford. 1561-1630. Marriages: Susanna Whypple and John Grave, Oct. 15, 1565; Urias Whipple and Robert Gooddaye, 25 Sept. 1596. p. 543.

CLOSE ROLL. Elizabeth. 27 June 1569. Symon Waypoole alias Nobbes of Stansted Abbot, co. Herts., husbandman bought property from Reynolde Johnson for £30 situate in Stansted Abbott, abutting upon the Tole River on the west, upon the highway on the north and upon the lands called Pagells on the east and south. p. 494.

FEET OF FINES. HERTS. Elizabeth. 1569-70. Simon Waypole, alias Nobbes, and Robert Grave purchased property in Stansted Abbot, co. of Hertford from Thomas Grave for £80. p. 474.

LAY SUBSIDIES. HERTFORD AND BRAUGHIN. Elizabeth. 18 Oct. 1571. Stortford. John Whyppell, in lands. p. 474.

LAY SUBSIDIES. HERTFORD AND BRAUGHIN. Elizabeth. 1 Oct. 1572. Stortford. John Whyppell in lands. p. 475.

ARCHDEACONRY OF MIDDLESEX. ESSEX & HERTS. 27 Feb. 1572/3. Will of William Wapull of Stansted Abbot in the co. of Hertfordshire. Desires to be buried there. Daughter Katherine mentioned. Proved 1 June 1573. pp. 457-8.

CLOSE ROLL. Elizabeth. 7 March 1572/3. John Whippul of Bishops Stortford, co. Hertford, yeoman, sold his property in Bishops Stortford, commonly called Fockinghams, for 420 to John Jardfeilde of Bishops Stortford. Wenifride Whipple was mentioned. pp. 520-21.

FEET OF FINES. HERTS. Elizabeth. Michaelmas 18-19, 1576-7. Final agreement between John Jardfeild, buyer and John and William Whippull, sellers of 65 acres plus buildings for 230 marks of silver in Stortford, co. of Hertford. p. 475.

FEET OF FINES. HERTS. Elizabeth. Michaelmas 23-24, 1581-2. Final agreement between Stephen Wapoole alias Nobbes, and Agnes, his wife, sellers, and William Parnell, buyer, of land in Alberye, co. of Hertford. Consideration, £80. p. 477.

COMMISSARY, LONDON, ESSEX AND HERTS. 13 May 1581. Will of John Jarfeld of Stortford, co. Herts. Mentions his wife Joan, sister of John Whipple. Joan was left property in Water Lane which he had bought of her brother John Whipple. Proved 9 Oct. 1581. p. 523.

FEET OF FINES. HERTS. Elizabeth. Easter 1588. Final agreement between Stephen Waypoole alias Nobbes, buyer, and Thomas and Agnes Grave, Robert Grave and Thomas Bennett, gentleman, sellers, of land in Stansted Abbott, co. of Hertford. Consideration £40. p. 478.

LAY SUBSIDIES. HERTFORD AND BRAUGHIN. 19 Jan. 1601-2. Stortford. Samuel Whipple, in lands. p. 481.

LAY SUBSIDIES. HERTFORD AND BRAUGHIN. 1609-11. Stortford. ____ Whipple, widow, in lands. p. 482.

BISHOP'S STORTFORD. 1617. Of Mr. Symon Bradstreate for his tenement "in southstreate, late Mrs. Staverdes, before Mrs. Crathornes sometyme Elizabeth Whipples and of old one John Saddes, next the Forge." p. 508

ARCHDEACONRY OF HUNTINGDON. HITCHIN DIVISION. 1 Dec. 1617. Will of William Waple of Lilley, co. of Hertford. Mentions wife Agnes. Proved 21 April 1618 at Baldock. p. 464.

EARLY CHANCERY PROCEEDINGS. Bill addressed to the Archbishop of York, Chancellor of England. Complaint of Joan Merytong, widow, against Thomas Whippill and William Averell, involving land her husband sold to them in the parish of Widyall co. of Hertford. p. 471.

CHANCERY PROCEEDINGS. SERIES II. 5 Feb. 1624-5. Complaint of Anne Whypple (also spelled Whipple), only daughter and heir of John Whypple, late of Stanford, co. of Hertford, yeoman. Her deceased grandfather, John Whypple, had left his son John, now deceased, father of Anne, lands of a "fayre" Mansion House called Chantry House in Stanford. The property was also called Fockinghams (value £700). The elder John also had a son Samuel Whipple whose wife was Margery and

daughter was Jone. Anne alleges Seth Langham, gentleman, and Edward and Margerie Morton were trying to defraud her of her inheritance. p. 483-87.

ECCLESIASTICAL COMMISSIONERS. COURT ROLL. 27 Sept. 1577. Stortford. Elizabeth Whiple, widow, owned land in Loveley near the Stortford-Hadham Road. p. 495-6.

ECCLESIASTICAL COMMISSIONERS. COURT ROLL. Elizabeth. Court general held on Saturday 26 Sept. 1579. John Whipple surrendered his reversion of and in six acres of customary meadow, called Checkers alias Palmers Meade to John Denyson. p. 495.

COMMISSARY, LONDON. ESSEX AND HERTS. 11 Oct. 1581. Will of Johanne Jarfeld of Stortford, co. Herts, widow, sister of John Whipple. Mentions daughters Elizabeth, Joan and Sara; sons John, George, and Richard. Proved 6 Nov. 1581. pp. 523-4.

BRITISH MUSEUM. ADDITIONAL CHARTERS. Elizabeth. 15 Dec. 1592. Samuel Whipple's land was named as a reference point in a deed of land from William Bushe of Bishops Stortford, co. of Hertfordshire, miller, to Henry Stocke of Henham, co. of Essex, carpenter. The land was in Bishops Stortford. p. 516.

GREAT LEIGHS, CO. HERTFORDSHIRE. 1605. Nov. 28. Audrie Whaples married Lancelott Youngman alias Clarke. Entries missing for 1618, 1619, and gaps in 1621, 1622, 1625, 1627. p. 546

LAY SUBSIDIES HERTFORD AND BRAUGHIN. Hundred Stortford. James I. 1606-8. Stortford. _____ Whipple, widow, in lands. p. 481.

FEET OF FINES. HERT. 3 Edward 1549. John Whyppull, alias Whypull, and Wenefred, his wife, and others, sold the Manor of Netherhall with the appurtenances and 200 acres of land, 20 acres of meadow, 100 acres of pasture, 26 acres of wood, 20 acres of furze and heath and 60 shillings of rent, in Gelston, alias Gedleston, Sabrychesworth, alias Sabyrsforth, Estwyk, and Hunnesdon to Henry Chauncy for £180. p. 535.

SUMMER ASSIZES. 1612. Herts. King's writ [dated 6 March 1611/12] to the Sheriff of Hertfordshire to distrain Robert Wibell (or Wivell), of St. Albans, and to produce him at the next Gaol Delivery. p. 538.

DIOCESAN REGISTRY. WELLS. Visitation Book. 24 Sept. 1557. John Whippell, churchwarden. p. 520.

DIOCESAN REGISTRY. WELLS. 11 June 1585. The official of the Lord Bishop appears against William Whippell of Stogumber, for brawling in the church and churchyard. p. 524.

PREROGATIVE COURT OF CANTERBURY. Leicester, 20 Dec. 1588. Will of John Whipple of Aishebrittle, Diocese of Bath and Wells; also had an estate in "Tarr Balle with the gounds whereon the now house is builded called Dishefielde." Desires to be buried in the churchyard of Aishbrittle. Mentions wife Emlinge, sons Ellis, John, Gilbert; daughters Christian and Dorothy. Proved 29 Jan. 1588/9. p. 460.

INVENTORIED DIOCESAN REGISTRY. WELLS. 7 July 1590. John Wipples and others acquired the goods of William Smith of Lilesdon in the parish of North Currie for £82.3.3. p. 592.

DIOCESAN REGISTRY. WELLS. Act Book. Bridgewater. 17 July 1609. John Wipple for living in a house with Elizabeth Peeke, widow, not being man and wife. p. 592.

DIOCESAN REGISTRY. WELLS. DEANERY OF TAUNTON. Act Book. Vol. 175. October 1612. Mary Wipple presented for executing the office of a midwife but whether she be licensed or no they know not. p. 592

DIOCESAN REGISTRY. WELLS. Undated. Personal answer of Mary Wipple alias Lock, executor of the will of Crispin Lock, late of North Currie, deceased, on the part of Penelope Pester alias Lock, of Otherie, legatee, and William Pester, her husband, in a cause of withholding a legacy. States that she has withheld the legacy because of the great charge in bringing up the said Penelope from the age of 4 until she was 18 for when she married a second husband he wasted her estate. The other children being 7 have nothing and the said Penelope married without her mother's consent. p. 592.

SURREY

TOWN DEPOSITIONS. Charles I. 1646. Peter Wapple of the parish of St. Mary Mawdelyn in Bermondsey, co. of Surrey, esquire, aged about 40, gave a deposition in a dispute concerning the sailing of a ship to Sligo, Ireland and the discharge of the same. p. 488.

TOWN DEPOSITIONS. 26 May 1652. George Whaple of Lambeth, co. of Surrey, yeoman, aged 60 years, gave a deposition in a suit against the Vicar and Churchwardens of the parish of Great St. Helens, London. p. 489.

HUNTINGDON

ARCHDEACONRY OF HUNTINGDON, HITCHIN DIVISION. 11 Mar. 1567/8. Will of Edmunde Waupoull of Wodwalton in the co. of Huntingdon. Mentioned his wife Agnes; sons, Robert, Richard, Nicholas William; daughter Anne [or Amie]; his wife's four children, Nicholas, John, Henry, and Alice Waupoull; and Thomas Wauppoul (sic) his son's son. Proved 27 May 1568. p. 457.

BERKS

PREROGATIVE COURT OF CANTERBURY. 10 Oct. 1588. The administration of the goods of Brigit Wapulls, late of Reading, co. Berks, widow, deceased, granted to Agnes Ratforde, wife of Clement Ratford, of Eaton, co. Berks, natural sister of the said Brigit, during the minority of age of John and Elizabeth Wapulls, the children of Brigit. p. 459.

SOMERSET

LAY SUBSIDY. SOMERSETSHIRE. Elizabeth. 1558-1602. Hundred of Milverton. John Wypple in lands. Thomas Wypple in lands. Hundred of Addycke. Roger Whippell in goods. p. 513

INNER TEMPLE ADMISSIONS. Elizabeth. 13 Feb. 1596/7. Alexander Wipple of Hatchbechal [Hatch Beauchamp, near Crewkerne]. co. of Somerset, late of Lyons Inn, gentleman, admitted on payment of 20s. p. 498-9.

DIOCESAN REGISTRY. WELLS. Bundle of Libels. 21 July 1601. John Wills, clerk, rector of Hathebeacham, co. Somerset, against Roger Wippell, of the same. p. 592

LINCOLN

STAR CHAMBER PROCEEDINGS. Edward VI. 1550. Complaint of John Hurst and Christopher Walpole [this name distinctly Walpole, although indexed under Waple], of Boston, co. of Lincoln. pp. 473-4.

KENT

TOWN DEPOSITIONS. Elizabeth. 1571. Dispute between Robert Swann, John Pecke, and Edward Ayler, complainants, against John Duckfield, defendant, concerning the right of the customary tenants and copyholders to cut trees and wood which grew on their lands in the manor of Harston, and sell same without license of the Lord of the manor. George Whaple of Harston, co. of Kent, aged 54 years, states he was born there, has always lived there and deposes that customary tenants and copy-holders have always cut down and sold trees and underwood growing on their lands without license. pp 474-5.

CLOSE ROLL. Elizabeth. 14 May 1595. Thomas Wappoull of Dover, co. of Kent, acknowledged a debt of £100 to Abrham Gaunte of Barson. Thomas's wife was Cycyle Wappoull. p. 498.

CLOSE ROLL. 29 July 1622. Abell Grove of the Town and Port of Sanwich, co. Kent, taylor, sold Cicely Wappoll, of the same town, widow, a messuage in Boughton, under the Bleane, in Headcome and Fillenden. p. 500.

NORTHAMPTON

CHANCERY DEPOSITIONS. Elizabeth-Charles I. 3-5 April 1595. John Whaple of Duston, co. of Northampton, husbandman, aged about 60 years, gave a deposition in the case between Edwin Griffin, esquire, and Lucy, his wife, complainants, against Dame Elizabeth St. John, defendant. p. 480.

EXCHEQUER DEPOSITIONS. 11 Charles I. 22 Sept. 1635. Walter Waple of Aldrington, co. of Northampton, yeoman, aged 58, gave a deposition at Towcester. p. 488.

DORSET

CHANCERY PROCEEDINGS. BEFORE 1714. Metford. November 1632 (?) A complaint by Renaldo Knapton of Fordington, co. of Dorset,

gentleman, alleged that secret estates, mortgages, and grants had been placed against property he had bought in the parish of All Saints in the borough of Dorchester from John Terryn of Dorchester, "Poyntmaker". These liens were for purposes of fraud and Charles Austin and his wife and Thomas Whipple and his wife were part of the fraud. The wives were the daughters of John Terryn who sold him the property. p. 487.

SUFFOLK

PROBATE OFFICE. BURY ST. EDMUNDS. 17 Feb. 1539/40. Henry Whypple of Nedham was one of the executors of the will of William Aldham of Brome, co. of Suffolk. Probate 14 March 1540. p. 512.

HERING DEEDS RELATING TO CHICKERING AND HOXNE. Edward VI. 16 Nov. 1549. Henry Wyphyll was one of the indifferently elected arbitrators in a case of a land dispute in Brome and Ockley [i.e. Oakley next Brome], co. Suffolk. pp. 512-13.

HERING DEEDS RELATING TO CHICKERING AND HOXNE. Elizabeth. 10 July 1563. Thomas Whipple was a witness for the Bond of John Chetham of Bury St. Emunds, gentleman, to William Herynge of Eye, co. of Suffolk, yeoman, in 1000 marks. p. 513.

MARRIAGE LICENSES. SUDBURY, CO. SUFFOLK. 10 July 1684. William Whipple of Norwich, worsted-weaver, and Elizabeth Thompson, of Elmeswell. p. 542.

MISCELLANEOUS

DUCHY OF LANCASTER. Henry VII. 1489-90. One farthing was the new rent of John Wable for one piece of land on the hill called Castlehill. p. 502.

EARLY CHANCERY PROCEEDINGS. Circa 1515-29. John Hendeman of Abbots Langley, husbandman, v. William Whelppeley of Northchurch. p. 518.

ENTRY FROM RECORD IN POSSESSION OF CLOTHWORKERS' COMPANY. 1560. Henry Wippell made Free of the Company. [For a person to become a freeman he must have been at least 21 years of age.] p. 493.

EXTRACT FROM REGISTER IN POSSESSION OF THE SKINNERS' COMPANY 20 May 1561. William Whippell, "the son of John Whippell, late of Busshoppe Starford, smith, has put himself apprentyce to Richard Elken from 20th Maye, 1561 for 8 yeares. p. 493.

EXTRACT FROM REGISTER IN POSSESSION OF THE SKINNERS' COMPANY. 17 July 1569. William Whippell, "late th. apren. of Richard Elkynne, was sworne the 17th of Julye in Anno Dm. 1569 and payde for his admyssionne." p. 494.

LANSDOWNE MANUSCRIPTS. 24 June 1581. Names of strangers "that goe not to churche." Candelwykestrete: John Whippell. p. 496.

PREROGATIVE COURT OF CANTERBURY. Administration. 1 May 1615. The administration of the goods of Gilbert Whipple, late dead in parts beyond the sea, granted to Ellizeus Whipple, his lawful brother. p. 463.

RAYNE TITHE BOOK. 1615. Robert Whaples "for haye he had of Cooch" 2s. p. 467.

CHANCERY PROCEEDINGS. 7 July 1663. John Whipple filed a complaint against for Nicholas Ayshford, gentleman, for payment of £100 plus £6 interest Whipple lent Henry Ayshford, late of Ayshford, co. Devon about Feb. 1659/60. pp. 541-2.

HUNDREDS

There are many references to Hundreds in the foregoing. A Hundred is an ancient territorial division intermediate between the parish or township and the county.

Algierynes, 578
America, 565,66
Amitie, 255, 363
Ark, 556
Assistance. 232
Biskaye, 137
Blessing, 563, 581
Blessinge, 566
Bonadventure, 562
Boneadventure, 363
Bonny Bess, 563,64
Charles, 568
Cheribin, 323
Consent, 573
Constance, 562
Crescent, 430
Daintye, 364
David Friggate, 255
Damaske Rose, 562
Danyell, 577
David, 562
Deering, 577
Defence, 559
Dove, 561, 62, 66, 579
Dragon, 40, 135
Dragoneere, 41
Elizabeth, 364, 562,64,68
Elizabeth and Sarah, 564
Elsabeth,, 568,69
Exchange, 568
Exon Merchant, 364, 556,57,58,59,60,68,73,74 559, 560
Expedition, 556,57
Faith, 367
Fellowship, 214
Flower de Luce, 563
Flyinge Harte, 218, 564
Fraunces, 363
George, 558, 565
Gift, 290
Gifte of God, 555
Gilliflower, 569
Grace, 347, 355, 582
Greyhound, 243
Greyhound, 365, 66, 67
Harte, 430
Hercules, 297, 98, 363, 64, 573
Hope, 146, 367, 565, 66, 68
Hopewell, 561. 62. 574
Increase, 560
Indeavour, 305
Intelligence, 134,35
Ipswich, 40
James, 243
Jane, 344
John, 222, 243, 363
John and Barbara, 564
John and Dorothy, 561,62,64
John and Margaret, 567
John Baptist, 214
John Trelawyne, 221, 362,63
Jonas, 570
Jonathan, 104
Lambe, 305
Le Anegallant, 364
Little Neptune, 558, 563
Mandrake, 569
Margrave, 298
Mary, 116, 363, 568, 578, 79
Mary Anne, 365, 569
Mary Constance, 567
Marygolde, 221
Mayflower, 136, 161, 322
Newfoundland, 363
New Supply, 563
Nicholas, 364
Olave, 570
Olive, 577
Orion, 305, 578
Palma Merchant, 367
Paule, 365
Peyde Cowe, 571
Pilgrim, 570
Prosperose, 152
Prosperous, 571
Prosperus, 585
Providence, 565, 66, 584
Prudence, 555
P_____,577
Rebecca, 563
Reserve, 579
Revenge, 560
Richard, 560
Richard and Anne, 567
Richmond, 137, 38, 39
Safety, 562, 63
St. Andrew, 136
Sarah, 105
Saza, 364
Sparahawke, 243
Speedwell, 363
Steereens, 570
Stephen, 569
Sun, 555
Supple, 570
Swallow, 585
Talem, 366
The Catt, 106
Thomas, 488, 558,
Thomas Bon Adventure, 560
Trinity, 244

Tristram and Jane,	Unicorn, 556	William, 135
Truelove, 560,65	Virgin Queen, 298	William and Mary,

This list does not represent all ships sailing from England at this period. It does, however, include all ships referenced in the records uncovered by Hardy & Page.

ENGLISH GENEALOGICAL SOURCES

Genealogists seeking emigrants in specific areas of England should consult the bibliography in W.E. Notestein, *The English People on the Eve of Colonization, 1603-1630*, the notes in B. Bailyn's bibliography, *The New England Merchants of the Seventeenth Century,* and the general list of record societies and the bibliography of special local studies in W.E. Tate, *The Parish Chest.* The lists in the National Register of Archives in London and the MSS collections at the Public Record Office and the British Museum, London are invaluable.

The Essex Record Office, County Hall, Chelmsford, is an excellent source for information. It contains over a million official, ecclesiastical, estate, and family archives, dating from the twelfth century.

General records include: Essex assize records, quarter session rolls, calendar of county records, sessions record, Vol. 18, all for the period 1600-1640; Archdeaconry of Essex, Act Books, 1620-1640; Books of Depositions, 1626-1642; Archdeaconry of Colchester, Act Books, 1620-1640; Book of Depositions, 1625-1636; Special Visitation, 1633; and Bishop Laud's Commissioners, Act Books, 1620-1640.

Church manuscripts can be rewarding. Both the diocesan and archidiaconal records should be consulted. The list is entitled "Survey of Ecclesiastical Archives" available at the British Museum; P.R.O.; National Register of Archives; University Library, Cambridge; Bodleian Library, Oxford.

The Diocese of Chelmsford has records for Essex county; and the records of archdeaconries for Essex and Colchester for the seventeenth century. The Diocese of London also has some Essex records

CAPT. JOHN WHIPPLE

Much time, money, and effort has been spent by various Whipple researchers to discover the English ancestors of Capt. John Whipple. Among those is Dr. Charles M. Whipple, Jr., a descendant and author of *Sons and Daughters of Jesse: a 360 year History of the Whipple Family*, published in 1976. He employed Debrett Ancestry Research Limited of

Hampshire, England[5] to examine records in both America and England. They were not able to find John's parents or tie him to the Matthew and John Whipple families of Ipswich, MA. Dr. Whipple agreed to share the two reports produced by Debrett's with readers of this book so future researchers seeking the parentage of Capt. John and a possible relationship to the Bocking-Ipswich Whipples can concentrate on more promising research.[6]

FEBRUARY 1988 REPORT

Debrett's research was based on the following assumptions.
Captain John Whipple is thought to have been born in the parish of Bocking, Essex, in about 1616-17. However the registers of Bocking contain several gaps, and John's baptism is assumed to have been lost. John is thought to have been related to Matthew Whipple, a clothier of Bocking. It is known from the surviving registers that Matthew had children Anne, Margaret, Joahane, Elizabeth, John, and Amy baptized 1583-1605. Others of his children whose baptisms do not appear in the Bocking registers were Matthew junior, born circa 1590, Jane, born circa 1592, and Mary, born circa 1599. Both Matthew junior and John married, Matthew to Anne Hawkins and John to Sarah Hawkins;[7] and both had sons named John. John, son of Matthew, was born about 1632 and became known as Lieutenant John; and John, son of John, was born in about 1625 and became known, like the ancestor, as Captain John. There has been confusion between the two Captain Johns, who are, nevertheless, thought to be related. Both Matthew and John senior are said to have arrived in America in 1638. John the ancestor arrived 1632 at the age of 15 or 16, and is said to have been apprenticed to a carpenter, Israel Stoughton, in order to obtain passage, sailing on the ship ***Lyon***. He subsequently married Sarah They or Darling[8] in about 1639, and died in 1685.

The search began with printed emigrant sources for Whipple references, beginning with Winifred Ashwell's *Essex & the Lyon*.[9] The *Lyon*, Captain Pierce, master, sailed from London on 2 June 1632 and arrived in Boston on Sunday 16 November 1632. The records state some 60 men and 50 children and women, including a Matthew Whipple and John Whipple, carpenter, were passengers.

Banks' *Planters of the Commonwealth* refers to a John Whipple of Bocking, Essex, settling in Dorchester. He suggests John's arrival was in 1630 with the Winthrop fleet. (Banks says this was a presumption on his part). Banks' *Topographical Dictionary of 1885 English Emigrants to New England 1620-1650* lists a Matthew and John Whipple from Bocking settling in Ipswich, MA. *Passengers to America*, edited by Michael Tepper lists a John

Whipple as a first settler of Rhode Island in 1636. This list was compiled by John Farmer.

Meredith B. Colket, Jr. lists three Whipples in *Founders of Early American Families*: 1) John Whipple, in Dorchester, MA 1632, Providence, 1659, died there 1685. Agent for Mr. Saltonstall,[10] captain, tavern keeper. 2) John Whipple of Ipswich, MA. Died there 30 June 1669; brother of Matthew, deacon. 3) Matthew Whipple of Ipswich, MA 1638. Died there 28 September 1647. Deputy deacon, brother of John of Ipswich.

The next step was to examine the original registers of Bocking, covering the years 1575 to 1632. As expected, there were many gaps. Baptisms are missing for 1571-2, 1581-2, and 1605-55. Baptisms of six children of Matthew the clothier were identified. They agreed with the transcripts made of the surviving registers by J.J. Goodwin:

1 Sept. 1583	Anna Whipple, dau. of Matthew
3 Mar. 1585	Margareta Whipple, dau. of Matthew
3 Sept. 1587	Jane/Joan, dau. of Matthew
14 Apr. 1594	Elizabeth, dau. of Matthew
29 Aug. 1596	John, son of Matthew
20 Jan. 1604	Amy, dau. of Matthew

Marriage registers for 1575-92 were missing, but marriages for all but one of the children were found, as well as the marriage of a daughter Mary in 1625. The marriage of Matthew Whipple to Ann Hawkins in 1622 was noted, but not the marriage of John Whipple to Sarah Hawkins. The burial registers included the burials of Matthew the clothier and his wife Joan in 1612 and 1618-19 and evidence of other children of Matthew and Ann Hawkins. They had two sons named Matthew buried in 1623 and 1627. Matthew's brother John must have married by 1625 as the burial registers show the burial of his son John on August 4, 1625.

This entry was interesting as our information indicated the "second" Captain John, eldest son of John, was born in 1625, suggesting John senior had another son John born after or shortly before the death of the first John. This could not be confirmed as the baptism registers are missing, and, as with most Essex parishes, there are no Bishop's Transcripts surviving for Bocking. These records are contemporary copies made by the incumbent for the diocesan records.

Our next source was the International Genealogical Index of Essex, an index to baptisms and marriages compiled by the Church of Latter Day Saints and arranged alphabetically by county. While neither complete nor wholly accurate, it is a useful genealogical source. The IGI baptisms attributed to Bocking included a second John as well as other children of John and Sarah:

1 Jul. 1622	Sarah, d. of John & Sarah Whipple
11 Jan. 1623	John, s. of John & Sarah Whipple
21 Dec. 1625	John, s. of John & Sarah Whipple
1 Nov. 1627	Elizabeth, d. of John & Sarah Whipple
7 Oct. 1628	Matthew, s. of John & Sarah Whipple
2 Oct. 1631	William, s. of John & Sarah Whipple
2 Jun. 1633	Ann, d. of John & Sarah Whipple
4 Aug. 1635	Judith, d. of John & Sarah Whipple
17 Feb. 1637	Matthew, s. of John & Sarah Whipple

The IGI does not list burials but includes a symbol indicates if the child died before the age of eight. Five of the children were shown thus: Ann, the first John, Judith, and both Matthews. Since IGI's source is not the original registers of Bocking, its reliability must be suspect unless verified. Nevertheless, since no baptisms to the families of John or Matthew Whipple are shown after 1637, tends to confirm that they emigrated in 1638.

The IGI includes an unverified entry for the baptism of John, son of Matthew Whipple, on May 16, 1617. No place is given for this birth/baptism. The source was private information submitted to the compilers and often these sources are nothing more than family tradition or based on ages or other information given at death. Therefore, this cannot be accepted as proof of the birthdate or parentage of the ancestor. It cannot refer to Matthew, Clothier of Bocking, who died in 1618/19; nor to his son Matthew, whose son John (Lieutenant John) was born in 1632.

Before 1858 wills were proved and administrations of estates of intestates were granted by the local ecclesiastical courts. The indexes of the local probate court of Essex contained 11 Whipple wills proved between 1400-1700. Details of each were abstracted, hoping to find a reference to Whipples living in America in a will proved after 1632. Four were found but included nothing helpful: James Whaples of Colchester, William Whaples of Great Waltham, Ellen Whaples of Colchester, and Thomas Whaples of Great Waltham. The earlier wills, while obviously not likely to refer to relatives in America, might identify families related to John the ancestor.

None of the wills mentioned the Bocking family and in none was the name spelled as Whipple. However, spelling was not standardized at that time and even highly educated people spelled their own names in a variety of ways.

We identified several people who could have been the father of, or related to, the ancestor; but found no proof he was closely related to the Bocking Whipples. The next step was to examine further parish registers for the baptism of John Whipple in about 1617. To identify likely parishes,

we listed all Whipple/Whaple marriages in Essex contained in *Boyd's Marriage Index*. This index, arranged by county, lists English marriages from the commencement of parish registers in 1538 to 1837. Nineteen such marriages were found from Essex, seven of which referred to males before 1618:

1582	Waple, John & Jane Sparrow Sisted
1584	Waple, William & Elizabeth Walker Kelvedon
1594	Weple, William & Jone Lily Tollesbury
1601	Waples, John & Tomasin _____ South Weald
1604	Walpes, John & Joan Dale Chelmsford
1609	Whaples, William & Ann Kilson Felsted
1602 (sic)	Wippell, Matthew & Ann Hawkins, Bocking

Entries for the parishes of Tollesbury, South Weald, Chelmsford, and Felsted were interesting. We also examined registers of Margaretting, Eastwood, and Great Waltham. The 1600-25 registers of South Weald were checked. They only contained the marriage of John and Tomasyn (1601), again with no bride's surname. Margaretting registers survive only from 1627 for baptisms and burials, and 1628 for marriages. Eastwood registers survive from 1685 and 1686 onwards. This was disappointing in view of the interesting wills. The Felsted registers 1600-25 contained only the marriage of William Whaples and Ann Lilford (sic) in 1609.[11]

Chelmsford registers 1600-25, contained the marriage of John Whapells to Joane Dale in 1604 and the baptisms of children Thomas, Joan, and Richard 1604-10. Richard was buried in 1611, and John 1615, so he could not have been the ancestor. Tollesbury registers 1590-1625 contained several Whaple entries. John, son of Robert and Susan, was baptized in 1624-5, but this is obviously too late to refer to the ancestor. A John Whaple, probably the child's father, was buried a year later.

Great Waltham registers 1600-25 revealed the following baptism: 13 Dec. 1618 Joh(ann)is Whaples fil; Joh(ann)is. A brother William was baptized in 1620. John Whaples married Mary Collet in 1617-18 and was probably the son of William Whaples, whose daughter Judith was buried in 1601 and who died himself in 1602. We took the search of the Great Waltham registers to the end of 1650 and found that John had another son, Robert, baptized in early 1630. He seems to have died in 1638.

The William Whaples who died in 1602 is the man whose will, proved in the same year, we had previously abstracted. He had sons William, John, and Robert, and a wife Margaret, whose burial was noted in 1635. His son William left a will proved in 1645 which mentions his brothers Thomas and Robert and his widowed mother, but not his brother John. Thomas Whaples had daughters Rebecca and Mary baptized 1647-9, and died in 1689. His will does not mention any of his brothers.

William (1645) did not mention his brother John, baptized in 1618, which implies he had either died or, perhaps, gone abroad. It was interesting to note that John Whipple, the emigrant, named a son William.

William and Margaret Whaples of Great Waltham who died in 1602 and 1635 therefore had three known sons: William, John, and Robert. His son John had four sons: John (1618), William (1620), Robert (1630), and Thomas. Of these sons, William left a will proved in 1645, and Thomas had children baptized 1647-9; Robert was still living in 1645, as was their mother. As their father John seems to have died by 1645, we may assume he was the John Whaples buried in 1638. The child John does not seem to have died in infancy, and the fact he was the only brother not named in William's will does indicate he could well have been the ancestor.

We examined the Lane family papers recorded in the *New England Historic Genealogical Register*, but these mainly refer to the period 1650-90. Other references are to the Whipple family of Norfolk and the Bocking family is believed to have originated in Norfolk or Suffolk, and we checked the International Genealogical Index of these counties for Whipple entries. None of any significance were found in Suffolk, but the Norfolk index contained references to the family found in printed sources. No link has yet been found between the Essex and Norfolk families.

In conclusion, we have not so far been able to prove that John Whipple who arrived in America on the *Lyon* was a member of the Bocking family. It could be a coincidence that he emigrated at the same time as Matthew of Bocking. The baptism of a John Whaples at Great Waltham in 1618 does more or less agree with our information that the emigrant was aged 15 or 16 in 1632, but further research is necessary to prove this was the ancestor, and to try to determine any connection with the Whipples of Bocking. The fact that most Whipple/Whaples families have been found in a close cluster of parishes around Bocking, Felsted, and Great Waltham, and that William of Great Waltham had property in Felsted and Margaretting, does indicate the families were probably connected. Any further research would commence by looking for Whipple/Whaples wills later than 1630 proved in the PCC, and also for Collet wills, this being the maiden name of the mother of the John baptized in 1618. We noted that Mary Collet/Whaples' son Thomas mentioned his "mansion house called Collets" in Great Waltham, so Mary Collet's family seem to have been fairly wealthy, and may have left detailed wills. We would hope that one of these would mention their grandson or nephew John, and tell whether he survived childhood, and, if he did, whether he settled in England or went abroad.

Bocking, Essex, Diocese of London. Original Registers: baptisms, marriages, and burials: 25 March 1575 to 24 March 1632. Essex Record Office (D/p268/1/1.2). Whipple and variants abstract:

Baptisms. Missing 1571-2; 1581-2; 1606-1655.

1 Sept. 1583	Anna Whipple filia Mathei (Anna Whipple daughter of Matthew)
3 Mar. 1585	Margareta Whipple filia Matth (Margaret Whipple daughter of Matthew)
3 Sept. 1587	Jana Whipple filia Mathewe (Jane/Joan Whipple daughter of Matthew)
14 Apr. 1594	Elizabetha Whipple fillia Mathew (Elizabeth Whipple daughter of Matthew)
29 Aug. 1596	Johnes Whipple filius Mathew (John Whipple son of Matthew)
20 Jan. 1604-5	Amy Whippell filia Mathewe (Amy Whipple daughter Matthew)

Marriages. Missing 1575-1592:

5 Jul. 1603	Laurenarius Arthur et Margareta Whiple (Laurence Arthur and Margaret Whiple)
13 Jan. 1605-6	ohannis Pepper et Anna Whepple (John Pepper and Anna Whepple)
6 May 1613	Henrie Caldam & Jana Whippell (Henry Caldam & Jane/Joan Whippell)
3 Sept. 1619 I	Isaac Greene et Elizabethe Whippell (Isaac Green and Elizabeth Whippell)
15 Apr. 1619	Eduardus Feast & Jana Whippell (Edward Feast and Jane/Joan Whippell)
7 May 1622	Matheus Whippell & Anna Hawkyns (Matthew Whippell & Anna Hawkyns)
9 May 1625	Richard Baker & Maria (Mary) Whippell
31 Oct. 1631	Gulielms Horton et Amy Whipple (William Horton and Amy Whipple)

Burials. Missing 1575-1632

12 Jun. 1577	Margaretta (Margaret) Whipple
19 May 1612	Johanna Whipple ux'r Mathei Whipple (Joan Whipple wife of Matthew Whipple)
16 Jan. 1618-9	Matheus (Matthew) Whipple senior
27 Oct. 1623	Matheus filius Mathei Whipple (Matthew son of Matthew Whipple)

4 Aug. 1625	Johanes filius Johanis Whipple (John son of John Whipple)
3 Apr. 1627	Matheus filius Mathei Whipple (Matthew son of Matthew Whipple)

Prerogative Court of Canterbury Wills 1580 to 1630.
Whipple and variants abstracts:

1588	Wipple, John Aishebrittle, Somerset 20 Leicester
1590	Wimple, Rauffe Stretam, Isle of Ely 74 Drury Cambridgeshire
1585	Wythipole, Paule Ipswich, Suffolk 15 Brudend
1606	Wythipoll, Edmund Ipswich, Suffolk 52 Stafforde
1619	Whipple, Matthew Bocking, Essex 2 Parker the elder, Clothier

Essex Wills 1400 to 1700. Whipple and variants abstract:

1549 **Whippull, Joan widow Broomfield 32 ER 7**

Fourteen March 1549, third year of King Edward Syxte.... I Jone Whippull of Bromefield widow holle of myne, etc.... To be buried in churche yearde of Bromfield.... Item I bequeth unto Johanane Laurence after my decease xxs (20 shillings) ij (2) platters, etc. etc.... To Roose Lawrannce xxs (20 shillings) a matteresse, etc. etc.... To Johanne Lawrence a bell candlestick, etc.... I bequeth to every one of my god children iiijd (4 pence) vis iiijd (4 pense) to the poore for brede & drynke to pay for my soule and all christen solls.... The resydew of all my goods not bequethed after my decease my debts legasyes payd I give & bequeathe to Jhon my sone to be sole exsecutor.... John Bouer of Bromeielde ov'seer he to have for his labors xxd (20 pence). Wit: Thomas Poole of Bromefield, Robert Osborne, John Sargent, Vicar. Proved and probated in 1549.

1573 **Wapull, William Stanstead Abbots Herts 208 MR 3**

xxij (22) daie February 1573 of Stansted Abbot of Hertfordshire.... Being of good and P'fect remembrance, etc.... To be buried in churchyarde of Stansted.... To Katherine my daughter my howse & land in Stansted.... Item I will that my wife shall have all the household stuff upon condition, etc. or ells I will all the saide householde stuff unto Katherine my daughter and my wife to have none.... To Katherine my daughter five shillings viijd (8 pence) which Edwarde Holham oweth me and other debts due to me.... Daughter Katherine executrix. Wit: John Grave, John Lammpley, John Lewys, Clerke Vicar. Proved 1 June 1573 to John Holland.

1597 **Whaples, William yeoman Margaretting 205 ER 17**

20th May nine and thirty yeare of our Lady Quene Elizabeth.... Burial at discretion of executor.... Six shillings eighte pence to a godly preacher for a sermon at my funeral.... Item I give to the poore people of Much Waltham xxs (20 shillings).... Item I give to the poore people of Margaretinge xs (10 shillings)... My wife Margery shall enter into bond of forty markes with twoe surities as my sonne William Whaples shall like that she shall not plowe or caused to be plowed any or broken upp anymore of my lands belonging to my tenement at Margareting nor felling of any trees nor house to decaye.... To my wife cubard in the house iiij (4) turned chaires, etc. etc.... Residue to son William Whaples goods chattells moveables and unmoveables he to enjoye all goods given to my wife if she not enter into bond.... Sone William Whaples to be sole executor. Wit: John Pake, John Younge, Christopher Sheriffe. Proved and probated 18 July 1597.

1602 **Whaples, William yeoman Great Waltham 22 ER 18**

xij daie of April 1601 & three and fortieth yeare of Elizabeth.... To be buried in Christian burial.... To the poore people of Much Waltham shillinges.... To William my sone my copy hold in Felstead with parcell of lands... My wife to be gardian of my said sone untill he come to xxi years.... To Margaret my wife my tenement in Margaretinge called Ponders after decease of my mother in lawe after her decease to Robert my sonne.... To William my sone the some of fourtie poundes & fyve markes at 21, if he die to my son John.... To my son John one hundred poundes at xxi yeares if he die shared equalle to his two brothers.... To Aworie my daughter thirtie poundes at xxi.... To William my sonne one featherbed, etc. at daie of marriage.... To John my sonne one featherbed, etc. at daie of marriage.... To William my sonne my quilt salt, etc. at daie of marriage.... To Robert my sonne my other quilt salt, etc. at daie of marriage.... To John my sonne my silver cup on daie of my executrixs death.... I will that my executrix shall under bond of foure hundredth poundes to my well beloved cosin Richard Everard gent to paie legacies and bequests if she contract to marriage with another man after my decease. Before they shall make bond to my well beloved cosin Richard Everard of Much Waltham gent and Anthonie Everard of Waltham gent to paid all my legacies.... Residue to Margaret my wife also to be sole executrix.... Cozens Richard & Anthonie Everard to be overseers. Wit: Thomas Everard, Richard Eve, Henry Lilford, John Younge. Proved and probated 24 December 1602.

1610 Whaples, Edward laborer Eastwood 141 BW 41

Dated 27 March 1610. Edward Whaples of Eastwood, laborer, sick in body but of sound memory thanked be to God doe make and ordain this my last will in manner following:... Imprimis I bequeath my soule to God and my body to be buried in ye churchyard of Eastwood.... Item I give my brother John all my apparell except my cloke and jerkin & all my working tooles except my spade & all my other goods and chattells I give to Mary my wife whom I ordayne executrix of this my will.... In presence of Samuel Purcas, John Vassall, John Valentine. Proved but no probate

1627 Whaples, William tanner Margaretting 97 EW 18

Eight daye of December 16 yeare of King James, etc.... Sick in body but of good remembrance, etc.... To Joseph my sonn seven score pounds at twenty years this sum to be given into the hands of Robert Whaples my brother within six monethes until he come to the age of twenty yeares he to be bound by two suertyes if he dye my said brother and John Whaples his son shall have seven score pounds.... To my sonn Joseph one silver gilt salt, etc. etc. to be delivered to my sayd brother Robert for my son at twenty yeares if he die to John Whaples son of brother Robert Whaples.... To my loving mother six pounds six monthes after my decease.... To Mr. Joyner of Morton, preacher, twenty shillings six monthes after my decease.... To the poore people of Margareteing twenty shillings six monthes after my decease.... Agnes my wyffe my sole executrix she to become bound one moneth after my decease of three hundred pounds to my brother Robert Whaples.... If Agnes my wyffe shall refuse to take the execution of my will or not prove same within one moneth after my decease then brother Robert to be executor he shall enter of all my goods, etc. my leather tanned or untanned otherwise to tanne with my bark, etc. and pay legacyes.... Remaining of my goods to my executor.... Friends John Cowers(?) John Cawell(?), overseers. Wit: William Whapelles, William Bareman, George Collyn. Proved and probated 12 January 1626-7

1628 Whaples, Agnes widow Margaretting 181 EW 18

xv Maye 1627.... Being in good health and memory.... Body to christian buryall.... I geve to the child which I have conceyved and am not yet delyvered of the sum of twelve pounds at age of twenty years if it be so long lyve.... Item all the resadue goods and chattles I give to Nicholas Reynolds which dwelleth with me to pay all debts, etc. and bring uppe the said child yet unborn keeping and maynteyning it.... My executor to pay himself all such moneys as I owe him that is to say twentie pounds which I borrowed of him provided alwayes and my meaning ys that if the said child dye before the said age of twentie yeares to pay said twelve pounds

to anu other person or persons.... And my executor shall have the education of my son Josephe Whaples he to take rents and proffitts of his land as gardyan to him maynteyning and keeping him.... My loving father Henry Lylbed to be overseer.... To Josephe my sonn tenn shillings at twenty one. Wit: William Bearman, Ezeakell Canforde. Proved and probated 5 January 1627-8 to Nicholas Reynolds.

1640 **Whaples, Jamesglover(?) Colchester grocer(?)** 239 CW 13

26 June 1640.... Being sicke and weak, etc.... Burial at discretion of me executrix.... To my mother Margreet Whaples fortie... within one month after my decease.... My executrix to deliver to my mother at hir howse at Brayntree one chalder of sea coles carradge and cost from above money... To my sister Mary Chapman fowrtie shillings within twelve months nextafter my decease.... I give unto William Whaples my brother twelve pence.... I give unto Peter Whaples my brother twelve pence.... I give unto Elizabeth Layer my syster within one month next after rest of my good moveable and unmoveable debts legacies, etc. to Jone my wife also to be sole executrix. Wit: Richard Worth(?), John Lawsall, Peter Witham. Proved and probated 30 July 1640.

1646 **Whaples, William Great Waltham** 165 BW 58

Twelth day January 1643 Caroli Regis decimo nono (19). I William Whaples of Great Waltham (one of the sonnes of John Whaples of the same parish).... Being sick, etc.... My crofte or p'cell called Warditche to Robert Whaples my brother forever.... Rents and proffitts of said land to my loving mother until Robert come to 21.... John Bernard the elder of Kings in Great Waltham should occupy said land paying rent to my said mother.... To Thomas Whaples my brother term of years I have in two p'cells of land called Barne Croft & Buttons and the orchard of my fathers.... I am endebted unto Francis Tanner of Great Waltham he have & enjoye all residue of my goods, etc. he paying my father twenty shillings within 3 months he to be executor. Wit: John Barnard and Thomas Parker. Proved 19 April 1645.

1667 **Whaples, Ellen spinster Colchester** 46 BR 8

30 June 1666.... Burial at discretion of my executor.... To Mary Carter one sheet, etc.... To Margaret Simpson silver hart thimble.... To Samuel Guilson pair of clove band strings.... To Esther Bart one whiske.... To William Kenhavell(?) one whiske.... To my dame Guison my best gloves and scarfe.... To Elizabeth Wells all my clothes, etc. and linen, etc.... All rest of my goods clothes linen or woolen to be sold to the best advantage

debts funeral charges paid rest to my brother Peter Whaples, but if my brother shall not within seven years come to demand this money that my will is that then my money putt out for the use of my brother shall be p(ar)ted divided between my kinred as those living at Brainctree my aunt daughter of ye old Heath and my cousen John Simpson's children.... Mr. John Millbanke to be sole executor and my loving kinsman John Simpson supervisor. Wit: John Harvell and Stephen Diamond. Proved 20 April 1667.

1688 **Whaples, Thomas yeoman Great Waltham 154 ER 25**

11 September 1686. I Thomas Whaples in Rophy end parish of Great Waltham, yeoman... Being aged and weak but sound mind, etc.... To my son-in-law John Davinish for six years after my decease my mansion house called Collets wherein I now dwell with all barnes, etc., also lands tenement free and copy in Great Waltham or elsewhere in county Essex and other land called Hamstell Fyeld & then to Mary Davinish for her life; after he deceased to my grandson John Davinish and for his heirs, etc. for want of issue to the second & third son, for want of issue, etc., then to daughter, etc., and for want of such lawful issue, to Daniel Miller, my grandson and his heirs upon condition that those who enjoye and posses said houses and lands to pay legacies.... To my two grandsons Thomas Sayer and Robert Miller twenty pounds each at 21.... If Thomas Sayer die to Robert Miller.... To granddaughter Rebecka Miller, 25 pounds at 21.... To Daniel Miller, my son-in-law, 10 pounds.... To my grandchilren, Danile Miller, Jone Miller, Francis Miller, Mary Miller, and Sarah Miller, five pounds at 21.... To my two grandchildren, Sarah Lewin and Thomas Lewin, 10 pounds at 21.... If any who enjoye said lands do refuse to pay said legacies they to enter said land until satisfaction be made.... To my youngest daughter Sarah Lewin and her heirs, two p'cells of land, one called Warditch, five acres, and Hamstall Field, abbutting upon croft of land called Reading of Gregory Brownes on the east.... To my son-in-law Thomas Sayer and John Hampton 10 shillings each.... Thomas Sayer to be overseer.... Residue of goods and chattels to Mary Davinish, my loving daughter, she to be sole executrix. Wit: Jeremiah Perry, William Barker, Robert Hard (x), Mary Barker. Proved 14 September 1689. Probatum decimo quarter (14) September 1689 to Maria Davinish, wife of John Davinish.

Boyd's Marriage Index. 1538 to 1625. Whipple and variants abstract:

1573	Wiple, Win. & Osmond Badcock Great Birch
1574	Waples, Agn. & Wm. Smith Coggeshall
1578	Waple, Mgt. & Jn. Quixly Wyvenhoe

1582	Waple, Jn. & Jane Sparrow Sisted
1584	Waple, Will & Elz. Walker Kelvedon
1594	Weple, Wm. & Jone Lily Tollesbury
1601	Waples, Jn. & Tomasin _____ South Weald
1602	Waples, Mgt. & Wm. Newel Rayne
1604	Waples, Jn. & Joan Dale Chelmsford
1605	Waples, Audry & Lane Clarke als Youngman Great Leighs
1609	Waples, Wm. & An. Kilson Felsted
1620	Waple, Rob & Sus. Coffal Tollesbury
1602	Wippell, Math & Ann Hawkins Bocking St. Mary
1603	Wipple, Mgt. & Laur. Arthur Bocking St. Mary
1605	Wepple, Anna & Jn. Pepper Bocking St. Mary
1613	Wipple, Jana & Hen. Caldam Bocking St. Mary
1618	Wipple, Elz. & Isaac Green Bocking St. Mary
1618	Wipple, Jana & Edw. Feast Bocking St. Mary
1625	Wipple, Maria & Ric. Baker Bocking St. Mary

Personal Names Index from the Essex Record Office.
Whipple and variants abstract:

1592	Whipple, Math Bocking Q/SR 125/11
1595-99	Whipple, Math Bocking Q/SR 131/10, 136/9
1599)	Whipple, Math clothier Bocking Q/SR 148/110-113 1605) 173/104 1609) 188/73
1613	Whipple Bocking D/DU 203/6

Tollesbury, Essex, Diocese of London. Original registers 25 March 1590 to 24 March 1624-5. Baptisms, marriages, and burials. Essex Record Office (D/P128/1/2) Whipple and variant abstract:

Baptisms. Years 1594 and 1625 are missing.

9 Jan. 1591	Robt Whaple
20 Mar. 1597-8	Luce Whaple
27 Apr. 1606	Grace, the bastard daughter of widow Whaple
3 Apr. 1621	Robert Whaple
6 Feb. 1624-5	John, the son of Robert Whaples & Susan, his wife

Marriages.

6 Oct. 1594	Wm. Wheple & Jone Lilly.
31 Aug. 1620	Robert Whaple & Susan Coffall(?)

Burials.

10 Jul. 1594	Goodwyfe Whaple buryed
28 Jun. 1597	Willm. Whaple buried
13 Sept. 1601	Wm. Whaple buried
1 Sept. 1625	Susan Whaples was buried
7 Jan. 1625-6	John Whaple was buried

Great Waltham, Essex, Diocese of London. Original registers 25 March 1620 to 24 March 1624-5. Baptisms, marriages, and burials. Essex Record Office (D/P121/0) Whipple and variant abstract:

Baptisms.

13 Dec. 1618	Johis Whaples, fil: Johis (John, son of John)
13 Aug. 1620	Willm Whaples, fil: Johis (William, son of John)

Marriages. Five entries in 1616 with male surnames obliterated.

2 Oct. 1600	Johes Cavill et Margart Whaples (John Cavill and Margaret Whaples)
19 Jan. 1617	Johis Whaples et Ma: Collet (John Whaples and Ma: Collet)

Burials.

12 Jun. 1601	Judithe Whaples, fil: Willimii Junij (Judith Whaples, daughter of William, junior)
13 Nov. 1602	Willm. Whaples

Great Waltham, Essex, Diocese of London. Original registers 25 March 1625 to 24 March 1650-1. Baptisms, marriages, and burials. Essex Record Office (D/P121/1/0) Whipple and variant abstract:

Baptisms.

16 Feb. 1629-30	Robte, the sonne of John Whaples
15/16 Feb. 1646-7	Rebecca, fil, Thos Waples
17 Jul. 1649	Mary, daughter of Thos Whaples

Marriages. No entries for name or variants.

Burials.

5 May 1635	Margaret Whaples
29 Apr. 1638	John Whaples

MARCH 1990 REPORT

Following is the material received from Debretts by Dr. Charles Whipple in March 1990. It contains many references to the earlier report but neither connects Capt. John Whipple of Dorchester, MA and Providence, RI to the Ipswich, MA Whipples nor discovers his parents.

THE WHIPPLE FAMILY OF ESSEX[12]

Searches for the baptism of John the ancestor in English records found that a John Whaples was baptized on 13 December 1618 at Great Waltham, Essex, the son of John Whaples senior and Mary, formerly Collett, who married on 19 January 1617 in the same parish. The family was investigated in some detail and all Whipple and variant probates proved in Essex between 1549 and 1700 were examined. No firm evidence emerged to prove beyond doubt that John baptized in 1618 was either the ancestor or related to the Bocking Whipple family.

Research recommenced by searching for Whipple wills proved in the Prerogative Court of Canterbury between 1630 and 1700.[13] From this listing the details were abstracted from three wills of possible relevance:

1635	Wyvell, Margaret Walden, Essex, widow
1636	Whaplett, Thomas deceased in Virginia
1657	Whippe, Robert Nasing, Essex, gent

The will of Margaret Wyvell did not mention any relatives named Whipple. The will of Thomas Whaplett showed he owned a tobacco plantation in Virginia. He mentioned an uncle Thomas and an unmarried sister Rebecca without stating their places of residence. Thomas the testator appears to have lived in London prior to his emigration.

The 1657 will of Robert Whippe of Nazeing referred to his brother Richard and Richard's unnamed children and to a sister Ellen. Previously, the will, dated 1666, of an Ellen Whaples spinster of Colchester had been abstracted, as had the will of Ellen's brother James, a grocer of Colchester (proved in 1640). From these it was revealed that Ellen and James had brothers Peter (living abroad) and William, and married sisters Mary Chapman and Elizabeth Layer. Neither testator mentioned brothers named Robert or Richard. We cannot therefore determine whether the Ellen mentioned in Robert's will is the Ellen whose will was dated 1666. No connection with the Bocking or Great Waltham families was established.

As John the presumed ancestor was baptized on 13 December 1618 at Great Waltham the son of John Whaples and Mary, formerly Collett, our next step was to search for and abstract Collett wills, hoping they might contain references to Whipple relatives. Beginning with the PCC indexes, Collett entries between 1605 and 1660 were listed.[14] It was assumed Mary Collett was from an Essex Collett family, although this may not have been the case. Only one Essex entry was found, the 1649 will of a Jane Collett of Corringham, Essex. Details of the document were abstracted but no reference were found to any Whipple relatives.

A search of the will indexes of the local Essex probate courts between 1617 and 1650 produced five Collett entries:

1629/30	Clement Collett als Daynish of Cressing
1642	Matthew Collett als Devonishe of Much Holland
1646/7	John Collett als Danish of Much Lyes
1639	Thomas Devinishe als Collett of Fowlness
1742	Richard Collett of Barking

These wills were interesting as the Collett testators in four of the wills were also known as Daynish/Devonish(e). The previously abstracted will of Thomas Whaples proved in 1689, brother of John the possible ancestor, mentioned a house called Colletts and named a son-in-law John Davinish. All the Collett wills were abstracted. While none made any direct reference to Whipple relatives, tenuous connections were found between the will of John Collett in 1646-7 and the 1689 will of Thomas Whaples. John Collett alias Danish of Much Lyes, a husbandman, mentioned brothers Richard, Thomas, and Andrew; Richard's son Edmond, and a kinsman named John Miller. Thomas Whaples' will mentioned a house named Colletts, son-in-law John Davinish and grandchildren named Miller, Thomas' daughter Rebecca having married a Daniel Miller. However, we were unable to determine the exact relationship between Thomas Whaples and John Collett-Danish. It is possible that Thomas Whaples inherited the house `Colletts' on the death of his father—the house either having come into the Whaples family through Thomas' wife Mary, or being known as `Colletts' as this was Mary's maiden name. John Davinishe, who married Thomas Whaples daughter Mary, may have been a son or other relative of John Collett/Danish's brothers Richard, Thomas, or Andrew. The Miller connection could not be established.

The will of Thomas Devinishe alias Collett dated 1639 was also of interest. No date was given for its probate, and although it was written in 1639 it may be that of the Thomas Collett of Stondon Co Herford (sic) mentioned in the will of John Collett dated 1644, Thomas dying after this date. Thomas, however, was said to be of Fowlness in 1639 rather than of

Stondon, as in John's will. We cannot therefore assume that the two Thomases are the same. Thomas of Fowlness mentions his sons Robert and Richard and indicates Richard is living abroad, unfortunately without giving his place of residence. If this will was that of John Collett's brother Thomas, we had now found a Collett family, with a member living abroad, which was perhaps connected with the Great Waltham Whaples family. However there was still no proven link with either the Great Waltham or Bocking family.

Nothing further was learnt from the remaining Collett wills so attention was directed to confirm John the ancestor's stated apprenticeship to Israel Stoughton. The source of this information was unknown, but further evidence was sought from printed sources and Essex records. Bank's *Planters of the Commonwealth* states that members of the Stoughton family, like the ancestor John Whipple, were `presumed to have been aboard ships in the Winthrop Fleet of 1630' and lists:

Israel Stoughton	Coggeshall Essex	Dorchester
Mrs. Elizabeth Stoughton	Coggeshall Essex	Dorchester
Thomas Stoughton	Coggeshall Essex	Dorchester
Mr. Stoughton	Coggeshall Essex	Dorchester

The Essex section of *Boyd's Marriage Index* was examined from 1538 to 1650 for Stoughton entries. Six were found. The marriage of Israel and Elizabeth and the marriage of Thomas was not amongst them. No Stoughton/Whipple marriages were found, although a Nathaniel Stoughton married in Bocking in 1633:

1560	Stoton, Nic & Alce Howell Lt Baddow	
1591	Stoughton, Jn & Elz Gelle Moreton	
1605	Stoughton, Mary & Jn Manfield	Coggeshall
1607	Stoughton, Mgt & Wm Hutley	Felsted
1613	Stoughton, Elz & Jn Skudder	Malden St Mary
1633	Stoughton, Nath & Maria Houghton	Bocking

Following Bank's indication that the Stoughtons were of Coggeshall, the registers of this parish, along with Bocking and Great Waltham, were examined for Stoughton entries. Great Waltham baptism registers for 1595-1625 did not contain entries for the surname. Transcripts of Coggeshall baptisms for 1584-1630 were examined (1609-10 missing) and Israel's baptism plus other Stoughton entries were found. Great Coggeshall Baptisms:

18 Feb 1602/3	Israel son of Thomas Stoughton
28 Feb 1612/3	Elizabeth Stoughton da of Thomas junior
20 Mar 1613/4	Elizabeth Stoughton da of Thomas
29 Oct 1615	Anna Stoughton da of Thomas

10 Jan 1618/9	Sarah Stoughton da of Thomas
12 May 1622	Katherine Stoughton da of Thomas & Elizabeth

Stoughton entries were also found in Bocking. The baptism transcript registers examined from 1561 to 1605 (missing 1606-1654) did not include Stoughton entries, but the 1633 marriage of Nathaniel and Maria in *Boyd's Marriage Index* was found. Burials between 1558-1628 were searched revealing five Stoughton entries: a Thomas Stoughton buried 20 October 1615 and four children of a William Stoughton were buried between 1616 and 1628.[15] Bocking apprenticeship records do not survive for the period—the earliest dating from 1687. Coggeshall apprentice records commence in 1718.

We sought Stoughton wills from Essex hoping to find a connection between the Stoughtons of Coggeshall and Bocking plus a Stoughton/Whipple link. PCC will indexes for 1383-1700 (except the period 1661-1670) were checked. Some Stoughton were found but none in Essex. The 1400-1700 in- dexes of the local Essex courts were examined and disclosed:

1613	Stoughton, Richard shepherd Gt. Amwell Herts 225 BW36
1675	Stoughton, Isabel widow Saffron Walden 139 CR 9
1662	Stoughton, William innholder 179 CW 16

The above listed wills were abstracted. Richard Stoughton of Great Amwell mentioned a niece Mary Lawrence. This surname was in the 1549 will of Jone Whippul of Bromefield who mentioned a Rose and Joanne Lawrence. However, although this may indicate a connection, it may just be coincidence. The wills of William and Isabel Stoughton were of husband and wife. Both mentioned Clayden and Sell grandchildren; neither of these surnames appear in any Whipple or Collett material so far examined.

Since no definite evidence of the link emerged in Essex records, research was directed to American sources. We found few definitive records relating to John Whipple of Dorchester, making it almost impossible to find a link between the ancestral John and the Whipples of Ipswich.

From *Whipple-Hill Families* by John Whipple-Hill, Chicago 1897, it was learnt that John Whipple was born about 1616/17. His tombstone records his age at death as 'about' sixty eight years in May 1685:

In Memory of
Capt. JOHN WHIPPLE
Who was born in England and died in Providencetown
The 16th May, Anno Dona 1685
About 68 years of age

John received a grant of land at Dorchester in 1637 according to Dorchester town records (City Document 9) 4th Report of the Boston Record Commissioners 1880, page 27:

2 Jan. 1637. It is ordered than (sic) John Whipple shall have 8 akers of land granted him in full of all allottments to be layd out by Mr. Stoughton & Mr. Glouer about the mill as may be least p'juditiall to the plantation, this graunt being in reguard of a former p'mise upon record.

This phase of research provided more information on the Great Waltham Whaples family and shows the Collett(Davinish(e)/Whaples families were probably connected, even though no exact relationships, other than the marriage of Thomas Whaples and Mary Collett, can be discerned. The lack of references in land deeds in America to the name Whipple, which might have enabled us to establish the surnames of neighbors and possible Whipple relatives in Dorchester, has hampered research in American records. Such information might have led to a connection with English families with members living abroad. We cannot rule out the possibility that the John Whaples baptized in 1618 at Great Waltham was the ancestor, but this cannot be substantiated; the non-survival of relevant parish material has also hindered this aspect of the research.

This research could be continued by examining more probate material and searching for further Collett/Davinuish, Stoughton, and Whipple wills beyond the county of Essex. Chancery records could also be consulted. However there would be no guarantee that we would be able to confirm the relevance of the 1618 baptism, or any other alternative baptism located.

* * *

Susanna Clarke married John Whipple 28 Aug. 1621 at St. Andrews by the Wardrobe, London. Daughter of Stephen and Elizabeth (____) Clarke, she was baptized 11 Jan. 1595/6 at Theydon Garnon, Essex.[16]

1. As well as with his son, Sir Giles Capell, knight.
2. She had brothers John and George Rowse, a sister Dorothy Raynolds, and a godson Edward Raynolds.
3. See endnote 76, p. 124 for information on the job of Steward.
4. The right to name the holder of a church benefice. A benefice is an endowed church office providing a living for a vicar, rector, etc.
5. P.O. Box 7, Alresford, Hampshire, England SO24 9EN, telephone (0962) 73267.
6. Letter to Blaine Whipple dated March 5, 1992. "Dear Blaine: Yours is a shared concern of mine in witnessing so much duplicated effort. Hopefully, sharing the enclosed 1988 and 1990 reports will to some extent obviate this... I am most pleased to be able to share this information with others. Sincerely yours, C.M. Whipple /s/ Charles." Dr. Whipple is a professor of psychology at Central Oklahoma State University and lives in Edmond, OK.
7. There is no confirmation that her last name was Hawkins.
8. There is no confirmation that here surname was either They or Darling.
9. Winifred Ashwell, *Essex and the Lyon: the people who sailed in her to New England in 1632 and the land to which they went*. Braintree District Council. (Braintree, Essex, England. 1979).
10. This is an error. Elder John Whipple of Ipswich was an agent for Mr. Saltonstall who was a resident of Ipswich.
11. Note that *Boyd's Marriage Index* has William Whaples marrying Ann Kitson. The original Felsted parish records has him marrying Ann Lilford. William's will, written in 1602, was witnessed by Henry Lilford who was probably a brother-in-law or a father-in-law. Lilford as a witness suggests Boyd's is wrong.
12. Sources consulted by Debrett: Probate records: *Essex wills*, 1400-1720; Essex Record Office Vols 1 & 2 for Stoughton entries; Essex Wills, 1617-1650 for Collett and variant entries; *Prerogative Court of Canterbury, 1630-1700* for Whipple and variant entries (Essex entries only abstracted), 1605-1660, Collett and variant entries (Essex entries only abstracted).

    P*arish registers: Great Coggeshall*, transcript registers; Essex Record Office, baptisms 1583/4-1630 (missing 1609-10), Stoughton entries; Bocking, transcript registers; Essex record office, baptisms 1561-1605 (missing 1606-1654); marriages, 1593-1639; burials, 1558-1628; Stoughton entries.

    Printed sources: Bank's *Planters of the Commonwealth*, pp. 92, 93 Stoughton and Whipple entries, p. 100 Whipple entries; *4th Report of Boston Record Commissioners (1880) Dorchester Town Records*, city Document 9, p. 27 Whipple entries; *New England Marriages Prior to 1700*, Whipple entries; Paige, *List of Freemen in Massachusetts*, C.R. Vol. 1, p. 281, C.R. Vol IV, p. 600, C.R. Vol IV, p. 738; *Charles Henry Pope, Pioneers of Massachusetts 1620-1650* (1909) Whipple references, p. 491; *Whipple-Hill Families* (*Chicago* 1897), John Whipple references, p. 27; *Dorchester Church Records*, Boston Commissioner Series, Whipple references, p. 7; *The American Genealogists* and *NEHG Register*, 33:1054, Stoughton references; *Genealogical Gleanings in England* and *NEHG Register*, 40: 306, Stoughton references.

    Miscellaneous: *Boyd's Marriage Index*, 1538-1650. Stoughton entries.
13. Prerogative Court of Canterbury wills, 1630 to 1700, Whipple and variant abstract. **1633. John Whaplett**, parish of St. Michael le Querne, London (cit & vintner) proved 15 March 1632/3 by Solomon Cole and Thomas Abbott; W 21 Russell. **1635. Margaret Wivell**, Walden, Essex, widow, proved 12 December by William Brockett; W 125

Sadler. 1636. **Thomas Whaplett**, deceased in Virginia, proved 27 July by sister Rebecca, Pr to John Redman, Admon 3 Nov. to Ralphe Gregge, d.b.n. his late wife Rebecca; W 82 Pile. 1646. **Thomas Whippy**, parish of St. Clement Danes, Middsx, proved 5 October by Nathaniel Daniel; W 148 Twisse. 1647. **John Whippey**, Worle, Somerset, Admon with will 5 May to relict Frances; W 92 & 94 Fines. 1648. **Sisley Wappall**, St. Mary Magdalene, Bermondsey Surrey, proved 10 Jan. 1647/48 by daughter Elizabeth W.; W 5 Essex. 1654. **Edward Waples**, yeoman of Prickweeke Gt. Chew, Somerset; 177, 1657. **Robert Whippe**, gent. of Nasing, Essex; 492. 1665. **Abigail Waples**, St Botolph Aldgate, Middsx, widow; 106. 1669. **George Whippey**, yeoman of Puxton Somerset; 25. 1670. **Robert Whipp**, the elder of Medborne Liddington, Wilts, gent; 155. 1679. **Thomas Whaplett**, cit & vintner of London, St Michael Cornhill; 112. 1680. **George Whipham**, Yeoman of Castle Camps, Cambridge; 68. 1685. **John Wapshott**, gent of Chertsey, Surrey; 38. 1687. **Anne Waple(s)**, wid of Eastcoate, Pattishall N'Hants; 145. 1687. **Thomas Whippey**, senr, Yeoman of Filton, also Whitchurch, Somerset; 71.

14. Prerogative Court of Canterbury, wills, 1605 to 1660, Collett and variant abstract. 1617. **John Collett**, weaver, Astley, Shropshire; 62 Weldon. 1617. **Mary Colet**, Hadham, Herts; 113 Weldon. 1621. **Elinor Collett**, widow, Astley, Shropshire; 71 Dale. 1622. **Joseph Collett**, Wimborne Minster, Dorset; 18 Savile. 1623. **Nicholas Colet**, gent, Gt. Hadham, Herts; 128 Swann. 1624. **Anne Collett**, widow, Leighton Buzzard Bedfordshire; 20 Byrde. 1626. **Stephen Collett**, fishmonger, London & cit of St James Garlickhithe; 148 Hel. 1627. **Anthonie Collett**, Slaughter, Gloucs; 79 Skynner. 1631. **Joan Collett**, St Thomas the Apostle, London; 75 St John. 1633. **Richard Collett**, Newton, Ashchurch Gloucs, proved 31 May by brother James; 47 Russell. 1634. **Robert Collett**, vit & cook, St Mary Magdalen, Old Fish Street, proved 17 March 1633/4 by relict Margaret. 1635. **Thomas Colletts**, Codsall, Staffs, proved 4 May by son William; 34 Dixy. 1639. **Robert Collett**, Westcote, Gloucs, proved 4 July by brothers Richard & John Harris; 118 Harvey. 1641. **James Collett**, Tewkesbury, Gloucs, proved 1 June by relict Joan. 1654. **Garrett Collent**, merchant, St Dunstan in the East London, proved 23 June by John Cassier of London, merchant; 78 Rovers. 1645. **Thomas Collett**, Milton next Gravesent, Kent, proved 10 Feb. 1644/5 Admon with will to Daniel Collins; 40 Rivers. 1646. **Thomas Collett**, Astley St Mary Shrewsbury, Salop, proved 8 July by relict Dorothy; 103 Twisse. 1647. **Henry Collett**, Bourton on the Water, Gloucs, proved 20 Feb. 1646/7 by relict Anne; 38 Fines. 1647. **William Collett**, of the Tower Precinct, London, gent, proved 23 March 1646/76 by brother Henry; 57 Fines. 1648. **Henry Collett**, of Little Dorsington, parish of Welford, Wrws (& Gloucs), proved 20 Feb. 1647/8 by son John; 25 Essex. 1648. **Christopher Collett**, deceased abroad or Dec. 5 to brother Daniel; 184 /Essex, Admon with will. 1649. **Thomas Collett**, St Botolph Aldgate London, proved 24 Feb. 1648/9 by relict Alice; 24 Fairfax. 1649. **Jane Collett**, widow of Corringham, Essex, proved 2 May by John Woodcocke; 70 Fairfax. 1650. **Richard Collett**, Aldermaston (Aldermister) Worcs, proved 14 Nov. by relict Alice; 171 Pembroke. 1651. **Anthony Collett**, baker of Gloucester, 1 Feb. 1650/1 to brother Thomas, d.m. son John; relict Elizabeth having died; 18 Grey, Admon with will. 1651. **Thomas Collett**, of Mimside South Mimms Middsx, proved 8 March 1650/1 by relict Margaret; 47 Grey. 1652. **Henry Collett**, the elder of St Andrew Canterbury, proved 29 Jan. 1651/2 by dau. Mary Lake, wife of Kendricke; 3 Bowyer. 1653. **John Collett**, widower of St Martin-in-the-Fields; 296. 1654. **Anthony Collett**, baker of Gloucester; 485. 1654. **Richard Collett**, senior, gent of Kingsbury Middsx; 23. 1654. **Thomas Collett**, yeoman of Over, Cambs; 263. 1654. **William Collett**, yeoman of Over, Cambs; 282. 1655. **Edward**

Collett, yeoman of Chessett Wood Knoll, Hampton in Arden Warws; 164. 1655. **John Collett**, St Mary Magdalene, Bermondsey Surrey; 284. 1655. **Roger Collett**, Onnocke, Wilts; 23. 1656. **Edward Collett**, gent of Tamworth, Warws; 283. 1656. **Francis Collett**, yeoman of Wenhaston, Suff; 191. 1656. **Joane Collett**, widow of Charleton Kings, Gloucs; 486. 1656. **John Collett**, St Mary Magdalene, Bermondsey Surrey; 24. 1657. **Alice Collett**, Stow-on-the-Wold, Gloucs; 505. 1657. **Edward Collett**, Market Deeping, Lincs; 358; 1658. **Ann Collett**, widow of Market Deeping, Lincs; 232. 1659. **Anthony Collett**, Little Chavill, Wilts; 265.

15. Bocking, Essex, Diocese of London, transcripts 1 Jan 1557/8 to 31 Dec. 1628, burials. Essex Record Office (ERO T/R). Stoughton abstract: 20 Oct. 1615, Thomas Stoughton sepultus 20; 18 July 1616, Johnes Stoughton filius Willmi Stoughton sepultus 18; 14 July 1618, Gulielmus Stoughton filius Gulielmi Stoughton sepultus 14; 23 Jan. 1624/5, Alicia Stoughton filia Gulielmi Stoughton sepulta 25; 15 June 1626, Thomas Stoughton filius Gulielmi Stoughton sepultus 15.
16. Clarke and Stacy Origins of Three Immigrants to Ipswich, Massachusetts: Simon and Elizabeth (Clarke) Stacy and Her Sister, Susanna (Clarke) Whipple. Dr. William Wyman Fiske. Register, 160:637, 17-29.

APPENDIX TWO

LAST WILL AND TESTAMENT OF MATTHEW WHIPPLE OF IPSWICH

Matthew Whipple's will was proved in Ipswich Court. The following copy is taken from the record contained in the Ipswich Deeds, Volume I, leaf 28, the original being missing.

Month 3: Day 7: 1645 (May 7, 1645).
In the name of God amen. I Matthew Whipple of Ipswich in New England, being by reason of present sickness much increasing upon me seriously admonished of my mortality, yet through the mercy of God enjoying perfect memory and good understanding, after humble acknowledgement of the great patience and rich mercy of God to me, a most unworthy sinner all my life long, and the commending of my spirit to his grace in Jesus Christ, my body after my decease to comly burial in the earth out of which it was taken in hope of resurrection unto eternal life, and my dear children to the everlasting blessing of their heavenly father, I do hereby dispose of that estate which the lord hath graciously given unto me as followeth:

Unto **my eldest son John**, three score pounds, to **my son Matthew**, forty pounds, to **my son Joseph**, forty pounds; unto **my daughter Mary**, twenty pounds; unto **my daughter Anna**, twenty pounds; unto **my daughter Elizabeth** twenty pounds; unto our reverend elders, Mr. Nathaniel Rogers and Mr. John Norton, to either of them, forty shillings. To the poor of Ipswich, forty shillings.

In case my estate be found to exceed these sums, the one half thereof I give to my eldest son John, the other half to my two younger sons.

In case my estate fall short of the aforesaid sums, the deduct shall be out of the portion of all my children equally.

My will is that none of my children shall be disposed of in marriage or service but by the approbation and consent of the present elders and **my dear brother John Whipple**.

I leave the disposing of my three sons to the care of my executors whom I name and desire to be Mr. Nathaniel Rogers, Mr. Norton, Mr. Robert Payne, and my brother John Whipple.

In witness hereof I have set to my hand the day and year above written.
Matthew Whipple

Witnesses hereof: John Norton. John Whipple

CODICIL TO WILL OF MATTHEW WHIPPLE

Month the 9th: 13th day: 1646.
I having by the providence of God changed my estate by marriage since the making of the writing above, I do give unto **my wife Rose** the sum of ten pounds to be paid her presently after my decease, leaving unto her all the goods or estate that she had before marriage.

And this being done, I will that the writing above should stand in full force and virtue as my last will and testament; further declaring my meaning to be that the portions to my sons be paid at the age of one and twenty years and my daughters at the age of twenty: and the manner of the disposing my estate for the best accomplishment of the intent of my will, I commit unto my above-named executors or any other matter that may be forgotten to be by them ordered and because they may be removed or diminished by death or any other departure, I hereby give them power that the remaining number shall choose a supply in that case to fill up the number except he that is removed shall appoint another in his room.

And this whole writing to wit that part was write the 7th day of the 3 month 1645 and this addition I make and declare to be my last will and testament being of good understanding and memory setting hereunto my hand. The mark of Matthew Whipple.

Delivered in the presence of us the day and year above written: Theophilus Wilson. Thomas Knowlton.

MATTHEW WHIPPLE INVENTORY

IN THE HALL

3 muskets, 3 pr. bandoliers, 3 swords, 2 rests	3	0	0
1 fowling piece	1	0	0
A corslett, pike, and sword	1	0	0
1 rapier	5	0	
1 halberd, 1 bill	4	0	
3 brass pots, weighing 68 lb. at 9d	2	11	0
1 old brass pot	2	6	
5 kettles and a pot-lid weighing 58 lb. a 16d	3	17	4
1 copper weighing 40 lb.	2	0	0
5 possnetts	12	0	
85 pieces of pewter, 147 lb. a 16d.	9	16	0
4 pewter candlesticks	10	0	
2 pewter salts	5	0	
2 pewter pots, 1 cup and a bottle	4	6	

1 pewter flagon	7	0	
21 brass alchemie spoons at 4s of the spoon	4	4	0
9 pewter spoons at 18d per dozen	1	0	
5 chaffing dishes and a skimmer		14	0
7 pieces of latten	70		
2 pr of cob-irons, 1 fire pan, 2 pr. tongs, 1 fire fork and 1 fire iron, 58 lb. @ 4d	19	4	
4 spits weighing 20 lb @ 6d	10	0	
2 warming pans	14	0	
2 iron dripping pans	6	0	
1 silver bowl and 2 silver spoons	3	3	0
1 pr. cob irons with brasses		6	0
29 books	4	8	6
6 dozen trenchers	3	0	
4 trays and a platter	5	0	
3 jugs	3	6	
1 earthen salt, 1 pan, 3 pots	3	0	
3 cheese mootes and 2 cheese breads	3	0	
1 cowle, 1 pail, 2 bowls. and 4 dishes	5	6	
2 firkins, 1 churn	4	0	
2 frying pans and a trivet	11	8	
2 bottles and 2 jacks	4	0	
1 pr. bellows, 1 gridiron, 1 pair shears and 1 smoothing iron with one heater	6	0	
2 keelers	4	0	
2 forms, 1 dresser, 2 chairs, 1 long boarded chest	11	6	

IN THE PARLOR

1 joyned table, 3 chests	1	12	0
1 chest with glass	2	0	0
1 pair of cob-irons, with fire pan and tongs	12	0	
1 clock	1	0	0
4 chest locks and 4 box locks and 6 pr. of joints	7	6	
1 stainell bearing cloth	1	0	0
1 baies bearing cloth		8	0
2 cloaks	3	0	0
1 old coat	1	0	0
1 suit	1	0	0
1 doublet and jacket	1	4	0
1 leather suit	1	6	8
1 leather doublet	14	0	

2 hats 0-7-0, 2 pr. gloves 2d, 4d, 2 pr stockings 4s	13	4	
1 diaper table cloth and 2 dozen diaper napkins	2	6	8
2 table cloth 1-0-0, 1 little table cloth 7-6	1	7	6
1 laced cupboard cloth and 1 fringed	8	0	
1 laced cupboard cloth and 1 fringed	6	0	
4 towels	6	0	
4 remnants of holland and sack cloth	12	6	
1 silk girtle		2	6
1 feather bed, 1 bolster, 9 pillows weighing 106 lb.	5	6	0

IN THE CHAMBER OVER THE PARLOR

3 flock beds and 3 bolsters	4	6	0
1 rug	1	0	0
1 pair of curtains and vallence	1	5	0
1 cupboard cloth	4	0	
4 cushions	3	0	
1 pair curtains	12	0	
7 children blankets	7	0	
1 pillion cloth and foot stool	6	8	
3 old axes, 6 pitch forks, 1 iron peele with other implements	1	0	0
2 linen wheels and 1 cotton wheel and a basket	9	0	
1 seller with glasses		5	0
dwelling house, barn, and four acres of land	36	0	0[1]

SALE OF MATTHEW WHIPPLE'S PROPERTY TO JOHN ANNIBAL, HIS SON-IN-LAW

Whereas Matthew Whipple, late of Ipswich, deceased, by his last Will and Testament (as appeareth upon record in the Book kept in Ipswich, fol. 28) did bequeath and dispose his whole estate for ye payment of his children's portions & other legacies, and hath ordained; us, Nathaniel Rogers, pastor of the church of Ipswich, John Norton, teacher of the same, Robert Payne, merchant, & John Whipple, executors of his said Will and Testament, whereby power is given unto us to make sale of his lands for the end above expressed: be it therefore known unto all men by these presents, that we, the executors aforesaid, for & in consideration of the sum of thirty nine pounds in hand already received, have sold & granted, & by these presents do sell, grant, & confirm unto John Anniball of Ipswich, tailor, all the said Matthew Whipple, his late dwelling house, barn, a house lot containing by estimation two acres, more or less, with commonage therein to belonging, which said house and lot is situated &

lyeth next the house lot of Robert Whittman & John Warner towards ye east, upon land of the said Mr. Norton toward the north, & the rest upon highways: also a planting lot containing by estimation four acres, more or less, lying next the ground of Widow Farnham toward the east, upon meadow ground of Mr. John Tuttle toward ye north, upon common grounds toward the south, and upon ground of Henry Archer towards ye west, in the common field, on the north side the river of Ipswich: also seven acres of marsh ground (in the same common field) be it more or less, lying upon the ground of Edward Gilman toward the north & south upon the ground of Thomas Tredmill towards the east, & upon the ground of John Morse towards ye west, with the appurtenances in the town of Ipswich, in ye county of Essex, in New England. To have & to hold the premises with the appurtenances, to him the said John Annyball, his heirs & assigns forever. In witness whereof we the said executors have hereunto set our hands & seals dated the first day of the tenth month Anne. Dom: 1647. Sealed, subscribed & delivered in the presence of us: Daniel Denison, Robert Lord.

Nathaniel Rogers
John Norton
Robert Payne
John Whipple

This deed was acknowledged before me the 12th day of ye month 1649 Samuel Symonds.[2]

LAST WILL AND TESTAMENT OF JONATHAN WHIPPLE[3]

Grandson of Matthew Whipple

In the name of God Amen. I Jonathan Whipple of Westborough in the County of Worcester in the Province of Massachusetts Bay in New England, husbandman, being of sound mind through the goodness of God but knowing that I may shortly put off this worldly Tabernacle of my Body, I do make this my Last Will and Testament. Following:

In the first and main place, I commend my soul to Almighty God who gave it, hoping for Eternal redemption through the merits of my Dear and only Savior, Jesus Christ.

My Body I commit to the Earth, Decently to be buried according to the discretion of my executors hereafter to be mentioned; in the Hope of a glorious Resurrection at the Last Day.

And as to such worldly Estates as it has pleased God to vouchsafe me, I hereby dispose thereof thusly. VIZ. First, my Will is that all my just Debts be duly paid.

Then my Will is that my Dear Wife, **Frances Whipple**, shall be Suitably and comfortably provided for and maintained in sickness and in Health during her Life from my Estate. Namely, for her Clothing, she have Two pounds per annum Lawful Money of this Province; for her provision, Fifty pounds weight of Beef, one hundred pounds weight of Pork. She shall also have the Benefit of one Cow, both the property and the good keeping thereof; Ten Bushels of Indian Corn and Two Bushels of Rye: one Barrel of flour and two Bushel of Malt. I give to her the East lower Room of my Dwelling House with free use of cellar and garret Room, with Liberty of passing and re-passing to and from Each of these. Also I give her a Convenient Spot for a garden ____ proper _____ in proportion to the Meat before mentioned. All these articles fore mentioned to be from year to year as long as she lives. I give her likewise all my Household Stuff and sufficient Firewood brought to her Door during her Life. And when it shall be the Will of God that she shall decease, she shall have Decent Funeral, the Charges thereof be out of my Estate.

Item. I give to my Son **Jonathan Whipple** half the Charge of his Comfortable and decent Maintenance and Support in Sickness and Health during his Life; and at his Death one Half of his Funeral Charges shall be borne out of my Estate. The other Half of both his Maintenance during Life and Funeral Charges is to be borne by my son **Francis** (hereafter to be mentioned) as appears by a Bond from said Francis to me bearing Date December 28, 1737.

Item. I give to my Son **Francis Whipple** Five Shillings Lawful Money to be paid him by my Executors upon my decease: I having already provided for him, and given him one-Half of what was my Real Estate as appears by a Deed of Gift from me to him bearing Date December 28, 1737.

Item. I give to my Son **Edwards Whipple** all the Estate both Real and Personal which I shall be at my Death possessed of, Except what has been already by this my Will otherwise disposed of. But all that I give my Son **Edwards**, it is to be understood is upon this Condition that the fore mentioned Articles relating to **my Wife** and **my Son Jonathan** aforesaid be fulfilled punctually according to the true Import of this my Will as above expressed. Then, and then only to be to Him and for his Heirs for Ever.

Finally, I do by these presents constitute and appoint my Dear and well beloved **Wife Frances**, above said, Executrix, and my **son Edwards**, before mentioned, Executor of this my last Will and Testament, hereby revoking and dis-annulling all other Wills or Testaments whatsoever But this having signed, sealed, declared, ad published this thirteenth Day of February in the twenty Eighth Year of the Reign of our Sovereign Lord George the Second of Great Britain The King, Defender of the Faith

anno Domini One Thousand Seven hundred Fifty and Five.

Signed **Jonathan Whipple** (signature) In presence of: Thomas Parkman (signature) Ebenezer Parkman (signature).

LAST WILL AND TESTAMENT OF FRANCIS WHIPPLE[7]

Great Grandson of Matthew Whipple

In the name of God Amen. This fifteenth day of February Anon Domini One Thousand Seven hundred and Eighty Three, I Francis Whipple of New Braintree in the County of Worcester and Commonwealth of the Massachusetts, Esquire, being of advanced age but through the goodness of God of perfect mind and memory, thanks be given to God therefore But calling to mind the mortality of my body and knowing it is appointed for all men once to die do make and ordain this my last Will and Testament that is to say principally and first of all, I give and recommend my Soul into the hands of God that gave it and my Body I recommend to the Earth to be buried in Christian burial at the discretion of my Executor nothing doubting but at the general resurrection I shall relive the same again by the mighty power of God as touching that worldly estate where with it has pleased God to bless me within this life. I give, demise and dispose of the same in the following manner and form.

My Will is and I order my Just Debts be paid out of my Estate by my Executor hereafter named.

Item. I give and bequeath unto **Abigail my beloved wife** in lieu of her Right of Dower all my indoor movables of all sorts to dispose of as she shall think proper. Further my Will is and I also order that my said wife shall have the use and improvement of my Dwelling House, the whole of it, and the free use of the Well. Furthermore, I give to my said wife the use and income of two cows such as she shall choose which shall be kept summer and winter well without any charge to her as also the use of my horse and Chais ready tackled at the door when ever she shall have occasion to ride. The house, the horse and Chais and cows, at my wife's decease, or if she shall marry again, I give to **my son Francis Whipple**. Furthermore, I order and my Will is that my said wife shall have the following articles delivered to her free from all charges yearly and every year during the time she shall remain my widow (VIZ) one bushel of good malt, five bushels of Indian corn, four bushels of rye, one bushel of wheat, one hundred weight of good pork, sixty weight of good beef, ten pounds of good flax, well dressed from swingle,[8] eight pounds of good sheep wool, half a bushel of salt, one barrel of cider, and also what fire wood she shall have occasion to use ready cut fit for the fire and delivered at the door and a due proportion of all sorts of [lace ?] as she shall need for her

own use and what apples she shall have occasion to use. And if my said wife shall not dispose of the indoor movables in her lifetime, which I fully empower her to do, then my Will is that what remains of them that she hath not disposed of at her decease shall be equally divided between my **two Daughters** or their heirs, namely **Elizabeth and Mary and my two Grand Daughters Lucy Livermor and Abigail Warrin.**

Item. I give and bequeath unto **my son Benjamin Whipple** and to his heirs the sum of Six Pounds lawful money to be paid in one year after my decease by my Executor.

Item. I give and bequeath unto **my son Thomas Whipple** and to his heirs the sum of Six Pounds lawful money to be paid in two years after my decease by my Executor.

Item. I give and bequeath to the heirs of **my late Son Abner Whipple,** deceased, the sum of Six Pounds to be paid in three years after my decease which I divide as followeth: Namely **Abner** to have Three Pounds, **Sibbel, Mary, and Daniel** Twenty Shillings each. The above sums which I have ordered to be paid to my above named Sons and their heirs together with what they have already had, I esteem their full share out of my estate.

Item. I give to the heirs of **my late Daughter Lucy Maynard**, deceased, the sum of Five Shillings and no more for their late mother hath her full share of my Estate.

Item. I give to **my Grand Daughter Abigail Warrin** Five Shillings and no more for **her late mother Abigail Warrin**, deceased, hath had her full share out of my Estate.

Item. I give to **my Daughter Elizabeth** Five Shillings and no more, she having had her share out of my Estate.

Item. I give and bequeath to **my Son Francis Whipple** and to his heirs and assigns for Ever all my Lands and Buildings that I own and possessed of in the Town of New Braintree together with all my Live Stock or Notes I have at my decease. These Lands and Buildings and Stock and Money I give to him, my said Son, upon the following conditions: Namely, that he or his heirs promise and deliver to my before named Wife, who is his Mother, the several articles before named in this Will during the term therein mentioned free from all charge and if they are not sufficient for her support then to provide all things necessary for her support in sickness and health and a decent burial when she shall decease this life. And that he pay all my just Debts and that he or his heirs pay the several sums which I have ordered to be paid in the Will to my other Children and Grand Children and by his filling these conditions, the above said Buildings and Lands with the other things mentioned are confirmed to him and his heirs and assigns for Ever.

Item. My Will is that my wearing apparel be equally divided between **my Sons – Benjamin, Thomas, Francis and my Grand Son Abner.**

Item. I constitute, appoint, make and ordain my trusty and well beloved **Son Francis Whipple** my sole Executor of this my Last Will and Testament. And I do hereby utterly disallow, revoke, and disannul all and every other Will and Testament and bequest and Executor by me made, ratifying and confirming this and no other to be my Last Will and Testament. And in witness whereof I have hereunto set my Hand and Seal the Day and Year above written.

/s/ Francis Whipple

Signed, Sealed, Published, Pronounced and Declared by the said Francis Whipple as his Last Will and Testament in presence of us the subscribers.

/s/ Robert Willson /s/ Joseph Willson /s/ Samuel Willson

On 7 Aug. 1787, Francis Jr., and Robert and Joseph Willson put up a £3,000 bond to Probate Judge Joseph Dorr to insure that Francis, as Estate Executor, would pay his father's debts and legacies according "to the true interest and meaning of his will and the law". When he performed accordingly, the bond obligation would be voided. All three were identified as yeomen. Francis Jr. and Robert were identified as being from New Braintree, Joseph from Oakham.

ENDNOTES, APPENDIX TWO

1. Thomas Franklin Waters, *Ipswich in the Massachusetts Bay Colony*, Part I, Historical. The Ipswich Historical Society. (Ipswich, Mass. 1905). 497-99.
2. *Ipswich Deed Records*, 1:65
3. Filed 29 April 1757, Case 63887, Recorded Vol. 5, Page 265-66, Probate Office, Worcester County Court House, Worcester, Mass.
4. Series A Case, 63887. Recorded Vol. 206 Page 502, Worcester County Court House, Worcester, Mass.
5. The document is found in Series A Case, 63887 Recorded Vol. 184 Page 368., Worcester County Court House, Worcester, Mass.
6. Recorded in Vol. 5, Page 265-66, Worcester County Records, Worcester, Massachusetts.
7. *Worcester County Records*, 184: 367.
8. To clean by beating or scraping with a swingle.

APPENDIX THREE

THE WHIPPLE FLAG AND THE WHIPPLE MUSEUM OF THE HISTORY OF SCIENCE

Most of us from the various American Whipple lineages recognize the Betsy Ross flag of 13 stars, the 48-star flag, if we were born before January 1959 (Alaska and Hawaii were admitted to the Union as the 49th and 50th states on January 3 and August 21, 1959), and the current flag of half a hundred stars. But how many Whipples know about the 48-star Whipple Flag named after its designer, Wayne Whipple?

The American flag evolved over many years and did not spring into existence when Betsy Ross finished her work in Philadelphia in May 1776. The first flag to have been raised on the North American continent was probably flown by Eric the Red or his son Leif when they raised the Viking sea rovers' banner (a black raven on a white field) in 1000 A.D. The first flag linked to the future Stars and Stripes was probably the red ensign with small white upper canton, the ancient symbol of England (the Cross of St. George) raised by the English settlers of Jamestown and Plymouth.

The stern Puritans of New England, objecting to the Cross of St. George, deleted it and flew a flag with a plain white canton[1] on the red field.[2] How prophetic! A field ready to receive white strokes with the empty canton waiting for a bright cluster of American stars.[3] The molet[4] was accepted as a star, emblems of the states joined together in solemn union.

The first documented appearance of the stripes was in mid 1775 on the regimental flag of a Philadelphia troop. The first recorded mention of a star used on an American ensign (flag) was in the *Massachusetts Spy* of May 10, 1774: "A ray of bright glory now beams from afar; The American ensign now sparkles a star; Which shall shortly flame wide through the skies."[5]

The two devices, stars and stripes, form the national flag. On June 14, 1777, the Continental Congress passed its Flag Resolution which described the flag only in general terms: "Resolved that the flag of the United States be 13 stripes alternate red and white, that the Union be 13 stars white in a blue field representing a new constellation." There was no indication of shape, size, or arrangement. "What became the American flag went through several evolutions from this time forward.

From the beginning, license was taken with the number of stripes. In 1795. A "Second Flag" of 15 stars and 15 stripes was decreed by Congress in honor of Kentucky and Vermont joining the Union. Theoretically, from then on one star and one stripe were to be added for each new state.

However, nine and 13 stripes continued in symbolic use simultaneously with a number corresponding to the number of states in the Union. Eventually it was found to be easier, cheaper, and more practical to keep the flag up to date by only adding stars.

Modern usage refers to the stars and stripes. But officially the stripes were named ahead of the stars in the original Flag Resolution of 1777, the second of 1795, and the final Act to Establish the Flag in 1818. Revolutionary soldiers fought under "rebellious stripes" and in some of the earlier flags, the canton of stars was so small it suggests reluctance to include them at all.

Verbally and visually the stripes prevailed for years. In 1814 Francis Scott Key hailed the "broad stripes and bright stars." In 1829 the song *Our Flag* told us to "Behold the glorious stripes and stars." In 1856 composer Edward J. Allen wrote we should "unfurl... the gleaming stripes and stars" and in 1861 Harrison Millard wrote of "... our stripes and stars, lov'd and honored by all" in his popular *Flag of the Free.*

Early U. S. Naval ensigns were dominated by two patterns: 1) staggered which placed the stars in over-lapping square or rectangular units of five and 2) the plainer fashion of placing the stars in three parallel rows. The "Great Star" or "Great Luminary" pattern emerged in 1818. It was used for the first national flag of 20 stars flown over the Capitol on April 13. The 20 stars were grouped to form one large star. Ships in New York harbor on July 4, 1857 flew a variety of flags. Most had the stars arranged in five horizontal rows of six stars each (30 in all); but 31 was then the proper number. Some had one large star formed of 31 smaller stars; others had them in a diamond or a circle; another had 31 stars in the form of an anchor; another had the anchor embellished with a circle of small stars. Other flags have used the rattlesnake and the eagle, sometimes together. The many different eagle flags and "standards of the eagle" were created during the Civil War.

A contest to design the classical style of American heraldry was held in the first decade of the twentieth century. The flag designed by Wayne Whipple, well known as the author of popular works on American history, was chosen in 1912 from among 500 entries.[6] Whipple's flag was approved by President William Howard Taft, widely publicized throughout the nation, and produced. The *Whipple Flag* epitomized American history. Its 48 stars are arranged in a central six-pointed "Great Star" to symbolize the 13 original states similar to both the "Great Seal" and "Great Star" patterns of many early flags. The ring of stars around the "Great Star" represents the states admitted to the Union up to the time of the First centennial Exposition of 1876 (25). An outer ring – with space for future additions—symbolizes the states admitted since the Centennial

(10). For some unknown reason, this flag fell into disuse and the last of the "Great Star" flags disappeared.

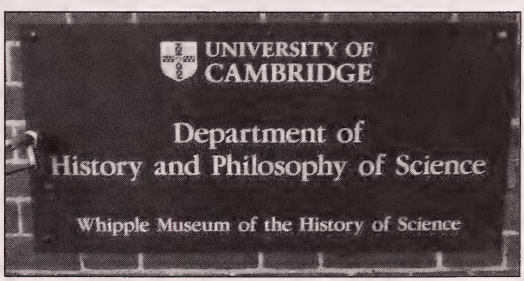
Whipple called his flag the "Peace Flag" in tribute to the global peace movement in the years preceding World War I. In late August 1913, the "Peace Flag" name was used at a meeting of nations at The Hague, Netherlands. Unfortunately no universal Peace Flag could be decided upon. But the nations agreed that each would have as a Peace Flag its own flag surrounded by a white border. For a time thereafter, the U.S. Peace Flag was the stars and stripes within the prescribed white frame.

Originality in American flag design ended early in the twentieth century. In 1923 and 1924, patriotic associations formulated a flag etiquette which came to known as the Flag Code. It became federal law in 1942.

THE WHIPPLE MUSEUM OF THE HISTORY OF SCIENCE[7]

The Whipple Museum of the History of Science is at the University of Cambridge in England. It was established in 1944 when Mr. Robert Stewart Whipple presented his collection of early scientific instruments and antiquarian books to the University. The museum is housed in the historic First Cambridge Free School erected in 1618 and extensively remodeled during the 19th century. The site was acquired by the University late in the century and expanded in 1894 to provide scientific laboratories. The site underwent major internal reconstruction and restoration in the mid 1970s and re-opened as the Whipple Museum in 1976. The main gallery of the Museum is housed in a large hall with Elizabethan hammer-beam roof trusses. The Whipple Library is in an adjacent room allowing visitors to combine essential sources for research in the history of science.

The Museum is preeminent in and internationally renowned for its collection of scientific instruments and models, dating from the Middle Ages to the present. Microscopes and telescopes, sundials, early slide rules, pocket electronic calculators, teaching and demonstration apparatus, as well as laboratory equipment are included in the collection. Among the specific items are: the first circular logarithmic slide rule, c. 1640,[8] a grand orrery, c. 1750,[9] an astronomical screen c. 1757,[10] a set of mathematical instruments, 1717,[11] a precision balance, 1790,[12] electro-static gener-



Cambridge University, England. Picture courtesy of Weldon Whipple, webmaster, www.whipple.org. It was taken in August 2005.

ator, c. 1785,[13] Azimuth compass, 1711,[14] and many others.

A part of the University's Department of History and Philosophy of Science, the Museum plays a central role in the teaching and research of the Department. Because the collection represent diverse but inter-related scientific and cultural activities a wide range of people use the Museum to study the history of science in its material and cultural contexts, including school children and enthusiasts, historians, philosophers, and practicing scientists.

Robert Whipple's donation in 1944 included one thousand scientific instruments and a similar number of rare books collected during his lifelong connection with the world of scientific instruments. His father, George Mathews Whipple, was a scientist and later Superintendent of the Royal Observatory at Kew where Robert started his working life as an assistant.[15] He was Assistant Manager at the well-known instrument maker L. P. Casella a Personal Assistant to Horace Darwin (youngest son of Charles Darwin), the founder of the Cambridge Scientific Instrument Company. He rose to become Managing Director of the firm and later its Chairman.

He was also involved in various learned societies and institutions as a Founder-Fellow of the Institute of Physics; a Fellow of the Physical Society, serving as Vice President and honorary Treasurer; and President of the British Optical Instrument Manufacturers' Association.

Whipple's enthusiasm for the history of science led him to negotiate with a Committee on History of Science Lectures and the Cambridge Philosophical Society to donate his collection to the University to form the basis for a Museum within the University. The desire for the development of the history of science as a subject of study and research was emphasized as shown by the memorandum submitted to the University:

> "...it is important that the museum should be much more than a well arranged depositary of historic scientific apparatus. It should be designed and maintained as a valuable teaching instrument and a cultural accessory to modern research."

An exhibition was held in the East Room of the Old Schools in November 1944 to commemorate the official presentation of Whipple's collection. At the center of the Museum's library are Whipple's collection of rare books including publications on scientific instruments ranging from medieval instruments for astronomical observations to early twentieth-century industrial technology as well as the more 'canonical' books such as Sir Isaac Newton's (1642-1727) *Philosophiae Naturalis Principia Mathematica, 1687 (Mathematical Principles of Natural Philosophy)* and Christiaan Huygens' (1629-95)*Horologium Oscillatorium, 1673.* From these

auspicious beginnings the rare book collection has grown substantially. And as planned, the Museum and Library plays an active role in the teaching of history and philosophy in science.

Whipple started to collect antique scientific instruments and rare books of science in the 1910s. In addition to the main donation in 1944 he continued to present rare books until his death in 1953 and over the next 40 years the history of science as an academic discipline in Cambridge was built around his collection which was enlarged through Whipple's bequest, generous loans from colleges, transfer of material from the scientific departments of the University, and by gifts. It continues to grow today with new acquisitions being displayed in the main gallery.

The most distinctive feature of Whipple's collecting was the integration of scientific instruments and of books illustrating their construction and use. His interests led him to appreciate and collect both the more canonical[16] "landmarks' of science and the works of less well known scientific practitioners. Three major fields are particularly well represented:

1. Renaissance books of astronomy and practical mathematics, including surveying and navigation.
2. Seventeenth-and-eighteenth century books on the new philosophical and optical instruments.
3. Books on nineteenth and early twentieth-century instruments.

Some books have extremely interesting provenance (origin). Included are Ben Jonson's and Monatesquieu's copies of William Gilbert's *De Magnete (On the Magnet), 1600*; Borelli's copy of Gilbert's *De Mundo nostro sublunari;* Newton's copies of Robert Boyle's (1627-91) *Tracts consisting of observations about the saltness of the sea* and of John Wallis' (1616-1703) *Opera mathematica*, Robert Hooke's (1635-1703) copy of Pierre de Fermat's (1601-65) *Varia opera mathematics,* John Flamsteed's (1646-1719) copy of Wing's *Astronomia Britannica*. Among the more recent book's in Whipple's collection are Augustus De Morgan's copy of Guericke's *Experimenta nova* and several books from Pierre Duhem's (1861-1916) library. These names, in addition to those of less-known owners, who appear in more than one book, confirm the potential of the Whipple collection as a source for documenting the history of the collecting and dissemination of science books.

In addition to the Whipple collection, the Library holds more than 3,000 volumes. Included are books on instruments and science which were acquired thank's to Whipple's special bequest, the collection of medical books bought with the Wellcome Fund, the Phrenology Collection (about 300 volumes), the Sleeman and Steward Collection of books of

chemistry and physics, the collection presented by George Parker Bidder (1806-78) (books of biological sciences from the nineteenth-century onward), and some of the books originally presented to the Cavendish Laboratory by James Clerk Maxwell (1831-79). Three incunabales[17] have been added: Firmicus Maternus' *De Nativitatibus, (Venetiae, 1499).* Sacro Bosco's *Sphaera Mundi,* (Venetiae, 1482) and Solinus' *Polyhistor, sive De mirabilibus mundi*, (Venetiae, 1498).

The collection is now being fully catalogued using the information Whipple recorded in a notebook and a card catalogue. The research has led students to the intersection of the history of science and the history of the book.

Printed catalogues documenting some of Whipple's books are D. Bertoloni Meli and J.A. Bennett, *Sphaera Mundi. Astronomy Books in the Whipple Museum 1478-1600*, Cambridge, 1994; S. A. Johnston, F. H. Willmoth, and J. A. Bennett, *The Grounde of Artes Mathematical Books of 16th-century England*, Cambridge, 1985; and S. Butler, R.H. Nuttal, O. Brown, *The Social History of the Microscope*, Cambridge, 1986.[18]

ENDNOTES, APPENDIX THREE

WHIPPLE FLAG

1. Canton—the four square divisions placed one at each corner of a shield or escutcheon and always less than a quarter of the total service.
2. Field—the surface of a flag which functions as a background for its devices.
3. Example: The field of the canton in the Stars and Stripes is blue and bears white stars; the balance of the field consists of horizontal red and white stripes..
4. Molet—rowel of a knight's spur.
5. This was shortly after the Boston Massacre.
6. Among Whipple's books were *The Story-Life of Lincoln, The Story of the White House and Its Home Life, The Minute Man, and The Story of Plymouth Rock.*

WHIPPLE MUSEUM

7 D. J. Bryden, compiler, *Selected Exhibits in the Whipple Museum of the History of Science*, Eastbourne, England: Whipple Museum of the History of Science, printed by Sumfield & Day Ltd., 1978.

8. John Napier's(1550-1617) invention of logarithms (and the decimal point), published in 1614, was acclaimed throughout Europe for providing a new and immensely powerful computational tool. Edmund Gunter (1581-1626) suggested that Napier's 'artificial numbers' could be used by sailors in an instrument form and set out logarithmically divided lines of certain trigonometrical functions on the limb of a cross-staff. William Oughtred (1574-1660) improved Gunter's ideas and invented the first circular and linear logarithmic slide rule. The present form of the slide rule was designed in 1850 by a French army officer, Amedee Manneheim. Bryden, 2.

9. An orrery is a mechanical model of the solar system. Orreries were used to teach the basic astronomy of the solar system. Bryden, 2- 3.
10. The astronomical screen came from the Royal Palace of the Yi Dynasty, Seoul, Korea and is a folding screen with eight panels. Apparently conceived as an historical record, it contrasted the then most recent mapping of the stars with the earliest recorded data held in the Korean state archives. Bryden, 4-5.
11. A set of 24 mathematical instruments made by Domenico Lusuergh, who worked in Rome, designed for the practical needs of an architect, draftsman, gunner, and surveyor and includes a set of paper-covered multiplying rods designed by John Napier and a surveying-quadrant which incorporates a vernier made to the design published by Piere Venier in 1631. Bryden, 6-7.
12. Nicolas Fortin (1750-1831) made a balance in 1788 commissioned by the French chemist Antoine Lavoisier which became the model of subsequent French manufacture of precision balances over the next 30 years. Fortin's instruments of this design performed routine weighings of up to one kilogram to an accuracy of one milligram. Bryden, 8.
13. Edward Nairne (1726-1806) patented his "Insulated Medical Electrical Machine" in 1783. The design insulated both the primary and the secondary conductors and permitted the production of positive and negative electricity. He sold these instruments to people who wished to practice medical electricity. He claimed that "the very many cures performed by electricity in the hands even of persons entirely unskilled in medicine" included nervous disorders, epileptic and hysterical cases, purulent discharges of ulcers, inflammations of the eyes, sciatica, gout, and palsy. Bryden, 9.
14. Azimuth means the distance in angular degrees in a clockwise direction from the north point or, in the Southern Hemisphere, south point; arc of the horizon measured clockwise from such a point to a vertical circle passing from the zenith through the center of a star. An azimuth compass is not an ordinary ship's steering-compass but an instrument used to ascertain the magnetic variations. That the compass needle did not indicate true north, but pointed away to what was later called magnetic north, became apparent to European sailors by the late 14th century. One hundred years later long distance navigators discovered that this magnetic variation changed markedly with their geographical location, and in the 17th century it was found that at any one place the variation changed slowly over the years. It was essential to be able to measure the magnetic variation for accurate navigation. The azimuth compass was designed to take the bearing of the sun at sunrise or sunset. The observed reading was compared with printed tables of solar amplitude and the magnetic variation determined. Readers wanting to obtain a table of the altitude and azimuth of the Sun or Moon during a specific day, at a time interval that they specify, can go to the Web Page http://aa..usno.navy.mil/data/docs/AltAZ.html and do so.
15. Robert was the oldest of five children, all boys. He was born in 1871 and died in 1953.
16. Canonical—(1) of, according to, or ordered by church canon which is a body of laws of a church. (2) authoritative; accepted. (3) belonging to the canon of the Bible.
17. Incunables—early printed books, especially printed before 1500.
18. Silvia De Renzi, UNIVERSITY OF CAMBRIDGE, Whipple Library, http://www.hps.cam.ac.uk/library/speccoll.html, 1-6.

APPENDIX FOUR

WHIPPLE SOLDIERS AND SAILORS IN THE REVOLUTIONARY WAR

MASSACHUSETTS[1]

WHIPPLE. The name also appears as Whipel, Whipell, Whiple, Whippel, Whippele, Whippell, Whippl, Whipples, Whippll.

BERKSHIRE COUNTY

WHIPPLE, Joseph. Private, Capt. John King's co., Col. Hopkins's (Berkshire Co.) regt.; entered service 15 July 1776; discharged 31 July 1776; service, 16 days; company marched by order of Brig. Gen. Fellows; mileage out and home (180 miles) allowed.

WHIPPLL, Robert. Capt. Samuel Low's co., Col. Benjamin Simonds's (Berkshire Co.) regt.; entered service 14 Aug. 1777; discharge 19 Aug. 1777; service 6 days at Bennington.

WHIPPLE, Robert, Private, Capt. Samuel Low's co., Col. Benjamin Simonds's (Berkshire Co.) regt.; entered service 14 Oct. 1780; left service 17 Oct. 1780; service, 4 days by order of Gen. Fellows on an alarm at the Northward; also, same co. and regt.; entered service 27 Oct. 1780; discharged 28 Oct. 1780; service 2 days, by order of Gen. Fellows on an alarm at the Northward.

BOSTON

WHIPPLE, Joseph. Surgeon's Mate, Lieut. Col. Thomas Crafts's (Artillery) battalion; list of officers to be commissioned, as returned by Lieut. Col. Crafts, dated Boston, 27 Sept. 1776; ordered in Council 10 Oct. 1776; that said officers be commissioned; also, Surgeon's Mate, Col. Crafts's regt.; engaged 9 May 1776; service to 1 Nov. 1776, 5 mos. 23 days; roll dated Boston; also, same regt.; service from 1 Nov. 1776, to 1 Feb. 1777, 3 mos; reported as serving 1 mo in Colony service, 2 mos in Continental service; roll sworn to in Suffolk Co.; also, same regt.; service from 1 Feb. 1777, to 1 Oct. 1777, 8 mos. 1 day; also, same regt.; service from 30 Sept. 1777, to 1 Nov. 1777. 1 mo, on expedition to Rhode Island; also, same regt.; service between 1 Oct. 1777, and 1 Jan. 1778, 2 mos.; reported as having gone to Rhode Island; also, same regt.; service from 1 Jan. 1778, to 1 Aug.

1778, 7 mos.; rolls dated Boston; also, same regt.; service between 1 Aug. 1778 and 31 Oct. 1778, 2 mos; roll dated Boston; also, same regt.; service from 1 Nov. 1778, to 31 Dec. 1778, 2 mos.; roll dated Camp at Boston; also, Surgeon, Lieut. Col. Paul Revere's corps of artillery; list of officers; commissioned 23 March 1779; also, returns of provisions delivered the State train of artillery commanded by Lieut. Col. Paul Revere, dated Castle Island, 19 June and 26 June 1779; said Whipple, Doctor, credited with allowance from 1 March 1779, to 1 June 1779, 92 days; also, Surgeon, Col. Paul Revere's (Artillery) regt.; Continental Army pay accounts for service from 8 May 1777, to 31 Dec. 1779; also, same regt.; service from 1 Jan. 1780, to 8 May 1780, 4 mos, 8 days; regiment reported as having been discharged 8 May 1780; roll dated Boston.

WHIPPLE, William, Boston. Matross, Capt. Thomas Waite Foster's co., Col. Richard Gridley's (Artillery) regt.; muster roll dated 1 Aug. 1775; enlisted 4 May 1775; service 3 mos. 5 days; also, company return [probably Oct. 1775]; also, order for bounty coat due for the 8 months service in 1775.

BRATTBLEBOROUGH

WHIPPLE, Daniel, Brattleborough, York [Grants]. Corporal, Capt. Moses Harvey's co., Col. Jonathan Brewer's regt.; muster roll dated 1 Aug. 1775; enlisted 12 June 1775; service, 1 mo. 3 weeks; also, company return [probably Oct. 1775]; also, order for bounty coat dated Cambridge Camp, 26 Oct. 1775.

DANVERS

WHIPPLE, Benjamin, Danvers. Descriptive list of officers and crew of the ship "Junius Brutus," commanded by Capt. John Leach, dated Salem, 15 June 1780; age, 28 yrs.; stature, 5 ft. 1 in.; complexion, light; residence, Danvers.

WHIPPLE, Benjamin, Danvers. Capt. Enoch Putnam's co., Col. John Mansfield's regt.; order for advance pay, signed by said Whipple and others, dated Cambridge, 8 June 1775; also, Private, same co. and regt.; muster roll dated 1 Aug. 1775; enlisted 6 May 1775; service, 3 mos. 3 days; also, Capt. Putnam's co., Col. Mansfield's (19th) regt. commanded by Lieut. Col. Israel Hutchinson; company return dated 6 Oct. 1775; also, order for money in lieu of bounty coat dated Camp at Winter Hill, 27 Oct. 1775.

WHIPLE, David. List of men returned by a committee for settling disputes between towns as to soldiers credited to them [years not given]; said Whiple claimed by Danvers and Reading; allowed to Danvers.

WHIPPLE, David, Danvers. Private, Capt. Enoch Putnam's co., Col.

John Mansfield's regt.; muster roll dated 1 Aug. 1775; enlisted 25 May 1775; service, 2 mos. 12 days; also, Capt. Putnam's co. Col. Mansfield's (19th) regt. commanded by Lieut. Col. Israel Hutchinson; company return dated 6 Oct. 1775; also, order for money in lieu of bounty coat dated Camp at Winter Hill, 27 Oct. 1775; also, Private, Capt. Job Whipple's co., Col. Rufus Putnam's 5th (also given 4th) regt.; Continental Army pay accounts for service from 1 Jan 1777 to Dec. 31, 1779; reported discharged 1 Jan. 1780, by Lieut. Col. Newell.

WHIPPLE, David, Danvers. Descriptive list of officers and crew of the ship "Junis Brutus," commanded by Capt. John Leach, dated Salem, 15 June 1780; age, 28 yrs.; stature 5 ft. 8 in.; complexion, light, residence, Danvers.

WHIPPLE, Job, Danvers. Sergeant, Capt. Israel Hutchinson's co. of Minute-men, which marched on the alarm of 19 April 1775; service, 2 days; also, Lieutenant; list of lieutenants and ensigns in Col. Mansfield's regt.; ordered in Provincial Congress 7 June 1775, that commissions be delivered said officers; also, Lieutenant, Capt. Enoch Putnam's co., Col. John Mansfield's regt.; muster roll dated 1 Aug. 1775; engaged 26 April 1775; service, 3 mos. 13 days; also, Capt. Putnam's co., Col. Mansfield's (19th) regt. commanded by Lieut. Col. Israel Hutchinson; company return dated 6 Oct. 1775; also, Lieutenant, Capt. Putman's (3d) co., 27th regt.; copy of a list of officers [year not given, probably 1776]; also, Captain, Col. Rufus Putnam's 5th (also given 4th) regt.; Continental Army pay accounts for service from 1 Jan. 1777, to 31 Dec. 1780; also, return of officers for clothing; receipt for said clothing, dated Boston, 17 June 1778; also, list of officers in need of clothing, dated Boston, 24 Nov. 1778; also, Captain, 5th Mass. regt.; list of settlements of rank of Continental officers dated West Point, made by a Board held for the purpose and confirmed by Congress 6 Sept. 1779; commissioned 1 Jan. 1777; also, petition addressed to the Council, dated Boston, 24 Dec. 1778, signed by said Whipple, Captain, Col. Putnam's regt., and Capt. Thomas Barnes, of Col. Nixon's regt., asking that the Board of War be ordered to furnish them with certain articles of clothing, etc., they paying for the same; ordered in Council 24 Dec. 1778, that the Board of War be directed to supply said officers with the required clothing, etc., they paying for the same; also, Captain, 2d co. Col. Putnam's (5th) regt.; muster rolls for Jan., Feb., and March, 1781, da-ted West Point; appointed 1 Jan. 1777; reported at Danvers for the recovery of his health; also, returns of effectives, dated Garrison West Point, 6 April and 13 April 1781; reported sick at Danvers; also, Captain, Col. Putnam's regt.; muster roll for April, 1781, dated West Point; reported discharged (also given resigned) 25 April 1781.

WHIPPLE, Matthew. Danvers (probably). Private, Capt. Jeremiah Page's co.; service to time of leaving army, 2 days, probably on the alarm of

19 April 1775.

WHIPPLE, Matthew, Danvers (also given Salem). 2d Lieutenant, Capt. Samuel Page's 7th (Danvers) co., Col. Henry Herrick's (8th Essex Co.) regt. of Mass. militia; list of officers chosen in said regiment, dated Charlestown, 29 March 1776; ordered in Council 2 April 1776, that said officers be commissioned; reported commissioned 2 April 1776; also, recommendation dated Boston, 20 Feb. 1777, signed by Col. Ebenezer Francis, recommending certain officers in his regiment for commissions; said Whipple recommended for 1st Lieutenant, Capt. Samuel Page's co.; ordered in Council 20 Feb. 1777, that said officers be commissioned; also, 2d Lieutenant, Capt. Silas Adams's co.; list of officers appointed to command men drafted from Brig. Michael Farley's (Essex Co.) brigade, agreeable to resolve of 11 April 1777, and ordered to march to Rhode Is-land to reinforce troops under Gen. Spencer, dated Ipswich, 30 April 1777; company raised in Newbury, Danvers, Rowley, and Middleton; also, Lieutenant, Capt. Adams's co., Col. Titcomb's regt.; service 2 mos, probably in May and June, 1777; 7 days (140 miles) travel also allowed to and from place of rendezvous; roll endorsed "for 2 Months Service at R. Island;" also, petition addressed to the Council, dated Danvers, 21 July 1777, signed by said Whipple, requesting leave to resign his commission as 2d Lieutenant, Capt. Samuel Page's (3d Danvers) co.; resignation accepted in Council 29 July 1777; also, Lieutenant, Capt. Asa Prince's co., Col. Danforth Keyes' regt.; engaged 1 Sept. 1777; service to 1 Oct. 1777, 1 mo.; roll dated Providence; also 2d Lieutenant, Capt. Jeremiah Putnam's co., Col. Tyler's regt.; return dated Newburyport, 18 Sept. 1779, made by Enoch Titcomb, M.B. of men ordered to be raised from the Essex Co. brigade 8 June 1779, to service at Providence; reported as belonging to 1st regt.; marched in July 1779; also, 2d Lieutenant, Capt. Jeremiah Putnam's co., Col. Nathan Tyler's regt.; list of officers of a regiment ordered to be detached to serve at Rhode Island until 1 Jan. 1780, agreeable to resolve of 8 June 1779; commissioned 14 July 1779; also 2d Lieutenant, Capt. Putnam's co., Col. Tyler's regt.; engaged 14 July 1779; service to 1 Dec. 1779, 4 mos. 17 days, at Rhode Island; also same co. and regt.; pay roll for Dec. 1779, allowing 1 mo. 5 days service at Rhode Island, travel (95 miles) included.

WHIPPLE, Samuel, Danvers. Private, Capt. Asa Prince's co., which marched on the alarm of 19 April 1775; service, 2 days; also, Capt. Enoch Putnam's co., Col. John Mansfield's regt.; order for advance pay, signed by said Whipple and others, dated Cambridge, 8 June 1775; also, Corporal, same co. and regt.; muster roll dated 1 Aug. 1775; enlisted 4 May 1775; service, 3 mos. 5 days; also, Capt. Putnam's co., Col. Mansfield's (19th) regt. commanded by Lieut. Col. Israel Hutchinson; company return dated 6 Oct. 1775; also, order for money in lieu of bounty coat dated Camp at

Winter Hill, 27 Oct. 1775; also, Corporal, Capt. Stephen Wilkens's co., Col. Wigglesworth's regt.; pay abstract for travel allowance, etc., from Albany home, sworn to 15 Jan. 1777; 215 miles travel allowed said Whipple; also, list of men raised to serve in the Continental Army from 1st, 2d, 3d, and 4th cos., of Danvers; residence, Danvers, engaged for town of Danvers; joined Capt. Page's co., Col. Francis's regt.; term, 3 years; reported as belonging to Capt. Asa Prince's (1st Danvers) co.; also, list of men mustered by Nathaniel Barber, Muster Master for Suffolk Co., dated Boston, 25 May 1777; Capt. Page's co., Col. Francis's regt.; reported received State bounty; also, Sergeant, Major's co., Col. Benjamin Tupper's regt.; Continental Army pay accounts for service from 1 Jan. to 31 [Dec] 1780; also, Col. Tupper's [10th] regt.; service from 1 Jan. 1781, 24 months.

WHIPLE, Samuel, Danvers. Sergeant, Capt. Samuel Page's co., Col. Benjamin Tupper's regt.; Continental Army pay accounts for service from 28 April 1777, to 31 Dec. 1779; residence, Danvers; credited to town of Danvers; also, same co. and regt.; return dated 25 Jan. 1778; mustered by Col. Barber, County Muster Master, and by Col. Verrick, Continental Muster Master; reported on furlough; also, Maj. William Lithgow's co., Col. Tupper's regt; muster roll 4 March 1779, dated West Point; appointed 28 April 1778 (also given 28 April 1777); reported transferred to light infantry co. 1 April 1779; also, Capt. Samuel Page's (light infantry) co., Col. Tupper's regt.; muster roll dated West Point 5 April 1779; term, 3 years.

WHIPPEL, Samuel, Danvers. Descriptive list dated 21 Jan. 1781; Capt. Daniel Lunt's co., 10th Mass. regt.; rank, Sergeant; age, 30 years; stature, 5 ft. 9 1/2 in.; complexion, dark; hair, dark; residence, Danvers, engaged 4 Nov. 1779, by Lieut. McKinney; term, during war.

DORCHESTER

WHIPPLE, Amos, Dorchester. Descriptive list of men belonging to Col. Bailey's (2d) regt. who re-enlisted for the war subsequent to 30 Sept. 1779, as returned by Seth Drew, Captain and Commandant, 2d Mass. regt.; age 18 yrs.; complexion, dark; hair, brown; reported a transient; also Private, Lieut. Colonel's co., Col. Bailey's regt; Continental Army pay accounts for service from 1 Jan. 1780 to 31 Dec. 1780, residence, Dorchester.

WHIPPLE, Joseph. Surgeon; list of officers returned by Col. Ebenezer Francis, endorsed "Dorchester Heights Oct. 1776;" marched to join regiment 25 Aug. [1776]; also, Surgeon, Col. Francis's regt.; pay abstract of field and staff officers for travel allowance from home to camp and return, dated Dorchester Heights, 27 Nov. 1776; said Whipple credited with allowance for 2 days (40 miles) travel.

WHIPPLE, Jonathan. Private, Capt. Job Knap's co., Col. Nathan Tyler's regt.; entered service 28 July 1780; discharged 7 Aug. 1780; service, 14 days, including travel (60 miles) home; company marched to Tiverton, R.I., on the alarm of 27 July 1780. Roll dated Douglas.

EAST HOOSUCK

WHIPPLE, Ezra. East Hoosuck (Adams). Lieutenant, Capt. Phillip Mason's 12th (East Hoosuck) co., Col. Benjamin Simonds's (2d Berkshire Co.) regt. of Mass. militia; list of officers chosen by the several companies in said regiment; ordered in Council 4 May 1776, that said officers be commissioned; commissions reported dated 1 June 1776; also, 2d Lieutenant, Capt. William Watkin's co., Col. Benjamin Simonds's detachment; return dated Sheffield, signed by Brig. Gen. John Fellows of a detachment made from said Fellows's (Berkshire Co.) brigade to reinforce the Con-tinental Army, agreeable to order of General Court, and which marched the beginning of Jan. [1777]; residence, East Hoosuck (Adams); also, 2d Lieutenant, Capt. William Watkins's (7th) co., Col. Benjamin Simonds' detachment of Berkshire Co., militia; muster roll of field, staff, and commissioned officers, dated Camp at Ticonderoga, 25 Feb. 1777; entered service 16 Dec. 1776; also, Captain, 13th co., Col. Simonds' (2d Berkshire Co.) regt. of Mass. militia; list of officers; commissioned 8 Oct. 1779; also, Capt. Col. Simonds' (Berkshire Co.) regt.; engaged 14 Oct. 1780; discharged 19 Oct. 1780; service, 5 days; company marched to Castleton by order of Gen. Fellows on an alarm; also, pay roll of a detachment from said Whipple's co., commanded by Lieut. William Peters, Col. Simonds' regt., for service from 27 to 29 Oct. 1780, at the Northward on the alarm of 27 Oct. 1780; detachment marched to reinforce Gen. Allen.

GRAFTON

WHIPPLE, Daniel, Grafton. Private, Capt. Aaron Kimball's co. of militia, [Col.] Artemas Ward's regt., which marched in response to the alarm of 19 April 1775; said Whipple marched 19 April 1775; discharged 4 May 1775; service, 2 weeks 3 days; reported returned home.

WHIPPLE, James, Grafton. Lieutenant, Capt. Aaron Kimball's co. of militia, [Col.] Artemas Ward's regt., which marched in response to the alarm of 19 April 1775; said Whipple marched 19 April 1775; discharged 18 May 1775; service 4 weeks 4 days; reported returned home; also, 1st Lieutenant, Capt. Nathaniel Sherman's 10th (Grafton) co., 6th Worcester Co.

regt. of Mass. militia; list of officers chosen in said regiment, as returned by John Goulding and others, field officers, dated Westborough, 15 April 1776; ordered in Council 17 April 1776, that said officers be commissioned; reported commissioned April 25, 1776.

WHIPPLE, John, Grafton. Corporal, Capt. Aaron Kimball's co. of militia, [Col.] Artemas Ward's regt., which marched in response to the alarm of 19 April 1775; said Whipple marched 19 April 1775; discharged 18 May 1775; service, 4 weeks 1 day; reported returned home.

WHIPPLE, Joseph (also given Josiah), Grafton. Corporal, Capt. Luke Drury's co. of Minute-men, Gen. Ward's regt., which marched on the alarm of 19 April 1775; service, 1 mo. 3 days; reported returned home; also, 1st Lieutenant, Capt. Joseph Warren's (6th) co., 6th Worcester Co. regt. of Mass. militia; list of officers; commissioned 27 Aug. 1777; also, 1st Lieutenant, Capt. Warrin's co.; engaged 21 Aug. 1777; discharged 26 Aug. 1777; service, 5 days, under Lieut. Col. Wheelock in Northern department; company marched to Bennington on an alarm; also, 1st Lieutenant, Capt. Edmund Brigham's co., Col. Job Cushing's regt.; engaged 1 Sept. 1777; service, 2 mos, 29 days, in Northern department (also given at the Westward); company marched from Grafton; also, same co.; pay abstracts dated Scaresdeal, 30 Nov. 1777, and sworn to in Worcester Co. [year not given], respectively, for retained rations due officers of Col. Cushing's regt. in Continental service in Northern department; said Whipple credited with rations from 1 Sept. [1777], to 9 Dec. [1777], 100 rations; also, receipt dated Westborough, signed by said Whipple and others belonging to Capt. Edmund Brigham's co., for wages for 3 mos. service; also, 1st Lieutenant, Capt. Joseph Warrin's (6th) co., Col. Job Cushing's (6th Worcester Co.) regt. of Mass. militia; list of officers endorsed "Jan'y 1, 1778."

WHIPLE, Joseph. Receipt given to Capt. Edmund Brigham, dated Westborough, 10 May 1779, signed by said Whiple, Lieutenant, and Lieut. Philemon Stacey, for ration allowance, etc., for themselves and the men who marched from Grafton with Capt. Brigham and served at the Westward in 1777.

WHIPPLE, Samuel, Grafton. Private, Capt. Aaron Kimball's co. of militia [Col.] Artemas Ward's regt., which marched in response to the alarm of 19 April 1775; said Whipple marched 19 April 1775; discharged 29 April 1775; service. 1 week, 3 days; reported returned home.

HARDWICK

WHIPPLE, David, Hardwick. Private Capt. Edmund Hodges's co., Col. Job Cushing's regt.; enlisted 27 July 1777; discharged 29 Aug. 1777; service, 1 mo. 7 days, with Northern army, including 4 days (85 miles) travel home.

WHIPPLE, Jacob, Hardwick. Private, Capt. Samuel Dexter's co., Col. Learnard's regt.; pay abstract for mileage from home and return, dated Roxbury Camp, Jan. __, 1776; mileage for 150 miles allowed said Whipple; company raised in Hardwick, New Braintree, and Oakham.

IPSWICH

WHIPPLE, _____, Ipswich. Sergeant, Capt. Robert Dodge's co., Col. Ebenezer Francis's regt.; pay abstract for travel allowance to camp and home, etc., sworn to 29 Nov. 1776; said Whipple credited with allowance for 2 days (42 miles) travel; company drafted from Amesbury, Newbury, Rowley, Ipswich, Topsfield, Wenham, and Lynn.

WHIPPLE, Benjamin, Ipswich. Private, Capt. Robert Dodge's co., Col. Ebenezer Francis's regt.; pay abstract for travel allowance to camp and home, etc., sworn to 29 Nov. 1776; said Whipple credited with allowance for 2 days (42 miles) travel; company drafted from Amesbury, Newbury, Rowley, Ipswich, Topsfield, Wenham, and Lynn.

WHIPPL, John. Ipswich. Sergeant, Capt. Richard Dodge's co. of volunteers from 3d Essex Co. regt.; engaged 30 Sept. 1777; marched 2 Oct. 1777; discharged 7 Nov. 1777, at Cambridge; service, 40 days, in a regiment commanded by Maj. C. Smith under Gen. Gates in Northern Department and in guarding Lieut. Gen. Burgoyne's troops to Prospect Hill.

WHIPPLE, John, 3d, Ipswich. Private, Capt. Elisha Whitney's co., of Minute-men, which marched on the alarm of 19 April 1775, from Ipswich Hamlet to Mystic; returned 22 April 1775; also marched from Ipswich Hamlet to Cambridge 1 May 1775; service 16 days; said Whipple allowed 108 miles travel to and from Mystic and to and from Cambridge.

WHIPPLE, John, 4th, Ipswich. Private, Capt. Elisha Whitney's co. of Minute-men, which marched on the alarm of 19 April 1775 from Ipswich Hamlet to Mystic; returned 22 April 1775; also marched from Ipswich Hamlet to Cambridge 1 May 1775; service, 16 days; said Whipple allowed 108 miles travel to and from Mystic and to and from Cambridge.

WHIPPLE, John, 5th, Ipswich. Private, Capt. James Patch's co., which marched on the alarm of 19 April 1775, from Ipswich and Ipswich Hamlet to Mystic; service, 4 days.

WHIPPLE, John, 6th, Ipswich. Private Capt. James Patch's co., which marched on the alarm of 19 April 1775, from Ipswich and Ipswich Hamlet to Mystic; service, 4 days.

WHIPPLE, John, 7th, Ipswich. Private, Capt. James Patch's co., which marched on the alarm of 19 April 1775, from Ipswich and Ipswich Hamlet to Mystic; service, 4 days.

WHIPPLE, Samuel, Ipswich. Steward, ship *Resource*, commanded by

Capt. Israel Thorndike: descriptive list of officers and crew, dated Beverly, 21 June 1780; age 24 yrs; stature, 5 ft. 5 in.; complexion, light; residence, Ipswich.

WHIPPL, Samuel. Ipswich. Private, Capt. Elisha Whitney's co. of Minute-men, which marched on the alarm of 19 April 1775 from Ipswich Hamlet to Mystic; returned 22 April 1775; also marched from Ipswich Hamlet to Cambridge 1 May 1775; service 20 days; said Whippl allowed 108 miles travel to and from Mystic and to and from Cambridge.

WHIPPEL, William, Ipswich. Private, Capt. Richard Dodge's co., Col. Gerrish's regt.; muster roll dated 1 Aug. 1775; enlisted 12 May 1775; service, 11 weeks 4 days; reported entered service 19 April 1775, as a Minute-man.

WHIPPLE, William, Ipswich. Corporal (also given as Private), Capt. Richard Dodge's (3d) co., Lieut. Col. Loammi Baldwin's (late Col. Samuel Gerrish's) 38th regt.; pay abstract dated Camp at Chelsea, 1 Sept. 1775; also, Private, same co., and regt.; company return dated Camp at Chelsea, 2 Oct. 1775; also, order for money in lieu of bounty coat dated Chelsea, 27 Dec. 1775; also, list of recruits for the new establishment in Col. Baldwin's regt., approved by Brig. Gen. W. Heath in Camp at Cambridge, 30 Dec. 1775; Capt. Richard Dodge's co.; also, Private, Capt. Dodge's co., Col. Loammi Baldwin's (26th) regt.; pay abstracts for Feb., May, and June 1776; also, account of articles lost by sundry officers and soldiers belonging to the 26th regt. at the evacuation of New York 14 Sept. 1776; also, Capt. Dodge's co., Col. Baldwin's regt.; pay abstract for travel allowance, etc., on return home at close of campaign in 1776; 390 miles travel allowed said Whipple; also, order on Col. Baldwin, payable to Capt. Richard Dodge, dated Ipswich, 11 Nov. 1777, signed by said Whipple and others, for travel allowance home, etc.

WHIPPLE, William, Ipswich. Private, Capt. Richard Dodge's co. of volunteers from 3d Essex Co. regt.; enlisted 30 Sept. 1777; marched 2 Oct. 1777; discharged 7 Nov. 1777, at Cambridge; service, 40 days in a regiment commanded by Maj. C. Smith under Gen. Gates in Northern Department and in guarding Lieut. Gen. Burgoyne's troops to Prospect Hill.

WHIPPLE. William, 3d, Ipswich. Private, Capt. James Patch's co., which marched on the alarm of 19 April 1775, from Ipswich and Ipswich Hamlet to Mystic; service 4 days; also, Capt. Benjamin Gould's co., Col. Wade's regt.; entered service 6 July 1780; discharged 10 Oct. 1780; service, 3 mos, 17 days, including 12 days (240 miles) travel home; regiment raised in Essex Co. to reinforce Continental Army for 3 months; also, petitioned dated Ipswich, 17 Oct. 1782, signed by said Whipple and others, asking for wages for 3 mos. service in 1780 in Capt. Benjamin Gould's co., Col. Nathaniel Wade's regt.; petition endorsed "Nov'r 4th 1782 Withdraw."

WHIPPLE, William, 4th, Ipswich. Fifer, Capt. Elisha Whitney's co. of Minute-men, which marched on the alarm of 19 April 1775, from Ipswich Hamlet to Mystic; returned 22 April 1775; also marched from Ipswich Hamlet to Cambridge 1 May 1775; service, 20 days; said Whipple allowed 108 miles travel to and from Mystic and to and from Cambridge.

LITTLETON

WHIPPLE, John. Private, Capt. Aaron Jewett's co., Col. Samuel Bullard's regt.; enlisted 15 Aug. 1777; discharged 29 Nov. 1777; service, 3 mos. 26 days, with Northern army, including 11 days (220 miles) travel home; company marched to Saratoga. Roll dated Littleton.

MANCHESTER

WHIPPEL, Joseph, Manchester. List of officers recommended for commissions, as returned by Col. Ebenezer Francis and Lieut. Col. Ebenezer Thayer; said Whippel recommended as Surgeon; ordered in Council 16 Aug. 1776, that said officers be commissioned; reported commissioned 16 Aug. 1776; regiment raised for defence of Boston; also, Surgeon, Col. Ebenezer Francis's regt.; list of officers recommended for commissions, dated Dorchester Heights, 18 Oct. 1776; ordered in Council 22 [?] Oct. 1776, that said officers be commissioned; commission of said Whippel reported as already made out.

WHIPPLE, Joseph, Manchester. Capt. Benjamin Kimball's co., col. John Mansfield's regt.; receipt for advance pay, signed by said Whipple and others, dated Cambridge, 1 July 1775; also, Private, same co. and regt.; muster roll dated 1 Aug. 1775; enlisted 1 June 1775; service, 2 mos 5 days; also, Capt. Kimball's co., Col. John Mansfield's (19th) regt., commanded by Lieut. Col. Israel Hutchinson; company return dated Winter Hill, 6 Oct. 1775; also, order for money in lieu of bounty coat dated Winter Hill, 30 Dec. 1775.

WHIPPLE, Joseph. Receipts dated Manchester, 19, and 27 Sept. 1775, signed by said Whipple, Captain, and men belonging to his company, for advance pay for 1 month, and 4 weeks billeting, respectively, received of Michael Farley, Muster Master and Paymaster, of men raised in Essex Co. for defence of seacoast; said Whipple and others raised in Manchester and stationed there; also, Captain; engaged 13 July 1775; service to 31 Dec. 1775, 6 mos. 3 days; company raised for defence of seacoast in Essex Co. and stationed one-half at Manchester, the remainder at Gloucester.

WHIPPLE, Thomas, Manchester. Private, Capt. John Gay's co., Col. Ebenezer Francis's regt.; pay abstract for travel allowance to camp and home, etc., sworn to in Suffolk Co., 29 Nov. 1776; said Whipple credited

with allowance for 2 days (41 miles) travel; company drafted from Roxbury, Dedham, Needham, Medfield, Wrentham, Walpole, Medway, Bellingham, Beverly, Danvers, Middleton, and Manchester.

MENDON

WHIPPLE, George, Mendon. Ensign, Capt. Samuel Warren's co., Col. Joseph Read's (20th) regt.; regimental return dated Camp at Roxbury, 18 May 1775; commissions for said Whipple and other officers received by Col. Read, at Watertown, 24 May 1775; also, 2d Lieutenant, same co. and regt.; muster roll dated 1 Aug. 1775; engaged 26 April 1775; service, 3 mos. 13 days; also, company return dated 26 Sept. 1775.

WHIPPLE, Jonathan, Mendon. Private, Capt. John Albee's (1st Mendon) co., which marched on the alarm of 19 April 1775, to Roxbury; service, 9 days; reported returned home; also, Capt. Samuel Craggin's co., Lieut. Col. Nathan Tyler's regt.; service from 8 Dec. 1776, to 21 Jan. 1777, 1 mo. 15 days, at Providence Plantation and Rhode Island on an alarm; mileage home to Mendon (24 miles) allowed.

NEW BRAINTREE

WHIPPLE, Thomas, New Braintree. Captain, 5th (New Braintree) co., Col. James Convers's (4th Worcester Co.) regt. of Mass. militia; list of officers chosen by the several companies in said regiment, dated Brookfield, 14 May 1776; ordered in Council 31 May 1776, that said officers be commissioned; reported commissioned 31 May 1776; also, Captain, Col. Converse's (Worcester Co.) regt.; service 3 days; company marched towards Providence on an alarm in July 1777; roll dated New Braintree; also, return sworn to in Worcester Co., 21 Feb. 1778, by said Whipple and Francis Stone, Captains of New Braintree, of the men enlisted into the Continental Army from each company in New Braintree, Gen. Warner's (Worcester Co.) brigade; also, Captain of a company of guards, entered service 20 April 1780; discharged 20 Dec. 1780; service, 8 mos. 1 day; company raised for 8 months and stationed at Rutland.

NEWBURYPORT

WHIPPLE Benjamin, Newburyport. Private, Capt. Moses Nowell's co., Col. Titcomb's regt.; arrived at destination 4 May 1777; discharged 4 July 1777; service, 2 mos. 9 days, including 9 days (180 miles) travel out and home; company marched to Rhode Island to serve for 2 months from time of arrival at Providence.

WHIPPLE, Nahum, Oakham. Private, Capt. Edmund Hodges's co., Col. Josiah Whitney's regt.; enlisted 5 May 1777; discharged 5 July 1777; service, 2 mos. 7 days at Rhode Island, including travel home.

PALMER [ALSO GIVEN WESTERN (WARREN)]

WHIPPLE, Thomas, Palmer. Private, Capt. Jonathan Danforth's co., Col. David Brewer's regt.; muster roll dated 1 Aug. 1775; enlisted 7 May 1775; service, 3 mos, 2 days; also, company return dated 7 Oct. 1775; also Capt. Danforth's co. (late) Col. Brewer's (9th) regt.; order for bounty coat dated Roxbury Camp, 14 Nov. 1775; also, Corporal, Capt. Jonathan Danforth's co., Col. Asa Whitcomb's regt.; muster roll dated Camp at Ticonderoga, 27 Nov. 1776; enlisted 1 Jan. 1776; reported promoted to Sergeant 20 July 1776.

PETERSHAM

WHIPPLE, John. Private, Capt. Jotham Houghton's co., Col. Josiah Whitney's regt.; service from 31 July 1778 to date of discharge, 14 Sept. 1778, 1 mo. 15 days, at Rhode Island; company raised for 6 weeks service. Roll dated Petersham.

ROWLEY

WHIPEL, Comfort. List of men not in the Continental service who were enlisted by Capt. Thomas Mighill and his subalterns to serve in Col. Baldwin's regt. for the year 1776, dated New York; enlisted 1 Jan. 1776; also, Private, Capt. Thomas Mighill's co., Col. Loammi Baldwin's regt.; pay abstracts for April and May, 1776. Other records for Comfort were spelled Whipell with pay abstract for Feb. 1776; Whiple with abstract for advance pay for Jan. 1776, etc., and pay abstract for March 1776; and

WHIPPLE, Comfort. Private, Capt. Thomas Mighill's co., Col. Loammi Baldwin's (26th) regt.; pay abstract for June, 1776, dated New York; also, account of guns returned by persons in 26th regt. while at Trenton, 31 Dec. 1776, and 1 Jan. 1777; also, order on Capt. William Jackson, Quarter Master and Paymaster, payable to Sergt. Whitney, dated Trenton, 1 Jan. 1777, signed by said Whipple, for travel allowance; also Capt. Mighill's co., Col. Loammi Baldwin's regt.; pay abstract for travel allowance, etc., on march homeward at the close of the campaign in 1776, sworn to at Rowley, 9 April 1777; 330 miles travel allowed said Whipple.

RUTLAND, SERVICE

WHIPPLE, Abner. Private, Capt. Ephraim Hartwell's co. of guards; entered service 29 Feb. 1780; discharged 23 April 1780; service, 1 mo 24 days, at Rutland.

WHIPPLE, Moses. Drummer, Capt. Thomas Whipple's co. of guards; entered service 20 April 1780; discharged 20 Dec. 1780; service, 8 mos, 1 day; company raised for 8 months and stationed at Rutland.

SALEM

WHIPPLE, Benjamin, Salem. Sergeant, Capt. Jeremiah Putnam's co., Col. Nathan Tyler's regt.; engaged 25 July 1779; service to 1 Dec 1779, 4 mos. 6 days, at Rhode Island; also, same co. and regt.; pay roll for Dec. 1779, allowing 1 mo. 5 days service at Rhode Island, travel (95 miles) included.

SUFFOLK COUNTY

WHIPPLE, Nathaniel. Boy, ship *General Putnam*, commanded by Capt. Daniel Waters; engaged 15 July (also given 12 July), 1779; service to 7 Sept. 1779, 1 mo. 22 days, on Penobscot expedition. Roll sworn to in Suffolk Co.

SUTTON

WHIPPLE, Simeon, Sutton. Sergeant, Capt. John Putnam's (Sutton) co. of Minute-men, Col. Ebenezer Larned's regt., which marched on the alarm 19 of April 1775; service 2 weeks, 1 day.

WHIPPLE, Solomon, Sutton. Private, Capt. Arthur Dagget's (Sutton) co. of Minute-men, Col. Larned's regt., which marched on the alarm of 19 April 1775; service, 1 week, 4 days; also, Capt. Dagget's co., Col. Ebenezer Learned's regt.; muster roll dated 1 Aug. 1775; enlisted 1 May 1775; service, 3 mos, 1 week, 1 day; also, (late) Capt. Dagget's co., Col. Larned's regt.; company return dated Roxbury Camp, 6 Oct. 1775.

TAUNTON

WHIPEL, Marmaduke. Private, Capt. Moses Willmarth's Col. John Daggett's regt.; service, 2 mos. 25 days, at Island; regiment raised for 3 months from 1 Jan. 1778. Sworn to at Taunton.

WHIPPLE, Joseph. Sergeant, 1st division, Capt. Squire Millerd's co., Col. Waterman's regt.; service from 9 Jan. 1777, to 3 [8] Feb. 1777, 31 days; reported drafted; also, copy of a company receipt, given to Capt. Squire Millerd, for wages for service from 9 Jan. 1777, to 8 Feb. 1777, dated Warwick.

WENHAM

WHIPPLE, Benjamin, Wenham. Private. Capt. Robert Perkin's co. of Light Horse Volunteers, 3d Essex Co. regt.; enlisted 27 Sept. 1777; marched 30 Sept. 1777; discharged 7 Nov. 1777; service, 43 days, in a Regiment commanded by Maj. Charles Smith in Northern Department and in guarding Lieut. Gen. Burgoyne's troops to prospect Hill; company discharged at Cambridge.

WHIPPLE, John, Wenham. Sergeant, Capt. Robert Perkins's co. of Light Horse Volunteers, 3d Essex Co. regt.; engaged 27 Sept. 1777; marched 30 Sept. 1777; discharged 7 Nov. 1777; service, 43 days, in a regiment commanded by Maj. Charles Smith in Northern department and in guarding Lieut. Gen. Burgoyne's troops to Prospect Hill; company discharged at Cambridge.

WORCESTER CO.

WHIPPLE Jeremiah. Private, Capt. Abraham Batcheller's co., Col. Jonathan Holman's regt.; service, 21 days; company marched to Providence, R.I., on an alarm in Dec. 1776. Roll sworn to in Worcester Co.

WHIPPLE, John. Private, Capt. Edmund Brigham's co., Col. Job Cushing's regt.; service, 7 days; company ordered to be mounted if possible and marched 21 Aug. 1777, to reinforce Northern army at request of Gen. Stark and Gen. Lincoln, proceeded to Hadley, and was there counter-ordered; said Whipple reported among those returned as unmounted. Roll sworn to in Worcester Co.

WHIPPLE, John. Sergeant, Capt. Joseph Warrin's co., engaged 21 Aug. 1777; discharged 26 Aug. 1777; service, 5 days, under Lieut. Col. Wheelock in Northern department; company marched to Bennington on an alarm. Roll certified in Worcester Co.

WHIPPEL, Samuel. Private, Capt. Daniel Gilbert's co., Col. Josiah Whitney's regt.; service from 10 Aug. 1778, to 13 Sept. 1778, 1 mo. 8 days, at Rhode Island, including travel (106 miles) home. Roll sworn to in Worcester Co.

WHIPPLE, Simon, Private, Capt. Abraham Batcheller's co., Col. Jonathan Holman's regt.; service 21 days; company marched to Providence, R.I., on an alarm in Dec. 1776. Roll sworn to in Worcester Co.

WHIPPLE, Thomas, West Springfield. List of men raised to serve in the Continental Army, as returned by Capt. Levi Ely; residence, West Springfield; engaged for town of West Springfield; joined Capt. Flower's co., Col. Greaton's regt.; term 3 years; also, Private, Capt. Samuel Flower's co., Col. John Greaton's (2d) regt.; Continental Army pay accounts for service from 1 Jan. 1777, to 31 Dec. 1779; also, muster roll for Jan-Aug., 1777, dated Van Schaick's Island and sworn to in Camp or at or near Stillwater; enlisted 1 Jan. 1777; also, muster roll dated Albany, 10 Nov. 1777; reported on command at Greenbush; also, return [year not given]; mustered by Col. Woolbridge, County Muster Master; also, muster rolls dated Albany, 2 Jan., 4 Feb., 9 March, 16 April, and 13 May 1778; reported on command at Hudson river on roll dated 16 April 1778, on command at West Point on roll dated 13 May 1778; also, muster roll dated Fort Constitution, 15 June 1778; also, muster rolls dated White Plains, 20 July, 5 Aug., and 1 Sept. 1778; reported on command at West Point on rolls dated 20 July and 5 Aug. 1778; also, muster roll for Sept. 1778, dated Fredericksburg; reported on command at West Point; also, muster roll for Oct. 1778, dated Camp Roxbury; reported on command at West Point; also, muster rolls for Nov. and Dec. 1778, and Jan. 1779, dated Camp Continental Village; also, muster roll for Feb. 1779, certified at Quarters near Croton River; also, muster roll for March, 1779, dated Quarters near Croton Bridge; also, muster roll of Capt. Flowers (5th) co., for April 1779, dated "Crompond;" also, muster roll for May, 1779, dated Camp Highlands; reported transferred to light infantry co.

OTHERS

WHIPPLES, Abraham. Pay roll of Capt. Shadrach Terry's division of nail makers for April 1777, attested by David Mason, Lieutenant Colonel and Director of the Board of Works, and certified at Boston; service from 15 April 1777, 16 days.

WHIPPELE, Amos. Descriptive list dated Hutts West Point, 25 Jan. 1781; Capt. Hayward's co., 2d Mass. regt.; rank, Private; age 20 yrs.; stature, 5 ft. 8 in.; complexion, light; hair, light; enlisted by Lieut. Col. Badlam, at Fishkill; enlistment, during war.

WHIPPLE, Ashabel. Capt. David Wheeler's co., Col. Benjamin Simond's regt.; service, 8 days; company marched from Lanesborough to Manchester Oct. 12, 1780; also, Private, same co. and regt.; service, 3 days; company marched from Lanesborough Oct. 26, 1780; also, Capt. Wheler's co., Col. Asa Barns's regt.; service, 11 days; company marched from Lanes-

borough to Saratoga 29 Oct. 1781, on an alarm.

WHIPPLE, Benjamin. List of men who worked on Chelsea barracks, dated 30 Nov. 1775; said Whipple credited with service for 1 mo.

WHIPPLE, Benjamin. Corporal, Capt. Asa Prince's co., Col. Danforth Keyes's regt.; enlisted 12 Sept. 1777; discharged 3 Jan. 1778; service, 3 mos. 21 days, at Rhode Island; roll dated Danvers; also, same co. and regt.; pay roll dated Providence, 31 Dec. 1777.

WHIPPLE, David. Private, Capt. Newell's co.; enlisted 3 Nov. 1778; discharged 18 Nov. 1778; service, 15 days; company detached from Gen. Warner's brigade to join Col. Gerrish's regt. of guards and escort troops of Saratoga convention from Rutland to Enfield, Conn.

WHIPEL, David. Capt. Enoch Putnam's co., Col. regt.; order for advance pay, signed by said Whipel and others, and dated Cambridge, 8 June 1775.

WHIPPEL, Eleazer. Private, Capt. John Porter's co., Col. Cyprian How's regt., Col. Commandant John Jacob's brigade; entered service 25 July 1780; discharged 30 Oct. 1780; service, 3 mos. 11 days, at Rhode Island, including travel (100 miles) home; regiment raised for 3 months.

WHIPPLE, Ezek. Marine, sloop *Providence*, commanded by Capt. John Peck Rathburn; list of officers and men entitled to prize shares in the *Loyalty* and Wreck [year not given].

WHIPPLE, Ezekiel. Corporal, Lieut. Esek Olney's (Capt. Thomas Olney, Jr.'s) co., 5th division, Col. Jabez Bowen's regt.; entered service 20 May 1777; service to 3 June 1777, 15 days under Capt. Jonathan Russell at Paxtuxet.

WHIPPEL, Francis, Jr. List of alarm men belonging to Capt. Brigham's co. [year not given], showing service rendered at various places and times paid in lieu of service, etc.; said Whippel credited with 8 mos. service at Dorchester.

WHIPPLE, George. Private, Capt. Phillip Ammidon's co., Col. Tyler's regt.; entered service 28 July 1780; discharged 8 Aug. 1780; service 15 days including 3 days (52 miles) travel home; company ordered to Rhode Island on the alarm of 27 July 1780.

WHIPPLE, James. Boy, ship *General Mifflin*, commanded by Capt. George Wait Babcock; descriptive list of officers and crew, sworn to 9 Sept. 1780; age, 17 yrs.; complexion, light.

WHIPPLE, Jesse. Sergeant, Lieut. Esek Olney's (Capt. Thomas Olney, Jr.'s) co., 5th division, Col. Jabez Bowen's regt.; entered service 20 May 1777; service to 3 June 1777, 14 days, under Capt. Jonathan Russell at Pawtuxet.

WHIPPLE, Jonathan. Private, Capt. David Bent's co., Col. Job Cushing's regt.; entered service 5 Sept. 1777; discharged 29 Nov. 1777; service, 3

mos. 5 days, in Northern Department, including 10 days (200 miles) travel home; company raised to serve until 30 Nov. 1777.

WHIPPLE, Jonathan. Corporal, Capt. Thomas Cummings's co., Col. Jacob Gerrish's regt.; entered service 14 Oct. 1779; discharged 22 Nov. 1779; service, 1 mo. 20 days, at Claverack, including travel (240 miles) home; regiment detached from militia of Essex and Suffolk counties to reinforce army under Gen. Washington.

WHIPPEL, John. List of men belonging to Capt. Brigham's co. [year not given], showing service rendered at various places and times paid in lieu of service, etc.; no service credited to said Whippel; reported paid a fine of £12.

WHIPPLE, John. Sergeant, Capt. Edmund Brigham's co., Col. Job Cushing's regt.; engaged 12 Sept. 1777; service, 2 mos. 18 days, in Northern Department; (also given at the Westward); company marched from Grafton; also, receipt given to Capt. Brigham, dated Grafton, 6 May 1778, signed by Lieut. Philemon Stacey, for State pay due said Whipple and others for service under Capt. Brigham in 1777.

WHIPPLE, John. Private, Capt. Thomas Cumming's co., Col. Jacob Gerrish's regt.; entered service 14 Oct. 1779; discharged 22 Nov. 1779; service, 1 mo. 20 days, at Claverack, including travel (240 miles) home; Regiment detached from militia of Essex and Suffolk counties to reinforce Army under Gen. Washington.

WHIPPEL, Joseph. Sergeant, first division, Capt. Squire Millerd's co., Col. Waterman's regt.; service from 6 April to 20 April 1777, 15 days.

WHIPPLE, Joseph. 2d Lieutenant, Capt. Turner Phillip's (8th) co., Col. Thomas Crafts's (Artillery) regt.; list of officers [year not given]; also, 2d Lieutenant, Capt. Phillips's (8th) co., Col. Crafts's regt.; engaged 8 May 1777; service to 1 Oct. 1777, 4 mos. 24 days.

WHIPPLE, Joshua. Capt. John Kalogg's co., Col. Leonard's regt.; enlisted 16 May 1777; discharged 15 July 1777; service 61 days in Northern Department.

WHIPPELL, Matthew. First Lieutenant, Capt. Henry Herrick's co. of grenadiers, Col. Larkin Thorndike's (8th Essex Co.) regt. of Mass. militia; list of officers; commissioned 4 May 1779.

WHIPPLE, Otis. Private, Capt. Philip Ammidon's co., Col. Nathan Tyler's regt.; entered service 2 Aug. 1780; discharged 8 Aug. 1780; service, 10 days, including 3 days (52 miles) travel home; company ordered to Rhode Island on the alarm of 27 July 1780.

WHIPPELL, Robert. Gunner, ship *Charming Sally*, commanded by Capt. Alexander Holmes; list of officers, dated Boston; vessel reported to have been in service from 13 July 1779, to 28 Aug. 1799, with a complement of 19 officers and 70 seamen and marines; 30 artillery-men reported taken on

board at Penobscot 12 Aug. 1779, and continued on board until 28 Aug. 1779.

WHIPLE, Rufus. Capt. Capron's co., Col. Doolittle's regt.; receipt for advance pay, signed by said Whiple and others, dated Camp at Cambridge, 24 June 1775.

WHIPPLE, Stephen. Capt. David Wheler's co.; service 6 days; company marched from Lanesborough to Meloomscuyck 14 Aug. 1777, on an alarm.

WHIPLE, Thomas. Return of Capt. Ezra Badlam's co. of the train of artillery, dated Roxbury Camp, 23 June 1775; enlisted 24 June 1775; reported joined from Capt. Danforth's co., Col. Brewer's regt.

WHIPPLE, Thomas. Capt. Miles Greenwood's co., Col. Jacob Gerrish's regt. of guards; enlisted 11 Nov. 1777; service to 3 April 1778, 4 mos. 23 days, at Charlestown and Cambridge Rolls dated Camp at Winter Hill.

WHIPLE, William. Private, Capt. Richard Dodge's co., Lieut. Col. Loammi Baldwin's (38th) regt.; return of men absent from muster; said Whiple absent 11 Sept. 1775, on sick leave; also, Capt. Dodge's (3d) co.; return of casualties of the several companies in the 38th regt., made by Lieut. Col. Baldwin, dated Chelsea, Sept. ___, 1775; said Whiple reported sick, absent 10 days; also, list of men enlisted by Lieut. Robert Dodge to serve in the Continental Army in Col. Baldwin's regt., dated Chelsea, 8 Dec. 1775; also, Capt. Dodge's co., Col. Baldwin's (26th) regt.; pay abstracts for March and April 1, 1776.

WHIPPLE, Rufus, Richmond [N.H]. Sergeant, Capt. Oliver Capron's co., Col. Ephraim Doolittle's (24th) regt.; muster roll dated 1 Aug. 1775; engaged 5 May 1775; service, 3 mo. 4 days; also, company return [probably Oct., 1775]; also, order for bounty coat dated Winter Hill, Charlestown, 19 Nov. 1775.

NEW HAMPSHIRE[2]

AARON WHIPPLE, CROYDON

23 August 1832 Aaron Whipple of Croydon, Sullivan County, NH, 71, deposed: that he enlisted in 1777 about the latter part of August, under Capt. Moses Whipple for two months; went with the Company from Croydon, where he then resided to White Creek; from there to Saratoga, where he remained until after Burgoyne was taken;

"While we were at Saratoga, Maj. Whitcomb raised a company of volunteers to pass the North River and take Burgoyne's Picket Guard. He was one of that company and we succeeded, took and carried away the Picket Guard, 37 horses, and 100 men and carried them across the river to our encampment." About 10 days after Burgoyne's surrender, he was dismissed and went home. The affidavit of Thomas Whipple is the only proof he has of that service.

That in May or June, 1781 he again enlisted under Capt. Nelson, Col. Benjamin Wait, for six months; went to Corinth, Vt where he was stationed until his time was out he was dismissed late in the fall and returned home; that he was born in Grafton, Worcester County, Mass. 29 March 1769, lived in Croydon when he enlisted and never received a written discharge. Signed Aaron Whipple

Rev. Jacob Haven and Sherman Cooper, both of Croyden, certified that it is the general belief in the neighborhood in which Aaron Whipple lives, that he has been a soldier in the Revolution, in which opinion we concur. Signed Jacob Haven, Sherman Cooper

22 August 1832 Thomas Whipple of Charlestown, N.H. formerly of Croyden, 73, testified that while living at Croyden in the latter part of June, 1777, information came from New York that assistance was wanted. His father, Moses Whipple was at that time commander of the Company of Militia. He immediately called them together told them the situation and nearly half of the company turned out and marched with his father to meet the enemy. Among them was his brother Aaron. He [Thomas Whipple] remembers perfectly seeing Aaron and his father Moses Whipple marching together. They were gone two months or more, returning home late in the fall. "The reason why I so well remember the fact is, I had no person to help me collect our corn and potatoes," on account of their being away; that in the early part of May or first of June, 1781, he remembers that his brother Aaron again enlisted for six months, and served under Capt. Charles Nelson, Col. Wait, at Corinth, Vt. Daniel Rooks and Ezekiel Rooks enlisted at the same time. They marched off together. During the summer the town called a meeting to see about paying the men, at which he [Thomas Whipple] was present. They voted to pay Aaron Whipple and the two Rooks for their service. Later Ezekiel Rooks was taken ill and hired Sherman Cooper to take his place. Late in the fall the three came home together. Signed Thomas Whipple

23 August 1832 Sherman Cooper of Croyden, 71, testified to his service as substitute for Ezekiel Rooks that Aaron Whipple was in service when he reached Corinth, and that the two were discharged at the same time and returned home together. Signed Sherman Cooper

23 August 1830 a Certificate was filed from the Town Clerk of Croyden, that 19 July 1781 the town "voted to pay Aaron Whipple, Ezekiel and Daniel Rooks for their services in the war this present year." Attest: Jacob Haven, Town Clerk.

Claim allowed and Certificate 2889, was issued 7 December 1832 under Act of 7 June 1832. (Only Revolutionary Pensioner named Aaron Whipple from any state. BMD).

Aaron was born 3-22-1761; died in 1838; married Matilda Cooper.[3]

New Hampshire Service

23 August 1832 Dan Whipple of Richmond, Cheshire County, N.H., 81, deposed: that he enlisted as a volunteer soon after the Battle of Lexington in 1775 and served one month under Capt. Capron, New Hampshire Militia; marched from Richmond to Lexington, then to Cambridge where he was stationed for a month and was then discharged; that in 1776 he enlisted again at Richmond under Capt. William Humphrey, New Hampshire Militia, Col. Wingate's regiment at Ticonderoga and Mt. Independence for five months and served out his term.

In May, 1777 he enlisted at Richmond, in the regular Army, with John Curtis of Winchester, N.H. and served in the third Battalion, New Hampshire Line under Capt. William Ellis; that he was stationed a month or more at Ticonderoga then, in June or July he was stationed at Fort Miller; then at Stillwater, N.Y. and then at Bemis Heights, where his regiment took part in the battle at that place under Gen. Gates and continued under him until after Burgoyne's surrender; that he marched to Albany, N.Y. and from there to Fishkill where he was stationed a week or two.

From there he passed through New Jersey to Pennsylvania, where he was stationed a whole month, and then was marched to "Gulf Hill," Pa.; that he was next stationed at Valley Forge where Gen. Washington commanded, and took up winter quarters there. After serving eight months and a half (the time for which he enlisted, being eight months), he was verbally discharged at Valley Forge; but his discharge and Sergeant's Warrant were burned a few years since, with his house.

He forwards affidavits from three living witnesses who served with him — Michael Barnes, Dan Freeman, and John Curtis. Signed by mark.

17 August 17,____ Michael Barnes of Richmond, testified to service with Dan Whipple under Capt. Oliver Capron in 1775. Signed Michael Barnes

4 August 1832 Dan Freeman of Northfield, Mass. testified to service with Dan Whipple in 1776 under Capt. Humphrey, Col. Wingate. Signed by mark

12 July 1832 John Curtis of Winchester, N.H. testified to service with Dan Whipple in 1777, under Capt. William Ellis in the regular troops. Signed by John Curtis

Claim allowed and Certificate 6615, New Hampshire Agency, was issued 5 March 1833 under Act of 7 June 1832 for $55.00 per annum.

(Only Revolutionary Pensioner named Dan Whipple from any state. There is, however, a Daniel Peck Whipple, Surgeon, whose widow, Hannah, obtained a pension in 1838 for his service with the Rhode Island

troops during the Revolutionary period while a resident of Cumberland, RI, age 82 (RI W8307).

He was the son of John Whipple and married at Cumberland in 1783 Hannah Weatherhead, daughter of Enoch Weatherhead. Soldier died 19 May 1814 and she died 31 Dec. 1838 leaving the following children:

Sarah P. Joslin (a widow)
Narcissa Whipple
Evelina, wife of Samuel Clark
George Whipple.

These two are the only Revolutionary soldiers named Dan or Daniel Whipple for whose service a pension was granted. B.M.D.

THOMAS WHIPPLE, CHARLESTOWN

New Hampshire Service

August 27, 1832 Thomas Whipple of Charlestown, Sullivan County, New Hampshire, 73, deposed: that he enlisted in June 1776 (he then living at Croyden, NH) under Capt. Benjamin Wait. Their commanding officer, Major Hoisington, commanded two other Companies also. They were ordered to go to Newbury, Vt. and were called Rangers. While with that Company, their headquarters were at Newbury but he was sent out at different times on scouting expeditions between Newbury and Canada and over the mountains to Onion River. He remained in service until October, when he hired a substitute, Henry Lovell, and went home.

That in the early part of May, 1777, he again volunteered and marched to Ticonderoga where he served two months under Capt. Solomon Chase, Col. Chase's regiment, until he was taken with measles and was discharged and went home sick; that about the latter part of July, 1780 he enlisted as a substitute for James Hall who had before that time enlisted for six months under Capt. Reynolds, Major Whitcomb, and served as a substitute two months at Haverhill, N.H. then he hired John Hall as a substitute to serve out the remainder of James Hall's term and he (Thomas Whipple) went home.

That in October 1780 when news came of the burning of Royalton he volunteered again as a soldier under Capt. Whipple, Col. Chase, marched as far as Sharon, adjoining Royalton when they were informed that the enemy had left Royalton, so they were immediately ordered to Newbury, Vt. where they stayed three months and then returned home.

That he was born at Grafton, Mass. 16 June 1769, lived in Croyden when called into service, and continued to reside there until 1809 when he moved to Charlestown, N.H. where he has resided ever since; that while in service at Ticonderoga he lost his wife. Signed Thomas Whipple

Hon. Henry Hubbard and Hiram Hall, both of Charlestown, N.H., certified that it is the general belief in the neighborhood in which Thomas Whipple lives, that he has been a soldier in the Revolution, in which opinion we concur. Signed Henry Hubbard and Hiram Bell.

29 August 1832 James Hall of Croyden, 76, testified to the accuracy of the soldier's statements concerning him; also that in the next winter, when he went to get for John Hall, the service which he rendered at the close of the six months, he found that the name of John Hall was there for the whole six months, and neither his nor Whipple's appeared at all. Signed James Hall

19 August 1832 Aaron Whipple of Croyden, N.H., 71, testified that "Thomas Whipple and himself are the sons of Moses Whipple" and certified to the correctness of Thomas Whipple's statement. Signed Aaron Whipple

Claim allowed and Certificate 3326, New Hampshire Agency, was issued 18 December 1832 under Act of 7 June 1832.

(This Thomas plus another Thomas at the end of this series are the only Revolutionary Pensioners named Thomas Whipple from any state. BMD).

SARAH WHIPPLE, WIDOW, CONCORD

Husband, Benjamin Whipple of Ipswich. Mass. Service

31 December 1838 Sarah Whipple of Concord, Merrimack County, New Hampshire, 82, deposed: that she is the widow of Benjamin Whipple, Revolutionary soldier who enlisted in 1776 at Ipswich, Mass under Capt Robert Dodge, Massachusetts troops, served six months, and was then discharged; that he also served at the Battle of Bennington, and was at the surrender of Burgoyne, being absent about two years; that she was married to Benjamin Whipple at Hamilton, Mass 14 Dec. 1780; and that her husband died 1 April 1824. Signed by Sarah Whipple

23 October 1838 Rev. George W. Kelly, pastor of the Congregational Church at Hamilton, Mass., certified that the marriage of Benjamin Whipple to Sarah Tuttle, both of Hamlet, on 14 Dec. 1780, was recorded on the records of the Church by Rev. Dr. Cutler, then settled pastor. Signed George W. Kelly

30 August 1838 David Hammond of Bow, Merrimack County, N.H., 80, testified that he was well acquainted with Benjamin Whipple who lived at Bow, N.H., the latter part of his life, and died there 14 or 15 years previous; that in 1776 he lived in Ipswich, Mass., served under Capt. Robert Dodge six months and was stationed at Dorchester Point; Benjamin Whipple, who was also of Ipswich at that time, enlisted in Dodge's

Company also and they served together for six months and were discharged at the same time.

While he (David Hammond) knows that Whipple served also at Bennington, he was not in his company and can not testify from personal knowledge of the length of service although he has heard Whipple say that he served between two and three years in the Revolutionary War. He knows also that Benjamin Whipple married Sarah Tuttle of Ipswich; moved from there to Bow, where they lived until his death; and that the widow has never remarried. Signed by mark

(An annotation on this affidavit sates that Hammond is a Revolutionary Pensioner under Act of 15 May 1828 at $80.00 per annum, and placed on pension roll 12 Sept. 1828. BMD).

26 December 1838 John Whipple of Concord, N.H., 48, testified that he is the fourth son of Benjamin and Sarah Whipple; that his father died as stated (he having seen him after death), and that his mother has remained a widow. Signed by John Whipple

Claim allowed for six months service as was her subsequent claim, made 26 April 1843 while 87, the last certificate 1005 being issued 20 July 1843 under Act of 3 March 1843 for service in Massachusetts Militia.

(This is apparently the only Benjamin Whipple for whose service a woman has obtained a pension, but there was a Revolutionary Pensioner named Benjamin Whipple who was born in Coventry, R.I. 21 Sept. 1762; served from Plainfield, Conn. and in 1832 was a resident of Johnson, R.I. These two are the only Revolutionary Pensioners of the name from any state. BMD).

* * *

Corporal Samuel Whipple, New Hampshire, born 8-28-1749, died 12-8-1782; married Lucy Brown.[4]

WHIPPLE, Aaron. Private in Col. Jonathan Chase's regt. which marched from Cornish and joined the Continental Army under Gen. Gage near Saratoga. He entered service 23 Sept., discharged 23 Oct. (served 1 month, 1 day). p. 376.

WHIPPLE, Daniel. Wm. Humphreys' co. in the Northern Army. Continental service in August 1776. p. 355.

Of Richmond, was sergeant in Capt. Nicholas Gilman's co. enlisted in 9 May 1777 for a term of 8 months; discharged 10 Jan. 1778. p. 22.

Of Richmond, mustered 4 June 1777 in Capt. John Griggs co. in Col. Alexander Scammel's regt. p. 645.

WHIPPLE, Israel. Served as Second Lieut. in Capt. Wm. Humphreys' co. in the Northern Army. Continental service in August 1776. p. 355.

Private in Capt. Oliver Caprons' co. of Col. Samuel Ashley's regt. of militia which marched to the relief of Ticonderoga. The engagement was 29 June; he was discharged 3 July 1777 after 5 days service. p. 56.

WHIPPLE, Jabez. Of Richmond, mustered 4 June 1777 in Capt. John Griggs co. in Col. Alexander Scammel's regt. p. 645.

Of Richmond. Signed for a 6 month enlistment in response to an Act passed 16 June 1780 to raise 600 men to serve until 31 Dec. Those who refused to go had to pay $500. p. 70.

Enlisted 28 June, discharged 4 Dec. 1780 (serving 5 months, 16 days). Traveled 71 miles to Worcester. p. 81.

WHIPPLE, James. Enlisted by Col. Enoch Hale on 1 Aug. 1779 for a period of one year to serve in the Continental army. p. 631.

Served in the 3rd N.H. regt. from the months of June and July 1779 to June and July 1780 in the Continental Army at the pay of £5 per month. p. 44.

As a six month man, issued a half pint of rum and one pound of sugar by Joseph Bass, clothier and commissary for the state of N.H. at West Point. pp. 106-7.

Issued £6 in Aug. 1779 as a member of the Continental Army as travel money to Springfield, Mass. p. 812.

WHIPPLE, Jeremiah. Private in Col. Benjamin Bellow's regt. of N.H. militia which reinforced the garrison at Ticonderoga in June 1777. Time of their engagement was 28 June. p. 29.

WHIPPLE, Joseph. Colonel Joseph Whipple and Col. David Page were ordered by the General Court to raise a company of 50 men for the defense of the northern frontiers of the state. Enlisted from 27 Aug. through 6 Sept. p. 281.

WHIPPLE, Moses. Croydon. Captain in Col. Jonathan Chase's regt. of N.H. militia commanded by Maj. Francis Smith. Entered service 27 June and left 11 July (15 days). Marched from Cornish and towns adjacent to reinforce the garrison at Ticonderoga on the Alarms of 27 June and 4 July 1777. p. 45

Capt. in Col. Jonathan Chase's regt. which marched from Cornish and joined the Continental army under Gen. Gage near Saratoga. He entered service 23 Sept., discharged 23 Oct. (served 1 month, 1 day). p. 373.

Received expense money for 3 days for himself and a horse for the march to reinforce Ticonderoga. pp. 108 and 111.

WHIPPLE, Prince. Negro servant to General Whipple at Battle of Saratoga. Engaged 27 Sept, discharged 12 Nov. 1777. Time in service was 1 month 17 days, Travel from Portsmouth to Saratoga, 216 miles. Paid rations while in camp from 9 to 24 Oct. Wages paid including rations and travel, 3.2.9. and 11.11.4. p. 282.

Service from 3 Aug. through 5 Sept. (1 month, 3 days) with General Whipple in R.I. p. 580.

WHIPPLE, Rufus. Of Richmond. Sergeant in Capt. Oliver Capron's co. at Winter Hill 6 Oct. 1775. Part of Col. Ephraim Doolittle's regt. p. 745.

Ensign in Capt. Oliver Caprons' co. of Col. Samuel Ashley's regt. of militia which marched to the relief of Ticonderoga. The engagement was 29 June; he was discharged 11 July 1777 after 13 days service. p. 54.

Ensign in Capt. Reuben Alexander's co. of Col. Samuel Ashley's regt.; marched from the county of Cheshire to reinforce the army at Ticonderoga. p. 96.

13 Feb. 1778. Mustered 13 men from town of Richmond to serve 2 years in the Continental service. p. 446.

On the Committee appointed by the town of Richmond to hire soldiers to serve in the war. p. 809.

WHIPPLE, Samuel. Private in Col. Jonathan Chase's regt. when reinforced the Northern Continental army at Ticonderoga 7 May, discharged 16 June 1777 (served 1 month, 10 days). Travel distance to the battle was 100 miles, return to home 60 miles. pp. 16 and 136.

WHIPPLE, Thomas. Private in Col. Jonathan Chase's regt. when reinforced the Northern Continental Army at Ticonderoga 7 May, discharged 16 June 1777 (served 1 month, 10 days). Travel distance to the battle was 100 miles, return to home 60 miles. pp. 16 and 136.

WHIPPLE, William. March 1776, the Legislature appointed him Colonel of the first regiment; to include 1,561 men aged 16 to 50. p. 256.

18 July 1777. The Legislature divided the militia into two brigades, the first to comprise the regiments in the eastern portion of the state, and be under command of Brigadier-General William Whipple; the second to

comprise those in the western portion and be under command of Brigadier-General John Stark.[6]

27 Sept. 1777. The legislature appointed General Whipple to take command of all recruits for the northern department. 2 Oct. was ordered by the Committee of Safety to collect all the volunteers and "put yourself and troops under the Commander in Chief of the Continental Army in that [the northern] Department, to act as occasion may require. p. 276.

General Whipple's Brigade at the Battle of Saratoga consisted of parts of 9 regiments and sundry other companies; in service from 22 Sept. to 26 Oct. p. 433.

General Whipple was engaged 27 Sept, discharged 12 November. Time in service was 1 month 17 days, Travel from Portsmouth to Saratoga, 216 miles. p. 282.

General Whipple commanded a volunteer Brigade in R.I. in Aug. 1778 to operate in connection with a French fleet. Service from 3 Aug. through 5 Sept. (1 month, 3 days). p. 580.

VERMONT CONTINENTAL GREEN MOUNTAIN BOYS AND MASSACHUSETTS SERVICE

THOMAS WHIPPLE, Peeling, N.H.

21 April 1818 Thomas Whipple of Peeling, Grafton County, New Hampshire, 66, deposed: That he enlisted in March, 1777 in Vermont under Capt. William Macune or McCune of the Green Mountain Boys commanded by Col. Warner and continued to serve until July or August 1778 when he was furloughed, on account of ill health which disabled him from further service for the rest of the three years for which he enlisted.

That he formerly lived in Brattleborough, Vt. and in June, 1775 enlisted from there as a private under Capt. Danforth, Col. David Brewer, in Gen. Ward's Brigade (Massachusetts Line) for eight months and served out his term, and before its expiration he had re-enlisted in the same company for one year, and served until January 1777 when he was discharged at Ticonderoga, but none of the company received written discharges.

That in March 1777 he enlisted again as a non commissioned officer under Capt. William McCune, Col. Warner, as previously stated; and that his warrant as a Sergeant was stolen from him with his pocket containing $30.00 which he had never seen since.

1 May 1818 Jonathan Tyler of Piermont, NH testified to service with Thomas Whipple a Sergeant in the Green Mountain Boys from March 1777 until July or August of that year he (Tyler) was taken prisoner by the British.

20 June 1818 Stephen Jenkins of Bradford, Vt. testified to acquaintance

with Sergeant Thomas Whipple from March 1777 and to service with him under Capt. McCune for over nine months.

Claim allowed and Certificate 10168 New Hampshire Agency was issued 3 May 1819 under Act of 18 March 1818.

2 July 1820 Thomas Whipple stated that he is a farmer, but unable to work on account of a fracture of his right leg; that he has a wife, 55, (no named mentioned) but no children living with him at home; that he owns a house, 18 by 36 feet unfinished which he is building with his pension money and owns eight acres of land in Peeling, uncultivated.

His name was dropped from the roll on account of property but restored in May 1823 when the Selectmen of Wheeling, Thomas Vincent, Jr., Samuel Nute, Jr., Benjamin Fox, and Thomas Walker, J.P., testified in his behalf. At that time the name of his wife was given as Rody, she being 57, and almost blind.

28 December 1829 Thomas Whipple applied for and obtained a transfer of pension to New York, he living at that time with a son-in-law and daughter. Walter Whipple and Paul Tabor of Rochester, N.Y. certified to his identity.

16 May 1832 he applied for and obtained a transfer to the territory of Michigan, Wayne County, to which place his children had moved.

14 August 1838 Walter Whipple wrote the department from Tecumseh, Lenawee County, Michigan stating that his father, Thomas Whipple died 8 August 1833 and his widow died 25 August 1833. No place of death is mentioned by him, but in an unverified letter on file in the case from Milwaukee in 1906 the statement is made that the soldier and his widow died at Adrian, Michigan.

Another note states that Thomas Whipple was buried at Raisin, Lenawee County, the dates being: Born 27 March 1752. Died 8 August 1833.

DAR VERMONT RECORDS[7]

Benjamin, Sr.: b. 4-23-1727; d. 4-30-1806. Lieutenant. Married Hepzibah Crosby.

Benjamin, Jr.: b. 9-16-1755; d. 3-8-1813. Married Silence Bundy.

Nathan: b. 7-7-1761; d. 1-7-1832. Private. Married Mary Hill.

Nehemiah: b. 3-25-1750, d. 1-22-1809. Private. Married Sarah Roberts.

Thomas: b. 3-26-1752; d. 8-8-1833. Sergeant. Married (1) Lydia Gates. (2) Mrs. Woodward. (3) Rhoda Merrill

WHIPPLE, Aaron. Pay roll of Capt. Charles Nelson's from the commencement of service to 30 June 1781. Paid 1.2.8. p. 389.

Pay roll of Capt. Charles Nelson's co. in Col. Benj. Wait's battalion from 1 July 1781 for 73 days service. Private. Pay and subsistence was 6 2/3 per month. He marched 40 miles, paid 4.17.4. pp. 445 and 447.

WHIPPLE, Benjamin. Pay roll of Capt. John Warner's co. in Lt. Col. Herrick's regt. of Rangers. Entered 18 Aug., discharged 3 Dec. 1777. 108 days service. paid 3.12.0. p. 49.

Pay roll of Capt. Simeon Wright's co. in Col. Warren's regt of militia commencing 7 Nov. ending 13 Nov. 1778. 7 days service; paid on basis of 2.10 per month; received 0.11.8. p. 97.

Pay roll of Capt. Simeon Wright's co. of militia in Col. Gideon Warren's regt. for a scout to the Lake against Crown Point and then to Ticonderoga the last of March in 1780. 3 days service, marched 30 miles, pay per month 2.0.0.; paid 0.14.0. p. 155.

Pay roll of Capt. John Spafford's co., in Col. Ebenezer Allen's regt. of militia August 4 - 18, 1870. Entered 4 Aug., discharged 11 Aug, serving 8 days at 2. per month; marched 25 miles, received 10.8. plus 8.4. for subsistence and mileage; total. 19. pp. 188-89.

Pay roll of Capt. Nathaniel Blanchard's co. of militia in Col. Thos. Lee's regt. for service at Castleton 21 Oct., ending 30 Oct. 1781. Drummer. 10 days, marched 9 miles, paid 17.8. p. 470.

Appointed muster master 25 Feb. 1782 for troops to be raised on the west side of the Green Mountains. For service as muster master for Col. Lee's regt., was authorized payment of 12 shillings. Payment approved 18 June and paid 6 Aug. 1782. pp. 750 and 774.

Pay roll of Capt. Samuel Robinson troop from 22 to 30 May. Paid for 9 days service. p. 808.

* means brothers.

*WHIPPLE, Benjamin, Jr. Roster of Capt. Samuel Robinson's Roll, Battle of Bennington, 16 Aug. 1777. p. 27.

*WHIPPLE, David. Pay roll of Capt. Simeon Wright's co. of Col. Warren's regt. guarding the frontiers for 7 days commencing 6 May 1779. Paid 0.14.0. p. 117.

Pay roll of Capt. Simeon Wright's co. of militia in Col. Gideon Warren's regt. for a scout to the Lake against Crown Point and then to Ticonderoga the last of March in 1780. 7 days, 50 miles, paid 1.6.0. p. 155.

Pay roll of Capt. Thomas Lee's co. of militia in Col. Gideon Warren's

regt. on alarm to Ticonderoga and Crown Point for 7 days in June 1780. Marched 39 miles, paid 1.1.4. p. 183.

Pay roll of Capt. John Spafford's co., in Col. Ebenezer Allen's regt. of militia August 4 - 18, 1870. Entered 4 Aug., discharged 11 Aug, serving 8 days at 2. per month; marched 25 miles, received 10.8 plus 8.4 for subsistence and mileage; total. 19. pp. 188-9.

Pay roll of Capt. Nathan Blanchard's co. of militia in Col. Ebenezer Allen's regt. for an alarm commencing 12 Oct., ending 12 Nov. 1780. Served 30 days, marched 33 miles; paid 2.11.0. p. 300.

Pay roll of Capt. Nathaniel Blanchard's co. of militia in Col. Thos. Lee's regt. for service at Castleton 21 Oct., ending 30 Oct. 1781. Corporal. Served 10 days, marched 9 miles, paid 17.8. p. 470.

Pay roll of 2 companies raised as a levy from Col. Thomas Lee's regt. of militia for the defense of the frontiers of Vermont in Oct. 1781; stationed at Castleton. Corporal. Served 10 days; paid 14.2. p. 476.

WHIPPLE, Jabesh. Pay roll of Lt. William Post's co. of volunteers from 29 Aug to 20 Sept. 1780. Pay per month 2.0.0.; paid 1.9.4 for 22 days. p. 196.

Pay roll of Capt. John Pratt's co. of infantry in Col. Ebenezer Walbridge's battalion. Entered service 1 July, discharged 22 Nov. 1781. Served 145 days at 1.4 per day for a total of 11.3.4. pp. 576-7.

*WHIPPLE, Jonathan. Pay roll of Capt. Samuel Allen's co. of volunteers raised by order of Brig. Gen. Allen, commencing 13 Oct, ending 4 Nov. 1780. Served 23 days at £2 per month; paid 1.12.8 including subsistence for 24 miles. pp. 296-7.

Pay roll of Capt. Nathan Blanchard's co. of militia in Col. Ebenezer Allen's regt. for an alarm commencing 12 Oct., ending 12 Nov. 1780. Served 7 days, marched 12 miles; paid 0.13.4. p. 300.

WHIPPLE, Moses. In Major Joab Hoisington's rangers 26 Sept. 1776; enlisted 23 Aug. 1776 and was in Capt. Benj. Wait's co. pp. 818-9.

*WHIPPLE, Nehemiah. Pay roll of Capt. Simeon Wright's co. in Col. Warren's regt. of militia commencing 7 Nov. ending 13 Nov. 1778. 7 days service; paid on basis of 2.10 per month; received 0.11.8. p. 97

Pay roll of Capt. Simeon Wright's co. of militia in Col. Gideon Warren's regt. for an alarm at Neshobe [Brandon] for 3 days beginning 22 Nov. 1779. Marched 20 miles, paid 10.8. p. 142.

Pay roll of Capt. Simeon Wright's co. of militia in Col. Gideon Warren's regt. for a scout to the Lake against Crown Point and then to Ticonderoga the last of March in 1780. Served 4 days, 30 miles, paid 0.15.4. p. 155.

Pay roll of Capt. Nathan Blanchard's co. of militia in Col. Ebenezer Allen's regt. for an alarm commencing 12 Oct., ending 12 Nov. 1780. Served 30 days, marched 33 miles; paid 2.11.0. p. 300.

Pay roll of Capt. Nathaniel Blanchard's co. of militia in Col. Thos. Lee's regt. for service at Castleton 21 Oct., ending 30 Oct. 1781. Served 4 days, marched 9 miles, paid 8.4. p. 470.

WHIPPLE, Oliver. Pay roll of Capt. Wm. Hutchins' co. in Maj. Ebenezer Allen's detachment from 1 Feb to 30 Nov. 1780. Rate of pay £2 per month; paid £20 for 10 months. p. 320.

Pay roll of Capt. Wm. Hutchins' co. from the beginning of the campaign in 1781 to 30 June 1781. Private. Received 3.5.4. for this service. p. 396-97.

Pay roll of Capt. Wm. Hutchins' co. in the battalion commanded by Lt. Col. Samuel Fletcher, Esq. commencing 1 July 1781. Served 90 days to 1 Oct. 1781 for which he was paid 6.0.0. and was listed as deserted. pp. 576-79.

WHIPPLE, William. Pay roll of Capt. James Blakeslee's co. in service from the beginning of the campaign of 1781 to 30 June 1781. Paid 3.9.4. p. 388.

Pay roll of Capt. Blakeslee's co. in Col. Fletcher's battalion and Gen. Enos' brigade commencing 1 July 1781, ending mid December Served from 1 July through 22 Nov. when he was discharged after 145 days service. Paid 9.13.4. pp. 559-61.

RHODE ISLAND[9]

Abraham: b. 9-26-1733; d. 5-29-1819. Commodore. Married Sarah Hopkins.

Asa: b. 1753; d. 5-24-1831. Private. Married Sylvia Staples.

Benajah: b. 6-17-1734; d. 1812. Captain. Married Tabitha (__).

Benedict: b. 10-13-1739; d. 6-16-1839. Private. Married Elizabeth Mathewson.

Benjamin: b. 11-17-1754; d. 4-30-1819. Marine. Married Susanna Hall. He may be from New York.

Benjamin: b. 1-5-1726; d. 10-1803. Captain. Married (1) Anna Brown. (2) Deborah Dammon.

Christopher: b. 5-20-1745; d, 1-27-1808. Lieutenant.

Christopher: b. 11-26-1754; d. 8-12-1787. Ensign. Married Sarah Cushing.

Daniel: b. 8-19-1716; d. 12-22-1783. Ensign. Married Mary Razee

Daniel Peck b. 1751; d. 5-19-1814. Doctor. Married Hannah Weaterhead

Eleazer: b. 1-20-1733; d. 3-22-1781. Private. Married Anna Brown.

Ethan: b. 2-13-1758; d. 12-18-1836. Sergeant. Married (1) Elizabeth Green. (2) Abigail Hawkins. (3) Mrs. Lydia Babcock (Church)

Ezekiel: b. 5-15-1759; d. 4-16-1829. Ensign. Married Mary Olney.

Ibrook: b. 1716; d. 1799. Private. Married Mary (__).

Jesse: b. 9-16-1744; d. 2-10-1823. Sergeant. Married Freelove Olney.
Job: b. 5-1-1755; d. 2-6-1838. Private. Married (1) Mrs. Patience Stafford Pratt (2) Ruth Stone.
John: b. 12-9-1751 d. 5-11-1824. Private. Married Lydia Irons.
Jonathan: b. 1750; d. 1788. Corporal. Married Susan Burnham.
Jonathan: b. 12-8-1723; d. 11-5-1805. Married Anna Smith.
Moses: b. 1-21-1729; d. 9-3-1807. Private. Married Patience Mathewson.
Peter: b. 3-7-1747; d. 11-20-1820. Private. Married Sarah Sly.
Preserved: b. 9-6-1746; d. 5-25-1812. Private. Married Olive Ballou.
Simon: b. 9-28-1738; d. 1790. Lt. Colonel. Married Mary Miller.
Simon: b. 6-15-1760; d. 5-12-1829. Ensign. Married Abigail Verry.
Simon: b. 2-13-1752; d. 9-21-1821. Private. Married Levina Staples.
Stephen, Jr: b. 1750; d. 1-16-1822. Captain. Married (1) (__) Whipple (2) Lucina Paine.

OLIVE WHIPPLE, WIDOW, CUMBERLAND

Husband, Preserved Whipple. Rhode Island Service.

6 February 1838 Olive Whipple of Richmond, Cheshire County, NH, born in May 1751, deposed: that she is the widow of Preserved Whipple, Revolutionary soldier, who served a number of different times during the Revolution, near Providence and on the Island; that two of his Captains were Reuben Ballou and Amos Whipple. "We were then living in Cumberland, RI where his residence was during the whole of the war; that she was married to Preserved Whipple in October 1776 by Elder Nathaniel Cook in Cumberland; that her husband died in May 1813 at Richmond, N.H.; and she has remained a widow since his death. Signed by mark.

19 September 1837 Levi Weatherhead of Cumberland, R.I., 73, testified to service with Preserved Whipple in the spring of 1776 for one month under Capt. Elisha Waterman at Providence; and remembers Whipple's serving under Capt. Reuben Ballard (sic) in Col. Cook's regiment in December 1776 and serving three months. "I served one month in December at Tiverton; also served with him three months, in three different tours, in 1779 under Capt. Amos Whipple, Col. Chad Brown at Providence; and in March 1780 we served together under Capt. Amos Whipple on the Island of Rhode Island when the French were there. Signed Levi Weatherhead.

19 September 1837, William Ballou of Cumberland, 80, testified to service with Preserved Whipple in 1776 under Reuben Ballou; for three months; and one month at Tiverton, under Capt. Amos Whipple; and in August 1778 he and Whipple were drafted into Sullivan's expedition under Capt. Amos Whipple, Col. Matherson. "In August 1780 we served one

month together under Capt. Whipple at Bristol; and in March, 1781, another month under the same Captain, but in Col. George Peck's regiment.

"They must have been married a number of years before the Revolutionary War for they were married and had two or three children before he went into service." Signed William Ballou.

19 September 1837 Amaziah Weatherhead of Cumber land, R.I., 80, testified to personal knowledge of Preserved Whipple's serving as stated in 1778 and 1789. Signed Amaziah Weatherhead.

19 September 1837 Oliver Harris of Cumberland, R.I., 78, testified to service with Preserved Whipple one month in 1777 at Providence under Capt. Timothy Willmarth. Col. Brown; and in October 1777 another month under Capt. Amos Whipple. Signed Oliver Harris.

5 February 1838 Otis Whipple of Fitzwilliam, N.H., testified that when a boy of 11, his father went to war under Capt. Amos Whipple of Cumberland. He went with his father and Capt. Whipple as far as Providence and rode behind Capt. Whipple on his horse. At that time he had two brothers living; also that he often heard his father say that he was in the battle on Rhode Island when the Americans were forced to retreat to Tiverton. Signed Otis Whipple.

4 December 1837 Oziel Ballou testified that he was present at the marriage of Preserved Whipple and that it took place before the Revolutionary war. Preserved Whipple and Olive Ballou were lawfully married by Elder Nathaniel Cook of Cumberland. Preserved Whipple is now dead and Olive has never remarried. Signed Oziel Ballou.

Claim allowed and Certificate 1854 was issued 14 March 1838 under Act of 4 July 1836, Section 3. A note states that this was paid at the Treasury to 4 Sept. 1840 under Act of 6 April 1838 and Agent notified. This is probably the approximate date of death of Olive Whipple.

20 September 1837 the following list of children of Preserved Whipple and Olive his wife, as certified by Pardon Sayley, Town Clerk of Cumberland, RI, is as follows:

Otis, first son born 28 Dec. 1767; Preserved, second son, born 27 March 1770; Stephen, third son, born 27 Nov. 1772; Philadelphia, first daughter, born 25 April 1776; Silas, fourth son born 8 Sept. 1778; Comfort, fifth son born 7 Jan. 1781; Nancy, second daughter, born 18 Sept. 1783; Olive, third daughter, born 2 July 1786; Russell, sixth son, born 11 Aug. 1789; James, seventh son, born 30 April 1792. Recorded 25 Jan. 1794. Attest: Jotham Carpenter, Town Clerk.

This application is recorded in the list of 1832 and copied into the list of Volume 30 of New Hampshire State papers as Oliver Whipple. There is no pensioner named Oliver Whipple but this pension belongs without

doubt to Olive, widow of Preserved Whipple, W15479.

CONNECTICUT[10]

Caleb: b. 7-23-1764; d. 10-15-1851. Private. Married Polly McIntyre.
Elijah: b. 5-22-1752; d. 10-8-1834. Private. Married Elizabeth Dennison.
Zebulon: b. 4-26-1764; d. 9-5-1851. Private. Married Lydia Russell.

Listed below are ***women whose maiden name was Whipple*** *who joined the National Society of the Daughters of American Revolution whose spouses served in the Revolutionary War. Following the given name of the Whipple woman is the name of her spouse, the volume and page in the DAR Indexes where the vital record of the patriot is found. The vital record includes the place and type of service.*[11]

( ):	Stephen Whipple, Jr.	I. 734.
Abigail:	Thadeus Warren.	I. 719.
Amey:	Esek Aldrich.	I. 007.
Amy:	Thomas Green.	I. 284.
Anna:	Daniel Wilkinson, Jr.	I. 745.
Anna:	Isaac Wyborn.	I. 766.
Anna:	John Hinckley.	I. 331.
Bethial:	Jonathan Lamson, Jr.	I. 399.
Chloe:	Abner Field.	I. 234.
Cynthia:	Ebenezer Root.	I. 580.
Deborah:	Jonathan Nutting.	I. 501.
Dorcas:	Ariel Cook.	I. 150.
Eleanor:	Simeon Nash.	I. 490.
Elizabeth.	Reuben Eames.	I. 210.
Esther	Jonathan Converse.	I. 150.
Eunice:	Samuel Cranston.	I. 162.
Freelove:	Reuben Ballou.	I. 003.
Freelove:	Williama Barnes.	I. 037.
Hannah:	Humphrey Bigelow.	I. 058.
Hannah:	Benjamin Brownell.	I. 095.
Hannah:	David Haraden.	I. 302.
Hannah:	Isaac Harrington.	I. 305.
Jemima:	John Bemis.	I. 052.
Jemima:	Ephraim Whitney.	I. 739.
Jemima	Zebedee Young.	I. 770.
Katherine:	Ebenezer Sprout.	I. 639.

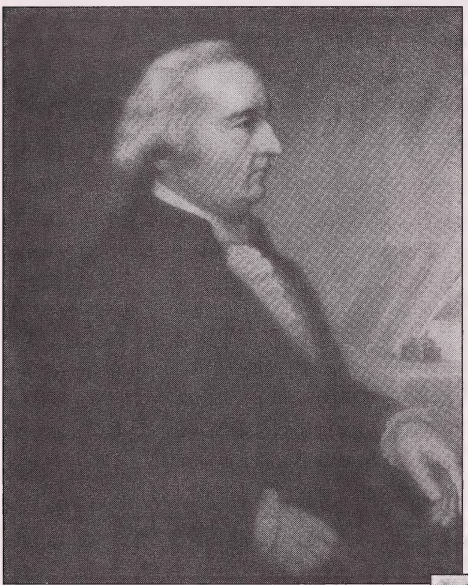
Lucy:	Jeremiah Jenks.	I. 367.
Lydia:	Jonah Steere, 6th.	I. 645.
Martha:	David Jenks.	I. 367.
Mary:	Oliver Blackinton.	I. 063
Mary:	William Chaffee.	I. 122.
Mary:	John Kent.	I. 383.
Mary:	Moses Pelton.	I. 525.
Mary:	Phineas Putnam.	I. 552.
Mary:	Abner Thompson.	I. 674.
Mary:	Levi Tower.	I. 684.
Mary:	Joseph Warner, Jr.	I. 718.
Mary:	Ebenezer Wells.	I. 728.
Mercy:	Israel Sayles.	I. 595.
Nancy:	Jeremiah Jenks.	I. 367.
Perone:	Jonathan Church.	I. 131.
Phebe:	George Peck.	I. 523.
Prudence:	George Field.	I. 235.
Prudence:	David Warren.	I. 718.
Sabra:	John Dexter.	I. 191.
Sara:	Aaron Smith.	II. 194.
Sarah:	Robert Annable.	I. 016.
Sarah:	Benjamin Ballou.	I. 033.
Sarah:	Benajmin Batchelder.	I. 042.
Sarah:	Nehemiah Gates.	II. 081.
Sarah:	Asael Collins.	I. 145.
Sarah, Mrs.	Joseph Poland.	I. 539.
Sarah:	Gershom Proctor.	I. 549.
Sarah:	Shearjashub Spooner.	I. 638.
Silence:	David Sayles.	I. 595.
Susanna:	Thomas Marshall Baker	I. 030.
Thankful:	Nathaniel Spalding.	I. 634.
Zuviah:	David Rowland.	I. 584.

VIRGINIA[12]

Henry Whipple, sgt. Joseph Whipples.
John Whipple, Hanover. William Whipple.
Joseph Whipple

TWO AMERICAN UNSUNG HEROS OF THE REVLUTIONARY WAR

If a man means to be an historical figure, it is a good idea to impress a literary patron—a Boswell, a Longfellow, a Homer, a Virgil. Samuel Johnson, Paul Revere, Odysseus, and Aeneas were fortunate in this regard. General William Whipple and Commodore Abraham Whipple weren't. As a result, William and Abraham have been left out of practically all the history books about the American Revolution. Henry Wadsworth Longfellow put Paul Revere on the map. He even gave us the exact hour at which Paul reached Concord on his "midnight" ride despite the fact Revere says he was captured by the British before he got there.



General William Whipple (1730-1785). Photo courtesy of the National Society of the Colonial Dames of America In the State of New Hampshire, Portsmouth, N.H.

William and Abraham's accomplishments were among the significant exploits of the struggle for independence. Both joined the struggle early in the contest. Both immediately rose to important positions of leadership. Both were recognized by their peers for their outstanding contributions; William for the major role he played in the Continental Congress from 1776 to 1779; Abraham for his unbelievable exploits in the Continental Navy from 1775 to 1780. Unfortunately, historians ignored them.

Katharine (Moffatt) Whipple (1734-1821). Photo courtesy of the National Society of the Colonial Dames of America In the State of New Hampshire, Portsmouth, N.H.

Though carrying the same surname, they were not related by blood but were related by commitment to the American cause. William's contributions were many. He was active in Portsmouth, N. H. public affairs, represented the city in the Colonial Legislature, and served three terms – from 29 February 1776 to 25 September 1779 in the Continental Congress. He commanded a New Hampshire Militia Brigade in the Revolutionary War. After leaving Congress he was New Hampshire's first federal tax collector and Judge and President of the Court to try the first case heard under the Articles of Confederation. He ended his career as Justice of the state's Superior Court of Judicature. In Congress, he signed the Declaration of Independence, was Chair of the Marine, Foreign Affairs, and Tax Committees and was a ranking member of military and quartermaster Committees.

The Congress' Marine Committee relied on Abraham to get the most difficult jobs done. He fired the first gun of the Revolution on water – two days before the Battle of Bunker Hill. He eluded a British squadron on Narragansett Bay and carried dispatches from the Congress to France which brought France into the war on the American side. He made the richest capture by the Navy of merchantmen during the war. He consistently out maneuvered British Admirals with much larger and more powerful gun ships.

The following two brief biographies address some of what these two American patriots did to advance the cause of American independence. Because this Appendix is devoted to Whipples who served in the Revolutionary Army, Navy, and state Militias, William's biography excludes information on his Congressional service. For those interested in knowing more about Gen. Whipple, the author has published an extensive biography on his life and times in *History and Genealogy of "Elder" John Whipple of Ipswich, Massachusetts His English Ancestors and American Descendants* available from the author. He has also contributed a full biography on Commodore Whipple for a book to be published on the descendants of Capt. John Whipple of Providence, Rhode Island.

GENERAL WILLIAM WHIPPLE, NEW HAMPSHIRE SIGNER OF THE DECLARATION OF INDEPENDENCE

William[5] Whipple *(Capt. William[4], Maj. Matthew[3], Capt. John[2], John[1], Matthew[A]) born 14 January 1730/31 in Kittery, Maine; died 28 November 1785 in Portsmouth, New Hampshire. He married his cousin Katharine Moffatt at Portsmouth about 1669. She died at Portsmouth 22 November 1821. His early career was at sea where he was Capt. of his own ship at age 21. He left the sea and entered the mercantile business in Portsmouth with his two younger brothers Robert and Joseph.*

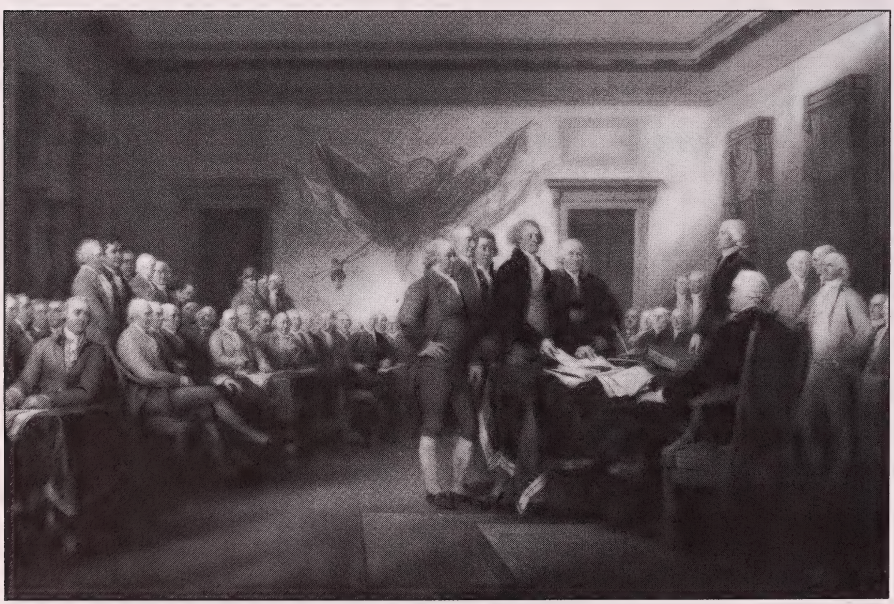
Children of William and Katharine Whipple born and died in Portsmouth.

i. William, baptized 24 May 1772; died 11 April 1773.

During his public life General William Whipple was associated with great men engaged in great pursuits and was their peer in greatness. His courage and fidelity made possible our comfort and prosperity. Good sense, knowledge of men and tact in dealing with them, fondness for work, steadfastness of purpose, putting the public good ahead of personal interests, breadth of view, patience, capacity for friendship, generous estimate of opponents, unquestioned integrity, unwavering loyalty, and serving the new nation with unremitting diligence are what he left us. America is indebtedness to this strong and noble man.

At the end of his second of three terms in the Continental Congress, Whipple left Philadelphia for New Hampshire June 18, 1777 the day after Congress authorized a national flag with 13 stripes, alternately red and white, to represent the states; and 13 stars, white in a blue field, to represent the Union. The *Ranger*, launched in Portsmouth and commanded by John Paul Jones, was the first warship to fly it. When he arrived home the Legislature elected him Justice of the Inferior Court of Common Pleas for Rockingham county and appointed him Brigadier General of the militia replacing Nathaniel Folson who was leaving to serve in Congress.

After American troops were defeated at Ticonderoga, the Legislature



The Declaration of Independence by John Trumbull (1756-1843). Yale University Art Gallery, Trumbull Collection.

Key to signers: 1. George Wythe, VA. 2. William Whipple, NH. 3. Josiah Bartlett, HH. 4 Thomas Lynch, SC. 5. Benjamin Harrison, VA. 6. Richard Henry Lee, VA. 7. Samuel Adams, MA. 8. Stephen Hopkins, RI. 9. William Paca, MD. 10. Samuel Chase, MD. 11. Richard Stockton, NJ. 12. Lewis Morris, NY. 13. William Floyd, NY. 14. Arthur Middleton, SC. 15. Thomas Hayward, Jr., SC. 16. Charles Carroll of "Carrollton," MD. 17. Robert Morris, PA. 18. Thomas Willing, PA. 19. Benjamin Rush, PA. 20. Elbridge Gerry, MA. 21. Robert Treat Paine, MA. 22. William Hooper, NC. 23. John Dickinson, PA. 24. William Ellery, RI. 25. George Clymer, PA. 26. Joseph Hewes, NC. 27. George Walton, GA. 28. James Wilson, PA. 29. Abraham Clark, NJ. 30. Francis Hopkinson, NJ. 31. John Adams, MA. 32. Roger Sherman, CT. 33. Robert R. Livingston, NY. 34. Thomas Jefferson, VA. 35. Benjamin Franklin, PA. 36. Thomas Nelson, Jr., VA. 37. Francis Lewis, NY. 38. John Witherspoon, NJ. 39. Samuel Huntingotn, CT. 40. William Williams, CT. 41. Oliver Wolcott, CT. 42. Charles Thompson, PA. 43. John Hancock, President, MA. 44. George Reed, DE. 45. George Clinton, NY. 46. Edward Rutledge, SC. 47. Thomas McKean, DE. 48. Philip Livingston, NY.

and the State Committee of Safety met jointly July 17 to devise a plan to protect the state. It divided the state's militia into two Brigades, naming Whipple Commander of the First[1] and John Stark the second, both with the rank of Brigadier General. They were accountable to the General Court when in Session, otherwise to the Committee of Safety.

Apparently the jail at Exeter contained important prisoners, who "were to be protected and kept secure," as Whipple was directed September 18 to place a "round-the-clock guard of 16 men with a proper officer" there for three months.[2] His general orders were to protect the seacoast but when Major General Horatio Gates called for assistance at the Battle of Saratoga, New York, Whipple marched to the battlefield where played a major role at the battle rated by historians as among the most decisive in history as it changed the course of the Revolution by bringing France into the war on America's side.[3]

Lieutenant General John (Gentleman Johnny) Burgoyne commanded the invading Army from Canada.[4] Tall and handsome, with large brilliant eyes and a strong, jutting jaw, he had been a cavalry officer noted for his dash and daring on European battlefields. Major General Horatio Gates, 50, a former professional soldier in the British Army, stooped, ruddy-cheeked, and cautious, commanded the American forces.[15]

Whipple's brigade was mustered September 21 and its full quota of 1,070 men and officers was filled the 28th.[6] It consisted of parts of nine militia regiments and sundry other companies, and served from September 22 to October 26. He and his troops were assigned to serve under Brig. General John Fellows at Batten Kill October 10.[7] Whipple, his Brigade Major George Gaines, and his man servant Prince, served until November 12 as they escorted Burgoyne and his staff to Boston. The march from Portsmouth to Saratoga was 216 miles. It was 290 miles home by way of Boston.[8]

Whipple and Gates were well acquainted through Whipple's service on Congressional Committees dealing with the Army.[9] He was with Gates October 14 when Burgoyne's Adjutant arrived with a flag seeking a cessation of the fighting. Gates named Whipple and Col. James Wilkinson to negotiate surrender terms. Lieutenant Colonel Nicholas Sutherland and Capt. James Henry Craig were Burgoyne's representatives. After agreeing to terms, Burgoyne claimed they were preliminary and asked they be more precisely defined before a conclusive treaty could be executed. Gates agreed and the negotiators met October 15 in a tent between the advance guards of the two Armies and worked out Articles of Capitulation by 8 p.m.[10] About 11 p.m. Burgoyne notified the American negotiators by letter he would accept the terms and deliver a signed copy in the morning if the word "capitulation" were changed to "convention." Gates agreed. That night Burgoyne received erroneous information that some of Gates' militia had left and that British Gen. Henry Clinton had reached Albany with reinforcements. Encouraged by this news, Burgoyne decided to break the convention. He informed Gates by letter the morning of the 16th that he had "reliable" information that parts of Gates' Army had left and unless convinced he was outnumbered by at least 4 to 1, would not sign. Gates gave his "word of honor" that his Army did outnumber Burgoyne 4 to 1, reminded him what it meant to break his word of honor, and gave him an hour to respond or he would "adopt the most stringent measures."

After two hours passed, Col. Sutherland told Col. Wilkinson, who was waiting for Bugoyne's answer, that the British "officers had got the devil in their heads and could not agree." Wilkinson had Burgoyne's letter pledging

to sign if capitulation was changed to convention and read it to Sutherland and pointed out how the Americans would use "it as a testimony of the good faith of a British commander." Sutherland asked to borrow it and pledged his "honor [to] return it in 15 minutes." Wilkinson gambled and gave it to Sutherland who returned to Burgoyne's headquarters. Gates, losing patience, instructed Wilkinson to break off the treaty if not immediately ratified. Wilkinson asked for an additional half hour and punctual to his promise, Sutherland returned with the signed convention making Burgoyne's Army prisoners of the United States.[11] Gates' first act after winning one of history's great military victories was to send quantities of meat across Fish-kill creek to feed his starving enemies.[12]

The surrender on the 17th was a colorful spectacle. Burgoyne, accompanied by his Adjutants and aides, crossed the Fishkill and rode through the meadow to the American camp. British troops paraded at 10 a.m. and then marched out, as British Lieut. Digby wrote, "with drums beating and the honors of war, but the drums seemed to have lost their inspiring sound, and though we beat the `Grenadier's March,' which not long before was so animating, yet then it seemed by its last effort, as it was almost ashamed to be heard on such an occasion." The troops stacked their arms in a meadow by the river, then marched through the American camp, between two lines drawn up in order. After the last of the defeated Army marched past Gates' hut, a new American flag made from military

The surrender of Lt. General John Burgoyne Oct. 17, 1777 at the Battle of Saratoga, New York by John Trumbull. Yale University Art Gallery, New Haven, Conn.

Key to surrender of General Burgoyne: 10. British Major General Phillips; 11. Lt. General Burgoyne; 14. Major General Horatio Gates;25. Brigadier General William Whipple.

coats was run up a pole. In view of both Armies, Burgoyne surrendered his ivory-handled sword to Gates who took it with a courteous nod and instantly handed it back.[13]

By Gates' command, the conquering Americans were silent; not a word or taunt was uttered. A Brunswicker,[14] in some amazement, wrote this description of their conquerors: "Not one of them was properly uniformed, but each man had on the clothes in which he goes to the field, to church, or to the tavern. But they stood like soldiers, erect, with a military bearing that was subject to little criticism. Not one fellow made a motion as if to speak to his neighbor; furthermore, nature had formed all the fellows who stood in rank and file, so slender, so handsome, so sinewy, that it was a pleasure to look at them and we were all surprised at the sight of such finely built people. And their size! The officers wore very few uniforms and those they did wear were of their own invention.[15]

The two commanders, Burgoyne wearing his richest scarlet uniform and Gates in a plain blue coat, entered Gates' hut for the surrender ceremony. Four plates and two glasses sat on a plank table held up by empty barrels. The opposing Generals offered toasts in rum and water—Burgoyne to George Washington, Gates to the British King. Quips and joking soon began among the other officers, and within minutes the entire party was laughing hilariously with exhaustion and relief. One British artillery Major turned to an American Captain and noted how they seemed the best of friends when only a fortnight ago they had been ene-

mies trying to kill each other. It was, the Major reflected, an odd old world.[16] Brigadier General John Glover of the Continental Army was put in charge of removing the British Army to Cambridge and Whipple was to deliver Burgoyne and his staff to Boston. The first night, Glover's militia halted a mile in the rear of the British and spent the whole night with their weapons in their hands. It took the British Army more than three hours of brisk marching to pass a spot.[17] Whipple and Gates dined with Burgoyne and his staff in Albany on the 20th and Burgoyne agreed to leave the next day. However it took much longer to prepare his dispatches and he kept asking to delay the departure. They left Albany at 7 a.m. the 27th. The Berkshire's fall colors were brilliant but Burgoyne hardly noticed because of the stormy weather. Whipple's horse gave out on November 5 at Marlboro, Massachusetts and he "hired" a replacement from a tavern keeper with instructions his was to be sent to Boston. He delivered Burgoyne to Boston on the 8th and dined with Maj. Gen. William Heath before leaving for Portsmouth.[18]

Whipple wrote New Hampshire Governor Meschech Weare from Albany October 21 that "nothing could have been more seasonable than our success over Burgoyne" because a British Army of 3 or 4,000 men were en route to reinforce Burgoyne "but fortunately for us they are too late, and if the weather does not prevent General Gates getting his heavy artillery down, I am in great hopes... the plunderers from York, will soon be in the same situation with Mr. Burgoyne."[19]

Rhode Island Delegate William Ellery wrote Whipple from South Kingstown October 30: "I most heartily congratulate you on your signal success at the Northward. You may say with the invincible Caesar *veni, vidi, vici* for scarcely had you arrived at the Northern Headquarters, scarcely had you seen the Army of the enemy before it surrendered. Methinks I see you escorting in triumph towards Boston John Burgoyne Esq. Lieutenant General of His Majesty's Armies in America, Colonel of the Queen's Regiment of Light-Dragoons, Governor of Fort William in North Britain, one of the Representatives of the Commons of Great-Britain, and late commandeering an Army and Fleet employed on an expedition from Canada & at the head of troops in the full powers of health, discipline and valor. Oh Lucifer, how art thou fallen! How hath the northern menacing meteor after the most portentous glare evaporated into smoke, vanished into nothing. I suppose now you have entered the military list we shall not see you in Congress. Flushed with your success you will now prefer the field to the cabinet. In whatever walk you choose to tread I wish you happiness and renown."[20]

Saratoga was a monumental victory. It caused British troops to retreat to Canada, ending a threat of a two-pronged drive that might split the

colonies. Two Lieutenant Generals, two Major Generals, three Brigadiers, the staffs and aides of all of them, 299 other officers of all ranks, including a dozen members of Parliament, Lords, and Scottish Knights, and 3,379 British and 2,412 German soldiers became prisoners of war; 1,429 British and Germans were killed and wounded; 27 cannon of various calibers, 5,000 stand of small arms, and large quantities of ammunition and military equipment of all kind were seized. Doors to France and Spain were opened.

THE RHODE ISLAND CAMPAIGN

New Hampshire's Major General John Sullivan was named commander of the campaign to retake Rhode Island in the spring of 1788. The British Army of more than 6,000 troops was protected by a Naval force of seven ships of war and two galleys. Sullivan's command, including two Brigades under Major General Marquis Lafayette, eventually numbered nearly 10,000. A siege of Newport Island's harbor began August 9.

General Whipple Commanded a Brigade of about 1,200 New Hampshire volunteers. He served from August 3 to September 5. Unfortunately most of Sullivan's troops were recruits without discipline or knowledge of war and supplies were limited. When the French fleet under Admiral Count d'Estaing, which had agreed to join in the operation, failed to take part despite appeals by Lafayette, American troops became disheartened and deserted in large numbers.

Sullivan wrote to General Washington August 23 enclosing a letter he received from D'Estaing August 21 announcing his departure for Boston and the impossibility of leaving troops to aid Sullivan because of losses sustained at sea during an "exceedingly severe storm." John Laurens, Speaker of the Congress, wrote Washington on the 23rd saying it was his opinion that the Admirals's decision to go to Boston was motivated by "the Cabal of Marine Officers who wish his destruction because he joined their Corps from land service." Laurens thought that the solemn protest of the American officers might give the Admiral "a justification" to act in contradiction of his officers and cause him to stay in Rhode Island. Whipple was one of 10 officers to sign the letter to the Admiral.[21]

Without the French troops, Sullivan retreated to the north end of the island the night of the 28th and an engagement ensued on the 29th. News that the British were to be reinforced (Gen. Henry Clinton arrived with 4,000 troops on the next day), prompted Sullivan to retreat to the mainland the evening of the 30th. Whipple and General Ezekiel Cornell of Rhode Island executed the withdrawal without loss or incident and Sullivan's General Order of the 31st commended them for their good work.

While Whipple and his staff[22] were at breakfast in the American quar-

ters August 29, a cannon tore through the building and shattered Major John Samuel Sherburne's leg. It had to be amputated and thereafter he was called "Corkleg Sherburne."

After returning to Portsmouth, Whipple wrote Josiah Bartlett, who had served with him in Congress, that the expedition "failed because desertion was widespread in all units. While volunteers were recruited for an uncertain time, each had fixed an expiration date in his own mind and "when that time arrives it is as impossible to keep them even half an hour as it is to alter the course of the sun. Scarce a man was left of those I was sent to command by the day of the action." He described losses as minimal despite intense action on the 29th and said the remaining troops acquitted themselves well. In his opinion, circumstances justified the retreat.[23] Congress voted it thanks to Sullivan and his Army as did the legislatures of Rhode Island and New Hampshire.[24]

COMMODORE ABRAHAM WHIPPLE, WHO'S MANY CONTRIBUTIONS MADE HIM A HERO OF THE CONTINENTAL NAVY

***Abraham[5] Whipple**, (Noah[4], Noah B.[3], Samuel[2], Capt. John[1]) fourth child and eldest son of Noah Whipple, Jr. and Mary Dexter, was born 26 September 1733 in Providence, Rhode Island; died 29 May 1819 in Marietta, Washington Co., Ohio, at 86 years of age. He married a distant cousin **Sarah Hopkins** at Providence 26 August 1761. She was born abt 1739 and died at Marietta 14 October 1818, at abt 79 years of age. His introduction to the sea was probably as a privateer with his cousin Esek Hopkins when he was in his early teens.[1] He rose rapidly, commanding his first ship in his early 20s, and earned a reputation as a successful privateer. He delighted in daring exploits and never withdrew from dangerous circumstances. The evening of June 9, 1772, he was a leader in an act of rebellion against his Majesty's customs ship Gaspé which lay aground on a sand spit near Nanquit Point in Narragansett Bay. They set fire to the Gaspé and its gunpowder exploded and it burned to the waterline. This ended his long, loyal and faithful allegiance to the Crown and he became committed to a cause: Revolution. Hopkins cousins who played an important role in his life were Stephen who served several terms as Rhode Island's Governor and represented it in the Continental Congress where he signed the Declaration of Independence; Esek, the first Commander-in-Chief of the Continental Navy; and John, the father of his wife Sarah who also served in the Continental Navy.*

Children of Abraham and Sarah Whipple born in Portsmouth.

i. John Hopkins Whipple.

ii. Catherine "Katy" Whipple born abt. 1759 and died in 1834.
iii. Mary Jane "Polly" Whipple born aft. 1767 and died aft. 1795.

Historian Samuel P. Hildreth wrote in an 1852 biographical sketch that Abe possed "a naturally strong mind and great resolution of purpose." One of his most notable characteristics was his compassion for the less fortunate.[2] Many of his letters survive and their fluence suggests he was well schooled.

Beginning in 1774 the British sent more ships and soldiers to the Colonies believing they would curtail an ever increasing level of discontent with laws passed by Parliament that put unacceptable restrictions on American commerce. However, by December 16 rebellious activity reached its high point when Boston patriots threw tea into the harbor rather than pay the newly imposed tea tax. Providence, R. I. held its "tea party" on March 2, 1775. Tea was piled up in market Square, tar poured over it to ensure a good blaze, one of Prime Minister Lord North's speeches placed on top, and the pile set afire. The word "tea" was eliminated from all the shop signs on Towne street. Britain reacted to the Boston Tea Party by occupying the city and closing its port but ignored the Providence demonstration.

However, Rhode Island didn't ignore what it believed to be British repression and on June 15 its Legislature, at the urging of Abe's cousin Stephen Hopkins, authorized the purchase and arming of two sloops.[3] Abe was named Commander of the two-vessel fleet: the 12-gun *Katy*, his ship, and an 8-gunner commanded by Capt. Grimes. Abe's wages were "up to £9 lawful money."[4] His commission was signed July 2, two days before the bloody battle of Bunker Hill and two days short of the third anniversary of the *Gaspé* burning.

Abe immediately sailed the *Katy* into Narragansett Bay to engage HMS *Rose* and her fleet of tenders which were blockading the Bay. Sir James Wallace, Commander of the fleet had threatened to hang anyone taking arms against King George. The threat meant nothing to Abe and he successfully engaged the *Rose*, captured one of her tenders, disabled two others, and temporarily freed the Bay allowing a large number of homeward-bound vessels to enter the port. Thus Abe was responsible for firing the first gun of the Revolution against the enemy on water. With this act of open rebellion, it was no longer necessary to hide the identity of the *Gaspé* participants and Abe's role was made known to Wallace who immediately sent him this message: "You, Abraham Whipple, on the 17th of June 1772, burned his Majesty's vessel *Gaspé* and I will hang you at the yardarm. James Wallace." Abe's terse reply: "Sir: Always catch a man before you hang him. Abraham Whipple."

George III's Proclamation of Rebellion by America August 23, 1775 ended any hope of reconciliation between Britain and her American colonies. George Washington, who had been appointed Commander-in-Chief of the Army June 15, needed gunpowder for his rapidly growing forces and sent Abe orders via Rhode Island's Gov. Cooke to sail to Bermuda and seize the powder magazine there. He sailed on the *Providence* (the *Katy's* new name) September 12 or 20 and successfully eluded the net of British ships blockading the Bay. He made good time but Britain's Gen. Gage, anticipating the maneuver, had already moved the powder. Abe was back in Province October 20, narrowly escaping capture by two British men-of-war. Though he returned empty handed, he could report a public relations success. He had entertained five members of the Bermuda Council on board his sloop who assured him their people were "hearty friends to the American cause." Duty done, he returned to the more pleasing duty of harassing the enemy in the Bay.

Heartened by Abe's success against the *Rose* and its tenders, the Rhode Island Assembly, in August, instructed its delegates—Abe's cousin Stephen Hopkins and Samuel Ward—to the Continental Congress to work for the establishment of a Continental Navy. Congress acted favorably on October 13 and appointed a Committee of 3 which on the 30th recommended building a fleet "for the protection and defense of the United Colonies."[5]

The first American men-of-war were converted merchantmen. The flagship *Alfred*, named in honor of the founder of the British Navy, was commanded by Dudley Saltonstall of Massachusetts. Abe was named Captain of the 300-ton *Columbus* (formerly the *Sally*).[6] John Burrows Hopkins, Esek's son, was given command of the *Cabot*, third largest of the four-ship fleet and Nicholas Biddle of Philadelphia, the smaller *Andrew Doria*. Esek Hopkins reluctantly accepted the job as Commander-in-Chief.[7] Stephen Hopkins had made sure his kin were to control the country's first Navy.

Abe left for Philadelphia in the *Providence* November 26 to accept his commission from the Congress.[8] He arrived December 5, capturing a small British ship on the way. Congress was unsure of what to do with the prisoners so turned them over the Pennsylvania Committee of Safety. The Marine Committee was initially known as the Committee To Fit Out Armed Vessels. He remained there to supervise its manning and fitting-out and placed himself under Esek's command January 6, 1776. Esek took command of his little fleet in a formal and colorful ceremony before a crowd at the foot of Walnut street in Philadelphia and John Paul Jones, senior Lieutenant of the *Alfred*, hoisted the ensign that had been adopted as the official naval flag and the guns were fired in salute. The American

Navy was official.

Hopkins' initial doubts about the prospects of a Continental Navy were soon justified. Each Colony, eager to protect its own shipping and ports, established small individual fleets outside his control. Lack of a unified command meant a less disciplined and effective Navy to face the 100

Commodore Abraham Whipple of Providence, R.I. Photo courtesy of U.S. Naval Academy.

British warships cruising off the American coast by 1777. Recruiting was a major problem. The pay compared to privateering was trifling and was not paid at all until May 1776 and a prize share-system was not established until that fall. The result: most sailors left the Colonial fleets for the more rewarding service on privateers. In 1777 privateers numbered 73 armed with 730 guns. Their number grew to 449 and 6,735 guns by 1781.[9]

The battle to get money from the Congress for the Navy was continuous. Abe had bitter verbal and literary battles on this issue with both Esek and with the Congress and collected a small portion of what was owed him. In addition he used his share of prize money to care for his men.[10] Another issue that concerned Abe was the fate of captured crew members. No provision had been made for their welfare. Abe and Esek took it to the Marine Committee and it eventually agreed that captured seamen would continue to be paid.[11]

The first roll of Captains published in October 1766 listed Abe twelfth which made him first of the Rhode Island Captains. John Paul Jones was listed 18th out of 25.[12] Abe was fortunate in the officers assigned to him – Jonathan Pitcher, Joseph Olney, and Rhodes Arnold – as he had known them most of his seafaring life. It was much easier to work with men you knew and trusted rather than unknowns from other Colonies and commands.

The Marine Committee issued Hopkins orders January 5, 1776. He was to take his flotilla and clear Chesapeake Bay of enemy ships if possible, then take command off the seas off North and South Carolina, and when that was accomplished to go to Rhode Island and destroy the enemy there. He was given discretion to use his own judgment if weather or other unforseen problems arose. They fought through the ice in Delaware Bay February 17 and left on their only cruise as a unit. A gale off Cape Hatteras scattered them and when they regrouped Hopkins opted for the discretion clause and sailed to the Bahamas where he hoped to obtain a large supply of badly-needed gunpowder. They captured Fort Nassau on the island of New Providence and seized 450 tons of military stores including 24 large caliber cannon, 50 other large guns, and 24 casks of powder. They also took the Governor and a few other important persons back as prisoners.

They left March 17 and during the cruise home Abe took the six-gun schooner *Hawk*, a British "bomb" ship. It was a successful cruise. In addition to the military supplies captured, it drew British ships away from blockaded ports allowing American merchant vessels to deliver badly needed supplies to the Colonies.

Abe received orders June 16 to go to sea "as soon as possible" and cruise "until your provisions are out" or until he had taken too many prizes to make it safe to continue. Though undermanned, he sailed from Newport

June 18 and just off Brenton Reef came upon HMS *Cerberus*. They exchanged broadsides before the British ship went skimming away to the east. After Hopkins, Biddle, and Whipple were back in Narragansett Bay, Admiral Howe dispatched a squadron to patrol the coast to make sure they stayed there. They had freedom of movement between Newport and Providence but sailing beyond the Bay was risky. They also suffered personnel problems. George Washington took 175 of their marines to help in the battle to save New York and 100 seamen became sick with "some new malignant fever." Previously, they had left 202 sick seamen in New London.

On August 6, Abe and Biddle were ordered to intercept the homeward-bound Jamaica fleet. Though way undermanned,[13] they left August 10 and successfully ran the British gauntlet. Ten days later they came upon a 64-gun two-decker enemy ship (more than their combined arament) and quickly fled going their separate ways never to rejoin.[14] Abe eventually found the Jamaican fleet off Newfoundland and captured five large sugar-laden merchantmen and reached Portsmouth September 29 with his prizes, three haven been retaken. Hopkins ordered him to superintend the final fitting of the *Warren* and the *Providence* in Newport and take the *Columbus*, "which was very foul," there for cleaning.[15] The ships were ready in early December but the British fleet arrived at Newport with 5,000 troops on the 7th and conquered it along with most of the other communities on Aquidneck Island. Abe and John Hopkins saved the ships by sailing them to Providence where they were protected by the American forces Commanded by Gen. Spencer. The occupation of Newport was a major disaster for the Continental Navy. The British now had a major base in the Bay giving them an even tighter noose around the American ships.

The *Providence* was stuck in the ice at its mooring below Field's Point in the bitter winter of 1777-78. In December Hessian surgeon John Frederick Rodloff, captured with Gen. Burgoyne at the Battle of Saratoga, came aboard and offered his services as Surgeon's Mate. Paroled, he decided to remain in America. Well-trained surgeons and doctors were hard to recruit and most who were willing to give up their practices joined the Army. Recognizing Rodloff's abilities, Abe quickly promoted him to Chief Surgeon and he remained in that capacity the for the balance of Abe's service.

On March 20, 1778 Abe was ordered to carry dispatches from Congress "to our Ministers in France." The information was so important he was to get to sea regardless of the odds of breaking the British blockade. And the odds were great. There were many Tory sympathizers and informers in Providence and his orders were soon known by the British naval Commander in Newport who positioned a 64-gun man of war and a host of

frigates in the Bay to prevent his departure. Before leaving, he pledged his oath of allegiance to the Rhode Island Legislature: "I Abe Whipple, do acknowledge the United States of America to be a free, independent, and sovereign state, and duly renounce allegiance to George the Third, King of Great Britain, and I abjure my allegiance and obedience to him, and I do swear to the utmost of my power to support, maintain, and defend the said United States against the said King George III an his successors and his or their abettors... with fidelity according to the best of my skill."[16]

He would need the best available seamen to fight his way out so his crew was supplemented by some of the best from the *Warren*. Since he was marked for hanging because of the *Gaspé* affair and would be the primary target if the ship were taken, the dispatches were the responsibility of William Jones, his Captain of marines and future Governor of Rhode Island. They left the night of April 30 under cover of a violent northeaster and heavy rainstorm. Abe selected the passage between "the island of Conanicut and the Narragansett shore" despite the 40-gun frigate *Lark* being moored in that channel against the island with its stern upstream and springs on her cables, ready to get underway quickly. The 64-gun *Renown* was in the channel below in the same state of preparation. Ten to 12 other enemy ships were in the bay beyond. With sails close-reefed, deck lights out, a silent crew stationed by her 28 guns lighted matches at the ready, the *Providence* crept up on the *Lark* and simultaneously fired a broadside while the marines fired into her quarter and main decks killing and wounding a number of her crew. She was past and lost in the darkness before the *Lark* could retaliate.

The *Renown* heard the firing so the element of surprise was lost. But Abe had a different surprise for her. He bellowed through his speaking trumpet to the helmsman to pass on the Narragansett side. The helmsman had previously been directed to luff ship and pass on the Conanicut side. The ruse worked as the crew of the *Renown* mustered on the starboard ready to attack while Abe, racing past on the other side, fired his starboard guns unshipping her rudder. The *Providence* was out of sight and reach before the enemy crew could bring her larboard guns to bear.[17] Two broadsides had alerted the other enemy ships and Abe came under fire from 11 before he zigzagged to the safety of the open sea. The following day he almost fell to a 74-gun man-of-war that crossed his course by chance. The lighter, swifter *Providence* was able to outsail her. The *Providence* docked at Nantes May 26.

Congress had hoped the dispatches Abe carried would convince the French government to join in the war against Great Britain. The consequences of the September 1777 American Victory at the Battle of Saratoga were enormous.[18] It caused Britain to consider making concessions that

would end the fruitless war. They had expected a quick victory but Washington's Armies were still intact and dangerous, meaning England was faced with a difficult and expensive task of supplying her Army and Navy at a distance of over 3,000 miles. Britain's arch-enemy, France, received the news with "as much joy as if it had been a victory of their own troops" according to Benjamin Franklin, head of the American Commissioners in France.

French Foreign Minister Count Vergennes, in sympathy with the American cause, had covertly aided America with munitions, money, and other supplies since May 1776. Though crucial, the aid was not enough. America needed a second front in Europe to force Britain to use her Navy to guard her home shores, thus making it difficult to reinforce her American Armies. Franklin saw Saratoga as the opportunity to bring France into the war. He began negotiations with Britain's Principal Agent in Paris, letting it appear that unless the French offered something better, America might have to accept Britain's terms of reconciliation.[19] Vergennes, anxious to restore France's prestige in Europe and to participate in the Caribbean trade, was motivated to fast action. He realized war with England was inevitable and believed an alliance with the United States would be to France's advantage. In the race for the favor of America, France held the high card. In addition to everything England was prepared to concede, France offered the possibility of complete independence. Congress decided to take the risk and dispatches carried by Abe informed our Commissioners they had the go-ahead to prod Vergennes into a final commitment. France and Britain were officially at war on June 17, 1778.[20]

Abe spent a busy three months in France.[21] Franklin wrote him on June 6 congratulating him on their safe arrival in France and "... on the honor which you have acquired in your encounter with the enemies' ships..." He was involved with the impending court martial brought by John Paul Jones against Lieut. Thomas Simpson of the *Ranger*.[22] Instructions from the Commissioners in Paris and requests from private citizens for passage back to America took time. Money for repairs to the ship was a major problem.[23] The Commissioners could only provide goods. Abe needed money to purchase uniforms for his officers. Captain William Jones made the request so "all should look alike." A petition from all the officers asked for "dress to maintain the dignity of our station." On the voyage over, Abe captured a brig full of wine and cork and Franklin reluctantly instructed the Agent to give him the captor's share. The money was used to buy the uniforms.

The Commissioners notified Abe by letter July 13 it had ordered Capt. Samuel Tucker, Commander of the frigate *Boston*, to join him on the return trip. Tucker, from Boston, was an old friend and colleague who had arrived at L'Orient with four prizes July 3. On the 16th, they instructed

him that John Paul Jones had been reassigned and that Lieut. Simpson had been given command of the *Ranger* with instructions to join Abe and to obey his orders on future cruises to America. Abe's orders were to "... use all possible dispatch in getting to sea with the *Providence, Boston* and *Ranger*." It was August 26 before all details were completed and he set sail from Brest with his new title of Commodore as Commander of a three vessel fleet. His memorable French trip was costly based on the money he had to spend on behalf of the government (money which was not repaid for eight years).[24] The *Providence* was heavily laden with cargo, passengers, and lead-weighted dispatches for Congress. His final orders from the Commissioners were "to make your best endeavors to take prizes in the course of your passage and in all respects to annoy the enemy as much as you can, and are at liberty to go out of your way for so good a purpose."

As the fleet sailed home it captured six prizes and Abe celebrated his 46th birthday. Off Newfoundland in a dense fog with the *Providence* as lead sounding its bell for the benefit of the others, he came upon a 74-gun British man-of-war which, hearing the bell, had come to investigate. A combination of bad visibility, lying low because of her heavy cargo, and having her gun ports closed caused the British Captain to take her for an American merchantman. He ordered Abe to strike his colors, drop under his stern, and prepare for boarding. Abe always seemed to function best when in a tight spot and answered, "Aye, aye sir" as if complying and sent men aloft to busy themselves with the sails and create the appearance they were preparing to strike the colors – they had to be run up before they could be struck. He quietly passed word to stand by ready to fire a broadside as he passed under the enemy's stern. He was moving at a snail's pace causing the British Captain to lose patience and repeat the order and threaten to fire. Abe responded he couldn't strike his colors until they were up and began cursing his seamen for bungling the job (having told him once up not to strike under any circumstance).

He was under the enemy's stern by the time the flag was up and ordered a full broadside which hit the main cabin. The British were so surprised the *Providence* had disappeared into the fog before they could retaliate. Warned by the broadside an enemy ship was near, his fellow captains veered off and they all headed south. Simpson took the *Ranger* and her prizes to Portsmouth, N.H. Abe and Tucker ran the gauntlet of British ships blockading Boston, arriving safely with their cargoes and prizes – arms, ammunition, and clothing – all badly needed on the home front. Abe sent an account of the voyage to George Washington at his Frederickburg headquarters.[25] He spent the winter in Boston refitting the *Providence* and working on the sale of the prize ships. The news of the French alliance made him a hero.

On April 4 he was instructed to provision for a long voyage and on June 12 was ordered to sea where he would be joined by the *Ranger*, commanded by Thomas Simpson, and the *Queen of France* under the command of John Peck Rathbun, a fellow Rhode Islander cruising off the Newfoundland Banks. They were to intercept either the homeward bound Jamaica fleet or the fleet from Hudson Bay. They sighted the Jamaican fleet of about 60 sail July 24. It was escorted by a 74-gun man-of-war and several smaller frigates. Hopelessly outmatched, he ordered his three-ship fleet to fly British colors and join the convoy pretending to ships out of Halifax, Nova Scotia.

Abe quietly picked off the first prize that night and obtained the signals used by the British Commodore. Many of the merchantmen were armed so Abe ordered his fleet to be careful and not draw attention. He and his Captains took turns with various schemes. Two were especially successful. They invited the Captain of a potential prize on board the "Halifax" vessels for a convivial time and then sent his boat back filled with a prize crew who took it over with a minimum of commotion. The convoy sailed on unaware. They would shorten sail at night, alter the course of the captured ships, and were out of sight of the main fleet by morning. Noting the 74-gun man-of-war hoisted a light to her mizzen top to guide the fleet's course Abe hoisted a light to his own mizzen and decoyed several merchantmen into following him. By morning they were so far off course he could easily capture them. He took 11 ships before heading for home because of a lack of men to man more prizes. Three were recaptured.

When Abe sailed into Boston Harbor he had the richest capture made by the Navy during the war—6,000 hogsheads of sugar, ginger, pimento, and cotton and 113 guns valued at over $1,000,000. He accomplished this with little expenditure or loss.[26] As Squadron Commander he was entitled to $50,000.00. But because the government was in such serious straits, he only received a tithe of this sum. Inflation had jumped from 13.41 Continental dollars to one silver dollar in June 1779, to 18 by September and to 25.93 by December. His sense of patriotic duty had caused him to refuse his share of previous prizes – except on the French trip – but the depreciated currency made it necessary to accept so he could provide for his family. Some of the money was invested in a house and lot on Westminster street in Providence and a farm in Cranston.[27]

The Marine Committee ordered him to get the *Providence* ready for sea and allowed £300.00 to recruit a crew. On November 20 , 1779 he was ordered as "commanding officer to take under your command the ships *Boston, Queen of France*, and *Ranger*, and... embrace the first fair wind and without any kind of delay proceed to sea; and when [you are] five leagues

to the southward of the lighthouse you are to open the orders enclosed and follow the directions therein given."[28] Abe sailed from Boston the 23rd and upon opening the orders learned he was to place himself and his fleet under the command of Benjamin Lincoln, general in charge of the defense of Charleston, South Carolina. The voyage was an unhappy omen of things to come. They were hit by a 30-hour gale of such force it sprang the mizzen masts of the *Providence* and *Ranger* and delayed their arrival until December 19. Several other warships were already there and Abe became Commander of the largest American squadron assembled during the Revolution. However, success or failure was not in his hands. His fate depended on an unknown factor – Major General Lincoln.[29]

Lincoln's orders to hold Charleston at any cost was a departure from American military policy. Heretofore, when the enemy was too strong, the Americans withdrew and waited for another opportunity.[30] Until there was a sign of General Sir Henry Clinton, whose Army was reportedly on the way, Abe believed he could be more help to Lincoln at sea. But preoccupied with preparations for a land war, all Lincoln would agree to was a cruise of observation. As he was cruising along the coast to the north January 23, 1780, he fell in with a fleet sent to re-supply Clinton.[31] Abe captured four troop transports but was chased back to port by four large men of war from Admiral Mariot Arbuthnot's squadron.[32] The British then blockaded the harbor.

Abe's seamen had been outfitted for warmer weather and the winter was unusually bitter. Lincoln was sympathetic but had neither funds or supplies to help so once again Abe dipped into his own resources to clothe and supply his men. His banker Joseph West kept a running account of his withdrawals in early 1780: $1,700.00 January 20, $2,500.00 in March, $4,149.00 to a Captain Anthony in April. By the beginning of May he had disbursed more than $13,000.00.

Clinton's Army of 6,000 landed 30 miles up the coast from Charleston on February 11. He out-numbered Lincoln two to one. On February 18 Gov. Rutledge of South Carolina through Lincoln instructed Abe to outfit the Carolina sloops *Bricolle, Trieste, Notre Dame* and "several gallies" for the defense of the town and harbor. "Commissioners of the Navy were to give every assistance." Unfortunately neither town nor Navy Commissioners had the wherewithal to arm the ships. Two days later he learned the zephyr *Polacre* and the snow *Diligence* had volunteered to join in the defense of the harbor and were to be under his command.

Captain Simpson wrote him February 23 from his anchorage at Rebellion Road that the *Ranger* was infected with putrid fever. He said two men had died, five were in the hospital, and 22 were unfit for duty. His crew was down to 112 officers, men, and boys. Since his fleet was already

undermanned, this news compounded Abe's woes. On the 26th, Gen. Lincoln wanted a report on when he could secure the town from attack by sea "and the reasons for such opinions." On the 27th the Admiralty Office in Philadelphia, totally out-of-touch with circumstances, directed him to send the *Queen of France* up the coast with a cargo of rice for the Army "provided Gen Lincoln and yourself think that this scheme is practicable." Of course it was not. In early March Abe was laying a chain defense in the channel to bar Arbuthnot's larger vessels from entering the harbor.

General Clinton ordered his Army to move on Charleston March 20 causing Lincoln to order Abe to bring the *Providence, Boston*, and *Queen of France* to the wharves so their guns and men could join with the forces within the city. Arbuthnot sent some smaller ships and transports to occupy Five Fathom Hole, the anchorage just abandoned by Abe's forces. It took Clinton nine days to cross the Ashley river at Old Town where he built entrenchments and erected batteries to begin his siege. Lincoln built lines of defense across Charleston Neck from the Cooper to Ashley rivers. Clinton moved slowly down the Neck and on April 1 was within a thousand yards of the American defense works. Many residents, fearing Clinton's bombardment, begged Lincoln to evacuate but, hopeful of being reinforced by land, thus positioning Clinton between two Armies, he refused. His cannon and mortars had been successful against Clinton's skirmishers, giving him false confidence.

Clinton had a battery on Hamstead Hill by April 5 and on that date demanded immediate surrender. Lincoln refused and the bombardment of Charleston began April 7. Arbuthnot, despite heavy fire from guns at Fort Moultrie, was able to sail from Five Fathom Hole to the protection of the British-occupied Fort Johnson. To prevent British ships sailing up the channel and firing on the Americans, Abe had to sink his ships and some of the merchantmen at the mouth of the Cooper river between the town and Shute's Folly. Hoping for a miracle that would allow him to break out with his crews, he kept the *Providence* and *Ranger* afloat. There was no miracle.

British General Earl Cornwallis arrived April 18 with 3,000 reinforcements enabling Clinton to expand his lines and cut off all supplies to the city. Even with Abe's armaments and crews, Lincoln was greatly overmatched by artillery and outnumbered by more than three to one. Provisions and ammunition were in short supply by May 6, more than 30 houses had been destroyed and countless others damaged by the British bombardment, and it was apparent the British would be successful, Charleston's leading citizens successfully petitioned Lincoln to accept Clinton's surrender terms and firing ceased between 11 a.m. and noon May 12.[33]

Abe's crew became the responsibility of Admiral Arbuthnot and he

somehow talked the Admiral into letting his officers go. A document dated June 10, 1780 confirms Abe paid for a vessel to carry them back to Newport. "We the underwritten late commanders of the Continental Ships *Queen of France*, *Ranger*, and *Boston* do certify that Abraham Whipple, late of the ship *Providence*, has drawn an order in favor of Gregory Carsons on Daniel Tillinghast, Continental Agent for the state of Rhode Island, for one-hundred pounds sterling to be paid in gold or silver specie for the passage of the officers and servants captured on those ships." It was signed by Thomas Simpson, Samuel Tucker, Horsted Hacker, and John Rathburn. Abe was also able to favorably influence the disposition of his crews but the *Providence* and *Ranger* became part of the British fleet.[34]

Arbuthnot had great respect for the American Commodore and agreed his seamen and marines should be exchanged as the opportunity arose. However the British Admiralty ruled against parole. Even though a sizeable portion of the American fleet was at the bottom of Charleston Harbor, the Admiralty realized Abe's seamen would, at the first opportunity, ship out on the ever increasing number of privateers that were doing great damage to British commerce.[35] At the end of June he and his men were transferred to Chester, Pennsylvania where they remained prisoners for two years and seven months. Abe was successful in getting a parole for Dr. Rodloff who was in danger of being hanged if the British learned he was a Hessian who joined the American cause. Somehow, Abe was able to get the parole directly from Sir Henry Clinton.[36]

Cornwallis provided little to feed or care for the sick at Chester. Smallpox was taking a deadly toll, so once again, Abe at his own expense, provided for them by renting a house and furnishing supplies and medicines to keep them alive. In a later letter he wrote, "Many useful lives were thus preserved to their country." In late 1782, Gen. Nathaniel Green of Rhode Island, marching to liberate Charleston, was able to arrange Abe's exchange for a British naval officer, Capt. Gayton of 44-gun frigate.

After the peace of 1784 Providence merchants resumed their foreign trade. Abe's old friend and employer, John Brown, launched the *George Washington* and asked Abe to assume command. Anxious to return to sea and make some money, he accepted and became the first American to fly the Stars and Stripes in England. Hundreds of curious Britishers visited the ship when she docked in the Thames. It was Abe's last sea voyage of the eighteenth century. He was 53 with at least 35 years as a sailor. The record doesn't indicate why but he retired from the sea-faring life and returned to the farm at Cranston.

He died in Marietta, Washington Co., Ohio May 29, 1819 after a short illness. He was 86. His will was probated in July. All that remained from his days of youth and glory were his dress sword and quadrant. He left

them to great grandsons Ebenezer Sproat Sibley and Henry Hasting Sibley. He was buried in Mound Cemetery beside his wife Sarah. His gravestone inscription reads:

Sacred to the memory of Commodore Abraham Whipple whose name, skill and courage will remain the pride and boast of his country.

In the late Revolution he was the first in the seas to hurl defiance at proud Britain; gallantly leading the way to arrest from the mistress of the ocean, her scepter, and there to wave the star-spangled banner.

He also conducted to sea the first square-rigged vessel, ever built on the Ohio, opening to commerce resources beyond calculation.

Abe's gallant voyage was over.

ENDNOTES, APPENDIX FOUR

WHIPPLE SOLDIERS AND SAILARS IN THE REVOLUTIONARY WAR ENDNOTES

1. A compilation from the Massachusetts State Archives, prepared and published by the Secretary of the Commonwealth in accordance with Chapter 100, Resolves of 1891. Wright & Potter Printing Co., State Printers. (Boston, 1908). All names are given exactly as they appear on the original records. The order of arrangement of the facts of service in each individual record given is the same, as nearly as possible, as the original entries, and is as follows: The name; the place of residence, if given; the rank; the kind of document whereon the record appears; the enlistment and discharge, if given; the time of service, remarks.

   A discrepancy will sometimes be noted between the service given and the actual service as figures between the dates of enlistment and discharge. The difference is accounted for by the practice of including, with service performed, a time allowance for travel on the basis of one day for every 20 miles out or home. As the same name may appear under various forms, each carrying some portion of a record of service, it is necessary in order to obtain the complete record, as far as preserved, of any given individual, to examine all the forms under which a name is stated to appear in the Record Index
2. *Pension Papers of New Hampshire Soldiers in the Revolutionary War*, Vol. 59. Abstracts from the original documents in the Archives of the United States at Washington, prepared by Mrs. Amos G. Draper. (Washington, D. C., 1917-1922), 12-36.
3. *DAR Patriot Index*, The Society of the Daughters of American Independence. (Washington. 1966). p. 734. The individuals listed here served between 1774 and 1783.
4. *Ibid.*
5. Isaac W. Hammond, compiler and editor, *Rolls of the Soldiers in the Revolutionary War, 1775 to May 1777.* Published by authority of the Legislature. Parsons B. Cogswell, State Printer. (Concord, N.H. 1885). Vol. I.
6. *Ibid.* Vol. II, May 1777 to 1780. (1886), 139.
7. *Ibid.*

8. John E. Goodrich, compiler and editor *Rolls of the Soldiers in the Revolutionary War 1775 to 1783.* Published by Authority of the Legislature. The Tuttle Company. (Rutland, Vt. 1904). p. 923. The source for the content of this volume was copied from a large manuscript volume (*titled Records of the Service of the Vermont Troops in the Revolutionary War, being a Transcript made by order of the General Assembly of Pay Rolls, Pay-Table, Orders & Receipts originally filed as Vouchers in the Treasurer's Office*) in the office of the Adjutant-General, the compilation of which was authorized by the General Assembly in 1841 and completed in 1843. Other sources: the Henry Stevens Papers in possession of the State of New York, with other documents in the Archives of the same state; volume XV of *New York in the Revolution* (1898) and its 1901 supplement; the *New Hampshire Rolls* (4 vols), and three volumes by General George C. Gilmore of Manchester, N.H.
9. *Ibid.*
10. *Ibid.*
11. *DAR Patriot Index, An Index to the Spouses of the DAR Patriots*, The Society of the Daughters of the American Revolution. Vol. III. (Washington. 1986), 785.
12. John H. Gwathmey, *Historical Register of Virginians in the Revolution. Soldiers, Sailors, Marines.* 1775-1783. Genealogical Publishing Co. Inc. (Baltimore, 1987), 820.

GENERAL WILLIAM WHIPPLE ENDNOTES

1. Regiments assigned to Whipple: his own, Evans, Moulton, Gilman, Bartlett, Thornton, Webster, Badger, and McClary.. Hammond, Vol. 2, May 1777 to 1789. 1886. Richard Francis Upton, *Revolutionary New Hampshire.* Port Washington, N.Y./London. First published in 1936. Reissued in 1970 by Kennikat Press, 635
2. *New Hampshire State Papers*, VIII, 697, 701.
3. Sir Edward Creasy singled out the Battle of Saratoga as the decisive battle of the Revolution. The British considered that the whole head and animus of the rebellion lay in New England and they formed a grand design to crush it with one all-powerful blow. They sent a large Fleet carrying soldiers and munitions up the Hudson to form a line on the south, then massed large bodies of troops in Canada to march down from the north. It was expected that these two forces would meet and crush or capture every rebel between them. Had the plan succeeded the British would have possessed all the territory between New York City and the Lakes, and between the coast and Canada; including all New England and there would have been no force left sufficient to resist them. Sir Edward Creasy, M.A., *The Fifteen Decisive Battles of the World from Marathon to Waterloo.* London, 1872, 775-6.6
4. The British war strategy was for Gen. Burgoyne to lead an Army south from Canada to Albany, N.Y. A smaller expedition under Col. Barry St. Leger would converge on Albany from the west. By occupying Albany and controlling the Hudson river, the British intended to cut off New England from the other colonies and force an end to the American rebellion. Burgoyne left Montreal in June with about 7,000 British and Hessian troops and a number of Native American allies. He took Fort Ticonderoga on Lake Champlain in July without a struggle and fought a skirmish with an American force near Hubbardton, Vt. On 16 Aug. 2,000 inexperienced New Hampshire and Vermont militiamen defeated a detachment of Burgoyne's troops at Bennington,

Vt. After a 3-week delay at Fort Miller (now Schuylerville, N.Y.) to obtain provisions, Burgoyne moved his Army across the Hudson. He began to march south towards Albany on 13 Sept. but found his way blocked by some 7,000 American under Maj. Gen. Horatio Gates, who had taken up an entrenched position at Bemis Heights, a densely wooded plateau a few miles south of Saratoga. The British attacked on the 19th and a furious but indecisive battle was fought at Freeman's Farm, known as the First Battle of Saratoga. Gates withdrew to Bemis Heights and Burgoyne made a camp a mile north. Meanwhile St. Leger had turned back at Fort Stanwix in the Mohawk Valley and though commanding fewer than 5,000 men, Burgoyne refused to retreat. His Army moved against the American position on 7 Oct. leading to the Battle of Bemis Heights (the second Battle of Saratoga). Gates' well-disciplined forces drove the British back to their camp with heavy losses. Burgoyne withdrew to Saratoga, where surrounded by the American Army (now numbering nearly 20,000), he surrendered on 17 October.

The 2,800-acre Saratoga National Historical Park is located in Stillwater, N.Y. some 30 miles north of Albany. The Hudson river and its bluffs are major features of the Park and it includes the Schuyler House and the 155 ft. Saratoga Monument in Victory. Most of the American and British fortified lines where the two battles of Saratoga were fought are protected and Saratoga may be the only significant battlefield where so much of the land associated with the fighting is well protected. The typical viewer should plan on spending at least two to three hours. The first hour should be spent at the Visitor Center to view the 20-minute orientation film and browsing through the Museum and obtaining Park information. The remaining time can be spent traveling the 9.2 mile Tour Road which has 10 stops as you follow the two battles through time. Wayside audio programs are available at each stop. Self guided audiotapes are available for a slight fee at the Visitor Center

5. The Congress asked Washington to name a General to command the Northern Army but asked to be excused as that Department had always been considered separate. On 2 Aug. 1777, New England Delegates in Congress suggested Gen. Gates. James Lovell of Mass. wrote to Whipple 4 August that New York was pushing for Washington to succeed Gen. Schuyler and opposing Gates. However, when it was proposed to the Committee, they voted 11 to 1 for Gates and Washington was directed on 4 Aug. to order Gates to take command of the Northern Department. Edmund C. Burnett, editor, *Letters of Members of the Continental Congress,* vol. A. Washington: Published by the Carnegie Institution of Washington. 1921 437.
6. Howard Parker Moore, *A Life of General John Stark of New Hampshire.* Spaulding-Moss Company. (Boston, 1949). 381.
7. The route of his march and the account of his activities are in the William Whipple Papers at the Portsmouth Athenaeum. The roll of officers of Whipple's Brigade: Whipple, Brigadier-General; George Gains, Brigade Major; Prince, negro servant to Whipple; Stephen Evans, Colonel; Thomas Bartlett, Lieutenant Colonel; Joseph Prescott, Major; Thomas Peabody; Surgeon; Jonathan Wentworth, Adjutant; Robert Swainson, quartermaster; John Gage, sergeant major; John Philpot, quartermaster sergeant. Chandler E. Potter, *The Military History of the State of New Hampshire 1623-1861.* Genealogical Publishing Col, Inc. (Baltimore, 1972). 325.
8. Potter. 282, 433. Other signers to serve on the battlefield at various times were Benjamin Rush, Penn., Lewis Morris, N.Y., Caesar Rodney, Del., Thomas Heyward, Jr., Arthur Middleton, and Edward Rutledge, S.C.
9. Whipple was on the Committee in the summer of 1776 to work with Washington, Gates, and Brig. Gen. Thomas Mifflin to develop "a plan of military operations for

the ensuring campaign" and on the 5-man Committee to confer with Gates "upon the general affairs of state" in March 1777.

10. A copy of the surrender document dated 16 Oct. with Burgoyne's signature is in the William Whipple Papers.
11. Lt. James M. Hadden, *Hadden' Journal & Orderly Book*, Books for Libraries Press. (Freeport, N.H., 1884). Reprinted 1970. 558-62.
12. A. J. Langguth, Patriots, *The Men Who Started the American Revolution*. Simon and Schuster. (New York, 1988). 455-7.
13. Langguth, 455-7.
14. A soldier from the German Dutchy of Brunswick.
15. Fred J.Cook, *Dawn Over Saratoga*. Garden City, NY: Doubleday & Company, Inc. 1973. 176.
16. Langguth, 455-7.
17. W. L. Stone, *Visits to the Saratoga Battlegrounds*. First published in 1895. Reissued by the Kennikat Press. Taylor Publishing Co. (Dallas, 1970). 296-97, 388-89.
18. William Whipple Papers.
19. Stone, 707.
20. Rhode Island History. Vol. 13, No. 1. The Rhode Island Historical Society. (Providence, January 1954). 11-12.
21. Other officers signing the letter were Sullivan, Greene, Brig. Gen. John Glover, Maj. Gen.?) John Hancock of the Massachusetts Militia, and the following Brigadier Generals of Milita: Ezekiel Cornell, R.I., John Tyler, Conn., Soloman Ovell, Mass., Jonathan Titcomb, Mass. *The George Washington Papers at the Library of Congress*, 1741-1799, Vol. 12, Head Quarters, White Plains, 24 and 25 Aug. 1778.
22. Whipple's staff: Nathaniel Peabody, Adjutant General, John Samuel Sherburne, Brigade Major, Nathaniel Garfield, Brigade Quartermaster, and Prince, his man servant.
23. Thomas C. Amory, *The Military Services and Public Life of Major General Sullivan of the American Revolutionary Army* First published in 1868. Reissued by Kennikat Press, Port Washington, N. Y.: 1968, 67-73 and John Sanderson, *Biography of the Signers of the Declaration of Independence,* R. W. Pomeroy. Philadelphia: 1823, 88-91.

24 Rufus Griswold, *Washington and the Generals of the American Revolution*. Philadelphia: Henry T. Coats and Co., 1885, 211-212.

ABRAHAM WHIPPLE ENDNOTES

1. Thirteen and fourteen were common ages for boys to be apprenticed to the sea. If this were the case with Abe, he went to sea in the late 1740s. The standard apprenticeship was seven years and since Abe was a ship Master by the mid 1750s, he must have been an apt pupil.
2. An early example of this trait was reported in the Boston *Postboy and Advertiser* of 4 Feb. 1760. It reported that on 26 Jan. when he was returning to Providence, he provided a sloop commanded by Robert Brown bound for New York from Monte Christo with badly needed water and provisions.
3. On the same date it elected Hopkins and Samuel Ward Delegates to the Continental Congress whose first Session began 5 Sept. at Carpenter's Hall in Philadelphia.
4. His commission was signed by Gov. Nicholas Cooke, Ambrose Page, John Jenckes,

John Brown, and Daniel Tillinghast for "the Committee of Safety." The proffered pay of £9 is interesting considering Abe normally paid four times that for one suit of clothes as his surviving tailor bills show. Undoubtedly, it was a token payment for a patriot Captain.

5. Chase of Maryland opposed it as the "maddest thing... to think of." Christopher Gadsen of S. Car. said it should be considered "out of respect to Rhode Island." Silas Deane of Conn. supported it and said "Let it be seriously debated. I don't think it romantic at all." The Marine Committee members were Hopkins, John Adams, Mass., John Langdon, N.H., Deane, Richard Henry Lee, Va., Joseph Hewes, N. Car., and Gadsen. William Whipple, N.H. joined the Committee in 1776 and became its Chairman and most influential member.
6. The *Columbus* was armed with 18 nine-pounders, 10 six-pounders, and manned by 137 seamen and 83 marines.
7. Esek Hopkins was a Brigadier General of the Rhode Island Militia and was reticent about becoming the Navy's first Commander-in-Chief. He was uneasy about leaving his military obligations in Rhode Island where he was working with his old friend Gov. Nicholas Cooke and was surrounded by men he knew. Trading familiar circumstances for command over men of other Colonies and assuming responsibility for building and manning a new Navy was not especially enticing. He was also concerned about attracting sailors as the Marine Committee had established a pay that ranged from $32 a month for Captains to a meager $6.66 for ordinary seamen – hardly an amount that qualified men would accept. The overwhelming odds – 525 British men-of-war against four (swiftly augmented by Abe's *Providence* and the tiny *Fly*) Continental Vessels – mitigated against accepting the command.
8. When Abe was enroute the Marine Committee voted to "employ the armed sloop commanded by Capt. Abraham Whipple of Rhode Island, now on voyage to this port, and dispatch her forthwith to aid the marine business to the southward." *Journals*, vol. III, 396.
9. During the course of the war privateers captured 6,000 prizes with a value of $18 million of which 50% went to the owners. The other 50% went to the officers and men on a share basis. Privateers did not have to engage enemy vessels and their usual prize was a smaller ship than their own. Thus it was far less dangerous and far more profitable to go to sea as a privateer. These circumstances made equipping and manning naval vessels a continual nightmare. The Navy captured 196 prizes valued at $6 million – most of which went to the treasury of the new nation. Over a million dollars of the total was the result of Abe's exploits. Simple arithmetic shows the Navy's contribution to be far greater than the privateers. In addition it sank many British warships. The difficulty of manning Continental ships becomes clear when reading Abe's June 22, 1776 roster of the *Columbus*. To sail to Philadelphia for the Congressional hearing I had to "borrow" 14 men including three prisoners from the *Alfred*, three from the *Cabot*, including one sick bosun's mate, 37 from the Army at Newport, including a "boy," 24 from the *Andrew Doria*, including several more boys, five from the *Providence*, four of whom were landsmen and four from the *Fly*.
10. New Hampshire Delegate William Whipple, a strong opponent of privateering, wrote in 1778: "... no public ship will ever be manned where there is a privateer fitting out." He unsuccessfully urged an embargo on privateers until the Navy was adequately manned.
11. Congress resolved on March 20, 1778 that Naval officers taken by the enemy be allowed pay while in the enemy's possession or under parole, and rations during their captivity deducting therefrom such supplies as they may have received from the enemy. *Journals*, Vol. X.

12. On Oct. 10, 1776, the Marine Committee issued its list of officers for the 25 ships of the Navy; was empowered to settle the rank of the Lieutenants, and named a Committee of three to prepare the oath to be taken by Army and Navy officers. All but Thomas Albertson were Captains, he was a Lieutenant.
13. The normal crew for the *Columbus* was 240. Abe sailed with 176. The *Andrew Doria* only had 90 – soon to be 89. The Newport *Mercury* of Aug. 12 reported a drown man found at Gravely Point. He was identified as one of Biddle's crew.
14. It was the last time Abe saw Biddle who eventually Commanded a 32-gun frigate, the *Randolph*, built in Philadelphia. He perished in a March 7, 1778 Battle of Barbados. He had crippled HMS *Yarmouth*, a 64-gun frigate, but a shot ignited the *Randolph's* powder magazine, killing Biddle and five of his crew.
15. Congress commissioned the Brown brothers to build two frigates, the 32-gun *Warren* and the 28-gun *Providence*. They were launched in May 1776 but were far from ready for sea. Congress also authorized privateering in March and the Browns diverted most of their work force to building their own privateering vessels to the detriment of the Navy.
16. The oath, dated April 25, 1778, was written in his own hand and is annotated in another hand that he appeared in person to swear. Abe kept the document.
17. Abe was later to meet the *Renown* under less favorable circumstances. She was Admiral Arbuthnot's flagship in the 1780 battle of Charleston, S. Car. where Abe and his crew were captured.
18. News of the American victory arrived in France December 1, 1777. Jonathan Austin of Boston, a passenger on a French vessel, was the bearer of the news. He beat John Paul Jones who was carrying the official dispatches in the *Ranger* by 12 hours. The news provided great negotiation power to Franklin and the other American Commissioners.
19. In December 1777, Lord North told Parliament he would move to consider concessions to the Americans. Conciliation bills that granted virtual home rule were passed March 9, 1778. Vergennes had signed two pacts with the American Commissioners —Franklin, Silas Deane, and Arthur E. Lee – Feb. 6, 1778. The first was a Treaty of Amity and Commerce which officially recognized the United States. This meant war between Britain and France was almost inevitable. The second provided that if war were declared, France and America would be allies and fight until America's independence was assured. Both nations' proposals arrived in America at about the same time. The French pacts halted a strong movement toward acceptance of England's offer on conciliation.
20. By this decision, America was committed to five more years of war and France was set on a course that lead to bankruptcy and revolution. Without France's open support, the United States probably would not have won her absolute independence and freedom.
21. This was Abe's first trip to Europe. As mementoes, he kept the ship's letter-book and a number of personal letters from his crew and fellow officers. These letters show the friendship that existed between Abe and his men.
22. First Lieutenant Simpson, head of the under-officers had fallen out with Jones over the stern British discipline he tried to impose. Simpson thought though it out-of-place on an American vessel. Just before Abe's arrival in France, Jones threw Simp-son off the ship and informed him he was subject to a court martial when a quorum of Navy Captains were available. Simpson wrote Abe June 26 asking for passage home and expressed his innocence and said he welcomed a court martial. Abe, who previously had a quarrel never resolved with Jones over prize money, decided to support Simpson as apparently did the Commissioners who gave him command of the *Ranger* and assigned him to Abe's fleet. Jones was left fuming and high and dry for almost a year until the *Bonhomme Richard*, a converted French merchantman, was readied for him. Abe was able to circumvent the court martial on technical grounds and for his efforts gained Jones' ever-

lasting enmity. Navy regulations required at least three impartial Captains to hold a court martial. The three Captains were to be Abe, Tucker, and a Capt. Hinman. Abe wrote Jones on Aug. 18 that Hinman had declared himself unfit because he was facing a Court of Inquiry on his own conduct upon his return to America. He further pointed out that because Jones had released Simpson from parole (Simpson voluntarily placed himself under parole to Jones on June 10), he was no longer subject to a court martial as this constituted a discharge. Under the circumstances, Abe said he would not call for an inquiry. All Jones could do was write a bad-tempered letter to an American privateer Captain friend: "The other day a northward Captain was here from Brest in company with a scoundrel of a broker (Schweighauser) and his First Lieut. Jones. As to the broker, I have offended him so vilely that he thinks me as bad as he does you. As to the Captain, when I first saw him I took him for a comedian of France not of America..." The latter undoubtedly refers to Abe's dress uniform.

23. The masts were repaired, the keel cleaned and sealed with tallow, and the ship cleaned.
24. Congress had provided "that Commanders of Continental vessels of war of 10-guns and upward be allowed 51 /3d dollars per week for subsistence whilst in domestic or foreign ports. *Journals*, vol. III, 582.
25. Washington's reply of Nov. 25 commented on "the gallant circumstances" of his escape from Narragansett Bay and expressed pleasure the squadron was able to capture some prizes on the return.
26. Abe's feat was later matched by two American privateersmen off European shores. Unlike his, however, their value was not returned to the government.
27. He apparently purchased the farm before October. A subsequent deed dated Oct. 1, 1779 signed by a Henry Randall was for purchase of a small piece of land for a right-of-way. On Nov. 3, Abe paid £626 17s to Benoni Pearce who witnessed the Oct. 1 deed. The object of the payment is not specified but it may have been the balance due on the farm.
28. Sealed orders obviously meant a secret mission. They prevented the squadron's destination from being leaked to enemy agents around Boston or for signals being sent by any agent on board any of the ships.
29. Lincoln had started the Revolution as a Militia General and was responsible for clearing Boston harbor of British vessels in June 1776. He was in the Battle of White Plains and the disastrous attack on Fort Independence. He joined Washington's Army at Morristown in 1777 and was promoted to Major General. Washington was not keen on Militia officers but apparently found Lincoln competent as he named him to his Staff in July 1777. He was with Benedict Arnold at Fort George where he enjoyed successes against Gen. John Burgoyne until he was badly wounded at the Battle of Bemis Heights. The wound removed him from action for a year and left him lame for life. He returned to the Army in 1778 and was appointed Commander of the Southern department in September.
30. This policy resulted in little damage done to Philadelphia and Boston and American forces eventually regained both. New York remained in enemy hands until near the end of the war following Washington's abortive attempt to take it in 1776. For some reason the decision was made to make a stand in Charleston and that decision ended Abe's military career.
31. Clinton had left New York Dec. 26 with a force of 14,000 men and suffered enormous loss of horses and supplies due to a fierce storm.
32. Vice Admiral Arbuthnot was Commander of the British fleet in American waters.
33 Considering the length of the siege, casualties were light. The Americans lost 92 dead and 148 wounded; the British 76 dead and 189 wounded. Lincoln's troops became prisoners of Cornwallis who imprisoned them in ships in the harbor where the unsanitary conditions took a heavy toll. Of the 1,900 Army prisoners, only 740 sur-

vived the "hulks." Lincoln was severely criticized for the loss of Charleston. However, considering the odds, he put up a stout and lengthy resistance. Criticism was probably appropriate for his poor use of naval forces. Instead of letting Abe get some of his ships on the high seas where they could have harassed the enemy, he restricted them to the harbor and his orders for retreat cut off all hope of saving any of them.

34. The *Providence* was in the British Navy until the peace of 1783. The *Ranger*, renamed HMS *Halifax* was in such poor condition she was sold for merchant service in 1781 for £650. When their American officers returned to Newport, the first American Navy was almost at the end of its existence and there were no ships left for them to command. Thomas Simpson went to sea as Captain of a Merchant vessel and was lost with his ship.

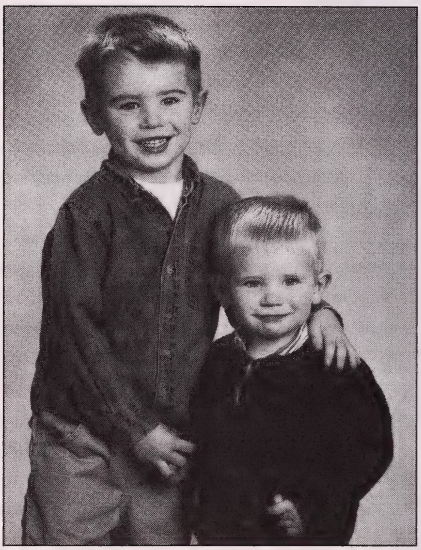
35. Exchange of prisoners became a contentious issue between the warring parties. In October 1778 the Marine Committee wrote Abe as follows: The Congress of the United States of America, having tried in vain every other method. of restraining the cruelties exercised by our enemies upon those of our fellow citizens who by the fortune of war have fallen into their hands, have been compelled to resolve upon retaliation. Application having been repeatedly made by us in Europe for an exchange of prisoners without effect—the promise given by the Minister of the King of G. Britain—that they should be sent as soon as possible to America to be exchanged—having been violated—many of them, on the contrary, who are fathers of families in America, [being compelled into distant & fatal climates & there apparently condemned to perpetual servitude, has rendered it our indispensable duty to recommend to your retaliation.

You will change the liberal & humane treatment by the example of which you have so long endeavored to reform the conduct of our enemies, into the utmost measure of severity & indignities that have been or maybe exercised upon our fellow citizens, or upon the subject of our allies. you will refuse them the indulgences hitherto granted when taken—you straiten their confinement—& abridge the quality & quantity of their provisions; according to the severe rule laid down & practiced by our enemies. No distinction of rank whatsoever must be made between the officers and common men. As we believe that every American will feel as much pain in executing as we do in recommending these severities, & as the sole object of them is to enforce a due observance towards us, of the laws of humanity; we are persuaded that the mom[ent] this purpose is obtained, you will return to your former humane treatment of your prisoners, & vie with our enemies in every act of generosity & kindness to the unfortunate. *Journals*, vol. XI, 154-55.

36 Dr. Rodloff returned to Reboboth (now Seekonk), home of his finance Sarah Medburn. He was married there in December 1780 and died in June 1808.

APPENDIX FIVE

SEVENTEEN GENERATIONS OF ANCESTORS OF SPENCER BLAINE WHIPPLE AND TURNER COLLINS WHIPPLE



This book is dedicated to my grandsons Spencer Blaine (b. 15 Oct. 2001) and Turner Collins (b. 8 May 2004) Whipple. I have traced their lineage for 17 generations. The following ahnentafel— a German word meaning ancestor table—is a list of their known ancestors. The ahnentafel makes it easy for them to see how they are related to a specific ancestor. The information lists the full name, dates and places of birth, marriage, and deaths, when known, for each individual[1].

To understand an ahnentafel you must know the elements of its numbering system. Numbering starts with a specific individual and lists his or her ancestors. Each individual is numbered according to the following sequence:

1. The first individual is No. 1.
2. Calculate the father's number by multiplying the child's number by 2.
3. Calculate the mother's number by multiplying by 2 and adding 1.
4. Example: The father of individual No. 16, James Ezekiel Whipple (great great grandfather of individual No. 1, Spencer and Turner) is No. 32, Lucien Ransom Whipple and the mother is No. 33, Sarah Sheward.

To state it another way, Spencer and Turner's father (Blaine Scott Whipple) is twice their number (2 x 1 = 2) and their mother (Lorna Jo Zoerink) is plus 1 (2 + 1 = 3). Spencer and Turner's father's father (Robert Blaine Whipple) is twice his number (2 x 2 = 4) and his mother (Ines Mae Peterson) is plus 1 (4 + 1 = 5). Their mother's father (Wayne Zoerink) is twice her number (3 x 2 = 6) and her mother (Beverly Jean Gerritson) is plus 1 (6 + 1 = 7).

1 For documentation of the individuals included here, see the endnotes in the historical chapters, genealogical generations, and genealogical appendixes included elsewhere in these volumes.

1 **Spencer Blaine Whipple**
Spencer was born in Portland, Washington Co., Oreg. 15 October 2001.

1 **Turner Collins Whipple**
Turner was born in Portland, Washington Co., Oreg. 8 May 2004.

2 **Blaine Scott Whipple**
Scott was born in Portland, Multnomah Co, Oreg. 27 December 1968. He married Lorna Jo Zoerink in Turner, Marion Co., Oreg., 14 August 1998.

3 **Lorna Jo Zoerink**
Lorna was born in Lakewood, Los Angeles Co., Calif. 1 December 1966.

4 **Robert Blaine Whipple**
Blaine was born in Martin, Bennett Co., S. Dak. 22 February 1930. He was baptized in Martin 16 September 1930. He married Ines Mae Peterson in Portland, Washington Co., Oreg., 6 August 1966.

5 **Ines Mae Peterson**
Ines was born in Portland, Multnomah Co., Oreg. 24 September 1929. She married (1) Harold Steele in Portland, Multnomah Co., Oreg., 24 February 1951. She married (2) Robert Blaine Whipple.

6 **Wayne Zoerink**
Wayne was born in Hull, Sioux Co., Iowa 21 May 1938. He married Beverly Jean Gerritson in Bellflower, Los Angeles Co., Calif., 20 August 1964.

7 **Beverly Jean Gerritson**
Alex was born in Inwood, Lyon Co., Iowa 23 November 1943.

8 **Lucien Blaine Whipple**
Blaine was born in Eugene, Vermillion Co., Ind. 22 June 1883. He married Pearl Julia Scott in Albion, Boone Co., Nebr., 21 September 1927. Blaine died 27 August 1954 in Dresden, Weakley Co.,Tenn., at 71 years of age. His body was interred in Vinton, Benton Co., Iowa, Evergreen Cemetery.

9 **Pearl Julia Scott**
Pearl was born in Hamel, Hennepin Co., Minn. 29 August 1905. Pearl died 1 April 1988 in Glencoe, McLeod Co., Minn., at 82 years of age. Her body was interred in Evergreen Cemetery.

10 **Owen Diamon Peterson**
Owen was born in Panama, Lancaster Co., Nebr. 1 December 1894. He married Josephine Berniece Bartruff in Corvallis, Benton Co., Oreg., 14 February 1924. Owen died 28 October 1943 in Portland, Multnomah Co., Oreg., at 48 years of age. His body was interred in Portland, Lincoln Memorial Cemetery.

11 **Josephine Berniece Bartruff**
Jo was born in Marion Co., Oreg. 21 March 1901. Jo died 14 February 1995 in Portland, at 93 years of age. Her body was interred in Salem, Marion Co., Oreg., Lee Mission Cemetery.

12 **John Peter Zoerink**
John was born in Sioux Center, Sioux Co., Iowa 30 April 1898. He married Minnie Groen in Sioux Center 7 November 1918. John died 8 May 1973 in Sioux Center, at 75 years of age. His body is interred in Hull Cemetery, Sioux Co.

13 **Minnie Groen**
Minnie was born in Sioux Co., Iowa 7 December 1897. Minnie died 11 December 1969 in Sioux Center, at 72 years of age. Her body is interred in Hull Cemetery

14 **John Gerritson**
He married Greta Van der Naald.

15 **Greta Van der Naald**
She married John Gerritson.

16 **James Ezekiel Whipple**
Jim was born in Benton Co., Iowa 3 September 1857. He married Malissa "Ellen" Thompson in Georgetown, Vermilion Co., Ill., 1 April 1881. Jim died 14 May 1914 in Vinton, Benton Co., Iowa, at 56 years of age. His body was interred in Vinton's Evergreen Cemetery.

17 **Malissa "Ellen" Thompson**
Ellen was born in Georgetown 7 January 1859. Ellen died 3 September 1918 in Iowa City, Johnson Co., Iowa, at 59 years of age. Her body was interred in Evergreen Cemetery.

18 **Benoni Scott**
Ben was born in Corcoran, Hennepin Co., Minn. 25 September 1882. He married Ellen "Nellie" Dolan in Hamel, Hennepin Co., Minn., 25 June 1903. Ben died 8 January 1935 in Minot, Ward Co., N. Dak., at 52 years of age. His body was interred in Hamel, St. Anne Catholic Cemetery.

19 **Ellen "Nellie" Dolan**
Nellie was born in Maple Grove, Hennepin Co., Minn. 27 August 1884. Nellie died 2 June 1953 in Underwood, McLean Co., N. Dak., at 68 years of age. Her body was interred in St. Anne Catholic Cemetery.

20 **Peter T. Peterson**
Pete was born in Oster Ulslev, Maribo Co., Denmark 2 April 1869. He was christened in Oster Ulslev 17 May 1869. He married Agnes Faye Frye in Panama, Lancaster Co., Nebr., 29 September 1892. Pete died 6 July 1940 in Portland, Multnomah Co., Oreg., at 71 years of age. His body was interred in Independence, Polk Co. Oreg., Hilltop (IOOF) Cemetery.

21 **Agnes Faye Frye**
Agnes was born in Peoria, Peoria Co., Ill. 20 Februry 1876. Agnes died 11 December 1962 in Portland, Multnomah Co., Oreg., at 86 years of age. Her body was interred in Hilltop (IOOF) Cemetery.

22 **Charles Jacob Bartruff**
Charles was born in Portsmouth, Scioto Co., Ohio 10 January 1854. He married Anna Mary Loeb in Jonesboro, Union Co., Ill., 6 September 1882. Charles died 31 January 1936 in Salem, Marion Co., Oreg., at 82 years of age. His body was interred in Howell Cemetery 64th Place N. E. Salem.

23 **Anna Mary Loeb**
Anna was born in Cobden, Union Co., Ill. 6 October 1863. Anna died 29 March 1911 in Salem, at 47 years of age. Her body was interred in Howell Cemetery.

24 **Johan Michael Zoerink**
Johan was born in Hoerde Gelderland, The Netherlands 16 July 1866. He married Nellie Neeltje Kramer in Orange City, Sioux Co., Iowa, 3 December 1890. Johan died 7 April 1931 in Lynden, Whatcom Co., Wash., at 64 years of age.

25 **Nellie Neeltje Kramer**
Nellie was born in St. Jacobiparochie, Friesland, The Netherland 29 April 1870. Nellie died 24 September 1962 in Bellingham, Whatcom Co., Wash., at 92 years of age.

26 **Jacob Groen**
He married Tetje Schaap.

27 **Tetje Schaap**
She married Jacob Groen.

32 **Lucien Ransom Whipple**
Lute was born in Hartford Township, Licking Co., Ohio 6 February 1834. He married Sarah Sheward in Vermillion Co., Ind., 26 October 1856. Lute died 13 May 1904 in Newport, Vermillion Co., Ind., at 70 years of age. His body was interred in the Eugene, Vermillion Co., Ind., Cemetery.

33 **Sarah Sheward**
Sarah was born in Eugene Township, Vermillion Co., Ind. 5 October 1835. Sarah died 30 June 1898 in Eugene, at 62 years of age.

34 **John W. Thompson**
John was born abt 1817. He married Rebecca Campbell in Illinois, abt 1845. John died aft 12 August 1869 at approximately 52 years of age.

35 **Rebecca (__)**
Rebecca was born in Kentucky aft August 1822. Rebecca died 27 August 1888 in Vermilion Co., Ill. at 65 years of age. Her body was interred in Bethel Cemetery, Love Township, Vermilion Co.

36 **Didace (Didas) Scott**
Didace was born in Quebec Province, Canada 27 November 1844. He married Angela Hamel in Dayton, Hennepin Co., Minn., 23 November 1868. Didace died 27 April 1929 in Corcoran, Hennepin Co., Minn., at 84 years of age. His body was interred in Ste Jesnne de Chantal French Cemetery, Corcoran.

37 **Angela Hamel**
Angela was born in St. Eloi, Quebec, Canada 18 March 1852. Angela died 2 May 1915 in Corcoran, at 63 years of age. Her body was interred in Ste Jesnne de Chantal French Cemetery.

38 **Thomas Dolan**
Tom was born in New York State abt 1860. He married Julia Darmody in Minnesota, 19 November 1883. Tom died 15 June 1943 in Minneapolis, Hennepin Co., Minn., at 82 years of age. His body was interred in St. Anne Catholic Cemetery, Hamel, Hennepin Co.

39 **Julia Darmody**
Julia was born in Minnesota 25 February 1862. Julia died 24 July 1899 in Maple Grove, Hennepin Co., Minn., at 37 years of age.

40 **Peder Madsen**
Peder was born in Denmark abt 1838. He married Johanne Rasmusdatter in Oster Ulslev, Maribo Co., Denmark, 17 October 1858. Peter died in Denmark.

41 **Johanne Rasmusdatter**
Johanne was born in Oster Ulslev, Maribo Co., Denmark 13 March 1838. She was christened in Oster Ulslev 1 May 1838. Johanne died in Denmark.

42 **Henry Abraham Frye**
Henry was born in Peoria, Peoria Co., Ill. 19 September 1836. He married Helen M. Diamon. Henry died 23 September 1890 in Lancaster Co., Nebr., at 54 years of age. His body was interred in Panama Cemetery, Panama, Lancaster Co., Nebr.

43 **Helen M. Diamon**
Helen was born in New York State 23 September 1835. Helen died 20 March 1915 at 79 years of age. Her body was interred in Independence, Polk Co., Oreg., Hilltop (IOOF) Cemetery.

44 **Friederich Ludwig Bartruff**
Friederich was born in Winzerhausen Oberamt Marbach W, Germany 6 June 1826. He married Katharina Frederika Spangler in Wuerttemberg, Germany in 1847. Friederich died 16 January 1902 in Jonesboro, Union Co., Ill., at 75 years of age. His body was interred in Jonesboro, Ebenezer Union Cemetery.

45 **Katharina Frederika Spangler**
Catherine was born in Lauffen am Neckar, Germany 28 September 1832. Catherine died 29 June 1899 in Jonesboro, at 66 years of age. Her body was interred in Ebenezer Union Cemetery.

46 **Casper Loeb**
Casper was born in December 1823. He married Elizabeth Dukshied. Casper died 30 April 1886 in Union Co., Ill., at 62 years of age. His body was interred in Jonesboro, Union Co., Ill., Ebenezer Union Cemetery.

47 **Elizabeth Dukshied**
Elizabeth was born 6 November 1825. Elizabeth died 28 December 1888 at 63 years of age. Her body was interred in Ebenezer Union Cemetery.

48 **Jan Petrus Zoerink**
He married Jajeticita Maria Nahum.

49 **Jajeticita Maria Nahum**
She married Jan Petrus Zoerink.

50 **Henry Hendrik Martens Kramer**
Henry was born in St. Jacobiparochie, Friesland, The Netherland 5 February 1846. He married Jessie Jitske Teakes Boersma in St. Jacobiparochie in May 1869. Henry died 7 May 1909 in Orange City, Sioux Co., Iowa, at 63 years of age.

51 **Jessie Jitske Teakes Boersma**
Jessie was born in St. Jacobiparochie, Friesland, 18 November 1849. Jessie died 24 September 1920 in Orange City, at 70 years of age.

64 **Enoch Whipple**
Enoch was born in Whipple Hollow, Rutland Co., Vt. 10 September 1788. He married Catharine Shaw in Hartford Township, Licking Co., Ohio, 2 February 1815. Enoch died 10 October 1857 in Benton Co., Iowa, at 69 years of age.

65 **Catharine Shaw**
Catharine was born 15 March 1798. Catharine died 3 November 1865 in Benton Co. at 67 years of age.

66 **Ezekiel Sheward**
Ezekiel was born in Virginia abt 1794. He married Martha Cahoon in Vermillion Co., Ind., 20 May 1832. Ezekiel died aft 1870 in Vermillion Co.

67 **Martha Cahoon** Martha was born in Virginia abt 1815.

68 **(__) Thompson**. Father of John W. Thompson, No. 34.

69 **Elizabeth (__)**. Mother of John W. Thompson, No. 34

72 **Joseph Scott**
Joseph was born in Chambly, Quebec, Canada in 1815. He married Philomene (Florin) Trudeau in Chambly, 12 January 1841. Joseph died 17 May 1872 in Corcoran, Hennepin Co., Minn., at 56 years of age.

73 **Philomene (Florin) Trudeau**
Flevia was born in Chambly, in 1821. Flevia died 15 October 1906 in Corcoran, at 85 years of age.

74 **Lange Charles Hamel**
Lange was born in L 'Isle-Verte, Quebec Province, Canada 21 June 1812. He married Eugenie Moffett in L 'Isle-Verte 24 January 1837. Lange died 26 August 1887 in Hamel, Hennepin Co. Minn., at 75 years of age. His body is interred in St. Anne Catholic Cemetery

75 **Eugenie Moffett**
Eugenie was born in Canada 29 July 1822. Eugenie died 6 April 1874 in Hamel, at 51 years of age.

76 **Keran (Kieran) Dolan**
Keran was born in County Cork, Ireland 1 May 1831. He married Margaret Rourke abt 1858. Keran died 18 September 1907 in Minneapolis, Hennepin Co., Minn., at 81 years of age. His body was interred at Hamel, Hennepin Co., Minn. at St. Anne Catholic Cemetery

P77 **Margaret Rourke**
Margaret was born 3 December 1839. Margaret died 6 February 1898 in Minnesota, at 58 years of age.

78 **Patrick Darmody**
Patrick was born in County Tipperary, Ireland bet 1821 & 1833. He married Ellen Peters abt 1855. Patrick died 5 February 1879 in Maple Grove, Hennepin Co., Minn., at 57 years of age. His body was interred at Maple Grove, St. Patrick Cemetery.

79 **Ellen Peters**
Ellen was born in County Tipperary, Ireland. Ellen died in Maple Grove. Her body was interred at Maple Grove, St. Patrick Cemetery.

82 **Rasmus Christiansen**
Rasmus was born in Denmark. He married Marem Pedersdatter in Denmark.

83 **Marem Pedersdatter**.
Marem was born in Denmark.

100 **Marten Wybes Kramer**
Marten was born in The Netherlands in March 1802. He married Neeltje Hendrika Koning in The Netherlands. Marten died 7 April 1855 in The Netherlands, at 53 years of age.

101 **Neeltje Hendrika Koning**
Neeltje was born in The Netherlands April 1804.

102 **Taeke Oenzes Boersma**
He married Eeke Jans Tilma.

103 **Eeke Jans Tilma**
She married Taeke Oenzes Boersma.

128 **Nehemiah Whipple**
Nehemiah was born in Hardwick, Worcester Co., Mass. 25 March 1750. He married Sarah Roberts in Massachusetts, bef 1777. Nehemiah died 22 January 1809 in Whipple Hollow, Rutland Co., Vt., at 58 years of age. His body was interred at Whipple Hollow Cemetery. A grave marker identifies him as a veteran of the Revolutionary War.

129 **Sarah Roberts**
Sarah was born in Providence, R. I in 1752. Sarah died 22 September 1812 in Whipple Hollow, at 60 years of age. Her body was interred at Whipple Hollow Cemetery.

144 **Andre Scott**
Andre was born in Canada. He married Sophie Demers in Canada, 5 October 1812.

145 **Sophie Demers**
She married Andre Scott in Canada, 5 October 1812.

146 **Toussaint Trudeau**
Toussaint was born in Quebec Province, Canada. He married Marie Monty in Chambly, Quebec, 16 November 1801.

147 **Marie Monty**
She married Toussaint Trudeau 16 November 1801.

148 **Joseph Valentin Hamel**
He married Marie Louise Fontaine in 1764.

149 **Marie Louise Fontaine**
She married Joseph Valentin Hamel in 1764.

150 **Gabriel Moffett**. Father of Eugenie Moffett, No. 75.

152 **Roger Dolan**. Father of Keran Dolan, No. 76.

256 **Benjamin Whipple**
Benjamin was born in Ipswich, Essex Co., Mass. 23 April 1727. He was baptized in Ipswich 2 July. He married Hepzibah Crosby in Westborough, Worcester Co., Mass., 7 August 1749. Benjamin died 30 April 1806 in Whipple Hollow, Rutland Co., Vt., at 79 years of age. His body was interred at West Rutland, Rutland Co., Vt., at Pleasant Street Cemetery. A grave marker identifies him as a veteran of the Revolutionary War.

257 **Hepzibah Crosby**
Hepzibah was born in Shrewsbury, Worcester Co., Mass. 17 October 1727 and died 16 May 1797 in Whipple Hollow, Vt., at 69 years of age. Her body was interred at Pleasant Street Cemetery.

258 **John Roberts**. Father of Sarah Roberts, No. 129

288 **Andre Scott**
Andre was born in Longueuil, Quebec Province, Canada abt 1759. He married Marie Ursule Trahan in Chambly, Quebec, Canada, 26 April 1786. His body was interred 25 September 1839 in Chambly.

289 **Marie Ursule Trahan**
She married Andre Scott 26 April 1786.

290 **Joseph Demers**
He married Marie Larreau 17 January 1763.

291 **Marie Larreau**
She married Joseph Demers 17 January 1763.

292 **Toussaint Trudeau**
He married Genevieve Patenaude. Toussaint was born in 1727.

293 **Genevieve Patenaude**
She married Toussaint Trudeau.

294 **Joseph Antoine Monty**
Joseph was born in Chambly, Quebec, Canada 20 March 1747. He married Marie-Catherine Piedalu in Chambly 1 October 1770. Joseph died in 1829 in Chambly, at 82 years of age.

295 **Marie-Catherine Piedalu**
Marie-Catherine was born in Laprairie, Quebec Province, Canada 11 September 1751.

296 **Louis Antoine Hamel**
Louis was born 10 December 1730. He married Madeleine Sedliot in 1764.

297 **Madeleine Sedliot**
She married Louis Antoine Hamel.

512 **Francis Whipple**
Francis was born in Ipswich, Essex Co., Mass. in 1705. He was baptized in Ipswich 4 November 1705. He married Abigail Lamson in Hamilton, Essex Co., Mass., 11 May 1726. Francis died 2 July 1787 in New Braintree, Worcester Co., Mass., at 82 years of age. His body was interred at New Braintree, Evergreen Cemetery.

513 **Abigail Lamson**
Abigail was born in Ipswich 15 February 1708. Abigail died 22 December 1799 in New Braintree, Mass., at 91 years of age.

514 **David Crosby**
David was born in Billerica, Middlesex Co., Mass. 27 March 1703. He married Sarah Foster in Billerica bef 1727. David died in Shrewsbury, Worcester Co., Mass.

515 **Sarah Foster**
Sarah was born in Billerica 30 June 1709.

576 **Andrew Scott**
Andrew was born in Sligo, Ireland abt 1713. He married Charlotte Serre in Chambly, Quebec, Canada, 23 May 1779. Andrew died 9 July 1812 in Chambly, at 99 years of age.

577 **Charlotte Serre**
Charlotte was born in Cote St. Laurent, Quebec Province, Canada 26 May 1726.

578 **Francois Trahan**
Francois was born in 1736. He married Marie Ursule Godreau in January 1768.

579 **Marie Ursule Godreau**
Marie was born in 1750. Marie died 28 April 1772 at 21 years of age.

580 **Henri Demers**
Henri was born 14 December 1708. He married Therese Poirier in Quebec Province, Canada, 7 February 1735.

581 **Therese Poirier**
Therese was born in Boucherville, Quebec Province, Canada 5 March 1713. Therese died 22 February 1753 in Quebec Province, at 39 years of age.

582 **Joseph Lareau**
Joseph was born in Quebec Province, Canada 8 February 1714. He married Marie-Anne Normand in Quebec Province 3 November 1735.

583 **Marie-Anne Normand**
Marie-Anne was born in Quebec Province 16 December 1711.

584 **Charles Trudeau**
Charles was born in Longueuil, Quebec Province, Canada 25 March 1684. He was baptized in Boucherville, Quebec Province 26 March 1684. He married Marie-Madeleine Loisel in Pointe-aux-Trembles de Montrea, Canada, 17 November 1710. Charles died 21 March 1742 in Longueuil, at 57 years of age.

585 **Marie-Madeleine Loisel**
Marie-Madeleine was born in Pointe-aux-Trembles de Montrea 22 March 1694.

586 **Etienne Patenaude**
Etienne was born 10 October 1697. He married Marie Angelique Lamarre 24 November 1721.

587 **Marie Angelique Lamarre**
She married Etienne Patenaude 24 November 1721.

588 **Jean Monty**
He married Marie Marthe Poyer in Chambly, Quebec, Canada, 27 February 1729.

589 **Marie Marthe Poyer**
Marie was born 20 August 1710.

590 **Julien-Betrand Piedalu**
Julien-Betrand was born in Quebec Province, Canada. He married Felicite Bourassa in Laprairie, Quebec Province.

591 **Felicite Bourassa**
Felicite was born in Laprairie, Quebec Province, Canada.

592 **Jean Hamel**
Jean was born 11 September 1702. He married Marie Anne Constantin.

593 **Marie Anne Constantin**
She married Jean Hamel.

1,024 **Jonathan Whipple**
Jonathan was born in Ipswich, Essex Co., Mass. 19 April 1679. He married Frances Edwards in Ipswich 14 July 1702. Jonathan died 2 April 1757 in Westborough, Worcester Co., Mass., at 77 years of age. His body was interred at Westborough.

1,025 **Frances Edwards**
Frances was born in Ipswich 30 September 1682. Frances died 26 June 1757 in Westborough, at 74 years of age. Her body was interred at Westborough.

1,026 **Thomas Lamson**
Thomas was born in Ipswich, Essex Co., Mass. 3 January 1682. He married Abigail Faulkner in Ipswich 31 March 1707/08. Thomas died in July 1767 in Ipswich at 85 years of age.

1,027 **Abigail Faulkner**
Abigail was born in Andover, Essex Co., Mass. 12 August 1683. Abigail died 26 December 1746 in Ipswich at 63 years of age.

1,028 **Joseph Crosby**
Joseph was born in Billerica, Middlesex Co., Mass. 5 July 1669. He married Sarah French in Billerica, 6 May 1691. Joseph died abt 1736 in Billerica.

1,029 **Sarah French**
Sarah was born in Billerica 29 October 1671. Sarah died abt 1727 in Billerica.

1,030 **Thomas Foster**
Thomas was born 11 February 1680/81. He married Hepsibah (__) in Billerica, Middlesex Co., Mass.

1,031 Hepsibah (__)
She married Thomas Foster in Billerica.

1,152 Jean Scott
Jean was born in Sligo, Ireland bef. 1700. He married Marie Cracheten in Sligo.

1,153 Marie Cracheten
Marie was born in Sligo.

1,154 Andre Serre
Andre was born in France. He married Marie Anne Boilard in Quebec, Canada, 3 May 1706.

1,155 Marie Anne Boilard
Marie was born 5 November 1682.

1,156 Etienne Trahan
Etienne was born in Acadia, Canada in 1693. He married Francoise Roy in Acadia abt 1725. Etienne died 17 January 1758 in St. Pierre du Sud, Canada, at 64 years of age.

1,157 Francoise Roy
Francoise was born in 1703. Francoise died 12 January 1758 in St. Pierre du Sud, Canada, at 54 years of age.

1,158 Joseph Godreau
Joseph was born in Cap St. Ignace, Quebec Province, Canada 11 December 1712. He married Marie Ursule Chouinard in Quebec Province 15 July 1748.

1,159 Marie Ursule Chouinard
Marie was born 4 August 1726. Marie died 8 May 1761 at 34 years of age.

1,160 Robert Demers
Robert was born in Bourcherville, Quebec, Canada 12 January 1671. He married Madeleine Jette in Ville-Marie, in Quebec, Province 26 April 1694.

1,161 Madeleine Jette
Madeleine was born 10 December 1673. Madeleine died 23 May 1741 at 67 years of age.

1,162 Philippe Poirier
Philippe was born in Montreal, Canada in 1680. He married Marie-Marguerite Vacher 9 June 1710. Philippe died 17 September 1717 in Chambly, Quebec, Province, Canada, at 37 years of age.

1,163 Marie-Marguerite Vacher
Marie-Marguerite was born in Trois-Rivieres, Quebec Province, Canada in 1691.

1,164 Noel Lareau
Noel was born 7 February 1682. He married Marie-Agnes Pilotte in Quebec Province, Canada, 1 February 1712. Noel died 8 December 1718 at 36 years of age.

1,165 Marie-Agnes Pilotte
Marie-Agnes was born in Lorette, Quebec Province, Canada 14 January 1680. She married Noel Lareau. Marie-Agnes died 8 December 1718 in Quebec Province, at 38 years of age.

1,166 Joseph Le Normand
Joseph was born 18 January 1669. He married Marie Chorbet in Quebec, Canada, 29 October 1693.

1,167 Marie Chorbet
Marie was born in Ste. Famillа, Quebec Providence 31 January 1675. Marie died 13 May 1737 at 62 years of age.

1,168 Etienne Trudeau
Etienne was born in Notre-Dame-de-Cogne, City of La Rochelle, France 4 June 1641. He was baptized in St. Marguerite de la Rochelle 15 September 1641. He married Adrienne Barbier in Montreal, Canada, 10 January 1667. Etienne died in July 1712 in Montreal, at 71 years of age.

1,169 Adrienne Barbier
Adrienne was born in Montreal 20 August 1652. Adrienne died aft 19 December 1717 in Quebec Province, Canada, at approximately 65 years of age.

1,170 Joseph Loisel
Joseph was born in Ville-Marie, Quebec, Province, Canada 25 November 1654. He married Jeanne Langlois in Pointe-aux-Trembles de Montrea, Canada, 7 April 1682. Joseph died 9 June 1724 in Pointe-aux-Trembles de Montrea, at 69 years of age.

1,171 Jeanne Langlois
Jeaanne was born 16 January 1664. Jeanne died 23 February 1719 in Pointe-aux-Trembles de Montreal, at 55 years of age.

1,172 Charles Patenaude
Charles was born 21 May 1666. He married Francoise Sequin in Montreal, Canada, 2 August 1694.

1,173 **Francoise Sequin**
She married Charles Patenaude.

1,174 **Andre Lamarre**
Andre was born in 1660. He married Angelique Chapacou in Longueuil, Quebec Province, Canada, 6 August 1694. Andre died 12 July 1756 in Longueuil, at 96 years of age.

1,175 **Angelique Chapacou**
Angelique was born 24 March 1668. She married Andre Lamarre.

1,176 **Dominique Monty**
Dominique was born in France. He married Jeanne Benoist abt 1700.

1,177 **Jeanne Benoist**
She married Dominique Monty.

1,178 **Jacques Poyer**
He married Marguerite Dubois abt 1705. Jacques died 7 September 1748 in Sorel, Quebec Province, Canada.

1,179 **Marguerite Dubois**
Marguerite was born in 1685.

1,180 **Julien Piedalu**
Julien was born in 1681. He married Francoise Aupry in Laprairie, Quebec Province, Canada. Julien died 5 September 1739 in Laprairie, at 58 years of age.

1,181 **Francoise Aupry**
Francoise was born in Laprairie 5 February 1702.

1,182 **Francoise-Joachim Bourassa**
Francoise-Joachim was born in Laprairie, Quebec Province, Canada 10 April 1689. He married Marie Anne Deneau in Laprairie 10 February 1721.

1,183 **Marie Anne Deneau**
Marie was born in Quebec Province, Canada 27 February 1704. Marie died 20 April 1733 in Laprairie, at 29 years of age.

1,184 **Jean Francois Hamel**
Jean was born in St. Foy, Quebec, Canada 24 July 1661. He married Anne Felicite LaVasseur abt April 1685. Jean died in September 1733 in Lorette, Quebec, at 72 years of age.

1,185 Anne Felicite LaVasseur
She was baptized in Quebec, Canada, 23 April 1667. Her body was interred 25 September 1748 in l'Ancienne-Lorette, Quebec Province.

2,048 Joseph Whipple
Joseph was born in Ipswich, Essex Co., Mass. abt 1640. He married Sarah (__) in Ipswich in 1676. Joseph died abt 1709 in Ipswich. His body was interred at the Ipswich Cemetery.

2,049 Sarah (__)
She married Joseph Whipple. She married (2) Walter Fairfield in Wenham, Essex Co., Mass., 8 April 1711. Sarah died 18 November 1713 in Wenham.

2,050 John Edwards
He married Mary Sams in Ipswich, Essex Co., Mass., 24 November 1658.

2,051 Mary Sams
She married John Edwards.

2,052 John Lamson
John was born in Ipswich, Essex Co., Mass. in November 1642. He married Martha Perkins in Ipswich 17 December 1668. John died bef June 1717 in Topsfield, Essex Co., Mass.

2,053 Martha Perkins
Martha was born in Topsfield abt 1649. Martha died aft 1728 in Topsfield.

2,054 Francis Faulkner
Francis was born in Andover, Essex Co., Mass. abt 1654. He married Abigail Dane in Andover 12 October 1675. Francis died 19 September 1732 in Andover at 78 years of age. His body was interred in the Andover Cemetery.

2,055 Abigail Dane
Abigail was born in Andover 13 October 1652. Abigail died 5 February 1729/30 in Andover at 77 years of age. Her body was interred in the Andover Cemetery. She was convicted of being a witch in 1692 in the Salem, Mass. Witchcraft trials.

2,056 Simon Crosby
Simon was born in Cambridge, Middlesex Co., Mass. in August 1637. He married Rachel Bracket in Braintree, Norfolk Co., Mass., 15 July 1659. Simon died 22 January 1725/26 in Billerica, Middlesex Co., Mass., at 88 years of age.

2,057 Rachel Bracket
Rachel was born in Boston, Suffolk Co., Mass. 3 November 1639. Rachel died aft 1726 in Billerica.

2,058 Lt. William French
William was born in Halstead, Essex Co., England 15 March 1603. He married Mary Lothrop in Billerica, Middlesex Co., Mass., 6 May 1669. William died 20 November 1681 in Billerica at 78 years of age.

2,059 Mary Lothrop
She married Lt. William French.

2,060 Deacon Joseph Foster
Joseph was born in Weymouth, Norfolk Co., Mass. 28 March 1650. He married Alice Gorton in Billerica, Middlesex Co., Mass., 11 December 1672. Joseph died 4 December 1721 in Billerica at 71 years of age.

2,061 Alice Gorton
Alice was born in Roxbury, Suffolk Co. Mass. abt 1652. Alice died 17 May 1712 in Billerica at 59 years of age.

2,310 Jean Boilard
Jean was born in 1645. He married Jeanne Marandeau 19 November 1680. Jean died 24 April 1737 in Beaummont, Quebec Province, Canada, at 91 years of age.

2,311 Jeanne Marandeau
She married Jean Boilard.

2,312 Alexandre Trahan
Alexandre was born abt 1670. He married Marie Pellerin abt 1689.

2,313 Marie Pellerin
Marie was born abt 1669.

2,314 Jean Roy dit Laliberte
Jean was born in Saint Malo, France. He married Marie Dubois in Port Royal, Arcadia, France, abt 1684.

2,315 Marie Dubois
Marie was born in Acadia, Canada.

2,316 Charles Gaudreau
Charles was born in Cap St. Ignace, Quebec Province, Canada 3 February 1681. He married Madeline Tibault 30 October 1710. Charles died 8 March 1756 in St. Thomas, Quebec Province, at 75 years of age.

2,317 Madeline Tibault
Madeline was born in 1688.

2,320 Andre Demers
Andre was born in St. Jacques, de Dieppe, France in 1631. He married Marie Chefdeville. Andre died 23 November 1710 in la Ptre-aux Trembles, Quebec, Canada, at 79 years of age.

2,321 Marie Chefdeville
Marie was born in France in 1636. She died in 1708 in Canada, at 72 years of age.

2,322 Urbain Jette
Urbain was born in France in 1627. He married Catherine Charles in Montreal, Canada, 26 October 1659. He was interred in Montreal, Canada 13 May 1684.

2,323 Catherine Charles
Catherine was born in Charenton-le-Pont, Creteil, Ile-de-France abt 1638. Catherine died 2 December 1691 in Montreal, Canada, at 53 years of age.

2,324 Jean Baptiste Poirier
Jean was born in 1647. He married Marie Langlois in Quebec Province, Canada. Jean died 18 February 1722 in Boucherville, Quebec Province, at 74 years of age.

2,325 Marie Langlois
Marie was born in 1647.

2,326 Jean-Guillaume Vacher dit Laserte
He was baptized in Saint-Pierre d'Angers, Anjou, France, 21 April 1650. He married Marguerite Benoist in Trois-Rivieres, Quebec Province, Canada, 26 November 1685. Jean-Guillaume died abt 1720 in Trois-Rivieres, Quebec Province.

2,327 Marguerite Benoist
Marguerite was born in Champlain, Quebec Province, abt 1666. Her body was interred in Trois-Rivieres 11 September 1728

2,328 Francoise Lareau II
Francoise was born in 1646. He married Anne De Quain in Quebec Province, Canada, 28 October 1659. Francoise died 30 June 1726 at 79 years of age.

2,329 Anne De Quain
She married Francoise Lareau II.

2,330 Jean Pilote
He was baptized in de La Rochelle, France, 16 September 1657. He married Marie Francoise Gaudry in Quebec, Canada, 27 June 1678. Jean died 16 May 1738 in Quebec Province.

2,331 Marie Francoise Gaudry
Marie was born 28 August 1662.

2,332 Jean Le Normand
Jean was born in France in 1638. He married Anne Le Labourer 18 July 1656. Jean died 25 July 1706 in Quebec, Canada, at 68 years of age.

2,333 Anne Le Labourer
Anne was born in Normandy, France in 1630.

2,334 Robert Chorbet
Robert was born in France 7 June 1648. He married Marie Madeleine Paradis in Quebec Province, Canada, abt 1674.

2,335 Marie Madeleine Paradis
Marie was born in Ste. Familla, Quebec Providence, Canada 12 January 1655. Marie died in 1684 in Quebec Province, at 29 years of age.

2,336 Francois Trudeau
He was baptized in St. Marguerite de la Rochelle, France, 4 October 1613. He married Catherine Matinier in France. Francois died in 1649 in Notre-Dame-de-Cogne, City of La Rochelle, France.

2,337 Catherine Matinier
Catherine was born in France. Her body was interred 27 March 1670 in Notre-Dame de la Rochelle, France.

2,338 Gilbert M. Barbier
Gilbert was born in France in 1626. He married Catherine La Vau in Montreal, Canada, 14 November 1650. Gilbert died 15 November 1693 in Pointe-aux-Trembles de Montrea, Canada, at 67 years of age.

2,339 Catherine La Vau
Catherine was born in 1621.

2,340 Louis Loisel
Louis was born in Normandy, France abt 1617. He married Marguerite Charlot in Ville-Marie, Quebec, Province, Canada, 13 January 1648. His body was interred 4 September 1691.

2,341 Marguerite Charlot
Marguerite was born in Paris, France abt 1631. Her body was interred 3 October 1706 in Pointe-aux-Trembles de Montrea, Canada.

2,342 **Honore Langlois**
He married Marie Pontonnier.

2,343 **Marie Pontonnier**
She married Honore Langlois.

2,344 **Nicholas Patenaude**
Father of Charles Patenaude, No. 1,172.

2,348 **Robert LaMarre**
Robert was born in de Binorel, France. He married M. Margaret Donnet.

2,349 **M. Margaret Donnet**
She married Robert LaMarre.

2,350 **Simon Jean Chapacou**
Simon was born in France in 1626. He married M. Vincente Pacaud. Simon died 3 June 1690 in Longueuil, Quebec Province, Canada, at 63 years of age.

2,351 **M. Vincente Pacaud**
M. was born in France in 1624.

2,358 **Antoine Dubois**. Father of Marguerite Dubois, No. 1179

2,360 **Pierre Piedalu**
He married Marie Dolebon.

2,361 **Marie Dolebon**
She married Pierre Piedalu.

2,362 **Louis Betrand Aupry**
Louis was born in 1674. He married Anne Dumas in Laprairie, Quebec Province, Canada, 16 September 1694. Louis died 29 March 1736 in Quebec Province, at 61 years of age.

2,363 **Anne Dumas**
She married Louis Betrand Aupry.

2,364 **Francois Bourassa**
Francois was born in France in 1659. He married Marie Lebert at Fort Chambly, Quebec Province, Canada, 4 July 1684. Francois died 9 May 1708 in Montreal, Canada, at 48 years of age.

2,365 **Marie Lebert**
Marie was born in 1666.

2,366 **Jacques Deneau**
Jacques was born in 1660. He married Marie Rivest in Montreal, Canada, in April 1690.

2,367 **Marie Rivest**
She married Jacques Deneau.

2,368 **Jean Hamel**
Jean was born in Avremesnil, Normandy, France abt 1634. He married Marie Auvray in Avremesnil abt 1656. Jean died 11 October 1674 in Sainte-Foy Quebec, Canada, at 40 years of age.

2,369 **Marie Auvray**
Marie was born in France in 1638. Marie died in 1716 in Sainte-Foy Quebec, Canada, at 78 years of age.

2,370 **Jean Levasseur**
Jean was born in Paris, France abt 1622. He married Marguerite Richard in Paris, abt 1645. Jean died 30 August 1686 in Quebec, Canada, at 64 years of age.

2,371 **Marguerite Richard**
She married Jean Levasseur.

4,096 **Matthew Whipple**
Matthew was born in Bocking, Essex Co., England abt 1590. He married Ann Hawkins in Bocking 7 May 1622. Matthew died 28 September 1647 in Ipswich, Essex Co., Mass., at 57 years of age. His body was interred in Ipswich.

4,097 **Ann Hawkins**
Ann was born in Bocking abt 1604. Ann died abt 1643 in Ipswich. Her body was interred in Ipswich.

4,102 **Rev. John Sams**. Father of Mary Sams, No. 2051.

4,104 **William Lamson**
William was born in Little Waldingfield, Suffolk Co., England abt 1620. He married Sarah Ayers in Ipswich, Essex Co., Mass., abt 1641. William died bef 11 February 1658/59 in Ipswich at approximately 38 years of age.

4,105 **Sarah Ayers**
Sarah was born abt 1620. She married William Lamson Sarah died aft 23 February 1662 at approximately 41 years of age.

4,106 Dea. Thomas Perkins
Thomas was born in Little Waldingfield, Suffolk Co., England in 1616. He married Phebe Gould in Topsfield, Essex Co., Mass., abt 1640. Thomas died 7 May 1686 in Topsfield at 69 years of age.

4,107 Phebe Gould
Phebe was born in England. She was christened in Hemel Hempsted, England, 20 September 1620. Phebe died aft 7 May 1686.

4,108 Edmund Faulkner
Edmund was born in King's Clear, Southampton Co., England. He married Dorothy Robinson in Salem, Essex Co., Mass., 4 February 1647. Edmund died 18 January 1686/87 in Andover, Essex Co., Mass. His body was interred in Andover.

4,109 Dorothy Robinson
Dorothy was born in England. Dorothy died 2 December 1668 in Andover. Her body was interred in Andover.

4,110 Francis Dane
Francis was born in England abt 1615. He was baptized in Bishops-Stortford, England, 20 November 1615. He married Elizabeth Ingalls. Francis died 17 February 1696/97 in Andover, Essex Co., Mass., at 81 years of age. His body was interred in Andover.

4,111 Elizabeth Ingalls.
Elizabeth died 9 June 1667 in Andover. Her body was interred in Andover.

4,112 Simon Crosby
Simon was born in Holme Upon Spalding Moor, York Co., England abt 1608. He married Anne Brigham in Holme Upon Spalding Moor 21 April 1634. Simon died September 1639 in Cambridge, Middlesex Co., Mass., at 31 years of age.

4,113 Anne Brigham
Anne was born in Holme Upon Spalding Moor abt 1606. She married Simon Crosby. Anne died 11 October 1675 in Braintree, Norfolk Co., at 69 years of age.

4,114 Deacon Richard Bracket
Richard was born in England in 1610. He married Alice (__). Richard died 5 March 1691/92 in Braintree, Norfolk Co., Mass., at 81 years of age.

4,115 Alice (__)
Alice was born abt 1614. Alice died in 1690 in Braintree, Norfolk Co., Mass., at 76 years of age.

4,120 **Sergt. Thomas Foster**
Thomas was born in England abt 1600. He married Elizabeth (__) in 1638. Thomas died 20 April 1684 in Billerica, Middlesex Co., Mass., at 83 years of age.

4,121 **Elizabeth (__)**
Elizabeth died 29 January 1694/95 in Billerica.

4,122 **John Gorton**
He married Alice (__).

4,123 **(Alice)__**
She married John Gorton.

4,620 **Mathurian Boilard**
He married Marie Des-Anges, de Lucon.

4,621 **Marie Des-Anges, de Lucon**
She married Mathurian Boilard.

4,622 **Jean Marandeau**. Father of Jeanne Marandeau, No. 2311.

4,624 **Guillaume Trahan**
Guillaume was born in Montreuil-Belloy, France abt 1622. He married Madeleine Brun abt 1666.

4,625 **Madeleine Brun**
Madeleine was born in LaChausee, Acadia, Canada 25 January 1645.

4,626 **Jacques Pellerin**
He married Marie Codbec.

4,627 **Marie Codbec**
Marie was born in Quebec Province, Canada.

4,632 **Jean Gaudreau**
Jean was born in 1652. He married Marie LeRoy in Montreal, Canada, 31 July 1679.

4,633 **Marie LeRoy**
She married Jean Gaudreau.

4,634 **Francois-Louis Tibault**.
Father of Madeline Tibault, No. 2317.

4,640 **Jean Demers**
Jean was born in St. Jacques, de Dieppe, France. Father of Andre Demers, No. 2320.

4,644 Mauthurin Jette
Mauthurin was born in France. He married de Barbe Hulin.

4,645 de Barbe Hulin
She married Mauthurin Jette.

4,646 Samuel Charles
He married Francoise Cochet.

4,647 Francoise Cochet
She married Samuel Charles.

4,652 Guillaume Vacher
He was baptized in Saint-Pierre d'Angers, Anjou, France, 24 February 1621. He married Guillemine Vinsonneau in Saint-Pierre d'Angers, abt 1643.

4,653 Guillemine Vinsonneau
She married Guillaume Vacher.

4,654 Gabriel Benoist dit Laforest
Gabriel was born in Saint-Prix, France abt 1636. He married Marie-Anne Guesdon in Cap-de-la-Madeleine, Quebec Province, Canada, aft. 16 October 1665. Gabriel died 27 October 1686 in Trois-Rivieres, Quebec Province, at 50 years of age.

4,655 Marie-Anne Guesdon
Marie-Anne was born in Magny, Normandy, France. She married Gabriel Benoist dit Laforest Her body was interred 22 March 1732 in Yamachiche, Quebec Province.

4,656 Jacques Lareau
Jacques was born in Eveche de Ronen, France in 1624. He married Anne Fosse in de St. Ronen, France in 1641.

4,657 Anne Fosse
Anne was born in France abt 1623.

4,660 Leonard Pilote
Leonard was born in de La Rochelle, France abt 1625. He married Denise Gauthier in de La Rochelle, 26 May 1644. His body was interred 3 December 1665 in Quebec, Canada.

4,661 Denise Gauthier
Denise was born in France. She married Leonard Pilote. Her body was interred 7 February 1695 in Quebec, Canada.

4,662 **Nicolas Gaudry**
Nicolas was born in 1621. He married Agnes Morin in Quebec Province, Canada, 17 November 1653. Nicolas died 22 June 1669 in Quebec at 47 years of age.

4,663 **Agnes Morin**
Agnes was born in Quebec, Canada 21 January 1641. She married Nicolas Gaudry. Agnes died 31 August 1687 in Quebec at 46 years of age.

4,664 **Gervais Le Normand**
He married Eleonore Janet de Dige.

4,665 **Eleonore Janet de Dige**
She married Gervais Le Normand.

4,666 **Thomas Le Labourer**
He married Marguerite Bardin.

4,667 **Marguerite Bardin**
She married Thomas Le Labourer.

4,668 **Mathieu Choret**
He married Sebastienne Veillon in 1647. Mathieu died 28 March 1664.

4,669 **Sebastienne Veillon**
Sebastienne was born in 1626. She married Mathieu Choret. Sebastienne died 21 December 1698 in Beauport, Quebec Province, Canada, at 72 years of age.

4,670 **Pierre Paradis**
Pierre was born in France in 1605. He married Barbe Guyon in France. Pierre died 29 January 1675 in Ste. Familla, Quebec Providence, Canada, at 69 years of age.

4,671 **Barbe Guyon**
She married Pierre Paradis in France.

4,672 **Macia (Mathias) Trudeau**
Macia was born in Marsilac in Poitou, France. He married Francoise Nau ou Nelle in St. Marguerite de la Rochelle, France, 3 November 1611.

4,673 **Francoise Nau ou Nelle**
She married Macia (Mathias) Trudeau.

4,676 **Pierre Barbier**
Pierre was born in France. He married Marie Claude Vizon in St. Drede Decize Nivernais, France.

4,677 **Marie Claude Vizon**
She married Pierre Barbier. Marie died 15 November 1693 in a la Poointe aux Trembles de M, France.

4,678 **d'Alexandre et de Louise**. Father of Catherine La Vau, No. 2339.

4,680 **Louis Loisel**
He married Jeanne LeTerrier.

4,681 **Jeanne LeTerrier**
She married Louis Loisel.

4,682 **Francois Charlot**
He married Barbe Girradeau.

4,683 **Barbe Girradeau**
She married Francois Charlot.

4,724 **Jean Aupry**. Father of Louis Betrand Aupry, No. 2362.

4,726 **Renee Dumas**
Renee was born in 1651. He married Marie DeLong in Quebec Province, Canada, 12 October 1671. Renee died 14 December 1687 in Laprairie, Quebec Province, at 36 years of age.

4,727 **Marie DeLong**
She married Renee Dumas.

4,728 **Francois Bourassa**
He married Marguerite Dugas.

4,729 **Marguerite Dugas**
She married Francois Bourassa.

4,730 **Francois Lebert**. Father of Marie Lebert, No. 2365.

4,732 **Martin Deneau**
He married Louise Therese in Montreal, Canada, 24 November 1659.

4,733 **Louise Therese**
She married Martin Deneau.

4,736 **Francois Hamel**
Francois was born in Avremesnil, Normandy, France. He married an unnamed person in Avremesnil. Francois died aft 3 September 1689 in Avremesnil.

4,740 **Noel Levasseur**
He married Genevieve Gange.

4,741 **Genevieve Gange**
She married Noel Levasseur.

4,742 **Nicolas Richard**
He married Jeanne Bonet.

4,743 **Jeanne Bonet**
She married Nicolas Richard.

8,192 **Matthew Whipple Sr.**
Matthew was born in England abt 1560. He married Joan (__) in Bocking, Essex Co., England, abt 1582. He made a will in Bocking 19 December 1616. Matthew died in January 1619 in Bocking at 58 years of age. His body was interred in Bocking, St. Mary's Churchyard Cemetery.

8,193 **Joan (__)**
Joan was born in England abt 1562. Joan died in May 1612 in Bocking at 49 years of age. Her body was interred 19 May 1612 in Bocking at St Mary's Churchyard Cemetery.

8,194 **John Hawkins Jr.**
John was born in Essex Co., England abt 1570. He married Mary Levitt in Essex Co., England, 21 February 1603-04. John died 1619 in Bocking, Essex Co., England, at 49 years of age. His body was interred in Bocking at St. Mary's Churchyard Cemetery.

8,195 **Mary Levitt**
Mary was born in Essex Co., England abt 1580. Mary died 3 May 1635 in Bocking at 54 years of age. Her body was interred in St. Mary's Churchyard Cemetery.

8,210 **John Ayers**
He married Hannah (__). John died 31 March 1657 in Haverhill, Essex Co., Mass.

8,211 **Hannah (__)**
She married John Ayers.

8,212 **John Perkins Sr.**
John was born in Little Waldingfield, Suffolk Co., Eng abt 1590. He married Judith Gater in Little Waldingfield abt 1613. John died bef 26 September 1654 in Ipswich, Essex Co., Mass., at approximately 64 years of age.

8,213 **Judith Gater**
She married John Perkins Sr.

8,214 **Zaccheus Gould**
He married Phebe Deacon.

8,215 **Phebe Deacon**
She married Zaccheus Gould.

8,220 **John Dane**
John was born in Little Berkhampstead, Herts Co., England abt 1590. He married Frances (__) in Bishops-Stortford, England, bef 1612. His body was interred 14 September 1658 in Roxbury, Suffolk Co., Mass.

8,221 **Frances (_)**
She married John Dane.

8,222 **Edmund Ingalls**. Father of Elizabeth Ingalls, No. 4111.

8,224 **Thomas Crosby**
Thomas was born in Bubwith, York Co., England abt 1575. He married Jane Sotheron in Holme Upon Spalding Moor, York Co., England, 19 October 1600. Thomas died 6 May 1661 in Rowley, Essex Co., Mass., at 85 years of age.

8,225 **Jane Sotheron**
She was christened in Holme Upon Spalding Moor 4 March 1582. Jane died in 1662 in Rowley.

8,226 **Thomas Brigham**
He was christened in Holme Upon Spalding Moor, York Co., England, 21 May 1576. He married Isabel Watson in Holme Upon Spalding Moor 4 February 1600/01. Thomas died bef March 1632/33 in Holme Upon Spalding Moor.

8,227 **Isabel Watson**
Isabel was born in Holme Upon Spalding Moor. She was baptized 21 February 1560/61. Her body was interred 25 June 1634 in Holme Upon Spalding Moor.

8,240 **Rev. Thomas Foster**
He married Abigail Wimes.

8,241 **Abigail Wimes**
She married Rev. Thomas Foster.

9,248 **Nicolas Trahan**
He married Renee Desloges.

9,249 **Renee Desloges**
She married Nicolas Trahan.

9,250 **Vincent Brun**
He married Renee Brode.

9,251 **Renee Brode**
She married Vincent Brun.

9,304 **Etienne Vacher**
Etienne was born in Saint-Pierre d'Angers, Anjou, France. He married Jeanne Fresneau in Saint-Pierre d'Angers 11 February 1613.

9,305 **Jeanne Fresneau**
She married Etienne Vacher.

9,308 **Claude Benoist**
He married Anne Fontaine.

9,309 **Anne Fontaine**
She married Claude Benoist.

9,310 **Thomas Guesdon**
He married Isabelle de Morin.

9,311 **Isabelle de Morin**
She married Thomas Guesdon.

9,324 **Jacques Gaudry**
Jacques was born in France. He married Charlotte Chevalier. Jacques died 22 June 1669.

9,325 **Charlotte Chevalier**
She married Jacques Gaudry.

9,326 **Noel Morin**
Noel was born in Brie-Comte-Robert, France abt 1609. He married Helene Desportes in Quebec, Canada, 9 January 1640. Noel died 10 January 1680 in Montmagny, Quebec Province, Canada, at 70 years of age.

9,327 **Helene Desportes**
She was baptized in Quebec, Canada, 16 July 1620. She married Noel Morin. Helene died in 1675 in Sainte-Genevieve, Quebec Province.

9,342 **Jean Guyon**.
Father of Barbe Guyon, No. 4671.

16,385 **Margaret (__)**.
Presumed mother of Matthew Whipple, Sr., No. 8192.

16,388 **John Hawkins**.
Father of John Hawkins, Jr., No. 8194.

16,448 **Anthony Crosby**
Anthony was born in Holme Upon Spalding Moor, York Co., England abt 1545. He married Alison (_) in Holme Upon Spalding Moor abt 1570. Anthony died in 1599 in Holme Upon Spalding Moor at 54 years of age.

16,449 **Alison (__)**
She married Anthony Crosby.

16,450 **William Sotheron**
William was born in Holme Upon Spalding Moor, York Co., England abt 1545. He married Constance Lambert in Holme Upon Spalding Moor 9 November 1578. William died in 1616 in Holme Upon Spalding Moor at 71 years of age.

16,451 **Constance Lambert**
Constance was born in Holme Upon Spalding Moor. She was baptized 12 January 1560/61. Constance died in 1622 in Holme Upon Spalding Moor, at 61 years of age.

16,452 **Thomas Brigham**
Thomas was born in Holme Upon Spalding Moor, York Co., England in 1550. He married Gillian (__) in Holme Upon Spalding Moor. He was was interred 8 November 1586 in Holme Upon Spalding Moor.

16,453 **Gillian (__)**
She married Thomas Brigham. Gillian died aft 3 May 1587 in England.

16,454 **James Watson**
James was born in England. Father of Isabel Watson, No. 8227

18,608 **Mathuern Vacher**
He married Perrine Chaveau in Saint-Pierre d'Angers, Anjou, France, abt 1585. Mathuern died abt 1613 in Saint-Pierre d'Angers.

18,609 **Perrine Chaveau**
She married Mathuern Vacher.

18,610 **Jean Fresneau**
He married Madeleine Gaultier.

18,611 **Madeleine Gaultier**
She married Jean Fresneau.

18,652 **Claude Morin**
He married Jeanne Moreau.

18,653 **Jeanne Moreau**
She married Claude Morin.

18,654 **Pierre Desportes**
He married Francoise Langlois.

18,655 **Francoise Langlois**
She married Pierre Desportes.

32,896 **Thomas Crosby**
Thomas was born in York Co., England abt 1510. He married Mrs. Jannett Bell in York Co., abt 1542. His body was interred 16 March 1558/59 in Holme Upon Spalding Moor, York Co.

32,897 **Mrs. Jannett Bell**
Jannett was born in England.

32,900 **John Sotheron**
John was born in Holme Upon Spalding Moor, York Co., England abt 1500. He married Phillippa (__) in Holme Upon Spalding Moor abt 1538. John died in 1547 in Holme Upon Spalding Moor at 47 years of age.

32,901 **Phillippa (__)**
She married (1) John Sotheron. Phillippa died in 1585 in Holme Upon Spalding Moor.

32,902 **William Lambert**.
Father of Constance Lambert, No. 16,451.

32,904 **Thomas Brigham**
Thomas was born in Holme Upon Spalding Moor, York Co., England abt 1525. He married Jennett Millington in Holme Upon Spalding Moor in 1550. His body was interred 6 February 1558/59 in Holme Upon Spalding Moor.

32,905 **Jennett Millington**
She married Thomas Brigham

65,800 **Robert Sotheron**
Robert was born in Holme Upon Spalding Moor, York Co., England abt 1470. He married Alice (__) in Holme Upon Spalding Moor. Robert died in 1524 in Holme Upon Spalding Moor at 54 years of age.

65,801 **Alice (__)**
She married Robert Sotheron.

65,804 **Richard Lambert**.
Father of William Lambert, No. 32,902.

65,808 Thomas Brigham
Thomas was born in Holme Upon Spalding Moor, York Co., England abt 1500. He married Elizabeth (__) in Holme Upon Spalding Moor. His body was interred 6 March 1569/70 in Holme Upon Spalding Moor

65,809 Elizabeth (__)
She married Thomas Brigham.

65,810 William Millington
William was born in Holme Upon Spalding Moor, York Co., England. He married Barbara (__) in Holme Upon Spalding Moor.

65,811 Barbara (__)
She married William Millington.

131,600 William Sotheron
William was born abt 1440. He married Alice (__) in Holme Upon Spalding Moor, York Co., England, abt 1467.

131,601 Alice (__)
She married William Sotheron.

131,620 Thomas Millington
Thomas was born in Holme Upon Spalding Moor, York Co., England. He married Agnes Sotheron in Holme Upon Spalding Moor.

131,621 Agnes Sotheron
Agnes was born in Holme Upon Spalding Moor.

APPENDIX SIX

HISTORICAL ORIGIN OF COATS OF ARMS

Arms came into use during the twelfth century (about 1164) and by the Third Crusade (1189) were recognized as art. Noblemen and knights adopted them for identity on the field of battle and in tournaments. Because the helmet was closed, the coat of arms was the only means of identification. The coat of arms was embroidered on a surcoat[1] worn over a coat of mail and was the symbol of leadership for the soldiers. Today we "follow the flag."

Richard III incorporated his heralds into the College of Arms in 1484 which still has jurisdiction over arms registered in England, Wales, and Northern Ireland and decides who may rightfully display which arms. The Court of the Lord Lyon, King of Arms, has the same task in Scotland. The Chief Herald of Ireland has jurisdiction in the Republic of Ireland. There were few rules of usage but there was agreement that arms belonged to one individual who had a property right in them.

Arms once granted to someone with the Whipple surname do not subsequently belong to everyone with that name. They may be inherited by the oldest male heir of the one first granted the arms. Younger sons can apply for arms that are similar to but different from the heir's arms.

The number of Whipples – or any other surname – not granted arms is far greater than the few who were granted. For example, the population of the United Kingdom was 10.5 million in 1801 when the combined number of peers (duke, marquess, earl, viscount), baronets, and knights equaled 0.0000857 percent of the population – less than one thousandth of one percent.[2] Descendants of armigerous Britons who emigrated to the New World are comparatively fewer. Thus few Americans are descended from individuals who were granted arms. Also, over half of the thousands of arms granted are probably extinct. Those who inherited them had no sons thus no one can legiti-

mately display these arms. Of 951 baronetcies granted between 1611 and 1711 60 percent were extinct by 1770.[3]

In England Heralds use genealogical evidence to learn whether a person who wishes to display a particular coat of arms has a right to do so. The procedure is to apply to the English College of Heralds. The applicant must trace his ancestry through the male line to an individual who displayed them legitimately. If the applicant proves such descent, he may display them.

Who, if anyone, is entitled to use the Whipple Coat of Arms? The arms are documented in *Burke's General Armory*[4] for a family from County Norfolk, England. Burke says the arms are authentic for the family who spelled its name both Whipple and Whipley. He gives no other data.

Oswald Barron, author of *Hertfordshire Families*,[5] wrote he "put away all question of the right of individuals to armorial bearings," calling them "no true proof of nobility." He said he was content "to record the arms which have been in use by the families whose names are attached to them." Charles A. H. Franklin holds an opposite view. His position, as expressed in *The Bearing of Coat-Armor by Ladies,* is that anyone displaying arms must be authorized by heraldic officers in England, Scotland, Ireland, or Wales.[6]

Some American writers have recognized the arms for all of the Whipples of the country. This writer has not done any research to prove who is entitled to use the arms but uses them on personal stationery and crystal goblets. He has read that some early Whipple families had bookplates, silver, etc. and inscriptions on tombstones that had arms. However, the only object he has seen with the Whipple arms is a teapot dating to 1750.[7]

The Whipple arms shown here were drawn by an heraldic artist associated with Halberts of Bath, Ohio. Supposedly, Halberts' rendering came from ancient heraldic archives.

WHIPPLE COAT OF ARMS

Arms (shield): Sable, on a chevron between three swans' heads erased argent, as many crescents of the field.[8]

Crest: A swan's head as in the arms.

Colors: The shield is black, the chevron silver, swans' heads silver. The crescents are black, the Helmet steel color, the mantlings and wreath black and silver. Colors are representative of the personal characteristics of the original bearer, and are granted only upon merit. Sable, the fur lining of royal robes, signifies constancy and nobility; silver, sincerity and peace.

The chevron, "likened unto the roof of a house," is the emblem of those who protect the defenseless, and offer hospitality. It was granted to

those who built churches and fortresses. The chevron is of nine "Honorable Ordinaries" which are straight-sided figures, one-third the width of the shield, and were the first symbols used to identify men encased in armor. Crescents come from Crusader days and denote crusader ancestry.

A second Whipple coat of arms features an ermine elephant as a crest. Also granted in County Norfolk, its shield is entirely different, suggesting the elephant crest should never be used with the swans' head and crescents.

CHARACTERISTICS OF HERALDRY AND CRESTS

In heraldry, the shape of the shield has little significance today except that the arms of a woman are in a lozenge.[9] The eleventh century kite shaped shield[10] gave way in time to a shield nearly triangular, and this gradually widened in the middle.

Often a helmet is above the shield[11]—side view for untitled people as in the Whipple Coat of Arms. On top of the helmet is a wreath or skein of twisted silk of the chief color and metal of the arms, supporting a crest.

Mantling may serve as a background for the shield, but its form has no significance as to dignity or rank. Supporters on either side of the shield are rarely granted to untitled people.

A motto[12] may be added at the choice of the owner of the arms.

MEANING OF SOME TERMS IN A CREST

(Some are not used in the Whipple crest)

Annulet: A ring.
Argent: Silver. Often indicated by white.
Base: Lower part of the shield.
Bordure: The outer fifth of the shield. A border.
Chevron: A bend and a bend sinister springing from the lower sides and meeting.
Chief: The top third of the shield; cut off horizontally by a straight or other of the partition lines used in heraldry.
Crescent: A crescent moon with horns up; turned toward the chief of the shield. In cadency for the second son.[13]
Crest: A device above the helmet and shield. Used by men only.
Dexter: The side of the shield near the right arm as worn, or the left side as seen by the spectator.
Fleur-de-lis: The flower of the lily. The heraldic lily differs from that of the garden in having three leaves instead of five.
Helmet: An esquire's or gentlemen's helmet is of steel, faces the dexter,

and has the visor closed.

Mantling: Ornamental foliage work for the adorning of helmet and shield in painting armorial bearings.

Martlet, or merlion: A fabulous bird, of constant adoption in armorials, shaped like a martin or swallow; and always drawn without legs, with short tufts of feathers instead, divided into two parts, somewhat like an erasure; and forming, as it were, thighs. The distinctive mark of the fourth son.

Mullet: The rowel[14] of a spur; English heralds make it of five straight points.

Quatrefoil: A four-leaved grass.

Sable: Black. Shown by cross hatched vertical and horizontal lines; as in the Whipple shield.

Sinister: The side of a shield at the right hand of the observer, but the left as worn by the soldier.

Supporters: Figures supporting the shield on either side. Used by peers and knights, chiefs of clans, and by special grant.

ENDNOTES, APPENDIX SIX

1 Surcoat—A loose, short cloak worn over armor.

2. John Cannon, *Aristocratic Century: The Peerage of Eighteenth Century England.* Cambridge University Press, 1983, 33.

3. E. Kimber and R. Johnson, *The Baronetage of England. . .Illustrated with their Coat of Arms,* three volumes. London: Woodfall, Fuller, et al., 1771. Vol. 3.

4. Sir Bernard Burke, *The General Armory of England, Scotland, Ireland, and Wales; Comprising A Registry of Armorial Bearings From the Earliest to the Present Time*, Harrison and Sons. (London, 1884). p. 1100.

5. Oswald Baron, author of *Hertfordshire Families*, (London, 1907) and an authority on English Coats of Arms.

6. Charles A. H. Frankline, author of *The Bearing of Coat-Armor by Ladies*, Genealogical Publishing Company, (Baltimore, Reprint 1973).

7. Whipple coat of arms teapot—In possession of the Cleveland (Ohio) Museum of Art. On April 5, 1920, a Mr. J. H. Wade gave the museum this teapot. It was wrought about 1750 by Jacob Hurd (1702-1758) of Boston and has the arms of the Whipple family engraved on one side of its body. This teapot measures 5 3/4 inches in height and has a globular body 5 inches in diameter, flattened at the top, where the circular cover "surmounted by a sturdy finial and richly engraved with conventionalized designs of much delicacy"is hinged to the body with such nicety" that it still makes a tight closure. The shoulder surrounding the cover is similarly engraved. The silver handle has two ivory insulators and a "graceful spout forms a perfect balance with the handle." The body rests on a simple molded base. This teapot dates from the middle 1700s when the cost of tea was prohibitive and was only served by the wealthy. Some-

one from the museum identified only as L.P. said, "on account of its rarity and peculiarly well-balanced graceful form and excellence of workmanship" the Whipple teapot "may be considered, with the possible exception of the cup made by George Hanners, the most important piece in the collection." *The Bulletin of The Cleveland Museum of Art* No. 7, July 1920.

8. The Whipple arms translated into non-Heraldic terms: A black (sable) shield, on which is charged a silver (argent), chevron. The chevron is placed between three silver swans' heads, as torn violently from the body (erased); and on the chevron, three (as many as swans' heads) crescents, the same color as the field, or shield (black).
9. Lozenge—a plane figure with four equal sides and two obtuse angles.
10. Kite - shaped shield—As seen in Bayeux Tapestry in the museum of Bayeux in northwest France, picturing incidents of the Norman conquest and events leading up to it.
11. The helmet is not always present.
12. Family mottos are believed to have originated as battle cries in medieval times. A motto was not recorded with this Whipple Coat of Arms. The motto attributed to Henri de V. Hipple was "Fidele et Brave." See Chapter 1, page 1.
13. The relative status of younger sons. Marks of Cadence in heraldry are bearings used to distinguish the shields of the second son, the third son, etc. In modern times it has been ordained that the eldest son should wear a label during the lifetime of his father, or until he inherits the paternal shield, without Marks of Cadence; the second son a crescent, the third, a mullet, the fourth, a martlet, the fifth an annulet, the sixth a fleur-de-lis, the seventh a rose, the eighth a cross moline, the ninth a double quatrefoil. The Mark of Cadence may become a permanent part of the shield if the younger son acquires estates of his own and builds up a family of consequence; thus the bordure, which is originally a Mark of Cadence, has often become a permanent bearing, and the shield which contains it bears new Marks of Cadence when borne by the sons of its possessor.
14. A small revolving wheel with sharp projecting points, forming the end of a spur.

APPENDIX SEVEN

DATES, NAMES, AND RELATIONSHIPS

Key elements of genealogical identification include dates, names, and relationships. In Appendix 1 beginning on p. is a list of the various spellings of Whipple found by professional English genealogists.

The number of days of the respective months, 30 days in June, 31 in July, etc., was set by Augustus Caesar[1] in 8 B.C. In 44 B.C., the month known as Quintilis (fifth) was changed to Julius (July) to honor Julius Caesar who adopted the Julian Calendar in 46 B.C. In 321 A.D., the Roman Empire adopted the seven day week. Previously, each month had been divided into market-day intervals of seven or eight days each. A 30-day month would have two seven and two eight day weeks. The year had 45 intervals.

The Julian Calendar miscalculated leap year, causing Pope Gregory XIII in 1582 to devise the leap year formula.[2] His calendar, known as the Gregorian Calendar, made an adjustment of 10 days covering the period 325 A.D.[3] to 1582. These 1257 years resulted in a correction of 9.8 days so the Pope decreed that the day following October 4, 1582 would be October 15. He also restored January 1 as the first day and December 31 as the last day of the year. Previously, some countries designated March 1, others including England, March 25, as the first day of the new year. While most Catholic countries adopted the new calendar, the English, under Queen Elizabeth, rejected the "popish" proposal and it wasn't until 1751 that Parliament passed an Act to adopt it effective in 1752. By this time, the English Calendar was 11 days ahead of sun time so the Act provided that September 2, 1752 would be followed by September 14.

DOUBLE DATING

It is obvious from writings of the time that the dual calendar caused confusion. The date February 27, 1698 was written in the following ways:

1. 27 February 1698.
2. 27 February 1699.
3. 27th 12th mo. 1698.
4. 27 February 1698/9.

Either of the first two dates (out of context) is ambiguous since the

reader does not know whether the date was written strictly according to the formal English Calendar[4] or was "clarified" by someone to conform with the January to December year.[5] Example No. 3 was frequently used in the seventeenth and eighteenth centuries and is still ambiguous. Number 4, known as "double-dating," is clear, unambiguous, and should be used whenever possible.[6]

Since original documents have not been available in all instances for this book, the author cannot guarantee that information submitted by the many contributors has not been "clarified." If information has been clarified, thus creating errors, he wants to be on record as to how the errors occurred.

In America, those living in 1752 corrected their birth dates. George Washington is an example. Under the Julian Calendar, his birth was February 11, 1731-32. The 1752 calendar change made him 11 days older so he re-certified his birth date as February 22 1732, the date he would have been born had the New Style calendar been in effect in 1732. Johni Cerni and Arlene Eakle[7] point out that while it was (and is) incorrect to change dates prior to September 1752 into New Style, many people then living did, requiring genealogists to make allowances. They cite an example of a birth before the calendar change (May 25, 1743) with the town recording Old Style. In 1765, the parents bought a Bible and entered family records in New Style, showing the child being born June 5, 1743. Both are correct but the former should be used unless the words "New Style" are added to the latter to indicate it is a "rectified" date.[8]

In another example, Cerni and Eakle noted that a man died after 1752 with his age at death stated exactly in years, months, and days. If the date of birth (figured from the age at death) is New Style, it should be 11 days later than the recorded Old Style date.

When the number of the month was stated in any record prior to 1752, the genealogist should reckon March as the first month and February as the twelfth. When the record states John Jones was born on the 10th of the 5th month 1710, this must be Old Style and means he was born in July. After 1752, July became the seventh month but this does not alter the fact he was born in July.

Before 1700 we can usually assume the year began March 25 and this is true of most church registers until 1752. But after 1700, the use of January 1 was gradually coming into favor, especially in legal documents and town records. Careful recorders use a double date to eliminate confusion or uncertainty. George Washington was born February 11, 1731-32, which means the year was still 1731 if the new year was reckoned as not beginning until March 25 (Old Style) but the year was already 1732 if it had begun January 1 (New Style). Genealogists should always copy the double

date when it is given, for the single date is an uncertain one.

Remember this confusion of year dates before 1752 applies only to dates between January 1 and March 24 since all other dates belong to the same year regardless of when New Year's Day was celebrated. It is also helpful to remember that for more than a century after arriving in New England, Puritans identified the months by their numbers, since many of their names originated in paganism. They were determined to avoid all memory of heathenish names. Thus, March was known as 1. Rhymes helped people remember the number of days in each month.[9] Richard Grafton published an *Abridgement of the Chronicles of Englande* in 1590 which included "A rule to knowe how many dayes euery moneth in the yeare hath":

Thirty days hath Nouember,
Aprill, June, and September,
February hath xxviii alone,
And all the rest have xxxi.

The play, "The Returne from Parnassus," published in London in 1606, contained the following:

Thirty days hath September,
April, June, and November,
February eight-and-twenty all alone,
Unless that leap year doth combine,
And give to February twenty-nine.

An early edition of *Mother Goose's Jingles* said it like this:
Thirty days hath September,
April, June, and November;
All the rest have thirty-one;
Unless that leap year doth combine,
And give to February twenty-nine.

Frequently, dates in relation to religious feasts and festivals are found in older records. Examples include Epiphany, three weeks after Trinity, two days after Rosh Hashanah. It is critical that researchers remember that Christian feast days are both fixed and moveable and sometimes are referred to by their Latin designations. The moveable dates are based on an astronomical observation or in reference to other moveable dates. Most are based on Easter so the key to translating a liturgical date into a calendar date is to determine the precise date of Easter in the year in questions.

Carlton Smith lists fixed and moveable feast days, Jewish feast and festival days with both their English and Latin spelling, and the dates when various countries adopted the Gregorian calendar.[10]

Regnal dating is prevalent in old England for most documents prior to 1660. A regnal date signifies the year of a sovereign's reign such as tenth year in the reign of Henry VIII. To translate a regnal date into an exact calendar year, the date the monarch's coronation must be known. All regnal years are 365/366 days long except the last one which depends on the date of death of the monarch. Example: the first year of Henry VIII began April 22, 1509 and ended 28 Jan. 1547 when Edward VI became king.[11]

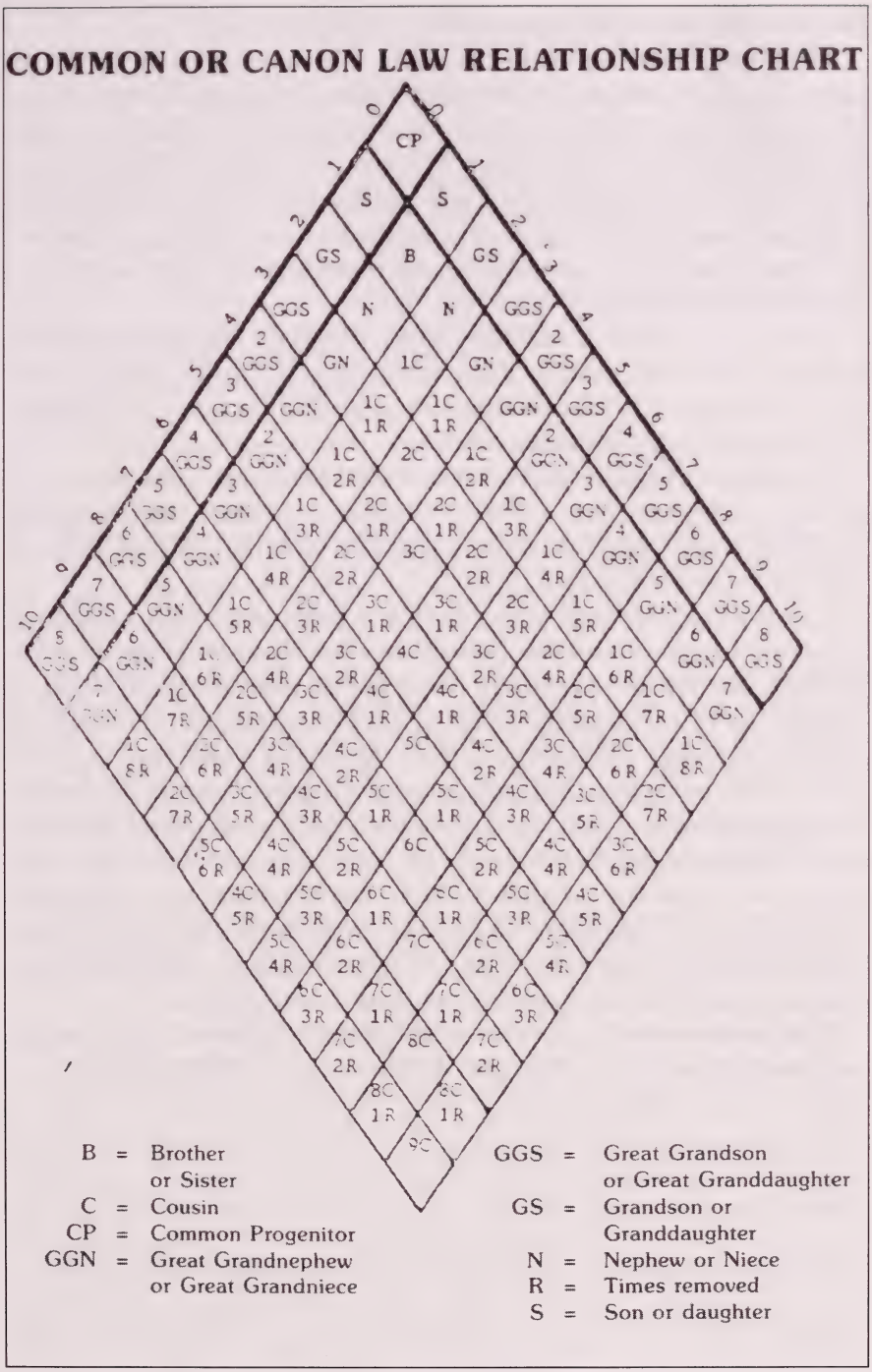
SURNAMES AND MIDDLE NAMES

Surnames were not used in England until the thirteenth century because it was possible to identify people by their given name. Population growth finally made surnames a necessity but it was nearly two centuries before their use became a common practice. When choosing surnames, people usually used places, occupations, characteristics, and relationships. In the seventeenth century people began using middle names and their use became standard by the beginning of the twentieth century. In those early times it was common for the middle name of all children to be their mother's maiden name. Halberts say the surname Whipple is locational in origin and associate it with the English, meaning "one who came from Whimple (white stream) in Devonshire."

LEVELS OF COUSIN RELATIONSHIPS

Genealogy addresses both direct ancestors and collateral relatives. A direct ancestor is someone on your lineage chart, namely your father, mother, grandparents, great grandparents, etc. A collateral relative is not on the chart but appears on family group records as brothers and sisters of your direct ancestors and the descendants of your aunts and uncles. Most people are curious about the nearer degrees of cousinhood in their families. In cases where someone dies without a will, cousinship can be the basis for a claim on the estate.

The child of your aunt or uncle is your first cousin. But that cousin's child is not your second cousin, but your first cousin once removed. Your second cousin is the grandchild of your great aunt or uncle. For other cousins, follow the lines on the accompanying chart, noting the relationship both up and down from where you are on the family tree. Make your own cousin chart by inserting relatives' names in the boxes. For readers



who go back further, refer to the diamond-shaped chart on the following page. The chart was prepared for *The How Book For Genealogists*[12] and shows the relationship between a common progenitor's (ancestor) descen-

dants through the tenth generation.

Using this chart, the author was able to determine he is the fourth cousin six times removed of Brigadier General William Whipple, New Hampshire signer of the Declaration of Independence, the fifth cousin three times removed of Brigadier General Amiel Weeks Whipple, the Civil War General killed at the Battle of Chancelorsville, the sixth cousin four times removed of Brigham Young, the Mormon leader, and the seventh cousin one time removed of Dr. George Hoyt Whipple, 1934 Nobel prize winner in medicine.

To use the chart it is necessary to identify the most recent common ancestor, "CP," both persons share, remembering that "S" refers to both son and daughter, "B" for brother and sister, "N" for niece and nephew, "C" for cousin, and "R" for removed.

The degree of cousin-hood is determined by counting the number of generations between you and the common progenitor and subtracting one. Thus if two people are eight generations from the common progenitor, they are seventh cousins.

Cousins are "removed" when there is a difference in the number of generations between the two persons and the common progenitor. For example, the common progenitor of the author and William Whipple of Declaration of Independence fame is Matthew Whipple, the Elder, of Bocking, England. The author is from the line of Matthew of Ipswich while the Signer is from John of Ipswich, Matthew's brother. The author is 11 generations removed, the Signer five. No. 5 on the chart intersects with No. 10 showing fourth cousin five times removed. Since the chart ends at No. 10 and the author is No. 11, he has to add one more "removed" to arrive at the relationship. When the steps down from the common progenitor are the same, there are no times removed. Never count the common ancestor when figuring steps down to the subject.

Permission to use the copyrighted Relationship Chart on the following page was granted by The Everton Publishers, Inc. of Nibley, Utah.

1. Augustus Caesar—Emperor of the Roman world.
2. Pope Gregory XIII—His formula determined that leap year occurs in each year divisible evenly by four, except those years evenly divisible by 100. However, he made years evenly divisible by 400 leap years notwithstanding they are divisible by 100. This formula omits a leap year every 133 years, and the difference between this 133 years (based on 365 days, 6 hours, which over-corrects leap year by 11 minutes, 14 seconds) and the theoretically almost exact 128 years (length of the solar year is 365 days, 5 hours, 48 minutes, 46 seconds) will not catch up with us for about 3,000 years. At that time an ad hoc correction of one day will have to be made.
3. When the vernal equinox fell on March 21.
4. Example No. 1 of double dating.
5. Example No. 2 of double dating.
6. Leo H. Garman, "Genealogists and the Gregorian Calendar," *Register*, Vol. VI, No. 2, 61-62. Also see C. C. Chaney, *Handbook of Dates for Students of English History*. (London, 1978).
7. Authors of a variety of genealogical resources including: *Ancestry's Guide to Research: Case Studies in American Genealogy*, *The Library: A Guide to the LDS Family History Library*, *The Source: A Guide Book of American Genealogy*, etc.
8. Example: a person's grave stone stated he died 29 April 1776, aged 76 years and 13 days. Subtracting the age gives us 16 April 1700 as his birth date but to get the Old Style date we must subtract 11 more days. His birth was not re-corded but he was baptized 14 April 1700, two days before his New Style birth date. After subtracting 11 days, we find his Old Style birth date to be 5 April, which was nine days before he was baptized. Obviously he could not have been born two days after baptism, the result we get if we fail to make allowance for the calendar change.
9. "The Computation of Time". *The Essex Antiquarian*. Vol. 4, No. 5, May 1900, 65-68.
10. *Heritage Quest Magazine*, Issue #38. Box 40, Orting, Wash. 98360-0040. Jan/Feb 1992, 21-25.
11. Regnal years in England beginning with Henry VI were September 1, 1422 to March 4, 1461; Edward IV, March 4, 1461 to April 9, 1483; Edward V, April 9, 1483 to June 25 1483; Richard III, June 26 1483 to August 22, 1485; Henry VII, August 22, 1485 to April 21, 1509; Henry VIII, April 22, 1509 to January 28, 1547; Edward VI, January 28 1547 to July 6, 1553; Mary, July 6 1553; Philip and Mary, July 25, 1554 to November 17, 1558; Elizabeth I, November 17, 1558 to March 24, 1603; James I, March 24 1603 to March 27, 1625; Charles I, March 27, 1625 to January 30, 1649; Interregnum, January 30, 1649 to May 29, 1660; Charles II, May 29, 1660 to February 6, 1685; James II, February 6 1685 to December 11, 1688; William and Mary, February 13, 1689 to December 27, 1694; William III, December 28, 1694 to March 8, 1702; Anne, March 8, 1702 to August 1, 1714; George I, August 1, 1714 to June 11, 1727; George II, June 11, 1727 to October 25, 1760; George III, October 25, 1760 to January 21, 1820.
12. The Everton Publishers, Inc., Logan, Utah, 1986. p. 33-34 in the Eighth edition.

APPENDIX EIGHT

ELDER JOHN V. CAPT. JOHN WHIPPLE
WHICH ONE IS YOUR ANCESTOR?

Confused? If so, you've got a lot of company. Beginning Whipple researchers usually are unaware that two John Whipples settled in New England in the 1630s. As their research progresses, they unknowingly record information on both until finally it becomes apparent they are two different men. The goal of this Appendix is to define the two John Whipples and save future researchers time by directing them to the path that leads to their ancestor.

Charles Edward Banks, author of *Planters of the Commonwealth,* included a John and a Matthew Whipple of Bocking, Essex Co., England in the list of passengers arriving in Boston 16 September 1632 on the *Lyon* and settled in Dorchester, Massachusetts. Winifred Ashwell, in *Essex and the Lyon: the People Who Sailed in Her to New England in 1632 and the Land to Which They Went,* and a document, "The American Connection with Braintree District," published by the Braintree District of Braintree, Essex Co. repeats this information.

The facts are that a John Whipple was a passenger, Matthew Whipple was not. Extensive genealogical research in England has failed to find John's parents or his place of birth. Research confirms Matthew's place of birth as Bocking and identifies his father as Matthew, a Clothier of Bocking. Research also shows that Matthew, along with his younger brother, John, who eventually became known as "Elder" John, immigrated in 1638 and settled in Ipswich, Essex Co., Massachusetts. Adding to the confusion is the fact that "Elder" John's only son to survive to adulthood was also known as Capt. John Whipple.

What follows are brief biographies of both John Whipples who settled in the Bay Colony in the 1630s. They should help future Whipple researchers follow the right path to their ancestor.

John[1] Whipple (Matthew[A]) baptized 29 August 1596 in Bocking, Essex County, England; died 30 June 1669 in Ipswich, Essex County, Massachusetts. He married (1) **Susanna Clarke** 28 August 1621 at St. Andrew by the Wardrobe, London. Daughter of Stephen and Elizabeth (__) Clark, Susanna was baptized 11 January 1595/96 at Theydon Garnon, Essex and died after 13 July 1661 in Ipswich.[1] (2) the widow **Janet (Jennet) Dickinson** after 1662 at Ipswich.[2] A Clothier, John emigrated in 1638. He farmed and engaged in several business ventures, was an eight term Delegate to the General Court, Ipswich Clerk of Writs for several terms, Deacon, and Ruling Elder of the Ipswich Church.

CHILDREN OF JOHN AND SUSANNA WHIPPLE:

i.	*Susanna, born 1 July 1622; married Lionel Worth. She had five living children.*
ii.	*John, born 11 January 1623-24; buried 4 August 1624.*
iii.	*John (Captain), born 21 December 1625; died 10 August 1683. Married (1) Martha Reynor, (2) Elizabeth (Coggewell) Paine. He had six children including three sons.*
iv.	*Elizabeth, born 1 November 1627; died 15 December 1648 without issue. Married Anthony Potter.*
v.	*Matthew, born 7 October 1628; died 12 October 1634.*
vi.	*William, born in October 1631; died 4 June 1641.*
vii.	*Anne, born 2 June 1633; died 4 May 1634.*
viii.	*Mary, born 20 February 1634; died 2 June 1720. Married Simon Stone. They had 12 children, two of whom died at an early age.*
ix.	*Judith, born August 1636; died 27 June 1637.*
x.	*Matthew, born 17 February 1637-38; died 30 March 1637-38.*
xi.	*Sarah, born 3 November 1641; died 23 July 1681. Married Joseph Goodhue. They had 9 children, one of whom died in child birth.*

Beginning with John, the Whipples played a major role in the development of New England. They contributed to all aspects of early American life on the local and national level, serving in government, church, education, and the military. When a job was to be done or a controversial issue to be tackled, the Whipples were usually in the vanguard. It is a remarkable family that through subsequent generations continues to serve community, church, and state.

The first reference in Ipswich records to the Whipple brothers was September 1, 1638[3] when the seven Ipswich Selectmen granted Matthew, the older brother, "six acres of planting ground near the river" and John "six acres of planting ground next his brother on this side the swamp." They were jointly granted "two hundred acres" plus "meadow not to exceed forty five acres . . . to begin at Mr. Woodmansee's farm running toward Mr. Hubbard's farm." The acreage was to be "divided as they shall agree."[4]

Though not university trained, because of his judicious nature and religious bent, John was destined to be a leader, holding significant power over the lives of his townsmen.[5] He was called on to lay out the land of new settlers, arrange for the exchange of land between citizens and the town, determine boundaries of lots granted by the town, construct fences, oversee the building of the cart bridge, etc.[6] He eventually played a major role in the religious life of the community, becoming a Deacon in 1642 and a Ruling Elder in 1658. He associated with the Winthrops, Dudleys, Saltonstalls, Bradstreets, Denisons, Paines, Dodges, Lummuses, Wards, Symonds, Nortons, Hubbards all leaders in Massachusetts church, political, and social life.

His first town assignment was keeping a herd of 86 young cattle from April 20, 1639 until the end of harvest.[7] Other assignments came quickly. On January 11, 1640-41, he and Matthew were named to the Committee for "furthering trade amongst us." The Committee was to arrange for the "putting up the buoys, beacons, and providing salt, cotton, sewing of hemp seed, flax seed, and card wyer canes."[8] He received a second assignment the same day: to serve on the Committee to advance fishing.[9]

He was elected Selectman[10] February 10, 1640-41 for a term of six months. He first served on the Grand Jury in 1641 and repeated that assignment on several occasions[11] and on June 14, 1642 was appointed Clerk of Writs for the Ipswich Quarterly Sessions Court.[12]

As Clerk of Writs, he was especially busy just prior to the first, fourth, seventh, and ninth months of the year. The Ipswich Court met the last Tuesday of the first and seventh months; Salem the last Tuesday of the fourth and ninth months. One of the more interesting Writs was issued September 4, 1653 to Edmon (Edmond) Marshall charged with defaming the wives of William Vincen (Vinset) and William Evans. Marshall called the women witches.[13] The most common Writs were attachments of house and grounds, orchards, goods, cows, ground and garden, and disputes over accounts.

BECOMES A FREEMAN AND ELECTED TO THE GENERAL COURT

John was made a freeman May 13, 1640 and was immediately elected[14] to the first of his eight terms[15] as Deputy[16] to the General Court.[17] Thomas Dudley was elected Governor that year, defeating the incumbent, John Winthrop.[18] Richard Bellingham was elected Deputy Governor and Israel Stoughton of Dorchester an Assistant. The Court convened annually in Boston for four short periods requiring Deputies to be away from work and family during both the planting and harvesting season. The Whipple-Stoughton conversation upon first meeting would have been interesting as Stoughton certainly would have inquired about a possible relationship with young John Whipple who was indentured to Stoughton in 1632.[19]

During this time, Susanna had to adjust to life in a rough frontier village. Lonely nights with young children must have been particularly hard because of the ever present threat of wolves and Indians. Anxiety for John's safety and fears for her own illness and exhaustion must have filled her mind and she must have pined for the graciousness and comfort of Old England. When John was home, she would have joined him in receiving and entertaining his guests.

During his eight terms, John had to take a position on many difficult issues with the three most controversial being formation of an interim governing committee,[20] the Magisterial veto,[21] and the codification of Massachusetts law.[22] Each was a round in an ongoing fight.

The Colony began registering land ownership as early as 1634 and in John's first term, the General Court passed legislation that gave priority to recorded grants. Under this law, individuals who failed to record their purchases could lose their land to any later purchaser if the second purchaser recorded his deed first and did not know of the earlier sale. Soon thereafter the law was amended requiring the grantor's signature be witnessed and acknowledged by a government official or notary public.[23] These Massachusetts precedents became colonial law except in the southern colonies.[24]

John's first legislative session opened with controversy when the Deputies chose Rev. Nathaniel Ward of Ipswich to preach the election sermon. Outgoing Governor Winthrop and the Magistrates objected since Ward was no longer a practicing pastor. The Deputies prevailed. On Ward's urging, a bill was introduced to prohibit Magistrates from reviewing cases in advance of public hearings. Deputies supported the proposal, Magistrates opposed.[25]

Richard Bellingham was elected Governor in May 1641, John's second term. This was probably the most important of his eight terms. After three years of review by the freemen in all towns, Nathaniel Ward's *Body of Liberties* was adopted as the law of the Commonwealth in 1641. With the exception of the section on "Capital Laws," the section listing crimes punishable by death and taken from the Old Testament, provisions extending dower rights of women and abolishing pure primogeniture were radically different from English law. It included strict rules against battering wives or servants, rules unheard of elsewhere. Laws protecting "Brute Creatures" were the first extensive animal protection laws ever. There was no reference to Crown, the Charter, or to English authority. It was a totally new initiative in lawmaking. John and his fellow Deputies were both visionary and radical: visionary in guaranteeing human dignity and radical for going beyond English precedence. All Americans are in their debt for this bold action.

A memorable constitutional change—the Bicameral Legislature—evolved from this Session. The catalyst was Capt. Robert Keayne, an unpopular, well-to-do, highly connected merchant from Boston. After the Elders cleared Keayne of extorting a pig from Goody Sherman, a poor Boston widow, she appealed to the Inferior Court. Keayne won again and was awarded £3 costs and £20 damages. A witnesses later admitted he lied to the Inferior Court so the General Court agreed to hear the case. John and his fellow Legislators spent the best part of seven days examining witnesses and debating the case but failed to reach the required majority decision by both Deputies and Magistrates.[26]

Based on Keayne's reputation—previously censored by both the Court and his Church—the public sided with Sherman. When she lost in the Legislature, many freemen spoke "unreverently of the Court, especially the Magistrates" feeling their "negative voice had hindered the course of justice and that Magistrates must be put out so the power of the negative voice might be taken away."[27] Two years of political maneuvering followed before the Legislators agreed to divide the General Court into two separate Houses, each possessing veto power over decisions of the other.[28]

Apparently the Clerk of Writs job was so demanding John didn't return to the General Court until May 1646 when he and Mr. William Hubbard were elected to represent Ipswich.[29] Winthrop was Governor that year, Dudley Deputy Governor. This was John's first bicameral Session and he undoubtedly welcomed the opportunity to debate issues free from the Magistrate's intimidating presence. Deputies now recognized their importance in Bay politics and valued themselves as more than free men whose only official responsibility was carrying town grievances to the

General Court; they had developed a pride in their independent role within the Legislature.[30]

Religion[31] and a need for a body of laws to protect all citizens dominated the Session. Some Elders asked the Court to authorize a Synod[32] to be held at the end of summer. The Magistrates agreed but the Deputies believed civil authorities should not require churches to send messengers to it. Deputies argued that Christ had not given them that power or authorized a Synod to agree on a uniform practice and compel all churches to conform. The Magistrates insisted they had power to compel advice in ecclesiastical matters, either of doctrine or discipline; that they were bound by God to maintain the churches in purity and truth; that the Synod would only offer counsel from the word of God with the Court at liberty to authorize or ignore its actions. The debate resulted in an amended bill allowing a Synod which could recommend but not command the churches to send Representatives.[33]

The Grand Remonstrance was a major issue in the 1646 session. John and his colleagues debated the merits of a petition by Robert Child and six other non-freemen claiming the Colony's government was arbitrary and failed to follow the laws of England as required by the Charter. They denied the government's right to require church attendance, to levy taxes to support Puritan ministers, and to restrict freemanship—which included the right to vote and hold office—to church members. They sought a body of laws to replace the incomplete Body of Liberties, demanded all members of the Church of England be admitted to communion, and threatened to appeal to Parliament if their demands were rejected. Granting their demands they said would result in "piety quickened, discontents allayed, business improved, taxes lightened."[34]

Because the Remonstrance was presented near the end of the Session, formal consideration was postponed to the autumn Session. In the interim, Remonstrance backers generated widespread support, especially among the younger generation, causing Ipswich Magistrate Samuel Symonds to seek Winthrop's support to offset the proponents. Ministers denounced the petitioners as sons of Levi,[35] sons of Belial,[36] and subverters of church and state. Robert Child, leader of the petitioners, was labeled a Jesuit because he had once visited Rome.

When the Court reconvened, Governor Winthrop and Deputy Governor Dudley were ready. To the charge of unjust taxes they asked how the government could be more penurious, noting that some Magistrates served without salary, that no money was spent on feasting, pensions, public gratuities, and the like. Regarding the rights of Englishmen, they denied there ever was a right to vote. On the issue of church membership, they said if the petitioners are as sober and godly as they claim, they

should not "boggle at the Covenants of these churche"s but should join and become freemen. They suggested those who espoused religious toleration as a practical policy move to Rhode Island.

The General Court adopted a "Declaration of 1646" attacking the Remonstrance and claiming the Colonial government was consistent with the Charter and the laws of England. Magistrates Saltonstall, Bradstreet, and Bellingham dissented. The remonstrants[37] were fined and summoned before the Court and informed they had transgressed the Apostle's rule "that ye study to be quiet and to do your own business (Thess.[38] IV, II)" and likened to Korah, Dathan, and Abiram,[39] who "gathered themselves together against Moses and against Aaron. . ." To offset concerns in England, the Court[40] sent Mr. Edward Winslow to London with two sets of instructions: one general in nature to be published, and one secret to be used only if specific questions were asked.[41]

What was John's position on the Remonstrance? Did he debate the proper relation of a dependency to the mother state as a Deacon advocating the conservative views of the church or did he share the more progressive views of his friend and confidant, Magistrate Richard Saltonstall? His great great grandson, General William Whipple, New Hampshire signer of the Declaration of Independence, would have recognized the answers to the objections as ideas which eventually led to the American Revolution.

Supporters of the Remonstrance made an effort to elect a new Governor and Magistrates in 1647 but Winthrop won with an overwhelming margin.[42] The mind of the Commonwealth was clearly for the existing order.

It was May 1650 before John again represented Ipswich in the General Court. He served four consecutive terms before abandoning legislative service to concentrate on his religious duties. Mr. William Bartholomew was Ipswich's other Deputy. Maj. Daniel Denison was his fellow Deputy in 1651 and 1652, serving as Speaker in 1652. John probably received major assignments and leadership roles that Session. Joining John as Ipswich delegates in 1653 were Mr. George Gittens and Mr. Samuel Winsley.[43]

The Court preserved class distinctions in 1650 by excluding whipping as a punishment for those titled Master and Mistress.[44] In 1651 it prohibited women from wearing gold, silver, or bone lace that cost more than 2s per yard, or silk hoods or scarfs unless their husbands were worth £200.[45] The penalty was 10s for each offense. Among those later charged with violating this law was Mrs. John Whipple.[46]

BECOMES A FEOFFEE OF THE GRAMMAR SCHOOL

While playing a major role in the development of the Bay colony in the 1640s and 1650s, John was also a Feoffe[47] of the grammar school, a witness

and executor of wills, and a Feoffe in trust to the unfortunate.[48] Richard Saltonstall gave him power of attorney to act as his business agent when he, Saltonstall, returned to England in 1647.[49] By 1661, John had a 15-year-old servant, Cornelius Kent, to help in his many endeavors.[50]

In 1647, the year his brother Matthew died, John formed a partnership with Robert and William Paine, John Whittingham, Jonathan Wade, and William Bartholomew to conduct a trade at Ipswich. The parnership expired January 24, 1652[51] and on September 28, as Clerk of Writs, John had to serve former partners, Robert and William Payne, who were being sued by another former partner, Jonathan Wade.

He steadily increased his land holdings, adding to his acreage at various times. The town granted him eight acres March 25, 1643; four acres of meadow on the southeast side of the Mill river near his farm in 1644 or 1645, six acres of meadow on the other side of the Mill river February 7, 1647. He exchanged a parcel of upland by his meadow for a similar acreage elsewhere December 11, 1649.[52] By the time of his death in 1669, his farm contained about 360 acres and he had a house and approximately 100 acres in town.

John became a leader in education.[53] Apparently Ipswich had a grammar school as early as 1636,[54] probably not a free school as there is no record of public support until 1643 when the town voted to raise £112 annually to run the school. Lionel Chute was school master until his death in 1644. Chute's widow, Rose, became John's sister-in-law in November 1646 when she married widower Matthew Whipple. There is no record of another school until January 11, 1650, when the Town granted "all that Neck beyond Chebacco river and the rest of the groups (up to Gloucester) line adjoining to it." for a school.[55] To provide income for the school, the land was leased "forever" to John Cogswell, Jr., his heirs, and assigns, for £5 in pork and beef, £5 in corn, and £4 in butter and cheese "at the current price" annually. Robert and William Payne, Major Daniel Denison, and William Bartholomew were named Feofees.[56] On January 26, 1650,[57] John was named one of five additional Feoffes.[58]

The Feoffees were to build, maintain, administer, and enlarge the school as needed; select the Master; determine tuition; regulate all matters concerning the Master and scholars; and "consider the best way to make provision for teaching to write and cast accounts." They hired Ezekiel Cheever as Master[59] and the school, with its emphasis on reading, writing, and arithmetic, became famous for preparing students for entrance to Harvard College.[60] Cheever's Latin grammar, *The Accidence*, the first elementary book for learners, was used for more than a century in New England schools.[61] John Whipple and Ezekiel Cheever became fast friends and jointly served in a variety of civic activities.[62]

John's religious service began when he was elected Deacon sometime prior to October 1642.[63] He and Robert Payne were elected Ruling Elders in 1658 when Mr. Hubbard was elected to serve as Teacher with Mr. Norton. The ordination was November 17.[64]

The Cambridge Platform defined church officers as extra-ordinary or ordinary. Apostles, Prophets, and Evangelists were extraordinary. Elders and Deacons were ordinary and fasted before ordaination which was by the imposition of hands and prayer.

The Whipple of today may find interesting the qualifications and job description of Deacons and Elders. To be elected,[65] both had to demonstrate they were "tried and proved, honest, and of good report." Scripture determined qualifications. "Elders must be blameless, sober, apt to teach, and imbued with such other qualifications as are laid down in 1 Timothy: 3 and 2; Titus: 1, 6 to 9." Qualifications for Deacons were outlined in Acts: 6, 3; 1 Timothy: 3, 8 to 11. Failure to live up to the qualifications resulted in removal by a vote of the congregation.

Deacons, sometimes called "Helps," were responsible for the temporal, not the spiritual, needs of the church. They were to have "the mystery of the faith in a pure conscience, endued with the Holy Ghost," to be "grave, not double tongued, not given too much to wine, not given to filthy lucre." They received offerings and gifts, kept the treasury, and served the Tables of the Church: "the Lord's Table, the Table of the Ministers, and of such as are in necessity, to whom they are to distribute in simplicity." When contributions waned, they spurred greater giving. Contributions were collected on the Sabbath, not the Lecture day.[66]

Other duties given to the Deacons were to make sure dogs weren't brought to the Meeting House on Sabbath or Lecture days between noon and 3:00, to keep the Meeting House water tight, and to approve construction of a gallery for use by "young men and youth". When the town voted January 4, 1646-47 to repair the Meeting House, Deacons were responsible for overseeing the £20 repair.[67] The following year they were authorized to hire a man to keep the Meeting House clean and to ring the bell and to determine a fair payment for the work.[68]

His former legislative service served John well in the Ipswich-Boston controvery of 1655 over Mr. Norton. Before a teacher could be hired by a new church, permission from the existing church was required. On February 23, 1655, Ipswich denied Norton permission to move to Boston. Because Boston continued to press for the move, the Court ordered a Council of 12 Churches to meet in Ipswich the second Tuesday of June

1655. This time Boston won. Norton began duties there in 1656.

Elders joined pastors and teachers in acts of spiritual rule but did not participate in teaching and preaching.[69] They were expected to have attained "wisdom and judgment endued with the Spirit of God, able to discern between cause and cause, between plea and plea, and accordingly to prevent and redress evils, always vigilant and intending to see the statutes, ordinances, and laws of God kept in the Church, and that not only by the people in obedience, but to see the officers do their duties." They "must be of life likewise unreproveable, governing their own families orderly . . . of manners sober, gentle, modest, loving, temperate."[70]

Ruling meant they were to call the Church together upon any weighty occasion. Members were obliged to attend, could not leave until dismissed, could not speak until recognized by the Elders, could be silenced in mid sentence, and could not contradict the judgment or sentence of Elders without "sufficient and weighty cause." These rules were supposed to insure order and avoid disturbance and confusion.

Prospective members were subjected to a searching private examination by the Elders, both as to "their knowledge in the principles of religion, of their experience in the ways of grace, and of their godly conversation amongst men." To qualify, applicants had to relate an instance of "the transforming operation of God in their lives." The examination determined their repentance from sin and faith in Jesus Christ. They had to "profess and hold in such sort, as may satisfy rational charity that the things are there indeed."[71] The weakest measure of faith was to be accepted "because weak Christians, if sincere, have the substance of that faith, repentance, and holiness which is required in church members and such have most need of the ordinances for their confirmation and growth in grace."[72]

Candidates for Church membership were announced in Church. Those "unfit to join" were to be reported to the Elders. If no one objected, the candidate was presented, usually on the Sabbath after evening exercises. All members were to be present. The candidate testified to the work of grace on his soul, professed faith, and stated his view of the constitution of the church and its officers, members, and their respective duties. If unable to do this without help, a question-answer format was used. A show of hands confirmed acceptance and the ceremony concluded with the Elders reading the Covenant and the candidate promising to perform, with divine help, his obligations. Church membership meant access to the sacrament of the Lord's Supper, baptism for their children, and qualified males to be freemen of the Commonwealth.[73]

Children of members were entitled to Church privileges except the Lord's Supper. For this, they had to profess personal regeneration.[74] So solemn was the privilege of baptism, non-regenerate members could not

claim it for their children without acknowledging the truths of the Gospel and promising fidelity and submission to church discipline.

PARTICIPATES IN THE BOSTON SYNOD OF 1662

John was probably a participant in the Boston Synod of 1662 which gave standing to these moral but non-regenerate members by establishing the Half-Way Covenant, a half way house between the world and full Christian discipleship. The Half Way Covenant required comprehension of religious truth, a public profession to guide their lives by gospel principles, and a commitment to raise their children in the fear of God. But it did not demand a personal sense of "a change of heart".

Members of The Synod deliberated to seven propositions they believed conformed to Scripture as to "Who are the subjects of baptism?"[75] The Synod denied baptism to children of those not in Covenant. It determined that "owning the Covenant" was a solemn personal acceptance of a formal declaration of intention to do the best to lead a Christian life by association in worship and discipline with the recognized people of God.

In the last year of his life, John was probably involved in the Anabaptism controversy. Anabaptists deied the validity of infant baptism, practiced baptism of adults, and advocated other religious and social reforms. The controversy began in March 1668 when Thomas Gould of Middlesex county refused to worship with the established church and, along with William Turner and John Farnham, Sr., established a Baptist Church. The Elders opposed the Church because it would result in "a free school of seduction, wherein false teachers may have open liberty to seduce the people into ways of error, which may not be suffered." If Baptists were tolerated, "where shall we stop," they asked? and answered their own question, saying "Familists,[76] Socinians,[77] Quakers,[78] Papists"[79] would creep in "under the mask of Anabaptism."

After hearing the Elders testify that God had given many warnings that "Anabaptism . . . hath proved an incendiary and vexation to church and state" and to allow the Baptists to flourish would open a "door for all sorts of abominations, to the disturbance not only of our ecclesiastical enjoyments, but also contempt of our civil order, and the authorities here established," the General Court forbade the Baptists to hold meetings and ordered Gould, Turner, and Farnham out of its jurisdiction before July 20.[80]

The keeping of a journal seems to have been an important part of Puritan piety. John's Puritan credentials are unquestioned so the reader might assume he kept such a journal. If only such a legacy survived to modern times. The author has tried to imagine some of its contents in this recap of John's life. But the surface is only scratched. The fullness of his life as husband, father,

legislator, farmer, businessman, Grand Juror, Clerk of Writs, Deacon, Elder, and observer of strange phenomenons staggers the imagination.

What, for example, did he write about the first comet to appear in the heavens of New England. It blazed forth from Orion[81] from December 9 through 22, 1652. Another appeared from February 3 to March 28, 1661. Viewers shuddered at the tail of fire and believed famine, plague, or disaster would follow. They were told it was the beginning of the burning of the world. Church membership increased as a consequence and ordinances and services were more carefully observed as members prepared their souls for the great change that might come immediately and without further warning. Another "great and dreadful" comet streaked across the skies November 9, 1664, continuing, night after night, all winter. Its size and extreme brilliancy created great alarm. People believed it was "sent by God to awake the secure world," that it caused the plague in England the next summer, the war with the Dutch, and the burning of London the second year following.[82] The people turned to their Elder and long-time community leader for answers and reassurance but John was probably as frightened as they. It is easy to imagine the people turning to him and equally difficult to imagine how he responded.

DAUGHTER, SARAH (WHIPPLE) GOODHUE

While no self-revealing journal survives, a letter written July 14, 1681 by his youngest daughter, Sarah Whipple Goodhue (wife of Deacon Joseph Goodhue), reveals much of the characteristics and qualities of the family. Written under a strangely realized premonition her death would occur at the birth of her twins—her eighth and ninth children—the letter presents a fascinating picture of early Puritan life.

It is the letter of a woman who would be rare in any age or era and reflects a deeply religious nature. It is filled with the spirit of self sacrifice, of courage, of fearlessness of death. It is full of love of parents, husband, children, affection for friends and neighbors, adoration of God. It reflects mental poise, moral purity, refinement of thought, and a cultural background. It paints a picture of the ideals of Puritanism and Puritan life.

She writes to her parents:[83] "Honored and most loving father and mother I cannot tell how to express your fatherly and motherly love towards me and mine. It hath been so great, and in several kinds, for the which in a poor requital, I give you hearty and humble thanks."

To her husband, she says: ". . . thy love to me . . . has so instamped it upon my mind, that I do think that there never was a man more truly kind to a woman. I desire forever to bless and praise the Lord, that in mercy to my soul, he by his providence ordered that I should live with

thee in such a relation."

To her children, she says: ". . . be sure to carry well to your father, obey him, love him, follow his instructions and example, be ruled by him, take his advice, and have a care of grieving him. My children, in your life and conversation, live godly, walk soberly, modestly, and innocently. Be diligent, and be not hasty to follow new fashions, and the pride of life, that now too much abounds. Let not pride betray the good of your immortal souls."

Sherman L. Whipple, noted Massachusetts attorney and descendant of Matthew, said at the re-dedication of the Whipple House in Ipswich in September 1929, that Sarah's letter "not only exalts Puritanism to its proper place, but does honor to the parents to whom God sent this child as a priceless blessing."[84]

It is apparent that John Whipple was a man of strength, character, and good works. Few in Ipswich matched his labors on behalf of the public good. But he also had major personal losses to overcome. He lost his 10-year-old son William June 4, 1641, three years after settling in Ipswich. His brother Matthew died Sept. 28, 1647, leaving him with responsibility for the joint family farm and business operations and guardian of nephews John 15, Matthew 12, and Joseph 7. Susanna, his wife of 38 years died in July 1661.

As he neared the end of his life, his thoughts probably returned to England and his home town of Bocking. His daughter Sarah and nephew Joseph, the only children not born in England, probably asked him about the land they would never see. John may have responded that when you lived to be as old as he, memory is a deceiver. His age showed in his sagging muscles, now turned to fat, joints needled with aches and pains, faded eyesight and diminished hearing. Eating was no longer enjoyable as there was little difference between sweet odors and foul, most food was tasteless, and his guts were often in windy rebellion and fasting or purging didn't help.

But as is often the case with the elderly, the memories of youth returned. He remembered the best of times, recalling childhood baths in a wooden tub with steamy water scented with powdered herbs and oils of flowers; Shrove-tide pancakes served with meat of a boiled hen;[85] black pudding when a pig was killed in the fall; a fat goose for Michaelmas;[86] cream and the tarts of fresh-picked berries on May Day; venison and frumenty—the red wheat perfectly boiled in cream and then cooked with sugar and eggs and saffron and cinnamon—on Twelfth Night;[87] fresh pears in August for Bartholomewtide;[88] new cider in the fall. But his best memory was probably of the black iron pot simmering on the hearth, a steam of rich odors rising from it; so thick you could float a pewter spoon on it.

He would have told them of the English weather, remembering it mostly in shades of gray—cold mists rising up, ghostlike from gray earth and gray water. He remembered springtime: trees in their flower, leaves as

delicate as if beaten into shape and brightness by goldsmiths, a sky filled with bird songs, meadows and pastures carpeted with red clover, loud with bees, and full of butterflies. He remembered orchards, gardens, grass and fields, the swollen Blackwater river surging over its banks and the wasteland yellow and green with clusters of dandelions and buttercups, ragwort,[89] bright torches of delicate, ivy-leaved, yellow toad-flax,[90] golden bells of cowslip,[91] and unwinking, yellow-white-eyed daisies.

He remembered the preparations for Midsummer Eve[92] when five, fat, yellow fingers of St. James' wort and the blue feathery flowers of larkspur[93] were set over the doorway, crescents[94] held lights at doorways and gateways, bonfires prepared and tubs filled with water in case of fire, and fresh birch boughs gathered for decorations. It was a night of dancing, singing, eating, and drinking. Except for the old and sick and the very young, there was no sleeping on Midsummer Eve. It was a time of vigil, much like All Hallow's Eve,[95] to prevent your soul from escaping from your sleeping body. If unwatched, the soul of those supposed to die in the year to come left to inspect its final resting place. Only by staying awake in the company of others could you prevent it from leaving. Sometimes they waited by the churchyard to watch for lost souls flying by.

High summer was remembered as the last, long, soft days of August when harvest had begun with reaping and binding and stacking. He recalled fields of growing grain with the blue of the cornflower,[96] the purple patches of corn cockles,[97] and the scarlet poppies which danced in the breeze like a college of drunken cardinals. He remembered the family garden rich with red and white roses, iris, violets, pansy, the gilly-flower's[98] awash in butterflies; vegetables and various berries, melon, pumpkin, and squash in abundance; the orchard with its apples, cherries, peaches, pears, walnuts, hazelnuts, and chestnuts.

He remembered fall fair time meant a sky blue and gold with light changes casting long shadows; sunsets like coals of dying fire; a moon, huge and fat, a ruddy face among the glitter of crowded stars. He recalled the weeks of September before Michaelmas when the harvest was in; the reapers had swept across the fields, stooping and kneeling with their sickles. The corn was cut and stacked, left to dry, then carted home to the barns; straw and stover[99] gathered. Nights belonged to the owls, days to crows and gulls gleaning the fields. The winter firewood was cut and stored close at hand. The year's last fruits were brought in and carefully stored. And then the rains began with its patter on the roof and gurgling down the spouts. That was when they sat by the fire with new cider, hazelnuts, and roasted chestnuts and darkened their teeth and tongues with the sticky sweetness of new-picked blackberries.

He told them of the grand parents they never met, of the life of a

Clothier, of Queen Elizabeth and King James, of the old Whipple homestead on Bradford street in Bocking. John was glad Sarah and Joseph had bothered to ask. The memories were good.

John Whipple died June 30, 1669, two months shy of his 74th birthday. He wrote his will May 10 with his good friends Rev. William Hubbard and Robert Day present to witness his mark. Physical weakness apparently caused him to sign with a mark. We know he could write as his signature is preserved in many documents. His will was filed but not recorded. The will and inventory—his estate was large for that period, totaling £444 1s—were presented in Court at Ipswich September 28. Less than half of his life—31 years—were spent in Massachusetts Bay. But what a productive and meaningful 31 years. The people of Ipswich and the Commonwealth were the beneficiaries of his time among them.

John's descendants followed his lead in service to the Colony and community. His Son Capt. John was a Selectman, served four terms in the General Court, operated an ordinary and a fulling mill, and was a Captain during King Phillip's War. He served as an appraiser and executor of many estates and was one of the wealthiest men in the county at the time of death.

Grandson Maj. John served in the General Court and as a Justice of the Sessions Court as was his brother Maj. Matthew. His great great grandson, William Whipple served three terms in the Continental Congress, signed the Declaration of Independence, and was a Brig. General at the Battle of Saratoga.

Among John's other descendants are Susan B. Anthony, pioneer of women's rights; Clara Barton, founder of the American Red Cross, Calvin Coolidge, 30th President of the United States; Robert Goddard, pioneer rocket scientist; James Russell Lowell, diplomat, author, editor, and literary critic; Brigham Young, Mormon colonizer of the American West.

LAST WILL AND TESTAMENT OF JOHN WHIPPLE

(Filed, not recorded)

In the name of God, Amen. I John Whipple Senior of Ipswich in New England being in this present time of perfect understanding and memory, though weak in body, committing my soul into the hands of Almighty God, and my body to decent burial, in hope of resurrection unto eternal life by the merit and power of Jesus Christ, my most merciful Savior and Redeemer, do thus dispose of the temporal estate which God hath graciously given me.

Imprimis. I give unto Susanna Worth of Newberry my eldest daughter thirty pounds and a silver beer bowl and a silver wine cup.

Item. I give unto my daughter Mary Stone twenty pounds and one silver wine cup, and a silver dram cup.

I give unto my daughter Sarah Goodhue twenty pounds. And all the rest of my household goods my will is that they be equally divided betwixt my three daughters aforesaid. But for their other legacies my will is that they should be paid them within two years after my decease: and if it should so fall out that any of my daughters above said should be taken away by death before this time of payment be come, my will is the respective legacies be paid unto their heirs when they come to age. Likewise I give unto Anthony Potter, my son-in-law, sometime, forty shillings.

Moreover I give unto Jennett my beloved wife ten pounds which my will is that it should be paid her besides the fourteen pounds and the annuity of six pounds a year engaged unto her in the Articles of Agreement before our marriage. Concerning the four-score pound, which is to be returned back to her after my decease, my will is that it should be paid (both for time and manner of pay) according to said Agreement, viz, one third part in wheat, malt, and Indian corn, in equal proportions, the other two thirds in neat cattle under seven years old. Further, my will is that no debt should be charged upon my said wife as touching any of her daughters, until it be first proved to arise from the account of Mercy, Sarah, or Mary.

I do appoint my loving friends, Mr. William Hubbard and Mr. John Rogers of Ipswich, the overseers of this my last will and testament, and I do hereby give them power to determine any difference that may arise betwixt my executor, and any of the legatees, aforesaid, about the payments aforesaid. Lastly I ordain and appoint my son John Whipple the sole executor of this my last will and testament. To whom I give all the rest of my estate, both houses, lands, cattle, debts from whomsoever due, and to his heirs forever.

In confirmation whereof I have hereunto set my hand and seal this 10th day of May 1669. In the presence of William Hubbard and Robert Day.

(His "loving friends" appointed to be overseers were both ministers of the church. Mr. Rogers was subsequently President of Harvard College.)

1. Dr. William Wyman Fiske, "Clarke and Stacy Origins of Three Immigrants to Ipswich, Massachusetts: Simon and Elizabeth (Clarke) Stacy and Her Sister, Susanna Susanna (Clarke) Whipple". *Register*, 160:637, 17-29. Death source: Abraham Hammatt, *The Hammatt Papers, Early Inhabitants of Ipswich, Massachusetts, 1633-1700.* Baltimore: Genealogical Publishing Company, Inc. 1980. Originally published in seven parts, Ipswich. 1880-1899). 405.
2. In a letter to the author dated May 5, 1992, Samuel P. Stevens, 312 Sheridan Ave., Piedmont, Calif 94611 identifies Jannet's first husband as Thomas Dickenson, born abt 1614 in Farnley, Yorkshire, England. Thomas and Jennet Brook were married April 15, 1640, apparently in Farnley. No sources or citations were provided.
3. Other writers have placed them there earlier. The year 1636 is frequently mentioned. The author has not been able to find any documentation showing them in Massachusetts earlier than September 1638.
4. At this same meeting, Simon Stace was granted six acres of planting ground "beyond the swamps next to John Whipple. George A. Schofield, editor and publisher, *The Ancient Town of Ipswich,* 1634-1650, Vol. 1, Chronicle Motor Press, Ipswich, 1899. There is no page numbering in this publication but the author has numbered the pages and this reference is on pages 38-39.
5. It is necessary to understand John was a businessman in England and that his experiences were quite different from many of the fellow townspeople. His habits differed from those who were farmers, laborers, and craftsmen in East Anglica. Each type of man had a distinct frame-work of reference, as well as a distinct realm of experience which generated tensions in the early years. As representatives of different local cultures arrived in New England, they were forced to adjust to each other's different habits as they attempted to modify the basic English institutions and customs.
6. Schofield. 91, 93, 106, 113.
7. Ibid. 69
8. Card wyer cane – A brush with wire teeth used in disentangling fibers of wool, flax, or cotton and laying them parallel to one another preparatory to spinning.
9. Other members of the trade committee were Mr. Bradstreet, Mr. Robert Payne, Capt. Denison, Mr. Tuttle, and Mr. Saltonstall. Bradstreet, Mr. Hubbard, Mr Symonds, and Payne were on the fishing committee.
10. The other Selectmen were Mr. Hubbard, Capt. Denison, Goodman Giddings, Mark Symonds, John Perkins, Sr., and Mr. William Payne. They were elected on condition they "give no lands, nor meddle with dividing or stinting of the commons." Schofield. pp. 71-4, 78, 83, 85.

    Duties included land distribution, appointment of town officers, economic regulations and taxes, church affairs, farming, resolving personal quarrels in the community, relations with neighboring towns, relations with Indians, and relations with the government of the Commonwealth.
11. Grand Jurors oath: You swear by the living God, that you will diligently inquire and faithfully present to this Court whatsoever you know to be a breach of any law established in this jurisdiction according to the mind of God; and whatsoever criminal offenses you apprehend fit to be here presented, unless some necessary and religious tie of conscience truly grounded upon the word of God bind you to secrecy. And whatsoever shall be legally committed by this Court to your judgment, you will return a true and just verdict therein according to the evidence given you, and the laws established

amongst us: So help you God, &c. William H. Whitmore, Record Commissioner *The Colonial Laws of Massachusetts,* reprinted from the editions of 1672, with the supplements of 1686, 2 vols. Boston: Rockwell and Churchill, City Printers, 1980. 2:167.

12. John replaced Mr. Giles Firman, Ipswich physician. Nathaniel B. Shurtlett, ed., *Records of Massachusetts 1628-1641.* Boston: 1853. Vol. 1. 14. He was still serving as Clerk in 1654. A Writ is the document used to file causes for action. His duties: record births, deaths, and marriages, keep track of the town's brand marks, grant summons and attachments in civil actions, record horses shipped off, and keep a toll-book of all cattle sold. He was to provide the above information yearly to the Clerk of the County Court. Whitmore, Vol. 2. 173-74.

13. *The Essex Antiquarian.* Vol. 10, No. 1, January 1906. 84. This monthly magazine, whose first issue was January 1897, was devoted to the biography, genealogy, history, and antiquities of Essex County, Massachusetts. It terminated publication with Vol. 13, No. 4.

14. No person could acquire ruling authority except at the polls. Freemen, either in person or by proxy, "were required by the Patent, without any summons, to elect and send their Deputies to the General Court with full power to consult and determine such matters, as concern the welfare of this Common-wealth; from which General Court no Magistrate or Deputy shall depart or be discharged, without the consent of the major part both of Magistrates and Deputies, during the first four days of the first Session, under the penalty of one-hundred pounds, nor afterwards under such penalty as the Court shall impose..." Whitmore, Vol. 2, 35.

    The Magistrates' obligation to the towns or to the freemen who elected them was never clearly defined. What was magisterial authority? Governor Winthrop's position was their "authority came from God, in the way of an ordinance, such as hath the image of God eminently stamped upon it." He felt Magistrates were free to govern the Commonwealth as they alone saw fit. Ruling was reserved for a small and select group. Only the Governor, Deputy Governor, and Assistants were full-fledged Magistrates. Winthrop believed John's duties as Deputy were incidental responsibilities, detracting from his regular calling; that the Lord had not granted special ruling skills to such lesser officials. In short, Deputies were not real Magistrates. T.H. Breen, *The Character of the Good Ruler,* W. W. Norton and Company, Inc. (New York. 1974). xii, 59, 60.

    No one campaigned for office. To do so would cause dissension and demonstrate that the people who had covenanted with God were no longer united. However, freemen kept informed of their Deputies' behavior, especially in time of crisis, and frequently instructed them how to handle specific legislation. And they checked to see if their instructions were followed, thus Deputies could not ignore them. When John first joined the General Court, the pay was 2s 6d a day for Deputies; 3s 6d for Magistrates. Towns, not the central government, paid them. The 1646 Session enacted a law stating "that no more than a member and his horse shall be maintained." This suggests some Representatives may have had family members boarded and lodged at public expense.

15. John also served in '41, '42, '46, '50, '51, '52, and 53.

16. The terms Deputy and Representative are used interchangeably as are Assistant and Magistrate.

17. General Court—known as the State Legislature today. Prior to 1634, the General Court (hereafter usually referred to as Court) only included Magistrates. Their arbitrary use of power caused the freemen to insist on being represented in that body and in May 1634, towns elected their first Deputies. The Court exercised the chief civil power of the Common-wealth. Its power was as follows: . . . only hath power to raise money and taxes upon the whole country, and dispose of lands, viz. to give and con-

firm properties, appertaining to and immediately derived from the country; and may act in all affairs of this Common-wealth according to such power, both in matters of counsel, making of laws, and matters of judicature, by impeaching and sentencing any person or persons, according to law, and by receiving and hearing any complaints orderly presented against any person or courts; and it is agreed that this Court will not proceed to judgment in any cause, civil or criminal, before the Deputies have taken this oath following:

I do swear by the most great and dreadful name of the ever-living God, that in all cases wherein I am to deliver my vote or sentence against any criminal offense, or between parties in any civil case; I will deal uprightly and justly, according to my judgment and conscience; and I will according to my skill and ability, assist in all other public affairs of this Court, faithfully and truly, according to the duty of my place, when I shall be present to attend the service. Whitmore, Vol. 2. 34.

The Governor, Deputy Governor, and Assistants were also elected annually.

18. It would be interesting to know who John supported. Dudley won in a close election, supported by those who were concerned that Winthrop had been in office too long and that the office would become hereditary if a change weren't made. As a fellow Ipswich resident, he undoubtedly supported Dudley.
19. Young John Whipple would have been in the colony eight years by 1640.
20. Interim governing committee—The issue was powers held by Magistrates between Sessions. Magistrates assumed both executive and judicial functions. They also heard cases of both original and appellate jurisdiction, raising serious questions about conflict of interest, since they were ruling on the fairness of decisions they had made earlier as judges in the lower courts. Deputies opposed this unrestricted interim power as it allowed the Magistrates to indulge their arbitrary desires as soon as the representatives left the capital. Breen. 75-77.
21. Magisterial veto—Also known as the negative voice.
22. Deputies felt Rev. Nathaniel Ward's *Body of Liberties,* the law of the Common-Wealth adopted in 1641, was ill-defined and open to interpretation by individuals judges. They wanted the Colony's laws printed in alphabetical order so every man could see for himself the limits of Magisterial authority. The Magistrates resisted, believing codification a threat to their fundamental prerogatives. The Deputies won this battle and in 1648, the Court adopted The Laws and Liberties of Massachusetts. Breen. 81-2.
23. *The Laws and Liberties of Massachusetts,* 13-14.
24. Virginia set a southern precedent by passing a law in 1639 protecting the original grantee if the grantor later conveyed to someone else even if the deed wasn't recorded. George R. Ryskamp, "Common-Law Concepts for the Genealogist: Real-Property Transactions," *National Genealogical Society Quarterly,* Vol. 84, No. 3:177-78.
25. Reasons Magistrates opposed: 1) it would require lawyers be trained to advise the people, 2) by hearing the cases in advance, Magistrates could determine whether they were legitimate and probably end them if they felt the case unjust, 3) Magistrates resolved many problems in a friendly way without charge to the parties or trouble to the Court, 4) the cause is better understood if it does go to Court, 5) Magistrates are allowed to function in this manner in criminal cases, and 6) despite placing Magistrates in danger of being prejudiced, if the service is lawful and useful, the temptations are not great enough to overcome the good of the present system. James Kendall Hosmer, ed. *Winthrop's Journal. History of New England, 1630-1648.* Vol. II. New York: Barnes & Noble, Inc., 1959. 31.
26. The law required a majority of both Magistrates and Deputies to pass a bill. Two magistrates, Bellingham and Saltonstall, and 15 deputies voted for Sherman; seven

Magistrates and eight Deputies for Keayne; seven Deputies were undecided.

27. Even a minority of the Court, Magistrates could veto bills supported by a majority of Deputies. The first attack on the negative voice occurred in 1634. It was smoothed over with no action taken. In this instance, although losing, the Representatives made it clear they were in a fight to the finish to eliminate the negative veto.
28. Hosmer, II, 64-66.
29. The Session lasted three weeks before adjourning to Oct. 7. Mr. Norris of Salem preached the election sermon. Deputy Endicott, who was Serjeant Major General, and Mr. Pelham were elected Commissioners for the United Colonies. Heretofore, Magistrates and Deputies chose the Commissioners but freemen now considered them general officers subject to general election.
30. Breen, 83-84.
31. Two laws against anabaptists and other heretics were extended this session.
32. Synod—A meeting of representatives of the churches. The congregationalism of the 17th century required officers of civil government be consulted in all affairs concerning churches.
33. Hosmer. Winthrop's Journal. Vol. I. 274. The congregations at Salem, Hingham, and Concord disputed the General Court's authority and did not send Representative to the meeting which began Sept. 1. Thirty to 40 of Boston's members opposed and on Sept. 3, at the regular Church lecture, Rev. John Norton of Ipswich, later to be teacher at the Boston Church, preached to the Boston Church. His text was of Moses and Aaron meeting on the Mount and kissing each other. He said the work of the Synod would be consultative and declarative, not coactive; he documented the power of civil Magistrates to call such Assemblies; stressed the duty of churches to yield obedience; and emphasized the great offence and scandal refusing to attend would give. On Sunday Sept. 6, a majority of Boston's members voted to attend.

    The Synod adjourned in Mid September, reassembled at Cambridge June 8, 1647 and concluded at Cambridge Aug. 15, 1648 by adopting a Platform of Church Discipline, primarily the work of Richard Mather of Dorchester and the Rev. John Cotton of Boston. It established a standard by which New England churches might be regulated and innovation resisted and was presented in a manner that was not offensive to the Puritan party in England, whether Presbyterian or Independent, or to Parliament.

    It became known as the Cambridge Platform and represented the clearest reflection of Congregationalism by the first generation on American soil. It followed nearly 20 years of practical experience and resulted in the non recognition of the democratic element in politics while urging the right of civil Magistrates to interfere in matters of doctrine and practice. It upheld Congregationalism as a polity of exclusive divine warrant. Williston Walker. *The Creeds and Platforms of Congregationalism.* The Pilgrim Press. Boston. 1960. First published in 1893. 173, 182, 184, 185.
34. Samuel Eliot Morrison, *Builders of the Bay Colony.* Boston: Houghton Mifflin Company, 1930. 250-51.
35. The treachery of Levi and Simeon towards a community which had received the rite of connubium with Israel is represented as a crime, which imperiled the position of the Hebrews and was fatal to the future of the tribes directly involved. Connubium: 1) lawful marriage 2) the right to inter-marry.
36. Belial—A Hebrew word often used as a proper name, but really an abstract term meaning worthless or wickedness.
37. Robert Child, who Winthrop styled "a stranger, a leader to the rest, and who carried himself proudly, etc., in the Court," was fined £50; Mr. John Smith, being also a stranger, £40; Mr. Thomas Fowle, Mr. Thomas Burton, Mr. David Yale, and Mr. John

Dand, £30 each; and Mr. Samuel Maverick, "because he had not as yet appealed," £10. It is believed that all petitioners except Maverick left the Bay Colony. Hosmer. Winthrop's Journal. Vol. II. 304-5.

38. *Thessalonians.* Books of the new testament, the Epistles from Apostle Paul to the Christians of Thessalonica.

39. Reubenites who led a revolt against Moses in the interval between the return of the spies and the final march toward Canaan. In NU: 15-17, the revolt of Dathan and Abiram is confused with another revolt, that of Korah. It is impossible to interpret the narrative as it stands.

40. The session began Nov. 4, and that night a northeasterner struck, blowing off roofs, breaking anchors, and driving ships from their moorage.

41. The secret instructions:

Objection 1. Why we make not our process in the King's name? You shall answer: 1) That we should thereby waive the power of our government granted to us, for we claim not as by commission, but by a free donation of absolute government. 2) For avoiding appeals, etc.

Objection 2. That our government is arbitrary. Answer: We have four or five hundred express laws, as near the laws of England as may be; and yearly we make more, and where we have no law, we judge by the word of God, as near as we can.

Objection 3. About enlarging our limits, etc. Answer: Such Indians as are willing to come under our government, we know no reason to refuse. Some Indians we have subdued by just war, as the Pequids. Some English also, having purchased lands of the Indians, have submitted to our government.

Objection 4. About our subjection to England. Answer: 1) We are to pay the one-fifth part of ore of gold and silver. 2) In being faithful and firm to the state of England, endeavoring to walk with God in upholding his truth, etc., and praying for it. 3) In framing our government according to our Patent, so near as we may.

Objection 5. About exercising admiral jurisdiction. Answer: 1) We are not restrained by our Charter. 2) We have power given us to rule, punish, pardon, etc., in all cases, ergo in maritime. 3) We have power granted us to defend ourselves and offend our enemies, as well by sea as by land, ergo we must needs have power to judge of such cases. 4) Without this, neither our own people nor strangers could have justice from us in such cases.

Objection 6. About our independency upon that state. Answer. Our dependency is in these points: 1) We have received our government and other privileges by our Charter. 2) We owe allegiance and fidelity to that state. 3) In erecting a government here accordingly and subjecting thereto, we therein yield subjection to that state. 4) In rendering the one-fifth part of ore, etc. 5) We depend upon that state for protection and immunities as freeborn Englishmen.

Objection 7. Seeing we hold of East Greenwich, etc., why every freeholder of forty shillings per annum have not votes in elections, etc., as in England. Answer: Our Charter gives that liberty expressly to the freemen only.

Objection 8. By your Charter, such as we transport are to live under his Majesty's allegiance. Answer: So they all do, and so intended, so far as we know.

Objection 9. About a general Governor. Answer: 1) Our Charter gives us absolute power of government. 2) On the terms above specified, we conceive the Patent hath no such thing in it, neither expressed, nor implied. 3) We had not transported ourselves and families upon such terms. 4) Other Plantations have been undertaken at the charge of others in England, and the Planters have their dependence upon the companies there, and those Planters go and come chiefly for matter of profit; but we came to

abide here, and to plant the gospel, and people the country, and herein God hath marvelously blessed us. Hosmer. *Winthrop's Journal.* Vol. II. 314-15.

42. John did not stand for election in 1647, probably because Matthew's illness made additional demands on him to oversee their farming operation.

43. Shurtleff. Vol. 3. 183, 220, 259, 297.

44. The ordinary respectable people were known as goodman and goodwife, or goody.

45. Legislation was passed in 1639 against "women's sleeves more than half an ell (measure of length equal to 45 inches) wide in the widest places, immoderate great breeches, broad-shoulder bands and rayles, silk roses, double ruffs and cuffs, etc." Short, cropped hair, in obedience to Paul's injunction, was the ideal of the sterner Puritans but from the beginning the more frivolous wore long hair. Rev. Ezekiel Rogers of Rowley was so bitter in his detestation of long hair he disinherited his nephew because he persisted in wearing his long. On May 10, 1649, Governor Endicott and Deputy Governor Dudley and seven Assistants declared: "Forasmuch as the wearing of long hair after the manner of ruffians and barbarous Indians has begun to invade New England, contrary to the rule of God's work, which says it is a shame for a man to wear long hair, etc., we, the Magistrates, who have subscribed to this paper, (for the showing of our innocency in this behalf) do declare and manifest our dislike and detestation against the wearing of such long hair, as against a thing uncivil and un-manly whereby men do deform themselves, and offend sober and modest men, and do corrupt good manners. We do, therefore, earnestly entreat all the Elders of this jurisdiction (as often as they shall see cause to manifest their zeal against it in their public administration) to take care that the members of their respective churches be not defiled therewith; that so such as shall prove obstinate and will not reform themselves, may have God and man to witness against them.

The General Court declared its "utter detestation and dislike that men or women of mean condition, educations, and callings should take upon them the garb of gentlemen by wearing of gold and silver lace, or buttons, or points at their knees, to walk in great boots, or women of the same rank to wear silk or tiffany hoods or scarfs, which though allowable to persons of greater estate or more liberal education, yet cannot but judge intolerable in person of such like condition."

46. Her husband was able to show he was worth £200 so the charge was dismissed. The author believes the Mrs. John Whipple in question was the wife of John Whipple of Dorchester as the law exempted Magistrates and their families, military officers, soldiers in time of service, or any whose education or employment were above the ordinary. It seems apparent as a Deputy, John Whipple would fall under the exceptions. His son John was not yet married when the law was passed nor was Lt. John Whipple, son of Matthew. Edward Spaulding Perzel, *The First Generation of Settlement in Colonial Ipswich, Massachusetts 1633–1660.* Ph.D. Thesis. New Jersey: Rutgers, the State University of New Jersey. 1967.10.

However at the Ipswich Quarterly Court in 1653, included among the 11 women presented as being in violation were Elizabeth Whipple, wife of Anthony Potter, and Sarah Kent, wife of Lt. John Whipple. Elizabeth was the daughter of John and Lt. John the son of Matthew. The women were charged with wearing silk hoods. Both men were able to prove their worth exceeded £200. *Essex Antiquarian.* Vol. 10, No. 2, April 1906. 85, 88. See also Hammatt, 268.

Only two of the 11 women were fined. One woman presented a letter from her husband admitting he was not worth £200 but he listed four good reasons his wife should wear a silk scarf and hood: 1) she was brought up to it. 2) I am bound by conscience and love to maintain my wife's honor and that good education she was

brought up in but neither conscience nor love doth yet teach me to maintain her worse than I found her. 3) when she doth wear a scarf it is not because she would be in the fashion or that she would be as fine as other, but 4) for the necessity and preserving of health, and this appears to me thus because she ordinarily wears a scarf but two seasons, the first is in winter when it is very cold, the other season is when it is very wet weather. More, I conceive if she did wear her scarf for pride she would be as proud in summer as she is in winter and in dry weather as in wet. Morison. 162-63.

47. Feoffe—similar to a school board member.
48. On July 1, 1652, John and Lt. Samuel Appleton were named feoffees in trust to prosecute John Langton "for evil usage" of a little child of his wife. The child was ordered to live with his grandparents, the William Varneys. *The Essex Antiquarian.* Vol. 7. No. 3, July 1903. 130.
49. See Ipswich Deeds 2:6. Saltonstall gave authority to John and others "to act and deal in and about all my estate and every part and parcel thereof in Ipswich.
50. *Register,* 6:345.
51. *The Essex Antiquarian.* Vol. 11, No. 2, 1907. 84-5.
52. Schofield. 97, 109, 122, 128.
53. The inventory of his estate included several books valued at £2 8s., indicating his personal household contained some of the literature of the time.
54. According to Abraham Hammatt, Esq. See his article, "Ipswich Grammar School" in the *Register,* 6:64-65. Thomas Franklin Waters says the first grammar school was established in 1642. See *Ipswich In The Massachusetts Bay Colony, Part I.* The Ipswich Historical Society. 1905. Schofield says the town authorized a free school in November 1643 and limited the number of students "not to exceed seven". 93, 99.
55. The grant was made after Robert Payne committed to give land and a building for a school provided "certain discreet and faithful persons would manage it as feoffes" and provided the town would "devote, set apart, and give any land or other annuity" for its yearly maintenance. Payne was one of the richest of Ipswich's earliest settlers. He was Deputy to the General Court in 1647, '48, '49, County Treasurer from 1665 to 1683, and elected Ruling Elder at the same time as John Whipple. He died in 1684, age 82. *Register,* 6:65.
56. *Register,* 6:64.
57. Hammatt gives the year as 1650, Waters as 1652.
58. The other four were Mr. William Hubbard, Mr. Jonathan Norton, Mr. Nathaniel Rogers, and Mr. Samuel Symonds. Hammatt described the feoffees as "remarkable men who lived in an age distinguished for other remarkable men." He speculated that some "may have had their Latin whipped into them by John Milton; some may have heard William Shakespeare `warble his native wood notes;' and some, undoubtedly, had been exposed to Francis Bacon." He opined they realized educated citizens who knew their rights would be ready to defend them; that a portion of the people must be highly instructed so they could be the guides and teachers of others. *Register,* 6:65-67.
59. Ezekiel Cheever—born in London about 1615, educated at Emanuel, former teacher at New Haven where he was considered a brilliant success.
60. According to Cotton Mather, "When scholars had so far profited at the grammar schools that they could read any classical author into English, and readily make and speak true Latin, and write in verse as well as prose; and perfectly decline the paradigms of nouns and verbs in the Greek tongue, they were judged capable of admission in Harvard College."
61. At least 20 editions were published.
62. The will of Rev. Nathaniel Rogers was proved Sept. 26, 1655 by the oaths of Deacon John Whipple and Mr. Ezekiel Cheever. Register, 5:139.

63. On Nov. 19, the town ordered payment "to our Deacon Jo: Whipple 15s. 6d according to money or in money being due to him as appeareth upon the account of the said Jo: Whipple delivered the 31st of the 8th mo. 1642." Thomas Franklin Waters. *The John Whipple House in Ipswich, Mass. and the People Who Have Owned and Lived In It.* Publications of the Ipswich Historical Society. XX. 1915. 8.
64. Ibid.
65. Church members willingly submitted to the officers they elected.
66. Walker, 213, 214, 221.
67. £140 to pay the ministers was voted at the same election.
68. Schofield. 88, 93, 98, 113, 117.
69. Elders' duties:

    1) To open and shut the doors of God's House by the admission of members approved by the Church; by ordination of officers chosen by the Church; and by excommunication of notorious and obstinate offenders renounced by the Church; and by resorting of penitents, forgiven by the Church.

    2) To call the Church together when there is occasion, and seasonably to dismiss them again.

    3) To prepare matters in private, that in public they may be carried to end with less trouble, and more speedy dispatch.

    4) To moderate the carriage of all matters in the Church assembled. As, to propound matters to the Church, to order the season of speech and silence; and to pronounce sentence according to the mind of Christ, with the consent of the Church.

    5) To be guides and leaders to the Church, in all matters whatsoever, pertaining to Church administrations and actions.

    6) To see that none in the Church live inordinately out of rank and place; with a calling, or idly in their calling.

    7) To prevent and heal such offenses in life, or in doctrine as might corrupt the Church.

    8) To feed the flock of God with a word of admonition.

    9) And as they shall be sent for, to visit and to pray over their sick brethren.

    10) And at other times as opportunity shall serve unto. Walker. 212.
70. Ibid. 36.
71. Most first generation Colonial Puritans were unable to show sufficient evidence of faith and experience to be admitted.
72. Walker. 222.
73. Joseph B. Felt, *The Ecclesiastical History of New England,* Vol. I. Boston: 1855. Congregational Library Association and the Congregational Board of Publication. 429-31.
74. Adult children, baptized and educated in the faith, well grounded in the knowledge of Christian truth, students of the Bible, and interested listeners in the sanctuary, who wanted to raise their families in the same way, and who were moral and earnest in their lives but could not claim the experience their parents called "a change of heart," were not full members. They were unregenerate members, entitled to transmit membership and baptism to their offspring, but their non-regenerate character denied them communion.
75. John may have played a major role in the deliberations of this Synod. The Ipswich Church began deliberating the concept of the Half-Way Covenant as early as 1653 when Rev. Nathaniel Rogers endorsed the concept. It was not until 1656 under Thomas Cobbet that the Church took a position. It was probably the first church in New England to adopt the rule of the Half-Way Covenant. They agreed:

    We look at children of members in full communion, which were about [i.e. not

more than] 14 years old when their father and mother joined the church, or have been born since, to be members in and with their parents.

We look upon it as the Elder's duty to call upon such children, being adults, and are of understanding, and not scandalous, to take the Covenant solemnly before our Assembly.

We judge that the children of such adult persons that are of understanding, and not scandalous, and shall take the Covenant, shall be baptized.

That notwithstanding the baptizing the children of such, yet we judge that these adult persons are not to come to the Lord's Supper, nor to act in Church votes, unless they satisfy the reasonable charity of the Elders or Church, that they have a work of faith and repentance in them. Walker. 256.

John and other church messengers in the Synod of 1662 deliberated to seven propositions they believed conformed to Scripture as to "Who are the subjects of baptism?"

1) They that according to Scripture, are members of the visible church, are the subjects of baptism.

2) The members of the visible church according to Scripture, are confederate visible believers, in particular churches, and their infant-seed, i.e. children in minority, whose parents, one or both, are in covenant.

3) The infant-seed of confederate visible believers, are members of the same church with their parents, and when grown up, are personally under the watch, discipline, and government of that church.

4) These adult persons, are not therefore to be admitted to full communion, merely because they are and continue members, without such further qualifications, as the Word of God requireth thereunto.

5) Church members who were admitted in minority, understanding the doctrine of faith, and publicly professing their assent thereto; not scandalous in life, and solemnly owning the Covenant before the church, wherein they give up themselves and their children to the Lord, and subject themselves to the government of Christ in the church, their children are to be baptized.

6) Such church members, who either by death, or some other extraordinary Providence, have been inevitably hindered from public acting as aforesaid, yet have give the church cause, in judgment of charity, to look at them as so qualified, and such as had they been called thereunto, would have so acted, their children are to be baptized.

7) The members of orthodox churches, being sound in the Faith, and no scandalous in life, and presenting due testimony thereof; these occasionally coming from one church to another, may have their children baptized in the church whither they come, by virtue of communion of churches: but if they removed their habitation, they ought orderly to Covenant and subject themselves to the government of Christ in the Church where they settle their abode, and so their children to be baptized. It being the church's duty to receive such unto communion, so far as they are regularly fit for the same. Walker.

76. Familists—a sect that propagated a vague philanthropism of pantheistic hue and Antinomian tendencies. Philanthropic—implies interest in the general human welfare. Pantheism—the doctrine that God is not a personality, but that all laws, forces, manifestations, etc. of the self-existing universe are God. Antinomian—a beliver in the doctrine that faith alone, not obedience to the moral law, is necessary for salvation. Familists eventually joined the Quakers.

77. Socinians—a sect that denied the essential divinity of Christ; rejected the natural immortality of man. Toward the end of the 16th century, it moderated into Unitarianism as practiced by the upper classes.

78. Quakers -- a sect founded by George Fox in England in 1650 and known as the Society of Friends. Friends have no formal creed, rites, liturgy, or priesthood, and reject

violence in human relations, including war.

79. Papist 1) a person who believes in papal supremacy. 2) a Roman Catholic. In the 1600s, a hostile term.
80. Felt. *Ecclesiastical History of New England.* Vol. II. 423-27.
81. Orion—an equatorial constellation near Taurus, containing the bright stars Rigel and Betelgeuse.
82. "Early Comets," *Essex Antiquarian.* Vol. 2, No. 5, May 1898.
83. Since her parents had been long dead by 1681, the reference has to be to her in-laws, Deacon William Goodhue and his third wife, the widow Bethiah Grafton. For a history and genealogy of the family see Rev. Jonathan E. Goodhue, *Goodhue Family in England and America to the Year 1890.* Rochester, NY: 1891. E.R. Andrews, Printer and Bookbinder.
84. Sherman L. Whipple, Esq., and Thomas Franklin Waters, *Puritan Homes,* Publications of the Ipswich Historical Society XXVII. Newcomb & Gauss Co., Printers. Salem: 1929. 13.
85. Shrove is a time of confession; specifically the period between the evening of the Saturday before Quinquagesima Sunday and the morning of Ash Wednesday, as being the period when people were shriven in preparation for Lent. Shriven is a past participle of shrive. Shrive is to go to your confessor in the week immediately before Lent and confess your deeds and the confessor prescribes penance for sin. In Essex and Suffolk, at Shrove-tide or upon Shrove Tuesday, after the confession, it was usual for the farmer to permit his plough-man to go to the barn blindfolded and "thresh the fat hen," saying, "if you can kill her then give it to thy men and go you and dine on fritters and pancakes."
86. Michailmas—a festival celebrated by the Roman, Anglican, and other churches on Sept. 29 in honor of the archangel Michael. It is also one of the four quarter days in England when tenants pay their quarter's rent. They bring foul at Midsummer, fish at lent, a capon at Christmas, a goose at Michaelmas. An archangel is an angel of high rank.
87. Twelfth Night—the end of the festival of the Epiphany.
88. The season near St. Bartholomew's day (August 24).
89. An erect herb, 2 to 4 feet high, with bright yellow heads; also called St.-James-wort.
90. Toad-flax—a popular name of the European plant linaria vulgaris; extended as a generic name to other species of linaria, as Ivy-leaved Toad-flax.
91. Cowslip —a wild plant in pastures and grassy banks, blossoming in the spring, with drooping umbels of fragrant yellow flowers.
92. Summer was considered to begin in May. Midsummer Eve, or the eve of the Feast of St. John Baptist, was celebrated June 24. It was the custom to kindle fires (called St. John's fires) upon hills in celebration of the summer solstice. Various superstitious practices and wild festivities were observed on this occasion.
93. Larkspur—a plant with a spur-shaped calyx. The calyx is is the outer whorl of protective leaves, or sepals of a flower, usually green. A whorl is a circular growth of leaves, petals, etc. about the same point on a stem. A sepal is any of the usually green, leaf-like parts of the calyx.
94. Crescents—a device shaped like the moon during its first quarter.
95. The evening of Oct. 31, the eve of the vigil of All-Hallows or All-Saints' day (Nov. 1); known today as Halloween. All-Hallow's Eve was an occasion of popular superstitions and observances in many Christian countries. Fairies, witches, and imps of all kinds were supposed to be especially active that night.
96. Cornflower—the name given to various plants commonly found growing amongst corn.
97. Corn Cockles—a plant with handsome reddish-purple flowers succeeded by capsules of numerous black seeds, which grows in cornfields, especially among wheat.
98. Gilly-flower—plants whose flowers are scented like a clove.
99. Stover—cured stalks of grain, without the ears, used as fodder for animals.

CAPT. JOHN WHIPPLE AND FAMILY

John[1] Whipple born abt. 1617 in England; died 16 May 1685 in Providence, Rhode Island He married Sarah (____)abt 1639-40. She was born abt. 1624 probably in England, died in 1666 in Providence. Both are buried in the North Burial Ground in Providence. John emigrated to Dorchester, Massachusetts in 1632 and removed his wife and eight children to Providence in 1659 where he played a prominent role in the development of both town and colony. Three more children were born there.

i. *John, Jr, bapt. 1 Nov. 1641, died 15 Dec. 1700; married (1) Mary Olney 4 Dec. 1663, (2) Rebecca Scott 15 April 1678.*

ii. *Sarah, bapt. 6 Feb. 1641/42, died aft 12 May 1710; married John Smith.*

iii. *Samuel, bapt. 17 March 1643/44, died 12 March 1710-11; married Mary Harris.*

iv. *Eleazer, bapt. 8 March 1645/46, died 25 Aug. 1719; married Alice Angell 26 Jan. 1669.*

v. *Mary, bapt. 9 April 1648, died, 12 July 1698; married Epenetus Olney 9 March 1666.*

vi. *William, bapt. 6 May 1652, died 9 March 1712/12; married Mary (_____).*

vii. *Benjamin, bapt. 4 June 1654, died 11 March 1703-04; married Ruth Matthewson 1 April 1686.*

viii. *David, bapt. 28 Sept. 1656, died 18 Dec. 1710; married (1) Sarah Hearnden 15 May 1675, (2) Hannah Tower 11 Nov. 1677.*

ix. *Abigail, born abt 1658, died 19 Aug. 1725; married (1) Stephen Dexter, (2) William Hopkins Jan. 1682.*

x. *Joseph, born abt 1662, died 28 April 1746; married Alice Smith 20 May 1684.*

xi. *Jonathan, born abt 1664, died 8 Sept. 1721; married (1) Margaret Angell, (2) Anne (_____).*

John Whipple was one of 123 passengers on the 12-week voyage from London to Boston on the *Lyon*[1] in the summer of 1632. They set sail 22 June and arrived in the new world Sunday evening 16 September. They saw no land for eight weeks[2] and weathered five days of east wind and thick fog.[3] The ship's carpenter was their only fatality, falling overboard while caulking a port.

Massachusetts Bay was far more primitive when John Whipple arrived than when Matthew and John Whipple arrived in Ipswich and were granted land the same month six years later. When John arrived at Dorch-

ester, only about 2,000 settlers had preceded him, while the colony's population was approaching 20,000 when the Ipswich Whipples arrived. An indentured servant in his early teens, John was truly in the vanguard of New England settlers. Not only was he young with no body of experience to guide him, he had to learn to survive in a society where status was all-important, and his status as an indentured apprentice carpenter put him at the bottom of the social scale, subject to the whims of his Master. By contrast, Matthew, 48, and John, 42, successful Clothiers in Bocking, were awarded one of the larger grants in Ipswich and immediately became part of the hierarchy, assuming leadership roles in church, town, and colony.

To his credit, John overcame all obstacles. He raised a large family whose members achieved notable success. By hard work, he accumulated considerable wealth, and because of his innate intelligence and strength of character, he also earned leadership roles in church, town, and colony. His legions of descendants can be proud of the legacy he left.

Fall was in the air and the trees were turning when John arrived, ready for adventure and looking forward to making something of his life in the new world. Who were his parents and where did he come from? This puzzle is yet to be solved. [See Appendix 1 for a complete discussion of research undertaken to find these answers].

Previous authors state John married Sarah They or Darling abt 1639. (He would have been 22-23, she 15-16). *New England Marriages Prior to 1700*[4] places the marriage in Dorchester but the confirming record is missing. There is no evidence that Sarah's maiden name was either They or Darling. Neither appears among early Dorchester surnames; the closest being Thayer. Sarah's tombstone states she was born in Dorchester and died in Providence in 1666, aged about 42 years. If the year and age are correct, she would have been born abt. 1624. Thus, she could not have been born in Dorchester, unless she was a Neponset Indian, since Dorchester wasn't founded until 1630. English settlers didn't marry Indians in those days, so we can presume she was white. But she was not born in New England unless she was born in Plymouth, which was settled in 1620. By the date of their marriage, travel by ferry between Dorchester and Plymouth was common.[5] John's tombstone states he was born in England and died in Providence Town May 16, 1685, about 68 years of age. Assuming the age to be correct (some credence can be given to the death date since his will was proved May 27, 1685[6]), John was born abt. 1617. He would have been about 15 when he settled at Dorchester.

It is obvious the tombstone information on Sarah is unreliable and there is no way to know if the information on John is correct. Both were originally buried in a garden near their home.[7] Apparently they were interred years later at Providence's North Burying Grounds. The Whipple

burial yard is on Dahlia Path about 50 feet northwest of the Temple Monument on Eastern Street. The person(s) responsible for the removal, undoubtedly relatives, were probably at least one generation removed from John and Sarah, making it unlikely they had personal knowledge of the facts. The North Burial Ground wasn't established until 1700, and no one was buried there until 1711—26 years after Capt. John's death. Samuel Whipple, son of John and Sarah, was the first person buried there.[8] Son Joseph, who inherited the family "dwelling house, three home lots, and the garden next the river" and was executor of John's will, was buried there in 1746. John directed Joseph, who was only 23 at the time, to see that he was "decently buried" and it's possible John and Sarah were reinterred at the time of Joseph's burial. In a letter to the author dated June 16, 1992, Rosemarie Polce, an employee of the North Burial Ground, wrote that their records date from March 1848 and "do not tell how or when Sarah and John got here. The stone suggests it is just in memory of them, not that the actual bodies are there." She said she was unable to locate Samuel's headstone.[9]

Apparently John was formally apprenticed or indentured to Israel Stoughton.[10] Rev. Thomas Hooker of Chelmsford recruited Bocking, Braintree, and other Essex county residents to move to New England in 1632 and John may have been one of his recruits. But logic suggests John was an apprentice who left the old country seeking a better life in the new world.

Stoughton first appears in the Dorchester Town Record Book in April 1633 as a grantee of land. He was admitted freeman and chosen Ensign[11]of the Dorchester train band 5 November 1633, elected Deputy to the first General Court in 1634,[12] and chosen Assistant in 1636. He was among the first signers of the 1636 Church Covenant and was a member of the Synod which tried Mrs. Ann Hutchinson in 1637. He and a Mr. Rossiter received the largest grants in the Plantation.[13]

Despite his comparative youth (32 when elected Deputy), Stoughton was highly regarded by his neighbors and was involved in many enterprises, including building mills, bridges, roads, etc. Being a Stoughton apprentice allowed John to develop his carpenter's skills on the many projects Stoughton was commissioned to build. Their closeness in age—John was 15 years younger—may have resulted in Stoughton taking a brotherly interest in John's well-being.[14]

On 3 October 1632 (only 17 days after his arrival), John was tried by the General Court, found guilty of "wasteful expenditure of powder and shot," and ordered to give 3 shillings 4 pence "to his master Israel Stoughton."[15] This sobering experience brought him face to face with the reality of his new life and probably included a lecture on his responsibilities to the new Puritan commonwealth.

The Stoughton indenture meant continuous carpenter work for John and an additional 50 acres of land for Stoughton.[16] Six months after John's arrival, Stoughton had a crew building a water mill and a horse bridge over the Neponset river.[17] His crew began work on the fish weir in January 1633-4[18] and erected the bridge over the Neponset river in 1634. The General Court authorized these projects. John was probably present in the fall of 1634 when the first bushel of grain ever ground by water power in New England was ground at Stoughton's mill. On 3 November 1634, the town authorized up to £5 to build a "cart-way" to the mill and chances are John worked with that crew.

Did John consider moving to Connecticut with the other early Dorchester settlers in 1635-36? If he was not a member of the Church he might not have been invited. But if he was given the opportunity to leave, what motivated him to stay? Was it because his sponsor Stoughton remained and his indenture prohibited a move?[19] Was it his youth and lack of concern for civil liberties and religious freedom?[20] Was it because his talents as a carpenter were in such demand he saw an opportunity to better himself financially? Was it the promise of land for those who remained?

It could well have been the promise of land. Twenty-one months after the original settlers left, John was granted land at Dorchester Neck. He was given eight acres near Stoughton's mill in the area known as Neponset Village," at the Town Meeting 2 January 1637, "this grant being in regard of a former promise upon record."[21] John received his land the year the Pequots were finally defeated.[22] He would have been about 20, and undoubtedly his term of indenture was over. After five years in New England he was a land-owner, a circumstance that would have been impossible in Old England. His industry eventually led him to acquire between 40 and 50 acres and he both farmed and practiced his carpenter trade.

Did John join the Church? The record shows "Good-wife [Sarah] Whipple" joined 29 August 1641.[23] It is believed Reverands Maverick and Warham took earlier Church records with them to Windsor, Connecticut. Records are available from 23 August 1636 when the Church was reorganizd, the Covenant adopted, and Mr. Richard Mather became teacher.[24] Rev. Nathaniel Rogers was invited to settle as Mather's colleague but he declined and settled at Ipswich in 1638. Members signed the Covenant August 23, 1636:

DORCHESTER CHURCH COVENANT

We whose names are subscribed being called of God to join ourselves together in church communion; from our hearts acknowledging our own

unworthiness of such a privilege, or of the least of God's mercies; and likewise acknowledging our disability to keep Covenant with God, or to perform any spiritual duty which he calleth us unto, unless the Lord Jesus do enable us thereunto by his spirit dwelling in us; do in the name of Christ Jesus our Lord, and in trust and confidence of his free grace assisting us, freely Covenant & bind ourselves, solemnly in the presence of God himself, his holy angels, and all his servants here present; that we will by his grace assisting, endeavor constantly to walk together as a right ordered congregation of Christ, according to all the holy rules of a church body rightly established, so far as we do already know it to be our duty, or shall further understand out of God's holy word: Promising first & above all to cleave unto him as our chief and only good, and to our Lord Jesus Christ as our only spiritual husband & lord, & our only high priest & prophet & king. And for the furthering of us to keep this blessed communion with God and his son Jesus Christ, & to grow up more fully herein; we do likewise promise by his grave assisting us, to endeavor the establishing amongst ourselves all his holy ordinances which he hath appointed for his church here on earth, and to accrue all & every of them in such sort as shall be most agreeable to his Will, opposing to the utmost of our power whatsoever is contrary thereunto, and bewailing from our hearts our own neglect hereof in former times, and our putting ourselves therein with any sinful invention of men.

And lastly, we do hereby Covenant and promise to further to our utmost power, the best spiritual good of each other, & of all and every one that may become members of this congregation, by mutual instruction, reprehension, exhortation, consolation & spiritual watchfulness over one another for good. And to be subject in and for the Lord and the administrations & censures of the congregation as far as the same shall be guided according to the rules of God's most holy word. Of the integrity of our hearts herein, we call God the searcher of all hearts to witness: Beseeching him so to bless us in this & all our enterprises, as we shall sincerely endeavor by the assistance of his grace to observe the Holy Covenant in all the branches of it inviolable forever; and where we shall fail, there to wait upon the Lord Jesus for pardon and acceptance & healing for his Name's sake.[25]

By the time John acquired his land, cattle were scarce as everyone wanted them for their own use and for potential profit. A good cow cost £30-40, a pair of oxen, £40. Flanders[26] mares were £27, heifers £13, sheep 50s. Other prices were also high, including corn at 5s a bushel. At 3s a day, carpenter's wages were less than a bushel of corn, so John paid a dear price to stock his farm. What surplus product he didn't sell in Dorchester, he probably took to Boston's Thursday market.[27] When business required him to go to Plymouth, he traveled by John Holland's ferry which went between the Cap-

tain's Point and Mr. Newbury's creek. Cost was four pence.

John was barely settled on his own acreage when the winter of 1638 began. It was the hardest winter known up to that time. The snow lasted from November 4 to March 23 and was a foot and a half deep. The spring was so cold John had to plant his corn two and three times for it rotted in the ground. Fortunately, the summer was warm and produced a crop that exceeded expectations. John experienced what was probably the greatest fright of his young life that summer. Friday June 1 began as a clear, beautiful day with a gentle wind from the west. The sky was perfectly clear. This tranquil scene was shattered by a massive earthquake which struck between three and four p.m. It began with "a noise like a continued thunder or the rattling of coaches in London." It lasted about four minutes with aftershocks for 20 days. Houses shook to their foundations, chimneys fell, trees toppled. Ships at sea and in the harbor were jostled as if hit by tidal waves. For years afterwards, it was common to reckon dates as "so long since the earthquake." That summer also produced a major storm August 3. It came out of the southwest producing tides 14 to 15 feet above normal which caused great damage.[28]

We can presume John was part of the crew which built the new Meeting House in 1645.[29] The town raised £250 for the edifice, which was located at or near the spot of the first meeting house at the northerly end of Pleasant street. The house was subsequently moved to Meeting-house Hill. An additional £40 was raised in 1646 to finish the structure, "making the walls decent within and without."[30] He probably also helped build the bridge over the Neponset river in 1651. Henry White was authorized to build it, and it replaced the ferry which had been operated by Bray Wilkins.

By 1654 Dorchester was a thriving community. It included about 140 dwellings with gardens and orchards, with nearly 1500 fruit trees and plenty of corn land producing good crops. The livestock population was 450.[31] John undoubtedly shared in the prosperity. When he moved to Providence, he was identified as someone with greater resources than the average new settler. That he was involved in commerce with his Dorchester neighbors is suggested by the probate of Edward Bullock's estate on 29 January 1656. It showed a debt of 5s to John Whipple for "stockings and a cocke."[32]

THE MOVE TO PROVIDENCE

After about 26 years in Dorchester, John sold his property in 1658 to George Minot and began preparations to move to Providence.[33] Why Rhode Island, a place ordinary Puritans regarded as a cesspool of vile heresies and irreligion? Was he fed up with Puritanism? (He is presumed

to have joined the Baptist church in Providence)[34] Why leave Massachusetts with its white population of over 20,000 for the frontier with a white population of approximately 1,000 (200 families) and an Indian population estimated at more than 5,000?[35] Having moved to Massachusetts when it was the frontier, he understood the hard life that lay ahead. Did he see an opportunity to give his family of six sons and two daughters a better life?[36] Whatever the motivation, the family moved in 1659, and John soon became a leading citizen and a major contributor to the political life of the town and Colony. Their family home, long one of Providence's oldest houses, was on the east side of the river, a little north of Star street between North Main and Benefit streets.

John was received as a purchaser on 27 July 1659, with rights as a Proprietor.[37] By this date, all landowners were freemen, so he automatically assumed that status. The change in living conditions must have been dramatic, especially for the children whose only experiences were in a long-settled, populated town with somewhat easy access to Boston and Plymouth. That they were in the wilderness was confirmed six months after their arrival (on 27 January 1660) when the town voted to require all cattle owners to pay a half a penny for every cow owned to anyone who killed a wolf.

England was ruled by the Protectorate at this time, so what did John think when Charles II was crowned King in 1660?[38] After only a year in their new home, the family was confronted with a potentially disruptive change in government. Would Rhode Island's freedom of religion be taken away? Would portions of their territory be given to Massachusetts, Connecticut, and Plymouth? John Clarke, Rhode Island's Agent in England, petitioned for a Charter on 5 February 1661, asking for "a flourishing civil state . . . with full liberty in religious concernments." The Crown granted power to govern without a Charter as the Connecticut Charter issued April 23, 1662 encompassed all of Rhode Island except Providence, Warwick, Portsmouth, and Newport. Connecticut's Agent John Winthrop, Jr. agreed to submit the conflicting claims to arbitration, and in the summer of 1663 Rhode Island was issued its Charter. The Pawcatuct river, which was to be called the Narragansett wherever necessary to harmonize the Connecticut Charter with the findings of the arbitrators, was set as the boundary between the colonies.[39]

The Charter was accepted by the General Assembly 24 November 1663. The Whipple family probably journeyed to Newport to witness the beginning of their new government and to see the Charter, written on parchment and authenticated by the King's royal stamp and broad seal. It was read aloud and John learned freemen had the right to elect their own rulers and enact their own laws so long as they conformed to the laws of England. Within three years, he was in the Assembly helping to make

those laws. Benedict Arnold was named Governor and Roger Williams one of the Assistants.[40] The General Assembly was to include the Governor or his Assistant, the Assistants, and Deputies, not to exceed six from Newport, four each from Providence, Portsmouth, and Warwick, and two from any other place, town, or city. Land was to be held in "fee simple," subject only to taxes.[41]

BECOMES A PROVIDENCE PROPRIETOR

The vague boundaries of the original deeds and the equally vague conceptions of rights of original Proprietors and qualifications of subsequent Proprietors agitated Providence Town Meetings for half a century or more. In terms of land acquisition, John's arrival in Providence was timely. He became a Proprietor two months after the Assembly authorized Providence to "buy out and clear out" the Indians within its bounds and to purchase more adjacent land. He probably joined the original settlers led by William Harris in their efforts to grant more land in perpetuity to the Proprietors. Roger Williams led the opposition and regarded Capt. John's son, John, Jr., as one of his most troublesome opponents. In a letter to John, Jr. dated August 24, 1669, Williams disputed claims that the vote at Town Meetings was the exclusive right of the Proprietors. Williams argued that all freeholders had the right to vote on the disposition of land.[42]

Other than this issue, Capt. John and Williams had a great deal in common. Williams was about 13 years older and a native of Essex county England, the presumed place of John's nativity. Both sailed to the new world on the Lyon, Williams arriving in February 1631, John in September 1632, so both witnessed the beginnings of New England. Both were Moderators of Providence Town Meetings, both served in the General Assembly, both stayed in Providence when the Indians burned the town during King Philip's War.[43] Williams died between January and May 1683, John on 16 May 1685.[44]

John received land at Louisquisset (Louquisset) in 1660, later adding adjoining parcels which he gave to his sons Eleazer, William, and Samuel.[45] Eleazer built a home on his parcel in 1680. The general area became known as "Montalto" or highlands and could be seen from any high point in Providence.[46]

On 14 May 1660, Providence established a "seven-mile line" which marked its approximate limits on the west.[47] On 7 March 1661, lands outside the seven-mile line were ordered divided among the Proprietors. By 27 January 1663, there were 101 Proprietors, and they voted not to admit any more. In April 1664 they established a "four-mile line" east of the seven-mile line and allocated land between the lines as well as outside the seven-mile line. Distributions were ordered in February 1665, April 1675,

and May 1675. At the April distribution, John spoke in favor of the rights of one of the original Proprietors who had moved.[48] Lots were drawn for shares west of the seven-mile line in 1684. John's will distributes a great deal of land to his heirs, so we can assume he received his share in these various distributions.

TAKES ACTIVE ROLE IN LOCAL AND COLONIAL GOVERNMENT

John's first years in Providence were spent developing the farm and expanding his carpentry business. He participated in local affairs and his neighbors, recognizing his leadership capacity, elected him Town Treasurer in 1668 and 1683, to the Town Council in 1669, '81, '83, and Town Clerk in 1670, '71, '72, '76, '77, '81, '82, '83. He was granted a license to operate an Inn in 1674 and became a respected Inn keeper. A tavern keeper in those days became an immediate source of influence and power. The Inn was like a Town Meeting or Legislature in perpetual session with constant debates on issues of the day and proposals for town and Colony laws. It was the gathering place to learn what was going on in the community. When he was Town Clerk his Inn became the favorite place to hold Council meetings. No doubt those meeting days were the most profitable of the year for him. The General Assembly met there in 1690. The Whipple Tavern was located a little north of Towne street on property he had bought from Francis Wicks.[49] Periodically, temporary markets were set up adjacent to the Inn with stalls for a variety of vendors.

Every spring ice breakup damaged the bridge at Wayboysett; sometimes it was completely carried away. In January 1664 the town hired John, Thomas Roberts, and Resolved Waterman to repair it. This is the first public works contract found in the town records.[50] In October 1667 John and Roger Williams were among those ordered to view the bridge, determine "the most easy and facile way to repair it so that the passage may not be lost," and report their findings at the next Town Meeting.[51]

Since carpenters worked for private individuals it is rare to find evidence of their charges. However, Providence town records include an undated estimate in John's writing for the construction of a leanto: "To making of ye leanto and work about it, 06-00-00. To making of ye seller roof and shingling it, 01-05-00. to making of a door and shelves in ye leanto, 0-8-6." Among tools used by John were a froe, "a Rye bit," iron square, small joynter, carving tool, axe, clearing plane, whetting steel, wimble stock and bits (auger or gimlet used for boring), "soding iron", compasses, and brass rule for a chalk line.[52]

Nine of the 11 Whipple children were born in Dorchester; Joseph, and

Jonathan in Providence. Sarah's child-bearing spanned 24 years. She was 16 when she gave birth to John, Jr. in 1640, 40 when Jonathan was born. She died two years later, leaving John with four youngsters to care for: David, 10; Abigail, about 6; Joseph, 4; and Jonathan, 2. It is believed Benjamin, 12, William, 14, Eleazer, 21, and Samuel, 22 lived at home but were of an age to take care of themselves. Mary was 18 and married Epenetus Olney on 9 March in the year of her mother's death. John, Jr. 26, was married and had a daughter Mary, born 4 March 1665, and a son John, born 2 October 1666. Sarah, 25, had at least three children by the time of her mother's death: John and Sarah, birth dates unknown. Alice was born in 1665. This means Sarah was mother and grandmother to children of the same approximate age for at least the last year of her life.

SWEARS ALLEGIANCE TO KING CHARLES II

John took an Oath of Allegiance to Charles II in 1666 and served the first of seven terms in the General Assembly that year. His last term was in 1677. He served in the second Session of 1666 (September), replacing William Harris.[53] William Brenton was Governor. The first Session voted to allow Deputies to sit as a separate House; however, the second Session ordered them to sit with the Assistants. It was May 1668 before final action was taken providing for separate branches of the Legislature. There was an Indian scare in 1667, so the Assembly appointed Representatives from each of the four towns to meet with Sachems Mossup, Cachanaquant, and Ninicraft (Ninigret) at Warwick on May 28 and lay the rumors to rest.

The colony imposed a tax of £300 in 1668; Providence's share was £10. John was Town Treasurer that year and responsible for collecting it. He was on the Town Council in 1669 when the Assembly valued meadow land at £4 and planting land at £3 per acre, oxen at £4, cows at £3, horses at £3, and sheep at 4s for tax assessment. The 1669 Session permitted indicted persons to be represented by attorneys. The 1670 Assembly established values as follows: pork, 3d per pound; pease, 3s 6d per bushel; wheat, 5s bushel; wool, 12s per pound; butter, 6d per pound; corn, 3s per bushel; oats, 2s 3d per bushel. It stabilized New England currency by making 40 shillings equivalent to 30 shillings English sterling.

England was at war with the Dutch in 1672 and as a Deputy, John voted to place the Colony in a state of defense. The September 1673 Session passed a Sunday observance law, but not to "oppose or prorogate any worship."[54] In May 1679, it passed a Sunday law forbidding "servants to labor on the first day of the week," prohibiting all sporting, gaming, or shooting, and all tippling in taverns "more than necessity requireth."

The years 1666, '71, and '72 saw a great increase in the number of Quakers. The distinguished missionary John Burnyeat visited Newport in 1666 and 1671, and was joined there by George Fox for several weeks of revival meetings in 1672.[55] Fox also preached in Providence in July 1672. Roger Williams, almost 70 and a vigorous opponent of Quakerism, debated Burnyeat seven times in August 1672. Three debates were held in Newport, four in Providence. The audiences were large in both places and the Whipples probably attended the Providence sessions.[56] Despite Williams' opposition, the Quakers grew in strength and elected Nicholas Eaton Governor in 1672, William Coddington in 1674 and 1675, and Walter Clarke in 1676. They controlled the Assembly by 1673.

Neither Quakers nor Baptists, the two predominant groups in the colony after 1676, were interested in scholarly debates about doctrine or dogma, so few books or sermons were published. The emphasis upon a spirit-filled rather than an educated clergy created an intellectual and cultural vacuum that was not filled until the Anglicans and Congregationalists established churches in 1722. The absence of a professional clergy and an established church was largely responsible for the absence of a public school system. However, it is important to note that John's son Joseph built the first public school in Providence (27 January 1696). No colleges were founded and few townsmen sent their sons to Harvard or Yale.

On the eve of King Phillip's War, Deputy Governor John Easton headed a delegation to assure the Indians that the King and Rhode Island would respect their rights. But it was too late. The Indians didn't believe them. Chief Metacomet (King Philip, son of Ousamequin) of the Wampaanoags noted in 1674 that Indian problems were always settled in the white man's Court, Indians were always found guilty, and penalties were always Indian land to be given to the whites. "Tract after tract is gone," Metacomet said. "But a small part of the dominions of my ancestors remains. I am determined not to live till I have no country."[57]

The first Rhode Island casualties in that war were at Swansea on 24 June 1675 when nine or ten settlers were killed. By war's end, mainland Rhode Island had become a killing field of Indians. However, Rhode Island's government was in the hands of men whose doctrine was brotherly love and who were forbidden by their consciences to "train to fight or to kill." Consequently, towns had to make their own plans for defense.

DEFENDS PROVIDENCE IN KING PHILLIPS WAR

In February 1676, the central government encouraged mainland residents to move to Aquidneck Island for safety. Warwick responded by abandoning its town site and forming a corporate entity on the island. The

deserted town was burned to the ground on March 17; one house, a stone structure, survived. All but 27 of Providence's 200 inhabitants also fled to the island. Roger Williams, Captain of the Troop, and John Whipple were among the 27 to remain to defend their town. Imagine the fear that must have been prevalent at the time. The Indian attacks were brutal, carrying off women and children as captives. John's youngest, Abigail, 16, Joseph, 14, and Jonathan, 12, must have been much on his mind as well as his 25 grandchildren, the oldest about 13, the youngest a baby not yet walking. The decision to remain could not have been easy.

Tradition says that Williams, staff in hand, met with the Indians led by Chief Canonchet, son of Miantonomi, on March 27, but failed to persuade them to spare the town. The Sachems assured him of their personal regard for him but said they could not control their young warriors. It was too late to talk peace. Much of Providence went up in flames as the men held out in a blockaded house. The 30 houses that were burned are supposed to have been in the north part of town. John's house was one of those spared.[58] Because of the possibility of further attacks during the planting season, the Assembly, in April 1676, stationed a garrison at Providence. It was spring 1677 before those who fled straggled back to their burned homes in Providence and the other towns around the bay. Rebuilding was a long slow process. John apparently acquired the title "Captain" after being appointed by the Assembly in 1679 to serve on a Committee to give an account of the King Philip War.

Rhode Island law prohibited the enslavement of Indians, but on 16 August 1676 it ordered all Indians captured during King Phillip's War to be sold as servants. Those under age 5 were bound until 30; between 5 and 10, until 28; between 10 and 15, until 27; between 15 and 20, until 26; between 20 and 30, for eight years; those over 30, for seven years. The captives were given to the Proprietors who remained at the time of the March attack. Captain Arthur Fenner, William Hopkins, and John Whipple, Jr. were hired to sell the captives. After commissions and costs, each share amounted to 16s and 4 pence half penny.[59] The order authorizing the sale was signed by Roger Williams, Daniel Abbott, Henry Ashton, Francis Inman, John Morey, James Olney, Ephraim and John Pray, Benjamin, Eleazer, Jonathan, and Samuel Whipple, and Samuel Wilkinson. The Committee to dispose of the captives listed 25 men, including John Whipple and Roger Williams, as "having a whole share in the product."[60] John was Town Clerk at the time.

Trade and business conditions improved after the war. Rhode Island had more sheep than any other New England colony and exported large numbers. Wood was exchanged with France for linen. Deerskin and logwood went to England for cloth and iron ware. Horse, beef, pork, butter,

cheese, flour, peas, and biscuit went to Barbados in exchange for sugar and indigo. Cod, haddock, and mackerel were exported to the West Indies, Barbados, Spain, and the Straits. Providence's tax list for 1679 includes assessments against John, Samuel, Eleazer, David, and John, Jr. The latter was also responsible for the tax on the orphans of John Scott, children of his second wife, the widow Rebecca Scott.[61]

Growth and prosperity continued through John's final years. At 68, after 26 years in Providence, he had accumulated a large estate. His will, written 8 May 1682, three years before his death, shows he had already made sizeable bequests of property. He gave all his sons land, making sure they had an opportunity to prosper as the Colony grew. His 11 children had all reached adulthood by the time of his death. John, Jr. at 45 was the oldest, Jonathan, 21, the youngest. Only two, Eleazer, 74, and Joseph, 84, lived a longer life than their father. At 23, Joseph was made executor of his father's estate and given the obligation of burying him.

When he died on 16 May 1685, John had 36 grand-children. Two more were born within weeks of his death. His children eventually produced 73 offspring, 39 grandsons and 34 granddaughters. Twenty-six grandsons bore the Whipple name making John's descendants the most numerous to bear the Whipple surname in America. He was a widower his last 19 years, but with such a large family, service to the town and colony until 1683, and running one of the most popular Inns in that part of New England, John had little time to be idle or lonely. He was a productive citizen right up to the end of his long life.

WILL OF CAPTAIN JOHN WHIPPLE

Be it known unto all persons whom this may concern, that I John Whipple of the town of Providence in the Colony of Rhode Island & Providence Plantations in New England, senior, being in a great measure of health & in perfect memory; upon consideration of mortality, not knowing the day of my death, and having many children, etc. to prevent all differences that other ways may hereafter arise among them concerning my worldly estate do see cause to make my will & do hereby dispose of all my estate in this world, and do make this my last will & testament; I having formerly given unto **three of my sons** all my lands and meadows at Loquasqussuck [Louisquisset or Louquisset], **namely Samuel, Eliazer, & William** equally to be divided among them three, only excepting thirty acres which I gave unto **my son John** at the northwest end.

I give unto my three afore named sons, namely **Samuel, Eliazer, & William,** each of them, a quarter part of one right of commoning for pasturing, cutting of timber & firewood.

I give unto **my son Benjamin** a right of lands in the late division which is already laid out.

I give unto **my son David** a right of lands in the late division which is already laid out unto him.

I give unto **my son Jonathan** twenty five acres, on which he now dwelleth. Also I give unto my son **Jonathan** one division of lands which is ordered by the town to be laid out between the seven mile line & the four mile line & papers already drawn for.

I give unto **my son Joseph** my dwelling house & my three home lots & the garden next the river, also a six acre lot lying on the southern side of the Neck where upon the town of Providence standeth; also twenty acres near Thomas Clemence his dwelling; Also I give unto my son **Joseph** my share of meadow near Solitary Hill & two six acre lots lying on each side of said hill; also a five acre lot lying near where William Wickenden formerly dwelt; also one division beyond the seven mile line which is already ordered by the town & papers drawn for; also I do give unto my son **Joseph** all other divisions which shall hereafter belong unto two rights throughout.

I give unto my sons namely **John, Samuel, Eliazer, William, Benjamin, David, & Jonathan** unto these seven twelve pence to every of them.

I give unto **my three daughters** (namely) **Sarah, Mary & Abigail** unto every of them ten shillings.

I give unto my son **Joseph** all my right of lands in the Narragansett country.

I give unto my son **Joseph** all my moveable goods of what sort so ever, and all my cattle & all my tools; also I do make my son **Joseph my executor;** also my will is that my son **Joseph** do see that I be decently buried. This being the real absolute will & testament of me the said John whipple, sen., as above said I do hereunto set my hand & seal this eight day of May in the year one-thousand-six-hundred-eighty-two.

Witness my hand /s/ John Whipple Senior
Signed & sealed in the presence of us:
Thomas Arnold, John Arnold, Shadrach Manton

An endorsement on the back of the will states that Thomas Olney, Town Clerk and father-in-law to John's daughter Mary, was summoned to the Whipple home on May 16 to read the will to make sure John's intent was clear. Olney noted it was unclear whether lands were being left forever or only for a term of life. John's response was "forever, to dispose the same or any part thereof, at any time as they see cause." John noted that the scribe omitted his intent to give Jonathan one of his rights of land and common on the west side of the seven-mile line; that the 30 acres at the northwest end given to John should be 60 acres; that the

remainder of his farm at Louguisset should be divided equally between Samuel, Eleazer, and William; that his meaning when giving a quarter right of common to Samuel, Eleazer, and William was that it extend westward only to the seven-mile line.

By oath on May 27, before Assistants Arthur Fenner and Joseph Jencks, Olney testified that the changes were accurate and that John was "of a sound mind and perfect memory" when he dictated them. The will and endorsement were examined and approved by the Providence Town Council on May 27 and witnessed by Thomas Harris, Arthur Fenner, Joseph Jencks (all identified as Assistants), Edward Smith, Joseph Williams, Thomas Arnold, Eleazer Arnold, and Thomas Olney.

DESCENDANTS INCLUDE MEN OF DISTINCTION

John's first 15-16 years were spent in old England, and his 52 years in New England were almost equally divided between Dorchester and Providence. He was an inspiration to his children and grandchildren, many following him into public service. John, Jr. served in the General Assembly as both Deputy and Assistant, on the Town Council and as Town Treasurer and Town Clerk. Samuel, Eleazer, and Joseph were Deputies; Joseph also served as Assistant, on the Town Council, and as Colonel of the Milita. David was an Ensign. Grandson Joseph (1687-1750), son of Joseph^{2}, served as Deputy Governor in 1743, '44, and '46 as did his own son Joseph (1725-61) from 1749 to 1754.[62] Abigail's second husband was William Hopkins, and this union produced John's great-grandsons Stephen and Esek Hopkins. Stephen became Governor of Rhode Island, a member of the Continental Congress, and a signer of the Declaration of Independence. Esek was the first Commander-in-Chief of the Continental Navy. Great-great-grandson Commodore Abraham Whipple (1733-1819) (Noah$^{4-3}$, Samuel^{2}, John^{1}) was a genuine American hero and a man of firsts: first to lead a successful act of rebellion against British rule on America's shores (the *Gaspee* incident in Narragansett Bay in 1772); first to fire on and fight a successful naval engagement against a British warship at the outset of the Revolution (against *HMS Rose* in 1775); first of the Rhode Island Captains to serve under Esek Hopkins in the Continental Navy, 1776); first to demonstrate the vast potential for trade of the Ohio and Mississippi rivers by sailing with a cargo from Marietta, Ohio to Cuba in 1801. (See historical Appendix 4 for a brief biography.)

Today's descendants can be found in all walks of life and in all states. They are proud of their heritage.

CAPT. JOHN WHIPPLE ENDNOTES

1. The *Lyon* with a rampant lion on the prow, at 250 tons (some accounts indicate 100 tons), was one of the smaller vessels plying the New England trade. Its voyages in 1629-30-31-32 were as regular and safe as a ferry. William Pierce, it master, was noted for his skillful seamanship and his support of Puritan leaders. His first trip was in 1623 when, as master of the *Anne*, he brought 60 persons to Plymouth. In 1625, as master of the *Jacob*, he delivered a load of cattle to Plymouth.
2. When Land's End, a Cape in Cornwall at the south westernmost point of England, was lost to their view.
3. Charles E. Banks, *The Planters of the Commonwealth.* Baltimore: Genealogical Publishing Co., Reprint, 1979. 99-102.
4. Clarence A. Torrey, *New England Marriages Prior to 1700.* Genealogical Publishing Company, Inc. (Baltimore, 1985). Torrey does not suggest a surname, referring to her only as Sarah. This book lists early marriage records in New England and Long Island housed at the New England Historic Genealogical Society. It should not be presumed that all citations are primary sources. He included all references to every 17th century married couple he could find in any printed work and/or manuscript, whether or not a primary source. His 12 volumes contain 37,000 marriages and over 100,000 bibliographic references. His original manuscript, filmed in 1973, is in major genealogical libraries. Melinda Lutz Sanborn compiled *A Supplement to Torrey's New England Marriages Prior to 1700,* in 1991 and a Third Supplement in 2003 which includes corrections, deletions, new entries, and additional details to the original work. Both are published by the Genealogical Publishing Co., Inc.
5. By 1638, travel to and from Plymouth was by ferry operated by Bray Wilkins at a cost of a penny per person. The ferry left from the public landing on Davenport's creek going up stream to the tongue of land known as the ridge located about half way between the Neponset and granite bridges. Breen. 592.
6. Wills at Providence were sometimes proved at once upon execution. Irving Berdine Richman, *Rhode Island Its Making and Its Meaning,* 1636-1683. G. P. Putnam's Son. (New York and London, 1908). 186-88.
7. Charles M. Whipple, Jr, *Sons and Daughters of Jesse, a 360 Year History of the John Whipple family.* Southwestern Press, (Oklahoma City, 1976). 12.
8. In June 1700, the lot lying "between Archibald Walker's southward to the brook that cometh out of Samuel Whipple's land, eastward with the highway, and westward and northwestward with Moshassuck river" was voted by the town to remain common, "for a training field, burying ground, and other public uses." The burying place was to be run out by a committee appointed for that purpose. Establishment of this common burial ground did not, in many instances, immediately supersede the use of the family burial grounds. *Collections of the Rhode Island Historical Society,* vol. 5. Knowles and Vose Printers. (Providence, 1843). 184.
9. North Burial Ground is the oldest common burial ground in Providence; some family plots are older. It originally encompassed 45 acres and has grown to 150 acres with more than 100,000 graves. A number of bodies in family plots were re-interred there in the 19th century. William McKenzie Woodward of the Rhode Island Historical Preservation Commission says most gravestones in the earliest section of the cemetery face west, "following an 18th century custom based on the belief the sun will rise in the west on the Day of Judgment." Six former Governors are buried there: Stephen Hopkins, a great grandson of Capt. John Whipple and signer of the Declaration of Independence, Nicholas Cook, Arthur Fenner, James Fenner, John Brown Francis, Charles Jackson, and

Philip Allen. Donald D. Breed, staff writer, Providence *Journal-Bulletin,* "North Burial Ground also serves city as a recreation area." Date unknown but probably after 1979.

Dr. Charles Whipple of Edmond, Okla., descendant of Capt. John and Sarah Whipple, found the following in the plot with the stone of Capt. John and Sarah Whipple: 1). In memory of Col. Joseph Whipple who departed this life the 18th of May died 1769 aged 84 years 5 mos & 19 days. 2). In memory of ye Hon. Col. Joseph Whipple who departed this life anno dom 1746 in ye 85th year of his age. 3). In memory of Mrs. Alice Whipple ye wife of Col. Joseph Whipple born in Providence and died July 20th anno dom 1739 aged 75 years. 4). Jeremiah son of Capt John Whipple and Abigail his wife died Jan 2d 1731 aged 14 mos 23 da. 5). In memory of Mary wife of Capt. Charles Bardin (& youngest daughter of Col. Joseph Whipple) died Dec. 8, 1733 aged 29 years & 8 mos. 6). In memory of Capt John Whipple who was born in England & died in Providence Town 16th day of May anno dom 1685 about 68 years of age. 7). In memory of Mrs. Sarah Whipple wife of Capt John Whipple. She was born in Dorchester in New England died in Providence anno dom 1666 aged about 42 years. 8). In memory of Capt. William Whipple a Revolutionary purist who died on the 5th of July. Suppress not your tears. this is a soldiers grave. 9). In memory of Mrs. Abigail Whipple wife of William Whipple who died Nov. 16, 1818 age 64 years. 10). Miss Sussanah Whipple daughter of Joseph & Sarah 27 May 1797 in 23 year of her age. 11). Mrs. Mary Olney wife of Capt. Stephen Olney daughter of Joseph Whipple died May 24, 1798 age 27 years 4 mos. 12). Miss Freelove Whipple daughter of Joseph died Dec. 4, 1798 age 30 years 5 days. 13.) Miss Mehitable daughter of Joseph Whipple died 3 Feb. 1799 age 17 years 11 mos.

Rosemarie Polce also lists the following: 1). Miss Elizabeth Whipple, daughter of Joseph Whipple, Esq. & Mrs. Sarah expired 2-27-1800 21 yrs. 3 mos. 2 days. 2). Mrs. Amy Hurd, wife of Ambrose Hurd, daughter of Joseph Whipple departed 1-7th AD, 1803 age 42 yrs & 19 days. 3). In memory of Hatty Whipple Hurd the adopted daughter of Gen. John Whipple & Mrs. Naomi his wife who died May 3d, 1827 26th year of her age. 4). In memory of Mr. Joseph Whipple who departed this life Jan. 6, AD 1816 Age 82 yrs. 5). In memory of Mrs. Sarah Whipple, wife of Mr. Joseph Whipple, who departed this life April 2, 1820 aged 85 years. 6). In memory of Mrs. Naomi Whipple, wife of Gen. John Whipple who died Feb. 18, 1838 in the 83rd year of her age. 7). Sacred to the memory of Miss Joanna, daughter of Samuel & Deborah Whipple. She died Aug. 26, 1832 in the 36th year of her age. 8). In memory of Joanna Whipple 2d daughter of Mr. Samuel Whipple & Mrs. Deborah died Oct. 22d 1784 aged 3 yrs 10 mo & 11 days. 9). Sacred to the memory of Mr. Samuel Whipple of Providence, who died on the 17th day of October, AD 1809 in the 52nd year of his age. 10). Jeremiah son of Capt. John Whipple & Abigail his wife died January 2d 1731 aged 14 mos, 23 days. These are all in an undeeded lot on Dahlia Path in Section 9.

Just south on Elm Avenue in lot no. 716 & 1206 in Sec. 9 deeded to Arnold and Phebe Whipple is a tall monument listing on the Left side: Jabez Whipple, Sara, wife of Jabez, Mary, 2nd wife of Jabez. There are other names but they cannot be read. Right side: William Dexter born 9-27-1767, Died 10-3-1795; Phebe Dexter born 5-21-1766, Died 7-2-1821. Front: Children of Jabez. Mary born 3-16-1771, Died 2-3-1778; Susanna 3-1 or 4- 1771, 3-30-1793. Jabez 7-11-1785, 4-1-1803. Anna 8-21-1783, 5-1-1857. Back: Arnold Whipple born 12-18-1788, Died 2-17-1819 (?). Phebe Whipple

10. Son of Rev. Thomas Stoughton who served the parish at Great Coggeshall, Essex Co. from 1600-06. Israel was baptized there February 18, 1602/3. See transcripts of the Coggeshall baptisms for 1584-1630 (1609-10 missing).
11. A commissioned officer who served as standard-bearer.

12. Since for the first time government now included elected Representatives of the freemen (Deputies), the Assistants, by a doubtful construction of the Charter, claimed the right to veto actions (known as the "negative voice") of the Deputies even though it was a Unicameral Assembly. At the request of his constituents, Stoughton wrote a brief against the negative voice and circulated it among the ministers for reaction. Rev. John Cotton, who supported the Assistants, sent it to John Winthrop, then Deputy Governor. At the next meeting of the Court, Winthrop, to Stoughton's astonishment, denounced him as a "worm, a troubler of Israel, an underminer of the state." Stoughton's position was that the Assistants' authority was both ministerial and magisterial, but not arbitrary. The Assistants prevailed and Stoughton's brief was burned. Winthrop and Roger Ludlow labeled Stoughton's action as rebellion against the government and the Deputies, still somewhat surprised at being granted membership in the Court, submitted and Stoughton was disqualified for office for three years. But the feeling throughout the Colony was that Winthrop and Ludlow had gone too far and in the election of 1636, John Haynes was chosen Governor, Ludlow was defeated as Assistant, and Winthrop was returned by a greatly reduced vote. Morison. 91-93.

    Although his punishment was clearly disproportionate to his crime, Stoughton accepted it with courage and grace. In a letter to his brother, he noted that the Magistrates, especially Winthrop, "hath lost much of that applause that he hath had (for indeed he was highly magnified) . . . he is indeed a man of men but he is a man and some say they have idolized him and do now confess their error." Breen. 66-67.

13. Ralph M. Stoughton. "The Stoughton Families of Dorchester, Mass., and Windsor, Conn." *The American Genealogist,* New Haven: Vol. 29, No. 4, 1953. 198-99.
14. Stoughton returned to England during the Civil War and served as a Lieut. Colonel under Rainsboro (many Civil War Regiments were named for the gentlemen who raised, equipped, and commanded the troops) until his death at Lincoln in 1645. His wife Elizabeth died August 6, 1681. They had three sons, two of whom died young, and the third never married, and two daughters. Thus people of today named Stoughton trace their ancestry to his brother Thomas. Maude P. Kuhns, *The Mary and John.* Rutland, Vt.: Charles E. Tuttle Company, 1971. First Edition published 1943). 70-71.
15. John Osborne Austin, *Genealogical Dictionary of Rhode Island.* Joel Munson & Sons. Albany, N.Y. 1887. 221. The identity of Israel Stoughton as John's "master" gives credence to the conclusion he was indentured.
16. Fifty acres were given to the Master for every servant transported to the colony.
17. Conditions of the right to build required Stoughton to agree not to sell the mill without consent of the Plantation and to keep the bridge in repair.
18. In exchange for the right to build, Stoughton agreed to sell alewives at five shillings per thousand and to give plantation inhabitants preference to buy all fish taken.
19. Israel Stoughton's brother, Thomas, one of the early settlers of Dorchester and freeman and Constable in 1631, did emigrate to Windsor, Conn. He was a member of the first Court held in the River Colony in 1637. His descendants were numerous in Connecticut and New York. *History of the Town of Dorchester, Massachusetts* by a Committee of the Dorchester Antiquarian Society. Boston: David Clapp, Printer. 1859. 86.
20. In his early forties, John moved to Rhode Island, noted for both religious and political freedom. By then religious and political freedom were probably important to him.
21. "2 Jan. 1637. It is ordered that John Whipple shall have 8 acres of land granted him in full of all allotments to be laid out by Mr. Stoughton and Mr. Glover about the mill as may be least prejudicial to the Plantation, this grant being in regard of a former promise upon record." Dorchester Town Records (City Document 9) 4th Report of the Boston Record Commissioners. 1880. 27. "Mr. Stoughton and Mr. Glover" were

among the 12 Selectmen chosen in 1636. *History of Dorchester.* p. 148

22. The Pequot war led to the annihilation of the tribe. The war began in June 1637 and ended July 13 at the battle of Fairfield Swamp. Mohegan warriors joined the soldiers of Massachusetts and Connecticut in the various battles of the war. During the following year, the Mohegans and Narragansetts killed all the wandering Pequod tribes they came upon and eventually this entire Indian people were wiped out. Stoughton commanded the Massachusetts men who fought in those campaigns but there is no evidence John was a member of the troop.
23. Dorchester Church Records, Boston Commissioners Series, p. 7. After May 18, 1631, Colony law required freemen to become church members.
24. Records of Dorchester births previous to 1657 were destroyed by fire. Dates for the pre-1657 period are from family bibles. Facts on the town's first three years are from Court records and *Winthrop's Journals.*
25. *History of the Town of Dorchester, Massachusetts.* 148-50.
26. The Flanders horse was a stocky draft animal native to Western Europe at the beginning of The Roman invasion. It was considerably larger than the Asian or desert horse and was the ancestor of the Great Horse or British War Horse of The Middle Ages. The latter, in turn, fathered the modern draft breeds.
27. Hosmer, *Winthrop's Journal,* Vol. 1. 120, 152, 200.
28. Breen. 270-72.
29. The nails John used were made by hand, forged from strips of good quality iron called nailrod. A great deal of manual labor was required to make nails and it was the job of a blacksmith apprentice. The nailrod was flat, about 3/8 inch wide and 3/16th thick and the apprentice's tools were a small forge, small anvil with a chisel set in it, a hammer, a bolster, and a pair of tongs. The bolster, a piece of steel about 10 inches long, 1 1/4th inches wide, and a half inch thick, contained a hole the size of the wire of the nail in one end. If two sizes were to made, a different size hole was in the opposite end. The nailrod was heated, the end of the rod rounded to the size desired by being pounded on the anvil, then flattened or pointed. A slightly rounded, uneven mass was left for the head. The section just above the part left for the head was nearly severed with chisel and hammer. It was then re-heated and the end thrust into one of the holes in the bolster and severed from the rod by a twist of the hand. The nail head, generally oval or round and from 1/2 to 3/4 inches in diameter, was formed by a few skilful blows. A long, narrow head shaped as a "T" was made for special purposes. Sidney Perley, "Manufacture of Nails in Essex County." *Essex Antiquarian,* Vol. 2, No. 5, May 1898.
30. Breen. 76-77.
31. J. Franklin Jameson, ed., *Johnson's Wonder-Working Providence,* 1628-1651. New York: 1910. 41.
32. *Register.* 6:356.
33. George Minot, a native of Safron Walden, Essex, England, was born Aug. 4, 1594, died in Dorchester Dec. 24, 1671. He was a Deputy 1635-6, one of the first signers of the Church Covenant in 1636, a Ruling Elder for 30 years, and a Selectman for many years beginning in 1636. He gave the Whipple property to his 32-year-old son John who was born in England April 2, 1626. His other sons, James born Dec. 31, 1628, Stephen May 6, 1631, and Samuel Dec. 6, 1635, were born in England. *History of the Town of Dorchester, Massachusetts.* 67.
34. In *Sons and Daughters of Jesse,* Charles M. Whipple writes that John had a pastoral position and preached at the First Baptist Church for a time. (*Sons and Daughters of Jesse Whipple.* Oklahoma City. 1976). However, Rev. Henry Melville King does not list John in his *Historical Catalogue of the Members of the First Baptist Church in Providence, Rhode Island.* Providence: F. H. Townsend, Printer. 1908. It may be that John

joined Thomas Olney's Church founded circa 1652. Olney broke off from the main church because of his opposition to laying-on-of-hands. The Whipple and Olney family were obviously close since John, Jr. married Mary Olney and Mary Whipple married Epenetus Olney. If Capt. John was a preacher or a reader (a separate ministerial job) in Olney's Church, he would not be listed in the King book.

The Quaker ship *Woodhouse* docked in Newport in the summer of 1657 and its evangelists began their missionary work throughout the colony. Thus, the Whipples were undoubtedly exposed to the "new light" shortly after settling at Providence.

35. Imagine the logistics of moving a family of 10 in those days. Also imagine the impact the family had on its new community. It increased Rhode Island's white population by 1%, Providence's by 3%.
36. John, Jr. 19, Sarah 18, Samuel 15, Eleazer 14, Mary 11, William 7, Benjamin 5, and David 3.
37. *Early Records of Providence.* Vol. II. p. 117.

The inventory of Adam Mott's estate in 1661 indicates the price of various items when the Whipples arrived in Providence: 4 oxen, £28; 5 cows and 1 bull, £30; 1 horse, 1 mare and colt, £36; 32 ewes, 2 rams, £32; 6 swine, £4; wearing clothes, books, 2 suits, 2 doublets and breeches, 1 gown of gray cloth, and every day clothes, £11; 4 yards coarse Kersey, £1; 8 pair stockings, £1 12s; 1 feather bed and furniture, £6; 1 brass kettle, £1; 6 pewter dishes (14 pounds), 1 quart, 2 pint pots, £1 6s; iron pots, pans, etc., £3 14s; 7 pair sheets, 2 table cloths, 6 napkins, pillowbers, £4; 2 tables, 1 joint stool and chair, £1 4s; 1 cart and plow, 2 chains, £3 10s; 1 hoe and axe, 3 scythes, 10s. William B. Weeden, Early Rhode Island a Social History of the People 1636-1790. New York, 1910. The Grafton Press. 56-57.

38. The return of the Monarchy was celebrated in Providence Wednesday October 24, 1660 with a reading of the King's proclamation and a parade featuring the town's Train Band. All children and servants were given the day off to honor the King.
39. The Charter proscribed an eastern boundary which included land extending three miles east of Narragansett Bay (somewhat vaguely described) and east of the Blackstone river as far as a line running north from the falls at Pawtucket. Thus Rhode Island acquired claims to territory previously thought to lie in the Plymouth colony. Its boundaries remained in dispute for years. Connecticut repudiated the arbitration award, saying it had not authorized Winthrop to make any concessions and tried to annex the Narragansett country for 40 years.
40. Arnold was great great grandfather of the Revolutionary War traitor, Benedict Arnold.
41. The Narragansett Indians acknowledged their submission to the King as English subjects on April 4, 1662 The submission was made to Charles I in 1644 but because of the Civil War, it failed to reach him. Nineteen years later the petition was received by Charles II without the knowledge or consent of the contemporary Indian leaders. However, on November 26, 1663, Sachems Pessicus and Ninigret formally acknowledged to the Rhode Island Assembly their status as English subjects and "most kindly thanked King Charles for his grace."

The Charter provided for Deputies to be chosen by freemen and for the Assembly to hold two regular Sessions a year—the first Wednesday in May and the last Wednesday in October. It was to elect officers, make, ordain, constitute, or repeal laws, statutes, orders, etc. not contrary and repugnant but as nearly as may be agreeable to the laws of England, and erect and settle Courts of Jurisdiction. The Governor or his Deputy and six Assistants would constitute a quorum. The Governor and other chief officers were to be chosen annually in May; the Assembly could remove officers for cause. It provided for the training of the Militia, the encouragement of the whale fishery, and the cultivating of the grape. It addressed problems with Massachusetts by directing that Rhode Islanders could "pass and repass" through the rest of the English colonies without "molestation"

and "with freedom" and could "converse and hold commerce and trade with such of the inhabitants of our other English colonies." It also provided that in matters of public controversy between Rhode Island and the other New England colonies "it shall be lawful for the Governor and Company to make their appeals therein to the King."

The Assembly that met in 1664 repealed laws inconsistent with the new government, adopted a "seal with the motto Rhode Island and Providence Plantations and the word Hope over the head of the Anchor." It provided for two Annual Sessions of the General Court of trials to be held at Newport, a special Court of three Assistants to hear cases that didn't exceed the value of £10 at Providence and Warwick, and a special Court to be convened at Newport for merchants and seamen as the occasion warranted. Richman. 386-7, 393-95.

42. Williams wrote: Grant that there have been discourse and agitation many, about the lands and purchase, yet it is not reasonable and righteous in all men's eyes. Yet since there are so many purchasers who ordinarily do not and others yet will not come to the town meetings, yet their consent should be had, and the consent of the majorities should determine the matters of their purchase, and oblige the minor differing from them. I understand not yet of the damage of a farthing that any of you have sustained, or are likely to do, from those whom you count your adversaries. *Publications of the Rhode Island Historical Society,* New Series. Vol. 1. Standard Printing Co. Providence, April 1893-January 1894. 157-58. (Hereafter *Society*). Rider's Historical Tract No. 14, 38. Manuscript in the library of the Rhode Island Historical Society.

43. There is also the possibility of a distant relationship by marriage. Katherine (Catherine) Angell, daughter of William and Alice (Ashton) Angell, citizen and fishmonger of St. Thomas Apostle, London, married John Pemberton, grocer and citizen of London, and a first cousin of Roger Williams on Jan. 19, 1609-10. William Angell had a son James who had a son Thomas who may be the Thomas Angell who arrived in Boston with Roger Williams. *Register,* 48:299

Thomas Angell, born in 1618, arrived in Boston Feb. 5, 1630, a lad of 12, on the *Lyon* with Roger Williams. He was one of five to settle Providence with Williams in the summer of 1636. Thomas named his second son James, giving credence to the lineage. Thomas' daughters Alice and Margaret married brothers Eleazer and Jonathan Whipple, sons of John. While John Whipple and Thomas Angell were born about the same time, Angell lived 10 more years, dying in 1695. Austin. p. 4

Thomas Olney married Mary Ashton, sister of Alice (Ashton) Angell. Mary Olney, daughter of Thomas and Mary (Ashton) Olney, was the first wife of John Whipple, Jr. Austin. p. 470. [*The American Genealogists.* Vol. 21, No. 3, January 1945. (*The American Genealogists,* 10: 89; Stilwell's Hist. Gen. Misc., III; ex inform. Richard LeBaron Bowen, Esq.).].

44. Williams' birth has been fixed at various dates from 1599 to 1606. The Rhode Island Historical Society has a copy of a letter, supposedly written by Williams, dated Feb. 7, 1677-78 stating he was about seventy-five years old. This indicates he was born in 1603 or 1604. There is no record of the day or month of his death. He subscribed his name to an agreement with the Pawtuxet men on Jan. 16, 1683 and on May 10, John Thornton, in a letter to Samuel Hubbard wrote: ". . . the Lord hath arrested by death our ancient approved friend Mr. Roger Williams." This indicates his death was between Jan. 16 and 10 May 1683.

45. Louisquisset or Louquisset is an Indian name of a place or brook in the town of Smithfield, about four miles west of Pawtucket, and easterly from the Lime Rock village. W. R, Staples, *Annals of the Town of Providence.* Providence: Knowles and Vose, 1843. 566.

46. *Society,* New Series. Vol. 5. Providence: Standard Printing Co., 1897. 127-29.

47. The seven mile line is the easterly line of the town of Scituate, Glocester, and Burrilville, and the westerly line of the towns of Cranston, Johnston, and Smithfield. It begins at the southeast corner of the town of Scituate, thence running a northerly course to the line of Massachusetts. It is said to be seven miles west of Fox Point. *Annals of Providence.* 566.

48. As early as 1651 many Providence Proprietors felt that Joshua Vermin, one of the first six to arrive and who later moved to Salem after being censored for violating the liberty of conscience, should forfeit his proprietary share. Vermin wrote the Proprietors in April 1651 that he looked upon his purchase as his "lawful right," something that couldn't be taken away just because he moved. He wrote it was "contrary to law, reason, and equity, for to dispose of my part without consent" and they should "deal not worse with me, than with the Indians, for we made conscience of purchasing it of them, and hazarded our lives" and should not "be denied of our purchase." Twenty-four years later some still felt Vermin should be excluded in the distribution. At the April 1675 meeting, John Whipple, Thomas Olney, Jr. Epenetus Olney, and Thomas Harris, Sr. championed Vermin's rights. *Society.* New Series. Vol. 3. April 1895-January 1896. 226-27. Vol. 4, April 1896-January 1897. 161-62

49. Dr. Charles Whipple of Edmond, Okla. lists the exact address as 369 North Main Street.

50. The contract was for £14 10 shilling to be paid in "wheat at 5s per bushel, pease at 4s per bushel, and Indian corn at 3s per bushel, and what peage is paid is to be at sixteen per penny white and eight a penny black." Specifications: They shall mend up that part of the bridge that is down in this manner following they are to make timber work in the form of a square, diamond fashion, which shall serve in the stead of those two trestles that are down, and share raise it up in the river to make up the bridge and lay sufficient gice (sic) over the said diamond unto the other trestles next it on both sides and to plank with planks until it be sufficiently planked and if there be not only planks enough then to find planks to finish it and to mend all the defects of the rest of the planks that are faulty, and also to procure posts and rails and rail up the bridge where the defects are, and also to set up new posts where they are wanting at the end of the bridge as well as the one end as the other, and their timber is to be carted by the town to the end of the said bridge. Edward Field, editor, *State of Rhode Island and Providence Plantations at the End of the Century: A History.* Vol. 3. Boston & Syracuse: The Mason Publishing Company, 1902. 588-90.

    Gice as used above should probably be guy which means to keep in place, steady, or direct by means of a guy. A guy is a rope, chain, rod, etc. to secure or steady anything liable to shift its position or to be carried away. The record shows the bridge was carried away several times.

51. *Providence Town Records.* Vol. III. 110, 117.

52. Ibid. 591.

53. He was Deputy in 1666-69-70-72-74-76-77 according to John Osborne Austin. p. 221. *Collections of the Rhode Island Historical Society.* (Hereafter Collections). Vol. 2 gives his service as 1666-74-76-77. 645-49. John, Jr.'s service as Deputy may be the reason for the confusion. Austin lists John, Jr.'s service as 1670-81-82-84-86-90. p. 221. Collections says he served in 1669-70-72-81-82-84-86-90-91. 645-49.

54. Used here, prorogate means to direct. "Although we know by man not any can be forced to worship God or for to keep holy or not to keep holy any day; but forasmuch as the first days of the weeks it is usual [to forbear ordinary work] and [forasmuch as some spend Sunday] in debasedness or tippling and unlawful games and wantonness . . . therefore this Assembly not to oppose or prorogate any worship but as by preventing debasedness, etc. doth enact [various fines for disorderly conduct]." Another purpose was that "all modest assemblies may not be interrupted; especially all such that profess they meet in the worship

of God, if some of them will be most false worshipers they should only be strove against therefore with spiritual weapons." Irving B. Richman, *A Study in Separatism.* Boston: HoughtonMifflin and Company, 1905. footnote 1, p. 404. [*Colonial Records.* Vol. 2, 503-04.]

55. Before leaving Rhode Island the summer of 1672, George Fox sent a letter to John Whipple, Jr. and Thomas Olney, Jr. concerning the rights and liberties of the town and people of Providence. Olney's answer indicated the colony's government was in the hands of the Friends and he wasn't too happy about it. Both were members of the General Assembly in 1672. Olney was ordained pastor of the First Baptist church in 1668. *Collections.* Vol. 5, 1843. 154-55. In a letter to the author dated June 26, 1992, Meredith Sorozan, reference assistant at the Rhode Island Historical Society, wrote, "I was unable to find the letter George Fox sent to Thomas Olney, Jr. and John Whipple, Jr."

56. Williams used Fox's book *The Great Mystery* to prepare 14 propositions to be debated. He said his goal was to vindicate the most holy name of God and the name of the Colony of Rhode Island. Richman. 419-23.

57. William G. McLoughlin, *Rhode Island, A Bicentennial History.* New York: W. W. Norton & Co., 1978. 42. James N. Arnold, *Vital Records of Rhode Island,* 1636-1850. Providence: Narragansett Historical Publishing Co., 1892. 1:395.

58. The Indians lost the war and those in Rhode Island who had remained neutral were placed under the daughter of chief Ninigret (he died in 1676) until Ninigret II came of age. Tribal affiliations lost significance as Narragansetts, Wampanoags, Sakonnets, and Nianticks were merged. They were allowed to keep a small part of the Indian domain near Charlestown, R. I, but lived on it virtually as a reservation. Under Ninigret II and his successors, they eked out a bare existence, farming, fishing, hunting, and working for the whites. Gradually they were forced to dispose of their land. By 1880 only 200 remained and they were officially de-tribalized by an Act of the Legislature. Except for the private plots they lived on, the remaining Indian land was sold. McLoughlin. 44-5

59. "To Anthony Low, five Indians, great and small, £8; to James Rogers, two for 22 bushels of Indian corn; to Philip Smith, two, in silver, £4 10s; to Daniel Allin, one, in silver, £2 10s; to Caleb Carr, one for 12 bushels of Indian corn; to Elisha Smith, one, in wool, 100 pounds; to Elisha Smith, one for three fat sheep." *Collections.* Vol. 5, 1843. 172.

Proprietors acknowledging receipt of their monies: James and John Angell, Daniel Abbott, Thomas Arnold, Thomas Field, William Hawkins, Jr., Abraham Man, Samuel Nixoll, John Whipple on behalf of James Olney, Ephraim, John, and Richard Pray, Edward and John Smith, Thomas Wallinge, Nathaniel Waterman, Eleazer Whipple, Valentine Whitman, Roger Williams, Samuel Winsor, and Joseph Woodward. *Society.* New Series. Vol. 1, April 1893-January 1894. 236-8.

60. The other Proprietors to receive a full share in the Indian product: Daniel Abbott, James Angell, John Angell, Thomas Arnold, Henry Ashton, Edward Bennett, Thomas Clemence, Capt. Fenner, Thomas Fenner, Thomas Field, Zachariah Field, William Harris, William Hawkins, William Hopkins, William Lancaster, Abraham Man, John Morey, James Olney, Ephriam Pray, John Pray, Nathaniel Waterman, Valentine Whitman and Samuel Winston. Richard Pray and Joseph Woodward were allocated three-fourths of a share; Edward Smith, Thomas Walling, Nelle (sic) Whipple, and Samuel Whipple, a half share. *Collections.* Vol. 5, 1843. 170.

61. *Society.* New Series. Vol. 1. April 1893-January 1894. 231-33. John, Jr. married (2) Rebecca (____), widow of John Scott, April 15, 1678. "The orphans of John scott were taxed 4s 1d. Austin. 372.

62. John Russell Bartlett, *The Records of the Colony of Rhode Island and Providence Plantation in New England.* Vol. 5. (Providence, 1856-62). 66. Bertram Lippincott, III, *Redwood Genealogy.* Unpublished Manuscript. (Newport, R. I, 1986). 13-14.

Below are listed Individuals with the Whipple surname who have written, edited, illustrated, and/or provided the photography for published books and periodicals. The name of the book, publisher, date of publication, number of pages, and ISBN are provided in this order when known.

A.B.C. Whipple. (Addison Beecher Colvin)

Yankee Whalers in the South Seas. Doubleday. Garden City, NY. s954, p. 304

Later edition:. Charles E. Tuttle Co. Rutland, VT. 1973. p. 304. 0804810575.

Pirate: Rascals of the Spanish Main. Doubleday & Company, Inc. Garden City, New York. 1957. p. 285

Tall Ships and Great Captains: a narrative of famous sailing ships through the ages and the courageous men who sailed, fought or raced them across the seas. Harper & Brothers. New York. 1960, p. 216

Famous Pirates of the New World. Random House. New York. 1963. p. 184 0394905350. Children's book.

The Fatal Gift of Beauty: The Final Years of Byron and Shelley. Harper & Row, New York. 1965. p. 298

All About Nelson. W. H. Allen & Company. London. 1966. p. 184

Mysterious Voyage of Captain Kidd. Random House. New York. 1970. p. 286. 0394904223.

Fighting Sail. Time-Life Books. Alexandria, VA. 1978. p. 184. 0809425560.

The Whalers. Time-Life Books. 1979. p. 176. 0809426722.

The Racing Yachts. Time-Life Books. 1980. p. 176. 0809426943.

The Clipper Ships. Time-Life Books. 1980. p. 176. 0809426773.

The Mediterranean. Time-Life Books. 1981. p. 208. 08094333834.

Planet Earth: Storm. Time-Live Books. 1982. p. 176. 0809443120.

Restless Oceans. Time-Life Books. 1983. p. 176. 0809443406.

The Challenge. Quill, New York. 1989. p. 320. 0688089089. In the mid 19th century, an exuberant expanding America took the lead as a maritime power thanks to the clipper ship. In this tale, two ships encounter many terrors as they race around Cape Horn. The voyage, that ultimately ended in disaster, heralded the close of an era. 14 photos.

Vintage Nantucket. The Globe Pequot Press. Guildord, CT. 1989 p. 160. 0871064502.

To the Shores of Tripoli: the Birth of the U.S. Navy and Marines. Morrow/Avon. New York. 1991. p. 357. 0688087817. An often over-

looked yet significant and prophetic event in U.S. history. The Barbary War was America's first battle against an Arab despot and President Thomas Jefferson's first major challenge to U.S. foreign policy. Whipple combines accounts of the frigate *Philadelphia* going aground off Tripoli, triumphant Muslims carrying the ship, cargo, and 307 officers and crew members into captivity. Whipple skillfully tells of America's repeated attempts to rescue the hostages and the daring overland invasion of Tripoli—an event memorialized to this day in the Marine hymn. It's a great yearn as well as first-rate history.

Critters: Adventures in Wildest Suburbia. Saint Martin Press, LLC, New York. 1994. p. 209. 0312104456. Squirrels in the bird feeder, racoons in the garbage, rabbits in the garden—the wildlife that was supposed to be banished by suburban development has instead had a population explosion in our backyards. Whipple has written an essential guide for coping with the annoying, endearing, comical, and intelligent critters in our midst. Line drawings.

Dr. Allen Oldfather Whipple.

The Evolution of Surgery in the United States. Charles C. Thomas. Springfield, IL. 1963. p. 180

The Story of Wound Healing and Wound Repair. Charles C. Thomas. 1963. p. 135

The Role of the Nestorians and Muslims in the History of Medicine. Princeton University Press. Princeton, NJ. 1967. p. 136. 0598584285. Allen is a 6th great grandson of Matthew Whipple of Ipswich, MA.

Gen. Amiel Weeks Whipple.

*A Pathfinder in the Southwest: the itinerary of Lieutenant A. W. Whipple during his explorations for a r*ailway route f*rom Fort Smith to Los Angeles in the years 1853 & 1854.* Grant Foreman, editor. University of Oklahoma Press. Norman. 1941. p. 298

The Whipple Report: Journal of an expedition from San Diego, California to the Rio Colorado, from Sept. 11 to Dec. 11, 1849. Western Lore Press. Los Angeles. 1961. p. 100. Originally published as a U.S. Senate document in 1849. this expedition is distinguished because it travels from West to East. Whipple writes one of the best of our overland narratives. Amiel is a 5th great granson of Matthew Whipple of Ipswich, MA.

Andy Whipple.

Competitive Swimming for New Champions: A Guide to the Kinesthetic Feedback Approach. McGraw Hill. New York. 1979. 0070716900.

The English Pub. Viking Books. New York. 1985. p. 11. 0670296864.

Babette S. Whipple.
Dynamics of Discussion: Grouptalk. Porthole Press. Belmont. 1975.

Barbara Whipple. Multiple authors
Water Media, Processes. and Possibilities. Watson-Guptill. New York. 1986. p. 144. 0823056953. Discusses new ways to emphasize composition and negative shapes rather than techniques in the mediums of watercolor, acrylic, gouache, and casein.
Water Media Techniques. Watson-Guptil. 1989. p. 144. 0823056767.
I've Got Cancer: But It Doesn't Have Me!: A Survivor's Book of Poems. Full Moon Press. Westmont, IL. 1995. 0964789701.
Reflections of Northeast Georgia. Barbara Whipple Publisher. Cordele, GA. 1997. p. 165

Beverly Whipple. Multiple authors.
Acceptance. (Wrote foreword). New Harbinger Publications. Oakland, CA. p. 350. 15722419691. Learn how others have handled everything from their first sexual encounter to abusive situations to rekindling romance in a long-term marriage. Women from all walks of life share their discoveries and joys, as well as what they wish they'd done differently.
G Spot. Dell Publishing, New York. 1983. p. 234. 0440130409.
El Punto G. Random House Espanol.
Safe Encounters: How Women Can Say Yes to Pleasure and No to Unsafe Sex. McGraw Hill Book Co. New York. 1989. 222. 0671689134. Offers vital information and creative guidance to romantic lovemaking that is at the heart of safe sex – and answering the questions that worry so many women about sexually transmitted diseases.
Private Thoughts: Exploring the Power of Women's Sexual Fantasies. (Forward by Beverly Whipple). New World Library. 2001. p. 304. 1577311469. This ground- breaking book describes common fantasy roles for women; illuminates the diverse functions of women's sexual fantasies, from stimulating orgasm to improving self-image; helps women discover their own fantasy styles; and offers straightforward advice for when and how to talk about fantasies.
Outwitting Osteoporosis: The Smart Woman's Guide to Bone Health. Beyond Words Publishing, Inc. Hillsboro, OR. 2003. 158270090. With this book, women who want to maximize good health as they age can learn how to prevent and treat the disease. The book provides the most current research and offers practical advice about maintaining or regaining normal bone mass.

Benjamin Whipple.

Marshall and Taney: Statesmen of the Law. University of Minnesota Press. 1939. p. 293. 0598835946.

Catherine Whipple. Co-author.

Shannon: An Ojibway Dancer. The Lemer Publishing Group. Minneapolis, MN. 1993. 0822596431.

Blaine Whipple.

Scott: A Name Worth Looking Into. Illustrated. Self Published. Portland, OR. 1981. p. 211

Structuring & Documenting Real Estate Exchanges. Northwest Center for Professional Education. Bellevue, WA. 1982. First published in 1979 by Executive Seminars. Portland, Oregon.

History and Genealogy of "Elder" John Whipple of Ipswich, Massachusetts. His English Ancestors and American Descendants. Trafford Publishing Co. Victoria, B.C. 2003. 1- 55395-076-1.

15 Generations of Whipples Descendants of Matthew Whipple of Ipswich, Mass. Abt 1590-1647. An American Story. 2007. Blaine is a 8th great granson of Matthew Whipple of Ipswic, MA.

Chandler Henry Whipple. Co-author.

Code Word Ferdinand: Adventures of the Coast Watchers. G.P. Putnam's Sons. New York. 1964. p. 289. The story of the people who kept watch on the skies of the South-west Pacific during World War II providing information on the movement of the Japanese.

William F. Halsey: Fighting Admiral. G.P. Putnam's Sons. 1968. p. 222

The Indian in Connecticut. Berkshire Traveler Press. Stockbridge, MA. 1972. p. 95

The Indian and the White Man in Massachusetts & Rhode Island. Berkshire Traveler Press. 1974. 0912944129. Describes the Indian way of life and customs from their first appearance in the area to the present day, emphasizing the changes forced upon them by the white man.

The Indian and the White Man in New England. Berkshire House Publishing, Inc. Lee, MA. 1976. 0912944382. Chandler is a 6th great grandson of Matthew Whipple of Ipswich, MA.

Charles Henry Whipple, Brig. General, U. S. Army.

Genealogy of the Whipple-Wright, Wagner, Ward-Pell, McLean-Burnett Families. Together with Records of Allied Families. Los Angeles: Press of Commercial Printing House, 1917.

Charles King Whipple

Relation of the American Board of Commissioners for Foreign Missions to Slavery. Michael Joseph. London. 1966. p. 159. Negro Universities Press. 1969.

Charles M. Whipple. Co-author.

The Compatibility Test: How to Choose the Right Partner and Make Your Marriage a Success. Prentice-Hall, Inc. Englewood Cliffs, NJ. 1976. 0131540130.

Charles M. Whipple, Jr. Ph.D.. Ed.D., Litt.D.

Sons and Daughters of Jesse. Southwestern Press. Oklahoma City. 1976.

A History of William Whipple of Dorchester, Massachusetts and Providence, Rhode Island.

A History of Captain John and Sarah Whipple of Dorchester, Massachusetts and Providence, Rhode Island 1617-1685: A Multigenerational Study of the First Whipple Family in America.

The Psychology of Myth

Matching People With People

The Exceptional Individual

Charles T. Whipple.

Havelock: Death in the Desert. Xlibris Corporation. 2000. 0738862924.

Charlotte Whipple Underwood.

Shakespeare's The Merchant of Venice. The Macmillan Co. New York. 1918.

Chris G. Whipple. Editor.

Energy and the Environment: A Risk-Benefit Approach. Pergamon. 1976. 0080208736.

Risk Analysis in the Private Sector. Plenum Publishing. New York. 1985. 0306419246.

Dan Whipple. Multiple authors.

Frommer's Montana & Wyoming Guide. IDG Books Worldwide. 2000. p. 435. 002863697X.

Click. University Press of Colorado. Boulder. 2001. 0870816527.

The Heartland: Missouri, Kansas, Nebraska, South Dakota and North Dakota Driving Guides. National Geographic Society, Washington, D.C. 1997. 0792274237. Durable, inexpensive, and concise with enticing photography, each guide includes: Up to 25 driving itineraries with tips on well-known and unusual spots to explore, accurate estimates on driving times, mileage, road conditions, and more.

Darrel Keith Whipple.
A Whipple Family History: Joseph Whipple 1753-1834, Marks Whipple 1805-1880, John Whipple 1855-1941.

David Whipple. Editor.
Coal Models and their use in Government Planning. 1982. p. 261. 027590880l.

D. F. Whipple.
Shadow Feilds. iUniverse and Book Surge. 2006
Snooker Glen. Book Surge. 2007. Both available from Amazon.

Don Welch Whipple.
The Quary. Four Seasons Publishing. 1999. 1891929275.

Dorothy Whipple.
Young Anne. 1927
Greenbanks. John Murray. London. 1932. p. 374.
Short Stories on Approval. 1935.
After Tea. 1941.
They Knew Mr. Knight. 1934. Filmed in 1945.
The Other Day: an autobiography. Michael Joseph. London. 1936. Later volumes:
Cedric Chivere Ltd. Bath, England. 1976. p. 253. 0859971538.
They Were Sisters. 1943. Filmed in 1945.
Every Good Deed. John Murray Publisher. 1946. p. 102.
Because of the Lockwoods. Samuel French Ltd. London. Undated. Also: Peoples Book Club. Chicago. 1949. p. 308. Also: 1956. 0573017220.
High Wages. Penguin Books. No. 549. 1949. p. 286.
Someone at a Distance. Popular Book Club. London. 1954. p. 288.
Wednesday. 1961.
A Very Little Tortoise. 1962.
The Smallest Tortoise of All. Frederick Warne. London. 1964.
The Little Hedghog. 1964.
Random Commentary (complied from Notebooks and journals kept from 1925 onwards). Michael Joseph. London. 1966. p. 159.
Mrs. Puss and that Kitten. Lutteworth Press. London. 1967. p. 63.
They Knew Mr. Knight. Persephone Books, Ltd. London. 2000. p. 483. 1903155088.
The Priory. Persephone Books. 2003. 1903155304.

Dorothy Vermilya Whipple.

Dynamics of Development: Euthenic Pediatrics. McGraw Hill. New York. 1966.

Is the Grass Greener? Answers to Questions about Drugs. Robert B. Luce, Inc. New York. 1971. p. 224.

Edward Whipple.

Biography of James M. Peebles, MD, AM (1901). Kessinger Publishing. 2003. 07661880360.

Edwin Percy Whipple.

The Great Speeches and Orations of Daniel Webster with an Essay on Daniel Webster as a Master of English. Little Brown and Company. Boston. 1880. p. 707.

Literature and Life. Houghton Osgood. Boston. 1880. p. 344.

Critical, Historical, and Miscellaneous Essays. American Book Co. New York. 1880. p. 829. Co-written with Thomas Babington Macaulay and Baron Macaulay.

The Literature of the Age of Elizabeth. Houghton Mifflin and Co. Boston. 1883. p. 364.

These essays were originally delivered as lectures before the Lowell Institute in the spring of 1859 and were first printed in the *Atlantic Monthly* during the years of 1867 and 1868.

American Literature, and Other Papers. Ticknor Co. Boston. 1887. p. 351.

Introductory notes by John Greenleaf Whittier.

Success and its Conditions. Houghton Mifflin. 1892. p. 333. First edition: James R. Osgood. Boston. 1871. This collection of essays more or less refer to the conditions of success in various areas of life. The leading idea is that nothing really succeeds which is not based on reality. Whipple has tried to illustrate a less familiar maxim, that truth is mighty and has prevailed.

Barnaby Rudge, Master Humphrey's Clock and The Mystery of Edwin Drood. Co-author Charles Dickens. Houghton Mifflin. 1894. p. 549

Charles Dickens, the Man and His Work. Houghton and Mifflin. 1912. p. 286

E.P. Whipple's lectures were published in the following:

The Atlantic Monthly

16:93, July 1865. Young Men in History

19:116, June 1867. Shakespeare, the Man and the Dramatist

21:126, April 1868. Spenser

22:131 Sept. 1868. Sidney and Raleigh

27:161, March 1871. Shoddy,

49:292, Feb. 1882 Richard Grant White

38:226, Aug. 1876. Dickens and the Pickwick Papers
38:228, Oct. 1876. Oliver Twist
39:223, March 1877. Dickens's Hard Times
39:234, April 1877. Dickens's American Notes
40:202, Aug. 1877. The Shadow on Dickens's Life
40:203, Sept. 1877. Dickens's Great Expectations
48:286, Aug. 1881. Recollections of James T. Field
49:292, Feb. 1882. Richard Grant White

Harper's New Monthly Magazine
52:309, Feb. 1876. American Literature
52:310, March 1876. American Literature
57:342, Nov. 1878. Some Recollections of Rufus Choate
65:388, Sept. 1882. Some Recollections of R.W. Emerson

The North American Review
124:254, Jan. 1877. Daniel Deronda
136:318, May 1883. Emerson and Carlyle
138:330, May 1884. Matthew Arnold
140:434, June 1885. The Swearing Habit
141:347, Oct. 1885. George Eliot's Life
153:416, July 1891. Loafing and Laboring

The Living Age
26:328, 31 Aug. 1850. Washington and the Principles of the Revolution

Scribner's Magazine
2:6, Dec. 1887. In Dickens-Land

Edwin is a 5th great grandson of Matthew Whipple of Ipswich, MA.

Enez Whipple.

Guild Hall of East Hampton: An Adventure in the Arts, the First 60 years. Harry N. Abrams, Inc. New York. 1993. p. 262. 0810933845. Artists, writers, actors, and directors have settled on the eastern end of Long Island for more than a century. For more than 60 years, they were drawn as well to Guild Hall, said to be the first center in America to combine a theater, museum and community.

Eric Whipple. Co-author.

Kylix 2 Development with CDROM. Wordware Publishing, Inc. Plano, TX. 2002. 2556227744. For Linux developers who are starved for a tool that gives them the Linux development power they need, coupled with a convenient rapid application development environment. This unique book also focuses on the needs of current Windows and Inprise developers.

Evangeline E. Whipple.
A Famous Corner of Tuscany. Jarrolds. London. 1928.

Frank W. Whipple.
Succotash: From My Garden of Memories. Frank M. Whipple publisher. Wilmont, SD. 1992. 096331100X.

Fred L. Whipple.
Earth, Moon, and Planets. Harvard University Press. Cambridge, MA. 1963. p. 297. 0674224000. 3d Ed. Harvard University Press. 1968. 0674224019.
This book is a revision with most of the revisions in the chapters on the Moon, Mars, and Venus – the members of the solar system on which the various space programs have concentrated
Survey of the Universe. Prentice-Hall, Inc. NJ. 1970. p. 860.
Find a Falling Star. Erikkson Publisher. Forest Dale, VT. 1976. p. 254. 083972229X.
Orbiting the Sun Planets and Satellites of the Solar System. Harvard University Press. 1981. p. 337. 0674841256.
The Mystery of Comets. Smithsonian Institution Press. Washington, D.C. 1985. p. 276. 0874749689.

Fred H. Whipple
The Electric Railway.

George Whipple.
Life Cycles: Selected Poems of George Whipple. Hounslow. Toronto, Canada. 1984. p. 161.
Passing through Eden. Thistledown Press. 1991. 80 p. Saskatoon, Canada.
Hats off to the Sun. Ekstasis Editions Canada Ltd. Victoria, B.C. 1998. 189686001X.
Carousel: Poems and Pictures. Ekstasis Editions. Victoria, B.C. 1999. p. 79. 1896860672.
Tom Thompson, and Other Poems. Penumbra Press. Canada. 2000. p. 144. 1894131118.

George Carrol Whipple III.
The Illustrated History of the Whipple Family in America, 1631-1987. Self published. Carmel, New York. 1987. George traces his ancestry from Capt. John Whipple to himself, including information on the Daniel Webster connection and Bishop Henry Benjamin Whipple. Includes appendices.

George Chandler Whipple. Co-author.
State Santation: A Review of the Work of the Massachusetts State Board of Health. 1917. p. 377.
Fresh-water Biology. John Wiley & Sons. New York. 1918. 1111 p.
Vital Statistics: An Introduction to the Science of Demography. John Wiley & Sons. 1919. p. 517.

Dr. George Hoyt Whipple.
The Dynamic Equilibrium of Body Proteins: Hemoglobin, Plasma Proteins, Organ and Tissue Proteins. Charles C. Thomas. Springfield, IL. 1956. p. 69. George is a 7th great grandson of Matthew Whipple of Ipswich, MA.

George Mathews Whipple and others.
The Eruption of Krakatoa, and Subsequent Phenomena: An abstract of the report of the Krakatoa Committee of the Royal Society. London. 1888. also University of California, Scripps Institution of Oceanography. 1952.

Gerald H. Whipple.
Acute Coronary Care. Little Brown & Co. 1972. p. 383.

Gertrude Whipple. Co-author with Preston E. James.
Our Earth. The MacMillan Co. New York.

Graham G. Whipple. Co-author.
Engine Lathe Operations. McKnight & McKnight. Illinois. 1942.

Gray G. Whipple. Co-author.
Assembly Language Byte by Byte Program. West Group. 1994. 0314027157.

Gurth Whipple.
A History of Half a Century of the Management of the Natural Resources of the Empire State: 1885-1935: Forests, Wild Life, Parks, Waters. New York State College of Forestry. 1935. p. 199. Gurth is a 7th great grandson of Matthew Whipple of Ipswich, MA.

Guy M. Whipple.
Manual of Mental and Physical Tests: A Book of Directions Compiled with Special Reference to the Experimental Study of School Children in the Laboratory or Classroom in 1906. Published in 1910. A two-volume second edition published in 1914 by Warwick & York. Baltimore. p. 367.
In 1914 Guy Whipple translated from the original German text William

Stern's *Psychological Methods of Testing Intelligence* which introduced the new method of describing test results by means of the "Mental Quotient," later renamed the "Intelligent Quotient."

Henry Burdett Whipple.

A Partial List of the Descendants of Matthew Whipple the Elder, of Bocking, Essex Co., England. Self published. High Point, NC. Volume I 1965. Volume II 1969

A Scofield Survey: Daniel Scofield (d. ca 1669) and Richard Scofield (1613-1670) and their Descendants for about Six Generations, Rufus Scofield (1773-1854) and His Descendants. High Point, NC. 1972. p. 133. Henry is a 6th great granson of Matthew Whipple of Ipswich, MA.

Harold E. Whipple. Co-author.

Home Medication and the Public Welfare. New York Academy of Sciences. 1965. p. 1024.

Henry Benjamin Whipple, Bishop.

Bishop Whipple's Southern Diary 1843-1844.

Journal of Rev. Samuel D. Hinman, Ed. McCalla & Stavely. Philadelphia. 1869.

In Memoriam rt. Rev. William Pinkney, D.D., LL.D., Bishop of Maryland: the sermon. Diocese of Maryland. Washington, D. C. 1883.

Lights and Shadows A Long Episcopate: Being Reminiscences and Recollections of the Right Reverend Henry Benjamin Whipple, Bishop of Minnesota. Macmillan. New York. 1899.

Civilization and Christianization of the Objibways in Minnesota. 1901.

Inez (Whipple) Wilder. Co-author.

The Early Years of a Zoologist: The Story of a New England Boyhood. Privately printed. Smith College, Northampton, MA. 1930. p. 73.

Irma W. Whipple.

In Search of Families Wiese. 096123040I.

In Search of Uncle Julius, the Wanderer. 09612304IX.

James W. Whipple. Editor.

Geology Along Going-to-The-Sun Road Glacier National Park, Montana. Glacier Natural History Association. West Glacier, MT. 1983. p. 62. 0934318115. With this colorful and lively guide, visitors can take a self-guided tour of the geological events that created the park's scenery. An easy-to-read map allows both lay readers and geologists to get behind the scenery at 21 stops along this famous highway.

Jane B. Whipple.
Forest Resources. Franklin Watts, Inc. Danbury, CT. 1985. p. 64. 0531049094.

John Whipple Hill.
Genealogical Notes of the Whipple-Hill Families.

Judith Whipple Cox.
Genealogy Chart of Captain John Whipple, 1617-1685 to Grace Louise (Whipple) Pitcher, 1892, and Alfred Whipple, 1903, and John Whipple, 1904, and Lorey Whipple, 1910-1970. Self published. Portland, Oregon.

Larry C. Whipple. Co-author.
Building an Intelligent E-Business with CDROM. Premier Press, Inc. Indianapolis. 2001. 076152763X. This is the ideal guide to entering the dynamic and complex world of e-business. Provides valuable advice on the technical issues behind an e-business model.

Leander Edmund Whipple.
The Metaphysical Magazine (1897). The Metaphysical Publishing Co. New York. 1895. July-December. Vol. III. Devoted to occult, philosophic, and scientific research.
Mental Healing. The Metaphysical Publishing Co. 1905. p. 282. Leander is a 6th great granson of Matthew Whipple of Ipswich, MA.

Laura Whipple. Editor, Author.
Celebrating America: A Collection of Poems and Images of the American Spirit. Comp. Philomel Books. 1994. 0399220364. Expressions of American Life by Whitman, Riley, Field, Longfellow, Dunbar, folk sources, Indian tribes, and others.
Dragons & Other Creatures That Never Were. Philomel Books. 1996. p. 69. 0299228373.
If the Shoe Fits: Voices from Cinderella. Margaret K. McElderry Books. New York. 2002. p. 67. 0689840705.
A Snowflake Fell: Poems about Winter. (Compiler). BARE FOOT BOOKS. 2003. 1841480509.

Lawrence S. Whipple. Illustrator.
The Ax Book: The Lore and Science of the Woodcutter. Alan C. Hood & Co. 0911469168.

Lee Whipple.

Beginnings in Relational Communication. John Wiley & Sons. New York. 1976. p. 275. 0471908126.

Whole Again. Caroline House Publishers. Ottawa, IL. 1980. p. 232. 0898030243.

The Redtape Letters: Unmasking the Devil in Latter-Day Liberalism: A Novel. 1 890394343.

How to Succeed in Business Without Kissing Ass. Silver Spur Publishing. Rolling Hills Estates, CA. 1993. 0963693239.

Leslie J. Whipple.

The Oregon Trail Cookbook. Maverick Publishing Co. Bend, OR. 1992. p. 170. 0892882344.

Leon Whipple.

The Story of Civil Liberty in the United States. Vanguard Press. New York. 1927. p. 366.

Our Ancient Liberties: The Story of the Origin and Meaning of Civil and Religious Liberty in the United States. Lippincott Williams & Wilkins. Philadelphia. 1927.

Lydia A. Whipple.

Journey Into Light: The Story of Linda. Xribis Corporation. Philadelphia. 2000. 0738855626.

Mary Ann Whipple.

The First Californians. Author. Peek Publications. Palo Alto, CA. 1962

The California Indians: A Source Book. Editor University of California Press. Berkeley. 1971. p. 492. 0520020316. Discusses the present day Indians in California in a chapter written especially for this volume and provides a new extensively classified bibliography listing hundreds of published works arranged by culture areas and subjects.

Mark B. Whipple. Co-author.

Ejb Cookbook. Manning Publications Co., 2003. p. 325. 1930110944.
A systematic collection of Enterprise JavaBeans "recipes" describing a practical problem and its background, and the code that solves it.

Jmx in Action. Independent Publishers Group. 2002. p. 350. 1930110561.

Maurine Whipple

Giant Joshua. Houghton Mifflin Co. Boston. 1942. p. 633.

This is the Place: Utah. Knopf. New York. 1945. p. 222.

Melvin Whipple, author. Lucky Whipple, illustrator

Echoes of the Past: The Cowboy Poetry of Melvin Whipple. The Institute of Texan Cultures. 1987.

Mildred Whipple. Co-author.

History of the First Presbyterian Church, High Point, North Carolina, 1859-1959. Hall Printing Co. High Point. 1959. p. 325.

Nancy N. Whipple. Co-author.

Using Bar Code: Why It's Taking Over. Data Capture Institute. 1990. p. 328. 00962740608.

Oliver Mayhew Whipple, 1794-1892.

A Brief Genealogy of the Whipple Family. Compiled by John H. Boutelle. Oliver is a 4th great granson of Matthew Whipple of Ipswich, MA.

PT DPT Whipple.

Dr. Whipple's Back Pain Vaccine. Infinity Publishing, Pennsylvania. 2002. p. 132. 0741411792.

Rick Whipple. Illustrator.

Christopher Columbus. Raintree Steck/Vaughn. New York. 1986. 0817226435.
Presents the life of the fifteenth century explorer and how he came to discover the New World.

Kit Carson. Raintree Steck-Vaughn. 1987. 0817226508.

Queen Isabella I. Raintree Publishers. Austin, TX. 1990. 0817233806.
A biography of Queen Isabella I of Spain, who made it possible for Christopher Columbus to sail west, and whose fierce support of Catholicism led to the expulsion from Spain of non-converted Jews and Moslems.

See You in Heaven. Raintree Steck-Vaughn. New York. 1992. p. 48. 0811435024.
One of the children's history series. Age Range: 9-10. In 1836 on a cotton plantation in Alabama, 12-year-old Elsy and her family endure the harsh realities of slavery and keep alive their family history by remembering their ancestors.

Maria Tallchief. Steck-Vaughn Co. Austin, TX. 1993. 0811465772.
This biography is about the internationally acclaimed prima ballerina and her heritage as a member of the Osage Indian tribe.

Maria Tallchief: Osage Native American Indian Stories. Streck-Vaughn. 1993. 0811440990.

The Legacy of John Cyclone. Raintree/Steck/Vaughn. 2000. 0739823701.

Robert D. Whipple Jr.
Socratic Method and Writing Instruction. Rowman & Littlefield Publishers, Inc. 1996. 0761805273.

Robert T. Whipple.
The Trust Factor. Productivity Publications. 2003. 0792911901.

Ruth (Whipple) Fermaud. Co-author.
The West Indies. Larousse. Paris. 1972. p. 160.
Translated from the French by R. W. Fermaud. Hundreds of photographs, partly in color.

Ruth (Whipple) Kapphahn.
Genealogy of Whipple-Paddock-Hill Families in America. 1620-1970.

Sandra (Whipple) Spanier. Photographer.
Life Being the Best & Other Stories. New Directions Publishing Corporation. 1988. p. 140. 0811210537.

Sidney Beaumont Whipple.
T*he Lindbergh Crime*. Blue Ribbon Books. New York. 1935. p. 341.
The Trial of Bruno Richard Hauptmann: Edited with a History of the Case. Doubleday, Doran, & Company. Garden City, NY. 1989. p. 565.

Squire Whipple.
The Way to Happiness. Utica, NY. 1847.
Treatise on Bridge Building. 1847. Enlarged edition, New York. 1873. Squire is a 4th great granson of Matthew Whipple of Ipswich, MA.

Terry L. Whipple.
Arthrosporic Surgery – The Wrist. Lippincott Williams & Wilkins. Philadelphia. 1992. 0397510233.

Thomas King Whipple
Spokesmen: Modern Writers and American Life. D. Appleton & Company. New York. 1928. p. 277. (1963 publication. 0836921798.)
Spokesmen. D. Appleton. London. 1928. Later edition: University of California Press. Berkeley, CA. 1963. p. 276.
Study Out the Land: Essays. University of California Press. 1943. p. 215.
This book is quoted by Larry McMurty as an epigraph to *Lonesome Dove.*

Tim D. Whipple. Editor.

After the Velvet Revolution: Vaclav Havel and the New Leaders of Czechoslovakia Speak Out. Freedom House. 0932088619.

Walter Whipple. Co-author.

From the Dust of Decades: A Saga of the Papyri and Mummies. Book Craft. Salt Lake City. 1968. p. 118.

Wayne Whipple.

The Story of the White House and its Home Life. Dwinnel-Wright Co. Boston. 1903. p. 50.

The Story Life of Lincoln. Illustrated. 1908. Memorial Edition issued to commemorate the 100th anniversary of Lincoln's birth.

Lincoln Story Calendar. 1909.

Heart of Abraham Lincoln. 1909.

The Story of the American Flag. Henry Altemus Co. Philadelphia. 1910. p. 145.

The history of the Stars and Strips is told through prose, poetry, and song, along with lavish illustrations – from its beginnings sewn by Betsy Ross to Francis Scott Key immortalizing it in his monumental work, *The Star Spangled Banner.*

The Story of Young Benjamin Franklin. Henry Altemus Co. 1910. p. 254. 1916.

The Story of the Liberty Bell. Henry Altemus Co. 1910. p. 124.

The Story of the White House. 1910.

The Story Life of the Son of Man: nearly a thousand stories from sacred and secular sources in a continuous and complete chronicle of the earl life of the Saviour. With full-page engravings from historic paintings and sacred originals. 1913.

The Story Life of Napoleon: hundreds of short stories from the greatest variety of sources reconciled and fitted together in a complete and continuous biography. The Century Co. New York. 1914. p. 606.

The Story of Young Abraham Lincoln. The Goldsmith Publishing Co. Chicago. 1915, 1918 and 1934. p. 257.

The Heart of Lincoln: The Soul of the Man as revealed in story and anecdote. George W. Jacobs & Co. Philadelphia. 1915. p. 101.

Heart of Washington: an intimate study of the Father of his country from the personal human side. 1916.

Abraham Lincoln's Dont's. 1918.

The Heart of Lee. 1918.

Tad Lincoln. 1926.

The Story of Young Franklin Roosevelt. The Goldsmith Publishing Co. 1934. p. 253.

The Story of the White House and its home life. Completed by Alice Roosevelt Longworth. 1937.
Bill Brown's Radio. With a greeting from Thomas Alva Edison to young Americans. Hurst & Company. New York.
The Minute Man.
The Story of Young George Washington.
The Story Life of Washington.

Wendy A. Boughner Wipple.
Creating an Heirloom: Writing Your Family's Cookbook. Publisher: Lighting Source, Inc. Paperback, p. 124. 1413748945.

William Whipple III
Partnering for Performance: Unleashing the power of Finance in the 21st Century Organization. AMACOM. 2000. 0814405568. This forward-thinking book helps CFOs, CEOs, and other financial leaders completely redefine their roles, turning finance into an integral part of the organizations's growth.

William Whipple.
Urbanization and Water Quality Control. American Water Resources Association. Minneapolis. 1975. p. 310. 0608117595.
Planning of Water Quality Systems. Lexington Books. Lexington, MA. 1977. p. 236.
Water Problems of Urbanizing Areas. American Society of Civil Engineers, New York. 1979. p. 348.

Williams Whipple.
New Perspectives in Water Supply. Lewis Publishers. Boca Raton, FL. 1994. 1566700329.

Whipple Academy Catalog 1864-85. A Part of Illinois College.

Whipple Museum, The.
The Whipple Museum of the History of Science Catalogue. Cambridge, England. 1986. 0906271010.
Muriel Whipple Haddon, *Homespun Lore*. Mystic CT: Muriel Whipple Haddon, 403 Oral School Road, 06355-1205. 1998. p. 250. Library of Congress Catalogue Card No. 98-94096.
Olds & Whipple, Inc. Catalog. Seeds and Fertilizers. Hartford, CT. 1932.

A.B.C. Whipple

"Mutiny Down Under," *Argosy*. January 1955.

"The Devil's Blade," *Argosy*. March 1958. The story of pirate Edward Teach.

Blaine Whipple

"My Favorite Ancestress, Abigail (Dane) Faulkner," *Heritage Quest*, Sept/Oct 1993.

"Magna Carta beget the U.S. Constitution," *Heritage Quest*, Jan/Feb. 1996.

"Magna Carta Sureties and Notables with American Descendants," *Heritage Quest*, Mar/Apr 1997.

"Why They Left the Emerald Isle," *Heritage Quest*, Nov/Dec. 1997.

Chandler H.(enry) Whipple

"The Son of Darkness," *Dime Mystery Magazine*. 1935.

"Kill Your Own Tigers," *Argosy*, April 20, 1940.

"Canyon of Killers," *Ranch Romances*, June 1941.

"Trap for the Terrapin," *Ranch Romances*, May 1942.

"The Shining Mountains," *Blue Book*, May 1943.

"Lost Lady." *Ranch Romances*, November #1 1946.

"Dance Girl," *Ranch Romances*, April #1 1947.

"The Holloway Hellions," *Ranch Romances*, July #1 and #2, August #1 and 2, 1947.

"Doctor's Orders," *Ranch Romances*, September # 2, 1947.

"Runaway," *Ranch Romances*, March #1, 1948.

"The Boar Boat," *Blue Book*, May 1948.

"All in the Book," *Ranch Romances*, April #3, 1948.

"The New Land," *Ranch Romances,* October #1, 1948.

"The Winner," *Ranch Romances*, January #3, 1949.

"Renegade Rep," *Ranch Romances*, March #1, 1949.

"The Bull in the Basement," *Ranch Romances*, December #2, 1949.

"Summons to Sundown," *Ranch Romances*, November #1,1952.

Dorothy Whipple

"The Closed Door," *Argosy* (UK), March 1936.

"Afternoon Off, *Argosy* (UK), April 1936.

"Missing From her Home," *Argosy* (UK), July 1936.

Leon Whipple

"Otherwhere," *Everybody's Magazine*, March 1912.
"The Outer World," *Everybody's Magazine*, July 1912.
"Neighbor to the Stars," *Everybody's Magazine*, December 1912.
"Peter Winchester, Star Maker," *Everybody's Magazine*, January 1915.

Maurine Whipple

"Anybody's Gold Mine," *The Saturday Evening Post*, October 1, 1949.
"Why I Have Five Wives, A Mormon Fundamentalist Tells His Story," *Colliers*, November 13, 1952.

Wayne Whipple

"A Song Without Music," *The Saturday Evening Post*, June 4, 1910.
"Mickey Meharrity, American Citizen," *The Saturday Evening Post*, October 22, 1910.

APPENDIX TEN

PROPOSED ANCESTORS OF MATTHEW WHIPPLE, CLOTHIER, OF BOCKING, ENGLAND

In the fall 2006 issue of *The Genealogist*, Dr. William Wyman Fiske, a noted genealogist from Cape Cod, Massachusetts, proposed an ancestral origin for Matthew Whipple, Clothier, of Bocking, Essex County, England. Genealogists have been seeking information on his parentage for over a century without success.

Fiske, researching a Whipple ancestral line for Arthur Gary of Roxbury, Massachusetts, was led to the Whipple Family of Bishops Stortford, a community approximately 19 miles east of Bocking-Braintree in Herts County. There he found a Whipple family, some of whose members moved to Braintree, a community adjacent to Bocking. His extensive research on the Stortford and Braintree families, combined with the coincidence of an unusual surname name, suggests that the Braintree-Whipple families were from the same line.

But because specific evidence does not confirm the lineage, his proposal remains a working hypothesis.

Dr. Fiske's proposed lineage:

1. **Thomas Whipple**, parentage unknown, born ca 1475 and died between 1535 and 1537. He was a Bladesmith in Bishops Stortford, in Hertfordshire County, England. He married twice. (1) Unknown. Churchwardens of St. Michael in Stortford received 4 pence "of Thomas Whepyll for the waste of torches at his wife's buering." (2) Isabel.

Whipple had the following children:

2. i. John **Whipple** born by 1505. He married Winifred Pylston.
3. ii. Thomas **Whipple** born ca 1510. He married Margaret (____).

SECOND GENERATION

3. **Thomas Whipple** born ca 1510. His birth year is suggested by his elections as Constable in Braintree in 1541-42-43. He was a Bladesmith who lived in Braintree and Newport, Essex County. He married Margaret (____) by 1547. She was buried in Bocking 13 June 1577.

Thomas **Whipple** and Margaret (____) had the following children:

4. Matthew **Whipple**
5. Margaret **Whipple.** born ca 1565. Married Richard **Rathbone.**
6. Robert **Whaple.**

THIRD GENERATION

4. **Matthew Whipple**. While emphasizing he does not have evidence to confirm the proposed lineage, Fiske arrived at his conclusions based on the following:

1. Thomas is the only Whipple in the Braintree and Bocking vicinity before 1577.
2. The first Whipple entry in the Bocking parish registers (which start in 1558) is the burial of Margareta Whipple on 13 June 1577.
3. Every other Whipple entry in the register refers to Matthew, suggesting that Margaret was a close relative, quite probably his mother.
4. The given name of the wife of Constable Thomas Whipple's of Braintree was Margaret.
5. Bocking parish records show that Matthew's second daughter was named Margaret.
6. Prior to Margaret's Bocking burial no other Whipple from the Braintree area had been identified.
7. Bocking and Braintree, both clothing centers, were neighboring towns.
8. Matthew's will of 16 December 1616 identifies only one sibling, the wife of Richard Rathbone.
9. It seems likely that Matthew's sister was the Margaret Rathbone *vidua* buried in Bocking in January of 1627-28 – a further coincidence in names lending support to the premise that these were the children of Thomas and Margaret of Braintree.

His article (pp 191-217) was based primarily on a single source: Mary Lovering Holman and George R. Marvin, eds. *Abstracts of English Records Gathered Principally in Devonshire and Essex in a Search for the Ancestry of Roger Dearing and Matthew Whipple* published in Boston in 1929. Readers interested in this source are referred to Appendix One which includes 33 pages of these records. Fiske's sources are on pages 526 and 543 through 548.

Bishops Stortford, Herts, on the border with Essex is, like Bocking and Braintree, one of England ancient towns. Today Bocking is a part of the Town of Braintree. Hopefully additional study of the Bishop Stortford Whipples and their associated Braintree families will ultimately lead to the confirmed ancestry of Matthew Whipple of Bocking.

It is awe-inspiring to write a tome of this vast nature. The political and social conditions portrayed are done in a deft manner. The depth of biographical data on thousands of individuals is almost unbelievable.

***William P. Whipple II**, Cedar Rapids, Iowa.*

This is a fascinating book. Blaine has a talent to write history in a way that makes people, places, and times come alive.

***L. Dale Whipple**, Benton, Louisiana.*

WOW! The extent of the research and knowledge of the subject and writing style make this book a must read.

***Weldon Whipple**, Orem, Utah*

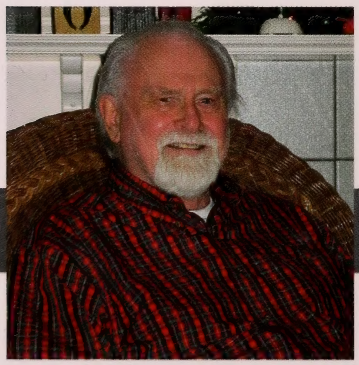
I admire this book. The writing is fresh and engaging and the historical chapters add depth and interest to the genealogical narrative.

***Malcolm Whipple,** Utica, Illinois.*

The research and meticulous documentation is monumental. The photographs and maps add interest and each segment of the voluminous work expands the reader's knowledge of the descendants of Matthew Whipple's family.

***Jana Sloan Broglin**, CG, Swanton, Ohio*

Blaine Whipple has spent 50 years researching the Matthew and John Whipple families of Ipswich, Mass., including original research in Essex Co., England. A former Oregon State Senator, he was associated with Presidents John F. Kennedy, Lyndon B. Johnson, James E. Carter, and Vice Presidents Hubert H. Humphrey and Walter Mondale. He was born in a log cabin on George Washington's birthday in 1930 and has authored and published three family-history genealogies.



ISBN - Volume 1 only
978-0-9801022-0-8
$75.00

ISBN 978-09801022-4-6
20000
9 780980 102246